

The first Three English books on America.

[? 1511]-1555 A.D.

200

The first Three English books on America

[? 1511]—1555 A.D.

Being chiefly Translations, Compilations, &c., by
RICHARD EDEN

From the Writings, Maps, &c., of

PIETRO MARTIRE, of Anghiera (1455-1526),
APOSTOLICAL PROTOMONARY, AND COUNCILLOR TO THE EMPEROR CHARLES V.

SEBASTIAN MÜNSTER, the Cosmographer (1489-1552),
PROFESSOR OF HEBREW, ETC., AT THE UNIVERSITY OF BASEL

SEBASTIAN CABOT, of Bristol (1474-1557),
GRAND PILOT OF ENGLAND

With Extracts, &c., from the Works of other Spanish,
Italian, and German Writers of the Time

EDITED BY

EDWARD ARBER

F.S.A.; FELLOW OF KING'S COLLEGE, LONDON; HON. MEMBER OF THE
VIRGINIA AND WISCONSIN HISTORICAL SOCIETIES; LATE ENGLISH
EXAMINER AT THE LONDON UNIVERSITY; AND ALSO AT THE
VICTORIA UNIVERSITY, MANCHESTER; EMERITUS PROFESSOR
OF ENGLISH LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE,
MASON COLLEGE, BIRMINGHAM

WESTMINSTER
ARCHIBALD CONSTABLE AND CO.

E 141. A 66

TO THE READER.



Each of the three Texts in this Volume is of great rarity; the first two are extraordinarily scarce.

The present impression of them was begun so far back as 1870, and was nearly finished by 1872; when it came to a stand still through the great pressure of other work on all concerned, but more especially on myself.

For then, there came to me the overpowering vocation, for the sake of the Literature of our Golden Age, of attempting (single-handed

though it might be, and when every one else forsook it and fled) the printing of *A Transcript of the Registers of the Company of Stationers of London, 1554-1646 A.D.* Through the toil and anxiety of the years 1873 to 1877, that great piece of work was religiously and accurately accomplished, in four Demy 4to volumes, containing in all some 2,800 pp.: and thus the Bibliography of Sidney, Spenser, Shakespeare, Bacon, Ben Jonson, and their contemporaries, was safely secured from destruction or oblivion, to the end of time.

Other circumstances then intervened; so that it was not till January 1885, on the occasion of my first visit to Edinburgh (where the book was in hand), that I was able to resume it. Once, however, the reproduction was again taken up, it was resolutely pushed through to its completion.

This Volume cannot fail to interest the cultivated reader. One is able therein to look out on the New World as its Discoverers and first Explorers looked upon it. Now-a-days, this Globe has but few geographical mysteries; and it is losing its romance as fast as it is losing its wild beasts. In the following Texts, however, the Wonderment of its Discovery in all its freshness, is preserved, as in amber, for all time: and they also contain notices of not a few barbaric civilizations which have long since passed away from off the face of the earth.

To the Reader.

But this book has also some very special points of interest : It is in many respects, an English Cyclopædia of the geographical and scientific knowledge of its Age.

No one can read the portion of the *Decades* of Pietro Martire given herein, without wishing to know a great deal more about him and his writings.

A large portion of what little we do know about Sebastian Cabot, will be found in the notices of him scattered through this volume.

It may also be regarded as a fitting Literary Monument of one of the Private Secretaries of Lord Burleigh, and a very worthy Englishman, Richard Eden : of whom some account will be found at pp. xxxvii.-xlviii.; and who was certainly one of the principal Authors of the reign of Mary Tudor.

It is also clear, that from the third Text in this book (Eden's translation of the *Decades* of Pietro Martire), which was published in 1555, Francis Drake must have obtained all the knowledge that English books could give him respecting the West Indies and the Spanish Main, before he first went out there, under Captain John Lovell, in 1565.

Lastly, William Shakespeare read this third Text also, and created the character of Caliban in the *Tempest* out of the description of the Patagonian giants given at pp. 251-2.

But for us Moderns, the chief interest in these three Works may be, that they are the very beginning of a mighty Literature. The future of Mankind lies with the Anglo-Saxon race : and of all English books relating to the American portion of that race, the three reprinted in this volume are the *very first*.

The large initial letters are in the style of the Spanish designs of the Biscayan, Juan de Yciar (b. 1523), as they are found in the two editions of his *Orthographia practica*, Saragossa, 1548 and 1550, 4to. Yciar, who evidently looked upon them as the gems of his Work, calls them *Letras de Compas para illuminadores*.

In conclusion I desire most gratefully to acknowledge and record the very kind and cordial help rendered to me in the reproduction of this volume at Edinburgh, by the late Mr William Burnes and the late Mr John Stevenson, with whom it was commenced: and also by Mr James Skinner, of the firm of Messrs Burnes & Co., and Mr James Turnbull, of the firm of Messrs Turnbull & Spears, by whom it has been brought to a successful conclusion.

EDWARD ARBER.

SIR JOSIAH MASON'S COLLEGE,
BIRMINGHAM.

Contents.

To the Reader	v.-vi.
Contents	vii.-x.
P R E F A C E	xi.-xxii.

The First English book on America.

This Text is the first English book containing the word America (Armenica).

C Of the newe landes and of ye people founde by the messengers of the kynge of portyngale named Emanuel. <i>Of the x. dyuers nacyons crystened.</i> <i>Of pope John and his landes and of the costely keyes and wonders molodyes that in that lande is.</i>	[Antwerp, ? 1511.] 4to.	}
	xxiii.-xxxvi.	

<small>[The voyage round Africa to India]</small> Of the blacke Mores [of Guinea] [Of the lande of Allago] Arabia Of greate Indyen Of Gutchin [Cochin] that Kyngedome	<small>xxvii.-xxix.]</small> xxviii. xxviii. xxviii. xxviii. xxix.	<small>The fourth nacyon [The Jacobites (? Abyssinians)]</small> The fyfth nacyon [The Nestorians] The syxte nacyon [The Maronites] The seuenth nacyon [The Armenians] The eght nacyon [The Georgians] The synthe nacyon [The Syrians and Samaritan] The tenthe nacyon [The Morabites]	<small>xxx.</small> xxxi. xxxi. xxxi. xxxi. xxxi. xxxi.
<small>Of the x. dyverce crystened nacionis]</small> The fyfth nacion [The Latins and Germans] The seconde nacyon [The Greeks] The thyrde nacyon [They of India under Pope John]	<small>xxx.-xxxii.]</small> xxx. xxx. xxx.	<small>[An abridgement of the medieval Legend of Prester John]</small> Of the people named Pnygnes	<small>xxxii.-xxxvi.]</small> xxxiii.

The Life and Labours of Richard Eden	xxxvii.-xlviii.
--	-----------------

Richard Eden's Contributions to our Literature, during the reigns of Edward VI. and Mary, 1553-1555, A.D.

The Second English book on America.

C A treatysse of the newe India, with other newe founde landes and Ilandes, aswell eastwarde as westwarde, as they are knownen and found in these oure dayes, after the descripcion of Sebastian Munster in his boke of vniversall Cosmographie: wherein the diligent reader may see the good successe and rewarde of noble and honeste enterpryses, by the which not only wordly ryches are obtayned, but also God is glorified, and the Christian fayth enlarged. Translated out of Latin into Englishe. By Rycharde Eden. [London. 1553.] 8vo.	3-42
--	------

(Richard) Eden. [Dedication] To . . . the Duke of Northumberlende, hys Grace	5-6
(Richard) Eden. To the Reader	7-11
THE TABLE	12

Of the newe India, as it is knownen and found in these our dayes		13-27
<small>[The description of the Navigations from Spain to the newe India, Eastward]</small> Of the maners of the Indians in Calicut Of Pepper and other splices which growe in the region of Calicut Of byrdes and beastes which are found in the region of Calicut: and of the wyne of the merueylous tree Of the sundry kindes of Spices, which are founde in Calicut, and from whence they are brought thither Of the Iland of Zaylon, and of Cinomome found there	<small>17-18</small> 18 18 19 20 20	
<small>Of the Diamande stone, called in Latin Adamas]</small> Of the kingdomes and cities of Narsinga and Canonor How the Elephantes in India are prepared to warre Of the beaste called Rhinoceros Of Calicut, the most famous market towne of India	<small>14</small> 14 15-16 16 16-17	

Of the cytie of <i>Tarnasseri</i> , and the maner of the cytezins there	20-21	Of the grete Empyre of <i>Cathay</i> , being vnder the dominion of the great Cham (whiche some call the great Can) Emperour of <i>Tartaria</i> , in olde tyme called <i>Sythia</i>	24-25
Of the kingloms and cities of Pego and Bangella	21	Of certaine Provinces and regions subiect vnder the dominion of the grete Cham Emperour of <i>Cathay</i>	25-26
Of the grete and ryche Ilande of <i>Sumatra</i> , or <i>Samotra</i> , sometime called <i>Taprobanes</i>	22	Of the Prouince of <i>Mangi</i> , and merueylyous cyties conteyned in the same	26
Of the Ilande of <i>Bornei</i>	22	Of the region of <i>Tangut</i> , and of the great deserte, and voyses of deuylls heard in the same, and of the Salamandra	26-27
Of the Iland of <i>Giaua</i>	23		
Of the Iland of <i>Iaua</i>	23		
Of the Iland of <i>Madagascar</i>	23		
Of the Iland of <i>Zanibar</i>	23		
Of the two Ilandes, in one of the which dwell onely men, and in the other onely women	24		
¶ Of the newe India, and Ilandes in the West Ocean Sea, how, when, and by whom they were found, 28-42			
[Of the new Islands and India found in the West Ocean sea, from Spain Westward and South-west	28-31, 33-39]	How the Spaniardes came to the Ilandes of <i>Molucca</i> , and of the people with great hanging eares	34-55
Of the two Ilandes <i>Johanna</i> and <i>Hispana</i>	28	The thyrdie nauigation of <i>Christophorus Columbus</i>	35-36
Of the people called <i>Canibales</i> or <i>Anthropophagi</i> , which are accustomed to eate mans fleshe	29	Howe <i>Petrus Alonsus</i> sougthe newe Ilandes	36
Of the maners of the inhabitanthes of the Iland of <i>Hispana</i> and of such thynge as are found there	29	Howe <i>Pinzonius</i> , companion to the Admirall, sought newe Ilandes	36
Howe <i>Columbus</i> , after he had found new Ilandes, returned agayne to Spayne, where prepainge a newe nauie, he toke his viage to ye <i>Canibales</i>	29-30	Of the fourre nauigacions of <i>Americus Vesputius</i> to the newe Ilandes	37
Howe the Admirall passed manye Ilandes, and what thynge chaunced to hym and his companie in that viage	30-31	The fyreste viage of <i>Americus Vesputius</i>	37-38
Howe the Spaniardes abused the submission and frendeshippe of the inhabitanthes of the Ilandes	31	The seconde viage of <i>Vesputius</i>	38
Howe the Portugals sought new Ilandes in the East partes, and how they came to <i>Calicut</i>	32-33	The thyrdie viage of <i>Vesputius</i>	39
Howe <i>Magellanuſ</i> by a straught or narrow arme of the sea, sayled by the west into the East to dyuers Ilandes: where also he was slayne	33-34	The fourth viage of <i>Vesputius</i>	39
(Richard) Eden. To al aduenturers, and suche as take in hande greate enterpryses 42			

The Third English book on America.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, conteynynge the nauigations and conqueses of the Spanyardes, with the particular description of the moste ryche and large landes and Ilandes lately founde in the west Ocean perteynyng to the inheritaunce of the kings of Spayne. In the whiche the diligent reader may not only consyder what commoditie may hereby chaunce to the hole christian world in tyme to come, but also leare many secreates touchyng the lande, the sea, and the starres, very necessarie to i. knownen to al such as shal attempte any nauigations, or otherwise haue delite to beholde the strange and woonderfull woorkes of God and nature. Wrytten in the Latine tounge by Peter Martyr of Angleria, and translated into Englysshe by Rycharde Eden.

43-398

Londini, In ædibus Guilhelmi Powell. Anno. 1555.

THE TABLE OF THE CONTENTS OF THIS BOOKE (BESYDE THE DECADES)	45
(Richard) Eden. Latin Epistle to King Philip and Queen Mary	46-48
(Richard) Eden. To the Reader	49-60

[Section I.	61-204.]
(Pietro) Martire's Epistle to the Emperor Charles V., 30 September 1516	63-64

	The First Decade (or Ten Books)									65-105
24-25	Book I.	65-68	Book VI.							87-90
25-26	Book II.	68-72	Book VII.							90-93
26	Book III. (For contents, see pp. 391-3)	73-79	Book VIII.							94-96
	Book IV.	79-82	Book IX.							96-102
	Book V.	82-87	Book X.							103-105
	The Second Decade									106-136
26-27	Book I.	106-111	Book VI.							122-125
	Book II.	111-114	Book VII.							126-129
	Book III. (For contents, see pp. 393-4)	114-118	Book VIII.							129-130
28-42	Book IV.	118-120	Book IX.							130-134
	Book V.	120-122	Book X.							134-136
	The Third Decade									137-185
34-55	Book I.	137-142	Book VI.							161-165
35-36	Book II.	142-145	Book VII.							165-169
36	Book III. (For contents, see pp. 395-7)	146-150	Book VIII.							170-174
36	Book IV.	150-156	Book IX.							175-178
	Book V.	156-160	Book X.							178-185
37			Of the Landes and Ilandes lately founde							186-200
37-38	Pope Alexander VI. Bull dividing the New World between the Spaniards and the Portugese,									
38	4 May 1593		In Latin and English.							201-204
39										
40			[Section II.]							205-242.]
40-41	(Richard) Eden. To the Reader									207
41-42	(Gonzalo) Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés. Epistle to the Emperor Charles V.									208-209
42	The [Natural] Hystoric of the weste Indies									210-242
	Of the ordinary nauigation from Spayne to the Weste Indies	210	Of Reedes or Canes							227-229
	Of two notable thynges as touchyng the West Indies: And of the great rychesse brought from thense into Spayne	211	Of venomous apples wherwith they poysen their arrowes							229-230
	Of the mynes of golde, and the maner of woorkynge in them	211-213	Of fysshes and of the maner of fysshynge							230-233
	Of the maner of fysshinge for perles	213-215	Of the felinge increase and decrease, (that is) rysynge and faulynge of our Ocean sea and Southe sea cauled the sea of Sur							233-234
	Of the familiaritie which certeyne of the Indians haue with the devyll, and howe they receaue awnse of hym of thynges to coome	215-216	Of the straigthe or narowe passage of the lande lyng betwene the North and South sea, by the whiche spyces may much sooner and easlyer be brought from the Ilandes of Molucca into Spayne by the West Ocean then by that way wherby the Portugales sayle into East India						234-236	
	Of the temperature of the regions vnder or neare to the burnt lyne cauled <i>Terrida zona</i> or the Equinoctiall: and of the dyuers seasons of the yere	217-218	Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the firme lande, and of theyr women						237-238	
	Of dyuers particular thynges, as woormes, serpentes, beastes, foulles, trees, etc.	219-225	Of the chiefe Ilandes <i>Hispaniola</i> and <i>Cuba</i>						239-241	
	Of trees, frutes, and plantes	225-227	Of the Ilande of Cuba and other						241	
			Of the lande of <i>Bacocoos</i> cauled <i>Terra Bacalaeorum</i> , situate on the North syde of the firme lande.						242	
3-398	[Section III.]									243-280.]
	Of the Universal Carde and Newe Worlde	245	(Antonio) Pigafetta. A briefe Declaration of the Vyage or Navigation made abowte the Worlde							249-262
	(Richard) Eden. A Discourse of the Vyage made by the Spaniardes rounde abowte the Worlde	246-247	Of the prices of Precious Stones and Spices							263-269
	Maximilian Transilvanius. Epistle to the Emperor Charles V.	247-248	Cadamosto of the Dooues of the Ilande of Madera							270
	(Francisco) Lopez de Gómara. The Debate and Stryfe betwene the Spaniardes and Portugales for the diuision of the Indies and the trade of Spices [at the Conference at Badajos, in 1524.]		Of the Ilande of saynt Thomas under the Equinoctiall line							270
45	(Amerigo) Vespucci. } Of the Pole Antartike and the Starres about the same, &c.									271-274
46-48	(Andreas) de Corsali. }									
49-60										
63-64	[Section IV.]									281-334.]
	Of Moscouie and Cathay									283-294
	(Galeazzo) Butrigarius	283	(Sebastian) Münster. (Jacopo) Gastaldo. A briefe description of Moscouia							291-293

(Jacobus) Ziglerus	Of the North Regions	295-306
Of the North Regions and of the moderate and continual heat in coulde regions aswell in the nyght as in the day in the soommer season	Laponia	301-303
Schondie	Norwegia or Norway	303-304
Gronlande	Suecia or Svetlande	305
Islande	Bothnia	305
	Gothic or Gothlande	306
	Finland and Eningia	306
(Girolamo) Cardano. Of the diffrence of Regions, and causes of great cities		307
(Paolo) Giovio, Bishop of Nocera. The Historie of the Legation or Ambassade of the greate Basilius Prince of Moscouia to Pope Clement VII. of that name		308-317
(Sigismund) Liber. Other notable Things concerning Moscovia		318-321
The description of the regions, people, and ryuers, lyng North and Easte from Moscouia	More directly from Moscouia to Cathay	325-326
Of the famous ryer of Tanais	Of the Tartars	327-330
	The nauigation by the frozen sea	330-332
Edward VI. The Copy of the Letters Missive sent to the Kynges, Princes, and other potentates inhabytyng the Northeast partes of the worlde towarde the myghtye Empire of Cathaye. 1553 In Latin and English.		333-334
[Section V. 335-352.]		
(Francisco) Lopez de Gomara. } Other notable thynges as touchinge the Indies		337-350
(Sebastian) Cabot. }		
Of the foreknowleage that the Poet Seneca had of the fyndyng of this new Worlde and other Regions not then knownen	Of the hygher East India cauled India Tercera or Terciera	344
Of the great Ilande which Plato cauled Atlantica or Atlantide	Of the landes of Laborador and Baccalaos, lyng west and northwest from Englannde, and beinge parte of the firme lande of the West Indies	344-345
Of the colour of the Indians	The discouerynge of the lande of Floryda	345-346
Why they were cauled Indians	An opinion that Europa, Africa, and Asia, are Ilandes: and of certeyne nauigations abowt the same	346-347
The fyreste discouerynge of the Weste Indies	That the Spaniardes haue sayled to the Antipodes (that is) suche as go flete to fete ageyst vs, and inhabite the inferiour hemispherie or halfe globe of the earthe, contrarie to the Joppinion of the owld writers	347-348
What maner of man Chrystopher Colon was: and howe he Came fyrist to the knowleage of the Indies	Who fyrist founde the needle of the compasse, and the vse therof	348-349
What labour and travayle Colon tooke in attemptyng his fyrist vyage to the Indies	The Situacion and byggenes of the earth	349
Of newe Spayne cauled Noua Hispania, or Mexico	What degrees are	349-350
Of Peru		
Of the great ryer cauled Rio de la Plata (that is) the ryuer of syluer		
(Richard) Eden. A demonstration of the roundnesse of the Earth		350
Diodorus, <i>Siculus</i> . What credit ought to bee gyuen to Wryters as touchyng the workes of nature		351
[Section VI. 353-369.]		
(Richard) Eden. The preface to <i>The Booke of Metals</i>		355
(Vannuccio) Biringuccio. Of the generation of Metalles, and their mynes; with the maner of fyndyng the same		356-362
Of the myne of golde and the qualitie therof in particular	Of the myne of siluer and the qualitie therof	366-368
Diodorus, <i>Siculus</i> . The maner of workyng in golde mynes in Egyp特 in owld tyme		369
[Section VII. 371-390.]		
(Richard) Eden. The Description of the two Viages made owt of England into Guinea		373
(Richard) Eden. A breefe Description of Afrike		374
The fyrist Vyage to Guinea		375-378
The Second Vyage to Guinea		379-388
Gemma Phrysius. The maner of fyndyng the Longitude of Regions by dyuers wayes		389-390
A BRVEFE REHERSAL OF THE CONTENTES OF THE DECADES		
(Richard) Eden. Th[e] Interpretours excuse		391-398
INDEX		398
		399-408

295-306
301-303
303-304
305
305
306
306
307

308-317
318-321
325-326
327-330
330-332

333-334

337-350

344

344-345
345-346

346-347

347-348

348-349
349
349-350

350
351

355

356-362
366-368
369

373
374
375-378
379-388
389-390
391-398
398
399-408



the united wit and genius of the nation (through all the vicissitudes of earthly empire) can raise it. It rests not long at the summit; but first declines, and then decays. In its full ripeness, it oftentimes lights up the mind of younger and succeeding races; and so, at length, its life and vitality pass away. Thus has the now blazing, now dim, torch of human knowledge and mind-craft been handed down to us over the heads of the nations, through all the successive Ages of Time.

Human literature is also, like human nature, in many essentials evermore the same in all Ages. As is the life of a Man; so is the mind, that is, the higher life, which is the glory of a Nation. Both alike pass through Inception, Growth, Florescence, Decay, and Death: both alike but minister to the purposes of a Power greater than they, until the cycle of His plans shall be completed. Then cometh the end, when the World shall crack at the fiat of the Almighty Trinity.

Instances of this Law of successive Literary Cycles inter-ring one with the other, readily suggest themselves. Such was the Literature of Greece in its earlier relations to Egypt and Phoenicia; and in its later to Rome. Such also that of the *Renaissance* in Italy, in respect to the Greek literature of Byzantium; and to its subsequent influence (which, either as fulness or extent, has hardly yet been measured) on the ruder nations of Spain, Germany, France, and England.

TILL labouring in the diffusion of English Literature: we here, with heart-felt pleasure, present the reader with reprints of three exceedingly rare, curious, and costly Cosmographical Works; which are also the very earliest printed documents in our language, relating to South, Central, and North America.

It rarely falls to the lot of man to be able to put one's hand on the very earliest beginnings of a mighty literature. Yet it is not too much to say, that of all the vast multitude of English books that have been, or ever will be, produced, either in, or relating to, what we call our New World; the three Works reprinted in this Volume are the very first and earliest. However mighty and majestic, however subtle and eloquent, however deep and far-reaching, the American-English literature may become; here are its first fruits! Whatever period of mental florescence and splendour may yet be in store for the English-speaking races on that vast Continent; with these three Works begins the printed English Story of their Action, their Mind, and their Progress.

Almost all nations light their lamp with fire borrowed from their predecessors. They commence with translations; progress to imitations; and then, often by distinctly marked steps, the Literature mounts up to the height to which

Such was that of Spain (which now we consider so dead), with reference to the anterior civilisation and letters of the Moorish kingdom there. Such undoubtedly has been, and will be the literature of England; now, it may be, in the early afternoon of its glory. And such has been, and will be that of English-America; now in the morning of its strength and power. In the words of the great and wise Preacher, "To every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under heaven."

Under any circumstances, therefore, the present Texts would excite great interest; whatever might be the nature of their contents. It is pleasant, however, to find that each of them has for us modern readers, a distinct interest and a strong charm: while all three do afford us a most vivid picture of those early days of oceanic discovery; of the terrible real dangers, and the still more terrible imaginary ones, undergone and dared by the many noble-hearted Portuguese and Spaniards for themselves and for us; when they wan, in their little cockboats, for the succeeding Human Race, a truer knowledge of the Globe in which, by the Divine Providence, it has been placed.

But the first impression—the most salient and significant interest of this volume—is that it contains reprints of *The first Three English books on America*.

II.



Ur next consideration respects their *contemporary* standpoint; their relation to the story of the nation, for whom the three Texts were printed: and especially to supply Eden's omissions, as regards the very early oceanic voyages of the English, both East and West.

These publications are of great and perpetual interest, inasmuch as they photograph for all time, the fragmentary and imperfectly attained knowledge, and the vast and credulous wonderment, prevailing in England in respect to far-distant countries, during the reigns of Henry VIII. and his two immediate successors. The Texts of this volume embrace, in fact, all that the gentry and merchants of England could, down to the year 1555, A.D., read in the tongue in which they were born, of the wonderful discoveries, and still more marvellous conquests, of the Portuguese and Spaniards in the two Indies.

Neither was this amount of printed information much added to, in Eden's lifetime. His greatest literary feat—the Compilation of 1555—found no immediate imitators: so that it was left to himself (after twenty years more, of great vicissitude, had passed over his head) to undertake its repetition, in the form of a Second and much revised Edition of this labour of love; in the preparation of which he died. This revised Compilation finally appeared in 1577, “set in order, augmented, and finished” by Richard Willes, under the fresh title of *The History of Trauayle in the VVest and East Indies, and other countreys lying either way, &c.* It was five years later (1582), that R[ichard] H[akluyt] published his first Collection, under the title of *Divers voyages, &c.*

An enquiry into the printed naval literature of Queen Elizabeth's reign, has also elicited the fact, that it was not until about that same year (1577), that our Oceanic Literature fairly began to constitute a distinct section of English books. It soon, however, greatly increased in bulk, variety, and interest; until now, it has no compeer in any other language.

Eden is therefore, in very deed, the Pioneer of British geographic research, the very First of our Naval Chroniclers, and the Herald and Forerunner of all our subsequent discoveries and victories at sea. So that in English literary history, Richard Eden stands in the same relation to Richard Hakluyt, that Richard Hakluyt does to Samuel Purchas; and Samuel Purchas, to our present Hakluyt and Royal Geographical Societies.

This multifarious volume should be studied in conjunction with the inland Chronicles of Halle, Grafton, Stow, and others; together with the more modern histories of the Reformation Age. These are chiefly, if not exclusively, occupied with home and continental affairs; and but rarely travel further abroad. In this direction, this Work will help, in a very important manner, to complete for us, the external history of England, during the period 1511–1555, A.D.

2. It will soon, however, be seen that it does this rather by way of narrating the deeds of other nations, and thereby teaching and guiding our forefathers to do the like; than by describing

the English navigations of its own time. Indeed, there are only two English voyages described in it with any detail, and those are rather late ones, viz., the voyages to Guinea in 1553 and 1554. Yet these accounts (the very earliest of their kind ever *printed* in our language) were not, as it is quite evident from page 388, included in the original conception and plan of the Work: but were added, just as the book was being completed, by way of a postscript; the extra expense of which, was borne by Master Toy, the London printer and publisher.

It is also to be especially noted, that this omission did not arise because there were no English Voyages to relate; but because the custom of narrating them in print had not yet arisen in our language. Sea-Histories had not, as yet, become an section of our Literature.

Inasmuch, therefore, as so large a portion of this Volume is occupied with the famous deeds of other nations, and particularly of those of the Spaniards; it may be well (as it is indeed but just to our own race) to place in the forefront of them all, a very slight account, by way of a rescue from oblivion, of the sea-doings and sea-daring of our forefathers in the reigns of Henry VIII., Edward VI., and Mary:—narrating the Oceanic voyages with fuller detail than those to the Continent and the Levant, as they were the more adventurous and difficult.

3. From the capture of Constantinople in 1454, till after the battle of Lepanto in 1572; there was an almost ceaseless fight between the Christians and the Turks along the eastern shores of the Mediterranean Sea. The Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, after they had been driven from Rhodes in 1522, finally settled at Malta in 1530; where by their heroic valour in the frightful siege in 1565, they materially contributed, with the great naval victory of Don John of Austria, to stem the flow of Turkish invasion, which else threatened to swallow up all Christian States.

Recollecting that the formidable, ruthless, and barbaric power of the Turkish empire was at this time ever surging onward and westward in those eastern seas; it will interest most of us to know that there was a regular organised and direct commerce by sea between England and the Levant so early as 1511, A.D.; and for many years afterwards. For our knowledge of this we are indebted to our great English Worthy and famous Cosmographer Richard Hakluyt, Preacher; sometime a Student of Christ Church in Oxford: who, in the second edition of his great work entitled *The Principal Navigations, Voyages, Traffiques, and Discoveries of the English Nation, &c. &c.*, London, 1599–1600 fol., has preserved for us the following important note on—

The antiquite of the trade with English ships into the Leuant.

Non the yeeres of oure Lord, 1511, 1512, &c., till the yeere 1534 diuers tall ships of London, namely, *The Christopher Campion*, wherein was Factor one Roger Whitcome; the *Mary George*, wherein was Factor William Greham; the great *Mary Grace*, the Owner whereof, was William Gunson, and the master one John Hely; the *Trinitie Fitz-williams*, whereof was master Laurence Arkey; the *Matthew* of London, whereof was master William Capling, with certaine other ships of Southampton and Bryflow, had an ordinarie and vfull trade to *Sicilia*, *Candie*, *Chio*, and somewhiles to *Cyprus*, as also to *Tripolis* and *Barulli* [Beyrouth] in *Syria*. The com-

, there are
detail, and
ne in 1553
their kind
uite evident
n and plan
being com-
which, was
lisher.
on did not
tute; but be-
not yet arisen
become an

Volume is
and particu-
it is indeed
of them all,
avion, of the
reigns of
the Oceanic
ment and the
fficult.

till after the
ceaseless fight
western shores
ohn of Jeru-
1522, finally
avour in the
ed, with the
em the flow
allow up all

baric power
ring onward
host of us to
ct commerce
s 1511, A.D.;
ge of this we
ous Cosmo-
Student of
n of his great
raffiques, and
, 1599–1600
note on—
Leuant.

the yeere 1534.
opher Campion,
e Mary George,
e great Mary
unjon, and the
of was master
master William
riflow, had an
fowhomewile to
ria. The com-

modities which they caried thither were fine Kerfies of diuers colours, courfe Kerfies, white Westerne dozens, Cottons, certaine clothes called Satutes, and others called Cardinal-whites, and Calueskins which were well fold in *Siclie*, &c. The commodities which they returned backe were Silks, Chamlets, Rubarbe, Malmesies, Muskadine and other wines, sweete oyles, cotton wool, Turkie carpets, Galles, Pepper, Cinamom, and some other spices, &c. Besides, the naturall inhabitants of the foresyd places, they had, even in those dayes, traffique with Iewes, Turkes, and other foreiners. Neither did our merchants onely employ their owne English shipping before mentioned, but sundry strangers also: as namely, *Candiots*, *Ragufans*, *Sicilians*, *Genouys*, *Venetian galliaſſes*, *Spaniſh* and *Portugale* ſhips. All which particulars doe moft evidently appearre out of certayne auncient Ligier bookeſ [i.e. *Ledgers*] of the R[ight] W[orſhipfull]. Sir William Locke Merces of London, or Sir William Bouyer Alderman of London, or master John Grefham, and of others; which I Richard Hakluyt haue diligently perufed and copied out.—Vol. II., Part I., p. 96, Ed. 1599.

4. Next in the order of time comes the mythical voyage of 1517 of Sebastian Cabot and Sir Thomas Pert from England towards Cathay; the ſole authority for which is Eden's ſtatement at page 6 of this Volume: in which, ſo far as we have been able to inquire, we believe him to have been utterly miſtaken, and that the voyage had no exiſtence; and the more especially because Sebastian Cabot was at that date in Spain, where he remained until after the Conference of Badajos in 1524, which (as Gomara tells us at p. 272) he attended as an expert on behalf of the Emperor Charles V.

5. Important and authentic as is that early Levant traffic; it was a very different thing from a voyage across the then but half discovered Atlantic. As Pietro Martire vaunts, few or none but Spaniards were licensed to go from Spain to the New World. It is, therefore, very striking to find, ere Cortes had consolidated his marvellous conqueſt of Mexico, or Pizarro had finally ſet forth to imitate him in Peru; and while at home, the great Cardinal was in ſerene prosperity and unruſlied power, our first printed New Testaments were being ſecretly read in the principal English towns, and our nation's Reformation was just beginning to bud forth: it is indeed ſurpriſing to trace one Englishman at leaſt in the West Indies; to learn, of a certainty, that one, if not two English expeditions had reached the American coaſt; and, moft startling of all, to know that one of these ſquadrons found in the harbour of St John's, Newfoundland, not another royal fleet of discovery, but a fleet of fourteen *fishiſh-boats* (and, if Spanish reports be correct, thirty or forty more in the neighbourhood), that had ventured (at a time when, to us, ſo little appears to have been known of the north-eastern ſeaboard of America; and ſo much to have been dreaded in a voyage thither) across the wide Atlantic, ſimply for the ſake of codfish.

6. Hakluyt gives the following account of Thomas Tyson or Tison, the first Englishman known to have reached the West Indies:—

A briefe note concerning an ancient trade of the English Merchants to the Canarie-islands, gathered out of an olde ligier booke [ledger] of M. Nicolas Thorne the elder a worſhipfull merchant of the city of Briftoll.

Happeareth euidently out of a certayne note or letter of remembrance, in the custody of me Richard Hakluyt, written by M. Nicolas Thorne the elder a principall merchant of Briftoll, to his friend and factour Thomas Midnall and his owne ſervant William Ballard at that time resident in S. Lucas in Andaluzia; that in the yeere of our Lord 1526 (and by all circumſtances

and probabilities long before) certayne English merchants, and among the reſt himſelfe with one Thomas Spacheſford exerciſed vſuall and ordinary trade of marchandise vnto the *Canarie Islands*. For by the ſayd letter notice was giuen to Thomas Midnall and William Ballard aforſayd, that a certayne ſhip called The *Chrifopher of Cadis* bound for the *Wſt Indies* had taken in certayne fardels of cloth both courfe and fine, broad and narrow of diuers sorts and colours, ſome *arouas [arobas]* of packthreed, fixe *cerons* or bagges of ſope, with other goods of M. Nicolas Thorne, to be delivered at *Santa Cruz*, the chiefe town in *Tenerifa*, one of the feuen Canary-islands. All which commodities the ſayd Thomas and William were authorized by the owner in the letter before mentioned to barter and ſell away at *Santa Cruz*. And in lieu of ſuch mony as ſhould arife of the ſale of thoſe goods, they were appointed to returne backe into *England* good ſtores of *Orchell* (which is a certayne kinde of moſte growing vpon high rocks, in thoſe dayes muſt vfed to die withall), ſome quantity of ſugar, and certayne hundreds of kidſkinnes. For the procuraing of which and of other commodities, at the beſt and firſt hand, the ſaid Thomas and William were to make their abode at *Santa Cruz*, and to remaine there as factours for the abouefaid M[after] Nicolas Thorne.

And here alſo I thought good to ſignifie, that in the ſayd letters mention is made of one Thomas Tifon, an English man, who before the foreſayd yere 1526 had found the way to the *Wſt Indies*, and was there reſident, vnto whom the ſayd M[after] Nicolas Thorne ſent certayne armour and other commodities ſpecified in the letter aforſayd.—*Principal Navigations, &c. &c. of the English Nation*, Vol. II., Part II., p. 3, Ed. 1599.

Hakluyt, referring again to this note, hazards the following ſurmiſe:—

This Thomas Tifon (ſo farre as I can conjecture) may ſeeme to haue bene ſome ſecret factour for M. Thorne and other English merchants in thoſe remote partes, whereby it is probable that ſome of our merchants had a kind of trade to the *Wſt Indies*, even in thoſe ancient times and before alſo.—*Idem*, Vol. III., p. 500, Ed. 1600.

This conjecture is confirmed by the fact that Nicolas Thorne, at his death in 1527, owed this Thomas Tyson the ſum of £12 : 5s. (probably on account of buſineſſ).—See *Letters and Papers on the Reign of Henry VIII.*, Edited by the Rev. J. S. Brewer, M.A., IV. (2), p. 1256.

7. Imbedded in Halle's Chronicle is the following note, quite unconnected with anything going before or after, and to which alſo he makes no ſubsequent alluſion whatever:—

This ſame moneth [May 1527, to Hen. VIII.], the kyng ſent two fyre ſhippes, well mannered and vitated, hauing in theiſ diuers conning men, to feke ſtrange regions; and fo furth thei ſet, out of the Thamis, the twentie day of May, if thei ſped well you ſhall hear at their retorne. fol. 158, b.

This note Richard Grafton, who had printed Halle's Chronicle in 1548, transferred (with but variations of ſpelling) to p. 1149 of his own Chronicle, printed by Henry Denham in 1569.

Richard Hakluyt, in his *Principal Navigations, Voyages, and Discoveries*, thus records his reſearches as to this expedition:—

AND whereas master Hall and master Grafton ſay, that in thoſe ſhipps there were diuers cunning men, I haue made great inquiry of ſuch as, by their yeeres and delight in nauigation, might give me any light to know who thoſe cunning men ſhould be, which were the directors in the aforſayd voyage.

And it hath bene told mee by Sir Martin Frobisher, and master Richard Allen a Knight of the Sepulchre, that a Canon of S. Paul in London, which was a great Mathematician, and a man indued with wealth, did much aduance the action, and went therin himſelfe in perfon, but what his name was, I can not leare of any. And further they told mee that one of the ſhipps was called the *Dominus vobisconis*, which is a name likely to bee giuen by a religious man of thoſe daies, and that falling very farre Northwestward, one of the ſhipps was caſt away as it entred into a dangerous gulpe, about the great opening, betweene the North partes of New found land, and the country lately called by her maiſtrie *Mela Incognita* [i.e. Labrador].

Whereupon the other ship shaping her course towards *Cape Britton*, and the coast of *Normbega* [Hakluyt substitutes *Arambe* in his 1600 Edition], and oftentimes putting their men on land to search the state of those unknown regions, returned home about the beginning of October, of the yeere aforesaid. And thus much (by reason of the great negligence of the writers of those times, who should haue vfed more care in preserving the memories of the worthie actes of our nation) is all that hitherto I can learne, or find out of this voyage.—*p. 517, Ed. 1589; also, iii. 129, Ed. 1600.*

Of this enterprise, Purchas some thirty-five years later has preserved for us, at *pp. 808-91* of the Third volume of his *Pilgrimes, 1625*, the following more authentic testimony:—



EEE will recreate you with a plaine Mariners Letter endorsed in homely phratre, To the Honourable Kings Grace of *England*, here (as I thinke) gien you from the Originall. I haue also another written to Cardinal *Wolsey* touching the same voyage in Latin, by *Albertus de Prato*; for the antiquity rather than any remarkable raretie, worthy here to be mentioned.¹

² I mentioned before Master *Thornes* fathers finding out *New-found Land*, with Master *Ellot*. These animated King *Henrie* the eight to set forth two ships for discouerie, one of which perished in the North parts of *New-found Land*. The Master of the other, *John Rut*, writ this Letter to King *Henrie*, in bad *Englysh* and worle Writing. Ouer it was this subscription.³

Master *Grubus* two shippes departed from *Plymouth* the 10. day of June, and arrived in the *New-found-Land* in a good Harbour, called *Cape de Bas*, the 21. day of July: and after we had left the sight of *Selle* [Scilly], we had never sight of any Land, till we had sight of *Cape de Bas*.

Rleaving your Honorable Grace to haire of your servant *John Rut*, with all his Company here, in good health, thanks be to God, and your Graces ship, *The Mary of Guylford* with all her thanks be to God: And if it please your honorable Grace, we ranne in our course to the Northward, till we came into 53. degrees, and there we found many great Islands of Ice and deepe water, we found no sounding, and then we durst goe no further to the Northward for feare of more Ice, and then we cast about to the Southward, and within fourre dayes after we had one hundred and sixtie fathom, and then we came into 52. degrees, and fell with the mayne Land, and within ten leagues of the mayne Land we met with a great Island of Ice, and came hard by her, for it was standing in deepe water, and so we went in with Cape de Bas, a good Harbor, and many small Islands, and a great fregh Riuier going vp farre into the mayne Land, and the mayne Land all wildernes and mountaines and woods, and no naturall ground but all mose, and no inhabitation nor no people in these parts: and in the woods we found stooing of diuers great beests, but we saw none not in ten leagues. And please your Grace, the Samson and wee kept company all the way till within two dayes before we met with all the Islands of Ice. That was the first day of July at night, and therfore a great and a marueilous great storme, and much soule weather; I trust in Almighie Jesu to haire good newes of her. And please your Grace, we were confidering and a writing of all our order, how we woulf [watch] vs, and what course we would draw, and when God doe send soule weather, that with Cape de Sper [i.e. each ship] shoud goe, and he that came first shoud tarry the space of sixe weeks one for another, and watered at Cape de Bas ten dayes, ordering of your Graces ship, and fishing, and so departed toward the Southward to seek our fellow: the third day of August we entered into a good Haven, called *Saint Iohn*, and there we found eleven faile of Normans, and one Brittaine, and two Portugall Barkes, and all a fishing, and so we are ready to depart toward Cape de Bas,⁴ and that is twentie five leagues, as

¹ The very high antiquity of these letters—which are the earliest ever known to have been sent home by Englishmen from America—constitutes their great modern value.

² The next two sentences are a jumble of error. It is clear from the text that the expedition consisted of three ships: Master Grube's or Grub's two ships, one of which was called the *Sampson*, the name of the other does not transpire (if it could be ascertained to be the *Dominae Nobiscum*, the chain of testimony would be complete); together with the King's ship, the *Mary of Guylford*, commanded by John Rut.

³ Purchas evidently intends us to understand that the endorsement is contemporary with the letter.

⁴ This is evidently a mistake through the hurry in writing. It should be *Cape de Sper* [Cabo de Spera, "the Cape of the Spear"]. For the two ships, after having stayed

shortly as we haue fished, and so along the coaft till we maye meete with our fellow, and so with all diligence that lyes in me towards parts to that Ilands that we are commanded by the grace of God, as we were commanded at our departing. And thus Jesu save and keele your honorable Grace, and all your honourable Reuer, in the Hauen of Saint Iohn, the third day of August, written in hast. 1527.

By your seruant *John Rut*, to his vttermost of his power.

I haue by me also *Albert de Prato*'s¹ originall Letter, in Latin stille, almost as harsh as the former *Englysh*, and bearing the same date, and was indorſed, *Reuerend in Christo Patri Domino Domino Cardinalli et Domino Legatis Angliae: and began, Reuerendissime in Christo Pater salutem. Reuerendissime Pater, placet Reuerendissime paternitati vestre scrire Deo saeuente postquam exiunimus à Plemont quae fuit x. Ianuarij &c.* (The sublance is the same with the former, and therefore omitted.) *Datum apud le Baya Saint Iohan in Terris Nouis, die x. Augufti 1527. Reuer. Patr. vesti humilis seruus, Albertus de Prato* (the name written in the lowest corner of the sheet).

We are fortunately able to trace this expedition still further. By "towards parts to that Ilands that we are commanded," John Rut meant the West Indies; and we have accounts by two Spanish historians of his arrival there, which will demand of us some further attention.

Gonzales Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés—*b.* at Madrid 1478, *d.* at Valladolid 1557, and who resided for many years in the West Indies—wrote, in addition to the *Natural historia de las Indias* printed at Toledo on 15th February 1526, from which Eden has translated large extracts at *pp. 208-242* of this Volume; another and his most important work, entitled *La historia general de las Indias*, the printing of which was completed at Seville on 30th September 1535 (or about eight years after Rut's expedition); every copy of which is attested with Oviedo's written signature. It does not appear that Eden had met with this important work, or he would have assuredly have made the following extract from it.

On folio clxj. of this work, being the Thirteenth chapter of the Nineteenth book, is the following passage, for the literal translation of which we are much indebted to the courtesy and kindness of the celebrated Spanish scholar, Don Pasqual de Gayangos.

Before we come to the extract; an error as to its date (which misled Hakluyt, and may mislead others) must be noted for avoidance, in the Third Volume of J. B. Ramusio's *Navigationi e Viaggi*. Each Volume of this celebrated Collection was printed in a different year by L. A. Giunti at Venice. Vol. I., of which a First Edition had been printed in 1550, appeared corrected and enlarged in March 1554. Of Vol. II., the Preface of which is dated 7th July 1554, the earliest known is that of 1559; while Vol. III., the Preface of which is dated 20th June 1553, appears to have been first printed in 1556; that is to say, in the year after Eden's Compilation was published in London.

Now, at p. 204 of this Third Volume, of *1559*, occurs this important typographical error. Oviedo in 1535 begins *Elanno* ten dayes, 27-31 July 1537, at Cape de Bas, sailing southward, had reached St. John's harbour on the 3d of August, and then purposed to go 75 miles more, evidently to the southward, to Cape de Sper, the appointed rendezvous, where they hoped to meet the *Sampson*. From the date of the priest's letter, however, it is evident that the two English ships stayed a week longer at St. John's. These letters were probably sent to England in one of the Norman or Breton fishing boats.

¹ I have quite failed to find any notice of this *Albertus de Prato*. Might that be a latinised form of *Albert Prat*? or was the bearer of the name a foreigner? I can trace no such name in Le Neve's *Fasti* or Newcourt's *Repertorium*. It would be interesting if he could be identified with Hakluyt's mathematical Canon of St. Paul's.

ete with our
o that Ilands
nded at our
race, and all
ay of August,

his power.

a Latin stille,
date, and was
ali et Domino
ter salutem.
tra seire Deo
The substance
apud le Baya
er. Patr. vest.
lowest corner of

still further.
commanded,"
accounts by
will demand

Madrid 1478,
years in the
ystoria de las
, from which
-242 of this
entitled *La*
ich was com-
at eight years
attested with
hat Eden had
ive assuredly

h chapter of
or the literal
the courtesy
Don Pasqual

s date (which
be noted for
s *Navigationi*
on was printed
I., of which
red corrected
face of which
hat of 1559;
h June 1553,
t is to say, in
in London.
, occurs this
begins *Elanno*
reached St. John's
e, evidently to the
hoped to meet the
dent that the two
re probably sent to

4. Might that be a
gner? I can trace
ould be interesting
ail's.

de M.d.xxvij. annos, &c.; which Ramusio in 1556 translates as *Nel 1517* instead of *Nel 1527*. Hakluyt in 1589, not suspecting any falsification, thereupon adduces the following extract in support of fabulous English voyage of 1517, hereafter asserted by Eden at p. 6: but the date being wrong, his argument, of course, falls to pieces.

It would also seem that Oviedo was residing in the city of Santo Domingo, when he wrote this portion of his history.

CHAPTER 13. Of certain foreign corsairs which passed to these parts and Indies, and what has been the cause and origin of their bad thoughts.

AND the year Mdxxvii. an English corsair, under colour or pretence that he was going to discover land, came with a large ship to the Brazil on the coast of Tierra Firme, and from thence crossed to this Island Hispaniola, and arrived close to the mouth of the harbour of this city [Santo Domingo]. He sent his boat properly manned, and asked for permission to come into port, saying that he came with merchandise and to barter [with the inhabitants], at the same moment the Governor, Francisco de Tapia, ordered a gun to be fired against the said [English] ship, which was coming straight into the harbour; which being observed by the English, they went away, after firing on board the said boat's crew. And, to tell the truth, the Governor Tapia was wrong in what he did, for had the English vessel entered the harbour, armed though she was, she could not have left without the consent of this city and castle.

So that the English, seeing the reception that was made to them, sailed in the direction of the Island of San Juan, and having entered the Bay of San German, spoke to the inhabitants of that town, and asked for provisions: uttering complaints against the people of this island [Hispaniola], and saying that they had not come to annoy the people, but to traffic with them, if they consented, for money or merchandise. Provisions were given them, and they gave pewter vessels and other goods in return. After which the ship sailed for Europe; but it is supposed that she never reached her destination, for nothing more was heard of her.

Considering that Oviedo printed the above less than eight years after the event, there can hardly be any mistake as to the year being 1527. Yet in a later Spanish historian we find these circumstances, in much fuller detail, narrated as occurring in 1519. So that of the three dates 1517, 1519, and 1527; the last is the true one.

Antonio de Herrera Tordesillas, [b. 1559 at Cuella de Segovia; d. 29th March 1625 at Madrid], was born two years after the death of Oviedo. The first four *Decades* of his *Historia General de los Hechos de los Castellanos en las Islas i tierra firme* were printed in 1601, the last four in 1615; both at Madrid. In the second *Decas*, which was published seven-four years after Oviedo's voyage, we have an account of him and his doings, evidently derived from a written deposition; as Oviedo's had been either from hearsay or from personal observation. It consists of the narrative (for the translation of which I am indebted to my friend, the late H. Pyne, Esq., Assistant Tithe Commissioner) of Gines Navarro, master of a Spanish caravel, who apparently piloted Rut's ship from Porto Rico by the land of Mona to Santo Domingo, and then back again to San Germano in the island of Porto Rico.

THE ARRIVAL OF AN ENGLISH SHIP IN THE INDIES, AND THE STATE OF AFFAIRS IN THE ISLANDS.

AFTER the departure of the ships which carried [? to Spain] the gold pearls and ordinary merchandise; a caravel of Saint Domingo being in the island of San Juan [de Porto Rico], loading with cassava; there arrived [at Porto Rico] a ship of three masts, and of the burden of 150 tons. The

master of the caravel, [who] went out in his boat to this ship, supposing it to be a Spanish vessel, discovered [coming towards him] a pinnace containing twenty-five men armed with corslets and cross-bows, and having two pieces of artillery in its prow.

They said that they were Englishmen, and that their ship was from England; that, in company with another armed ship, they had sailed to seek the country of the Great Khan, but that the ships had been separated in a tempest: and that theirs, proceeding on its voyage, came to a frozen sea, where they found large islands of ice; that they had then altered their course, and came to a hot sea [? the Gulf Stream], which seethed like water in a caldron; and in order that the caulking of the ship might not be melted, they went in search of the Baccalaos,¹ where they found fifty² Spanish, French, and Portuguese ships, and that they wishing to land there in order to obtain an Indian interpreter, they [the Indians] killed the pilot, who was a Piedmontese. From thence, they had coasted as far as the Rio de Chicora [the River of Chicora, i.e. River in Carolina], and had crossed over from that river to the island of San Juan [de Porto Rico].

Upon being asked, What they were searching for in those islands? they said that they were desirous of seeing them, for the purpose of giving an account of them to the King of England, and to take a cargo from Brazil.

They invited the master of the caravel, who was called Gines Navarro, to come on board their ship, and to show them the course to Saint Domingo. He saw in the ship a quantity of wine, flour, and other provisions; as well as much cloth, linen, and other articles of merchandise. They carried much artillery and a forge, and carpenters for ship-building, and an oven for baking bread; and there were [in the ship] threescore men.

Gines Navarro further stated that, if he could have read them, the captain of the ship wished to show him the instructions which he brought from the King of England; that they had sent a company ashore at the Island of Mona,³ and that they had bartered some pewter in the Island of San Juan.

This ship went to the port of Santo Domingo, and sent the bark ashore, saying That they were desirous of trading; and [it] tarried there two days. The governor of the Castle, upon the arrival of the ship, sent to inform the Magistrates [? the Royal Audience], for the purpose of their giving him orders what to do; and as they returned no answer, he discharged a gun at the ship, in consequence of which, she forthwith recalled the bark, and by and by set sail.

The ship then returned to the back of the island of San Juan, and tarried a short time there, trading with the inhabitants of the town of Saint Germans; and did not appear again.

The magistrates [of Saint Domingo] arrested the governor, saying that he ought to have waited for their answer; and sent information of this affair to the King [of Spain], as well as of the bad condition of the fortress, so that orders might be given for the fortification of it, and [that] there should be directions [given] for the providing it with men, artillery, and military stores.—*Decades*, ii., Book v., Chapter 3, Ed. 1601.

Thus from four perfectly distinct and independent sources, comes to us the certainty of this English voyage across the Atlantic in 1527; for a further discussion of which see that masterpiece in its way, and rare book (in the Eastern hemisphere at least), Mr. J. G. Kohl's *History of the Discovery of Maine*, published by the Maine Historical Society at Portland, in 1869; and Mr. Biddle's *Memoir of Sebastian Cabot*, London 1832. Both these writers think that the Piedmontese pilot was the celebrated Verazzano.

It is interesting to know that John Rut got back safely to England. For in Sept.-Dec. 1528, while still in the command

¹ The Indian word for codfish, applied by S. Cabot to the land he first discovered, and afterwards loosely and vaguely applied to the American coast from Labrador far to the southward. Here it evidently includes Newfoundland, Nova Scotia, and the northern seaboard States of the United States.

² This number may be an exaggeration. If it be correct, the English squadron must have met thirty or forty other fishing-boats on the Newfoundland 'banks,' beside the fourteen they saw in St. John's harbour.

³ Mona is a small island in the track from Port Rico to Santo Domingo.

of the *Mary of Guildford*, he was employed in freighting home, on the King's behalf, wine from Bourdeaux. See *Royal M.S.* 14. B. xxix., in the British Museum.

8. We have seen by the above that the King's ships left the Thames on 20th May 1527. Whatever else may be doubtful, that is certain: and therefore it is equally certain that the 'Book' which Robert Thorne, the Bristol merchant, wrote at Seville in that year, and sent to Doctor Leigh, the King's almoner, and the English ambassador in Spain, had nothing to do with the fitting out of that London expedition.

This far-seeing discourse, with its preliminary exhortation to the King, was first printed by R[ichard] H[akluyt] in his *Diuers Voyages, &c.* in 1582. Its only date is 1527, which occurs twice; each time after the author's signature—' Robert Thorne. 1527.' As Hakluyt reproduced Thorne's curious 'Carde' or map, it is quite evident that he had before him, in 1582, the original and autographic book penned by the author; and therefore the date 1527 must be accepted by us without a doubt.

Now it was the English custom at that time, to reckon the year from the 25th March, the Feast of the Annunciation of the Virgin. The 'Book' was therefore written at the earliest after the 25th March 1527.

The two following passages in it, taken together, would seem to show that it was not *written* till the summer was far advanced, probably while Rut's expedition was skirting the American coast.

In a flote of three shippes and a carauell that went from this citie, armed by the marchaunte of it, which departed in April last past, I and my partner haue 1400. Duckets that we employed in the sayd fleete, principally for that two Englishmen friends of mine [see p. xiii.] whiche are somewhat learned in Cosmographie, shoulde go in the same shippes, to bring mee certaine relation of the situation of the country, and to bee experte in the Nauigation of thosse seas, and there to haue informations of many other things, and aduise that I desire to know especially. Seeing in these quarters are shippes, and mariners of that countrey, and cardes [charts] by which they sayle, though much vnlke ours, that they shoulde procure to haue the said cardes, and learne howe they understande them, and especially to know what Nauigation they haue for these Ilandes Northwardes and Northeastwardes. B. 4.

But if it please God that into Englannde I may come with your Lordship, I will shewe some conjectures of reaon then against the generall opinion of Cosmographers, by which shall appeare this that I say not to lacke some foundation. And tyll that time I beseeche your Lordship let it bee put to silence: and in the meane seafon, it may please God to fender our two Englishmen, that are gone to the spicerie, which may also bring more plaine declaration of yat which in this case might be required. . . . D. 3.

It would seem that Thorne by 'April last past' means April 1527; for if he had intended April 1526, and wrote this 'Book' in the seven days of 25-31 March, then by English custom reckoned as the first days of 1527, he would assuredly have said 'April last year.' It is also evident from the allusion that a considerable time had elapsed since the two Englishmen had left for the West Indies; and that, at the time of writing, Thorne was looking forward to their return. The earliest approximate date that can therefore be assigned to its composition is the summer of 1527. Dr. Leigh did not return to England till January 1530.

We must therefore assign the occasion and preparation of this English voyage of Oceanic discovery of 1527 to other

persons than Robert Thorne. Such an important effort, as this expedition most certainly was, could not have been suddenly determined upon, and probably originated in the previous year.

Thorne's 'Book' is also interesting for another reference to a very early English voyage across the Atlantic.

So that as afore is sayde, if betwene our Newe founde landes or Norway, or Ilande the Seas towards the north be Nauigable, wee shoulde goe to these Ilandes a shorter way by more then 2000. leagues. And though wee went not in the faide Ilandes, for that they are the Emperours or Kings of Portingale, wee shoulde by the way, and comming once to the line Equinoctiall, finde landes no lesse riche in Golde and spicerie, as all other landes are vnder the faide line Equinoctiall: and also shoulde, if wee may passe vnder the North, enioye the Nauigation of all Tartarie.

Which shoulde bee no lesse profitable to our commodities of clothe, then the spiceries to the Emperour, and King of Portugale.

But it is a general opinion of all Cosmographers that passing the seventh clyme, the sea is all ice, the colde so much that none can suffer it. And hitherto they had all the like opinion that vnder the line Equinoctiall for muche heate the lande was inhabitable.

Yet since by experiance is proved no lande so much habitable nor more temperate. And to conclude, I thinke the same shoulde bee founde vnder the North, if it were experimented. For as all judge, *Nihil fit vacuum in rerum natura*, so I judge there is no lande inhabitable [i.e. uninhabitable], nor Sea innauigable. If I shoulde write the reasoun that prefenteth this vnto me, I shoulde be too prolix, and it seemeth not requisite for this present matter. God knoweth that though by it I shoulde haue no great interest, yet I haue had and still haue no littile minde of this busynesse: So that if I had facultie to my will, it shoulde bee ye first thing that I woulde understande, even to attempt, if our Seas Northwarde be nauigable to the Pole or no. I reaon, that as some sickenesse are hereditarian, and come from the father to the sonne, so this inclination or desire of this discouerie I inherited of my father, which with another merchant of Bristowe named Hugh Eliot were the discouerers of newe found lands, of the which there is no doubt, as now plainly appeareth, if the marriners would then haue been ruled and folowed their pilots mind, the lands of the West Indies, from whence all the gold commeth, had beeene ours. For all is one coaft, as by the carde appeareth, and [as] is aforesaide. . . . D. 2.

A most excellent account of the merchant family of the Thornes of Bristol will be found in *English Merchants*, 1869, written by my fellow-student at King's College, Mr. H. R. Fox Bourne.

9. The next English Voyage on our record introduces us to a very famous name. It is thus preserved to us by Hakluyt.

A VOYAGE TO BRASILL, MADE BY THE WORSHIPFULL M[ASTER] WILLIAM HAUKNIS OF PLIMMOUTH, FATHER TO SIR IHN HAUKNIS, KNIGHT, NOW LIVING,¹ IN THE YEERE 1530.

 Lde M. William Hawkins of Plimmouth, a man for his wisisme, value, experiance, and skill in sea causes, much esteemed and beloued of King Henry the eight, and being one of the principall Sea Captaines in the West partes in his time, not contented with the short voyages commonly then made only to the knownen costes of Europe, armed out a tall and goodly ship of his owne of the burthen of 250 tunnes, called the Pole [Paul, Ed. 1600] of Plimmouth, wherewith hee made three long and famous voyages vnto the coast of Brasill, a thing in thosse dayes very rare, especially to our Nation. In the course of which voyages hee touched at the Riuuer of Sylos vpon the coast of Guinea, where hee trafiqued with the Negroes, and tooke of them Oliphants [Elephants, Ed. 1600] teeth, and other commodities which that

¹ As this was printed in 1589, old William Hawkins lived to see the overthrow of the Spanish Armada, and so is very properly introduced by the Rev. Canon Kingsley, with his usual truthfulness in details, in his celebrated Elizabethan romance of *Westward Ho!* as a very old man, present at Plymouth with the Captains who were waiting the arrival of the great Spanish Fleet.

stant effort, as this
we been suddenly
the previous year.
other reference to
tic.

de landes or Norway,
wee shoule goe to
es. And though wee
Emperours or Kinges
once to the line Equi-
rie, as all other landes
e, if wee may passe
ie.

dities of clothe, then
ale.

at passing the seventh
e can suffer it. And
the line Equinoctiall for

ch habitable nor more
ulde bee founde vnder
ge, *Nihil fit vacuum in
re* [i.e. uninhabitable],
n that prefenteth this
not requisite for this
shoulde haue no great
e of this businesse: So
erft thing that I woulde
rde be nauigable to the
hereditaryes, and come
desire of this discouerie
ant of Bristol named
nds, of the which there
rinen would then haue
nds of the West Indies,

For all is one coaste,
D. 2.

ant family of the
English Merchants,
g's College, Mr. H.

rd introduces us to
to us by Hakluyt.

FULL M[ASTER] WIL-
D SIR JOHN HAUKINS,

, a man for his wifelome,
fes, much esteemed and
eing one of the prin-
ters in his time, not con-
only then made only to
goodly ship of his owne
ule, Ed. 1600] of *Plim-*
tos voyages vnto the coast
ally to our Nation. In
Riu of *Sefor* vpon the
roes, and tooke of them
commodities whicht that

to see the overthrow of the
Rev. Canon Kingsley, with
a romance of *Westward Ho!*
we were waiting the arrival of

place yeeldeth: and so arriuing on the coast of *Braſil*, vſed there ſuch diſcretion, and behaued himſelf ſo wiſely with thoſe ſavage people, that he grew into great familiaritie and friendſhip with them. Infomuch that in his 2. voyage, one of the ſavage kings of the countrey of *Braſil*, was con-
tent to take ſhippe with him, and to be tranported hither into England, whereunto M[after] *Haukins* agreed, leauing behinde in the Country as a pledge for his ſafetie and returne againe, one *Martin Cock-ram* of *Plimouth*. This *Braſilian* king being arriu'd [i.e. in 1531], was brought vp to London, and preſented to King Henry the 8. lying as then at *Whitehall*: at the fight of whome, the King and all the Nobilitie did not a little maruell, and not without caufe: for in his cheeke were holes made according to their ſavage manner, and therein ſmall bones were planted, ſtanding an inche out from the ſaid holes, which in his owne Countrey was reputed for a great brauerie. He had alio another hole in his nether lippe, wherein was ſet a precious ſtone about the bignesse of a peafe. All his apparel, behauour, and gesture were very ſtrange to the beholders.

Hauing remained here the ſpace almost of a whole yere, and the king with his figh fully ſatisfied, M[after] *Haukins* according to his promife and appointment, purpoſed to conuey him againe into his Countrey: but it fell out in the way that, by change of ayre and alteration of diet, the ſaid ſavage king diēd at Sea, which was feared would turne to the loſe of the life of *Martin Cockram* his pledge. Neuertheleſſe, the ſavages being fully perfwaded of the honeſt dealing of our men with their Prince, reſtored againe the ſaid pledge, without any harme to him, or any man of the compaニー: which pledge of theirs they brought home againe into England, with their ſhippe freighted and furnished with the commodities of the Countrey. Which *Martin Cockram*, by the witneſſe of Sir *John Haukins*, being an officer in the towne of *Plimouth*, was liuing within theſe fewe yeres.—p. 520, Ed. 1589.

10. Let us now look eſtward. In 1592, (three years after the appearance of the First edition of his *Voyages*, &c.), *Hakluyt* became acquainted with a very old man, a Londoner named John Williamson, then apparently the ſole ſurvivor of our first traffic in the Levant; which dying out, had been revived in 1580.

These early Levant voyages were very important; inasmuch as they were the ſchool in which ſome of the principal Agents and Captains of the Moſcovy Company, like Richard Gray and Richard Chancellor, received their chief training.

A voyage made with the ſhippes called the *Holy Croffe*, and the *Matthew Gonfon*, to the Iles of *Candia* and *Chio*, about the yere 1534, according to a relation made to Maſter Richard Hackluyt by Iohn Williamson, Cooper and citizen of London, who liued in the yere 1592, and went as cooper in the *Mathew Gonfon* the next voyage after.

He ſhippes, called the *Holy Croffe* and the *Matthew Gonfon*, made a voyage to the Iandes of *Candia* and *Chio* in *Turkie*, about the yere 1534. And in the *Mathew* went as Captainne M[after] *Richard Gonfon*, ſonne of old Maſter *William Gonfon*, paymaster of the kings *Nauie*. In this firſt voyage [i.e. of the two described by Williamson] went *William Holſtoke* (who afterwards was Controuller of her Maieſties [i.e. Queen Elizabeth's] *Nauie*, lately deceaſed) as page to M[after] *Richard Gonfon* aforeforeid, which M[after] *Gonfon* died in *Chio* in this his firſt voyage. The ſhip called the *Holy Croffe* was a flōr ſhippe, and of burden 160 tunnes. And hauing beeene a full yere at the ſea in performance of this voyage, with great danger the returned home, where, vpon her arriuall at *Blackwall* in the riuere of *Thames*, her wine and oyle caſke was found to weake that they were not able to hoyfe them out of the ſhip, but were conſtrained to draw them as they lay, and put their wine and oyle into new vefſels, and ſo to vnlaide the ſhippe. Their chiefe freight was very excellent Muſcatells and red Malmeſte, the like whereof were feedome ſeen before in *England*. They brought home alio good quantite of ſweete oyles, cotton woollies, Turkie Carpets, Galles, Cynamon, and ſome other ſpices. The ſaide ſhippe called the *Holy Croffe* was fo shaken in this voyage, and fo weakened, that she was layd vp in the docke, and neuer made voyage after.—Vol. II., Part I., p. 98, Ed. 1599.

EDEN.

Another voyage to the Iles of *Candia* and *Chio* made by the ſhippe, the *Mathew Gonfon*, about the yere 1535, according to the relation of Iohn Williamson, then Cooper in the ſame ſhip, made to M[after] Richard Hackluyt, in the yere 1592.

He good ſhippe called the *Mathew Gonfon*, of burthen 300 tunnes, whereof was owner old M[after] *William Gonfon*, pay-maſter of the Kings *Nauie*, made her voyage in the yere 1535. In this ſhip went as Captainne, *Richard Gray*, who long after diēd in *Rufaſſe*. Maſter *William Holſtoke*, afterward Controuller of the Queens *Nauie*, went then as purifer in the fame voyage. The Maſter was one *John Pichet*, ſervant to old M[after] *William Gonfon*. *James Rummie* was Maſters mate. The maſter cooper was *Iohn Williamſon*, citizen of London, liuing in the yere 1592, and dwelling in *Salſbury* parish, in the Eaſt. The M[after] Gunner was *John Godfrey* of *Briſſell*. In this ſhip were 6 gunners and 4 trumpeters, all which four trumpeters at our returne homewards went on land at *Aegina* in the Iland of *Sicilia*, as our ſhip road there at anker, and gat them into the Gallies that lay neare unto vs, and in them went to *Rome*. The whole number of our compaニー in this ſhip were about 100. men, we were also furnished with a great boate, which was able to carry 10 tunnes of water, which at our returne homewards we towed all the way from *Chio* vntil we came through the ſtraight of *Gibraltor* into the maine Ocean. We had alio a great long boat and ſkiff. We were out vpon this voyage eleven months, yet in all this time ther diēd of ſickneſſe but one man, whose name was *George Forreſt*, being ſervant to our Carpenter called *Thomas Plummer*.—Idem.

The Island of *Scio*, the extreme point of the above two voyages, had long been the property of a Genoese family, the *Justiana*, under the ſovereignty of the Senate of that city. How the Turks first put it to tribute, and finally took poſſeſſion of it in 1568, is thus narrated in two letters, written on the 14th of February 1569 by an Englishman, *Gaspar Campion*, who had “traded in this country [i.e. the island and its vicinity] about this 30. yeres [i.e. 1539-1569], and haue beene married in the towne of *Chio* full 24. yeres [i.e. 1544-1569].”

Si, you ſhall underſtand that the Island of *Chio* in time paſt hath bene a *Sigñorie* or lordhip of it ſelue, and did belong to the *Genowies*. There were 24. of them that governed the iſland which were called *Maueſes*. But in continuall of time the Turk waxed fo ſtrong and mighty, that they, conſidering they were not able to keepe it, unleſſe they ſhould become his tributaries, because the Iſland had no corne, nor any kind of vittailes to ſupply themſelues, but only that which muſt of neceſſitie come out of the Turkes dominions, and the ſayd iſland being incloſed with the Turks round about, and but 12. miles from the Turks Continent, therefore the ſaid *Genowies* did compound and agree to be the Turkes tributaries, and to pay him 1400. thousand ducates yearely, Alwayes prouided that they ſhould keep their lawes both ſpiritual and temporal, as they did when the Iſland was in their owne hands. Thus he granted them their priuiledge, which they inyoked for many yeres, ſo that all ſtrangers and alio many Englifh men did trade thither of long continuall, and went and came in ſafety. In this meane time, the prince *Pedro Doria* (being a Genouois) became a captaine to ſerve the Emperor with 30. or 40. gallies againe the Turk. And ſince that time diuers other captaines belonging to *Genoa* haue beene in the ſeruice of king *Philip* againe the Turk. Moreouer, whenſoever the Turk made out any army, he perceiued that no nation did him more hurt then thoſe Genouois, who were his tributaries. Likewife at the Turkes ſiege of *Malta*, before which place he lay a great while, with loſe of his men, and alio of his gallies, he found none to troubleſome vnto his force as one *Iuanette Doria*, a Genouois, and diuers others of the Iſland of *Chio*, who were his tributaries. At which fight, he tooke ſuch diſpleasure againe them of *Chio*, that he ſent certaine of his gallies to the Iſland, for to feſe vpon all the goods of the 24. *Maueſes*, and to turne them with their wifes and children out of the Iſland; but they would let none other depart, because the Iſland ſhould not be vnpoepled. So that now the Turk hath ſent one of his chiefe men to rule there.—*Hakluyt*, Vol. II., Part I., p. 114, Ed. 1599.

c

xvii

Another letter of Campion's, begins thus :

HE may please your worship to understand, that as concerning the voyage to Chio, what great profit would be gotten, both for merchants and also for owners of shippes (as it was well knownen in those dayes when the *Matthew Gonfon*, the *Trinitie Fitzwilliams*, and the *Saviour of Bristol*, with diuers other shippes, which traded thither yeres, and made their voyage in ten or twelve moneths, and the longeft in a yere), M[after] *Francis Lambert*, M[after] *John Brooke*, and M[after] *Drauer* can truly inform you hereof at large. And by reson that we haue not traded into those parts these many yeres [i.e. previous to 1569], and the Turke is growen mighty, whereby our shippes doe not trade as they were woont —*Hakluyt, Voyages, Vol. II., Part I.*, p. 116, Ed. 1599.

Finally we may take leave on this occasion of the interesting subject of the early English trade in the Mediterranean, with the following note of Hakluyt's.

His trade into the Leuant was very vfull and much frequented from the yere of our Lord 1511 till the yere 1534, and afterwards also, though not so comonly, vntill the yere 1550, when the bark *Aucher* under the conduct of M[after] *Roger Bodenham* made a prosperous voyage into *Sicilia*, *Candio*, *Sic*, and other places within the Leuant. Since which time the foerlaide trade (notwithstanding the grand *Signioris* ample privilege granted to M[after] *Anthony Jenkenson* 1553, and the strong and weighty reasons of *Gaspar Campion* for that purpose) was vterly difcontinuued, and in maner quite forgotten, as if it had neuer bene, for the space of 20. years or more [i.e. from the date of Jenkinson's privilege of 1553 until 1575; when the preliminary steps which resulted in the formation of the Turkey Company, were taken]. *Voyage, Vol. II., Part I.*, p. 136, Ed. 1599.

11. We now come to the tragical English voyage to Newfoundland, in 1536 ; as narrated by Master Oliver Daubeny, a London merchant, to Hakluyt's cousin and namesake, Richard Hakluyt of the Inner Temple ; and by Master Thomas Butts of Norfolk, to himself. It will ever be thought one of the worthiest acts of our younger Hakluyt's worthy life, that, for the simple assurance, with further details, of this voyage, he travelled 200 miles on horseback, probably into Norfolk and back.

The voyage of master Hore and diuers other Gentlemen, to Newfoundland and Cape Breton, in the yere 1536. and in the 28. yere of King Henry the eight.

Master Hore of London, a man of goodly stature and of great courage, and giuen to the studie of Cosmographie, in the 28. yere of King Henry the 8. and in the yere of our Lord 1536. encouraged diuers gentlemen and others, being assisted by the kings fauour and good countenance, to accompany him in a voyage of discouerie vpon the Northwest partes of America : wherein his perswasions tooke such effect, that within short space many gentlemen of the innes of court, and of Chauncerie, and diuers other of good worship desirous to see the strange things of the world, very willingly entered into the action with him, some of whose names were as followeth : M[after] *Wickes*, a gentleman of the West countrey of ffe hundred markes [equivalent to an income of £2500 of the present day] by the yeres liuing. M[after] *Tucke*, a gentleman of Kent. M[after] *Thomas Butts*, the sonne of Sir William Butts, Knight of Norfolke, which is yet aliue, and from whose mouth I wrote most of this relation. M[after] *Hardie*, M[after] *Biron*, M[after] *Carter*, M[after] *Wright*, M[after] *Rafall Saricant*. Rafals brother, M[after] *Ridley*, and diuers other, which all were in the admirall called the *Trinitie*, a shipp of feuen score tunnes, wherein M[after] *Hore* himselfe was imbarkeed. In the other shipppe, whose name was the *Minion*, went a very learned and vertuous gentleman, one master *Armagil Wade*, father to the worshipfull master *William Wade*, now clerke of the priuie counsell, Master *Oliver Daubeny* merchant of London, M[after] *Ioy* afterward gentleman of the kings chappell, with diuers other of good account. The whole number that went in the two tall shippes aforesayd, to wit, the

Trinitie and the *Minion*, were about six score persons, whereof 30. were gentlemen, which all were muttered in warlike maner at Graefend, and after the receiuing of the sacrament, they embarked themselues at the end of April, 1536.

From the time of their setting out from *Graefende*, they were very long at sea, to witte, aboue two moneths, and never touched any lande vntill they came to part of the *West Indies* about *Cape Breton*, shaping their course thence Northeastwards, vntill they came to the Island of *Penguin*, which is very full of rockes and stones, whereon they went and founde it full of great foules white and gray, as bigge as geese, and they sowe infinite numbers of their egges. They draue a great nomber of the foules into their boates vpon their failes, and tooke vp many of their egges, the foule they fled and their skinnes were like hony combes full of holes being fled off: they drefled and eate them, and found them to be very good and nourishing meate. They sowe also store of beares both blacke and white, of whome they killed some, and tooke them for no badde foode.

M[after] *Oliver Daubeny*, which (as it is before mentioned) was in this voyage, and in the *Minion*, tolde M[after] *Richard Hakluyt* of the middle Temple thes things following: to wit, That after their arriuall in *Newfound land*, and hauing bene there certaine dayes at ancre, and not hauing yet feene any of the naturall people of the Countrey, the same *Daubeny* walking one day on the hatches spied a boate with Sauages of those parties, rowing downe the bay towarde them, to gafe vpon the shipppe and our people, and taking viewe of their comming aloofe, hee called to such as were vnder hatches, and willed them to come vp if they would see the naturall people of the Countrey, that they had so long and so much desired to see: Whereupon they came vp and tooke view of the Sauages rowing toward them and their shipppe, and vpon the viewe they manned out a shipboote to meeet them and to take them. But they spying our shipboote making towards them, returned with maine force, and fled into an Island that laye vp in the bay or riuer there, and our men purfused them into the Island, and the Sauages fledde and escaped: but our men founde a fire, and the side of a beare on a wooden spit left at the same by the Sauages that were fledde.

There in the same place they founde a boote of leather garnished on the vtter side of the calfe in certain braue trailes, as it were of rawe filke, and also founde a certaine great warme mitten: And these carried with them, they returned to their shipppe, not finding the Sauages, nor seeing any thing else besides the foyle, and the things growing in the same, which chiefly were store of fire and pine trees.

And further, the said *M. Daubeny* told him, that lyng there they grewe into great want of victuals, and that there they found small relife, more then that they had from the nest of an *Opyr*, that brought hourely to her yong great plente of diuers sorts of fishes. But such was the famine that increased amongst them from day to day, that they were forced to feeke to relieve themselfes of rawe herbes and rootes that they fought on the maine: but the famine increasing and the relife of herbes being to little purpose to satissie their infatiable hunger, in the fieldes and defertes here and there, the felowe killed his mate while hee stouped to take vp a root for his relife, and cutting out pieces of his body whome hee had murthered, broyled the same on the coles, and greedily devoured them.

By this meane the company decreased, and the officers knewe not what was become of them; and it fortuned that one of the company driven with hunger to feeke abroade for relife, founde out in the fields the fauour of broyled flesh, and fell out with one that hee would suffer him and his fellowes to sterue, enjoying plente as he thought: And this matter growing to cruel speachess, he that had the broyled meate, burst out into thes wordes, If thou wouldest needes knowe, the broyled meate that I had, was a piece of such a mans buttocke. The report of this brought to the shipp, the Captaine found what became of those that were missing, and was perwaded that some of them were neither deuoured with wilde beastes, nor yet destroyed with the Sauages: And hereupon he stoopte vp and made a notable Oration, containing How much these dealings offended the Almighty, and vouched the Scriptures from first to laft what God had in cases of distresse done for them that called vpon him, and told them that the power of the Almighty was then no lesse, then in al former time it had bene. And added, that if it had not pleased God to haue holpen them in that distresse, that yet it had been better to be punished in body, and to haue liued euerlastingly, then to haue relieved for a poore time their mortal bodies, and to bee condemned euerlastingly both body and soule to the vnquenchable fire of hel.

s, whereof 30. were
at Graefend, and
semelues at the end

they were very long
till any lande vntill
treton, shapeng their
Iland of *Penguin*,
went and founde it
the foules into their
egges, the foule they
oles being dead off:
good and nourishing
and white, of whome

(mentioned) was in this
akluyt of the middle
arriuall in *Newfound*
, and not haung yet
name *Darobeny* walk-
ges of thosse partes,
uppe and our people,
so much as were vnder
the natural people
vred to see: Where-
ing toward them and
shipboote to meeke
makeing towards
that lye vp in the
the Iland, and the
re, and the fide of a
that were fledde,

er garnished on the
of rawe filke, and
carried with them,
nor seeing any thing
same, which chiefly
ng there they grew
all relife, more then
hourly to her yong
amine that increased
to seeke to relieue
on the maine: but
to little purpose to
here and there, the
rootes for his relife,
thered, broyled the

ers knewe not what
the company druen
he fields the fauour
fuffer him and his
this matter growing
it into these wordes,
I had, was a piece
at to the ship, the
and was perwaded
es, nor yet destroyed
a notable Oration,
ightie, and vouchd
f distresse done for
er of the Almightye
And added, that if
esse, that yet it had
everlastingly, then
and to bee con-
inchable fire of hel.

And thus haung ended to that effect, he began to exhort to repentance, and besought all the company to pray, that it might please God to looke vpon their miserable present stafe, and for his owne mercie to relieue the same. And such was the mercie of God, that the same night there arriued a French shipp in that port, well furnished with vittaile, and such was the policie of the English, that they become masters of the same; and changing shipp, and vitayling them, they set faille to come into England.

In their iourney they were so farre Northwards, that they sawe mightie Islands of yce in the summer seafon, on which were haukes and other foules to rest themselves, being wearie of flying ouer farre from the maine. They sawe also certaine great white foules with redde bills and redde legs, somewhat bigger then Herons, which they supposed to be storkes. They arriued at *Saint Ives* in Cornewall about the ende of October. From thence they departed to a certayne Castle belonging to sir *John Luttrell*, where *M[aster] Thomas Butts* and *M[aster] Rayfall* and other gentlemen of the voyage were very friendly intertaigned: after that they came to the Earle of Bath at *Bathe*, and thence to *Bristol*, and so to London. *M[aster] Butts* was so changed in the voyage with hunger and miserie, that sir *William* his father and my Lady his mother knewe him not to be their sonne, vntill they found a certaine secreit marke which was a wart vpon one of his knees, as he tolde me *Nichard Haklyut of Oxforde* himselfe, to whom I rode 200. miles onely to learme the whole trouth of this voyage from his owne mouth, as being the only man now aliue [*i.e.* in or about 1589] that was in this discouerie.

Certaine moneths after, thosse Frenchmen came into England, and made complaint to king *Henry the 8*: the King caufing the matter to be examined, and finding the great distresse of his subiects, and the cautes of the dealing so with the French, was so moued with pite, that hee punished not his subiects, but of his owne purse made full and royal recompense vnto the French.

In this distresse of famine, the English somewhat relieue their vitall spirits by drinking at the springs the fresh water out of certayne wooden cups, out of which they had drunke their *Aqua compota* before.—*Haklyut, Voyages*, pp. 517-519, Ed. 1589.

12. These are all the oceanic voyages performed by the English in the reign of Henry VIII. which we have beene able to trace. It was under Edward, that our sailors first began to creep down the African coast. The special significance of these voyages lay in the then accredited proprietorship (through the Papal Bull, reprinted at pp. 201-204) of the Portugese to the entire continent of Africa; and in the intentional and studied ignorance of its coast line, in which the World was kept by that nation. Every English voyage to its west coast was therefore at once an act of revolt against the Papacy, and a challenge to the pretensions of Portugal.

The Levant trade was open to all who would dare to run the gauntlet of the Turks. The Spaniards recognised the claim of the English discovery, by the Cabots, of Baccalaos; and had not yet worked up northward to it. But the African sea coast, so honourably and so patiently discovered, was (by all laws, human and divine, hitherto accepted) the possession of its brave discoverers. It was therefore a new impulse, that made our English ships, passing the familiar Straits of Gibraltar on their left hand, to go forward southward, first to Barbary, and then to Guinea; cost what it might.

Discoveries are made by successive steps, one after another; and the passage of English ships around the world and to the Eastern seas was but the succession and development of these first attempts to Marocco. All that we know of these Barbary voyages is preserved to us by Haklyut, who collected his information forty to fifty years after the event, and has thus transmitted it to us.

THE FIRST VOYAGE TO BARBARY IN 1551, DESCRIBED BY JAMES ALDAY, SERVANT TO SEBASTIAN CABOT.

The originall of the first voyage for traffique into the kingdom of *Marocco* in *Barbarie*, begun in the yeare 1551, with a tall ship called the *Lyon of London*, whereof went as captaine Maister *Thomas Windham*, as appeareth by this extract of a letter of *James Alday*, to the worshipfull master *Michad Locke*, which Alday professeth himselfe to haue bene the first inuentor of this trade.

WOrshipfull Sir, hauing lately bene acquainted with your intent to prosecute the olde intermitted discouerie for *Catali*, if therin with my knowledge, trauell or industrie I may doe you seruice, I am ready to do it, and therein to aduenture my life to the vternmost point. Truth it is, that I haue bene by some men (not my friends) euill spoken of at London, saying that although I be a man of knowledge in the Arte of Nauigation and Cosmographic, and that I haue bene the inuentor of some voyages that be now growen to great effect; yet say they maliciously and without iust cause, that I haue not bene willing at any season to proceede in thosse voyages that I haue taken in hand, taking example especially of two voyages. The one was when I was maister in the great Barke *Aucher* [which left Gravendene on 13th November 1550] for the *Levant*, in which voyage I went not, but the causes they did not know of my let from the same, nor of the other. But first the very trouth is, that I was from the same voyage letted by the Princes letters, which my Maister *Sebastien Gobosa* had obtained for that purpose, to my great grieve.

And as touching the second voyage which I inuented for the trade of *Barbarie*, the liuing God knoweth that I say moft true, that when the great swewe was [*The sweating sickness began in London on 9th July 1551, and continued till the following September*] (whereon the chiefe of thosse with whom I ioyned in that voyage died, that is to say, Sir *John Lutterell*, *John Fletcher*, *Henry Ostrick* and others), I my selfe was also taken with the same sweate in *London*, and after it, whe. her with euill diet in keeping, or how I know not, I was cast into such an extreme feuer, as I was neither able to ride nor goe; and the shippbe being at *Portsmouth*, *Thomas Windham* had her away from thence before I was able to stand vpon my legges, by whom I lost at instant fourforebound [=£300 of the present day]. Besides I was appoynted by them that died (if they had liued) to haue had the whole government both of shipppe and goods, because I was to them the folle inuentor of that trade.

In the first voyage to *Barbary* there were two *Moores*, being noble men, whereof one was of the Kings blood, conueyed by the said Maister *Thomas Windham* into their countrey out of *England*.

Yours humble at your commandement, JAMES ALDAY.

THE SECOND VOYAGE TO BARBARY IN 1552, DESCRIBED BY MASTER JAMES THOMAS.

The secound voyage to *Barbary* in the yeare 1552. Set forth by the right worshipful Sir *John Yorke*, Sir *William Ger[r]ard*, Sir *Thomas Wroth*, Maister *Frances Lambert*, Maister *Cole*, and others. Written by the relation of Maister *James Thomas*, then Page to Maister *Thomas Windham*, chiefe Captaine of this voyage.

JHe shippes that went on this voyage were three, whereof two were of the Riuier of *Thames*, That is to say, the *Lyon of London*, whereof Master *Thomas Windham* was Captaine and part owner, of about an hundred and fiftie tunnes: The other was the *Buttofe* [*Rodolph*] about fourfore tunnes, and a *Portugall Caravel*, bought of certayne *Portugals* in *Newport in Wales*, and fraughted for this voyage, of summe fixtie tunnes. The number of men in the Fleete were an hundred and twentie. The Master of the *Lyon* was one *John Kerry* of *Mynh[er]ald* in *Somerfethire*, his Mate was *David Landman*. The chiefe Captaine of this small Fleete was Maister *Thomas Windham* a Norfolke gentleman borne, but dwelling at *Marshfield-parke* in *Somerfethire*.

This Fleete departed out of *King[s]-rode* neere *Bristol* about the beginning of May 1552. being on a Monday in the morning [*The 2d and 9th of*

*May 1552, were Mondays], and the Monday fortnight next ensuing in the evening came to an ancker at their first part in the roade *Zafra* or *Afasi* on the coast of *Barbarie*, standing in 32. degrees of latitude, and there put on land part of our marchandise to be conueid by land to the citie of *Morocco*: which being done, and haue refresched our felues with victuals and water, we went to the second port called *Santa Cruz*, where we discharged the rest of our goods, being good quantitie of linnen and woollen cloth, corall, amber, flet, and diuers other things well accepted of the *Mooris*. In which road we found a French ship, which no knowing whether it were warre or peace between *England* and *France*, drewe her felue as neare vnder the towne wals as the could possible, crusing aside of the town for her defence, if need were, which in deed feeling vs drawe neare, shot at us a piece from the wals, which came ouer the *Lion* our Admirall, between the maine maste and foremast. Whereupon we comming to an anker, presently came a pinnes aboard vs to know what we were, who understanding that we had bene there the yere before [This confirms Allday's statement], and came with good leue of their king in merchant wife, were fully satisfied, and gaue vs good leue to bring our goods peacefully on shore, where the Viceroy, whose name was *Sibill Manache*, within short time after came to visite vs, and vifed vs with a'l curteisie. By diuers occasions we spent here very neare three moneths before we could get in our lading, which was Sugar, Dates, Almonds, and Malaffos or sugar Syrrope. And for all our being here in the heate of the Sommer, yet none of our company perished by sicknesse.*

Our ships being laden, wee drew into the Sea for a Westerne wind for *England*. But being at sea, a great leake fell vpon the *Lion*, so that we were driven to *Lancerota* and *Forteuentura*, where, betweene the two Islands, we came to a road, whence we put on land out of our fayd ship 70. chettes of Sugar vpon *Lancerota* with some dozen or sixteeen of our company, where the inhabitants supposing we had made a wrongfull prize of our carauell, suddenly came with force vpon our people, among whom I my felue was one, tooke vs prisoners, and spoiled the sugars: which thing being perceiued from our ships, they manned out three boates, thinking to rescue vs, and draue the Spaniards to flight, whereof they slewne eighteeen, and took their governour of the Island prisoner, who was a very aged gentle-

man about 70. yeeres of age. But chasing the enemie so farre for our recouerie, as powder and arrowes wanted, the Spaniardes perciuing this, returned, and in our mens retire [retreat] they slew six of them. Then a Parley grew, in the which it was agreed, that we the prisoners should be by them restored, and they receive their old gourmour, giuing vs a testiemonie vnder his and their hands what damages wee had there receiued; the which damages were there restored, and made good by the King of Spaine his marchantes on our returne into *England*.

After we had searched and mended our eake, being returned aboard, we came vnder faire, and as wee were going to the sea on the one side of the Island, the *Cacafugo* and other ships of the King of *Portugals* Armada entered at the other, and came to anker in the road from whence we were but newly departed, and shot off their great ordinance in our hearing. And here by the way it is to bee understood that the *Portugals* were much offended with this our new trade into *Barbarie*, and both in our vilage the yere before, as also in this they gaue out in *England* by their merchants, that if they tooke vs in thos parties, they would vise vs as their mortall enemies, with great threats and menaces. But by God and good prouidence we escaped their handes.

From this Island shapring our course for *England*, we were seuen or eight weeks before we could reach the coast of *England*. The first port wee entered into was the haue of *Plymouth*, from whence within short time wee came into the *Thames*, and landed our marchandise at *London*, about the ende of the moneth of October 1552. —*Hakluyt, Voyages, Vol. II., Part II., pp. 7-9, Ed. 1599.*

13. All these English Voyages, therefore, had been planned and carried out before either of the two following Works, translated &c. by Eden, had come from the press. As he has given no account of them; it has been all the more necessary to say thus much here, in order to shew that in these *very* early days of oceanic discovery, our forefathers were not altogether idle.

III.



Unique, imperfect, copy of *A new interlude and a mery of the nature of the . iiiij. elementes, &c.*, written in the reign of Henry VIII., and probably printed [? by John Rastel] about 1519, is in the Garrick Collection of Plays, in the British Museum (Press mark, C. 39, b. 17).

This interlude contains [at C i.] the following reference to the New World, in a dialogue between *Experyence* and *Studyous desire*:

*Ex. ¶ Syr this ys ynglande lyenge here
And this is skotlande yat Ioynethe him nere
Compassyd a boute every where
With the occian see rownde
¶ And next from them westwardly
Here by hym selfe alone doth ly.
Irelande that holsome grondre
¶ Here than is the narowe seey
To Calyece and Boleyne the next wey
And flaunders in this parte
Here lyeth fraunce next hym loynynge
And spayn southwarde from thens standyngre
And portyngale in this quart
This contrey is called Itale
Behold where Rome in ye myddes doth ly
And Naples here be yonde
And this lytell See that here is*

xx

*Is calyd the Gulfe of Venys
And here venys doth stande
¶ As for almayne lyeth this way
Here lyeth denmarke and norway
And northwarde on this syde
There lyeth Iselonde when men do fyse
But be yonde that so colde it is
No man may there abyde
¶ This See is called the great Occyan
So great it is that never man
Coudē tell it sith the worlde began
Tyll nowe within this, xx. yere
Westwarde be founde new landes
That we never harde tell of before this
By wrytyng nor other meanys
Yet many nowe haue ben there
¶ And that contrey is so large of rome
Muche lenger than all cristendome
Without fable or gyle
For dyuers maryners haue it tryed
And sayled streight by the coste syde
Aboue v. thousand myle
¶ But what commodytes be within
No man can tell nor well Imagin
But yet not longe a go
Some men of this contrey went
By the kynges noble consent
It for to serche to that entent
And coudē not be brought thereto
¶ But they that were the ventere[rs]*

ie so farre for our
ies perciuing this,
x of them. Then a
prisoners should be
ar, giuing vs a testi-
had there receiued ;
od by the King of

g returned aboard,
on the one side of
Portugals Armada
om whence we were
our hearing. And
rtugals were much
th in our voiage the
by their merchants,
as as their mortall
od and good prouis-

were feuen or eight
The first port wee
ce within short time
e at London, about
Voyages, Vol. II.

ad been planned
ng Works, trans-
ess. As he has
more necessary
at in these very
others were not

Hau cause to curse their maryners
Fals of promys and dissemblers
That falsy them betrayed
Which wold take no paine to saile farther
Than their owne lyt and pleasure
Wherfore that vyyge and dyuers other
Suche kavyffes haue distroyed
¶ O what thyngē a had be than
Yf that they that be englyshe men
Myght haue ben the furst of all
That ther shudde haue take possesson
And mad furst buyldynge and habytacion
A memory perpetuall
And also what an honorable thyngē
Bothe to the realme and to the kyngē
To haue had his domynyon extendyngē
There into so farre a grounde
Whiche the noble kyngē of late memory
The most wyse pryncipe the. viij. He[n]ry
Causyd furst for to be founde
¶ And what a great meritorious dede
It were to haue the people instructed
To lye more vertuously
And to lerne to knowe of men the maner
And also to knowe god theyr maker
Whiche as yet lye all befaſtaly
For they neither knowe god nor the deuell
Nor neuer harde tell of heuyn nor hell
Wrytyngē now other scripture
But yet in the stede of god almyght
Theſ[yl] honour the sone for his great lygg[h]t
For that doth them great pleasure
¶ Buyldynge nor house they haue non[e] at all
But wodes / cotes / and cauys small
No merueyle though it be so
For they vse no maner of yron
Nother in tolole nor other wepon
That shudde helpe them thereto
¶ Copper they haue which is foundo
In dyuers places aboue the grounde
Yet they dyg not therfore
For as I sayd they haue non[e] yryn
Wherby they shuld in the yerth myne
To serche for any wore
¶ Great haboundaunce of woddes ther be
Moste parte vyr and pyne aple tre
Great ryches myght come therby
Both py[t]che and tarre and sope assphys
As they make in the eest landes
By brymyngh therol only
¶ Fyache they haue so great plente
That in hauyns take and slayne they be
With staus withouten fayle
Nowe frenchemen and other haue founden the trade
That yericly of fyshē there they lade
A boue an. C. [hundred] sayle
¶ But in the south parte of that contrey
The people there go nakyd alway
The lande is of so great hete
And in the north parte all the clothes
That they were / is but befaſtes skynnes
They haue no other fete [feat]
But howe the people furst began
In that contrey or whens they cam
For clerkes it is a questyon[.]
Other thynges mo I haue in store
That I coude tel therof but now no more
Tyll a nother season

S. ¶ Than at your pleasure shew some other thinge
Vt lyketh me so wel your commyninge
Ye can not talk a mya

E. ¶ Than wyl I tornē a gayne to my matter
Of Cosmografy where I was err [arr]
Beholde take hede to this
¶ Loo estwarde beyondye ye great occyan
Here entereth the see calyd mediterran
Of. ii. M. [two thousand] myle of lengthe
The Soudans contrey lyeth here by
The great Turke on ye north syde doth ly
A man of merueilous strengthe
¶ This sayde north parte is calyd europa
And this south parte calyd affrica
This eest parte is calyd ynde
But this newe landes founde lately
Ben calyd america by cause only
Americus dyd furst them synde
¶ Loo Iherusalem lyeth in this contrey
And this bi yonde is the red see
That moyses maketh of mencyon
This quarter is India minor
And this quarter India maior
The lande of prester Iohn
¶ But northwarde this way as ye see.
Many other straunge regions ther be
And people that we not knowe
But eastwarde on the see syde
A pryncipe there is that ruleth wyde
Called the Cane of catowe¹
¶ And this is called the great eest see
Which goth all a longe this wey
Towardes the new landis agayne
But whether that see go thyther directly
Or if any wyldernes bytwene them do ly
No man knoweth for certeyne
But these newe landes by all cosmografye
Frome the cane of catous lande can not lye
Lytell paste a thousand myle
But from those new landes men may sayle playne
Estwarde and cum to englande againe
Where we began ere whyle
¶ Lo all this parte of the yerth which I
Haue here discryuyd openly
The north parte we do it call
But the south parte on the other syde
Ys as large as this full and as wyde
Whiche we knowe notynghe at all
¶ Nor whether ye most parte be lande or see
Nor whether the people that there be
Be befaſtayll or connynghe
Nor whether they knowe good cr no
Nor howe they beleue nor what they do
Of this we knowe notynghe

The Voyage referred to, clearly took place in Henry VIII.'s reign. It was probably the Bristol expedition sent out by N. Thorne's father and Hugh Eliot, which discovered Newfoundland; of which Thorne tells us, at p. xvi., "There is no doubt, as now plainly appeareth, if the marriners would then haue beene ruled and folowed their pilots mind, the lands of the West Indies, from whence all the gold commeth, had beeene ours."

¹ *Khan of Cathay.*

IV.



HE special purpose of this Preface has now been carried out. It has been to shew what our forefathers actually accomplished, ere Eden set about the following Translations, or during the time he was actually engaged upon them: and so to supplement the other accounts of Oceanic Discovery contained in the volume.

We have, in conclusion, only space briefly to touch upon one other point, and that is but a simple act of justice.

Most notable is Eden's position as a Man of Science in the Tudor Age. He had the true modest scientific spirit; as when he wrote in 1562, to Sir W. Cecil, "Syth only the respecte of such vertues as it hathe pleased you to thinke commendable in me, hath moved your Honour not only in maner to seeme carefull for me howe I maye hereafter with quietnesse spende my tyme in studie (as is my most desire)," p. xlivi.; and likewise when, in 1574, he thus dwelt at large upon what he did *not* know, a list of disqualifications that must not be pressed too literally, "For yf there be any thing in me, wherein I maye by good reason please my selfe, it is cheefely this, that I haue euer loued and honoured men of

singular vertue or qualitie, in what so euer laudable Art or Science, euen of those whereof mee selfe have litle knowledge, as are Geometrie, Astronomie, Architecture, Musicke, Payntyng, feates of Armes, inuentions of Ingens, and suche lyke," p. xlvi.

But whatever may have been his knowledge or his ignorance, actual or relative; Eden had already grasped the Inductive Method. His life overlapped that of Lord Bacon. May he not be regarded as a near Herald and Forerunner of the Father of Scientific Enquiry, when he uses such language as this; of which his whole life was but the fuller expression?

"Experience, the teacher and meates of all sciences, for lacke of whose ayde (experience I meane) lyke as many greate wittes haue fallen into great errours, so by her ayde, many base and common wittes haue attayned to the knowledge and practise of such wonderfull effectes, as could hardly be comprehended by the discourse of reason. . . .

"Nought els to say, but that experiance to be most certayn which is ioyned with reason or speculacion, and that reason to be most sure which is confirmed with experiance," p. 9.

And thus, from henceforth will the reputation of Richard Eden continue to increase, both as a Scholar and a Scientist.



udable Art or
re little know-
ure, Musicke,
ns, and suche

his ignorance,
the Inductive
con. May he
runner of the
h language as
xpression?
l sciences, for
as many greate
er ayde, many
knowledge and
d hardly be

e most certayn
that reason to
e." P. 9.
on of Richard
d a Scientist.

[The First English book on America.

C Of the newe landes and of ye people
founde by the messengers of the kyn
ge of portyngale named Emanuel.

Of the. r. dyuers nacyons crystened.

Of pope John and his landes and of
the costely keyes and wonders molo
dyes that in that lande is.]



[A Note on Jan van Doesborch, a printer at Antwerp, between 1508-1530 A.D.]



Nything that concerns the printer of the first English Work relating to America, must henceforth be of increasing interest.

There does not appear to be in existence, any typographical history of Antwerp for the period during which the first Text in this volume was produced.

The learned and most courteous Librarian of the Royal Library at the Hague, Dr M. F. A. G. Campbell, the author of the well-known *Annales de la Typographie néerlandaise au XVe siècle*, La Haye, 1874-8, 8vo, thus writes, on the 21st April 1885.

How glad should I have been if I had been able to give you full information about Jan van Doesborch, the Antwerp printer in the first half of the sixteenth century. But, alas, the History of Printing in that century has been, without any sound reason, neglected to that point that even sixteenth-century books are now-a-days more rare than their predecessors of the fifteenth. If Jan van Doesborch had had only one foot in the fifteenth century, I should have been able to give you matter enough to compose his history; because I, and my predecessor as Librarian of this Library (Mr Holtrop), have devoted the better part of our lives to the study of the typography and typographers before the year 1500. Now John of Doesborch did not print till after 1508, because in that year, he entered the Guild of St Lucas at Antwerp, as *verlichtere*, "miniature painter."

When such an authority as Dr Campbell writes thus, the present Editor may be excused of his ignorance on this subject. Nevertheless the following is offered as a mere beginning of this study.

2. Doesburg is a Dutch town, about ten miles to the east of Arnhem.

Jan van Doesborch, Doesborcke, Doesburgh, or as he styles himself in (*f*) the *xv. tokens*, Iohan fro doesborch, may have succeeded to the printing business of Roeland van der Dorpe, at Antwerp. He was contemporary with our Wynkyn de Worde and Richard Pynson: and occupies a similar position in Antwerp typography, to that filled by those two English printers at Westminster and London.

He seems to have printed in three different houses. His earliest books were printed at the sign of *Aen dijsere wage*, "the Iron balance." Those produced about 1518, are printed "besides the *Camer porte*." His latest books, finished about 1530, are at *die Lombaerde veste*, "the Lombard fortress."

It is very remarkable that Doesborch should, at such an early date, have printed the English books that he did;

especially such an important work as Arnold's *Chronicle*. He was probably employed in this work by some of the merchants of the English House at Antwerp. He stands in the same relation to our Literature at this time, that Hans Luft of Marburg did fifteen or twenty years later. No books are so scarce as the early English books printed by foreign printers on the Continent; of which the following Text is one of the earliest.

3. The first book attributed to this printer, by P. C. van der Meersch, in his *Recherches sur la vie et les travaux des imprimeurs Belges et Néerlandais établis à l'étranger*, i. 131, Gand 1856, is—

(a) *Die destructie van Troyen*, "the destruction of Troy." Antwerp, folio, no date.

The late eminent bookseller of Amsterdam, Mr Frederick Muller, issued, in 1872, a *Catalogue of Books, Maps, Plates on America; and of a remarkable Collection of Early Voyages*, offe *...* by him for sale. At p. 6, he states that he acquired, in 1871, at the sale of an insignificant library at Antwerp, a volume containing four pieces, "all printed there in the first ten years of the 16th century."

One of these was—

(b) *Van der nieuer werelt oft landschap nieuwelijc ghenoden vaden doortluch tighen conn. van Portugal door den alderbeste pilot ofte zecken- edr d'werelt*, "of the new world or landscapes, newly found for the illustrious King of Portugal by the best pilot or mariner in the world." This is a translation from the Italian (through the Latin) into Dutch, of the Third Letter of Amerigo Vespucci. The colophon runs, *Gheprent Thantwurpen aen Dycseren waghe. Bi Jan van Doesborch,* "Printed at Antwerp, at the iron balance, by Jan van Doesborch."

It consists of eight unnumbered leaves, [with] 6 woodcuts. The verso of the last leaf is filled up by a wood engraving. On the recto of the first leaf [is the identical cornerwise engraving that is described hereafter at p. xxix, co. 2]; on the verso of leaf 1, Jonas thrown into the mouth of the whale; recto of leaf 3, four female aborigines [see p. xxviii.]; verso of leaf 4, fighting Indians [see p. xxix.]; verso of leaf 6, repeated from the recto of leaf 1; and verso of the last leaf, repeated from the recto of leaf 3.

Mr Muller states—

The book bears no date, but it is out of question, that it has been printed in the period 1506-9, the time when all the separate editions of Vespuccius were published. It is one of the first productions of the famous printer, Jan van Doesborgh, at Antwerp; whose publications (principally romances of chivalry with woodcuts, curious popular books, &c.) rank among the rarest of the Antwerp printers. Just the kind of publications that makes it easy to understand that they have disappeared, as it were, under the hands of the reading public.

Another text in this precious volume is thus described, at p. 277, by Mr Muller—

(c) *Van de wonderliche en costelichen van Pape Jans landenes,*
“Of the wonders and precious things of Pope John’s lands.”

The remainder of the first page filled with four curious woodcuts, representing 1^o, a wild man with a beast’s head bearing a fish [see p. xxxv.]; 2^o, an elephant [see p. xxxii.]; 3^o, a griffin with a man in his paws [see p. xxxiv.]; and 4^o, three men fighting against three birds [see p. xxxiii.]

Recto of the last leaf, *Gheprint Thantwerpen. Aen dijere wage by my Jan, van Doesborch.* “Printed at Antwerp at the iron balance by me Jan van Doesborch.”

Eleven different woodcuts in the text, four of them repeated from the recto of leaf 1. On the 5th leaf, a woodcut of the bird Phoenix in flames [see p. xxxiv.] The verso of the last leaf filled with two wood engravings, one representing the Virgin with the Child, the other the printer’s mark of Roeland van der Dorne, used in 1497, &c. [a herald with his attributes, holding a trumpet].

It is therefore perfectly clear that the First English book on America is mainly a translated compilation from these two early Dutch tracts; and that most of the woodcuts of the English text had already appeared in its Dutch originals.

We therefore place next—

(d) *Of the new landes, &c.*

Clearly, the latest date that can be assigned to this tract is 1511. Had it been written later, the information contained in it would not have been so crude. See the progress of knowledge as shewn in the English Interlude of 1519, quoted at p. xx. It would seem to have been translated by a priest in the Low Countries, who had but an imperfect acquaintance with English; for he uses *hemels* for heavens; *drycantiche*, for three-cornered, *ferswynnymynges*, *kettors*, &c.

The Catalogue of the Grenville Collection, in describing the unique copy here reprinted (Press mark, G. 7106), states—

“From mentioning Emanuel, King of Portugal, and exclaiming against Luther, the present tract may be about 1521 or 1522, when King Emmanuel died, and Luther was burned in effigy.”

There is not a word about Luther in the tract; and it is typographically evident from the above, that the tract can hardly be later than 1511.

4. It is quite impossible, at present, to give a chronological list of books produced by Jan van Doesborch. A few only can be cited.

(e) [The compilation by R. Arnold, known as *Arnold’s Chronicle*.] In this booke is conteyned the names of ye bayliffs of the cite of London from the tyme of king richard the first, and also the articles of the Chartur and liberties of the same Cyte, &c. No date or place of printing. British Museum (Press mark, 21, a. 10).

This is attributed to Doesborch’s press, and was a very large work to be undertaken by him, in what was probably a foreign language to him. It contains the original text of the poem of *The Nut-brown Maid*.

In the British Museum (Press mark, C. 25, e. 29) there is an imperfect copy of a tract on the Fifteen tokens of the Day of Doom. It wants the title page. The colophon is as follows:—

(f) “A lytell treatise that which is called the xv. tokens which been ate translated out of frenshe in to Englishe.

Emprynt by me Iohan fro doesborch dwellynge at Anwerpe by the Iron ballance, &c.

These six texts are probably among the earliest productions of Doesborch’s press.

5. We now come to the middle period of his life’s work. In the British Museum (Press mark, 1073, b. 32) there is a Dutch life of the fabulous necromancer of the Middle Ages, Virgilius.

(g) *Virgilius ¶ Van sijn leuen doot / ende vauten, &c.* No date or place of printing.

This tract is probably the original of the rare English *Virgilius* among the Douce books at the Bodleian, which has been reprinted by Mr Uterson, and also by Mr Thoms, in his *Early English Prose Romances*, Vol. 2, Ed. 1858.

(h) The title runs thus:

The lyfe of Virgilius and of his deth and many marvayles that he dyd in his lyfe tyme by whycherafte and nygramancye thorowgh the helpe of the devyls of hell.

The colophon is

Thus endethe the lyfe of Virgilius with many dyuers con-
saytes that he dyd. Emprynt in the cytie of Anwarpe by me
Iohan Doesborch dwellynge at the camer porte.

Mr W. C. Hazlitt, in his *Handbook of Popular Literature, &c.*, p. 381, Ed. 1867, quotes the following title of a Work apparently at present in an English private library.

(i) Here begynneth a lytell story that was of a trewhdone in the land of Gelders, of a mayde that was named Mary of Nemegen that was

Imprinted at Anwarpe by me Iohan Duisbroughe dwellynge besyde the camer porte.

Dr Campbell states that in the Royal Library at the Hague, is a copy of the following Work, printed by Doesborch.

(j) *Den oostpronck onser Solicheyt.* Printed at Antwerp on 31 May 1517. With woodcuts and printer’s mark.

Also a Work, sometimes erroneously attributed to Jan van Naeldwyck,

(k) *Die alder excellentste Cronyke va Brabant 1518.* With woodcuts and printer’s mark.

Of this work, there is a copy of an earlier edition printed in October 1512 in the British Museum (Press mark, G. 405, f.). This may also have been printed by Doesborch.

The next Work that we can quote is, for the time it was produced, a wonderful book. It is a pictorial representation of all the birds, beasts, and fishes, real and imaginary, of the time. It is in three Parts.

(l) *Der dieren palleys en die vgaderinge vanden beesten.* The colophon is *Gheprint bi my Jan van doesborch Thantwerpen Int iær heeren M.CCCCC. ende XX. den vijfsten dach in Mey.* [5 May 1520.]

Copies are in the British Museum, the Royal Library at the Hague, and elsewhere.

Mr Hazlitt, *Handbook*, &c., p. 8, gives the following account of Lawrence Andrewe’s translation of this work.

(m) The noble lyfe and natures of man, of beestes, serpentys, fowles, and fysshys, that be made known.

Andwarpe by John Doesborch, n.d. fol.

In the prologue, Andrewe, the translator, says, “In the name of our Saviour criste Iesu maker and redemour of al mankynd, I Laurens andrewes of the towne of Calis haue translated for Johnes doesborch book prenter in the cite of Andwarpe this present volume deuyded in thre partes which was never before in no maternall langage prentyd till now.”

6. One other Work will complete our present provisional list of this printer’s productions.

(n) *Van Brabant die excellente Cronyke.* Of which the colophon runs, *Gheprint tot Antwerpen op die Lombaerde veste, bi mi Jan van Doesborch, int iær ons heren M. CCCXX, in Iuino.*

Copies of this work are in the British Museum, the Royal Library at the Hague, and elsewhere.

7. This is all we have been able to learn, so far, of the printer of the First English book on America. Much more, no doubt, remains to reward the researches of the bibliographer.]

life's work.
32) there is
the Middle

No date or

rare English
leian, which
Mr Thoms,
d. 1858.

les that he dyd
owgh the helpe

dyuers con-
awarde By me

Popular Lite-
ring title of a
te library.

the done in the
megen that was

yellunge besyde

at the Hague,
besborch.

werp on 31 May

van Naeldwyck,
With woodcuts

dition printed
mark, G. 405,
borch.

the time it was
al representati-
nd imaginary,

ten. The colo-
pen Int iacer ons
[5 May 1520.]
yal Library at

the following
this work.
erpenys, fowles,

the name of oure
kynd, I Laurens
nes doesborowc
ume preydty till

ent provisional

he colophon runs,
n van Doesborch,

um, the Royal

, so far, of the
merica. Much
earches of the

Of the newe landes and of ye people founde by the messengers of the kyn- ge of portyngale named Emanuel.

Of the. x. dyuers nacyons crystened.

Of pope John and his landes and of the costely keyes and wonders molo- dyes that in that lande is.



Ere aforetymes in the yere of our Lorde god. M.CCCC.xcv. [1496] and so be/ we
with shypes of Luisboene sayled oute of Portyngale thorough the commaunde-
ment of the Kynge Emanuel So haue we had our vyage/ For by fortune
ylandes over the great see with great charge and daunger so haue we at the lafte
founde oon lordshyp where we sayled well. ix. C. [900] myle[s] by the cooste of
Selandes there we at ye lafte went a lande but that lande is not nowe knownen
for there haue no masters wryten therof nor it knowethe and it is named
Armenica/ there we sawe meny wonders of beetles and fowles yet we haue never
seen before/ the people of this lande haue no kynge nor lorde nor theyr god
But all things is comune/ this people goeth all naked But the men and women
haue on theyr heed/ necke/ Armes/ Knees/ and fete all with feders bounden for
there bewtynes and sayrenes. These folke lyuen lyke bestes without any reson-
ablenes and the wymen be also as comon. And the men hath conuerfacyon
with the wymen/ who that they ben or who they fyrt mete/ is she his syster/
his mother/ his daughter/ or any other kyndred. And the wymen be very
hoote and dysposed to lecherdnes. And they ete also on[e] a nother The man
etethe his wyfe his chylderne/ as we also haue seen and they hange also the bodyes or persons fleeshe in the smoke/ as men
do with vs swynes fleſhe. And that lande is ryght full of folke/ for they lyue commonly. iii. C. [300] yere and more as with
sykenesse they dye nat/ they take much fyſhe for they can goen vnder the water and ſet[che] to the fyſhes out of the water.
and they were also on[e] vpon a nother/ for the olde men brynge the yonge men thereto/ that they gather a great company thereto
of towne partyes/ and come the o:[e] ayene the other to the felde or bateyll/ and flee on[e] the other with great hepes. And nowe
holdeth the ſylde/ they take the other pryoners And they bryngē them to deth and ete them/ and as the deed is eten then
fley they the reſt. And they been than eten alſo/ or otherwyſe lyue they longer tymes and many yeres more than other people for
they haue costely ſpyces and rotes/ where they them ſellic recouer with/ and hele them as they be ſeke.

[(Here follows a woodcut of the Natives of) GENNEA]

Of the blacke Mores.



T he fyreste cam we in the lande of Canarien/ whyche is, C. and. I. [150] myles from Lyfse-
bone. And ther betwyn been. ij. ylandes.
In yat one is well made people and men
make there moche cheefe of great wylde
gootes. also is ther fishe and suykere good
cheep. That other yland is not enhabite
ther be lytell people therin/ and they be all a frayne and
wylde/ also ther ayeen lyeth the lande of Barbera/ and is from
them in to ye Gennea. CC.I. [250] myles. and that is the
blackes mores land. and ayen ye begynnynge of this lande is
oon aforemontayen and hooth caput viride/ and thereby is ye
towne Bitfagitsch. v. C. [500] myles from Lussebonen there by
be many w[h]aleysfhes and flyinge fylfhes on the on syde of
Bifagitsche. ij. C. and I. [250] myles fayle men vnder yat fone
so ferre/ that men the northe fayle sterre or pollumarticum/ or
the waghen called/ no more may be seen/ but pollum ante
articum or yat south layd sterre fawe we fourth with[.] the
forsayde Morelande is M. iiiij. C. [1400] myles great/ there
ye people goeth all naked with golden rynges on handes
and fete.

[(Here comes a woodcut of Natives) IN · ALLACO]



H at lande of Allago is. v. C. [500] myles
greater And gothe ayeunte the begynnynge
of Arabien and there is that kyngdom
Safale[.] in this lande Allago is the people
clothed as aboue is marked/ the[y] were
and bere for there clothes skynnes of wylde
bestes. The men bere clokes made of barkes
of trees and ledder to kyuer theyr members with. And the
women kyuer them with skynnes of bestes. and take vpon
there hedges for kerchers skynnes of oxen or other bestes[.]
also py[.]che the[y]theyr mennes forhed lyke as men pytche the
shyppes/ and there dwellynge is vnder the erthe. There is
many cowes. oxen/ great shepe and other fayre bestes. This
is on fayre and lusty lande of good water and swete herbes.
This people hathe a swyfte hafty speche. There is no money
but of you [? iron] and that every body take it for there ware
therere whyte flauies there weypyns is lange pykes and stones
ther they caste myghtly with. That Lande is so full of sande
yat they muste goo vpon brode trencheders that they falle not
and synke. After that cometh men into the lande of arabyen.

[(Here is another woodcut representing Natives) IN: ARABIA]

Arabia.



Omyng in Arabia fawe we ye people clothed
lyke as here is figured stande and out [of]
this kyngdome hath be oon of the three holy
kyngys. Item ther bynde they ther oxe son
with Arabie gold about ther hornes/ and
erys. And also goldyn rynges aboute th[e]yr
legges. And for gold take they of mar-
chaundes sylkyng kerchers and lynen clothe. Item ther after
fe we now. v. ylandes. the fyrt yland named Momabith.
sixty myles from Safalen. is leeid ye towne Quiola that was
founde of the kynges folke of portyngal. And they flewe
ther moche people and robbed the towne. And there without
had there kyng edfyded on castell that is named seynt Iacobis
castell there in lyeth a. C. [100] bolde and hardy men that
lyeth and keþet it.

[(Here is a striking woodcut representing, with great life and action, a spirited attack on the gate of some European town; which has evidently been borrowed by John of Desborough from some other printed book, chronicle, or other work, printed by himself or other printer.)



He[n] feuente myles from Quiola lyeth the
towne Bombaffa that they also byrnd and
robbed that also there they gatte moche
goodes. From thens nowe. xxiiij. myle[s]
lyeth the great towne Meli[n]da and they
be frendes/ and there be many floueynes
and fell people out of Geneen. From
Melinda it is. iiiij. score and. x. myles to on Persia there gowe
they ouer the fee. For by the towne Megha into the ylande.
Auxendia. There is also one that hath be of ye three holy
kynges of the eest. C. [100] myles into the Kyngdome of
Canenor and there begyn the spyces to growe and from thens
fare they forthe in to the great lande of great Indyen.

C Of great Indyen.

[(Here follows a woodcut of the Inhabitants of) MAIOR: INDIA]



Hey gowe from Cananor into great Indyen
there the people goo all naked but yat
the[y] kyuer there members with lynen
cloth and they be brounde blacke/ with
longe here and of the women is not wryten
but on kaute the fee fawe men manye mer-
uelouse people of manereren the women
bere there chyldren and theyr householde flusse. Here fynde
men gynger/ peper/ comeyn/ and all manere of spyces/ and

ARABIA]

people clothed
e, and out [of]
the three holy
ey ther oxe son
er horns/ and
about he[lyr]
they of mar-
Item ther after
d Momisabith.
uiola that was
nd they flewe
d there without
d feynt Iacobis
ardy men that

life and action, a
; which has evi-
some other printed
or other printer.]

uiola lyeth the
also byrned and
y gatte moche
xxiiij. myles[s]
n]da and they
many floueynes
Geneen From
eria there gowe
nto the ylande
f ye three holy
Kyngdome of
and from thens
ndyen.

OR: INDIA]

o great Indyen
naked but yat
rs with lymen
e blacke/ with
n is not wryten
en manye mer-
en the women
e. Here fynde
of spycses/ and

coiteley stones for lytel' moneye. There be also many maner
of frute fygges of good fayour. viij. ynches longe and. iiiij.
ynches brode. There be bulfledes and coyes but the coyes
flepe they not/ there groweth good wyne/ muche honeye/ ryse/
costely corne whyte as wete mele/ Ther by standeth the
towne of Banderana and it is. viij myles into Callienten
from thens is xl. myles there men goo for all maner of
spycses that men were wonte to caray and conuey ouer the
reddie fee thorowgh Alexander but nowe is there one newe
way founden ouer the the see[.] in Calacuten is many folke out
of feynt thomas lande yat also be crystened/ and folke of other
landes and nacyons they goo ouer into that kyngdome Kyng-
ryche Gutschyn as hereafter standes wryten.

¶ Of Gutschin that Kyngedom.

[Here is a woodcut representing two Natives fighting, see p. xxv.]

Nd than cam we in the kyngdome of Gut-
schyn and ther hath the kyng of portygale
do make. ij. Castyles from here was the thre
holy kynges. there groeth much peper and
the properst stapell therof. That kyngdom
Colen is. xxiiij. myles from there/ and there
been many kryftened men/ we fynde also
great Olysantes and many dyuers maner and wonders bestes and
other thynges that men cannot wryghte all. gardeynes frutes is
there muche gretter than in our landes of Europa. That ylante
Melaqua is from thens. viij. C. [800] myles/ There also is
muche costely spycses. There is nowe. ij. ylandes the on is
Bandan and therin groweth the clouses. That other Tanagora
or Narnaria and there groeth not no other wodde than whyte
and red fandelien wodde/ This is fortuned that for a bell of a
halfe men may haue one handfull of peerles. In Gutschin
ere some tymes there kyng but that do the people of his
ourke and holde obedience vnder them one with a nother
They doo all there thynges all fleyghtly For as as they be
assembled in one gatherynge/ than cryeth the capitayne I will
sowe/ and as the subiectes here theyr capitayne crye sowe than
ake they parte of/ the sede and no man sayth the contrary and
setteth the other iye and that takethe the lorde with out any
ody contrary saynge/ and so do they in all merchaundysse.
Orthe by that kyngdome Gutschyn/ Colum/ Bandan/ and
Nagarria. xxx. [thirty] myles[.] in Arfinia there hath the kyng.
ij. kynges vnder hym/ and there lyeth buryed feynt Thomas
poitell.



[Here is a woodcut of a tree apparently intended to represent a fig-tree.
It might do equally well for many other kinds of trees.]



N some of these asforsayde wrytten landes ben
great and fayre frutes and they be greater
than in these our landes of Europa. In Isla
mandra be great hygh trees for the people of
yat contrey hewe great steppes aboue to
clyme vp in to the tree to gather the frutes
that groweth there on for whan they be a
thrust to take there of. In Arfinia is great brode fygge Trees
with great fygges well. viij. ynches longe and. iiij. ynches brode
and the Fygge tre is so brode of braunce and leues that. xl.
[forty] men may be hydde vnder the forefad braunches and
leues for the hete of the sonne/ and there for to reste all to
gather at theyr one pleasure.

[Here are two woodcuts cornerwise, one representing two Indians, the
other two men and a woman of Europe, see p. xxv.]



E haue in this vyage fayled aboue the forth
parte of the worlde for to reken from Luf-
fingboren whiche is ferre equinocciall scher
linien. xxxix. [thirty-nine] grades and on halfe
so haue we fayled ouer ye linie equinocciali.
l. [fifty] grades that maketh xc. [ninety] grades therfore they of Luffbone is vnder yat
forsayde linie. xxxix. grade and one halfe in the hygh hed of the
hemels is the breyde of westes/ so is them of Luffbone to these
folke to fene the. l. [fifty] grades is ouer the selfe lyne soth
cornerwyfe. v. grades in perpendicular linia whiche linie as we
stande ryght of yat poynyt the hemls hange vpon our hed and these
folke in theyr fydes or rybbes and woort set in the maner
of on tryanghel or on drycantyle cornard, therfore it muft nedes
be yat the sowth landes be tempered with swete erthe for the
northe wyndes can nat there blowe.

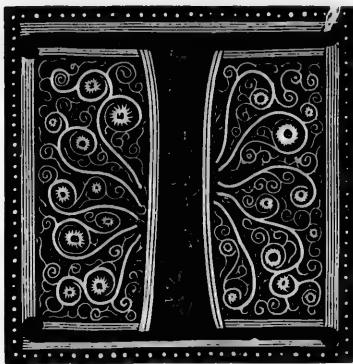
[Here, across the middle leaf of the tract, is an excellent representation o
the King of Cochin seated on a kind of tressel, carried by four men, sur-
rounded with armed attendants: and with an umbrella borne by one
man, and not a canopy borne by four men, as stated below in the text.
The woodcut extends across about two-thirds of the folio, in the margin
of which occurs the following note.]



Fter this maner of fourme is the Kyng of
Gutschyn borne with the nobleste of his
lande/ And before hym is borne many
instrumentes of mufyke as trompettes and
other and. iiiij. of the nobleste bereth the
canapie ouer his hed lest that the soon
shuld burne hym/ and this kyng is beloued
of all his estates and common people.

[This fresh tract is headed by a woodcut representing angels bearing the pyx.]

¶ OF THE. X. DYVERCE CRISTENED NACIONS.



T is to knowe that ye people of crystindom is deuided and ben in. x. Nacyons. That is to vnderstand the Latyne/ Grekes/ Indien/ Iacobites/ neflorijnes/ moronites/ Armenes/ georgianes/ Surianes/ mororabes/ wher of yemoost deyle is kettersand kyt of/ of the holy Romes chyrche.

¶ The fyrsfe nacyon.

[T]wo woodcuts, evidently taken from some Martyrology, come in here. One represents an angel standing by the cross, the other a female saint with a sword sticking in her breast.]



Irsle nacyon is the Latynes and they haue to theyr lorde the Emperour of Almayne and many Kynges/ as the kyng of castly an of Aragon/ of portygale/ of nauaryen, and these kynges is for spaynes nacyon. In yat nacion of the frenche lande is one kyng of Fraunce and many dukes and Erles. In the nacion of Italian is the kyng of Cicylian/ the kyng of Naples and many dukes and Erles and there is also many lordhyppes as Venyeſe Florence feuen Ienuen [? Sienna, Genoa].



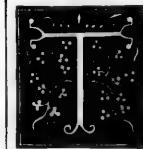
N the nacyon of Germanien is nowe many kynges with out the emperoure/ as the Kyng of Englande/ of Scotlande/ of Vngerien/ of Bohemen/ of Polen/ of Denmarke/ of sweden/ of Northwegen/ of Dalmacyne/ and there is many Dukes and Erles &c. In that ylände of Sypers [? Cyprus] is the kyng of Sypers/ All these a fore wryten is vnder the obeyfaunce or [? of] the chyrche of Rome.

¶ The seconde nacyon.

He Grekes haue spryntually the Patriarche of Constantynoplen/ and many Archebishops/ bysshops/ and abbottes. And in ye temperalte haue they one Emperour and many dukes and erles/ and there is but fewe of them that be crystened/ For the Agarenen and Turkes hath nowe the moost parte of Grekes/ and is not obedient to the chyrch of Rome. And they haue a great erre for they faye that the holy ghost can not of the fone but alone of the fader. And they say also that there is no purgatory/ that is all a yensye our belefe.

¶ The thyrde nacyon.

[Here follows a woodcut representing St. Thomas kneeling to our Saviour.]



Hey of Indyen hath one pryncie and that is pope John whose myghtynes and rychedome amounteth aboue all prynces of the world for he hath vnder hym. lxxij. [feunty-two] kynges and as pope John dayely rydeth he bere a fore hym one crosse of wode for to thyne on at all tymes and remember vpon the passion of I[es]hu and to the batayle doth he bere. xij. crosses of golde made and fet with precyouse stones for his baners/ in this lande is the body of feynt Thomas.

¶ The fourth nacyon.



Acobyet named also of on ketter Iacob and was be one dyspyle of the Patriarche of Alexandryne/ and this helde the one great land in Oryenten and Afyen and is named that lande of Mambrone and it is by Egypten and gothe to Ethyopen and into Indien to/ and hathe vnder hym well. xl. [forty] kynges rychedom/ these be kytle and christened with a byrnynge yren for they branne the token of the holy crosse in theyr foreshed/ vpon the breste/ vpon the arme/ they confesse them to God alone and none prestes/ and they say that in christo is alone the godhed without the manhood/ and some of them speketh Caldefshe fome Arabier/ some other spe[e]ches after theyr language of the lande/ and thefe been condemned of the holy chyrche in that counsayll of Ceden.

¶ The fyfth nacyon.



Here be also Nestorijnen named of the ketter Nestorinus that was one bysshope of the bysshops of Constantynenoplen and they fett ij. perfones in christo that is the Godhed and ye persones/ and they forsfake that maria is the moder of god/ but they beleue well of I[es]hu. and theyr wrytyngē is in caldenſher speche and they make the sacrament in browne brede and there be great multytoode of them and they dwell in Tartarien and in great Indyen/ and theyr lande is as great as a thoufande of Italy/ and theſe ketters be condemned in that thyrde confayll of Ephefyn and is departed of the holy Romes chyrche and abyde in theyr opynion.

¶ The fyxtē nacyon.



Y the ketter Moren they be named Moroniten they say alone in christo is one vnderſtande and one wyll and thoſe dwell by Lybien in the lande of Phenicen and there be great multitude and they be bolde and hardye men. and great warryars with the bowe/ And they haue theyr bysshops clothed as the Latynes with the biffhops myter on his hed/ and with the troyfers ſtaffe and rynges/ These hath ben ſome tyme vnder the obeyiaunce of the chyrche of Rome whan Innocentius was pope/ but afterwarde came they ayen in theyr opynion and there abyde in theyr opynion.

¶ The ſeuenth nacyon.



Rmennyen is alſo named for that they dwell in the lande of Armenetern nere vnto Anthiochyen and there is whrythyn feruycē of the masses. and theyr other tydes is all in theyr one comon ſpeeche ſo that they all may vnderſtande it what they ſyng or rede/ and they haue theyr hed or fader to whom they do reuerence as we do the pope. And they faste the lenton with greater deuocyon than we doo/ for they ete in the lenton no fyſſhe/ nor they drynke no wyne/ but they ete fyſſhe vpon ydys.

Here is a woodcut representing a ſquadron of English knights, with St. George's flag, armed cap & pie, and galloping in battle. It has nothing whatever to do with the text.]

¶ The eighght nacyon.



His nacyon is named Georgidni of feynt George for they haue hym in theyr batelles for theyr patrone/ and they dwell in the lande of Oryenten/ and they be fayer/ luſty/ and ſtronge pepyll/ and they be a draf of the Medon perſon Afriyren there they aboute dwelle And they haue theyr ſcrys-

ture in ye Greekes ſpeeche and they haue theyr facramentes as the Greekes/ and the clarkes haue rounde crownes/ and they teke the holy graue to Iherufalem with open or ſpred baners. And they gyue the ſarafons no trybute for the ſarafons fereth thoſe folke very fore/ there women bere harneyſe lyke the men and they haue alſo bearded as ye men and they bere vpon theyr heddes and vpon hye cubettes hye hattes and as theſ[y] wryte to the Sodan than gyueth he them that they dysfyre.

¶ The Nyntē nacion.



He Surianen is named after theyr towne Surie that is the grettest in all Suryen or Affryen theyr ſcriptyre and feruycē of god in ye Greekes ſpeeche but they ſpeke ſarafons ſpeeche and they holde the manere of ye grekes/ and haue byſhoppes that in all thynges be obedient and they make theym ſacrament of browne brede and they haue the opynyon of the Greekes ayen the Latynes there be ſome cryſtened that in the holy lande is namyd Samerytanen that were conuereted in the tyme that the apoftels preached but they vnderſtande them not well in the cryſten beleue.

¶ The tenthē nacion.



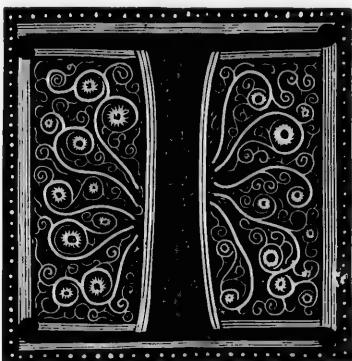
Ororaben ſo called after the laten for they holde and vfe the maner of the cryſten of Ar[a]bien/ and of theſe were wonte to be manye people in Afriken and in Spaengnien but nowe is there lytell in the tellyng/ They haue in theyr feruycē of god lateyne as we do/ And they be vnder the obeyiaunce of the chyrche of Rome. And the latynes prelates but in many thynges ben they dyuerſe departed for alſo the day hath xxiiij. houres/ Alſo many tymes hymnes and psalmes and other orafouns haue they and very longe/ And that that ye Latyns rede in the begynnyng of their feruycē that rede they in the mydle or in the laſte ende. And that that theſe people be very deuoute and they mareye but ones in theyr lyſe and as the women hath loſte theyr fyſt hufbond ſo dothe they meddle no more with no man/ but abyde fro thenſlouth in chaſflye.



Or. ij. cauſes cometh the departyngē of ye cryſten nacyons. The fyſte caufe is that men in olde tyme myght the cryſten haue only haue generall confiſſion/ Therfore as the ketters ſtole vp ayen the cryſten beſeſe ſo was there no body turned nor ſtaught confayll there ayen. The other caufe was the ferewynmyngnes of ye opprefte pope of ye ſchole of Rome that no meſſengere nor learned fulde to the kryſten thowt that were come in feche lodyng/ for had they do that they ſhulde haue been conuereted to the ryght beſeſe. Thorowþ whiche ryght beſeſe bryngē vs to the hyghest gloriye the fader the ſone the holy ghoste thre perfones and one god. Amen.

[AN ABRIDGMENT OF THE MEDIÆVAL LEGEND OF PRESTER JOHN].

[This third Tract has a very large initial letter I, containing what appears to be a representation of Prester John, and of a Roman Catholic monk or pilgrim kneeling beneath him.]



Pope John by ye
grace of god the
mooste myghtyste
kyng a boue all
kyngys of ye
worlde gyue sal
uyte the Emperour
of Rome. and also
thikinge of France.

Oure wel be
louyd frynde We
late you vnder
stante and knowe
of our lande And

the maner of oure lyuinge and of our people beetles and fowles.

¶ And you saye that we beleue not in god and praye not
to hym as you do. So late we you vnderstante that we be
leue in god the father. in god the sonne. and in god the holy
gooste. The whyche be vnpartyble and one very god. and is
all thyngem myghty.

And also certefye yow with oure lettres sealed and doo you
knowlege of oure folke or people and of our lande. And yf
there be ony thyngem yat we kan doo for you. fende vs worde
and we shall it doo with good herte and wyl. And yf it please
ony of you to come in oure lande we shall gyue them gold
and syluer to th[e]yr necessitie/ and make them great lordis. and
gyue to them also lande and good[s] to lyue on. and do to [t]hem
worshyp and honor. For the goodnes that we haue herde say
of you. And we do you knowledge that we haue the richeſte
crownē of the worlde as of golde and syluer and of precyous
ſtones in great multitudine. And we haue also vnder vs myghty.
xlij. kingdomes and al good cristen people. and we kepe also
the poure people with our almes alle that cometh be it strenger
or of oure owne people thorough the loue of almyghty god
oure lorde Ihesu Criste.

¶ Item Oure lande is parted in. iiii. For the landes of
Indien/ there be two. and in that grettest Indien is the body
of feynt Thomas. And this same Indien is partiner of ye coste

of orient for it lyeth besyde a toure ye whych is caalled babel/
and it id [?is] not ferre fro Babilonyen. And also that other
parte of Indien is aboue Septentryon. and there is great
plenty of wyne/ bredde and all maner of vytayle.

¶ Item also in our lande be gryffons/ and it is a great byrde
and a myghty. for he wyl well cary in his neste an oxe/ or an
horse for his yonge byrdes to ete. Also in Saxon is a towne
whych is called Grounwyk ther is one of the clawes yat which
is well as great as an horn of an oxe.

[Here comes, in the original, at the side of the page, a woodcut of an elephant with a castle on its back.]

¶ In our lande be olyphantes/ dromedaries/ wyld oxes
the whyche haue. viij. hornes. also Beeres and Lyons of dyuers
colours/ as ye redd/ grene/ blacke/ and whitte

¶ Item and also be wyld asies the whych haue longe eeres/
and haue two smale hornes. &c.



N our lande be also fowles ye whyche that
haue the mayſtry of all birdes of the worlde/
and haue a colour lyke ye fyre/ and his wingis kyt [?cut] lyke a rafour. and this byrdes
ben called Ilerion. and in alle the worlde is
no more than two. and they lyuen. iiij. ſkore
yere and thenne they laye eggis and fytle vpon them. xl.
dayes and as fone as they haue yonges they flee awaye/ fader
and moder to the zee and ther they drowne theym ſelf. and
alle the byrdes yat come ayenſt them do them company to the
zee. and as fone as the[y] be drowned all the other byrdes
tourne ayen to the neste there they yonge byrdes ben leſte/
and gyue them mete and drinke to the tyme that the[y] can
flee and nurter them ſelfe. &c.

¶ Yet ben there other byrdes the whyche ben called
Tygris/ and they be fo ſtronge that they wyl bere or cary in
theyr neste a man ſytting vpon an horse all armyd fro the hede
to ye ſote.

[Here, at the side of the page, is the representation of a naked man with one eye in his forehead, and bearing a club.]

¶ Item In our lande is also a grete deserte or forest therin dweleth people bothe men and wymmen the whyche haue nomore than one eye afore. and behinde they haue. iij. or. iiiij. eyen

¶ Yet is in oure lande an other maner of people the whiche ete none other than rawe fleshe. and they care not yf it were of man or woman or of beestis and also the[y] care not of ther owne deth. and as sone as there one of them dyeth the[y] ete them all rawe/ both there one [? own] fader or moeder. And they saye yat mans fleyfhe is good and natur[a]ly to ete rawe/ for they saye that they doe it for parte of penaunce for there synnes. And they be also cursed of god/ and they be called Gog and Magog. And of them be no more than one maner of people of this worlde and they shall be distibuted or partid thorough all the world whan Antechryst shall come. and these fame were the people or folke the whych they hadde put in prysone or in holde the great kynge Alexander of Macedonien. But for all that he wente his way. And of this people shalbe no iugement at the dredefull day of dome lyke the prophete sayeth. ¶ *Nescio quis. &c.*

But neuernetes thonder and lytenyng shall come fro heuen and bourne theym all in po[w]der. And whan that we haue ony enemies thanne gyue we theym licence to put theym downe and ete them that be ayensie vs and then make we them to tourne ageyne into there owne lande. For if they sholde abyde longe with vs they shuld vndo vs all and ete vs lyke as they do there owne propre folke.

[Here, also at the side, is the pictorial representation of the creature described in the next paragraph.]

¶ And yet is there another manere of people/ the whyche hath rownde fete lyke an horse/ and also they haue. iij. sharpe clawses behynde/ at there Heles. Wherewith they strongly fught that there is no manere thyng can stonde ayensie them/ nether harnayle/ yrone/ nor stede they passe all thorowth/ and this people gyue vnto vs great trybute. and they be also without dowe great labourers.

¶ Yet is there a nother smale lande in a parte of that fame forest aforesayde/ and it is xliij. [forty-two] dayes Journeys longe. And it is called Feminie the great. And in that fame lande there be thre Quenes without all other landes/ thowe that holden there been of these quenes forefayde. And whan these quenes shall goo to felde/ then eche of them hath. iij. hondered. M. [300,000] wymen and all in harneyse/ with out all the other women the whych that caray vytayle with carte horse and also with olyfauntes. And these women be very manly in sytynge and hardy. ¶ And in this fame lande may come

no men but. ix. dayes in the yere and no lenger/ and than they haue conuersacion and felysshyp with the men and nomore of the hole yere. For if the men there wolde abyde the women shulde them flee all.

¶ And this same lande is closed all aboute with a water called Cyphon comyng out of paradyse. And in this same lande may come no man without a great shyp or a great barke.

¶ Of the people named Pygnies.

[Here is a woodcut representing the battle of the Pigmies and the storks.]



¶ Nd yet is there a nother smale lande and also another Ryuer called Pyconye that is. x. dayes iourneye longe/ and. viij. brode and this people of this forsayde lande be not great/ but they be lyke chyldren of. viij. yere of age and they haue horseyas as great as a great dogge and they be good crystened folke and they haue no warre ayensie noman/ But they haue warre ayensie the fowles every yere/ whan they shall haue in there frute and corne. And than the kynge putteth on his harneyse. and than they fyght ayensie the byrdes. And than there be slain on bothe partyes many on/ and also they be great labourers/ and whan the fylde is don than the byrdes flee a waye fro them.

[Here, at the side, is a circular woodcut of Sagittarius, evidently one of the signs of the Zodiac taken from some illustrated almanac.]

¶ Also in our lande been ye Sagittary. the whyche ben fro the myddel vpward lyke men/ and fro ye myddell donwarde ben they lyke the halfe neder parte of an horse. and they bere bowes and arowes. And the[y] shute stronger than ony other nacyon of people.

¶ And in our lande be also vnicornes and they been of the manere with blacke and grene/ and these vnicornes flee many Lyons. and the Lyon sleeth the vnicorne with subtylnes. Whan the Vnicorne hath put hym to rest at a tree/ and than cometh the Lyon and ronnyth aboue the tree and after hym than ronnyth the vnycorne and wolde fayne fley hym/ and than he ronnyth hym selfe into the tree with his horne so harde that he cannot pull it out a geyne. than commeth the Lyon and hath the mastery vpon the vnicorne.

¶ Item there is a nother parte of a forest therin dwelleth another maner of folke and this people ben. xx. Cubettes of heythe. But they were in tyme paste to be of the heyth of. xl. Cubettes. And they haue nat the pore to come out of that deserte or foreste and all is thorowe the myghte of almygthy god. For if they sholde come out by there strength and hardynesse the[y] wolde conquerre all the worlde.

[Here, at the side, is a curious cut representing the Phoenix burning.]

¶ Here begynnith of ye birde the whyche is called Fenix.

¶ In oure lande is also a byrde ye whyche is called Phenix and is ye fayrest byrde of all ye world and there is nomore than one in all ye cours of nature. and he lyueth C. [100] yere. and thenne flyeth he so hyghe that the sonne sett the syre in his wynges/ and thenne cometh he don ayen to his nest and there he burneth to p[ro]udre and of the affles comyth a worme/ and within. C [100] dayes after growyth there out another byrde as fayre as euer that other was.

¶ Item Also in our lande is plenty of wyne bredd/ fleshe. All that is necessary for manrys body

¶ Item In our lande maye come none venyn beeste on that one fyde

¶ Item Betwene oure lande and the Turkes lande is a ryuer ronnyng and is called Sydon it commeth out of paradyse of the erthe/ and is full of precyous stones.

¶ And also in oure lande ben ronnyng many fmaile riuers the whyche that come out of this forsayde riuers. and they also ben fulle of precyous stones. As Ymaraddus Iaspis Saphyrus Scobaliss Dyamant Topasius/ Carbonkel. Rubin. and yet more other they whyche I not all can reherce.

¶ Also in oure lande growth on herbe and is called Parmanabel/ and that fame herbe is so myghty euer soo who that fame herbe beryth a boute hym he may coniure the deuyll of helle and do hym faye what so euer he wyl axe of hym and therfore the deuyll dare not come in to our lande.

Item also in our lande growth pepper in forestis full of snakes and other venom beestes. and whan it is ripe than fende we for our folke and they put that syre ther in/ and than they venom beestys flee awaye. than we gadder it and carayed to oure houses and wasshed in two or. iij. waters/ and than we drey it ayen/ and also it waxed black and good

¶ Item aboute this passage is a fonteyne or a conduyte/ so who of this watere drinke. iij. tymes he shall waxe yonge/ and also yf a man haue had a sykenes. xxx. yere and drynked of thys fame water he shall therof be hole and fonde. And also as a man therof drinke hym semeth that he had occupied the beste mete and drinke of the worlde. and this fame fonteyne is full of the grace of the holy goost. and who so we in this fame water wasshed his body he shall become yonge of. xxx. yere.

And ye shall knowe that I am haloweth in my moder wombe/ and I am old. v. C. lxii. [562] yere. and I haue me wesshed. vi. tymes in that same water.

[Here, at the side, is a woodcut of a flying griffon carrying a man.]

¶ Item In our lande is also a zee very perulyous/ and there can we haue noo passage with noo maner of shypynge and than do we vs cary there ouer with our gryffons.

¶ Item at that one fyde of this zee ronnyth a smale ryuer and therin be many precyous stones. and also ther growyth a certen herbe that is good to all maner of medycyne.

¶ Also ye shall vnderstante that betwene vs and the Iewes ronnyth a great ryuer that is full of precyous stones and it is so stronge in here ronnyng yat noman ther ouer can passe/ excepte ye faterdaye/ and than parted shehere and toke with here all that the syndeth in here waye. And this same lande moste we strongly kepe for oure ennemyes. an[d] vp these costes haue we. xlj. [42] stronge castels none stronger in ye world. and ben well kepte of people. To vndestande. x. M. [10,000] knyghtes on horsbacke. vi. M. [6000] Croffe bowes. xv. M. [15,000] longe bowes. and. xl. M. [40,000] other men on horsbacke well armed. ye whyche these Castels haue in kyping by caufe that the great kyng of Israhel shall not ther passe with his people. For he is twyes as stronge as I am. And his lande is twyes as grete as all Crystente and turkey. For he hath in his kepyng the feconde parte of the worlde. And the great kyng of Israhel hath vnder hym iij. C. [300] kynghes. iiiij. M. [4000] princes. duces. erles. barons knyghtes/ squyers without nombre. and all these be subgette to the great kyng of Israhel. But yf he myght passe ouer this forsayde ryuer with his people they sholdie flee both cristen and turkes. And ye shall knowe that we all faterdaye late passe. viij. C. or. M. [800 or a 1000] men for beye suche manere good[s] or marchaundys as they wyl haue. but we late them not come with in ye wallis of thys castels. for they bye it without ye walles of thys fortresses. and they paye ther marchaundyses with platis of syluer or of gold for they haue none other money. and whan they haue don ther besynes they tourne home ayen in theyr owne lande. and these forsayde castels be fete to gyder within a bowe shotte. And ye shall vnderstante that within a myle of these castels is a great Cite and a fayre and it is the strongest of all the worlde. the whyche cite is in our kepyng of one of our kyngis. and he receyuethe tribute of the great kyng of Israhel. And also gyueth vs every yere. ij. C. [200] horfes laden with golde/ syluer/ and precyous stones. Except alle charges and costes that men doth in the cyte and in thyse forsayde castels. And whan that we haue warre ayenst them/ than flee we them alle and late noman aliyue. and therfore they wyl kepe no warre ayenste vs. and the wymmen of the Iewes be very fayre none fayrer in erth nowe a dayes lyuinge. And by this forsayde ryuer is a zee ther noman may passe/ but

carrying a man.]

peruulyous/ and
aner of shyping
gryffons.

th a smale ryuer
o ther growyth a
dycyne.

vs and the Iewes
stones and it is
over can passe/
ere and toke with
this same lande
s. an[d] vp these
ne stronger in ye
vndeſtande. x. M.
[200] Croſſe bowes.
[20,000] oþere men
the Caſtels haue in
a hel ſhall not ther-
ſtongre as I am.
lente and turky.
arte of the worlde.
hym iij. C. [300]
barons knyghtes/
ogette to the great
puer this forſayde
ryſten and turkes.
e paſſe. viij. C. or.
re good[s] or mar-
em not come with
without ye walles
rchaundyes with
one other money.
tourne home ayen
be ſete to gyder
nde that within a
ayre and it is the
in our kepyng of
of the great kyng
ij. C. [200] horſes
nes. Except alle
cye and in thyſe
arre ayenſt them/
ue. and therfore
wymmen of the
a dayes lyuinge.
an may paſſe/ but

whan the wynde blowythe fro benethe ſtrongely than parted ſhe
here/ and thanne the[y] paſſe with great haſt, and than they
take with hym all maner of precious ſtones. but they may
ſelle none therof [be]for[e] that wee haue taken therof our choſe.

¶ In a parte of our lande is an hylle there noman may
dwelle for hete of the ſonne/ and there bee wormes many on
without fyre can not lyue. And by this fame hylle we kepe.
x. M. [40,000] people that no thyngeells but make fyre/ and
whan this wormes feele the fyre than thei come oute of the
erde and goo in too that fyre. and there they ſpynne lyke the
wormes yat the fylke ſpynneth. And of that fame ſpynnyng
we make our clot[h]lynge that we were on feſte daies. and
whan they be foule/ than they be caſt in to ye fyre and they
becom as fayne as euer they were afore.

And ye ſhall vnderſtande that ſaint Thomas doeth more
myracles/ than ony feynt in heuen. For he comyth bod[i]ly
every yere in his chirche and doth a fermon/ and alſo in a
ſalays there ye here after of hym ſhall here.

[Here, at the ſide, is the repreſentation of the creature deſcribed in the
next paragraph.]

¶ And ye ſhall alſo knowe that there be dyuers of people
afon in our lande/ alſo there be people that haue the body
of a man and the hede lyke a dogge and they be good takers
of fyſſhe. and they be good to vnderſtande of theyre ſpeeche.
and they wyll goo in to the zee a hole daye longe to the tyme
that they haue taken ſuche as they wolde haue/ and than ye
[they] come ayen charged with fyſſhe. and bere them in to ye
houſes for they haue there dwelinge places vnder erthe. and
thenne take we part of there fyſſhes that vs beſte lyketh. and
they do great harme among our bee thow yat be wyld. and
they fyghte alſo ayenſt our archers, &c.

¶ In oure londe is alſo one manere of byrdes and laye ther
egis in the zee. xxii. and ther out grown yonge byrdes. and
than the[y] flee away and we take fomtyme of them for they
be good for to ete whan they be yonge. For yf theyr were
man that hath lost his nature and ete of this fame byrd
ſholl it gete ayen and becom as ſtronge as euer he was
before.

[Here is a woodcut of a tree dropping oil, guarded by a dragon, as deſcribed
in the next paragraph.]

¶ Alſo in our lande is that fame tree/ ther yat holy creflens
om or oyle [?oyle] out ronnith. and this tree is dreye/ and
ther is a great ſerpent which yat tree hath in kepyng all the
ole yere nyght and daye but alone vp[on] feynt Iohns daye
and night and than ſlepyth the ſerpent or dragon. and than
bo we to the tree and take yat crifma. and of this fame is
more than iij. po[u]nd. and than tourne we ayen ſcretely

with great drede and fere yat he vs not fee/ for ells he wyll
ſlee vs. and this fame tree is a dayes iourney fro ye paradyſ of
ye erthe. but whan this ſerpent is a waked than maked he
great mone and forow. and this dragon hath. ix. hedes and. ij.
wynges. and is as great as two horſes. But for all yat it
followeth vs ſtylle tyl we ben come to the zee ayen. and than
toured it ayen. and thenne bere we that crifma. to ye patriarch
of feynt thomas and he haloweth it/ and ther with they make
vs al cryſten. and ye remenauntende we to ye patriarche of
Iherusalem. and he fende it forth to the Pope of rome. and he
puth thereto oyle tof lyfe [?oyle of lyfe] and than haloweth it/
and then he fendeth all cryſtenthe through

¶ Also ye ſhall vnderſtande whan we ſhall goo to warre than
doo we afore vs bere with. xiiiij. [14] kynges. xiiiij. [14] cofers
with golde and ſyluer really wrought with precious ſtones. and
the other kynges come after vs with grete ſtemers and baners
of fylke and ſyndale very rycheley wrought. Ye ſhall knowe
also that afore vs gone. xl. M. [40,000] clerkin and alſo many
knyghtis. and men aſte there be ij. C. M. [200,000] without
cariers and cariers that go with the olyphantes and cary our
harneys and vitales.

¶ Ye ſhall vnderſtande alſo as we goo to ſylde than put we
oure lande in the kepyng of the Patriarche of feynt thomas.
And whan we peceſably ryde than do we bere afore vs a croſſe
of wodde in worhyp of oure lord Iheſu Cryſte. Alſo in the
incomyngē of euer cyte ſtande. iiij. croſſes made of wodde/ for
to remembre ye paſſion of oure lord Iheſu cryſte. And whan
we ryde peceſably than do we alſo bere afor vs a bafyn full of
erthe to remembre yat we be come of erthe and that we shall
waxe erth ayen. and we do alſo bere for vs another bafyn full
of fyne gold to a token that we be the nobleſte and myghtyest
kyngis of all the worlde.

¶ There is alſo in our lande noman ſo hardy that dare breke
his wedloke. but yf he dyde he ſhoulde be incontynent be
burnyd. For our lord hym ſelfe hath ordeyned wedlok ther-
fore it ſhould be kept by reaſon yf that we louyd oure lord
Iheſu Cryſte. For it is one of the sacramentes of the holy
chyrche.

¶ Alſo there dare noman make a lye in oure lande. for of
he dyde he ſhoulde incontynent bee ſleyн and we be feythal in
oure ſaying and doyng.

¶ Alſo ye ſhall vnderſtand that we euery yere goo vysite
the holy body of the prophete danyel in oure foreſt/ and we
take with vs. x. M. [10,000] clerkin and as many knyghtis.
and. CC. [200] caſtels, made vpon Olyphantes fore to kepe vs
from ye dragons ye whyche haue. viij. hedes. the whych that
haue theyr dwellynge in that foreſt.

¶ And there bee also in that fame place dates ye winter
and fomer hange on the trees fayr and grene. And ye foreſte
is great a. C. and xxx. [130] dayes journey. and ye. ij.

patriarches ben before vs at table for they haue the myght of the pope of rome. And we haue twyes as many abbotes in oure lande as there be dayes in the yere. [and] xv. more And euerich one of them cometh ones in ye yere and saythe masse vpon saint Thomas auer. And I my self seye also masse in the grete festis of ye yere. and ther for I am called pope Iohn. For I [am] priste after the outshewyng of sacrificie of the auters. and kinge after outshewing of Iustice. ¶ And I pope Iohn was halowid afore I was borne. for oure lorde fende his angell to my fader and sayde to hym make a pallays the whyche shall be of the grace of god and a chamber of that paradyse for your sonne comynge For hi shall be the grettest kyng of the worlde. and he shalle a longe tyme lyue. So who that in this pallays comyth he shall haue no hongre or thriste. and he shall not deye and as fone as my fader was a wakyd he was very mery/ and incontynent he began to make thy pallays lyke ye shall here. At syrft of ye incomynge of thys pallays is made of cristall and the couerynge of it is of precious stones and with in realy wrought with sterres lyke yf it were ye heuen. and that pauing is also of cristall and within this same pallays be none wyndowes. and within this same pallays be. xxiiij. [24] pyllers of fyne gold and of precyous stones of all maner sortes. and ther am I at great feste dayes of the yere and seynt Thomas prechyd in middell of this pallays to the

people. And vⁱithin this same pallays is a conduye or a fondeyne is lyke wyne in drynkyng/ so who thereof drincketh he desyred none other mete nor drinke and noman can tellle fro whens it cometh or whyther it gothe. Also ther is another great merueyll in this same pallays whan we shall goo to our dyner/ so is there no maner of mete made redy for vs/ nor there is no manner of instrumentes to make mete redy with all. but there comith before vs all maner of delycious mete that comyth there thorough the holy goost. And it is not wel possyble to wryte all maner of goodnes they [haue] whiche yat be in oure lande. And ye shall vnderstande that we wryte nothinge to you but trewe is. For if we sholde wryte lyes to you/ god and seynt thomas sholde punysshe vs/ for we sholde lese all our dignyte and oure worshyp. And we praye you that ye wyl wryte vs ayen with the berer of this lettre. and fende to vs ayen a good knyght of ye generacyon of fraunce.

And we praye the kyng of Fraunce that he wyll vs recomaunde to the myghty kyng of Englande. and also to all other kynges the whyche yat dwelle be yonde the zee thow that ben crystened and we praye god that he you wyl gyue the grace of the holy goost Amen.

Written in oure holy pallays in the byrth of my felse. v. [five] hondred. and feuen.

Emperint by me Iohn of Dorsborowe:



The
Life and Labours
of
Richard Eden,
Scholar, and Man of Science.

[? 1521]—1576.

* Probable or approximate dates.

The best Life of our Author hitherto, is in Cooper's *Athenæ Cantabrigienses*, II., 2, Ed. 1861.

1509. Apr. 22. Henry VIII. comes to the throne.
- 1521.* The year of our Author's birth has not yet been ascertained, but it cannot be much later than 1521. He would therefore be of nearly the same age as Sir William Cecil, Lord Burleigh, who was born on 13th September 1520. He stated in 1573 (*see under that year*) that 'he was of a respectable family in Hertfordshire; where he, in that year, had a sister still living.'
- 1526.—1534.* He is well educated as a boy. 'When I was a yonge scoler, I haue read in the Poet *Heisodus*'—*p. xl. col. 2.*
1526. Pietro Martire of Anghiari dies.
1526. Feb. The printing of the *Sumario de la natural y general Historia de las Indias*, written by Goncalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés, is finished at Toledo.
1530. Jan. 25. Sir Thomas Smith [*b.* 28th March 1514 at Saffron Walden], being then B.A., is elected Fellow of Queen's College, Cambridge.
1533. Aug. 31. The printing of the Third edition of Pietro Martire's Latin *Decades* is finished at Basle. It is undoubtedly the text from which Eden translated *p. 63-200* of this present work.
- 1533-1539. Sir T. Smith is resident at Cambridge.
1540. Vaunuccio Biringuccio's *Pyrotchnia* is first printed at Venice.
- 1535-1544. Eden studies at Cambridge for ten years (*see under 1573*). What he states there, he confirms elsewhere, see *p. l. col. 1*, 'that the ryght worshypfull and of singular
- learnynge in all sciences, Syr Thomas Smyth, in my tyme the floure of the Vniverstyte of Cambridge, and sometyme my tutor.' He does not, however, seem to have taken any degree, while up at the University.
- 1539-1541. Sir T. Smith is travelling abroad.
1542. A folio edition of Chaucer's works is published, remarkable for being an early instance of joint enterprise among English printers, 'each having his own name alone as printer, in the colophon of so many copies as were his proper share.'—Herbert's *Typographical Antiquities*, p. 557, Ed. 1785-90. The joint partners in this edition were W. Bonham, F. Petit, R. Kele, and R. Toy.
- 1542-1547. Sir T. Smith is again resident at Cambridge, was probably during this period, that he taught Eden; who had, for his fellow pupils under Sir T. Smith, Edward Vere, afterwards the Earl of Oxford and a most exquisite poet, and John Ponet, afterwards Bishop of Winchester.
- 1544-1546. Eden comes to Court, and holds a position in the Treasury, for about two years; which is his first appointment in the Civil Service.
1545. Oct. The First edition of Thomas Geminus' important 'Epitome of *The Fabric of the Human Body*, by A. Vesalius,' is published in Latin in London, in folio size; illustrated with remarkable engravings, 'all drawn out, and graven in brafe, and so imprinted by my owne labour.' The dedication to Henry VIII. is dated London, 4 Kal. Oct. [28th September] 1545.
- Geminus, in his next edition of 1553, states that King Henry very much wished that this anatomical work should be widely published abroad: and that he himself had subsequently heard that it had been 'notably well

accepted, and hath doen muche good in Itale, Fraunce, Spaine, and Germaine, and other foren parties.'

1547. Eden is destined to the office of the Distillery; when the King dies: see p. xl.

1547. Jan. 28. Edward VI. succeeds to the Crown.

1547. The Lord Protector, however, gives the Distillery to one, who held it down to, at least, so late as 1573.

1547.* Eden marries; and has by his wife twelve children in the next fourteen years: who all apparently grow up to manhood; else the argument and appeal then used by him in 1573, would seem to be faulty.

1548. Sept. Master William Cecil, et. 28, is appointed Secretary to the Lord Protector Somerset.

1549. Oct. 10. In the political revolution, occasioned by the advent to power of the Earl of Warwick, afterwards the Duke of Northumberland—to whom Eden, in 1553, dedicated his *Treatise of the newe India*—Master W. Cecil is

Nov. confined to his house (Oct. 10); and in November is sent to the Tower; from whence he is set free on the 25th

1550. Jan. 25. January following.

The First edition of Girolamo Cardano's work, *De Subtilitate*, is printed at Nuremberg in folio. It was written in eight months; but under constant correction for three years before it appeared. Eden thought very highly of it.

1550. May. The First edition, of the First Volume only, of *Navigazioni e Viaggi* [collected by J. B. Ramusio] is printed at Venice. It was probably this First impression; and not the Second edition of the same Volume printed in March 1554, that Eden made use of in his Compilation.

Sept. 5. Master W. Cecil is appointed one of the Secretaries of State and a Privy Councillor.

1551. July 3. The sweating sickness, which had begun on 15th April at Shrewsbury, begins in London; where 500 persons die in the first week. At this time, the first English ship that ever went to Barbary, leaves Portsmouth; under the command of T. Windham (see p. xix).

Oct. 11. Sir W. Cecil is knighted.

1552. Spring. Eden writes thus, at p. 355, about the middle of 1555,

'And wheras as concerninge the knowledge of metals, I was once mynded to haue translated into Englyshe the hoole worke of Pyrotechnia, wherof I fynysched. xxii. chapteres now more then three yeres fence, and lefte the copie therof in the handes of one of whome I could never get it agayne (omytyng to speake of other ingmitudes) I was therby disououred to preceade any further in that woorke.' From this, it is evident that, by this time, Eden was a good Italian scholar. His translation of the first three chapters will be found at pp. 356-368.

1552. About this date, Eden was, I believe, acting as private secretary to Sir W. Cecil. I have, however, lost the reference to the authority for this.

1552. April 22. Sir W. Cecil is made Chancellor of the Order of the Garter.

May 2 or 9. The second English voyage sets out for Barbary, p. xix.

June 3. Girolamo Cardano, on his way from Italy, reaches London; and after a rest of three days, travels in twenty-three days to Edinburgh: where he somewhat successfully prescribes for Cardinal Beaton. After a stay of seventy-five days there; he leaves Edinburgh on

Sept. 12. 12th September, on his return towards Italy.

See further respecting this famous Italian magician or physician—this considerable genius—this prolific author (he wrote in all 222 treatises, large and small)—this most impudent liar and profligate liver, in Professor Morley's *Life of Jerome Cardan*, 1856. It is quite possible that Eden saw Cardano—whose works, he quotes as of the highest authority—while he was staying in London.

1552. July 20. Geminus, in the Dedication prefixed to the Second edition of his "Epitome of Vesalius' Anatomy &c."

(with the explanations to the plates, greatly augmented and in *English*), which is dated "At Windsoare, the. xx. July 1552," (the engraved title is, however, dated 1553) goes on to state, after what we have already quoted above, under 1545, as follows:—"And now of late by the information of fundrye frendes and also of duerfe surgeons, I haue ben borne in hande, that the same worke beeing set forth in the English tonge might greatly auiale to ye knowledge of the valuated Surgeons, and by meane of them, shoud bee muche more beneficall, then in latin it is to an infinite nombre of people in thyss your Maiesties Royalleme of Englannde. Wherefore myndyng to rendre vnto this Countrey, in which by your graces proteccion and bounteous liberalite I liue, as muche fruite as my poore industrie and continuall traualle may possiblly bee habble to yelde, I haue earneytly applyed my selfe to make common and familiar to all Englyshe people that which hath ben found profitable among so many foren nacion. Whereunto forasmuch as I am not my selfe so perfect and experie in the Englyshe tonge that I dare wariaunt or trust myne owne dooynges, I haue vied the studious peines of Nicholas Vdall [the author of *Roister Doister*, our earliest known English comedy] and certain other learned men whose exercize in transllacions and pennynge in this tonge hath ben (as I understande) not without some fruite to the common weale.' Eden edited the next edition in 1559.

1552. Dec. 2. The printing of the first edition of Francisco Lopez de Gomara's *Historia de las Indias y conquista de Mexico*, is finished at Saragossa.

1553. May 9. The date of the Ordinances &c. for the English fleet going for the discovery of Cathay by the North-East; given by Sebastian Cabot, as 'Gouverour of the myterie and companie of the Marchants aduenturers for the discouerie of Regions, Dominions, Islands, and places vnnknowne'; who were not, however, incorporated by royal charter, until 6th February 1555 (1 and 2 Philip and Mary). For these Ordinances, see Hakluyt's *Voyages*, &c., p. 259, ed. 1589.

1553. May 20. The first English fleet, consisting of the *Bona Esperanza*, 120 tons, Captain Sir Hugh Willoughby, General of the whole fleet; the *Edward Bonaventure*, 160 tons, Captain Richard Chancellor, Pilot Major, with Stephen Burrough (or as Eden calls him at p. xli. col. 2, Steuen a Burrough), for Master; and the *Bona Confidencia*, 90 tons, Cornelius Deerforth, Master: leave Ratclif on their voyage, and get as far as Deptford.

May 21. About 2 p.m. they leave Deptford. Then occurred the scene thus vividly described to us by Clement Adams: of which it is almost certain that Eden was an eye-witness.

"The greater shippes were towed downe with boates, and oares, and the mariners being all apparellled in watchet or skie coloured clothe, rowed a maine, and made way with diligence. And being come neare to Greenwich (where the Court then lay) prefently vpon the newes thereof the Courters came running out, and the common people flockt together, standing very thickly vpon the shoare: the priuie Counsell, they looke out at the windowes of the Court, and the rest ranne vp to the toppes of the towers: the shippes hereupon discharge the Ordinance, and floote off their pieces after the maner of warre, and of the sea, infomuch that the tops of the hillles founded therewith, the valleys, and the waters gaue an Echo, and the mariners they shouted in such fort, that the skie rang againe with the noyse thereof. One stooke in the poope of the shipppe, and by this gesture biddes farewell to his friends in the best manner he coulde. Another walkes vpon the hatches, another climbes the shrow[d]jes, another flandes vpon the maine yarde, and another in the toppe of the shipppe. To bee short, it was a very triumphe (after a fort) in all respects to the beholders. But (alas) the good King Edward (in respect of whome principally all this was prepared) hee only by reasoun of his sicknesse was absent from this shewe, and not long after the departure of these shippes, the lamentable and most forowfull accident of his death followed."—Hakluyt, *Voyage*, p. 282, Ed. 1589.

May This voyage seems to have aroused a general interest in cosmography. People began to think of the great unknown world outside and beyond England. Some one printed a tract or single sheet, entitled *Of the newe found landes*, which Eden derides at p. 5. This publication stirred him up to a rapid translation of a part of the Fifth book of Muncaster's colossal *Cosmography*.

nd in English),
(the engraved
we have already
by the informa-
have ben borne
English toung
tained Surgeons,
all, then in latin
ties Royallme of
ountry, in which
lie, as muche
possibly bee habble
mon and familiar
fitable among fo
not my selfe fo
variaunt or trut
of Nicholas Dall
lish comedy) and
s and penning in
ome fruite to the

Francisco Lopez de
Méjico, is

the English fleet
y the North-East ;
out of the mysterie
querie of Regions,
t, however, incor-
(Philip and Mary).
59, ed. 1589.

of the *Bona Espe-*
illoughby, General
adventure, 160 tons,
in Burrough (or as
or Master ; and the
ter : leave Ratclif

d. Then occurred
us to by Clement
ain that Eden was

es, and oares, and
the coloured clothe,
eing come neere to
the newes therof
ole flockt together,
ell, they lookt out
the toppes of the
and shooft off their
uch that the tops of
ers gane an Echo,
e skie rang againe
the shippes, and by
manner he coulde,
throw[d]les, another
ppes of the shippes.
all respects to the
reflect of whonne
f his sicknesse was
ure of these shippes,
death followed.—

a general interest
think of the great
England. Some
ound lands, which
o a rapid trans-
ossal *Cosmography*.

June.* Thus appeared Richard Eden's first literary work, (see title at p. 3), printed by Edward Sutton. He dedicated it to John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, the then all-powerful Protector. The Dedication is important in relation to the controverted life of Sebastian Cabot. It is to be noticed that in it Eden boasts of having already read the *Decades*. To this month and year is therefore also to be assigned the composition of his address 'To the Reader' at pp. 7-11; in which he so manfully strives to uproot the general ignorance and timidity of his time.

1553. July 6. Mary's reign commences.

1553. Aug. 12. The first English voyage to Guinea leaves Portsmouth, see p. 375.

Aug. 20. The printing of the second edition of Lopez de Gómara's *Historia* is finished at Medina del Campo.

Aug. 22. John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland (to whom, Eden had dedicated, within less than three months before, his first work), is beheaded at the Tower; with Sir T. Gates, and Sir T. Palmer.

1554. Summer.* Richard Chancellor's ship, the *Edward Bonaventure*, returns to England; but is robbed on the way home, by some Flemings. The crews of the other two ships,

Spring.* under Sir Hugh Willoughby, to the number of seventy persons, are frozen to death; while wintering at Arzina fiord, for 'want of experience to have made caues or stoues.' It appears from a will found in one of the ships, that Sir Hugh Willoughby and most of his company, were alive in January 1554.

1554. July 25. Queen Mary is married to Philip, Prince of Spain, at Winchester. 'Shortly after King Philip and Queen Mary remoued from Wincheste to Basing, [and] from

Aug. 5. thence to Windsor, where, on the fifth of August, the King was stalled in the noble order of the garter, where he kept a great feast, and at that time the Earle of Sussex was made knight of the garter.' —*Stow, p. 1057, Ed. 1600.*

Aug. 17. 'The King and Quene remoued to Richmonde, from thence by water to Southwarke, accompanied with the noble men and ladies, the King in one barge, the Queen in another, and landed at the Bishop of Winchesters staires neere to S. Maries Oueries church, and so passed through that place and park into Sunne place, where they rested that night.' —*Stow, idem.*

Aug. 18. 'And the next day, being the 18 of August, they rode through Southwarke over the bridge, and so through London, where they were with great prouision received of the citizens, pageants in places accustomed, the cross in Cheape new gilt, &c., and passing through Paules churchedy, a man came sliding, as it were lying upon a rope, from Paulesteeple down to the deans wall.' —*Stow, idem.*

As Eden tells us, at p. 46, intoxicated by the shows, the triumphs, and universal acclamations that greeted the gorgeous royal procession through the City, he was led first to debate within himself as to whether he could by any original publication perpetuate to future Ages, not so much the glorious reception, as its w^rthiness and significance: but thinking of nothing sufficiently worthy, he was led to consider the marvellous discoveries, conquests, and empire of the Spaniards; all of which bade fair to become (should the royal pair have issue) the joint heritage of England. Hence his great compilation is distinctly the result of the marriage procession of this day.

Within the following twelve months (working incessantly, and for nothing), Eden translated or wrote all that is reprinted in this volume, between pp. 43 and 398. Inasmuch as the work was one of great bulk though, at the time, of national importance, several printers combined together for its risk of its publication: while the printing of it was wholly intrusted to William Powell. There are copies extant with the colophons of Robert Toy, Richard Jugge, Edward Sutton, and also, as Herber states at p. 738, William Seres, and perhaps others. These are 'pariteners' to whom Eden refers at p. 330.—See 1542 above.

Leonhardus Goreius, a Polish knight, writes a congratulatory Latin Oration to the people and nobles of England on the royal marriage, which was printed by William Powell, who was also, at the same time, busily engaged on Eden's compilation. Eden refers to this Oration at p. 47.

1554. Oct. 2. 'There came to the Tower in twenty carts made for the show, accompanied with certain Spaniards of the King's Guard, ninety-seven little chests, of a yard long and four inches broad, of silver, which will make by estimation fifty thousand pounds' [equivalent to £750,000 of the present day]: *Harl. MS. 194* [which is a 'Pocket Diary of a resident in the Tower between July 1553 and October 1554'] reprinted by the Camden Society under the title of *The Chronicle of Queen Jane, 1550*. John Foxe, in his *Actes and Monuments*, &c., Ed. 1563, states that the silver was 'matted about with mats, and mayled in little handles, about two feet long and almost half a foot thick, and in every cart sixe of those bundles.' I presume this is what Eden refers to at p. 56, as the 18,000 pounds 'weyght of syluer which was coyned to the Kynges v[er]ie in the towre of London where never so much hath b[ea]n feene at once as suche as haue b[ea]n owlde officers in the mynte doo affirme.' It was brought there from Peru and Rio de la Plata, by the celebrated Spanish historian Augustin de Zarate; whose *Historia del descubrimiento y conquista del Perú* was published at Antwerp in the next year.

It was probably after the formation of this acquaintanceship with Zarate, and while his great Collection, here reprinted, (itself an honour to the Spanish nation) was in the press; that by the favour of certain Spanish nobles, Eden obtained a place in the English Treasury of the Prince of Spain.

1554. Oct. 11. The second expedition to Guinea leaves the River Thames, see p. 379.

Oct. 12. The third edition of Gómara's *Historia* is finished at Saragossa.

1554. Nov. 28. The Council of State announce by letter, at Dr. Chedsey's sermon at Paul's Cross, that the Queen is *enciente*.

1554. Nov. 11. { Parliament sits at Westminster.

1555. Jan. 16. } Among other Acts passed by it, was the following short one, now known as 1 & 2 Philip and Mary, c. 6—entitled *An Act for remueng of three Statutes made for the punishment of Hereticks*:—'For the [e]xchuching and avoiding of Errors and Hereticks which of late haue ryen growen and much encreased within this Realme, for that the [e]ordinaries haue wanted authorite to procede agayntis thos that were infected therwith: BE IT therfore ordaine and enacted by the [e]authorite of this presente Parliament, That the Statute made in the fiftie yere of the Reigne of King Richard the Seconde, concerning the [e]carrefing and apprehencion of eronious and hereticall Preachers, And one other Statute made in the seconde yere of the Reigne of King Henry the Fourth concerning the repreffing of Hereticks and punishment of Hereticks, And also one other Statute made in the seconde yere of the Reigne of King Henry the Fift, concerning the suppression of Heretick and Lollardye, and every Article, Branche and Sentence contained in the fame three feuerall Actes and every of them, shall from the xxth day of Ianuary next comeng [1555] be revived and be in full force strength and effecte to all Intentes construccions and purpos(es) for ever.'—*Statutes of the Realm*, iv. 244, ed. 1819.

1555. Jan. 1. The date of John Elder's letter describing the marriage of the King and Queen in the previous July; which letter was immediately printed.

Jan. 20. The burning of Protestants becomes lawful on and after this day, by the above Act of Parliament.

Feb. 4. John Rogers, the first of the Marian martyrs, is burnt at Smithfield.

Feb. 6. The Moscow Company is incorporated by Royal Charter: having for its Executive; Sebastian Cabot, Governor; four Consuls; and twenty-four Assistants. Eden must have watched the proceedings of this Company with the deepest interest. Indeed, it is probable that the entire section, *Of Moscow and Cathay* (which has nothing whatever to do with the title-page or original plan of his compilation; at which he must have been working hard, all through this winter) was suggested by the return of Richard Chancellor and the subsequent incorporation of this Company; and put forth by him, as a goodwill offering towards their success and information.

1555. Feb. 8. Laurence Saunders is burnt at Coventry; and so the legalized religious massacre goes on.

May 21.

Is the latest actual date in Eden's Compilation, and therefore in the three Works here reprinted. It will be found towards the bottom of p. 382. On this day the English ships, returning on their way home from Guinea, were in $39^{\circ} 30' N.$ At their rate of progress they could hardly have reached England before the end of July.

July.***Aug.*****Sept.***

Therefore Section VII. of Eden's Compilation was written and printed in August; and, at the earliest, his newly printed Compilation and the printing of the entire book could hardly have been finished before September.

Immediately after which; Thomas Watson. Bishop of Lincoln,—the fellow-student of Roger Ascham; by whom his Latin play of *Absalom* [? if the MS. is now at Wilton House] is exceedingly praised in his *Schoolmaster*, 1570—accuses Eden before Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, for heresy; of which his newly printed Compilation would afford ample evidence.

Oct. 24.

Bishop Gardiner, however, dies; and Eden somehow escapes punishment, with simply the loss of his office: and then seems, for the next three years to be living in retirement; his family steadily increasing all the while.

1556. Jan. 10. The printing of Martin Cortes' *Brve compendio de la sphaera y de la arte de nauigar* is finished at Seville.

Nov. 7.

Richard Chancellor, in the wreck of his ship the *Philip and Mary* in Petislego Bay, Scotland, is drowned—while endeavouring in a boat to save the Russian Ambassador's life; in accomplishing which, he loses his own.

1557. Feb. 27-28. Eden probably witnessed the splendid reception by the Moscow Company, of Osep Gregorevitch Napea, the first Russian Ambassador, on his arrival

in London, for the *procès verbal* of which, see Hakluyt, *Voyages, &c.*, p. 321, Ed. 1589. From the omission in this notarial document of all allusion to Sebastian Cabot; it is evident that he was but recently dead. For Eden's account of his death—the only one extant—see p. xlvi, col. 2. It probably occurred about this date: for when Eden, about the Summer of 1555, wrote the heading at p. 283, 'that worthy owld man Sebastian Cabote, yet liuyng in Englannde,' was still 'Gouvernor of the coompany of the marchantes of Catay.'

1558. Nov. 17. Elizabeth succeeds to the throne.

We now come to the two earliest printed notices of Eden. His reputation had travelled over the Continent to the English Protestant exiles in Switzerland; and two of them thus vaguely and incorrectly refer to his literary labours, but give him the wrong Christian name.

1558.

Lawrence Humphrey (who died Dean of Winchester, on 1 Feb. 1590), in his three books of *Interpretatio linguaue*, the Dedication of which is dated, Basiliæ, Feb. 3, 1559, thus refers to our Editor-Author, at p. 520. 'Petrum quoque Martym Argliensem Joannes Eden, Cosmographus et Alchumista urerit De insulis nuper inventis.'

1558.

Bp. Bale, at p. 110 of his Supplement (written in 1558), to his *Scriptorium illustrum*, &c. the printing of which was finished in Feb. 1559, is a little more explicit; but still follows Humphrey closely. "Johannes Eden, Cosmographus et alchumista ut à quibusdam [i.e. L. Humphrey] narratur, ingeniosus ac peritissimus, inter alia scriptis *De navigationibus Portugalensium*, Lib. I. [This is evidently Eden's first publication, *Of the newe India.*] Transtulit Petrum Martyrem Angliensem. *De insulis nuper inuentis.* Lib. I. [or rather the *Decades*.] Aliaque fecit multa. Clariut anno Domini. 1556."

1559. Sept.

The printing of the Third edition of Geminus' *Anatomy*, &c., 'enlarged, amplified, and so corrected and diligently perused, that it may seeme a newe worke, and rather another than it was before,' is finished. Richard Eden is, this time, the English reviser; and the fresh Dedication to the new Queen is evidently written by him for Geminus, as its smooth connected style abundantly demonstrates.

1561.

Eden's next literary work seems to have been the translation (and probably also, in part, the devising of the numerous, and, for that time, difficult woodcuts of

xi

this work of Martin Cortes' *Arte de Navigar*, at the expense of certain members of the Moscow Company: towards which, Eden appears, at this time, to have stood in the same relation as Hakluyt did, fifty years later, to our East India Company. This work is remarkable not only for the number of the wood engravings (some of them moveable) of different mathematical instruments; but also for a small outline map of *The Newe Worlde*, or more properly of the North Atlantic basin. This is probably the earliest printed map of America ever produced in England: and is evidently copied from the original in Cortes' *Compendio*.

To this translation, Eden prefixed the following excellent Preface: in respect to which, it is significant to notice that Sebastian Cabot's name is omitted from the inscription.

To the ryght worshypfull syr VVyllyam Garred Knigh, and Master Thomas Lodge, Aldermen of the Cite of London, and Gouernours of the honorable felowshyp or societie, aewell of certaine of the Nobilitie, as of Marchantes adventuriers, for the discouery of Landes, Territorie, Ilandes, and Seignories unknownen, and not before their first aduenture or enterprise by Seas or Navigations commonly frequented:

And to the right worshypfull the Consulles, Assistentes, and cominaltie of the same felowshyp, Richarde Eden wyssheth health and prosperite.

 Hat foever he was (ryght honorable and worshypfull) that fyrtie beleued that the frame and coaptacion of the boode of man, with the functions, offices, and dutties of the partes and members of the same, knytle together in a certen vnitie to a common ministracion, dyd represent a lyuely

Image and similitude of a perfecte common wealth: I thynke that he was a man of no vulgare judgement or abiecte mynde, but rather of singuler wydome and prudence in the contemplacion of Diuine and humane thynges. For he sawe, that en in the founall natvie feede of all growyng or lyng things, is conteyned the fourme that bryngeth them to theire perfection: so in certeyne small and obscure members of the common wealth, consisteth no small increase to the perfection of the whole. He sawe lykwyse that herein, as in the boode of man representyng the partes and members of the worlde (as I haue sayde) are dyuers partes of dyuers and sundrye actions and motions, greatly dysfiering in fourme, number, and quantite, yet all the same to be fo knytte together, and fo to consent in one vniformite to the common profyte of the whole, that a greater concorde and harmonye can not be imagined, then is proportioned by the frendly vnitie of dyuers and contrarie. He sawe lykwyse in the same, such a mutuall compasyon of parte to parte, and member to member, by one common fence existent in them all, that no one part or member can seyther ioye or Payne, but that in maner all the other are partakers therof more or lesse, yf they be lyuely members, and not wythered or otherwyse vnfafe by reson of dead flefhe, which onely by cuttynge and burnynge ought to be deuyded from the founde and whole. But as in man (whom Plato calleth the lesse world) the vigour and agilitie of the immortall soule and mynde, never ceasteth from continuall mouyng, but is euer exercyzed in exhortacions and inuictiōnēs of great things (herein retembyng God, whos carakte it beareth) by prouidence foreseing, and by intelligence vnderstanding and deuyfynge what is to be done, and what to be efchedew, doth immediatly moue and rayse vp the faculties, poures, and members of the body to execute the same: Euen so in the greater worlde, the prouidence of God, and vniuerall counsayle and consent of men, hath elected and appoynted certen principall men, to beare lyke rule and autorite in the boode of the common wealth, as hath the intellective soule in the members of our boode to moue and commaunde the same. To Princes therfore counsaylours, rulers, gouernours and magistrates, as to the most intellective and sentiētive partes of the societie of men, hath God and nature geuen preeminent and gouernance of the common wealth, that by theire prouidence, wisdome, and ayde, it may vniuerall florish, not only by iuste administration of good lawes, with due correction of malefactours, but also by lyberall rewarding of fuche as haue well deserued: and especially by maaintenance of fuche artes and sciences, as the common wealth can not well be without. And to draw nearer to the applyinge of my similitude: I saye, that whatsoeuer vertue, whatsoeuer arte, or the ingenious iudicacy of men hath to this day inuented, all the same is to be imputed to the benevolence and liberalitie

expense of certain
tien appears, at this
fifty years later, to
not only for the num-
of different mathe-
The Newe Worlde,
is probably the
England; and is
excellent Preface:
astian Cabot's name

Knights, and
f London, and
swell of certeine
or the discouery
nowen, and not
or Nauigations
entes, and com-
meth health and

and worshypfull) that
ptacion of the bodye
d duities of the partes
together in a certen
l represent a lyuely
al thynke that he was
but rather of singuler
Divine and humane
de of all growing or
gthem to theyr
bers of the common
ction of the whole.
e of man repreffenting
de) are dyuers partes
differyng in fourme,
uite together, and so
oyte of the whole,
e imagined, then is
are. He fawke lyke-
to parte, and member
, that no one part or
manner all the other
y members, and not
fleshe, which onely
on the founde and
he leffe world) the
yndic, never ceaffeth
glacious and inuen-
e carakte it bareth)
dyng, and deuyfing
mmediately moue and
holy to execute the
of God, and vniuer-
pointed certen prin-
ciple of the common
of our bodye to moue
counsaylours, rulers,
e and fentive partes
eminence and govern-
wydome, and ayde,
ration of good lawes,
yberall rewardyng of
eauane of fuche arte
without. And to
faye, that whatsoeuer
men hath to this day
olence and liberalitie

of fuche as haue honourablye maintayned and freelye rewarded the traunes, paynes, and charges of them that haue spente theyr lyes, goodes, and wyttes (as many haue done) in the inuentions of necessarye and profitable artes and sciences. For even as holosome and temperate ayre with seafonable wether and fauorable influence of the heauen and planettes, caufeth fruitefulnes on the earth, and contra, ywyfe, bareness by the contrarye: Even fo the fauour of Princes and Magistrates noryfeth, augmenteth, and amplyfeth all artes and sciences by liberalitie, and extynguyfeth the same by miserable couetousnes and parcimonie. And althoughe in some men of rare and noble nature, the defyre of honour and fame onely for vertues sake, and study toward thyrs countrye and common wealth, hath moued them in maner to theyrs owne vndoyng through theyr greate losse and hyderance, to fette forth and invent diuers thynges for the commodite of the common wealth and other, rather then for theyrs owne: yet vndoubtedly, who so wel confidereth and indifferently wayeth that I haue sayde, that synde and fee by daylye experiance, that in maner onely munificenc, liberalitie, and rewarde, or the hope thereof, geneth spures to them that atteime great and vertuous enterprises, as I coulde more largely prouy by so many tellimones of Hystorics, both holy and prophane, that the rehear- fall therof shoulde be but tedious and not greately necessarye for my purpoe, especially wrytyng vnto your honoures and worshyps, of whose munificenc and liberalitie, I haue had great experiance, bothe in my selfe and others, who by your ayde and maisteynaunce haue attempted and performed many godly inuentions, viages, nauigations and discoueries of landes and Seas heretofore vnknownen. Wherein, what great charges you haue susteyned, and howe lyberall and constant you haue ben in futherynge the same, doth well declare that hyther to you are rather losers than gayners therby. The whiche thyng doubtlesse is the more to your commendation, in that it maye hereby appearre that you haue atteimed the same rather for knowledge and vertues sake, then for couetousnes of gaynes: as is furthermore well knownen by your fynte viages of discouerie attempted to Cathaye by the Northeast seas, vpon certen losse and detriment, to vncerteine hope eyther of gaynes, or of any such way to be founde, otherwyse then by certen lykely conjectures: not much vnylike to the shynnyng floweres of Marchasites, which outwardly appereynge in mineral mountaynes, are signes and token wherby is conjectured what metal is conteyned therein, and whether the same is to be folowed or not. And although it sometyme to chanceth that such signes are fayleable, shewyng more in appearance then they conteyne in subfaunce: yet are not such signes tokens, or shewes to be contemned, but rather earnestly to be folowed, forasmuch as it hath ben often proued and founde by experiance, that by folowing the same, haue ben founde great and riche mynes of metalles: as *Georgius Agricola* in his bookees *De rebus metallicis*, doth largely declare and proue by manye examples. But to wryte at large what greate thynges haue proceeded of small and obscure begynninges, and in maner mere conjectures: it woulde to farre exceede the measure of an Epistle or Preface, that it woulde rather increase to the iust quantite of a booke. For in maner all the late discoueries both of the Spanyardes and Portugales, had theyr begynnynge of such small conjectures, with vncerteine hope (as it were *præter spem sub spe*) astyll God and good happe, by the constante traunayle and valiaunce mynde of such as fyrt attempted the same, gaue them to enjoye that they hoped for. But whatsoeuer they haue obteyned and do enjoy, this may I boldly say in your behalf (right honorable and worshypfull) that there hath not lacked in you eyther the lyke or greater promptnes of mynde, forwardnes in attempting, magnificenc in expences, and libeरall in rewards. For eyde the greate charges and losses that you haue ben at otherwyse, what would I speake of the greate gyftes that you haue fente to the Emperour of Ossia? What of your last chargeable vyage of discouerie among the numerable Rockes, Ilandes, and moueable mountaynes of Ice in the oopen sea, by innumerable landes and Ilandes vnknownen to the Antiques, men vnder and farr within and beyonde the circle Artike, where they thought that no lyuynge creature coulde drawe breath or liue for extreme cold: whens neverthelesse the fame hath ben by you discouered even unto the myghtye ryuer of Ob, that falles into the Scithian Ocean, or *Oceanus Hyperboreus*, not farr from the mountaynes cilled *Hyperborei*, so named because they are situate almost vnder the North pole, and thought therfore to be inaccesable. A vyage doublelesse of such difficultie and in maner impossibilitie, that condfyrdyng the infinite daungours therof (as I haue learned by the information of Steuen a Burrough, that was then the chife

Pilote of the same vyage) it may feme impossible that they shoulde euer haue escaped, excepte the myghtye hande of God, by the experte skylfulness of fo excellent a Pilote, had delyuered them from thos daungers. And although in dede (as religion byndeth vs) it is convenient in all thynges to gene all honour, glorie and thankes to God, yet are we not therby refrayned to be thankfull to such men, as by theyr arte, ingeniuers, traunayle, and diligence, haue deferred both iuste commendation and large rewarde. And therfore referryng the rewarde to you (ryght honorable and worshypfull, to whom it apperteneth) yf I shold not here geue hym at the leaste fuche commendation, as in my judgement he hath well deferred, I myght feme both to defraude hym of his worthy deserthes, and also to forgette the frendshyp and good wyll I beare hym, onli for his vertues and excellencie in his profession. For certeynly when I consider how indigene and destitute this Realme is of excellent and expert Pilotes, I can do no leste of conscience, then in respect of your owne commodite, yea rather for the commodite of the Queenes Maestie and the whole Realme, to exhort you and put you in remembraunce (although I may herein feme to put the spures to a runnyng horie, as saith the Proverbe) fo to regard hym and esteeme hym and his faythfull, true, and painefull seruice towarde you, that he maye thereby be further encouraged, and not discouragid, eyther for lacke of maintenaunce, or other wyfe by the iniurios affaultes of such his enemis, as onli his vertues and excellencie haue moued to bearre hym displeasure, as enye doth euer folowe vertue, as saith the Latine Proverbe, *Virtuti comes inuidia*. And howe true a sentencethis is, is well verifid by the saying of a certayn Philosopher (whose name I do not remember) who hearynge one vnyanely reioyce that he had no enimis, awurvered that that was a token he hadde done lyttle good: Meanyng therby (as dayly experiance proeueth) that yf he had excelled in any vertue, he could not haue lacked some enimis. And hauyng here touched to speake of enye, I remember that when I was a yonge scoller, I haue read in the Poet *Hesiodus* of two kyndes of enye, whereof the one is called *Inuidia*, and the other *Aemulatio*, which is more tollerable then the fyre, for that it is ioyned with some vertue, and enyueth that anye shoulde excelle in any excellent qualite that he profesteth. But forasmuch as this enye of emulation procedeth of some singuler vertue of them that are fo maliced, they maye herein reioyce, that they shall euer haue a hundred frendes for one enemie: yea and although they hadde none, yet is vertue a rewarde to it selfe, and to be embrased for it selfe onely, as the Philosophers affirme. What then shall we say to such, as forgetting this rewarde of vertue, do not only [not] fauour, but rather hynder the preferment and mayntenaunce of such experte men, more esfemyng certayne Fyfhermen that go a trawlyng for fyfthe in Catches or mongers, and dradges for Oysters about the sandes, betwene the South furlandise and Wynterton neffe, and the sandes about Temmes mouth, then they do fuche excellent Pylotes as are able without any Rutter or Carde of Nauigation, not onli to atteime longe and faire viages, but also to discouer vnknownen landes and Ilandes, as haue doone of late yeres many excellent men, to the greate honour and enrychyng of their Pryncipe and countrye. But as touching Steuen A Burrough, the chife Pylote of your viages of discouerie, it may hereby well appeare yat he is neyther malicious nor enuious of his arte and science, in that he defreth ys fame for the common profit to be commen to al men: And for the fame intent was the fyrt that moued certen worshypfull of your company, as Syr William Garrerd, Maister William Mericke, Maister Blase Sanders, and Maister Edwards Castleyn, to haue this worter translatid into the English tonge. Who of their own good nature fauouryng al vertuous studys and the professours of the same, did sone incline to his honest request herein and therewith not only defred me, but also with libeरall rewarde enterteined me, to take in hande the translation. Whiche being nowe finisched as well as my poore learnyng may perfourme, I defyre your honours and worshypes, to accepte in as good parte as I haue ment herein to gratifie you, and doe fuche seruice as my abilitie may suffice. Nowe therfore for this worke of the arte of Nauigation, being publisched in our vulgar tongue, you may be assured to haue more store of skylfull Pilotes. Pilotes (I fale) not Pirottes, Rulers, not Rouers, but fuche as by their honest behavour and condicions ioyned with arte and experiance, may doe you honest and true seruice: whiche is not to be looked for of fuche as beyng deſtitute as well of the feare of God as of all moral vertues, superbounde in all notorious vyses, accoumpting desperatenesse for boldnesse, rashnesse for hardinesse, impudencie for fesse, and crueltie for manhood. What other

thyng (I faye) is to bee looked for of suche, then of suche trees such fruities, *Et mali corui malum ouum.* But for as muche as these haue no place appointed them in the bodie of our common wealth, whiche we haue here before compared to the members of the bodie of man: therefore are they no otherwyse to be esteemed then as excrements of the bodye, to whom nature hath appointed no place in the same, but laboureth continuallie to cast them forth dyuers waves, leafe by theyr filthynesse they shoulde infecte the other members, even as the pompe of the syppye if it be not ayoyded, is noyous to the shipppe and all that are therein. But the wye and honest Pylot, fyrt hauyng before his eyes the feare of God, and puttynge his chief trust in hym, shal fecondarely trust to his arte and science, without any suche waynes obseruations as the superstitious Horoscopers (Astrologers I meane, and not Atronomers) are accustomed to vise in the elections of hours, tynes, and dayes, by confestallations and aspectes of the Starres and Planetes, as many fonde menne haue done, thynkyng thereto to haue escaped suche daungers, as they haue thereby the rather fallen into, through contempte of arte and science by folyfhe confidence in superstitious Astrologie: which for the vanite and uincertaintie thereof, the ryght worshypfull and of singular learnyng in all sciencys. Svr Thomas Smyth, in my tyne the flour of the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, and soncymte my Tutor, was accustomed to call *Ingeniosissimam artem mentiendi.* (That is) the moft ingenious arte of lyng. Omitting therefore the superstitious and phantastical obseruations of the iudicials of Astrologie, it shalbe better and more necessary for all Pylotes that defyre to excell in their profession, to lernre and obserue the principle of thy booke, whereby they may haue suche knowledge of the Sphere, as may inftructe them the makynge and vise of dyuers goodly Atronomie, and the Planetes perteyninge to the arte of Nauigation, by knowledge of the degrees of the Sunne and Moone in their Spheres, and the other Planetes, and fixte Starres: thereto to attayne to the true knowledge of hours, tynes and tydes, with the variation of the Compasse, and many other goodly naturall obseruations of weathers, tempestes, and calmes, by certain infallible fygnes and tokenys of the same, very necessary to be obserued. And this by the true principles of Atronomie and not of Astrologie. And this is the true Astronomie wherof the Divine Philosopher *Plato* hath wryten so diuine a fentence, that I haue thoughte the fame here worthy to be alleaged, that by the authortie of so famous an authour, we maye knowe what is true Astronomie, with the vise and commodite therof. Therfore in his booke intituled *Timaeus vel De Natura*, these are his wordes. *Rerum autem optimarum cognitionem, nobis oculi attulerunt. Nam haec quae de mundo disputationur, nunquam inuenta fuissent, si neque sydera, neque Sol, neque Caelum suffici posuerit. Cognitione vero diei ac noctis, ab oculis ortis, scit ut dimensione quadam, mensum annorumque ambitus metiremur, tempus cognosceremus, ac uniuersae nature ordinem scrutaremur. Quibus ex rebus, philosophiam adepti sumus.* That is to faye. Our eyes haue brought vnto vs the knowledge of moft excellent things. For what so euer is disputed of the worlde, had never bene inuented of neither the Starres, neither the Sunne, neither heauen, couldle haue bene feene. For the knowledge of the daye and nyght, takynge beginning at ye eyes, caufed vs as it were by certen limites and boundes to measure the circuites of monethes and years, wherby we came to the knowledge of tymes and the order of vniuersall nature. And hereby also we obteyned the knowledge of Philosopbie, &c. And thus by the authortie of Diuine *Plato* (whome for his excellency *Cicerio* called *Duum Philosophorum* (that is) the God of Philosophers) we maye understande that the true Astronomie, is the perfecte knowledge of the miraculouſe mouinges of ye Planetes, Starres, and heauen (and especilly of the Sunne and Moone) whereby is caufed the varietie of times and dyuersite of all naturall thynges, by natural causes: as by the qualities of Elementes, as hoate, colde, moyte and drye, whyche are augmented or dynymyzed by the more or leſſe influence of these two Luminaries, as they come nearer vnto vs at some tymes, or depart further from vs at other tymes, with diuers motiones in diuers climates whiche caufeth not only varietie of tymes in sundry climates, but also the varietie of diuers complexions, formes, and dispositiōnes of all creatures vnder the face of heauen, none other accidentall contyngent, voluntarie or violent cause to the contrarie notwithstandinge. And this is it that *Plato* meaneth by thos wordes. *Vt tempus cognosceremus ac uniuersae nature ordinem, &c.* That is, to knowe the tymes and vniuersall order of nature. And doubleſſe, who ſo well confidereth the maruelous effectes that are caufed, especially by the variable mouing of the Sunne

in the Zodiac, muſt needs acknowledge it to be the chiefe instrument and meane that God veth in the generation, perferuation, and alteration of all creatures that are conteyned in the worlde of generation and corruption. And for this confideration, certen of the auncient Philofophers calld it the foule of the worlde: Other the eye, and other alſo the heart of the worlde. *Plato* alſo affirmeth that the foule of the worlde is in the Sunne: And that all other liuing thynges, receyue lyfe from hence. And hereof commeth the faynginge of the Philosopher, *Sol et homo generant hominem:* (that is) the Sunne and man, begette man. And therefore (as wryteth *Marcius Ficinus*) of all Idolatres they are moft tollerable that honour the Sunne for God. The whiche although it bee not, yet vndoubtedlye are his effectes to greate and wonderfull in this inferiour worlde, that it may feme in maner to be Gods Viceregent, Lieutenant and Viceroy in al the woorkes of nature, excepte where and when it pleafeth hym in any thyng myraculouſe, otherwyſe then by the common order and courfe of nature, to comandue the contrarie.

And if it may not be tedious vnto you (ryght honorable and worhypfull) it ſhalbe a pleaſure vnto me, for the better declaracion hereof, to make a briefe diſcoure of the maruelous and ſtrange effectes that are cauſed by the Sunne: whiche perhaps fewe haue done, otherwyſe then diſpeareſſe here and there, as occaſion hath ferued. Fyrt therfore let vs conſider what it hath done ouer the Equinoctiall line, and vnder both the poles at one instant, yet diuerſely and contrarely the one to the other. For to haſt the infinite wydome of the greate God of nature, the ſupreme Architeture of the vniuerſall worlde, diſpoſed all thynges in ſuch perfecte order, that to them that are vnder the Equinoctiall, and haue their Horizon paſſyng by the two Poles, the daye is of xiij. houres and the nyght as much, and theyr yeare alſo is deuyded into xii. monethes: But they that dwell iuft and perpendicularly vnder our pole, and that haue their Horizon paſſyng ouer the fayde line, haue the daye of fyxe monethes. That is to faye: beginnyng from the tenth daye of Marche, when the Sunne commeth ouer the fayde Horizon, whyle it returne to paſſe vnder the fame at the tenth of September. And contrarywyſe one nyght of fyxe monethes haue th[em] inhabitauntes vnder the Pole Antartyke: whiche yeare (that is to faye, all the courfe that the Sunne maketh by the xii. signes of the Zodiac) is accomplayſhed in one daye and one nyght. A thyng doubleſſe moſte wonderfull and maruelous. Lykewyſe, when we haue Sommer, they that are vnder our Pole haue the daye of fyxe monethes, and they of the oppofite or contrary Pole, haue theyr nyght of the fame length. Agayne, when it is wynter with vs, then vnder our Pole is the nyght of the fayde fyxe monethes: and vnder the oppofite Pole, is the daye of the fame length. So that as it were courfe by courfe, when we haue the night, they haue the day: And contrarywyſe, when we haue the day, they haue the night. The whiche although it be ſo longe and of ſo great ſpace of tyme, yet is it not continually obſcured with darkenesſe. For the Sunne maketh his courfe in ſuch order, that th[e]inhabitauntes of that parte, lyue not duryng that tyme altogether in darkenesſe, as Moles lyue vnder the grounde, but as other creatures that lyue vpon the globe and face of the earth, they haue ſuche lyght as maye ſuffice to faytayne and mayntayne theyr lyfe. For the bodye of the Sunne declineth no more eyther beneath the Equinoctiall line, eyther aboue the fame line (which is the Horizon to both the Poles) than. 23. degrees: That is to faye, no lower or hygher then the Tropikes, whiche are no more then 23. degrees or there about from the fayde Equinoctiall that is theyr Horizon, as is aforeſayde. And yet in theſe 23. degrees he maketh not his courfe by the oppofite Diameter, but goeth continually rounde about in circuite: fo that his beames reuerberatynge heauen, repreſente ſuche a maner of lyght, as we haue in Sommer two houres before the Sunne ryse. And this example which we haue taken of the diuersite of the Horizons of the Equinoctiall and vnder the two Poles, is to demonſtrate the maruelous effecte that the Sunne maketh departing from the xii. houres of the Equinoctiall (that is to ſay, from Aries to Libra) and commyng by lytle and lytle, illuminatyng the globe of the earth, and ſo redyceyng the yere of xii. monethes, into one onely day and one nyght, as is fayde before. Vnder the infinite varietie of the which courfe, fometyme with long dayes and fometyme with ſhorte, all the inhabitauntes of the worlde are tourmed and diſpoſed of ſuche complexion and ſtrength of body, that every of them are proportionate to the Climate affigned vnto them, be it hotte or colde: And may dwel and abyde there, as in theyr natural place and temperament, not lamentyng or defyryng to dwell elſwhere, ſo grete a loue reſet in

themselves instrument and alteration of all con and corruption. Cophers called it the heart of the worlde. The Sunne : And that hereof commeth solum : (that is) the wryteth *Marcilius* non the Sunne for alldie are his effects may feme in maner the woorkes of nature, myraculouslye, ture, to comandme

ble and worshypfull) on hereof, to make a tates that are caused by life then disperedlye let vs consider what the poles at one ther. For so hath the preme Architecture of perfecte order, that to Horizon passing byt as much, and theyr that dwell iust and Horizon passing over at is to saye : begynne commeth ouer the same at the tenth of monethes haue th[e] (that is to saye, all thees of the Zodiac) is yng doubtlesse moste Sommer, they that hys, and they of the me length. Agayne, the nyght of the fayde nyght of the same length. the night, they haue the night, space of tyme, yet is it the Sunne maketh his arte, lyes not durynge under the gronde, but of the earth, they haue theyr lyfe. For the Equinoctiall line, both the Poles) than. the Tropikes, whiche the fayde Equinoctiall in their 23. degrees heut goeth continually erating heauen, repre- two hours before the n of the diuerstite of poles, is to demonstrate parting from the xii. to Libra) and commyng, and so reduceng the ght, as is fayde before. tyme with long dayes the worlde are tourmedly, that every of them be it hote or colde : acce and temperament, rete a loue reflech in

And thus efftions defryng your Honours and Worhyppe to accept in good parte whatsoeuer I haue faide of good wyll and affection towardye you and your procedaynges, and with your shielde of Justice and auctoritie, to defende me agaynst the assautes of such as are enemies to vertue, and capitius of other mens doinges: I refle at your com- mandement to the vittermost of my powre, to do you what seruice I maye.

1562. March 1. John Taisnier, Doctor of Laws [*b.* at Ath, in Brabant], a writer in astrology and chiromancy, publishes at Cologne a tract, *De natura magnetis et ejus effectibus*. Grasse, in his *Trésor*, states that it is a gross plagiary from Pellegrine Maricourt's *De Magnete*, printed in August 1558.

1562. The Civil Wars in France begin by the unpremeditated massacre of Huguenots at Vassy by the Duke of Guise.

1562. Eden's wife is apparently dead, and he himself residing in the house of a friend; when the following letter was written. It is manifestly addressed to Sir W. Cecil, who was brother-in-law to Sir John Cheke. Both the writer and the Secretary of State were now about forty-two years of age. Apparently Eden was to receive £20 [= £150 now] as an earnest penny or a translation of Pliny into English.

THE only searcher of mens hartes the eternall god I take to wytnesse (right Honorable) that never the greefes of aduerse fortune (wherof I haue had my partie), dyd so muche prostrate my mynde and pearce my harte with forowes, as the vnderstanding of your honours fauour and goodnesse towarde me in your lately ernest travale in my behalfe (as I was informed by the Master of Savoye) haue relioyed me and revived my Discouraged spirates, heretofore no issse languysshed for lacke of suche a Patronne, then nowe encouraged by the counte of suche a *Macenas*, as I haue iust caute to name your honoure, syth only the respecte of suche vertues as it haue pleased you to think command me in me, hath moved your Honour not only in maner to feeme carefull for

me howe I maye hereafter with quietnesse spende my tyme in studie (as is my moste desyre) but also to be more erneft in folowing the fame, then I might without presumption demaunde, and muche lesse without deserfes require. As touchinge the which matter (right Honorable) as it was no parte of my diuise, but fuche as the Master of Savoy had then in hande as I suppose no lesse to pleasure hym selfe and his frende then for xxlii therof to be loted to me for an earnest penye to begynne the booke (as he saith), Even so am I right forie that for so fmaule a matter, and not so favorable a fute as I wold have wylled, not only your Honour hathe taken fuche paynes, but that also fuche contention is ryen therof betwene the Master of Savoy and Maister Baptiste of the prive chamber, that by reaon therof the pardon being steyed be your Honour, the younge gentleman his kynfman (as he had informed me) is in Daungier of his lyfe. But vnder your honours fauour to speake playnelye as I thinke, I suppose that here *Aliiquid latet quod non appareat*. ffor as this fute for dyuers confederations at the first dyd not greatly like me, yet perceaving his ernestnesse therin for the safegarde of his kynfman's life and gratifying his frendes, I no lesse willing therin to do hym pleasure also, was well contented to assent to his request, and to flande to his appoyntment, not suspecting his frenchedisshiue, but rather commanding his wyfdom, ffo to doo for his frende as therwith not to forget hym selfe, *quia nihil sapit qui sibi non sapit*. But if at that tyme, I might so boldelye haue perfumed vppyon your honours fauour, as by your ernestnesse in my lehalfe I nowe perceave I might haue doonne, I wold haue moued your Honour of an honeste fute (for a leafe to be had at the queenes handes) wherof I made hym priuie, and was longe fene fo mynded to haue doonne, but that he Deterred me frome the fame, alleaging certen commissioners to haue the Doinges therof, and that therfore no fuche thing might be had at her Maiesties handes: Albeit, I haue sythens hard of Dyvers that haue obteyned the like. Notwithstanding (as in my former letters I wrote to your Honour) my meaning is, ffo to move your Honour hereof, as neyther to be an importunate futer; or otherwyfe to thinkne the fame to be folowed, then shall seeme good vnto your Honour, vnto whos[e] will I submite my selfe in all thinges: Only putting your Honour in remembraunce of the commodious place and tyme that I nowe enioye for that purpose: for the contynuance wherof, I was a futer vnto your Honur for your letters vnto the gentleman my frende in whose house I yet remayne, Who also being one that fauoureth learninge, and my greate frende, and no lesse gladdie to further so good a purpose, is well willing the rather to my selfe, to departe frome a piece of his commodtie, in fuche forte as appereath by the byll herein inclosed. Wherof, further to aduertise your Honour if you shal so thinke it convenient, he will hym selfe repaire vnto your Honour to give you perfecte informacon of all things as touching the fame.

And wheras the Master of Savoye tolde me that your Honour sumwhat Doubteth that the booke coulde not be translated into the Englysshe toonge, I assure you Honour that this I Dare faye without arrogancie, that to translate the variable historie of Plinie into our toonge, I wold be ashamed to borowe so muche of the Latine as he Dothe of the Greke, althowgh the Latine toonge be accompted ryche, and the Englysshe indigent and barbarous, as it hath byn in tyme past, muche more then it nowe is, before it was enriched and ampliyed by fundry bookes in manner of all artes translated owt of Latine and other toonges into Englysshe. And it is not vnknownen vnto your Honour that the Latins receaving bothe the science of philosophie and phisike of the Grekes, Do still for the moste parte in all ther translacions vfe the Greke names, in so muche that for the better understandyng of them, one Otto Brunfelsius, a learned man, hath written a large booke Intituled *Onomasticon medicinae*, where he hath these wordes. *Res ipsas, atque artuum vocabula, scite, apposite, designaque effire, atque ad Polycleti regulam (quod aiunt) exprimere, res est non minus difficilis quam gloriofa. Quo, nullum studii genus, maiori confortat molestia. Id quod in causa esse reor, quod hodie tam pauci in ea palatstra sese exercant etc.* Agen, it is not vnknownen vnto your Honour that ons all toonges were barbarous and needie, before the knowleage of thinges brought in plentie of wordes and names. Wherby it maye well appere that men in the firt age of the worlde, had a shorte language, consistinge of fewe wordes: which euer after increased by the knowleage and invention of thinges. Exercyce also maketh fuche wordes familiar, whiche at the firt were Difficulte to be vnderstode. ffor children at the firt (as faithe Aristote) caule all men fathers. But shortly after by exercyce, caule them by there names. And I haue learned by experiance, that the maryners vfe manye

Englysshe woordes which were as vnknownen vnto me as the Chaldean toonge before I was conuertert with them. It maye therfore suffice that the woordes and termes of artes and sciences be knowne to the professours therof, as partly by experiance, and partly by the helpe of dictionaries describing them. *Per proprium, genus, et differentiam*, as the logitians teache, and as *Georgius Agricola* weth to do in the Germanye toonge : which as well in that partie of philosophie as in all other, was barbarous and indigent before it was by longe experiance brought to perfection. But not to trouble your Honour any longer with this matter, one thinge remayneth wherof I wolde gladly haue certified your Honour at my last being at the courte at Grenewich, if I might haue had conuenient access vnto you. And this is. That perceiving your Honour to take pleasure in the wonderfull woorkes of arte and nature (wherin doublefesse syneth the sparkes of the diuine Spirite that god hath gyuen you) I was then mynded to ha[ue] deluyered vnto your Honour this philosophicall booke, wher[in] is described (as appereith in folio. ii.) so excellent and precious an experiance, wrought by arte to the similitude of the vnuerfall frame of the worlde made by the omnipotent and greate God of nature, that I beleue the like was never doonne syne the creacion of the worlde. And maye therfore in my judgement, more woorthely be cauled *Microcosmos*, then eyther man or any other creature that euer was made of corporall substance. *Angulus Politianus* in his epitelles, describeth an instrument cauled *Automaton* made in his tyme in the citie of Florence, obseruing the exacte mouing of *Primum Mobile* and *Octava Sphera*, with also the mouinges of the 7 planetes in there spheres, in all poynetes agreeable to there mouing in the heauen. Of the like instrument also, our Roger Bacon wrotte longe before in his booke *De Mirabilis potestate artis et naturae*, where he writheth in this maner. *Maius omnium figuracionum et rerum figuratarum est ut Calstia describerentur secundum suas longitudines et latitudines in figura corporali, que mouentur corporaliter motu diuino. Et hoc valeret Regnum homini sapienti etc.* The which instrumente doublefesse, althowgh it be of a diuine inuentione : yet dothe this *Microcosmos* fo far surmount it, as nature pasteth arte, and as *Motus animalis* pasteth *Motus violentus*, for as the other is moued only by waight or wynde inclinado (as is feene in clockes and organs) fo is this moued by the same Spirite of life wherby not only the heauen, but also all nature is moued : whose mover is god hym selfe as faith S. Paule : *Ipsus est in quo vivimus, mouemur, et sumus.* As also Aristotle, Plato, and Philo, in there bookees *De Mundo*, do affirme. And especially *Marcus Manilius in Astronomicis ad Augustum Cesarem*, writing thus :

*Hoc opus immensi constructum corpore Mundi,
Membrana natura diversa condita forma,
Aeris atque ignis, Terre, pelagiique iacentis,
Vis anime diuina regit: Sacroque media
Conspirat Deus, et tacita ratione gubernat, etc.
Aere libratum vacuo, qui sustinet orbem,* *Item Lucanus
Totius pars magnus lousi.*

And wheras the autoure that describeth this *Microcosmos* affirmeth that the *Chaos* therof, is *Materia Lapidis Philosophorum* (which is also *Chaos*, vel *Ouum*, vel *prima Materia Mundi maioris*) it seemeth to agree with that *Cornelius Agrippa* hath written in his seconde booke *De Occulta philosophia, in Scala Unitatis*, where he writheth thus : *Lapis philosophorum est unum subiectum et instrumentum omnium virtutum naturalium et transnaturalium etc.* And that this greate and diuine fecrete of this *Microcosmos* maye not feeme incredible vnto your Honour, I assure you that I that am *Minimus Philosophorum*, dyd long fende (as I haue to wytnesse) Mr Thomas Whalley, th[e]elder sonne of Mr Richard Whalley) woorke a fecrete practise fumwhat like vnto this, in maner as followeth. I dissolued two substances in two waters. Then I put the waters togither in a glasse, suffering them fo to remayne for a tyme. Then I stilled off[!] the water frome the masse or *Chaos* lefte of them bothe. And put it on ageyn. And fo dyd dyuers tynes. In fine, the masse being dissolued in the water, I let it rest all night in a coulde place. In the morning, I founde swymming on the water and in the myddest therof, a little rounde Iland as brode as [a] riall or fumwhat more, with at the least a hundred fyluer trees abowt an ynce high, so perfectly formed with trunkes, stalkes, and leaves, all of most pure and glyffering fyluer, that I supposse no lynn[e]r or paynter is able to conterfeite the like. Then shaking the glasse, all fell in pieces into the water, and fille[d] it with glyffering sparkes, as the firmament syneth w[i]th starres in a cleare wynter nyght. Then putting the glasse to a soote

fyre vpon warme ashes, all turned agen into cleare water, which agen being put in a colde place all night, made an Iland with the like t[er]ees as before. What this wolde haue byn in fine, god knoweth, and not I. But of this I am sure, that if the floure of learning of our tyme and sumtyme Tutor and brother in lawe vnto your Honour Mr [i.e., Sir John] Cheeke, had feene any of these two fecretes, he wold greatly haue releyfed : As I knowe the diuine sparcle of knowledge that is in your Honour partly receaved of hym, will move you to doo the like, fythe to a philosophicall and vertuous man, there is nothing so delectable as to beholde the infinite poure and wyldeome of God in his creatures, in the which, his deitie is not only visibele, but in maner palpable, as sum philosophers haue written. And as touching these matters, I haue red a maruelous sentencie in an olde written booke where these woordes are written : *Qui potest facere Medium naturam, potest creare Mundos novos.* But to discouer of this oracle, or to interprete the fame, it were to muche to molest your Honour therewith : and an argument muche meete for a seconde Socrates then for me. And of these fecretes, writheth Roger Bacon in his booke before alleaged, where he hath the woordes : *Multa sunt archana admiranda in operibus artis et naturae: Qua licet multam utilitatem non habeant (habent vero maxim[am] ut sapientibus cognitis est) tam non spectaculum ineffabile sapientiae probant et possunt applicari ad probationem omnium occulorum quibus vulgus inexpertum contradicit, et indicat fieri per opera Demoniorum, etc.*

And thus most humbly defyng your Honour to pardon my boldnesse in writing vnto you, and according vnto your accustomed clemencie to accept in good parte this my preflumptuous attempte which only the loue I beare to your vertues hath moued me vnto, my trust is that these shinges shall not be all toogther vnplesaunting vnto your Honour otherwyse occupied in great affayres bothe in the courte and common wealthe, as was Plato with King *Dyonisius*, Aristotle with greate Alexander, and Cicero Senator and Consul of Rome. The eternall God and immortall mover of the greate worlde and the leffe, preferue your Honour in healtche and prosperte.

Frome the ffolde byfyde Barnet. The first of August. 1562.
Most bownde to your Honour.

RICHARDE EDEN.

Tua Dominationi addictus, atque non quaro panates.
Sententia Hippocratis.—*In secretis et occultis, secretus et occultus esto.*

ENDORSED—Primo Augusiti. 1562. Richard Eden.

Lands. MS. 101, art. 5.

The advancement which Eden sought, came almost immediately after he wrote this letter : but it is sad to know, that it ultimately ruined him both in health and fortune, and brought him to a premature grave.

We must now introduce a celebrated historical personage, with whose wanderings and trials Eden's life was for the next ten years indissolubly identified ; and in the narration of which, we shall be telling the story of our Author's life during the period he was on the Continent. In doing which, we thankfully acknowledge our obligations to the *Vie de Jean de Ferrières, Vidame de Chartres, Seigneur de Maligny*, by a Member [Count L. de Bastard] of the Historical and Natural Science Society of the Yonne. 170 copies only of which, were printed at Auxerre in 1858.

A *Vidame* was originally the principal lay officer of a bishop. In France, however, only five bishops had such an officer, viz., those of Rheims, Amiens, Mans, Laon, and Chartres ; together with certain Abbeys. In process of time, however, it became a mere hereditary title ; dependent for its renown on the person who held it and the wealth whereof he was possessed.

JEAN DE FERRIÈRES, disinherited by his father, François de Ferrières, in 1540 ; became *Seigneur de Maligny* in 1544 ; went to Rome in the embassy of M. de Urfe in 1549 ; accompanied the then *Vidame*, François de Vendome, to the relief of the Siege of Metz in 1553 ; and went to Piedmont in 1557. François de Vendome having died on 22d December 1560 : the *Seigneur de Maligny* then became *Vidame of Chartres* ; and thereby immensely rich, if he could have enjoyed his own in peace. But not daring to administer to his vast estate in person, for fear of attracting the attention of his enemies to it : his sister *Beraude*, by secret agreement with him, presented herself as the sole heir to François de Vendome.

On the breaking out of the Civil Wars, Condé sent the new *Vidame* (whose riches gave him great influence among the Protestant party) over to England, with the *Seigneur de Saint Aubin*, to induce Elizabeth to join

water, which agen
th the like tress as
th, and not I. But
tym and fumtyme
Sir John] Cheke,
hauie reioyed: As I
our partly receaved
phicall and vertuous
e infinite poure and
e is not only visibile,
n. And as touching
an olde written booke
iam naturam, potest
, or to interprete the
h: and an argument
nd of these secretes,
where he hath these
arts et nature: Qua
m[am] et sapientius
e probent et possunt
vulgus inexpertum

ardon my boldnesse in
d clemencie to accept
only the loue I beare
at these thinges shall
otherwyse occupied in
the, as was Plato with
Cicer Senator and
mover of the greate
sultie and prosperitie.
gust. 1562.

EDEN.
s non quaro penates.
et occultus ego.

ard Eden.
ts. M.S. 101, art. 5.
t immediately after he
ately ruined him both
re grave.

ersonage, with whose
ten years indissolubly
e telling the story of
Continent. In doing
o the *Vie de Jean de*
by a Member [Count
ience Society of the
Auxerre in 1588.

er of a bishop. In
officer, viz., those of
together with certain
mere hereditary title ;
and the wealth where-

François de Ferrières,
went to Rome in the
hen Vidame, François
in 1553; and went to
ied on 22 December
me of Chartres; and
e own in peace. But
o, for fear of attracting
e, by secret agreement
ois de Vendome.
sent the new Vidame
testant party) over to
uce Elizabeth to join

in so holy and just a quarrel. Being joyned by La Haye, they finally arrived in England about 15th August 1562; and after many secret conferences, the Treaty of Hampton Court was signed by them, on 20th September following. *Cot. MS. Cal. E. v. f. 113*, is a copy of this Treaty bearing the signature of the Vidame.

At this moment, Eden, who was an excellent linguist, entered the service of the Vidame. Time pressed, 3000 men under Sir Adrian Poynings, and with them the Vidame and Eden, left Portsmouth on 2d October, and were in Havre on the 4th : the majority of them to be killed, or die of the plague by the 29th of July following, when Havre was surrendered to the French. Such as survived brought with them to England, the plague which they had there caught.

In the meantime, the Civil Wars had been stopped by the Edict of the Pacification of Amboise on 19th March 1563.

All the goods of the Vidame were pronounced confiscated, under pretence that he had brought the English into Havre. The French Court, while in progress after the Pacification, reached Troyes on the 23d March 1564; when the Vidame [and Eden] joined on the 8th April the Prince de Condé there, and received a simulated welcome from Charles IX. and Catherine de Medeis. Leaving the Court at Vitry on 27th April, he rejoined Condé, at Paris; where he appears to have chiefly resided for the next two or three years.

Eden states below, and at p. xlvi., that he had been in Germany, and, among other places, at Strasburg. He probably accompanied the Vidame there.

A fresh rising of the Protestants occurred on 27th September 1567, when they nearly captured by a *coup de main* the entire French Court. Then came the Battle of St. Denis on 10th November, and the Pacification of Longjumeau on the 23d March 1568.

The Vidame and his newly married wife (Francois Joubert, widow of Ch. Chabot) and suite [including, it is presumed, Eden] arrived on the Cornish coast, on 28th April 1569; and after some delay, were allowed to come to London. The Vidame was received by the Queen, on 18th July, at Greenwich. On the 23d September 1569, he was burnt in effigy, for the second time within a year, on the *Place de Grève*, at Paris, by an arrêt of the French Parliament.

In consequence of the Peace of St. Germain; the Vidame, after about a year's stay in England, returned in October 1570, by Dieppe, to Paris; where some of his servants being attacked in the street, he retires to Bourbige, Poitou. In February 1572, he was at La Ferté, on private affairs.

Soon afterwards he returned to Paris; where he found all the chiefs of the Huguenot party lulled into a belief of perfect safety, through their trust in the King's word. He, however, did not trust the Court, and would not reside in the city, but in the Faubourg of St. Germain. When questioned for the reason of this; he replied 'that the air of the Faubourgs was better than that of the City, and that of the fields better than that of the Faubourgs.'

Maurevert, the assassin of the Count de Mouy, attempted the assassination of Admiral Coligny; but fails to kill him. Charles IX. had hardly left the wounded Huguenot chief; when the Vidame called on him, and let loose his indignation at the dastard cowardice of the act.

On the next day, Saturday, 23d August, at a meeting of the Protestant chiefs at Coligny's house, the Vidame urged that the Admiral should be conveyed out of Paris; and that the Protestants should quit the city: but he was overruled.

That night, occurred the MASSACRE OF ST. BARTHOLOMEW, commencing on the right bank of the Seine. The Vidame, his brother-in-law de la Fin, and ten others [including probably Eden], who were living on the left bank of the river—warned by the firing—escaped for their lives, sailing first to La Ferté. Hearing, however, that the Duke de Guise had sent the Sieur de St. Leger to take them: they hurriedly left the Chateau, and—after some wandering up and down the country—managed to reach the coast; where they found a ship, which carried them safely to England. The Vidame arrived in London on 7th September 1573.

Sept. 1573. The Vidame, in a very flowery letter, solicits of the Queen, that Richard Eden, who had given him good and faithful companionship for the space of ten years, may be admitted one of the poor knights of Windsor. He also refers to his erudition, and the experience he had acquired in the secrets of Nature. He further encloses the three following autographic memoranda; by the date of which, we have put an English translation:—

i.
Si placeat sue Maiestati concedere
Richardo Eden proximan vocacionem
Militum illorum, qui Winsori
Milites Oratorij vocantur, à Rege
Henrico 8° fundati.

If it may please Her Majesty to grant to Richard Eden the next vacant place among the Knights, who are called the Knights of the Oratory of Windsor, founded by King Henry VIII.

II.

Richardus Eden natione Anglus,
ex honesta familia natu in agro
Herkordensi, ubi adhuc sororem habet
viventem, sue Maiestati bene cognitam,
nempe uxorem equestris ordinis
viri Iohannis Butleri de Lamer: A
pueritia educatus in bonis literis,
studit in Achademia Cantabrigiensis
decem annis sub tutori doctissimo
viro, domino Thoma Smyth, nunc Her
Majestatis Secrario suo Maiestati, qui de eius
eruditio et morum integritate satis
testari potest.

Deinde a serenissimo Rego Henrico Octavo ab achademia vocatus,
ipsius Regis mandato, in Aerario
officium obtinuit, ubi usque ad
mortem Regis, hoc est duobus annis,
permansit; qui etiam moriens illius
non immemor assignavit illi domum
distillatoria officium. Quod tamen
Regie mortuo Sumereti Dux illi
concessit qui nunc fruatur.

Postea uxorem duxit, ex qua in
xliii, annis xii, infantes generavit, ut
vel haec ratione videatur de patria
bene meritus.

Qui etiam tempore aliquot Reipublicae utilis libros ex sermone
Latino Italicu Hispanico traduxit,
qui typis impressi extant, ut Decades
de Novo Orbe, liber iusti voluminus,
viz. 600 foliorum; ac deinde librum
de Arte Navigandi a Martino Cor-
tesio in lingua Hispanica ad Carolon
V. scriptum; insuper ex Pyrotechnia
Italica multa de rebus metallicis, quae
antea in nostra lingue extiterunt.

Tempore vero Marie Regine His-
panorum quorundam nobilium fauore,
denuo in Regis Philippi Aerarium
electus: hereses apud Wintoniensem
Episcopum accusatus a Watsono Lin-
colinensi Episcopo, officio privatus
est.

Mortua vero uxore, illius fama ad
illusterrimam Domini Vidami aures
pervenit. Cum quo, quomodo his x.
annis et amplius in Germania et
Gallia vixerit in atrae fortuna, nec
mercennarius nec deserter, et semper
illi charissimus, ipsem Domini
Vidamus pro sun humanitate, veri-
tate testimonium feret. A quo etiam
multis amplissimis munieribus dona-
tus, si tamen non ditatus nulla pro-
fecto illustrissimi Domini incuria vel

Afterwards, being summoned from
the University by the most serene
King Henry VIII., he held, by his
order, an office in the Treasury,
where he remained for two years
until the King's death; who, when
dying, did not forget him, but as-
signed to him the office of the distil-
lery. After the King's death, the
Duke of Somerset granted the office
to the present holder.

Afterwards he married, and in
fourteen years begot twelve children,
so that for this reason also he
seems to deserve well of his country.

At this time he translated from the
Latin, Italian, and Spanish several
books useful to the State, which are
still in print, as *Decades de Novo Orbe*,
a book of good size, viii. six hundred
folios; and a book *De Arte Navigandi*,
written by Martin Cortes to Charles
V. in Spanish; and in addition many
portions of *Pyrotechnia Italica* con-
cerning metals; which did not exist
before in our language.

In the time of Queen Mary, he
was again placed in the Treasury of
King Phillip, through the favour
of certain Spanish nobles; but being
accused of heresy before [Gardiner]
the Bishop of Winchester by Watson,
Bishop of Lincoln; he was deprived
of his office.

After the death of his wife, his
repute came to the ears of the most
illustrious Lord the Vidame. How
he lived [with him] for ten years
and more in Germany and France,
with varying fortune, neither a mer-
cenary nor a deserter, and always
most dear to him; the Lord Vidame
himself will kindly bear witness.
From whom also he received many
large gifts. And assuredly it is not
through carelessness or oblivion on

oblivio in causa fuit, sed sola voluntatis et nouercent fortuna culpa.

Nunc vero, senio affectus, et corporis infirmitate, cogitur peregrinandi finem facere; nihil magis habens in votis quam ut sua Maiestatis gratia et favore, possit tandem in patria honestis studiis et Reipublice utilibus vitam finire. Nulla vero magnarum divitiarum, aut honoris ambitione flagrans solam vitam tranquillam et studiis commodam exoptat.

Deus optimus maximus suam Caelitudinem semper seruet incolumen.

III.

Quandoquidem maxima pars hominum non est semper melior pars, sed reperiuntur quamplures Ardelines quibus nihil est magis gratum quam ex quauis leuissima occasione bonos viros calumniari. Ideoque ut agni a lupo sumi fauces in tuto vivant, necessum erit ut leonis animalium regis, hoc est, Regia autoritate tueantur.

Quis enim nunc in Anglia potest Paracelsi admiranda medicamenta ex metallis et mineralibus componere (que cum Alchimia aliquo modo symbolizant) nisi statim ab ignariis et calumniatoriis Alchimiae legibus prohibite infamiam et periculum incurat. Cui malo obviando Principis diplomata opus erit. Nec dubito quin quum Brocardo multisque aliis peregrinis libere permittitur exercere. Idem mihi aequiori iudicio Principis autoritate concedatur.

the part of his illustrious Lord, but only in consequence of changeful and adverse fortune; that he was not enriched.

Now affected by age and bodily infirmity, he is obliged to make an end of wandering; desiring nothing more than, by Her Majesty's favour, to end his life in his own country, in honourable studies, and useful to the State. He has no ambition for great riches or honour; but only desires a quiet life, suitable for study.

May God ever preserve Her Majesty.

III.

Since, indeed, the greater part of mankind is not always the better part, but many busybodies are found who have no greater pleasure than in calumniating good men on the most trifling occasions; therefore that lamb may live safe from the jaws of wolves, they must be protected by the lion, the king of beasts—that is, protected by royal authority.

Who can at this present time, in England, compound the admirable medicaments of Paracelsus from metals and minerals (which are symbolized by an alchemical method), without immediately incurring from ignorant calumniators the infamy and peril of practising alchemy, which is prohibited by the laws. To obviate this evil, a royal license is needed. Neither do I doubt that since it is permitted to Brocardus and many other foreigners freely to practise [the art]; that the same will, with more justice, be granted to me by the royal authority.—*State Papers, Dom. Eliz., Vol. 92, No. 32.*

There were thirteen poor knights of Windsor, whose annual allowance was paid by the Dean of Windsor. It consisted of £18: 5s. in money; a gown or coat of red cloth; and a blue or purple cloth mantle with the badge of St. George embroidered on the left sleeve. Eden's application does not appear to have been successful.—See Tighe and Davis, *Annals of Windsor*, i. 223. Ed. 1858.

1573.

Sir W. Winter is knighted this year.—See Sylvanus

Morgan's *Sphere of Gentry*, Book 3, p. 14, Ed. 1661
1574. Win- Eden writes the following dedication to Sir W. Winter
tertide. of his translation of John Taisner's book *De natura
magnetis, &c.*, which he designed as a complement to a new edition of his previous translation of Martin Cortes' *Arte de Navigar*. Though written at this time, it did not appear in print for four or five years afterwards, in consequence of the successive deaths of Eden, Richard Jugge the printer, and his son John Jugge.

The most important allusion in it is the account of Sebastian Cabot's death, the only one on record.

A very necessary and profitable Booke concerning Nauigation, compiled in Latin by Joannes Taijnerius, a publike professor in Rome, Ferraria, and other Vniuercities in Italie of the Mathematicales, named a treatise *Of continuall motions*. Translated into English, by Richarde Eden.

Imprinted at London by Richarde Jugge.

xvi

To the ryght woorshipfull Syr Wylliam Wynter, Knigght, Maister of the Ordinaunce of the Queens Maiesties Shippes, and Surveyor of the sayd Shippes, Richarde Eden wyfeth health and prosperitie.

RICHARDE EDEN is nowe about twelve yeeres past (gentle Maister Wynter) since the curteisie and fauour which long before I founde at your hande, mooued me no leffe for the good wyl that I haue euer borne you and your vertues, to excogitate or deuise somethyng, within the compasse of my poore abilitie, that myght be a witnesse, and as it were a seale, to testifie both that I haue not forgotten your gentlenesse, and also how defyrous I am to pay the debtes of frenchedsyre which then I promised you, and alfo attempted to perfourme: But beyng at that tyme presented, by meanes of my sondayne departing out of Englannde, with my good Lorde the *Vidame*, with whom I remayned for the space of ten yeres, vnyll the calamities of that miserable countrey, with losse of goods, and danger of lyfe, hath dryuen me home agayne into my native countrey: Where syndyng my selfe at some leysure, and defyrous to passe soothre partie of my tyme in some honest exercise, which myght be profitable to many, damagable to none, and a meanes to geat me newe frendes, the olde in my so long absence, in maner vitterly wafted: I chauched in the meane tyme, to meeete with my olde acqauaintance and freend, Richard Jugge, Printer to the Queens Maiestie, who had manye before, printed the Booke of *Marten Curtes*, of the Art of Nauigation, by me translatel out of Spanye tonge. Whereof, haung with him some conference, he declared that he woulde pryn that booke agayne, yf I woulde take the paynes to deuise some addition touchyng the same matter, that myght be ioyned thereto. At whiche tyme, haung with me in the Latine tonge, thefe books here folowing printed, whiche I brought with me out of Fraunce, I soone agreed to his honest request, to translate them into Englyshe: Whiche beyng accomplished, this onely remayned, accordingy to the common custome, to consecrate and dedicate the same to some worthie personage, whose fame, auctorite, and dignite, myght defende them from the eyll tongues of such as are more redie rather to reproove other mens dooynges, then to doo any good them selues. And therfore (gentle Maister Wynter) knowing your auctorite and fame in well deferyng, and honorable seruice vnto your Prince and Countrey, to be suche as all men thynke so well of, and so greately esteeme, to whom (rather then to you) may I dedicate this booke of Nauigation? In consideracion whereof, and the hope that I haue in your approued curteisie, fauourably to accept this dedication, as proce[di]ng from one that defyreteth nothing more then to doo you seruice, and remayne in your grace, I shall thynke my trauale wel bestowed, and sufficienly recompensed, yf it shall please you to accept the same as thankfullly, as I wyllyngly offer it vnto you.

For yf there be any thyng in me, wherein I maye by good reason please my selfe, it is cheefely this, that I haue euer loued and honoured men of singuler vertue or qualite, in whatsoeuer laudable Art or Science, even of those whereof I mee selfe haue little knowledge, as are Geometrie, Astronomie, Architecture, Musick, Payntyng, feates of Armes, inuentions of Ingens, and suche lyke: Of the whiche, this our age maye seeme not onely to contende with the Auncientes, but alſo in many godly inuentions of Art and wyt, farre to exceede them. For (not to speake agaynst all the marueyous inuentions of our tyme) what of theirs is to be compared to the Artes of Printyng, makynge of Gunnis, Fyre woorkes, of fundry kyndes of artificial Fyres, of suche marueyous force, that mountaynes of moche harde rockes and stones, are not able to refyl their violence, but are by them broken in peeces and thrown into the ayre with suche violence, that neyther the spirite of *Demogorgon*, or the thunderboltes of infernal *Pluto* can doo the lyke. What shoulde I here speake of the woorderfull inuentions of *Fartallo*, in his booke *De Arte maiori?* or of many other, whereof *Vannucius Beringocius* wryteth in his booke, entituled, *Pyrotechnia*. As touchyng which terrible inuentions, and the lyke, although some men be of opinion that they were inuented by the instigation of the devyll, for the destruction of mankindynesse: yet other weyghyng the matter more indifferently thynke that the inuention of Gunnis hath ben the sauyng of many mens lyues, because before the vfe of them, men were not woot so long tyme to lye battering in the besieging of Townes or Fortresses, but in short space to come to hande strokes, and to foughthen feedles, to the great slaughter of great multitudes. And seyng that nowe our enimies the Turkes, and

ight, Maister
tes, and Sur-
k health and

le Maister Wynter)
before I founde at
the good wyl that I
was, to excoigite or
of my poore abillite,
tie both that I haue
I am to pay the
and also attempted to
anes of my foydayne
idame, with whom I
ties of miserablie
h dryuen me home
elfe at fome leasure,
ome honest exercise,
one, and a meanes to
ce, in maner vitter
with my olde acquay-
neens Maitifie, who
Curtes, of the Art of
. Whereof, hauyng
de pryst that booke
dition touchyng the
tyme, hauyng with-
tched, which I brought
t request, to translare
this onli remayned,
to dedcate the fame to
and dignite, myght
more redie rather to
them felues. And
uthoritie and fame in
nes and Countrey, to
lye efeeme, to whom
Nauigation? In con-
ur approued curteſie,
from one that defreyth
in your grace, I shall
wyllyngly offer it vnto

ays by good reaſon
r loued and honoured
dable Art or Science,
ge, as are Geometric,
s of Armes, inuentions
r age maye feeme not
any goodly inuentions
speake agaynt all the
to be compared to the
s, of fundry kyndes of
naytaynes of moſte harde
polies of infernal Pluto
the woorderfull inuen-
of many other, whereof
aled, *Pyrotechnia*. As
though ſome men be of
of the deuyll, for the
atter more indifferently
ſaying of many mens
woont fo long tyme to
ſees, but in fhort ſpace
o the great slaughter of
imies the Turkes, and

other Infidels, haue the vſe of theſe deuylythe inuentions (as they name them) it may be thought requisite for vs, agaynt ſuche deuyllies to vſe alſo the lyke deuylythe inuentions, leſt refuſyng the fame, and geuyng place to euyl, we ſhoulde wylyngly ſuffer the kyngdome of the deuyll to triumphe ouer vs, not otherwyſe able to refyl, and much leſſe to ouercome fo puissant and horriblie enimies (except befyde al hope) myght arye in our defence ſome newe Moyſes, or Elias, or the Prieſtes of Iericho, whiche onely with the noyfe and ſounde of Hornes or Trumppetes ouerthrew the walles of the towne. Neyther wyl the example of Dauid and Goliath, or of Samfon and the Philistines, ferue our turne at this tyme, although I beleue that the arme of the Lorde is not weakened, yf there lacked not a Moyſes with his rodde, and woorthie Aſiſtentes, which myght helpe to holde vp his weyre arme.

But to returne to ſpeakē of ingens, and ingenious inuentions, whiche inuented and vfed to the glorie of God, and defence of his people, againſt the furie and tyramie of Infidelles, they may as woorthy be called the gyftes of God, as were the inuentions and Art of them that buylde eyther the Temple of Hierusalem, or the Arke of God: And

Exod. xxxv. yet is it there wryten of thone Artificers, that God gaue Bezaleel and Ahaliyah them the ſpirite of knowledge and cunnynge in ſuche Artes.

And therefore I thynde it may alſo be fayne without offence, that the knowledge of *Archimedes*, and other men in ſuche commendable inuentions, are the gyftes of God, for as muche as the gyftes of God are free, and not bounde to any nation or peron.

And yf it may be graunted that the ſpirites of men, or the ſpirites of God in men, may be diuided (as was the ſpirite of Moyſes to twelue other) or otherwyſe that the ſpirites of dead men may reuiue in other (after the opinion and tranſimation of *Pythagoras*) we may thynde that the ſoule of *Archimedes* was reuiued in *Befon*, that excellent Geometer of our tyme, whom I knewe in Fraunce the Maister of the engins to the Freache kyng, Charles the ninth, vnder whom that lamentable slaughter at Paris was committed, in the whiche were ſlayne ſo many noble men. Whiche crueltie the fayne *Befon* abhorring, fled hyther into England, and here dyed, in the yere 1573. and left in witneſſe of his excellencie in that Art, a booke in pryt, conteynynge the fourmen or portraetcs of ſixtie engins of marueyous ſtrange and profitayle deuice, for diuers comodious and neceſſary vies. Of the whiche, for as muche as three of them, that is to meane, the 54. 57. and 60. be engines cheefely partyeyng vnto Shypes, it ſhall not be from my purpoſe here to make a briefe rehersal of them.

The 54. therefore (as he wryteth) is an engin not vnylike vnto that whiche in aſcient tyme *Archimedes* inuented for the *Syracusians*, wherewith a man with the ſtrength of onely one hande, by helpe of the instrument called *Trippafon* (which in our tonge ſome cal an endleſſe Serue), broght a Shyp of marueyous greatness from the lande into the ſea, in the fyght of kyng *Hieron*, and an infinite multitude, whiche with all their force coulde not doo the fame. &c. Of the whiche alſo, our countrey man, Roger Bacon, a great Philofopher (and no Nicromancer, as that ignorant age flaudered him) ſeemed to haue ſome knowledge: For in his booke of the marueyous power of Art and Nature, he maketh mention of an Instrument (as farre as I remember) no bigger then a mans hande, wherewith one man myght drawe to hym the ſtrength of three hundred men. And I well re-member, that at my beyng in Fraunce, I hearde credible

reporte, that the Earle of *Rocundolfe*, an Almaine, made an engin, wherewith the fayne kyng Charles when he was but. xvi. yeeres of age, lyfted from the grounde a weight, whiche the ſtrongeft man in the courte was not able to remoue. Almoſte the lyke deuice we vſe in the bendyng of a bowſebowe. Alſo at my being in Germanie in the citie of *Stroburg*, a worthy and learned Gentleman, *Monſieur de Salen*, told me that in that one had inuented an engin of iron, no bigger then a mans hande, berevn to fastenyng a rope, with a hooke of iron, and caſting the hooke on a wal, tree, or other place, where it myght take holde, he coulde with that engin lyft hys ſelue vp to the wal, or other place. But to retorne to the other two engines of *Befon*, partyeyng to our purpoſe. Therefore the 60. fygure (as he there wryteth) is the inuention of an engin, ſcarſidle, wherewith by ballance and eaſie motion, beyond the order of nature, a Shyp may be fo framed and governed, that in the calme ſea it will moue forewarde, and in litle wynde haſten the courſe, and in too much

wynde temper and moderate the fame: A thyngh woorth the knowledge to a kyng, as he ſayeth. Of the thyrd engin, which is the 57. fygure of his booke, he wryteth thus. An Artifice not yet diuulgate or fet forth, whiche placed in the pompe of a Shyp, whither the water hath recourse, and mooued by the motion of the Shyp, with wheeles and weyghtes, dooth exactly ſhewe what ſpace the Shyp hath gone. &c. By whiche deſcription, ſome doo vnderſtand that the knowledge of the longitude myght to be founde, a thyngh doubtleſſe greatly to be defreyed, and hytherto not certaynely knownen, although *Sebastien Cabot* on his death bed tolde me that he had the knowledge thereof by diuine revelation, yet ſo, that he myght not teache any man. But I think that the good olde man, in that extreme age, ſome-what doted, and had not yet euē in the article of death, vterly shaken of all worldlie wayne glorie.

As touching whiche knowledge of the longitude, to rehearſe the faying of that excellent learned man, *Johannes Ferndius*, in his incomparable booke *De abditis rerum caſis*, where in the Preface to King Henrie of Fraunce, he wryteth in thiſ maner. We haue put our helþyng hande to the Arte of Nauigation and Geographic: forby obſervation of the hours of the Equinoctialles, we haue inuented howe, in what ſo euer region or place of the worlde a man ſhalbe, he may knoƿe in what longitude it iſ: which certaynly we haue not taken of the fountaynes of the ancientes, but ſytle, of all other (as I thynde) haue drawnen it of our ryuers, as our owne inuention. &c. So that (ſathe he) whiche way fo euer you turne your eyes, you maſt fe that the poſterite hath not rytoſouly waſted the inheritance of Artes and ſciences, left them by their predeceſſors, but haue greatly encreaſed the ſame, and inuented other: For certaynly, the multitude of things incompreheſible, is infinite, and fo therfore inuentions muſt needs alſo be infinite, and without ende. And therefore, as touchyng this thing (ſayth he) to ſpeakē freely what I thynde, they ſeeme to me to offendre as muche, whiche contendes that the ancientes haue inuented and comprehended al thynghes, as doo they whiche attribute not vnto them the firſt inuentions, deſpoyleyng them of their right poſſeſſion. For whereas nowe by the benefite of almighty God (who hath geuen vs his Chrifte, and with hym all good thynges) the lyght of truthe flyneth in our vnderſtanding by godly inspiration, there is no iuft caufe why we ſhoulde in ſuche thynghes thinke vs inferior to the ancientes. Of which Argument, who lyfeth may reade more in the fynde Epifole of *Ferndius*.

And for as much as I haue made mention of ſuch inuentions, it ſhal not be from the purpoſe, to deſcribe the goodly instrument wherof *Angelus Policianus* in the fourth booke of Epiftles to *François Casſa*, wryteth in thiſ manner, I haue receyued your Epiftle, wherein thou ſignifeſt vnto me, that thou haue hearde of the ſtrange engine or instrument *Automaton* inuented, and made of late by one Laurence a Florentine: in the whiche is

expressed the course and motions of the Planettes, conformable and agreeing with the motions of heauen: And that (for as muche as the reporte thereof is hardly beleueed) you greatly defyre that I ſhould wryte vnto you, what certayne knowledge I haue of that thing, wherein I am redie to obey your request. And although nowe it be long ſince I ſawe it, yet as farre as I beare in memorie, I wyll brefely declare the fourme, reaſon, and vſe thereof. And of the deſcription of it ſhal ſeeme vnto you ſomewhat obſcure, you ſhall not acrife it oþer geather to my declaration, but partly to the ſubtiltie and nouilitie of the thyngh. It is in fourme of a ſquare pyller, ſharpe towarde the top, in maner of a *Pryamis*, of the height of almoſte three cubites: ouer and aboue it, in maner of a couer, is a flat or playne rounde plate of gylded copper, garniſhed with fundry colours, on whose other part is exprefſed the whole courſe of the Planettes, and whiche dimentation or meaſure is ſomewhaſt shorter then a cubite, and is within turned or mooued with certayne little denticle wheeles, an immouable circle comprehendynge the hyghett border or margent, and diuided with the ſpaces of xxiiii. hours within it, in the hyghett turninge rundle, the twelve figures are diſcerned by three degrees. Further, within are ſeenne eight rundelles, in maner all of one greatnessſe. Of theſe, two obteyne the mydlye poyn̄t, the one fastened in the other, ſo that the loweft beyng ſome-what bigger, repreſenteth the Sunne, and the hygher the Moone. From the Sunne a beame commynge to the circle, fleweth in it the hours: and in the Zodiacke, the monethes, dayes and number of degrees, and alſo the true and halfe motion of the Sunne. From the Moone alſo procedeth a pynne, or wyre, whiche bencathe or downwarde in the border or margent of the

greatest rundell, sheweth the hours : and passing by the center of the Epicycle of the Moone, and extending to the Zodilacke, sheweth the halfe motion of his Planet. Another also rysing from thence, and cutyng the border of the center of the Moone (that is of the Epicycle) sheweth her true place, whereby are feene the flownesse, swyttnesse, al motions and courses, coniunctions alfo, and ful Moones. About these are syxe other rundells : of the whiche, one, whom they calle the head and tayle of the Dragon, sheweth the Eclipses both of the Sunne and Moone. The other are attributed to the Planets : from every of which, procede two pointes, assyning the motions (as we haue syd) of the Moone : but they also goe backwarde, whiche chaunceth not in the Moone, whose Eclipticke is moued contrarywyse. And thus the reson of coniunctions, departringes, and latitudes, is manifest in all. There is also an other border lyke vnto a Zodilacke, cutting or diuidyng vpwarde or aboue, those syxe little rundells (whereof we haue spoken) being the rundells of the Planettes : whereby appeareth the degrees of the East signes, and the spaces of the dayes (that is to say) at what houre the Sunne risteth, by the whiche, every of the Planettes are carried in their rundells or circles by course, in the day tyme to the East, and in the nyght to the West. Agayne contrarywyse, the greatest rundell of al, draweth with it al the Planettes, in the nyght to the East, and in the day to the West, in the space of 24. hours. Az which, to agree with the motions of heauen, both reson and experiance doo confirme. And therfore ought ye not to marueyle, yf these thynges seeme incredible to many. For (as saith the wylde Frouerbe) saith is slowly geuen to great thynges, for even we scarfele beleue our owne eyes, when we see suche thynges. And therefore, whereas in tym past I read, that fuche a lyke instrument was made by *Archimedes*, my faith yet sayleth me to geue credite to so great an Aucthor, which thyng neuerthelesse this our Florentine hath perfformed. The worke doubtless being of such excellency, that all prisye is inferior to it, and can not therefore for the woorthyngesse thereof be otherwyse praised, then to say that it passeth all prayse. The Artificer him selfe also being a man of such integrity of maners, that the fonne is nothing inferior to the excellencye of his wyt: in so much that he may seeme a man sent from heauen, where he learned the makynge of this heauen, by the example of the other. Hythero *Policianus*. Of the lyke instrument, Roger Bacon alfo maketh mention in his syde booke, of the maruellous power of Art and Nature, affyrmynge the same to be woorthe a kyngdomme to a wylde man.

But for as muche as the subiect whiche I haue nowe in hande, is cheefely touching inuentions parteyning to Shypes, and the Art of Nauigation, I thykne good to speake somewhat of the inuention of a certayne Italian

wryter, named *Leonardo Fioravanti*, who in his booke, entituled Lib. 3. Ca. 18. *Specchio de scientia uniuersale*, doeth greatly glory in the inuention of Shypes, whiche can not peryfhe eyther on the sea, or the lande, affyrmynge that the lyke was never invented since the creation of the worlde. But I feare me, left wayns glorie of discouyring in the Italian tongue, hath caused him more then needes, to commende his owne inuention, as for the

mofte parte is the maner of the Italian writers. Therfore committing the judgement hereof to men of greater experiance and knowledge in these thynges, I wyl onely translatis his woordes, whereby in the booke before named, he describeth the syde Shyppe in this maner. Take beames of Fyre, or Pyne tree, which of their owne nature can never goe downe, or syncke, or abyde vnder the water, and with these beames forme an engine (*Machina*, yf I may so call it) of the length of three score foote, and of the breadth of twentie foote, and of the heught of syxe foote, laying the fyrtre ranke in length, and the other trauerse, or ouerthwart, and the thynde againe in length, fashyoning the fore parte lyke vnto other Shypes, and in lyke manner, bryngynge the poupe or hynder parte to good forme: then with such irons as appertayne, bynde it, and strengthen it in suche maner that it can not breake. And vpon this frame or fundation buylde your Shyppe, of suche fashyon as you thynde best, &c. It were here too long to reheare with what proude woordes and ostentation he magnificeth this inuention. But whether this frame or engine shoulde be bylden vpon the keele or bottome of the Shyp, or otherwyse, I commit it to them of better judge-
ment, as I haue sayde.

But wheras it may for this tym suffise to haue wrytten thus muche of these thynges, I wyl make an ende with onely a breefe rehearsal of the inuention and encreafe of the Art of Nauigation. After that the Art of Nauigation was founde, every man began to chalenge vnto hym the

dominion of the sea, and there to dwel and kepe warre euen as on the land. *Minos* (as wryteth Strabo) was the fyrt that ruled on the sea, whiche neuerthelesse, other ascribe to *Nepthys*, who fyrt founde the Art of Nauigation, and was therefore (as wryteth *Diodorus*) appoynted by *Saturnus* to be Admiral of the fyrt Naue: and thereby the potterie afterwardes ascribed to him the gouernance of the sea, and named him the God thereof. After whom the *Cretenes* ever were esteemed most expert in the Art of Nauigation. But (as wryteth *Plinie*) boates were fyrt invente, and with them was the fyrt faylyng in the Ilandes of the redde sea, vnder kyng *Erythra*, as also witnesseth *Quintilian*, saying, If none had proceeded further then the inuentions of our predecessors, we had had nothing in the Poete aboue *Andronicus*, and nothing in histories aboue the *Annales* or *Cronicles* of *Bithynnes*, and hel yet haue fayled in troughes or in boates. Other haue ascribed this inuention to diuers other nations and persones, as to the *Troians* and *Myfians* in *Hellepono*, and also that the ancient Britanes made boates of leather or hydes, and fayled with them in the Ocean sea. *Plinie* wryteth, that *Danans* was the fyrt that brought a Shyppe out of Grece into Egypt. Some also geue the fame to *Minerva*. But most ryghtfully, the inuention both of the Shyp, and Art of Nauigation, is ascribed to *Noe*, who (as wryteth *Eusebius*) was longe before *Neptune* or *Danans*. For doubtles (sayth he) the Arke of Noe was nome other then a Shyp, and the fyrt and onely exemplar of the buylding of all other Shypes or veselles of faylyng. Also the moft ancient wryter *Berothus* the Chaldean (as wryteth *Iosephus*) calleth the Arke of Noe, a Shyp. The same *Iosephus* also saith, that the Nephues of Noe, departing to inhabite diuers partes of the worlde, vfed many Shypes, &c. Long after Noe, the *Tyrians* were counted most expert in the Arte of Nauigation: and after them, diuers other nations. For whereas no Art is so perfect, but may receave encreafe, hereof doth it followe, that this Art alfo hath been greatly augmented, and brought to further perfection by wrytynges of the potterie, euen vnto our age: whereof, who to lyfeth to know further more particularly who inuented all other partes and instruments parteyning to al fortes of Shypes, and Art of Nauigation, may read ye thyrd booke of *Polidor Virgil*, Cap. xv. *De Inventoribus Rer. et Bayfius, de re nautali.*

Thyn gentle Maister Wynter, befeyching your woorshyp to take in good part this testimonie of my thankfull hart (suche as it is) I befeche the immortall God to prosper all your dooings to his honor, and the benefite of your Countrey,

1576. The last work which it was permitted to Eden to undertake, was an English translation from a Latin version of Ludovico Barthema's *Travels in the East* in 1503, which was posthumously printed by R. Willes, the next year. He was also endeavouring to collect the Reports of the Agents of the Moscow Company, which form so important a part of Hakluyt's Collection; when death exchanged his earthly life of troubles and labours, for, we can but think, the blessed peace of heavenly rest.

I am indebted to my friend the late Mr. C. Bridger, Hon. Mem. of the Soc. of Ant. of Newcastle, for the following note:

1576. July 20. Letters of Administration were granted, in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, to the estate of Richard Eden, of the parish of St Dunstan's in the East, (the same parish in which Sir John Hawkins lived), in favour of Albas Eden, his son.

1577. Summer. R. Willis published a second and altered edition of the Third Work here reprinted, under the title of *The History of Trauayle in the West and East Indies, &c.*

1586. April. It would appear from T. A. D'Aubigné's *Histoire Universelle*, iii. book i. c. 3, p. 15, Ed. 1620, that the Vidame, after many wanderings, was captured by one Captain Carles: who (not crediting that a member of so good a

family was unable to pay his ransom) suffered this distinguished Nobleman, whom the King of Navarre had called his Uncle, and who was now about sixty-six years; to die like a dog, while bound to the magazine at the bottom of the hold of his galley. A prisoner so placed would be situated immediately below the planking of the passage which extended between the two rows of galley slaves from the prow to the stern of the galley: and therefore, when the galley was in motion, would ceaselessly suffer from all the noise of the sixty or eighty rowers; from whom he would be separated, only by the thickness of the planking above his head.

euen as on the land.
on the sea, whiche
ande the Art of Nau-
syned by *Saturnus* to
posterie afterwande
named him the God
most expert in the
were fyrt invented,
f the redde sea, vnder
f none had proceeded
had nothyng in the
boue the *Aunales* or
troughes or in boates,
ations and perfons, as
at the ancient Britanes
em in the Ocean sea.
ught a Shyppe out of
Neptuna. But most ryght-
nigation, is ascribed to
Neptune or *Danous*,
other then a Shyp, and
all other Shyppes or
Berothus the Chaldean
. The fame *Iosephus*
habite diuers partes of
oe, the *Tyrians* were
and after them, diuers
may receave encrease,
relytly augmented, and
of the posterie, euen
ther more particularly
retyning to al fortis of
erde booke of Polidor
re nauali.
woorshyp to take
art (fuche as it
all your doo-
Country.

permitted to Eden to
nslation from a Latin
*Travels in the East in
Willes*, the next year.
of the Agents of the
of Hakluyt's Collection;
nd labours, for, we can

ger, Hon. Mem. of the

re granted, in the Pre-
o the estate of Richard
's in the East, (the same
of Alban Eden, his son.
l and altered edition of
under the title of *The
and East Indies, &c.*
Aubigne's *Histoire Uni-*
. 1620, that the Vidame,
ptured by one Captain
a member of so good a
distinguished Nobleman,
and who was now about
magazine at the bottom
ould be situated immedi-
tende l between the two
f the galley : and there-
essly suffer from all the
would be separated, only

Richard Eden's

Contributions to our Literature,

during the reigns of

Edward VI. and Mary.

1553-1555 A.D.



[The Second English book on America.]

A treatysse of the newe India,
with other new founde landes
and Ilandes, aswell eastwarde as
westwarde, as they are knowen
and found in these oure dayes,
after the descripcion of Sebastian
Munster in his boke of vni-
uersall Cosmographie: wherin the
diligent reader may see the good
successe and rewarde of noble
and honeste enterpryses,

by the which not only world-
ly ryches are obtained,
but also God is glor-
ified, and the Chri-
stian sayth en-
larged.

Translated out of Latin into Englishe. By
Rycharde Eden.

 *Praeter spem sub spe.*



To THE RIGHT HYGHE AND MIGHTY PRINCE,
 THE DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLANDE,
 HYS GRACE.



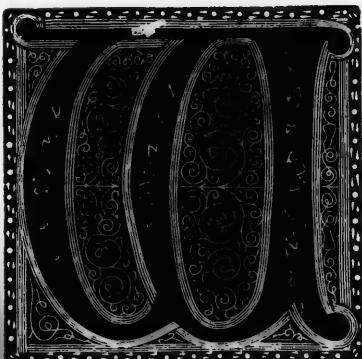
Reade in auncient writers (most noble prince) how that mightie kyng and conquerour of the world, Alexander the great, at such tyme as he beheld ye tombe of fearse Achilles, and therewith called to his remembraunce howe excellently the Poet Homere had set forth his heroical factes, which notwithstanding he thoughte to be muche inferiour vnto his, he sighed and sayde: Oh the most fortunate, which haste founde fuche a trompe to magnifi thi doinges, meaning hereby, that the fame of Achilles was no lesse notable to hys posteritie by homers writing, then it was in hys lyfe tyme by hys owne martial assayres. Wherby we maye perceue such magnanimite to haue ben in our predecessors, men of

noble and stout courage, yat they thought it not sufficiente in their life time to deserue prayse and honour, except the same might also redounde to theyr posteritie, yat they myghte therby bee encouraged to do the like. Whyche thing truely hath ben ye cause, yat in al ages noble enterpris haue ben commended, and such as haue attempted ye fame, haue bene honoured. Wherfore it honest commendacions be a iust reward dew to noble enterpris, so much do they robbe and spoyle from ye dignitie therof, which in any poynct diminishe the fame: no lesse confoundinge the order of thinges, than he whiche cloteth an ape in purple, and a king in sackecloth. This I speake ye rather, becausse there chaunsed of late to come to my handes, a shiete of printed paper, (more worthy so to bee called then a boke) entytuled of the newe founde landes. The whyche tylle when I readde, as one not vitterlye ignoraunt hereof, hauyng before in my tyme readde *Decades*, and also the nauigations *de nouo orbe*, there seemed too me no lesse inequalitye betwene the tylle and the booke, then if a man woulde professe to wryte of Englannde, and entreated onelye of Trumpington a vyllage wythin a myle of Cambrydge. Wherfore partelye moued [by] the good affeccion, whyche I haue euer borne to the science of Cosmographie, whyche entreatelye of the descripcion of the worlde, whereof the newe founde landes are no smal part, and much more by ye good wyll, whych of ductie I bear to my natyue countrey and countreymen, which haue of late to their great pracie whatsoeuer succede) attempted with new viages to ferche ye seas and newe found landes, I thought it worthy my trauayle, to their better comfort, (as one not otherwise able to further theyr enterprise) to translater this boke oute of latin into Englishe. The which, albeit it do not so largelye or particularlye entreate of every part, region or commoditie of ye sayd new found landes, as the worthines of the thing might requyre: yet sure I am that awel they which set forth or take vpon them this viage, as also they which shal hereafter attempt ye lyke, may in this smal boke as in a little glasse, see some cleare light, not only how to learne by the example, dammage, good successe,

and aduentures of other, how to behau them felues and direct theyr viage to their most commoditie, but also if dew succeſſe herein shoulde not chaunce according vnto theyr hope and expectation (as oftentimes chanceth in great affaires,) yet not for one foyle or fal, ſo to be diſmayd as with shame and diſhonor to leaue wyth loſſe, but rather to the death to perfift in a godly, honeſte, and lawfull purpose, knowing that whereas one death is dewe to nature, the fame is more honourably ſpent in ſuch attemptes as may be to the glorye of God and commoditie of our countrey, then in ſoft beddes at home, among the teares and weping of women. Which manlye courage (like vnto that which hath ben ſeen and proued in your grace, aſwell in forene realmes, as alſo in this oure countrey) yf it had not been wanting in other in theſe our dayes, at ſuche time as our ſouereigne Lord of noble memorie Kinge Henry the viij. about the ſame yere of his raygne, furnished and ſent forth certen ſhippes vnder the gouernaunce of Sebaſtian Cabot yet liuing, and one ſyr Thomas Perte, whosē faynt heart was the caufe that that viage toke none effect, yf (I ſay) ſuch manlye courage whereof we haue ſpoken, had not at that tyme bene wanting, it myghte haſſepelye haue comen to paſſe, that that riche treaſurye called *Perularia*, (which is now in Spayne in the citie of Ciuite, and ſo named, for that in it is kepte the infinite ryches brought thither from the newe found land of *Peru*,) myght longe ſince haue bene in the towre of London, to the kinges great honoure and welth of this his realme. What riches the Emperoure hath gotten oute of all the newe founde landes, it may wel appeare, wheras onylē in the Ilandes of *Hifpana* or *Hifpaniola* and *Cuba* and other Ilandes there aboue, were gathered in two monethes twelue thouſand poundes weyght of gold as youre grace maye reade in this boke, in the deſcription of the Ilandes. Yet ſpeake I here nothyng of perles, precious ſtones, and ſpices. Neyther yet of the greate aboundinge of golde, whiche is engendred almoft in al regions neare vnto the *Æquinoctial* line. And whereas I am aduertified yat youre grace haue bene a greate fortherer of thyſ viage, (as you haue bene euer ſtudious for the commoditie of your countrey,) I thought my trauayl herein coulde no wayes be more worthelye beſtowed, then to dedicaſe the fame vnto your grace: Moſt humblye deſiringe youre honoure ſo to accepte mine intente herein, as one whosē good will hath not wanted to gratifie your grace with a better thing if mine abilitie were greater. Thus Almighty God preferue your grace in health and honour long to continue.

¶ Your graces poore o-
ratour Rycharde Eden.

¶ RYCHARDE EDEN TO THE READER.



Hereas in this Booke (welbeloued Reader) thou mayest
reade many straunge things, and in maner incredible, except
the same were proued most certayn by dayly experience, and
approued auctoritie, (as shall hereafter appeare) I thought it
good for thy better instruction to make this Preface, wherby
thou mightest more playnly and sensibly comprehend the reasons
and causes, yf not of al, yet of some of the chiefeſt thinges,
which are conteyned in the fame. Therfore wheras thou ſhalt
reade of the great abundaunce of gold, precious ſtones and
ſpices, which the Spaniardes and Portugales haue brought from
the South partes of the worlde, as from the newe founde landes
and Ilandes, the fodeyn ſtraungenes or greatness of the thing
ſhal not ſo much amafe thy wittes, and gender in thee
incrudelitie, yf thou conſider the ſaying of wyfe Salomon, who
affyrmeth yat there is no new thing vnder the Sunne, and that
the thing that hath been, cometh to paſſe again: which ſaying
doeth greatly conſyrme the truthe, of ſuch thinges as are ſpoken

Nothing new
vnder the Sunne.

in this Boke, wheras the fame perhapses to ſome men might otherwyſe ſeme in maner incredible, yf the lyke had not been ſene in tyme past, and approued by auctoritie of moſte holy ſcripture, which declaring the great wyſdom, ryches, and noble viages of King Salomon, ſayth that God gaue him wiſdom and underſtanding exceeding muche, and a large heart, and that he prepared a nauie of ſhippes, in the porte of *Azion Gaber*, by the brinke of the redde ſea, which ſayled to *Ophir*, and brought from thence. xxi. ſcore hundredre (which is. xlvi.M. [forty-two thousand]) weyght of golde. Agayne, that the weyghte of golde which was broughte to Salomon in one yere, was. vi. hundredre, thre ſcore and vi. talentes of gold, wheras the Hebreuſtalente, called *Talente Hebraicum ſanctuarij*, was of our ſterling money 500. pounde, and *Talent Hebraicum vulgare*, was halfe ſo much. Lykewylle yat ſiluer was nothing worth in the dayes of Salomon, and yat he made ſiluer and gold in Hierufalem as plentious as ſtones Agayn, that he overlayd the houſe of the Lord with precious ſtones beautifullly, and the gold wherwith he couered it, was golde of *Paruaim*. Also that the kinges nauie of ſhippes went once in thre yere to *Tharſis*, and brought Gold, Siluer, Apes, Peacockes, and Elephanthes teeth. Which wordes surely ſeme ſo to conſirme ſuch thinges as are ſpoken of in the nauigacions wherof thiſ boke entreateth, that nothinge can make more for the truthe of the fame: and briefly to ſpeakē of the places whether Salomons ſhippes ſayled for Gold, as *Tharſis* and *Ophir*. Thiſ ought to be conſidered for a general rule, that neareſt vnto the ſouth partes of the world betwene the two Tropikes vnder ye *Equinoctial* or burning lyne, where the ſunne is of greateſt forſe, is the chiefeſt place where gold is engendred, although it be ſometymes founde in colde regions as in Scotland, in Crayford more, likewylle in Hungary, yet nether pure of it ſelf, nor in great quantitié: the reaſon wherof is largely declared in the Bookes of *George Agric*, and *Albertus Magnus*. And wheras it is written in ye Boke of Kinges in the Actes of Salomon that he prepared his ſhippes in *Azion Gaber*, beyng by the brinke of the readde ſea, and ſayled from thence to *Ophir* for Golde, it is apparaunt, that (howſoever the names of thinges haue altered and periſhed in tyme) he ſayled from thence ſouthwarde towarde the Equinoctial lyne, for almuſche as there is none other paſſage oute of the narownesse of the readde ſea, but onely into the mayne South ſea, by the which the Portugales euen at thiſ daye make theyr viage to *Calicut*, *Samotra*, *Madagascar*, and ſuch other Ilandes in the South east partes of the worlde, where Golde, Spycies, Apes, and Elephanthes are nowe founde in lyke manner. But as for *Tharſis* beyng a cytie of *Cilicia* in Asia the leſſe and the native countreye of S. Paule the Apostle, and ſituate muche more toward the North, then is Iudea, and in maner directlye ouer againſte Iudea on the otherſyde of the ſea called Mare Mediteraneum, and in the fame clime, in the which standeth the Ilande of Sicilia, and the cytie of Ciuite in Spayne, it hardelye agreeſt with the principles of Philofophie and common expeſience, that golde ſhould be there engendred in lyke abundaunce as in Regions more toward the ſouth, muſc leſſe Elephanthes and Apes, which are no where engendred farre from the *Equinoctial* lyne, or beyonde the two Tropikes, nor yet wil engendre yf they be

3. Reg. 4
3. Reg. 9
3. Re. 10

2. Par. 1
1 Par. 3.
Tharſis.
Golde. Apes
Elephanthes.
Salomons
ſhippes.
Ophir.

Where Gold is
engendred.
Scotland.
Hungary

3. Reg. 9
Azion Gaber.
The *Equinoctial*
line.

Calicut.

Tharſis in
Cilicia.

Sicilia.
Ciuite in *Spayne*.

Spyses.	broughte into those partes of the world. The lyke is to be vnderlande of Popingiayes and spycses, and dyuers other beastes, frutes, and trees, which are engendered in certayne climes of the worlde, and wyl not prospere in other places: the reasoun wherof were here to longe [to] declare. For lyke as pepper wyl not growe in Spayne, no more wyl the Orange tree bringe foorth fruite in Englannde. Wherefore, it may feme by good reasoun, that the Golde, Apes, and Elephantes teeth which were broughte from <i>Tharsis</i> (yf it were <i>Tharsis of Cilicia</i>) were not engendered there, but rather broughte therethen by marchautes from the south partes of the world, out of Mauritania, Marmarica, Ethiopia, Libia, and Arabia, or otherwise by lande, from the East India, lyke as at this daye, the greate multitude of Spyses, Golde, Precious stones, Sylke, and Iuerie, whyche is at Calicut and Cambaia, growe not al in the regions there about, but are broughte therethen by dyuers other countreyes, as doeth more largely appere in this Boke. And that Salomons factours for exchaunge of other marchaundysse, boughte the fame in <i>Tharsis</i> , beyng broughte therethen from other countreyes, as it is written in the thyrde Boke of the Kings, that Salomon had great plentie of Gold of Marchautes and Apothecaries. So that to conclude, I would rather thinke (fauing reformacion of other better learned) that this <i>Tharsis</i> (and not <i>Tharsis of Cilicia</i>) from whence Salomon had so great plentie of Gold and Iuerie, were rather some other countrey in the south partes of the world, then this <i>Tharsis of Cilicia</i> . For, not onely olde and newe Histories, dayly experiance, and the principles of natural Philosophie doe agree, yat the places most apte to bring forth gold, spices, and precious stones, are the South and Southeast partes of the world, but also our Sauiour Christ approueth the same, declaring that the Quene of the South (meaning the Quene of Saba) came from the vtmoste partes of the worlde to heare the wyldom of Salomon. And lyke as by the auctorite of these woordes it is playne from what partes of the world she came, the fame to a philosopical head is apparent by suche ryches and presentes as she broughte with her. For albeit that in the Chronacles of Salomon it is not written by exprested wordes that she came from the Southe, yet is it wryten that she came to Hierusalem with a very great trayne, with camels laden with spyses, swete odours, and exceeding much gold and precious stones, which descripcion doeth well agree, both with the situation of the cytie of Saba in <i>Ethiopia</i> vnder Egipt: and also with the countrey of Saba, being in the middel of Arabia, inuironned about with great rockes wherein is a great wood of Precious trees, some of Cinomone and Cassia, and some bringing forth frankencense and myrr, as writheth <i>Plinius lib. 12.</i> and <i>Theophrastus lib. 9. de Hist. Plant.</i> Wherefore the Quene of Saba myghte worthely be called the quene of the South, forasmuch as bothe Saba (or rather Sabat) in <i>Ethiopia</i> , whiche Iosephus thinketh to be the Iland of <i>Meroe</i> , now called <i>Eisaba</i> , beinge in the ryuer of <i>Nilus</i> , and that the quene came from thence, and also Saba in Arabia, are situate farre Southwarde from Hierusalem, even in maner in the middest of the lyne, called <i>Tropicus Canceris</i> , and the <i>Equinoctial</i> lyne, where the Pole Artike is eleuate not passing. 13. degrees or thereabout (as in <i>Meroe</i>) where as the same pole is eleuate at Hierusalem. 32. degrees: whereby it may appearate yat the quene of Saba (whom Christe calleth the quene of ye south,) came from the south partes about xi. hundredth and xl. miles from Hierusalem for the same distaunce is from Saba in <i>Meroe</i> to Hierusalem, as betwene Rome and England. But as touching this matter, it shall suffyse to haue sayde thus muche. Nowe therefore to returne home from these farre countreyes, and to speake somewhat of this viage which oure countreymenne haue attempted to fayle into the Easte partes, by the coastes of Norway, Lappia, and Finmarchia, and so by the narrowe tracte of the Sea by the coastes of Grouelande, into the froten sea, called <i>Mare Congelatum</i> , and so forth to Cathay (yf any suche passaige may be found) whiche onely double doeth at this daye discourage many faynte hearted men, speciallye because in the mooste parte of Globes and Mappes they fee the continent or fyrm land, extended even to the North Pole without any such passaige. Which thing ought to moue no man greatly, forasmuch as the most parte of Globes and mappes are made after Ptolomeus Tables: Who, albeit he was an excellent man, yet were there many thinges hyd from his knowledge, as not sufficiencely tryed or searched at those daies, as manifistly appeareth in that he knew nothing of <i>America</i> with the hole fyrm lande adherent thereunto, which is nowe found to be the fourth parte of the earth. Neyther yet knew he any thinge of the passaige by the Weste into the Easte, by the strayghtes of <i>Magellanias</i> as you shal reade in this Boke. Neyther of the Ilandes in the Weste Ocean Sea, nor of the Ilandes of <i>Moluca</i> situate in the mayne Easte Indian Sea. And as touchinge this passaige, albeit, it were not knownen in Ptolomeus dayes yet other auctors of later time, who perhaps haue hadde further experiance of the thing (as good reasoun is) doe wryte not onely that there is a passaige by the Northe Sea into the mayne Easte Sea, but doe also further declare, howe certayne shippes haue fayled through the same, as <i>Pius secundus</i> (otherwyfe called <i>Aeneas Silvius</i>) an excellente auctour descrybeth in his Boke of Cosmographiche, where he hath these wordes folowing. Of the North Ocean Sea, whether it may be fayled aboue or not, the contencion is greater, yet is it apparaunte that the greatest parte thereof aboue Germanie, hath been searched by the comandementes of Augustus th[e]emperour, even vnto the promontorie or landes ende of the people, called <i>Cimbri</i> . The feas also and coastes of <i>Caspia</i> were so searched during the warres of the <i>Macedonians</i> vnder the dominion of <i>Selucus</i> and <i>Antiochus</i> , that al
Pepper.	
Orange tree.	
East India.	
Solomon boughte gold of marchautes.	
The south and southeast.	
Mat. 12. 3 Reg. x 1. Par. 9 The quene of Saba, the quene of the south. 2 par. 9 3 Reg. x	
Saba in <i>Ethiopia</i> vnder Egipt.	
Saba in Arabia.	
The quene of Saba came from the Iland of <i>Meroe</i> .	
From Rome to England.	
The viage of our men to <i>cathay</i> Norway, Lappia, Finnmarchia.	
Globes and mappes.	
Ptolomeus. <i>America</i> .	
The strayghtes of <i>Magellanias</i> . The Ilandes of <i>Moluca</i> . Passage by the north sea into the East.	
<i>Pius secundus</i> , lib. i. Capit. ii. Note wel the passage by ye North sea.	
Augustus th[e]emperour <i>Cimbria</i> . <i>Caspia</i> . The warres of ye Macedonians	

d spycies, and
worlde, and
yke as pepper
Wherfore, it
Tharsis (yt it
the south partes
from the East
e, whyche is at
ther countreys,
marchaudysc,
the thyrde Boke
So that to
harfis (and not
her some other
oldre and newe
es most apte to
1, but also our
(queene of Saba)
y the auctoritie
topical head is
Chronacles of
n that she came
exceeding much
cytie of Saba in
uironnond about
and some bring-
nt. Wherfore
Saba (or rather
nge in the ryuer
outhwarde from
Eial lyne, where
the pole is eleuate
alleth the queene
m for the fame
as touching this
farre countreys,
into the Eafe
the Sea by the
(yf any fuche
men, speciallye
extended euen to
orasmuch as the
an excellent man,
at those daies, as
herent therunto,
of the passage by

Neyther of the
ndian Sea. And
f later time, who
nely that there is
certayne shippes
s) an excellente
the North Ocean
hat the greateste
e]emperour, euen
es of *Caspia* were
nithios, that al

mo't all the North on eury syde was sayled about. Plinie rehearseth the testimonie of Cornelius Nepos, who wryteth that the King of Suevia (or Swethelande) gaue to *Metellus celo*, proconsull or leauetenaunte of Fraunce, certayne Indians or menne of Inde, whiche saylinge out of India for marchaudysc, were by tempeit drieuen into Germanie. We also reade in Otho, that vnder th[e]empyre of the Gemaynes, there was a shippes of Indians taken in the North sea of Germanie, and drieuen thereth by contrary wynd from the East partes: which thing coulde by no meanes haue comen to passe, yf (as many menne thinke) the North sea were not nauigable by reasoun of extreme cold and Ise. And these be the very wordes of *Pius Secundus*, whereunto I adde, that thys, notwithstandinge, yf it shoulde so chaunce, that ether there can no such pafage be found, or the fame fo daungerous, or otherwyse that the very cutte thereof by which onely perhaپes any shippes might passe, could not be founde, yea, or to caste the worle, yf they shoulde perishe in this viage, yet I woulde wishe all men to be of such corage and constancie in these affayres, as are valiaunt capitaynes in the warres: who, yf by misfortune they take a foyle, doe rather studie how by some other wayes to recouer their honour and reputacion diminished by the same, then with shame, losse, and dishonour, euer afterwarde to geue place to theyr enemies, or forswearre the warres. Wherefore, to conclude, yf no good can be done this way, it were worthy the aduenture to attempt, yf the same viage may bee broughte to passe, another waye, as by the straught called *Fretum trium fratrum*, westward and by North from England, whiche viage is sufficiently knownen to suche as haue any skyll in Geographie. As for other landes and Ilandes in the west sea, where the Eagle (yet not in every place) hath fo spiled his wings, that other poore byrdes may not without offence feke theyr praye within the compasse of the same, I wyll speake nothing hereof, bycause I wold be loth to lay an egge, wherof other men might hatche a serpent. Wherfore to let this passe, and to entre into another matter. Forasmuch as in these our daies hath chaunced so great a secret to be found, as the like hath never been knownen or heard before, (what souuer God meant to kepe this mistery hyd so long) I thoughte it good to speake somwhat hereof: trusting yat the pleasaunt contemplacion of the thing it selfe, shal make the length of this preface lesse tedious, especially yf it find a reader whose soule delyteth to prayse God in his workes. The thing therfore is this, how the hole globe of the world (of the earth and water I meane) hath been sayled aboute, by the West into the East, as doth more largely appere in this boke in the nauigacions of *Magellanuſ*, who from Spayne sayled Westward to the Ilandes of *Moluca* being in the East sea, farre beyond ye furthest partes of East India: and the portugales came to the fame Ilandes from Spayne sayling Eastward by the coastes of Aphrica, Arabia, and the vittermost India beyond the ryuer of *Ganges* where, in yat Indian sea the fayd Ilandes of *Moluca* are situate. A thing surely most wonderful, and in maner incredible, but that the fame is proued most certayne by experiance, the teacher and mestres of all sciences, for lacke of whose ayde (experience I meane) lyke as many greate wittes haue fallen into great errorrs, so by her ayde, many base and common wittes haue attayned to the knowledge and practise of such wonderfull effectes, as could hardly be comprehended by the discourse of reasoun. Which thing or other lyke, I suppose was the caufe why the noble Philosopher Aristoteles sayde: *Quod nihil est in intellectu quod non fuit prius in sensu*, that is, that nothinge is in vnderstandinge, but the fame was fyrt in sensu, that is to saye subiect to ye sens. Yet would I not that any rashe witte shoulde hereby take holde, as thoughe eyther Aristotle or I, meant that fence were more excellent then reasoun, but rather that reasoun vsing sensu, taketh his principles and syrf st fedes of things sensyble, and afterward by his owne discourse and searching of causes, encreaſeth the fame from a feede to a tree, as from an acorne to an oke. Nought els to say, but that experiance to be most certayn which is ioyned with reasoun or speculacion, and that reasoun to be most sure which is confirmed with experiance, accordyng to the Physicians determen in theyr science, that neyther practyse is safe without speculacion, nor speculacion without practyse. Wherfore, whereas men of great knowledge and experiance, are to great affaires, theyr attemptes haue for the moſte part good successe, as doth moſte playnly appere in all histories: notwithstanding that some ignorauant men wyl alledge that certayn rashe aduentures haue prospered well: which sayinge pouerth no more then of a man shoulde say, that twise or thrise a man vnarmed flew a man armed (as dyd sometyme the wyld Irishmen at bullen) Ergo, it were better to fight vnarmed then armed. And wheras I haue here spoken of knowledge ioyned with experiance, I meane by knowledge yat which we commonly call learning, whether it be gotten out of bokes (which are the wrtinges of wyſe and expert men) or otherwyse by conference and educacion with such as are lerned: meaning nought els by learning, but ye gathering of many mens wittes into one mans head, and the experiance of many yeres, and many mens lyues, to the lyfe of one, whom we call a learned, wye, and expert man. The which defynicion and effect of learning, the noble and learned cortier Baltazar Castaglione (the auctour of the boke called in the Italian tongue *il cortegiano*), diligently confideringe, doeth greatlye blame and reprove the frenshmen in that they thinke yat the knowledge of letters doeth hinder the affayres of warre, ye which perwafon he proueth by many reasons and examples to be most falſe. But as concerninge the matter whereof this boke entreateth the greate Philosopher Albertus Magnus, onelye by learninge, wythout

Plinius.
Cornelius Nepos.
Suevia, called also
Suecia here vito
gotland and
norway.

A ship of Indians
driven from the
East into the North
seas.

The viage to
Cathay
Westward and
by north.

The earth
compassed about

The viage of
Magellanuſ.
The Ilandes of
Moluca.

Experience, ye
teacher of al
sciences.

Sense and
understandinge.

A sentence of
Aristoteleſ.

Experience joined
with speculacion

A particuler
propositio
vniuersali.
What is
knowledge and
learning

Baltazar
Castaglione.
A false
perswasion of ye
Frenshmen.

Albertus Magnus

Temperat regions
vnder ye
Equinoctial line.

An error of S.
Augustine and
Lactantius.
Antipodes.
Apianus.

Lactantius.

The roundnes of
ye earth.
S. augustyne.

Apianus.
The apostles,
Antipodes the
one against
the other.

The spanyardes
and the Indians
are Antipodes.

S. augustyne of
the heresie of
Manicheus.
S. augustines
booke of retractes.

Mountaynes, let
not ye roundnes
of the earth.
A galle.

A Sentence of S.
augustines.

Commendacion
of s. augustin

Lactantius.

experyence, affyrméd that habitable or temperate Regions myghte be vnder the Equinoctial or burninge lyne, as appeareth in hys Boke *de Natura locorum*, contrarye to the opinion of other wryters whyche were before hys tyme, and yet is nowe proued by experyence to bee moſte true, albeit not in all places vnder the sayde lyne, the caufe whereof were here to longe to declare. And lyke as Albertus Magnus by knowledge of Astronomye (wherein he excelled) came to the vnderstandinge hereof, euen so that greate Clerke (but better dyuine then Phylosopher) Sayncte Auguftyne and alſo Lactantius, for lacke of lyke knowledge in that science, fell into a chyldishe errore, denyinge that there is anye people, called Antipodes, of whom the greate Astronomer of our tyme, Apianus wryteth in thyſ maner. Antipodes are they, whyche walke wyth their fete dyrectelye contrarye agaynst oures, and haue the heauen dyrectelye ouer their headeſ as we haue. Yet haue we nothinge common wyth them, but all thinges contrarie: for when the Sunne caufeth Sommer wyth vs, then is it Myddewynter wyth them: and when it is day wyth vs, it is nyghte wyth them: And when the daye is longefte wyth vs, then is the longefte nyghte wyth them, and the ſhortefte daye. Whiche, Lactantius, a manne otherwyſe well learned, in his thyrde Booke, Capitulu fourē and twentye, chyldifhelye eringe, wyth hys lyghte and opinonate argumentes, denyeth that there is anye ſuche, and mocketh the Astronomers, becauſe they affyrm the earth to bee rounde, whiche neuertheleſſe they proue wyth moſte certayne and apparente demonſtracions of Geometrie, and vnfayleable experymentes. Whome, Sayncte Auguftyne folowing, in his ſixteenth Booke. *de Ciuitat. Dei. Capitu. ix.* wryteth after thyſ forte. Suche as fable that there is Antipodes, that is to faye, menne of the contrarie parte, where the funne ryfeth when it falleth to vs, and to haue their feete agaynst oures, we oughte by no reaſon to beeleeue. Thoſe bee the woordes of Sayncte Auguftyne. Nothwithstandinge (fayet Apianus) putte thou no doute Gentle Reader, that the Aſtoſles of Chrifte were Antipodes the one to the other, and ſtoode feete to feete the one agaynst the other, when Iames th[e]elder and brother to Iohn the Euangeliste, the ſonne of Zebedeus, was in Spayne in Galitia, and Thomas the Aſtoſle in the hygher India, they were moſte certaynelye Antipodes, walkinge feete to feete one agaynst the other, almoſt as directly as a diametrical lyne. For the Spanyardes are Antipodes to the Indians, and the Indians in lyke maner to the Spanyardes. Which thinge alſo the excellente and aunciente Auctour Strabo confymeth to bee true, and likewife Plinius *Nat. Hift. lib. 2. Cap. 67.* Dolateranus alſo, and all other Coſmographers and Astronomers. Hethereto Apianus: and to declare my opinion in fewe woordes, I thiſke it no greate maruyle that Saincte Auguftyne ſhoule fall into an errore in the ſcience of Astronomie in whiche he trauayled but as a ſtranger, forasmuche as he erred in many things in diuinite which was his chief profesſion: and was longe of the heresy of *Manicheus* beforē he was conuerted by Saincte Ambroſe: and wrytte alſo at the lengthe a Booke of retractes, in whiche he correcteth hys owne errores. And I beleue playnely that, that excellent witte of hys, could not haue remayned in yat errore yf he had been wel exercyſed in Astronomie, or had knownen any ſuche experyence as is ſpoken of here beforē, howe the Spanyardes by the Weſte and the Portugales by the Eaſte compaffed aboue the earth, whiche coulde neuer haue come to paſſe yf the earthe were not rounde (*Quantum ad maximas ſui partes*) as they call it. For, as for hylles and Mountaynes, though they be neuer ſo greate, yet in reſpecte to the byggeneſe of the earth, they doe no more lette the roundneſſe hereof, then doe the lytle knobbes of the berrye, which we call a galle, lette the roundneſſe of the fame. Wherefore I am certaynely perwaded, that yf Sayncte Auguftyne had continued hys ſtudye in Astronomie (as it hadde been ptye he ſhoulde) or were alyue at thyſ daye, he woulde alſo haue retracted this errore. But yf here anye ſuperſticious heade ſhall thiſke it a heynous matter in any poyn্তe to contrary Sainct Auguftyne, lette hym hearken howe Auguftine hym ſelue ſayeth: that he wyll neyther hys wrytinges or other mennes, of howe greate name or fame ſoeuer they be, otherwyſe to be beleued then the fame ſhall, by reaſon bee approued to be true: *Neque quorūlibet diſputaciones, &c.* And lyke as the greate Philosopher Aristotel, when he wryte agaynst hys mayſter Plato of the queſtion *de Idaiſ*, and agaynst Socrates who by the oracle of Apollo was proued to be moſte wyfe, and certayne of hys frendes asked hym why he durſte be ſo bould, he auſswered that Plato was hys frende, and ſo was Socrates: but truthe hys frende more then they bothe, euen ſo I thiſke it no iniurye nor contumelye to Saynct Auguftyne, yf the fame were ſayde of hym alſo geuyng hym otherwyſe hys dewe commendaciones, as he was ſurelye an excellente man, of dyuine witte, and knowledge, and ſo trauayled in ſettyng forth Chrifteſ true Religione in thoſe turmoſous dayes, in perpetual combatte, agaynst learned heretykes and Prynces of the worlde, that he is worthelye caſtled Doctour and Pyller of Chrifteſ Churche. And as for Lactantius, the intente of whose wrytinges was chieſelye to thyſ ende, to dyminih theſeſtimacion of Philoſophye, (as at thoſe dayes it was neceſſarie to doe amouge the Gentyles) and to aduaunce Goddes woerde, (whyche they contemned for the ſimplicite of the fame,) albeit, he attempted as farre as hys learninge woulde ferue hym, to make all thyngeſ in Philoſophie vncertayne, yet are hys argumentes ſo ſlender, that vnlereſ G O D by the frecrete workinge of hys ſpyperte, hadde caſtled the Gentyles to the true Faythe, I feare me leaſte fewe or none of them, (ſpecyalleye of the greate wyttes) woulde haue been conuerted by Lactantius

arguments. Howe he dalyeth in denyng the earth to bee rounde, and that it is possyble that it myghte bee longe and rounde, (lyke an Egge,) or otherwyse longe and holowe lyke a bote, (meanyng I suppose that the Sea myghte bee conteyned in the holownesse of the same, wthy suche other opiniyons grounded of no reaon, it were to longe to reheare.) Yet, forasmuche as he was a learned manne, and for the better satisfiyinge of suche wyttes as are desyreous to know some apperaunce of truth by naturall reason and demonstracions, lette vs admyte that the earth were rounde after anye of those fasshions whiche he describeth: yet can it not bee denied, but that it is conteyned wythin the holownesse (yf I maye so call it) of the ayre, hauyng the heauen in eurye place dyrectelye ouer eurye parte of the same, as sayeth the Poete and Philosopher Virgill, *Caelum undique sursum*: Excepte perhaps Lactantius shoule thinke that it honge by some thynge, or were otherwyse borne vppe wyth pylers as the Poetes Fable, that the Gyaunte *Atlas* beareth the worlde on hys shoulders, whereby they meane that a manne of valiente mynde must stoutelye beare the chaunces of the worlde. Of whyche hangeinge or bearynge of the earth, I reade a better and more true sayinge in the holye Scripture, where it is written, *Fert omnia uerbo oris sui*, that is, that God fuslayneth and beareth all things with the woorde of hys mouth.

Holye Iob also sayeth, that the L O R D stretcheth oute the Northe ouer the emptye, and hangeth the earth vpon nothyng: Meaninge by nothinge, the ayre, because to oure fenses it appeareth in maner as nothyng: Or otherwyse that it is not dependyng of anye other substancialle, but to bee sustayned onely by the power of G O D who hath appoynted the Elementes their places and lymites, and caufeth the heuye to stande faste: as wytnesseth Moyfes in hys songe, sayinge: By the wynde of thy nostrels the waters gathered together, the floudles floode stylly as an heape, and the deepe water congeled togerther in the heart of the Sea. Wherefore yf the heauen be rounde (whiche no manne can reaonably denye that euer sawe the Sunne and sterres moue.) And yf the earth bee the center of the worlde dependinge as we haue sayde beefore, then muffle it needes folowe, that they whiche inhabitinge the Northwesterne partes of the earth, haue the Pole Artike elevate thrytē degrees, must needes bee Antipodes to them whiche inhabitinge the Southeaste partes of the earth, haue the Pole Antartike elevate in the same degree, and so the lyke to bee vnderland of all other elevaciones and degrees. And yf here anye wyll object, that ethere the earth or firme land is not so large, or so farre extended, or other wyse not inhabited althoughe it were so large, or that the sea is greater then the lande, to thys I aunswere, that no man knoweth further hereof then is tryed and founde by experiance, as we haue sayde beefore. And albeit that the sea were larger then the firme lande, yet forasmuche as there are Ilandes founde in all places of the mayne Sea, and in maner all inhabited, there is no reaon to the contrarye, but that the people of thosse Ilandes maye be Antipodes to such as dwel on the firme lande, on the contrary parte, whether the earth bee round and longe, yea or square, (yf you wyll) notwithstandinge. But wyth what certayne demonstracions the Astronomers and Geometricalians, proue the earth to bee rounde, and the Sphericall or rounde forme to bee mooste perfecte, it were to longe to declare. I wyll therefore make an ende of thys matter wyth the sayinge of Sayncte Paule in hys Oracion, to the menne of Athens. That G O D made of one bloudalle, all nacionis of menne, to dwell vpon the hole face of the earth.

¶ I hadde entended here (well beeloved Reader) to haue spoken somewhat of suche straunge thynge and Monsters, whereof mencion is made in thys Booke, to th[e]jende that suche as by the narownes of theyr vnderstandinge are not of capacite to conceaue the causes and natures of thynge, myghte partly haue been satisfiyyed wyth some sensyble reas ons. But beyng at thys tyme otherwyse hindered, it shall suffise al good and honest wittes, that whatsoeuer the Lorde hath pleased, that hath he done in heauen and in earth, and in the Sea, and in all depe places.

¶ Ecclesiasticus. Capit. i.

¶ The eye is not satisfied with syght, and the eare is not fylled with hearinge.

Of the roundenes
of ye earth.

The earth hangeth
in ye ayre

The fable of
Atlas.

The word of God
beareth vppe the
world.

Iob. xvi.

The elementes.

Exo. xv.

The elevation of
the pole.

The largenes of
the earth.

Ilandes

Astronomers and
Geometricians.

Act. xvij

Psa. 133

¶ The Table.

¶ Of the Ilande of Iaua.	[p. 23.]
Of the Ilande of Madagascar.	[p. 23.]
Of the Ilande of zanzibar.	[p. 23.]
Of the two Ilandes in the which men and women dwell a funder.	[p. 24.]
Of the mightie Empyre of Cathay, subiect vnder the dominion of the great Cham or Cane, Emperour of Tartaria.	[p. 24.]
Of certayn Prouinces subiect vnder the dominion of the great Cham.	[p. 25.]
Of the Prouince of Mangi.	[p. 26.]
Of the Region of Tantut.	[p. 26.]
Of the newe Ilandes, howe, when, and by whom they were founde.	[p. 28.]
Of the two Ilandes Iohanna and Hispana.	[p. 28.]
Of the Canibales, which eate mens fleshe.	[p. 29.]
Of the maners of the inhabitanthes of Hispana.	[p. 29.]
How Christophorus Columbus, after that he had founde the newe Ilandes, returned to Spayne : and preparing a new nauie, failed agayn to ye Canibales.	[p. 29.]
How Columbus the Admiral, passed many Ilandes and what chaunced to hym and his in that viage.	[p. 30.]
Of the newe India, as it is founde and knownen in these oure dayes.	[p. 13.]
Of the Adamant stome, otherwife called the Diamant.	[p. 14.]
Of the Kingdoms and cities of Narfinga and Canonor	[p. 14.]
Howe the Elephantes in India are prepared to the warres.	[p. 15.]
Of the beaste called Rhinoceros.	[p. 16.]
Of Calicut, the mooste famous markette towne of India.	[p. 16.]
Of the maners of the Indians in Calicut.	[p. 17.]
Of Pepper and other spycies which growe in the Region of Calicut.	[p. 18.]
Of the byrdes and beastes which are found in the Region of Calicut : and of the wyne of the tree.	[p. 19.]
From whence all kyndes of spycies are brought to the cytie of Calicut.	[p. 20.]
Of the Illand of zaylon, and of the cinomome tree.	[p. 20.]
Of the cytie of Tarnaffer, and of the maners of the cytezyns.	[p. 20.]
Of the excellent cytie and Kingdom of Pego.	[p. 21.]
Of the Ilande of Sumatra, or Taprobana.	[p. 22.]
Of the Ilande of Bornei.	[p. 22.]
Of the Ilande of Giaua.	[p. 23.]
Howe the Spaniardes abused the submiffion and frendship of the inhabitauntes of the Ilandes.	[p. 31.]
Howe the Portugales foughte newe Ilandes in the East partes, and howe they came to Calicut.	[p. 32.]
Howe Magellanus by a straignt or narow arme of the Sea, sayled by the Weste into the Easte to dyuers Ilandes, where also he was slayne.	[p. 33.]
Howe the Spaniardes came to the Ilandes of Molucca, and of the people with great hanging eares.	[p. 34.]
The third nauigacion of Christophorus Columbus.	[p. 35.]
[How Petrus Alonius foughte newe Ilandes.	[p. 36.]
How Pinzonius companion to the Admiral, fought newe Ilandes.	[p. 36.]
The foure nauigacions of Americus Vesputius to the newe Ilandes.	[p. 37.]
The fyfthe viage of Vesputius.	[p. 37.]
The secound viage of Vesputius.	[p. 38.]
The thyrde viage of Vesputius.	[p. 39.]
The fourth viage of Vesputius.	[p. 39.]
Howe the Kyng of Portugale subdued certayne places in India, and of the ryche cytie of Malacha.	[p. 40.]
Of the Ilande of Medera, and the fortunate Ilandes, otherwyfe called the Ilandes of Canaria.	[p. 40.]
[Whether vnder the Aequinoctial circle or burninge lyne (called Torrida Zona) be habitable Regions.	[p. 41.]

¶ Finis.

I Of the newe India,
as it is knownen and found in these our dayes.

In the yeare of oure Lorde. M.D.LIII.

After the descripcion of Sebastian Munster in
his Booke of the vniuersall Cosmographie.

Libr. v. De terris Asiae Maioris.

And translated into Englishe
by Richard Eden.



Here are two viages or nauigacions made oute of Europa into India. The one southeast from spayne, by the coastes of Aphrica and Ethiopia, euen vnto Arabia to the citie called Aden. And from thence to the Ilande of Ormus, and from Ormus to the citie of Cambaia, and from thence euen vnto the citie of Calicut. Cambaia is situate nere vnto the floudde *Indus*. This citie is of great powre, riche, and abundaunt in al kyndes of grayne and corne. The foyle hereof bringeth forth sondry kyndes of swete oyntmentes, and cotten which groweth on certain trees called *Gossampini*, this cotton, is otherwyse called *Bombage* or sylke of the trees. The Kynge of Portugal subdued this citie, and bylded hard by the fame a strong fortresse: with which thing the Turke beeing for greued, commaunded greate nauie of shippes with greate sumptuousnes to bee furnished in the goulefe called *Sinus Arabicus*: to the ende that he might dryue the Portugales out of India, and the better to accomplithe this his purpos, he appoynted one Soliman a noble man of warre (beyng also the Captayne of Alcayre,) to be the admiral general, or gouernour of his nauie, hauing in his reteneue. xx. thoufand soulidiers beefyde marinres and gonnres, whiche were in numbre foure thousand. This nauie was appoynted in the haun Suezio, beinge a port of the redde sea, in the yeare of Christ. 1538. And arryued syrly at the citie Aden: where laying anker, the gouernour of the nauie sent letters to the king of Aden, certifying him that he woulde take his viage into India, from thence to expell the King of Portugall. The Kinge of Aden whiche was then tributarye to the King of Portugall, receyued the Turkes letters thankefullly, offering him selfe and all that he might make, to so mightie an Emperoure, desyryng the gouernoure to come forth of the shyp, and to beholde the citie obedient and readye at his commaundemente, in the which also accordyng vnto his dignitie and office, he shoulde be worthely interteyned: but the gouernour agayne allured and entyed hym to come out of his citie, and so by crachte circumuented him, that he toke him priesoner, and commaunded him to be hanged on the fayle yarde of the shyp, and with hym foure other of the rulers of the citie of Aden, affyrming that he was commaunded of the Turke so to handel them, because the cytiezins of Aden had not only made a leage with the Portugales, but had also payde them tribute: whiche nacion the Turke playnely intended to drieue out of India. And thus after the Kynges death, that most riche and beautiful citie, was euer a praye to theues, spoylers, and murtherers without resytaunce. Then the gouernoure departing from thence, lefte there behynde him a garrison of two thoufand men of warre, and faylyng forwarde on hys viage, he came to the citie called *Dium*, whiche the Portugales held: and his armie was greatly encreased by the waye, as wel by land as by sea, by reaon of the great confluence of the Turkes which on every side reforted to him, so that in a shourt space they rowled before them a bulwarke or countrenaire of earth, in maner as bigge as a mountayne, which by little and litle they moued neare vnto the trenche or ditche of the castell, so that they might safely stand behynde the bulwarke, (thus rayfing a mount,) they besieged the castell on every fyde, and battered the walles and towres thereof very fore: yet that notwithstanding, were at the length, enforced to departe, not withoute greate losse and slaughter of thei爾 soulidiers: for this *Dium*, is the strongest citie that is vnder the dominion of

The —
ther is
Southweste.
The citie of
Cambaia.

Calicut.

Gossampini,
Bombage or
cotton of the trees.

The turkes nauie
agaynste the
king of Portugale.

The citie of Aden.

The kinge of
Aden is hanged.

The destruction
of the citie of
Aden.

The turke
besiegeth the
citye of Dium.

The turke is
repulsed.

[P. 23.]
[P. 23.]
[P. 23.]
[P. 24.]

[P. 24.]
[P. 25.]
[P. 26.]
[P. 26.]
[P. 28.]
[P. 28.]
[P. 29.]
[P. 29.]

[P. 29.]
[P. 30.]
[P. 13.]
[P. 14.]
[P. 14.]
[P. 15.]
[P. 16.]
[P. 16.]
[P. 17.]
[P. 18.]
[P. 19.]
[P. 20.]
[P. 20.]
[P. 20.]

[P. 21.]
[P. 22.]
[P. 22.]
[P. 23.]
[P. 31.]
[P. 32.]

[P. 33.]
[P. 34.]
[P. 35.]
P. 36.]
[P. 36.]
[P. 37.]
[P. 37.]
[P. 38.]
[P. 38.]
[P. 39.]
[P. 39.]
[P. 40.]
[P. 40.]
[P. 41.]

The excellencie
of the citie of
Cambaya.

Lacha is gumme
of a tree, and is
used in dying
of silke.

The Kyngdom
of *Joga*.

The Kyngdom
of *Dechan*.

The diamonde
stone.

The stone
Siderites.

The hardnes
of the diamond.

How the diamand
is made softe.

The montayne
of diamandes.

The citie of
Narsinge.

The kin[n]e of
Narsinge.

Cambaia: but the cytie of Cambaia, is situate in the goulfe called *Guzerat*, and is well inhabited, and in maner most excellent of all the cities of *India*, and is therefore called *Cayrus*, or *Alcayr*, or *Babilon* of *India*. It is enuironned with a walle, and hath in it very fyare byldinges. Ye Soldan or chefe ruler hereof, is of Mahumets ffecte as are ye Turkes. *Lacha* groweth there more plentifully then in any other countre. The inhabitauntes, for the mooste parte goe naked, couering only theyr priuie partes: they bynd theyr heades about with a clothe of purple color. The Soldan or prince of this citie, hath in a redines for the warres. xx. thousand horfemen, he hath also a mightyte and magnifical court. When he waketh in ye morning there is heard a great noys of cimbals, drumflades, timbrelles, shames, pipes, flutes, trumpettes, and diuerse other musical instruments, hereby signifying that the king lyueth and is in health and merye: in lyke maner doe they whyle he is at dyner. To the kyngdom of *Cambaia*, is the Kingdom of *Joga* nexte adioyning, which reacheth farre on euerye side. In this kingdom, by reasoun of the greate heate of the sonne, the bodyes of men begin to waxe blacke and to be scorched: the people of thys countreye haue ringes hanging at their eares and colers aboue their neckes of sundry fortess, al beset and shyninge with precious stones. The foyle hereof is not very fruitful, this region is rough with mountaynes, the byldinge[s] are despicable, and eyl to dwel in: ther is beyonde this, another Kingdom called *Dechan*: this cytie is very beautiful to behold, and fruitful in maner of al thinges: the king hereof vseth great pride, and solemnitie: his pompes and triumphes are in maner incredible, they that wayt vpon the kinge, weare on the vpper partes of theyr shooes certayne shyning precious stones, as *Piropi* (whiche are a kind of Rubies or Carbuncles) with Diamandes and such other. But what maner of Iewelles they vse in ye stede of collers, earerings, and ringes, you may well confyder, whereas they geue suche honour to theyr fete. In this kingdom is said to be a mountayne, out of the which Diamandes are digged.

¶ Of the Diamande stone, called in Latine Adamas.



He Diamande is engendred in the mynes of *India*, *Ethiopia*, *Arabia*, *Macedonia*, and *Cyprus*, and in the golde mynes of the fame countries. That of *India* excelleth all other in beautie and clearenes: that which is of the coloure of yron, is called *Siderites*, it is often tymes found in colour like vnto cristal, and though it be sometimes lyke thereto in whytnes, yet doth it differ from cristall in hardnes, in so much that if it be layd vpon an anvil and strongly striken with a hammer, the anvil and hammer shall foner be wounded and leape away, then the stome perished or diminished: it doth not onelye refuse the forfe of Iron, but also refieth the power of fyre, whose heate is so farre vnable to melte it, that it can not so muche as heate it, if we geue credit to Plinie, and is also rather made purer therby, then anye wayes defyled or corrupted: neuertheles, the singuler and excellent hardnes of this stome, is made so softe with ye hoate blood of a Goate or a Lyon, that it may be broken: and if it be put with molten lead in hoate fornaces, it waxeth so hoate that it wylbe dissoluled: yet are not all Diamandes of such hardnesse, for that of *Cyprus*, and also that of the coloure of Iron called *Siderites*, may be broken with hammers and perced with another Diamand: his vertue is to bewray poifons, and to frustrate th[e]opperacion therof, and beeing therefore greatly esteemed of Kinges and Princes, it hath euer been of great price. The mountaine of *India* out of the which the Diamandes are digged, is compassed with a walle on euery syde, and kepte with a strong defence.

¶ Of the kingdoms and cities of *Narsinge* and *Canonor*.



He King of *Narsinge*, in riches and dominion excelleth all other Kinges in those partes. The chiefe cytie where the King is resident, is in situacion and synenes, much lyke vnto the cytie of Milayne, but that it standeth in a place somewhat declyning and leste equal. This hath euer in a redines manye thoufandes of men of armes, as one that is euer at warre wi[th] other countreyes, borderers nere aboue him. He is geuen to mooste vile Idolatrie, and honoureth the deuyll, euen as doth the king of *Calicut*. The maners and fashions of the inhabitauntes, are after this forte. The gentlemen or such as are of greatest reuenewes, vse to ware an inward cote or peticoate, not very long: hausing theyr heades bounde aboute with listles and rowles of sundry colours after the maner of the Turkes. The common people, couer onli their priuie partes and are besyde all together naked. The Kynge weareth on his head a stately cap made of the riche cloth of *Afia*, beyng two handfulls in length. When he goeth to ye warres, he wearcth a vesture of ye silke called *Goffampine*, which he couereth with a cloke adorned with plates of gold: ye hemme or edge of his cloke is beset with all maner of ouches and Iewelles. Hys horfe is iudged to be of such value if you respect ye price, as is one of

nd in maner
India. It is
of Mahumets
inhabitauntes,
t with a clothe
and horfemen,
great noyse of
mentes, hereby
at dyner. To
e side. In this
to be scorched:
f fundry fortres,
is rough with
ther Kingdom
ng hereof vseth
yon the king,
are a kind of
in ye stede of
r fete. In this

our cities. And this is by the meanes of ye innumerable multitude and fundrie kindest of precious stones, and perles wherewith ye trappers, barbes, and other furnitures of his horse are couered, with an incredible pompe and glori. The foyle of Narfinga, beareth nether wheate nor grapes, and is in maner without al kinde of frutes, except citrons and gourdes: the inhabitantes eate no bread, but ryce, fishe and fleshe, and also walnuttes, which that countrey beareth, there begin spycies to be found, as ginger, pepper, mirabolanes, Cardamome, Culsia, and dyuers other kyndes of spycies.

Canan. is a very excellente cytie, fayre and beautifull in all thinges, sauing that the Kinge thereof is an Idolater. This citie hath a hauen whether the horses of Persia are brought, but theyr tribute or custome, is exceeding great: the inhabitantes lyue with ryce, fleshe, and fyfe as do they of Narfinga: in the warres they vfe the swoerde, the round target, speares and bowes, and haue nowe also the vfe of gonnes, they are all naked sauing their prieuie partes, and go bare headed, except when they goo to the warres, for then they couer theyr heads with a redde hatte which thei folde double, and bind it fast with a lyf or bande. In the warres they vfe neither horse, mule, or asse, neither that kynde of camels which we commonly call dromedaries: but vfe onely Elephantes. There is also in the kingdom of Narfinga another godly citie called *Bijinagar*: it is compassed aboute with a walle, and situate on the side of a hyll, beeyng. viij. myles in circuite hauinge also in it a famous market place. The foyle is very fruitful, there are all delicate thinges to be found tha: may encrease the pleasures of this lyfe. There maye no where be found more pleaſant feldes and woddes for hauking and huntinge, a man woulde thinke it were a very Paradyſe of pleauſure. The king of this citie is of great power, he keeþ dayly many thouſandes of men at armes, vfling Elephantes in the stede of horses. And hath euer foure hundredth Elephantes prepared for the warres.

The riches trapping
of the kinges
horse.

Spices of
Narasinga.

The cytie of
Canan.

The vfe of
Elephantes in the
warres.
The cytie
Bijinagar.

Hauking and
huntinge.
The kinge of
Bijinagar.

The Elephantes
towre.

Elephantes
understandeth the
language of theyr
countrey.

Seven armed
men vpon one
Elephant

The ruler
speakeþ to the
Elephant.

The Elephantes
ioyntes.

The bignes and
shape of the
Elephant.



¶ How the Elephantes in India are prepared to warre.

He Elephant is a beast very docible and apte to be taught, and little inferiour from humaine fense, excellinge all other beastes in fortitude and strength. Therfore ye Indians, when they prepare them to the warres, put great packfaddels vpon them, which they bind fast with two chaines of Iron, comming vnder theyr belyes. Vpon the packfaddels, they haue on every side a little house or towre, or cage (if you list so to call it) made of wood. These towres ar made fast to the necke of the beast with certayne fawed bordes of the thickenes of halfe a hande breath. Euery towre receyveth thre men. And betwene both the towres, vpon the back of the beast sytteth an Indian, a man of that countrey which speaketh vnto the beaste. For this beaste hath marueylos vnderstandinge of the language of hys natyue countrey, and doth wonderfulli bear in memorie benefyes shewed vnto him. It is also moſte certayne that none other beast draweth so nere to the excellencie of humayne fense or reaſon as doeth this beast, as maye moſt playnly appere, yf we confidre, how he is geuen to loue and glory, to a certeyn frendry gentlenes and honest maners, ioyned with a marueylos discrecion, to know good from euil, more ready to recompence benefites then reuenge iniurys, which excellent properties are not to be found in other brute beastes. Therfore when the Elephantes go forward to ye warres, ſeven armed men are appoynted to be caried vpon one Elephant, bearing with them, bowes, iuelins, fwoordes and targettes: also the longe nout of the Elephant (which thei cal his hand) is armed with a fwoorde of two cubites in length, and in bredth and thickenes a handfull, ſtandinge righte forth, tyed faste to the noute of the beaste, and thus beeing furnished, they proceede to the battaile: and whereas occation requyreh to go forward or backwarde, the ruler of the beast geueth him warninge, whose voyce he vnderstandeth and obeyeth: ftryke hym, faþyth the ruler, forbeare hym, be feare agaynst theſe, abyayne from theſe, the beaste obeyeth hym in all thinges, as though he had humayn reaſon, but yf it ſo chaunce that being made afrayd with fire (which thinge they feare aboue all other) they beginne to flye, they can by no meanes bee allured to ſloppetheir courſe, or retorne agayne, for the people of that nacion, can with many ſubtyl deuifes as often as them lifte, rafe vp fires to make thone beastes afraide. There be ſome men which thinke that Elephantes haue no ioyntes in theyr legges, which opinion other affirme to be vntreue, for they haue ioyntes as haue other beastes, but that they are very low and almoſt at their fete. The females are of greater fiercenesse then the males, and of much greater strength to beare burdens: they are ſometime taken with madnes, declaring the fame by theyr furious running. An Elephant excedeth in greatness thre wilde oxen called *Bubali*, and is much lyke of heare, and eyed lyke a swine, hauing a long nout, hanging downward, with the which he putteth into his mouth whatſoever he eateth or drinkeſt, for his mouth is vnder his throte, not muche vnlkye the mouth of a fwyne: his ſnowte hath holes in it, and is holowe within, with this they ouerthrow ye ſtumpes of trees: and that of ſuche bignes, that the forſe of xxiiij. men is not able to do the fame. The two great tuſkes which they haue comming farre ouute of theyr

ia, and *Cyprus*,
other in beautie
ten tymes found
tynes, yet doth it
I strongly striken
y, then the ſtone
ſiftheth the power
we geue credit
neuertheles, the
bate or a Lyon,
te that it wylbe
the coloure of
is vertue is to
of Kinges and
Diamandes are

fe partes. The
e vnto the cytie
all. This
er at warre wi.
Idolatrie, and
fashions of the
uenewes, vfe to
s and rowles of
e parts and are
cloth of *Aſia*,
Goffampine,
ſet with all
ce, as is one of

The painters erre
hersin.

Understands the
handbreadth with
the thumbe
stretched forth.
The Elephantes
Passe.

The Elephante is
 vexed with flies.

How the Elephant
kylleth flies.

Famite betwene
the Elephant and
Rhinoceros.

The Rhinoceros
is hornes

The fight betwene
A'rhinoceros and
the Elephant

Rhinoceros
naturally armed.

Rhinoceros sene
in Portugale.

Rhinoceros
overcometh the
Elephant

Lowe and simple
houses.

mouth, or placed in the vpper iawe, hauinge on euery syde lappes hanging downe of the bignes of two hand brea[d]th. Theyr fete are round like vnto a flat trene diffe, hauing syue toes like hoeues vndeuided, of the bignes of great oystershelles. Theyr tayles are lyke vnto the tayles of wilde oxen, thre handful in length, hauing but few heares. The males are hygher then the females. They are of fundry bignes: some are of. xiiij. handfulls hye, some of xiiiij. and some. xvi. Their pase in goyng, is somewhat flowe and walowinge, by reaon whereof, some whiche ryde on them and haue not been accustomed thereto, are prouoked to vomitte, euen as they were tossed on the sea. Yet it is great pleure to ride on the yong Elephantes, for they goe as fostenly as ambeling moiles. When you attempt to geat vp, to ryde on them, they bow downe toward you, as though they would eafe you with a stropes, that you may the easelier geat vp, which nevertheles cannot wel be done without helpe. They are all vnbridled hauinge neither wihte nor collar aboute theyr neckes, but goe with theyr heades al together lose. And because they are not couered with bristels or bigge heares, they haue not so muche as in theyr tayle anye helpe to dryue awaie flies. For euen this greate beaste also (sayeth Plinie) is troubled with this lyttle vermyne. Theyr skinne is very rowghe, and full of chappes, and ristes, like the barkes of a tree, being somwhat filthye and full of swette, whiche by heate refolued into vapoure, by fauour draweth flies vnto it: therefore when any flies or other creping vermen are entered into the fayde ristes of theyr skinnes, fodeynly bending and drawing together their skinne, they hold them fast and kyl them, and this is to them in the stede of a tayle, a mane, or rough and bristeled heare.

¶ Of the beast called Rhinoceros.



Hinoceros is comonly found in the same countrey, where Elephantes are engendred, and is borne an enemy to the Elephant (as saith Plinie) no leſſe feking his destruction then doth the dragon: wherfore the Romaynes considering the natures of these beastes, were wont to put them together vpon the theater or flage, for a spectacle, therby to declare the natures of enemies. This *Rhinoceros* hath two hornes, whereof the one is of notable bignes, growing oute of his nosfethrilles, and is of flatt forme, and as harde as Iron. The other groweth aboue in his necke, and is but a little one, but wonderfull strong: when this beast attempteth to inuade the Elephant, he fyleth and wheteth his horne on a stone and stryketh at the belly of the Elephant, which place he knoweth to be most open to his stripes, and easyst to receaue hurt, because of the softenes thereof, which he cutteth with his horne as with a sword. Some auctours write that *Rhinoceros* is vnequall in bignes to the Elephante: but *Iulus Solinus* saith, that he is as long as the Elephante, but hath shorter legges: when *Rhinoceros* therfore and the Elephant ioyne together in fighte, they vſe theyr natural weapons: the *Rhinoceros* his horne, and the Elephante his tuskes, wherewith he ſo violentlye beateth and teareth the skinne of *Rhinoceros* being as harde as horne or ſhell, and ſcarcelye able to be pearfed with a dart, that he nevertheles enforſeth him to fall downe. *Rhinoceros* agayne on the other partie ſo woundeth the belye of the Elephante with the horne of hys nosfethrilles, yf he doe not preuent hys strokes, yat he fainteth with bleeding. In the yere of Christ. 1513. the first day of Maye, was broughte oute of India to Emanuel the king of Portugale *Rhinoceros* alyue, of the colore of boxe, ſomwhat variable and as it wer chekered, couered with ſhelles lyke ſcales, or rather lyke shieldes. This beast was in bignes equal to an Elephante, but had shorter legges, and was armed on euery parte. He had a ſtronge and ſharpe horne in his nosfethrilles, the whiche (as I haue ſayde) he fyleth, when he prepareth him to fight. All this great hatered betwene these two beastes, is for ye best pastures which one ſtriueth to take from the other as ſome wryters ſay. In the yere of Christe. 1515. King Emanuel ſet forth a ſpectacle in the citie of *Lisbona*, in which was a combat betwene the Elephant and *Rhinoceros*. A fight doubleſe worthy great admiracion. But in this fight, the Elephant had the ouerthrowe.

¶ Of Calicut, the moſt famous market towne of India.



He cytie of *Calicut* is in the continent or mayn lande. And the houses therof adioyning to the ſea. It is not walled about, but coniyneth in circuite. vi. thouſand houses, not adherent together as the maner of bylding in England, but one being diſtant from another, a further ſpace. It is extended in length a thonne and pafes. The houses thereof, are but ſimple and veiy lowe, not paſſinge the heigth of a manne on horſebacke from the grounde. In the ſtede of a rooſe, they are couered with bowes of trees harde and thiſke couched together, the caufe hereof is, that yf the earth there be in anye place digged ſyue handful depth, the water

es of two hand
d, of the bignes
gh, hauing but
xiiiij. handfulls
reaso[n] whereof,
en as they were
tely as ambeling
ugh they would
be done without
ith their heades
t so muche as in
is troubled with
e of a tree, being
es vnto it: there
fodeynly bending
e stede of a tayle,

engendred, and
ructior then doth
tes, were wont to
are the natures of
e bignes, growing
her growth aboue
east attempteth to
y of the Elephant,
he softenes thereof,
equall in bignes to
orfer legges: when
ns : the *Rhinoceros*
kinne of *Rhinoceros*
beles enforseth him
with the horne of
ere of Christ. 1513.
ceros alyue, of the
ather lyke shieldes.
n every parte. He
when he prepareth
one striueth to take
a spectacle in the
otlesie worthy great

springeth forth, by reasoun wherof they can lay no depe foundacions for theyr houses, sufficiente to beare anye heauye roofe. The Kinge of thys citie is geuen to Idolatrie, and honoureth the deuyll himself. Yet he denieth not but that there is a God which made heauen and earth. And the same to be the chiese auctour and fyrste cause of all thinges. But sayth that he hath committed the rule and judgemente of the world, to the deuil, to whom he hath geuen power to rewarde men with good or bad according to their deserues. This deuil they cal *Deumo*, but the mighty God and maker of the world, they cal *Iamerani*. The king hath in his Chappell the Image of this deuyll *Dami*, fytting with a diademe or crowne on his head, much lyke vnto the myter which the Romayne Bishoppes weare, saue that this deuils myter hath foure notable horns. He syteth gapinge and hath a greate wyde mouth, with foure teeth and a deformed nose, lowring eyes, a grimme, terrible, and threatening countenaunce, with hooked handes lyke fleshehookes, and feete not much vnlyke the feete of a cocke. Al such as behold this horrible monstre, are fodeynly afonited. For it is surely a thing most vyle to beholde, and no leesse terrible. The chappel is on every syde ful of painted deuyls: and in every corner thereof sytteth a deuyll made of copper, and that so workemanly handeled, that he semeth like flaming fire, miserably consuming the soules of men. This deuyll with his righte hande, putteth a soule to his mouth, and with his lefthe hande, he taketh another from a place beneth. Euery morning their Priestes (called *Bramini*) washe the Image of the deuyll with rose water, or such other swete liquoure, and perfume hym with dyuerse swete sauours, kneling on theyr knees and praying vnto him. Euery seuenthe day, thei take the bloud of a cocke and put it in a fluer vessel, ful of burning coales: addinge therunto innumerable odoriferous gummes and pouders to make a swete smoke or sumigacion. Then the Priele taketh his senfer with burning coales, putting thereto frankencenze, and thus maketh his oblation to Sathan, during which tyme of sacrifice, a lytle syluer bell, is ronge continuallye. The king syteth not downe to his meate, vnyll soure of his chapleins haue offred parte of the same meate to the deuyll. And when the Kyng goeth to dynner, he syteth on the gronde withouter eyther carpet or table cloth. And as he syteth at diner, foure of the priestes wayte vpon him standing: not approachinge nere vnto hym by the distaunce of four pases, gauen reverent attendaunce vnto the kinges talke. When he hath dyned, the Priestes take the meate that is left, and geue it to the crowes to eate: which byrdes they haue in such estimacion, yat it is not lawful to hurt them. When the king shal marie a wife, he goeth not to bed with her, vntil she be defloured of ye high Priest, whom the king for his paines rewardeth with. v. C. [five hundred] pieces of golde.



¶ Of the maners of the Indians in Calicut.

Ext after the King, ye priestes which ferue ye Idols, are had in chiese reuerence. Nexe vnto them, the Magistrates, called *Nerl*, are no lesse estemed then aronge vs Senatours or Lordes of the counsayl. When these goe abroade, they cary with them swordes, targettes, bowes and iuelins. Such as are counted of the thyrdre order, are in like place with them, as are Artificers with vs. They of the fourth order, lyue by fishinge. And to them of the fyfthe order, perteyneth the gathering of pepper, wyne, and walnuttes. The balest and pooreſt sort, are they which sowe and gather ryce, beying contemned both of the priestes and Senatours. The Kinge, the Quene, and the inhabitantes of the cytie, haue almost no apparel, couering onely theyr fylthy partes with cotton of the tree called *Goffampine*, and not with filke: and are beside altogether naked. They goe barefoted and bareheaded. When the King is dead, yf there remayne alyue any heyres, males, either children or brethren, or brothres children, they succede not in the kingdomde: for by custome of the countrey, the fysters sonnes are inheritoris to ye crown: but yf there bee no fuche lyuinge, he succedeth in the kingdom which is neareſt of bloud to ye king, of whiche costume, the reaso[n] is (as they saye) because the Priestes defloure the Quenes. When the King taketh any farre iourney, or rydeth a hunting, the Priestes wayte vpon the Quene at home, and kepe her company: for nothinge can be more thankefull to the kynge, then to haue the Quene thus accustomed in adulterye with the Priestes, by whiche common prostitucion of the quene, he maye well iudge that the chyldren borne of her, are not to be estemed as his owne: and therfore assygneth the right of his inheritance to his fysters children, as to the nerest of his bloude, because his brothers children (as is sayd before) may not succede him in the kingdomde by the custome of the countrey. The noble men and marchauntes vſe this fashion among themſelues. Such as haue wyues, do often tymes chaunge theyr wyues, one frende with an other for th[e]encreafe of further frendship. At which exchaunginge of wyues, one of them speaken to another after this manner. Forasmuch as you are my veri frend, let vs chaunge wyues: on ſuch condicion, that I maye haue yours and you myne. The other asketh him yf he speake in earneſt. He fweareth yea: let vs goe then (sayth his fellow) to my house: when they are come thether, the good man calleth forth his wife, ſaying vnto her:

EDEN.

F

17

The king honoreth
the dead.

The Image of the
deuill.
The bishop of
Romes vicar at
Calicut.

The deuill eateth
soules.

The deuilles
chaplains.

Sacrifice to the
deuyl.

The chapleins
offer to the deuyl.

The priestes wait
on the kyng.

Crowes had in
estimation
The priestes
defloure ye
quenes.

Priestes.
Magistrates.

Artificers.
Labourers.

The succession of
the kingdom.

As are ye priestes,
such is ye people.
The priestes kepe
the quene.

Exchaunginge
of wyues.

Obedience is
euill.

One woman
maried to seuen
men.

The punishment
of murther.

Sinne redemed
for money.

Superstition.
Outward
clenlynes.

Deuylishe
gestures.

Woman, come hether and folow this man: for he shall from henceforth be thy husband. She asketh him yf he speake in earnest: he answereith, in good earnest. Then sayth the woman: I wil folowe him gladly. He taketh her away with him, and in lyke maner fendeth his wyfe to his frende. And this is the custome which thei vse in chaunging of wyues. But the children remaine with theyr fyrfte father. Other of these Idolaters vse dyuerse other customes. For among some of them, one woman is maried to feuen husbands, which lie with her by course one after another. And when she hath broughte forth a child, she fendeth it to whiche of her feuen husbands the lyst: who maye in no case refule it. When they eate, they lye along on the gronde, and haue they meat in great dishes, or treys of copper. In the stede of spones, they vse leaues of trees. Their meate, is ryce, fish, spycis, and frutes of the common forte. Yf any man committeth murther, and bee apprehended, he is punyfched after this maner.

They haue a kynde of gallowes made, with a poste of the lengthe of foure pases: On the whyche, not farre from the toppe, are fastened two flauies with sharpe endes, ye one lying ouer the other after the maner of a croffe: then the body of ye offender is thrull through upon one of ye flauies. And so the miserable wretche hangeth vntyll he haue geuen vppe the ghost. But yf any man wound another, or beate hym with a staffe, he redemeth sh[e]offence, payinge to the king a certayn of golde. When they pray, they go fyrt before the rysing of the iunne, to some ryuer or standinge water, wherein they plunge themselues, to th[e] intent to washe them cleane: And so beeinge washed, they touche nothing vntyll they haue at home at theyr houses, poured forth their prayers before theyr Idols. When they laye them selues down on the gronde, secretely to praye, they make certayne deuylishe gestures lyke vnto madd men, flaring with theyr eyes, and turning them inward after a straunge forte, wytch no leesse deforminge their countenaunce, very monstrous to beholde. When the king prepareth him to ye warres he hath in a readynesse a hundred thousand fotonem. For of horfemen they haue no vse, but only of such as fyght on Elephantes. Al that are of the Kinges bande, have a silken syllet of scarlet colour, tied about their heade. When thei go to the warres they vse round swordes, targets, iuelins, and bowes.

¶ Of Pepper and other spicies which growe in the region of Calicut.

Hewe pepper
groweth



Epper groweth in ye suburbes of the citie of *Calicut*. There is some also gathered within the citie. The stalke of pepper is veri weake: so that it can not stande vpryghe, without a stalle or proppe to sustein it, as haue ye vynes. It is not much unlike vnto Iuie: and in like maner crepeth and stretcheth forth it self embrasing and ouerspreading such trees as grow nere vnto it. This tree (or rather shrubbe) is deuided into many braunches, of the lengthe of two or thre hand bredth. The leaues are lyke the leaues of an Orenge tree: fauinge that these are somewhat groffer and fatter, with small vaynes running betwene on the contrary side. On

every twigge ther hangeth five thickle clustours of beries, a hand breadth in length, and of the colour of wild grapes. They are gathered in the monethes of October and Nouember: Inclininge yet to a grene colour, and so laying them on mattes or couerlettes, they set them in the sunne to be dried: where, within the space of thre dayes, it waxeth black, even as it is brought hether. They vse neyther cutting nor digging, or other tillage, but onely the simple and pure fruitfulness and encrease of the earth. Plinie sayth that the trees of pepper are lyke vnto oure juniper trees. And that in his time, some affymmed yat they were brought foorth only in the front of ye mount *Cauasius* on the southsyde toward the sonne. But the Portugals, whiche in this our daies sayle into the East partes, haue found it otherwise. The region of *Calicut*, beareth also Ginger: which doubtles is a roote, and is often tymes founde of the weigthe of. xii. vnces: but al are not of lyke bignes. This roote entreth no deeper into ye ground, then. iii. or. iii. handbreddth, like vnto the rede. When ginger is digged out of ye ground, they leaue the knotte or ioynte of the roote, in the pytte out of which they digged the ginger: couering ye fame with earth as a fede, agaynst the next yeare to encrease and bring forth more ginger. It is found in playn ground of a reddie erth, as ar *Mirabalanes*. Ther groweth also diuers other frutes and shrubbes vnknowne to vs, as *Iaceri*, *gracara*, *amba*, *Carocapē*, *Comolanga*, and flich other of which some haue the taste and sauoure of quinces, some of peaches, some of damaske prunes, some of melones, and some of figges, etc. *Aloe* groweth also in that region: and is a certayn gumme, gathered from a litle tree, which is fastened in the earth, onely with one roote after ye maner of a staffe, pytched in the gronde. The bodie of the tree, is tender and redde, of strong sauour and bitter tast. It somtyme putteth forth droppes of gumme withoute anye cuttinge. And this of India, is mucche better then that which groweth in *India*.

Fruitful groundes
without tillage

Ginger.

A roote for a rede.

Fruytes vnknown
to us.

Aloe.

eth him of he
v. He taketh
which thei vfe
ers vfe dyuerse
e with her by
her feuen huf-
and haue they
meate, is ryce,
chended, he is

ycche, not farre
the maner of
ferable wretche
n with a stalle,
yfyst before the
t to wafhe them
s, poured forth
to praye, they
g them inward
le. When the
horfemen they
have a silken
cordes, targets,

alicut.

ered within the
without a stake
d in like maner
grow nere vnto
ngthe of two or
ye that these are
rarey side. On
colour of wild
e colour, and so
n the space of
or other tillage,
pepper are lyke
n the front of ye
is a roote, and
ntreth no deeper
e ground, they
g ye fame with
playn ground of
to vs, as *Iaceri*,
f quinces, some
in that region:
e roote after ye
ong fauour and
ndia, is muche



¶ Of byrdes and beastes which are found in the region of Calicut: and of the wyne of ihe merueylous tree.

Here is found in *Calicut*, diuers and sundry kyndes of foure footed beastes and foulcs. As lons, wilde boores, hartes, hyndes, wolues, kyne, wylde oxen, goates, and Elephantes: whych neuertheles are not engendred there, but brought thereto. There bee also grene popingayes and some [of] white f'lers of variable colours, lying like scouthins. Some also of purple coloure. Of these there is such plentie, that they are fayne to appoint men to kepe them from the rice which groweth there in the feldes. They are merueilous chatteringe and of smal price. There are also birdes called *Sarau*, somwhat leste them popingayes, but make a much sweter noyse. There are also manye other kyndes of byrdes vnylike vnto oures: Of which, euerye morning and euening is hearde suche a harmonie and so swete a noyse, that nothing can be more delectable: In so little mouthes confisteth in maner al musicke, and therfore the inhabitauntes lyue in greate pleasure, as though they were in an earthly paradise, where floures are euer springing, and trees continue grene al the hole yere. The heauen is beneficall vnto them, and the ayre most temperate continually. So that thei are nether bytten with colde in winter nor burnt with heate in somer, but lyue as it were in continual springe tyme. The same region bringeth forth also Marmafets and Munkeys, whiche are great hinderaunce to ye men of the countrey: and specially to the poore forte, beccause they clyme the walnut trees, and spylle the sweete liquoure of the fruyte thereof, of which the Indians make most plefaunt wyne. For thef Indians haue a tree most excellent aboue all other trees of the world, whicn bringeth foorth dates lyke vnto the Palme tree. This tree ferueth them for firewood: and beareth a kynde of walnutes most delicate to be eaten: Also a kind of cordes, softe cloth, wine, oyle, and suger. But chiefly it bringeth foorth this excellent kynde of nuttes like vnto dates. From these they take awaie the fyrsyte rynde or barke and cast it in the fire. The other fruite is not muche vnylike *Goffampine* cotton, or sylke. Of the floures they make cloth lyke sylke: the flaxe whiche is leste, they spinne agayne, and make therof smal roopes or cordes. The last barke or rinde, conteineth the nutte, whose thickenesse is no more then the lyttle fynger of a mans hande. Furthermore the sweete liquoure or wyne, is engendered with the nutte, so that as the nutte groweth, the liquoure also encreaseth: In so much that when the nut is full grownen, the liquoure fyllmeth the innre warde partes of the same. And thys liquoure or wyne, is most cleare, not muche vnylike vnto rose-water: Of which neuertheles is made a very fatte oile. They cut also the trunke or stocke of the tree in ye morning and euening: by whiche meanes they gather a most excellent liquor, which they feeth on the fyre, and make therof so merueylous a drinke, that if a man driake thereof beyond measure, he is drieuen into furie and madnes. This liquor is vfed there in the stede of wyne. But let vs nowe returne to the beastes which are found in *Calicut*. Serpentes growe there vnto such houdge greatnesse, that they are in maner as bigge as swyne. They haue heades muche larger then bores heades. Thei are foure foted, foure cubites in length, engendered and conuerfaunte in fennie and marrifhe groundes. The men of that countrey faye that these beastes are without poyon. There are also found other kyndes of serpentes: of the whiche one kynde hath so mortall venime, that if they drawe never so lyttle blud, it caufeth present death. There are other serpentes which in quantite represent the serpent called *Apis*. Again, otherfome are much higher of whiche there are greate plentie. The men of the countrey thinke yat they are spirites fallen from heauen: and therfore haue them in great reverence. Thei haue conceaued this opinion of them, because that in maner with touching, they bringe present death. And this is the caufe whi there is so great abundaunc[e] of serpentes, that by the kinges commaundement it is not lawful to hurt them: and therefore they wander safelyst where them listeth, and are esteemed of them as things that bring good fortune. For whereas the men of yat countrey, goe abroade aboute anye busines, thei take it for good luck to mete any of them by the waye. The popingayes of *India* are for the most part, of grene colour besyde ye head, which is ether redde or yellowe like golde. They haue a great and large toung, and are therfore of a louder voyce, and speake more plainly. They learne the fyrsyt and second yeaire such things as are taughte them. And beare them longer in memory. They drinke wyne, and vfe theyr sete in the stede of handes when they feede.

Papingayes
of diuers kyndes.Sweete singinges
of birdes

Earthly paradise
Temperate ayre.
Continual spring.
Munkeys.

A tree of sundrye
commodities.

Sylke of trees.

Ropes of trees.
Wyne of trees.

Oyle of water

Serpentes as bigge
as swyneSerpentes without
poyon.Serpentes counted
for heauenly
spirites.Greene
popingayes.

¶ Of the sundrye kindes of Spices, which are founde in Calicut, and from whence they are brought thyther.

Canonor.
Zaylon.
Corimucol.
Melusa.
Molucha.
Pego.
Ormus.
Cambaina.
Arabia.
Chiua.
Samotor.
Darnasseri.



Inger growth in *Calicut*, yet is there much broughte thereth from the cytie of *Canonor*.

Cinamome commeth from the Ilande of *Zaylon*, whyche is fyfte leages beeyonde *Calicut* Eastward.

Pepper growtheth in *Calicut*: but muche more is broughte thereth from *Corimucol*, whiche is. xij. leages beyonde *Calicut*.

Cloues are gathered in a place, called *Melusa*, certayn leages distant from *Calicut*.

Nutmegges and Mace, growe in *Molucha*, beyng distante from *Calicut* hundreth and thre score leages, and somewhat more.

Muske and Castoreum, is brought from the region of *Pego*, whiche is from *Calicut*, almoste hundreth and fyfte leages.

Pearles of the biggest forte, are gathered neare vnto the Iland and cytie of *Ormus*, situate in the goule called *Sinus Persicus*: And are sente from thence to *Calicut*, as to the generall market towne of all the East partes.

Spikenarde, and Mirabalanes, are brought from *Cambaina* to *Calicut*.

Frankencenze, and Myrre, come from *Arabia*.

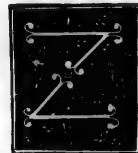
Aloe, and *Camphyre*, are brought from *Kyui*, or *Chiua*. l. [fifty] leages from *Calicut*.

Long pepper cometh from *Samotor*. Cardamome ye greater, is brought from *Canonor*.

Prefilium, or braffyl, cometh from *Darnasseri*, otherwyfe called *Tarmasseri*, almoft. CC. [two hundred] leages from *Calicut*.

¶ Of the Iland of Zaylon, and of Cinomome found there.

Elephantes.
Precious stones.
Cinomome.



Zaylon is a very large region, and bringeth foorth chefelye *Elephantes* in greate plentie. It hath also Mountaynes of merueyous length: at the rootes wherof are found Rubines, Hiacinthes, Saphyres, Topafes, and suche other precious stones. In this Iland growtheth the Cinomome tree, not much vnylike ye bayetree, specially in the leaves. It bringeth forth graynes much lyke vnto baye beries, but somwhat leffe and whytifhe. That whiche we commonly call Cinomome, is nothinge el but the barke or rynde of a tree, which is gathered after this maner. Euyer thyrde yeare they cut of the braunches of the trees, and take of the barke or rynde thereof, which is our Cinomome. They cut not the body of the tree, but only the branches. Whern it is first gathered, it is grene, and not perfectly swete vntyll it be kept a moneth. This Iland is situate vnder the Equinoctial line, where is continual springe all the yeare. The inhabitauntes weare clothes, with one arme oute vncouered, and haue clothe made of *Goffampine* cotton, or of silke. A rede is to them in the fede of sworde, rappyre, and iauelyne. And are therefore seldome slayne in the warres.

The Equinoctial
lyne

Weapons of redes

¶ Of the cytie of Tarnasseri, and the maner of the cytezins there.

Narsinga.



The cytie of *Tarnasseri*, is distaunte from the Kingdome of *Narsinga*. xiiiij. dayes sayling Eastward, and hath a king of great puyllance and marueyous riche. The foyle of this citie, bringeth forth wheate, cotton of *Goffampine* trees, and plentie of silke. The fieldes bringe foorte the all kindes of frutes; quinces also and oranges. It is replenished with manye and fundry kyndes of beastes awell wyld as tame, as kyne, shepe, goates, swyne, hartes, hyndes, wolues and lyons. There are also seene those kyndes of cattes which beare the riche furres called *Zibellini*, which we call Sables. In all the fieldes and woodes of this region are founde many Peacockes, Faulcons, and most fayre Popingaiyes of white colour intermingled with feuen variable coloures. There is also maruelous plentie of hares and partryches. There are manye of other straunge kyndes of foules: and specially such as lyne by praye, whiche are muche higher then Eagles: whose vpper beakes are of suche bignes and hardnes, that handles for swordes are made thereof. Also the cockes and hennes of thys region are

The beast whiche
breneth the furres
called Sables.

Foules of
merueyous bignes.

muche hygher and bigger then ours. When the people of the countreye goe to theyr meate, they lye downe on the gronde withoute carpet or cloth: Yet vfe they wooden vesselles, workemanlye made. Theyr drinke is water myxte with suger: but the poorer forte, drinke onelye water. Their beddes are made of Gossampine cotton, wthy couerlettes alfo of cotton or iylke. They goe all in generall barefooted excepte the Priestes. The Kynges of this cytye, doeth not commytye his wife to the Priestes to bee defloured, as doth the king of *Calicut*, but to whyte men, as are the christians and Turkes. For this office is not committed to the Idoloters. But after that the new maried quene hath been thus defloured the fyrt night, yf euer after she doe dishonour the Kyng her husband, by violating the faith made to him, from thenceforth never to knowe any other man carnally, her punishment is death incontinently. When the Kynges or the Priestes dye, their bodies are laid on a great fyre, and the ashes thereof referred in erthen pottes, putting thereto a porcion of salt petre, and buryinge the same in theyr owne houses. While the bodies are burning, they cast into the fyre al kyndes of swete fauouring gummes, and splices: as Aloe, Frankencense, Myrra, Storax, Coralle, fandalles, and fuche other innumerable: In the meane tyme blowing trumpets and shawmes, after the maner of them which amonge the gentiles were canonized into ye numbre of the goddes. And within xv. dayes after ye hufbandes death, the wyfe calleth to her all her kinsfolkes, bidding them to a banquet: and so being decked with al her iewels, she procedeth with them to the place where her hufbande was buried, where a graue is redye digged for her, inclosed about with silken cloth, hauning in it a fyre made of swete wood. When the woman hath thus feasted her kynsfolkes, she eateth much of the herbe called *Betola*, wherby she is driven into a madnes. In thyss meane whyle, innumerable trumpetters (wearing such vestures as they vfe in the deuyls seruice) go as it were on procesion aboue the graue, while the woman runneth vp and down, daunfing continually like a frantike bodie. And thus when the ceremonies are synished, she casteth her selfe headlong into the fyre and graue: and that with no lese cherefulnes then yf she shoulde be receaued into heauen. And vnlesse the woman shoulde perorme thyss custome, she shoulde incurre most vyle infamie, and be a mocking flocke to all her nacion, as one that loued not her husband. But the common people vfe not thyss custome: but only the rulers and princes. And therfore the king him selfe is often tymes presente at these solemnities.

*Beddes of silke.
Priestes.*

*The quene
defloured o' white
menne.*

*Adulteri punished
with death
Howe the kinge
is buried.*

*Ministrels.
The quene dyeth
willingly.*

*The herbe *Betola*.*

*What creditilic
maye doe in false
religion.
Honour dere
boughte.*

*The king and
cittie of *Bangalla**

Silke.

*Christian men of
Cathay.*

*The citie of *Pego*.*

*Rubies shynnyng by
night.
*Lacha, Laccas, or
Lactas, is a
gumme of a tree
wherewith silke is
colored.**

*Malaccha.
Sumatra.
Taprobana*



¶ Of the kingdoms and cities of Pego and Bangalla.

Rom the cytie of *Tarnafferi*, to the cytie of *Bangalla*, is. xi. dayes saylinge. This cytie hath a kyng: and the countrey is very fruytful with great plentie of wheat, flefhe, suger, ginger, and gossampine cotton: and hath therfore very rich marchantes. There yearlye passeth from this citie sytie shypes frayghted wthy gossampine cotton, and silke clothes: which are caried from thence to the Turkes, Syrians, Arabians, Persians, Ethiopians, and Indians. Here are alfo founde certayne Christian merchant men, which come out of Th[e]c[on]querors empire of the great *Cathay*: bringing with them Aloe, Castoreum and the swete gumme called *Laferpitium*, with other swete fauours. In this cytie, the men spinne and cardre and make clothe, and not the womenne. From this cytie Eastwarde, is another great citie called *Pego*, beyng situate by a verye fayre ryuer. The Kinge of thyss cytie, is an Idolater, and hathe innumerable menne of warre, both horfemenne and footemenne. The soyle beareth wheate plentifullye: and bringeth forth in maner all kyndes of beastes, and hath therfore great abundance of flefhe, yet are there but fewe Elephants: But of other beastes and foulcs, great plentie as is at *Calicut*: and speciallye of popingayes, whiche are of louder voice then in any other place. There is little traffique or marchaundise in this region, except iewels and precious stones, and specially Rubies, called *Pyropi*, whiche are broughte therther from the cytie of *Capelan*. These precious stones shyne so brighte in the darke nyghte, as thought it were the sonne beames. The countrey adioyning, bringeth forth *Lacha*, *Sandalum*, called faunders: Also brasil, gossampine cotton and fylke. From *Pego* to the cytie of *Malaccha* (whiche some call *Melagua*) is eygh[...]e dayes saylinge: where on the other syde is sene a great Iland called *Sumatra*, otherwise *Samotra*, and was in time paste called *Taprobana*. This *Malaccha*, hath a goodly and commodious hauen: by reson wherof, moe shippes arriuue there then in any other place: bringinge with them splices and other marchaundise in great abundance. The region is not generally fruytful, yet hath it wheat and fleshe: but grete scarcenesse of wood. The foulcs wander in the feldes as they doe in the region of *Calicut*. But the popingayes are here much fayer. It bringeth forth also splices, faunders, tinne, elephanthes, horses, shepe, wilde oxen, pecokes, and such other kyndes of beastes. It is not lawfull there to bye and sell, except you bye splices and fylke. It is also there very daungerous to walke in the citie in the nighte seafon, becausse of the theft and cruelnes of the inhabitantes, which kil one another like dogges. And therfore the marchaund straungers lodge not out of their shippes. How the Portugales subdued *Malaccha*, shalbe said hereafter in the descriptioun of the newe Ilandes.

¶ Of the greate and ryche Ilande of Sumatra, or Samotra, sometyme
called Taprobana.

The Iland of
Taprobana.

Men of a hundredth
y res of age.

Shelles of fishes
for houses.

Great pearlles.
Coynd golde and
siluer for moneye.

Fishes of
monstrous
bignesse.

Lacha.

Pepper soldie by
measure.
Cathay.
The Iland of
banda.

The nutmeg tree.

Mace.

The Iland of
Monoch.

Cloues.

Charles Waine.
Pole Antartike.

Idolaters.

Camphire.



Some thinke this Sumatra, to be that Iland which of the old writers is called *Taprobana*. It is verye great and riche: and hath in it foure Kinges crowned with Diademes. They are Idolaters: in religion, maner of lyuinge, and apparell, not muche vnylike the Kinge of *Tarneseri*. They excede all other men in bignesse of bodie. They haue greye or blewe eyes, and are of cruell countenaunce, and terrible voyce. They are long lyued and lyue euen vntyl an hundredth years of age. The fea in certaine chanels is of such heighth and depth, that no anker may come to the bottome therof. The inhabitantes are great fyshers on the sea, and haue great pleasure to take the shelle syfhe, called the Tortoise of the sea: of whiche, some are of fuche houdge bignes, that the shelle of one of them may suffise to make a houfe well able to receaue a hole famelie. For some of them bear shelles of xv. cubites in length: and are therefore apt for that purpose. The most part of this Ilande is burnte with heate, and hath in it many desolate places and wildernesses. There are founde many and greate Pearlles. For theyr money, they vse coyned golde, syluer and tygne. The golden coyne, hath on the one syde a devils head grauen, and on the other syde a chariot which Elephantes draw. This region bringeth foorth more plentie of Elephantes, of greater stature, and a better broede, then are found in any other place. In the sea about this Ilande, are often tymes fene the great monstrous fyshes, and kynde of Whales, called Balene, which bring many incommodities to the inhabitantes. They are of such monstrous bignes, that when they approche to the Sea bankes, they seeme lyke vnto hylles: they haue rough backes full of sharpe prickes. And except men walke very warely by the sea bankes, they are in daunger to be fodeynly swallowed vp of these monsters. Some of them haue so greate and wyde mouthes, that they fometymes swallowe whole shippes with the men. This countrey bringeth foorth the *Lacha*, *Lacea*, or *Lactu*, which steyneth silke and cloth in high redde or crimson colour. It is engendred in a tree, not much vnylike vnto our walnut trees. Ther is also great plenty of pepper, higher then is founde in other places. In their mother tonge pepper is called *Molaga*. It is folde there by measure, as wheat is with vs, and not by weight. There is so great plentie hereof, that there are yearly certayne shippes laden therwith to *Cathay*, where ye aire is colder. From Sumetra to the Iland of Banda, which is but rude and barren, and of playne and lowe grounde, whose inhabitantes are barbarous, and little differinge from beastes, hauing lowe houfes, and no apparel but shertes, barefoted and bareheaded, with long heare, of despicable stature, dulle witted, of no strength, and Idolaters. The syyle of this countrey, bringeth forth nothing but nutmegges, and a few other fruities. The silke or bodi of ye nutmeg-tree, is not much vnylike ye stalke of a peache tree, bringing forth lyke braunches and leaues, but somewhat narower. Before these nuts be rype, ye mace crepeth on the tree, lyke a florishing rose. And when the nutte waxeth rype, the mace embrafeth it round about. And so they gather both together in commune, at a tyme appointed: for they vse no distribution thereof, but he that gathereth most, hath most. This tree bringeth forth his fruyte plentifully without any arte of husbandrye or tyllage. They are gathered at such tyme as we gather cheftnuttes. From this Iland within fixe dayes sayling, is the Iland of *Monoch*, in the which cloues are founde, as also in other Ilandes, thereto adioyninge. The tree whiche beareth cloues, hath his stalke not much vnylike vnto the boxe tree, with leaues lyke the *Cinomone* tree, but somewhat rounder. And when the cloues beginne to waxe rype, they beat the trees with redes, spreding fyrt couerlettes or mattes vnder ye fame. The grounde where these trees grow, is of ye colour of cleye or fand. This region is situate so low, that ye feuen starres called *Septentriones* (being not farre from *Vrsa maior*, called charles wayne) can not there be fene, because ye south pole (called pole Antartike) appeareth aboue the earth.

¶ Of the Ilande of Bornei.



The Iland of Bornei (which some call Porne) is distant from *Monoch* fiftie leages. The inhabitantes are Idolaters, very quick witted, and of maner of liuing not greatly to be discommended. Thei vse not al one kynde of apparel. Some weare shertes of goffampine cotton, some beastes skinnes, and some high cappes lyke myters, of redde colour. This Iland bringeth forth yearly great plentie of *Camphora*, called camphyre, whiche they affirme to be the gumme of a certayn tree. Of this Ilande I wil speake more hereafter in the nauigacions toward the East partes.

etyme

robana. It is
ca. They are
the Kinge of
reye or blewe
and lyue euen
nd depth, that
on the sea, and
of fuche houdge
famelic. For
the most part of
e founde many
coyne, hath on
. This region
ad in any other
nde of Whales,
us bignes, that
s full of sharpe
eynly swalowed
swallowe whole
silke and cloth
trees. Ther is
pepper is called
t plentie hereof,
rom Sumetra to
inhabitantes are
, barefoted and
s. The soyle of
li of ye nutmeggs,
, but fomewhat
when the nutte
une, at a tyme
is tree bringeth
uch time as we
which cloues are
Falke not much
when the cloues
t ye fame. The
w, that ye seuen
there be sene,



He Iland of *Gyaua*, is distant from *Bornei*. v. dayes fayling towarde the south. This Iland is so great, yet it conteineth in it many kingdoms: ye inhabitantes ar geuen to idolatri. It bringeth forth silke, which of it selfe growth there plentifullye in the wooddes. The precuous stone called Smaragdus (which is ye true Emerode) is found there more excellent, then in any other place of the worlde. It hath abundaunce of golde and copper of the best kynd. The soyle beareth wheat and other corne, with al kindes of frutes in great plentie. When the men of this countrie goe to the sea, theyr weapons are bowes, and arrowes of redes. They vie also to infect theyr arrowes with venime, and to blowe them oute of a trunke as we doe pellets of claye: with the which yf they drawe neuer so little bloud, prefente death foloweth immedia[t]lye. They haue also this custome, that when they see their parents by reason of age to be vnprofitable, they bring them to the market towne, and there sell them to the people called *Anthropophagi*, which eat mens fleshe, of whom they are inconsitentlye flayne, and eaten. The same doe they with the yonger forte also, yf they fall into any desperate disease.

Silke growth in
woodes.
The smaragd or
emered.
Golde and copper

Arrowes of redes.
Arrowes infected
with venime.
A strange
custome.
Anthropophagi.

Spyes.



Here are two Ilandes of thys name, as *Iaua* the more and *Iaua* the lesse. The biggest reacheth forth toward the South, and is fayd to haue in it many kingdoms. The inhabitantes are Idolaters and haue a peculier language. In this Iland is greate plentie of pepper, Nuttemegges, Spikenarde, Galangale, and other spices. Mani marchauntes of other countreies are wont to resorte therer, and geat great riches by ye spices which they carie from thense. In this Iland also are people called *Anthropophagi*, which are wont to eate mens fleshe.

Mahumetistes
Elephantines.
Iuerie

The Iland of
Cuzibet.
Camels fleshe
eaten.
Woddes of redde
Sandars.
Whales
Amber.
Lions, and
Leopards.



His Iland is counted to be one of the greatest and rycheſte Ilandes of the worlde. The inhabitantes are of Mahumets ſcete as are the Turkes. It bringeth forth many Elephantes, by reaſon wherof there is greate plentie of Iuerie which is the Elephante tothe. For it is thought that there is no greater plentie of Iuerie, then in this Iland and in the Iland of *Cuzibet*. They eate the fleshe of none other beaſtes, but onely of Camels, becaufe the Ilande is full thereof, and also that it is founde to be more holeſome for the people of that countrey then any other fleshe. There are alſo in this Iland many woddes that bringe foorth redde Sanders, for the which many marchauntes resorte therer. In the ſea about this Iland, great whales are taken, out of the which amber is gathered. There are lions, leopardes, hartes, hyndes, goates, and many other beaſtes and foulſ, by reaſon whereof, they vie muche haukinge and huntinge.

Bigge men of
low stature.

People deformed

Ryce and Datea.
Drinke of splices
Amber.



He Ilande of *Zanzibar*, hath a peculier Kinge and language. The inhabitantes are idolaters, and are of groſſe and ſhorte ſtature: but yf theyr heythg dydde aufwvere to theyr thickeneſſe and breadth, they miſte feme to be giauntes. They are all blacke, and goe naked, onely couering theyr pryue partes. The heare of theyr headeſ, is merueylouſlye coride. They haue greate mouthes, noſethrillies flyrting vpwarde and wyde, with greate eares and cruelle eyes. Their women are deformed by reaſon of theyr greate eyes, greate mouthes, and greate noſethrillies. They liue with milke, fleshe, ryce, and dates. They lacke wyne: yet they make a pleauant drinke of ryce, ſugur, and other ſpices. Many marchauntes resorte therer for yuerie and Amber, for there is greate plentie of Elephantes and greate whales.

C Of the two Ilandes, in one of the which dwell onely men, and in the other onely women.

The Iland of men.



The Iland of
women
Christians

Fishing.

In the mayne sea, there are two Ilandes, distante the one from the other aboue. viij. or. ix. leages toward the south, situate betwene the cytie of *Aden* and *Calicut*. In one of the which dwel onely men without the company of women, and is called the Ilande of men. And in the other dwell onely women, without men, and is called the Ilande of women. They are Christians and contract matrimonie. The women never come to the Ilande of men, but the men are accustomed to fyse the women once in the yeare, and tarye with them thre monethes continually, every man with his owne wife in his owne houfe : after which time they returne agayn to [t]her owne Ilande, where they remayne all the yere after. The women kepe the men children with them vntyll they bee xv. years of age, and then send them to their fathers. The women haue nought els to do, but to take charge of their children, and to gather certayne fruities. But the men labour and haue care how they may fynde their wyfe and chyldren. They are exercysed in fyshing, and sell fyshes both newe taken and olde dried, to marchaunte straungers, whereby they receaue great commodities.

C Of the greate Empyre of Cathay, being under the dominion of the great Cham (whiche some call the great Can) Emperoure of Tartaria, in olde tyme called Scythia.

The great Cham
of Tartaria



Famous cities
under the greate
Cham.

Manye wyues.
What naturall
affection may doe

A strange
custome

The people of
Cathay.

Idiotours.

Money of paper

He superiour or high *India*, whiche is nowe called *Cathay*, is a region exceeding large and of greate power, whose Emperour is ye great Cham of *Tartaria*, hauninge vnder him many Prouinces, people and Princes, and innumerable Ilandes in the great East sea, called the greate Ocean. He hath vnder his dominion great and famous citie, as are these: *Cambalu*, *Quenquinatu*, *Mien*, *Cacausu*, *Canglu*, *Tadinfu*, *Tingui*, and dyuers other. Among the people of this countrey, one man hath manye wyues, whiche declare their loue to their husbandes after this sort. When the husband is dead, every one of his wiues please their cause before a judge, to proue which of them was most louing to her husband and bespte beloved of him: so yat she which by the sentenc of the judges is found to haue been most faythful and diligente, decketh her selfe moste gorgiously in all her sumptuous araye, and procedeth like a *Virago* stoutly and cherfully to the fire, where the corps of her husbande was burnte, castinge her selfe into the same fyre, embrasing and kissing the dead bodi of her husband, vntyll she also be consumed by the fyre, whiche she reputeth for an honourable sepulture: whereas his other wyues are esteemed to lyue in shame and infamie. They ioyne in mariage, neyther in respect of riches or nobilitie, but onyl for loue and beautie: and rather for ye encrease of posterite, then for pleasure. There is also another straunge custome among these Indians: and yat is, that whereas the poorer sort are not able to geue any dowry with theyr doughters to mariage, they bringe them forth, even in ye floure of their age to ye market place, with trumpettes and such other instrumentes as they vse in the warres. Where, the multitude beyng called together, the maydes syrfe of all, discouere theyr backe partes, euen vp to the shoulders, and afterward theyr forepartes in lyke maners. And vpon this declaring their pouertie and nakednes, are maried to such as lyke them best. This people of *Cathay*, are of the nacion of them which in tyme past were called *Scythians*, a kind of men (as faith *Haitio*) of subtil wyt: affirming that onely they see with two eies, and that all other men besyde them are blind of the one eye. Theyr quickenes of witte is great, but their boasting is more. The hole nacion is perswaded that they greatly excel all other men in subteltie of wit and knowledge. The inhabitanentes are whyte men, with small eyes, without beardes, and vterly voyde of all godly knowledge. For some of them pray to the sunne, some to the mone, some to Images, some to an oxe, and some to other monstres of theyr phantastical superflucion. They haue no law written, and are of no faith. And albeit that in workmanship and artes they are marueylos wyttie, yet haue they no knowledge of dyuine or godly thinges. It is a timorous kynde of men, and greatly fearinge death. And are therefore in theyr warres, more politike then valient. In the warres, they vse arrowes, and certayne other kyndes of weapons vnknownen to men of other countreis. The monie which they vse, is made of a certayne paper, beeinge fourre square, with ye Kinges ymage printed theron. Theyr housholde stufie is

of golde and syluer and other metals. They haue greate scarcenes of oyle. The great Emperour of *Cathay*, keepeth his courte in the riche and mightie cytie called *Cambalu*, being the chefest citie of all the Empyre, and of such greatnessse that it conteyneth in circuite five leages. This citie is foure square, so that every quadrature or syde of the wall, hath in it thre principal portes or gates. Also in all the corners of the walles, are veri faire palaces, in which the artillery or armure of the cytie is refered. The stretes are made very streight and right forth: so that from any one gate to the other beinge directly ouer against the same, a man may se plainly through the cytie, hauing ye hou ses on every syde lyke palaces, placed in goodly ordre, most beautifull to behold. Without the cytie, there are twelve great suburbes, adherent to the xii. gates of ye cytie, whether the marchauntes and straungers, haue their continual recourse as to ye burse or strete. It can not be spoken what great abundaunce of marchaundise and riches is brought to [i]this citie: a man wold thinke that it were sufficient to serue all the worlde. Precious stones, pearlles, filke, and splices of dyuers kindes are brought therethen from *India* and *Mangi*, and other regions. There passeth not a daye in the year in which there are not about a thousand waynes laden with filke which are brought to this citie by straunge marchauntes. What greate pompe, glory, and forniture of all thinges, is obserued in the Emperours courte, it can not be spoken. He hath in his courte twelue thousand horsemen, whiche haue the custodie of his body: and distributetheir waytinge dayes after this order, yat whereas one of ye captaynes of this garison with his thre thousand foouldiers hath wayted vpon the kinges perfonne, three dayes, another captayne in lyke order wyth as manye menne succedeth in hys rowme for other three dayes, and lykewyse an other after hym, executethe the same offyce. When the Emperoure maketh anye bankette, it cannot be said what greate pompe is obserued. He hath sytting at his leste hand his chefest quene whom he most estemeth: and at his right hand hys sonnes, and siche as are of the kinges bloud: but thei syt somwhat lower and further of. The other noble men which wayte not, sytte in a place yet somewhat lower. All such as in the court syt at meat, vse none other drinking cuppes then of gold. The Princes whiche wayte on the Emperoure at hys meate, haue all theyr mouthes couered with fyne silken clothes, least in any cafe they shoulde blow or breath on the kinges meate or drinke. And when the Emperour lifteth vp his cup to drinke, al the musicones and minstrels that stand about him, playe on theyr instrumentes, while in the meane time all siche as wayte on hym, stoupe downe and make lowe curteisie. How greate honoure is exhibited to this Emperour, and howe many precious and riche presentes are offred vnto him by his Princes, Dukes, Leautenauntes and prefydentes of prouinces, and rulers of cities, no man is able to exprefse, forasmuche as he hath vnder him in maner innumerable Kingdomes, Prouinces, Nacions and Dominions, which are on every syde about *Cathay*, and acknowledge him to be theyr onelye Lorde and King, whom they honoure and reuerence as a great God and mighti Mahumet. In what pompe and triumphant magnifice he sheweth him self when he goeth to hauke or hunt, and how many tentes he pitcheth in the felde, which being fene a farre of, a man would thinke to be a greate cytie, he that defyreth to knowe, let him reade *Paulus Venetus*, in the second booke of hys nauigaciones into *India*, where he shal find thinges to marueyl at. In *Cathay* they make a pleafant drinke of ryce and certayne splices, which in drinking excelleth the swetenes of wine. In many places they haue great lacke of wood: In the stede wherof, they digge out of the mountaynes a certayn kinde of blacke stone whiche burne in the fyre like coles, and continue so long, that yf they be kyndled ouer night, they kepe fyre vnto the morning.

¶ Of certaine Prouinces and regions subiect under the dominion of the greate Cham Emperour of Cathay.



Here passeth through the kingdom of *Cathay*, a certayne greate ryuer called *Pulisachnites*, which emptieth it selfe in the great Ocean Sea, by the whiche ryuer, fyppes haue their passage into that lande. Ouer this ryuer is a very fayre bridge of marble, beyng in length three hundred pases, and in breadth, eighte pases, with xxiii. arches, and grauen Lions on every syde, adourning the rayles or highest margentes of the same. From hence it is not farre to the fayre and greate kingdom of *Tainfu*, in the which are many goodli vynes. For in the kingdom of *Cathay* there groweth no wyne, but is brought therethen from this region. In this kingdome is greate vse of marchaundise, and hath plentie of conning artificers, so that al the armure which the greate Cham vseth in his warres, is made there. Toward the region of *Mangi*, is situate the ryuer *Caromoram*, whiche for the greate breadth and depth, hath no bridge. In this region is greate abundaunce of Ginger, filke, byrdes, and speciallye Phefantes. Somewhat beyonde this, is the greate cytie of *Quenquinafu*, beyng the chief cytie of the same kingdome. In this region are founde many mufecattes. This beast in this countreye, is

Golde and Syluer.
The cytie of
Cambalu.

Marchandysse.

Precious stones
and splices.
Note.

The king of
Cathay his court

The Quene.

Golden plate.
Worldly glory.

A living Idol.

Paulus Venetus.
Drinke of rice and
splices.

Digged cole

A greate bridge of
marble.

The kingdome of
Tainfu.

Connyng artificers

Ginger.

Quenquinafu.
The muske catte.

but lyttle and fayre, abouthe the bignesse of a meane catte, with grosse heare lyke a harte, hausinge blunte clawes on his fete, with two longe teeth in the vpper iawe, and two in the nether iawe: and hath nere vnto the nauell a bladder full of a certayne matter like vnto bloud, being of wonderful fragrant fauoure, and is the true muske.

¶ Of the Prouince of Mangi, and merueylous cyties conteyned in the same.

Marchandyse.

Salte.

Sylke.

Cloth of golde.

Ryce.

vi. M [six thousand] bridges of stone.

The great citie of Quinsai.

xij. M. [twelve thousand] bridges of stone.

Artificers.

Marchauntes.

Common
banketinge houses.

A good prouision
against fyre.
Flesh of horses
extremitie.
A prouision
against rebellion.

Anthropophagi.

Hennes hausinge
heare in the stede
of fethers.



He Prouince of *Mangi*, hath in it many notable and great cities, in the whiche is great exercysse of marchaundysye: and specially in the citie of *Conigangui*, is folde great plentie of salt. In the cytie of *Panchi*, there is great sale of silke. In the cytie of *Sianfu*, is made great plentie of clothes of golde and silke. In the cytie *Singui* is a famous market where great abundance of marchaundisfe is brought by the ryuer. Nere vnto the citie of *Caigui*, groweth plentie of blade and ryce, that it is caried from thence to the court of the greate Cham. In ye citie of *Singui*, are numbered to be about fixe thousande bridges of stone, hausinge so highe arches, that greate shippes maye passe vnder the same without bowing downe of the mast. There is another citie called *Quinfai*, which is so fayre and great, that there is thought to be no bigger in al the worlde. It conteyneth in circuite, a hundredth Italian miles, which make xxv. leages. It hath twelue thousande bridges of stone, and those so highe that greate shippes with the mast standing vp right, maye passe vnder. This cytie is situate in a marisshe ground, muche lyke vnto venes. Therfore if they should lacke bridges, they could not passe ouer from the one syde of the streete to the other. It hath innumerable artificers and many marchauntes. The cytezins lyue pleasantly, and specially the women, which are fayrer then in other partes of *India*. Toward the South syde of the cytie, there is a great lake or poole within ye walles of the cytie, whiche conteyneth in circuite about. viii. leages, hausinge about the bankes therof many noble mens houfes, very fayre both without and within. In the middeste of this lake, there are two litle Ilandes and in euery of them a goodly palace, in ye which are referued al fuche ornamente and vesells as they vfe for theyr mariages and solemne feastes, for whereas any of the cytezins entendt to make any great banquet, or feast, they bring theyr gestes to one of these palaces, where they are honorably enterteined. In the stretes of ye citie, are certaine comon towres, into ye which, al such as dwell neare thereto, carie theyr goodes and stoffe, yf it so chaunce, yat fyre be in the citie. The inhabitanthes are Idololers: and eate the fleshe of horses and camels, and of other vncleane beastes. The greate Cham hath in this cytie a myghtie garison to the intente to auoyde rebellion, theste and murther. For on evry bridge there wayteth dayly and nightly. x. watchmen for the same purpse: and because the Prouince of *Mangi* is exceeding large, the greate Cham hath deuyded it into nyne Kingdomes, assyninge vnto evry one a peculiuer Kyng: whiche are al of greate powre, and yet subiecte to the greate Cham. One of them dwelleth in the citie of *Quinfai*. In thyss Prouince of *Mangi*, is an other Kyngdomme, called *Fugui*, in whiche the people eate mannes fleshe, so that they dye not of any disease. They drinke the bloud and eate the fleshe of such as are slayne in ye warres. There are hennes found in this region, which in the stede of fethers, haue heare much lyke cattes heare of blacke colour: And laye very goode egges.

¶ Of the region of Tangut, and of the great desertes, and voyces of deuyllcs hearde in the same, and of the Salamandra.

The way from Persia to Cathay.

The cytie of Lop.

The iorney by 3 :
desertes.

Bitter waterns.



Rom the Kingdome of Persia, there are two iourneyes to the region of *Cathay*. For either the south side must be obserued towarde *India*, or elles to passe by the provinces of Carcham, Cotam, and Peim, Northeastwarde to the citie of *Lop*, beyng the greatest and most notable cytie in all that region, lying betwene the East and the North at the entraunce at the great desert. In this cytie, al fuche marchauntes, as entendt to passe the desertes, make preparacion for all thinges necessarie for their yourneye: And rest in the same, vntill they are well prouided of strong asses and camels to carye there vitayles. And when in ye desert their vitayles begin to fayle them, they kyl their asses or leauue them there in the wyldernes, because they can no longer prouide them of pasture, vntyll they haue passed ouer the deserte. But they preferue theyr camelles, becuase they are susteyned wyth lesse meate, and beare greater burthens. In this deserte are often tymes founde bytter waterns: but more often fresshe and sweete waterns: so that in maner euery daye for the space of thyrtye dayes, a man maye fynde fresshe water, but that in so lytle quantitie that it doeth not suffice al the marchauntes whiche passe that waye together. That

blunte clawes
to the nauell
is the true

the same.

great exercys
ie of salt. In
the great plentie
great abundance
with plentie of
In ye citie of
the arches, that
her citie called
conteyneth in
one, and those
in a marisshe
from the one
the cytezins lyue
the South syde of
quite about. viii.
within. In the
which are refered
reas any of the
ces, where they
nich, al fuch as
The inhabitantes
at Cham hath in
ery bridge there
angi is exceeding
peculiar Kynge:
in the citie of
ole eate mannes
as are flayne in
much lyke cattes

of denuylls

of Cathay. For
y the provinces
nge the greatest
e North at the
entende to passe
And rest in the
e there vitayles.
em there in the
uer the deserte.
greater burthenes.
waters: fo that
but that in so
together. That

deserte is verye full of mountaynes. And when you are come to the lowe and playn ground, the residue of the iourney is all together by the fodes: it is throughout baren and saluage, so that it is not able to nourishe any beastes for lacke of pasture. In this wildernes are often tymes heard and fene, as well by daye as by night, fundris illusions of euyl spirates. And therefore suche as trauayle through the fame, haue nede to take great hede least they disfeuer or depart farre in fundre, or leaste any linger behynde his companie, awel for that he may hereby lose the sight of them by reaon of mountaynes or hilles, lyng beetwene, as also because there are heard voyces of deuyls, calling them that wander alone, by their proper names, conterfeyting the voyces of their companie that goeth befor, by this meanes withdrawing them from the right waye, and bringinge them to destrucion. There is often tymes heard in the ayre, as it were a noyse of musicall instrumentes: but more often like the sounde of drumslades or timbrels. This great desert being passed ouer, they come to the cytie called *Sachion*, which is situate in the enteruance of the grete Prouince of *Tangut*, where amonge certayne Mahumetistes, are found a fewe Christian men called *Neforiani* of the secte of *Nestorius*. There are also manye Idololters, hauinge their monasteries consecrated to dyuers Idols, to which they offre many sacrifices and attribute greate honor to deuyls. And when a man hath a sonne borne, he forthwith commendeth him to some Idol, in whose honoure he nourisheth a ramme al that yeaer, which after that his sonne be twelue monethes olde, at the nexte feaste of the same Idol, he and his sonne offre with many ceremonies. When this oblation is finisched, thei bringe the sacrificed fleshe to a place appoynted, where al his kinsfolkes being gathered together, they eate that fleshe with great religion, and kepe the bones reverently in a certayn vessell: but in the funeralles of the dead they vse these ceremonies and superfticions. Al the neighbors of the dead, prouide that the dead corps be burned: which custome all the people of the East partes do obserue. Yet some of them kepe ye dead bodye by them certayne dayes befor they burne it: As some, seuen daies: some for the space of a moneth and some sixe monethes, preparing for the fame a closte cheste, so inuoluinge with cereclothe, and pouderinge with spycys the bodye therein inclosed, that no euyl sauoure maye passe forth. Thys done, they paynte the cheste very curioslye, and couer it with a precious clothe, placing their dyninge table harde by the fame, where they dyne continually as long as the dead bodie is thus referued at home. And in the dyner tyme for the space of one hole houre, they fette wyne and meat vpon the cheste, supposing the soule of the dead bodye to be partaker of the fame. The Region of *Tangut*, is verye large, and conteyneth in it many priuate Prouinces, as the Prouince of *Camul*, of *Cinchital*, and *Suchur*, wthy dyuerse fayre Cyties, whiche are all Subiecte and obeye to the great Cham of *Cathay*. Some of the inhabitantes beleue in Mahumet: some acknowledge Christe after the herefye of *Nestorius*. In the land of *Chinchital*, is a Mountayne oute of the whyche is dygged the myne of stelle and Audanici. There is also founde the Serpente called *Salamandra*, which lyueth in the fyre wthyout any hurte. Of the heare of this serpent, is made a certayne cloth, which being cast in the fyre when it is foule, is thereby made cleane and very white if it remaine there for ye space of an houre. Such other innumerable and marueilous thinges, writh *Paulus venetus* that he hath fene and founde in his nauigacions into these partes: of whom also I haue gathered thus muche, lettinge passe manye other thinges whereof he speakeþ more at large.

**¶ Here endeth the descripcion of the Nauigacions
from Spayne to the newe India Eastward,
and foloweth**

*Of the newe Ilandes and India found in the West Ocean sea,
from Spayne Westward and Southweste.*

Illusions of euyl
spirates

Voices of deuyls.

Straunge noises
in the ayre.

The citie of
Sachion.
Christians
of the heresie
of *Nestorius*.
Monasteries of
Idololters.
A strange custome

Ceremonies in
funerals

A grosse and
wayne perswasyon

The region of
Tangut.

Mahumetistes.

Stelle.
Salamandra.

Paulus Venetus

**C Of the newe India,
and Ilandes in the West Ocean Sea,
how, when, and by whom they
were found.**

Christophorus Columbus.

Great enterprises
have euer ben
coueted
phantasticall.

The first viage
of Christophorus
Columbus.

The Ilandes
called *Gades*.
The Ilandes of
Canaria.

Iohanna.

*Hispana or
Hispaniola.*

Gold for earth
and glasse.

The king of the
Iland.
Bylding without
the vse of Iron.



Hристофорус Колумбус, a Gentleman of Italie, and borne in the citie of *Genua*, when he had been longe conuerfaunt in the Kyng of Spaynes courte, he applied hys mynde to seache vnknownen partes of the worlde. And for his better furtheraunce herein, made humble peticon to the kinge, to ayde him in this his enterpryse, which doubtlesse shoulde redownde to his great honour, and no little commoditie to all the hole countreye of Spayne, yf by his helpe and charges, he might fynde new regions. But the Kinge and Quene laughed him to scorne, saying: that his ymaginacion was but vayne and phantaſticall. At the length, eyght yeares beyng passed ouer, and *Columbus* styll persyntinge in his purpose and fute, the Kyng began to geue eare to his talke, and after muche reaſoninge and debating of the matter, determined to trie the witt of the manne. And there vpon commaunded a foyst and two brigantines to be furnished with all kynde of ordinaunce and vitalyes: which being prepared, the syrft of September, in the yere of Christ 1492, *Columbus* departed from the coaftes of Spayne, and wente forwarde in his viage longe defyred. And when he had passed the Ilandes called *Gades*, he diuerted toward the fortunate Ilandes called *Insulae Fortunatae*, which are now called *Canarie*, becaufe they are full of dogges. They were in time past called *Fortunate*, for the excellente temperatenes of the ayre, and greate fruytfulnes. *Columbus* departinge from henfe, fayled towarde the Weſte, and at the length founde certayne Ilandes, of the whiche two were very greate, wherof the one he called *Hispana*, and the other *Iohanna*.

C Of the two Ilandes *Iohanna* and *Hispana*.



S *Columbus* came to the Ilande whiche he called *Iohanna*, he hearde a merueylos sweete noyse of innumerable byrdes, and especiallye of Nightingales whiche wandred in the thicke wooddes in the Moneth of Nouembre. He founde also mooste fayre Ryuers, fwete to drinke, and many goodly haunes. And as he fayled by the costes of the Ilande Southweſte warde, and coulde fynd no ende, he thought it had been the mayne land, and therfore determinyd to drawe backe, being partly enforſed by roughnes of the ſea: and thus returning ſome what Eaſtward, he came to an Iland whiche he afterwarde called *Hispana*, where arriuing to the land, he and his companye was fene of the Inhabitantes of the Iland, which ſodeinly fled into the thicke wooddes: whom the Spaniardes purfewinge, toke a womanne whome they brought to theyr ſhippe, entreatinge her verye gentillye, fillinge her with delicate meates and wyne, and cloþing her in fayre apparel, and ſo let her depart: for thei goe naked, and are not vfed to delicates. And as this womanne returned to her companye, ſome beyng moued by the lyberalitie declared vnto her, came by greate multitudes to the ſea banckes, bringinge golde with them, which they chaunged for earthen pottes, and drinkinge glaſſes. Thus a further frendſhip by this meanes contracted, the Spaniardes begonne more diligently to ſearche theyr maner of lyuinge and maners, and ſo vnderſtoode that they had a king. And therefore entering further into the Iland, they were honorably receyued of the king. The vewyde their houſes, and merueyled to ſee them ſo bylded without the vſe of Iron, which they are vtterly without: in the ſtede wherof they vſe a certeyn ſtone, wherwith the cut and fawe theyr timbre.

¶ Of the people called Canibales or Anthropophagi, which are accustomed to eate mans fleshe.



Heras the people of the forenamed Ilandes, fled at the sight of our menne, the caufe thereof was, that they suspected them to haue been *Canibals*, that cruel and feare people which eate mans fleshe, which nacion our men had ouerpaffed, leauir ge them on the southfyde. But after they had knowledge of the contrary, they made greuous complaunt to our men, of the beaulty and feare maners of these *Canibales*, which were no leſſe cruel agaynst them, then the Tyger or the Lyon agaynst tame beastes. Declaring furthermore, yat when foouer they take any of them vnder the age of xiiiij. yeares, they vſe to gelde them, and francke them

*Canibales
Anthropophagi.*

vntyll they be very fat, as we are wont to doe with capons or hennes: and as for fuche as drawe towarde. xx. yeare olde, to kyll them forthwith and pull out theyr guttes, and eate the same freshe and newe, wyth other extreme partes of the bodye, poudering the residue with salt, or keping it in a certayne pickle as we do igeottes or fanfages. Yet eate they not the women, but referue them to encrease, as we doe hennes to lay egges. And if they take any old women, they kepe them for drudges. And therfore when the *Canibales* make incursion, the people of these Ilandes flye with all spedē. For albeit they vſe arrowes, yet are they not able to resylte their feares.

The fearesnes of
the *Canibales*.

Mans fleshe
powdered.

¶ Of the maners of the inhabitantes of the Iland of Hispana and of fuche thynges as are found there.



He inhabitantes of this Ilande, vſe in ye stede of bread, certayne rotes like vnto nauie rotes, haung the taſt of soft and grene cheſtnuttes. Gold with them is in estimacion, for they hange certayne peces therof at their eares: they go not out of ye limittes of their own contrie, nor exercife any marchandise with strangers: thei gather gold in ye fandes of a certen riuere which springeth out of veri high montaines. They gather it with great laboure and melte it and caste it, fyſte into maſſes or wedges, and afterwarde into brode plates. They haue no foure foted beastes, except connies: they haue ſerpentes of monſtrous greatnes, but without herte or venime. They haue alſo wylde turtle doues and duckes, muſche greater then ours, and geſe whyter then ſwannes, fauing yat they haue redde headeſ. Thei haue alſo many popingaiyes: ſome grene, ſome yellowe, and ſome not muſche vnylike them of India, with redde circles about their neckes. This Iland bringeth forth alſo *Maflix*, *Aloe*, and fuche other gummes: and eſpecially certayne redde graynes, which are sharper then pepper.

Rootes in ye
ſtede of bread
Gold in estimacion.

Howe golde is
gathered.

Serpentes wythowt
venime.

Popingaiyes.

Spices and
Gummes.

¶ How Columbus, after he had found new Ilandes, returned agayne to Spayne, where preparinge a newe nauie, he tooke his viage to ye Canibales.



olumbus, not a little ioyeful of the landes newly found, the ſpring tyme drawing nere, he determined to returne to his countrye: leauing with the king of the Ilande, 38. men which ſhould diligently ſearche the ſituacion of the Ilande, the maners of the people, and the natures of trees and fruites. But he, hoyſeninge vp his fayles, directed hys viage towarde Spayne, bringing with him tenne menne of the ſayd Ilande, to th[e]lende that they mighte learne the Spaniſhe tongue, which they mighte eaſely doe, becaufe al the wordes of theyr language may well be written with our letters. *Columbus*, after thys his returnde, and fortunate ſuccesse in his fyſte viage, was honorably receyued of the Kynge and Quene, and greatlye magnified with innumerable glorious titlles: willinge that he ſhould no more thenceforth be cailed *Columbus*, but the Admiral of the great Ocean ſea: and prepared for him towarde his ſecond viage. xvij. ſoſites and. xij. brigantines, wel furnished with al kynd of artillerye and plentie of vitayles, and in them twelve hundredth men wel appoynted:

The Indian tong
Columbus, at his
returnde, is made
Admiral of the
Ocean ſea.

The ſecond viage
of *Columbus*.

Gades.
The Ilandes of
Canaria.

The Iland of
Dominica.

Insula Crucis.
Lisertes.

Houses of trees.

Young men stalled
to be made fatte.

Fyne cokerye.

*Canibales allured
wyth lyberalite.*

*Matinina An
Iland of women
onlye.*

The names of
sundry Ilandes.

Arrowes infected
with venime.

Archipelagus.
Buchema

Corne also to sowe, and al kindes of seedes and plantes. For, excepte pine apple trees and date trees, there growe none in these Ilandes that are knownen to vs. The Admirall toke also with him al sortes of Iron tooles to th[e] intent to byld townes and fortrefes where his men might lye in safegarde. Therfore the first day of September departing from the Ilandes called *Gades*, with a prosperous wind he arryued at the Iland of *Canaria* the fyfth daye of October: from whence directing his viage towarde the lefte hande, he sayled toward ye South, and at ye length came to the Ilandes of the *Canibals*. And because he came thereth on the Sundaye called the Dominical day, he called the Iland where he arryued, *Dominica*: which when he perceyued to be but saluage and rude, he sayled on further: and in twentie dayes sayling, came to another Iland replenished with al kindes of trees, from which came a marueylous fragrant fauour: By reasoun whereof, some being allureed by the pleasantnes of the place, went aland, where they sawe no kynde of lyuinge beatles, sauinge lytertes of wonderful hodge greatness. This Ilande he called *Insula Crucis*, whiche was also an Ilande of the *Canibales*, as afterward they proued in dede. For as they sayled about the Iland, they founde certayne lowe cotages made of trees, lyke vnto flagies. For they set trees vpright in order round about, fastening postes in them croffe ouer, where vnto the trees cleaue faste, so that by this meanes they cannot fall. They frame the roofes of these cotages, with sharpe toppes after the maner of rownde tentes. And last of al, th y inclose and couer these trees thus set in order, wyth the leaues of date trees, and certen other trees, to th[e] intent to make them a stronger defence agaynst wynd and wether. And within the cotage, they tye the postes together with ropes of bombaghe cotton, and a certayne longe roote. They haue couches made, one aboue another, the floweres whereof they strawe wyth heye and cotton. And as foone as they hadde spied our men, they fled incontinent. And when oure men came into their houses, they found in them certayne young men bound to postes, and kept to be made fatte, and lykewyfe many olde womanne whiche these *Canibales* kepte to be their drudges. They founde there also earthen vesselles of all sortes, in which they fodde mens fleshe with popingayes, geefe, and duckes fleshe, al together in one vessell. They rostid also mans fleshe vpon spyttes, referueng the bones of the armes and legges, whiche they vse in the stede of Iron, to piece and typpe their arrowes. For they are vtterlye without Iron. They found also the head of a yong man, yet bleding and fastened to a poste. But certayne womanne whiche had fledde from the *Canibales* to oure menne, the Admirall commaunded to be gorgioufly decked after the maner of our women, and with manye rewardes to be sent agayne to their owne companye. By meanes whereof, the *Canibales* beyng allureed by the lyberalitie and gyftes of our men, hoping that they also shoulde be lykewyfe rewarded, came running toward our men: but when they drew somwhat nere vnto them, they fled immediatly into the nexte wooddes. And thus our men departing from thence, returned to the Ilande of *Hispina*.

¶ How the Admirall passed manye Ilandes, and what thynges chaunced to hym and his compagnie in that viage.



S the Admirall departed from the Iland of the *Canibales*, and went foreward on his viage, he passed by many Ilandes: among the whiche was one called *Matinina*, in whyche dwel only women, after the maner of them, called *Amazones*, as he learned of the men of the Ilandes which he brought with him into Spayne at his fyfthe viage, and sauad them from the fearsenes of the *Canibales*. He passed also innumerable other Ilandes of which to some he gaue names, as *Mons Farratus*, *Sancta Maria rotunda*, *Sancta Martinus*, *Sancta Maria antiqua*, and *Sancta Crux*. Into the which oure men entering to th[e] intent to fetche freshe water, found fourre *Canibales*, which had taken fourre yonge women: who, as foone as thei had spied our men, wringed their handes, feming therby to defyre ayde of oure men: at whose coming to defryuer them, the men fled into the wooddes and left the women. Shortly after, our men saw a bote coming on the sea with. viij. men and as many women: with whom oure men bickeringe lost one of theyr companions, by reason that these barbariens are accustomed to infecte theyr arrowes with venime: yet oure men preuyaled and flewe parte of them, and broughte the refydue by forse to the Admyrall. As they departed from hence, they found many other Ilandes, but such as they could not come to for the roughnes of the sea and multitude of rockes. But some of the smalleff brigantines which drewe no great depth, went somewhat nearer, and noumbred aboue seuen and fortie Ilandes, and called the place *Archipelagus*. Sayling from hence, they found another Iland called *Buchema*, into the whiche ye *Canibales* make sundry incursions, by reason wherof the inhabitantes are at continual warre with them. Thus at the length, the Admirall with his hole nauie returned to the Iland of *Hispina*: but in an euyl tyme. For they which he hadde lefte there for a

treess, there
Iron tooles
first day of
of *Canaria*
d ye South,
e called the
but saluage
th al kindes
the pleasant-
erful houdge
ward they
trees, lyke
where vnto
cotages, with
s thus set in
nger defence
bagge cotton,
f they strawe
ad when oure
ot to be made
founde ther
cken fleshe, al
es and legges,
without Iron.
menne whiche
cked after the
By meanes
ey also shoulde
to them, they
to the Ilande

garrison, were all dead: as were also they whiche he toke with him from the same Ilande into Spayne to vfe them for intrepertours. Of whiche seuen dyed by chaunge of the ayre. One of them was permitted of the Admirall to departe, when the nauie came neare to hys countrey. The residue stole awaie priuelye, and swamme to lande: but the Admirall doubting whether all his men were dead or no, whiche he leste in the Iland, commaunded certayne ordinance to be shot of, that by the noyse thereof they myghte haue warning to come forth, yf any laye luringe in corners: but none appeared, whose fatall dayes had synfished theyr lyfe. At the length, the kyng of the Ilande beyng thereto enforfed, declared the hole matter to the Admyrall as well as he coulde by interpetours: affyrming that there were in the Iland other Kynges besyde him: and of greater power then he, which were sore offendred that the Spaniardes hadde subdued the Ilandes: and in reuenge therof, came to the towre where the Spaniardes lay, which they ouercame and burnt, and slew al the men therin: and that he also at the same confilte, taking part with our men, was sore wounded with an arrow on the arme, for the better tryall whereof he bore hys arme in a towell, because it was not yet hole of that wounde. But shortelye after they had knowledge, that the King syayn this tale: so that he hardly escaped the handes of the Admiral, who was determinyd wy' some kynd of punishment to haue examined him further. But he suspecting the matter, fled into ye inner partes of the Iland, declaring therby, that he was the destruction of our men: whom, certayn of our companie, pursuinge, founde manye marueilous thinges: and especialey ryuers in whiche is founde muche golde, and a mountayne, whose fande is sparkled with gold. In this place, the Admiral bylded a citie, which he compassed about with a walle. And departing from hence, he searched almost all the Iland: in ye inner partes wherof he bylded a towre, and named it S. Thomas towre, whiche he made to the intent that he might the more safely searche out the secretes of so plentifull a region, and especially the gold mines of the same: and thus leauinge a garrison there, he departed, takinge with him three foystes, wherwith he sayled to seke newe Ilandes, and came first to the Ilande of *Cuba*, and from thence to *Jamaica*, being greater then *Sicilia*, very fruytfull and wel inhabited. Which, when he had vewed, he departed from thence, and sayled about the sea costes where he sawe innumerable other small Ilandes, standinge so thicke, that the ship was in maner borne a lande: and was therfore enforfed to returne home, the same way which he came.

Chauge of ayre
is daungerous.

The king
dissembleth with
the Admynral.

Goldefound in
rivers and
mountaines.

The Ilandes
of *Cuba* and
Jamaica.
A multitude of
Ilandes

The crueltie of the
Christian men

Crueltie of
couetousnes.

Bread of rotes.

The tribute of
the barbarians

Disobedience
foloweth Idlenes

Note.

*Bartholomeus
Columbus.*



C How the Spaniardes abused the submision and frendesthippe of the inhabitantes of the Ilandes.

N this meane tyme, the Spaniardes which the admiral had left in the Iland of *Hispina*, had euill entreated the inhabitauntes: so that for wante of vitayles and foode, they begonne to famyne: imputinge the fault hereof vnto the Christian men, which had digged vp al the rootes wherwith thei were accustomed to make theyr bread. And whereas they yet per ceaved, that ye Christien men intended to continue there, thei sent an ambassiadour to the admiral to desyre him to restrayne the outragiousnes and crueltie of his men, at whose handes they sustaineid such iniuries and violence, as they scarcely loked for at the handes of mortal enemies. Declaringe further, that vnder the pretence of feking for gold they committed innumerable wronges and mischievous actes, spoyling in maner all the hole region: and that for the auoyding of such enormities and oppresions, they hadde rather paye tribute, then to be thus dayly vexed with incursions, and never to be at quiete. Vpon this complaynte it was agreed, that they shoulde paye yearlye tribute to the Christian king and that they should applie them selues to gather and encrease theyr rotes, whiche were to them in the stede of flowre and wheat, and so confunmed that with great labour they coulde scarcely synde any in the wooddes. They payde therefore for their tribute, every thre monethes, certayn pound weightes of gold: but fuche as had no gold, payde spyces, and gossampine cotton. In the meane time the Spaniardes, who shoulde haue been occupied in digging for golde, gaue them selues to play, wantonnes and idlenes, contemning, and falling into hatered with their governour, by which theyr licentiousnes, the people of the Iland beyng prouoked, became more disobedient and wyld, degenerating from al kind of honestie and faithfulness: yea ye spaniardes also became so negligent in feking for gold, yat sometyme the charges exceeded the gaynes. Neuerthelesse in the yere of Christ, 1501. they gathered within ye space of two monethes twelue thousand poundes weyght of golde. But the Admirall appoyntinge his brother *Bartholomeus Columbus*, to be governour of the Iland, he in the yere, 1495. determined to returne to Spayne, to certifie the kyng of al these matters. In which viage, he manfullye defended him self in battayl against the rebelles of certayne other Ilandes which had confyred agaynst the Spaniardes.

C How the Portugals sought new Ilandes in the East partes, and how they came to Calicut.



The bishon of
rome deuideth ye
world.
Hesperides or
Caput ueride.
How the
Spaniardes and
ye Portugales
deuided the world
between them.

Gold and Pearles
The Equinoctial
lyne.
The ryuer of
Ganges.
Calicut.
Taprobana.
Samotra.
The great cytie
of *Malacca*.
The region of
Sinamis.
The Ilandes of
Moluca.
Saying into the
East by the west
The roundnes of
the earth.
The fyre land
Spices
The viage from
the West vnto
the East.

America.
The fyre land.
Regio
Baccalarum.
Terra Florida.

The king of
spayne sendeth
fourth shippes.
The viage of
Magellanuſ by
the west into ye
east.
The Ilandes of
Moluca

The Ilandes of
canaria.

Promotorium S.
Marie.
Canibales

The eleuation of
the south pole. 46
degrees
The Region of
giuantes

In this meane tyme that ye Spaniardes foughte newe and vnknownen landes in the West partes, the Portugales attempted to doe the same in the Easte partes. And least one of them should be a lette or hinderaunce to the other, they deuyded the world betwene them by the authorties of the Bifhop of Rome, Alexander the vi. of that name. And that on this condicione, that from the Ilandes called *Hesperides* (whiche are now called *Caput ueride*) the one should fayle Westwarde, and the other towarde the South pole, thus deuyding the world betwene them in two equal partes. So that whatsoeuer vnknownen landes shoulde be discouered in the Easte partes, the same to be dewe to the Portugales: And all suche as shoulde be founde in the Wele partes, to appertayne to the Spaniardes. Whereby it came to passe, that the Spaniardes, euer by the South, fayled into the Weste, where they founde a large mayne land, with Ilandes great and litle innumerable, hauing in them great plentie of golde and pearlyes, and other great riches. But the Portugales, by the Southe, and coftes of the Ilandes called *Hesperides*, and *Equinoctial lyne*, and *Tropicus Capricorni*, came into ye East, by the goulfe called *Sinus Persicus*, even vnto the coftes of India, within the riuier of *Ganges*, wheras is now the great market towne, and kingedom of *Calicut*. And from thence to the Iland of *Taprobana*, (now called *Sumatra*, *Zamara* or *Samotra*) and so forth to *Aurea Chersonesus*, wheras is nowe the great cytie of *Malaccha*, beyng one of ye most famous market townes of al ye East partes. From *Malaccha*, they entered into a great goulfe, by which they came to the region of *Sinarum*. Not farre from *Malaccha*, are the Ilandes called *Moluca*, in which al kyndes of spycys growe and are brought to the cytie of *Malaccha*. But the Spaniardes hauing knowledge what greate covamoditi the Portugales had receyued by the Ilandes of *Moluca* attemp[pt]ed to prove if they also might find the fame Ilandes in sayling fo farre Westward that they myghte at the length by West and southwest come into the East, as by good reasoun they presupposid the roundnesse of the earth would permitte, if they were not otherwyse lette by the fyrmre or mayne land lyng in the waye and stoppinge their passage, whereof as yet was no certeyntie knownen. And this dydde they to th[e] intent that by this meanes they myghte more easelye and wylle lesse charge bringe spycys from thence into Spayne. Therefore, the maner of this viage was, that they shoulde fayle from the Weste, vnder the loweft hemispherye or halfe compasse of the earth, and so to come into the East. A thinge surelye that myghte seeme verye harde to attempte, becuase it was vncertaine whether that, most prudente and beneficiall nature, (who worketh al things with most high prouidence) had not fo deuided and seperated the East from the West, partly by sea, and partly by land, that there might by this way haue been no passage into the East. For it was not yet knownen, whether that great region of *America*, (whiche they call the fyrmre or mayne lande) dyd seperate the Weste sea from the East: But it was founde that that fyrmre lande extended from the West to the South. And that also towarde the North partes were found two other regions, whereof the one is called *Regio Baccalarum*, and the other *Terra Florida*: which, if they were adherent to the fayde fyrmre land, there could be no paſſage by the Weste seas into the East India, forasmuch as ther was not yet founde any strayghte of the sea, wherby any enteraunce myghte be open into the East. In this meane while, the kynge of Spayne beyng elected Emperoure, prepared a nauie of fyue shippes, ouer the whiche he appointed one *Magellanuſ* to be captayne, commaundinge him that he shoulde fayle toward the coftes of the fayd fyrmre land, dyrectinge his viage by the south partes thereof, untyl he had eyther found the ende of the same, or elſe come streyghe therby he myghte passe to thoſe odoriferous Ilandes of *Moluca*, fo famously spoken of for the great abundaunce of swete sauours and spicies founde therein. The shippes therefore, beyng well furnished with all thinges necessarie, *Magellanuſ* departinge from Ciuite in Spayne, the tenth day of Auguft, in the year of Christ. 1519. came fyrt to ye Ilandes of *Canaria*, and from thence to ye Ilandes called *Hesperides*: from whiche dyrectinge hys course betwene the West and the East toward the fayd fyrmre land, in few dayes with prosperous sayling, he discouered a corner or poyn特 of the fayd mayne land, called *Promotorium S. Marie*, where the people dwell, called *Canibales*, whiche are accuſomed to eate mans fleshe. From hence he fayled on southwarde by the long tracte of this fyrmre land, which reacheth fo fare into ye south and extendeth fo many degrees beyond ye circle called *Tropicus Capricorni*, yat the south pole (called pole Antartike) is there eleuated fortie and fyxe degrees. And thus beyng brought into the East, they saw certayn Indians gathering shel fyfhes by the ſea banckes: beyng men of very high stature, clothed with beaſtes ſkinnes. To whom, wheras certayne of the Spaniardes went a land, and ſhewed them belles and paynted papers, they begon to daunce and leape aboue the Spaniardes, with a rude and murmuring ſonge. At the length there came three other, as though they

were ambassadours, whiche by certayn signes desyred ye Spaniardes to go with them further into the land, making a countenaunce as though thei wold intertayn them wel, where vpon, ye captyne *Magellanuſ* fent with them. vii. men well instructed, to th[e]inten to fearche ye region and maners of the people. And thus they went with them into ye deserthes, wher they came to a low cotage couered with wylde beastes skinnes, hauing in it two manfions, in one of ye which were women and children and in the other only men. They interteined their gestes after a barbaros and beastly maner, whiche neuertheles femed to them princelike : for they killed a beast, not much unlike a wylde aſſe, whose fleſſe (but halfe rotted) they fet before our men, without any other kind of meat or drinke. Here were our men of necellite constrained to lye al night vnder these skinnes, by reaſon of the great abundaunce of ſnowe and wynde. And when it was day, our men were very earnest with them, and would in maner haue enforſed them to goe with them to the ſhippe: which thing thei perceauing, couered them ſelues from the head to the foote with certayn horrible beaſtes skinnes, and paynted their faces with fundrye colours. Thus taking their bowes and arrowes, and bringing with them other of theiſr compaie, of much greater ſtature and terrible aſpect, then they were, they ſhewed them ſelues to oure men in araye, as though they were ready to fight. But the Spanyardes, whiche thoughte that the matter would haue comen to hand ſtrokēs, commaunded a piece of ordinaunce to be froſte of. The which although it dyd no hurte, yet theſe hardy giauntes, which a little before femed to be as bold as though they durſt haue made warre againſt Jupiter, were by the noyſe thereof put in ſuche feare, that they forthwith beganne to entreate for peace. Our men intended to haue brought ſome of theiſr Giauntes with them into Spayne for the ſtraungenes of the thinge: but they all eſcaped oute of theiſr handeſ. *Magellanuſ* therfore vnderſtandinge that it were vnprofytable to tarie there any longer, and that alſo the ſea was very rough, and the wether ſtormie and boyſteſ[r]ous, and that furthermore the firme lande extended further toward the ſouth, in ſo muche, that the further they fayled that waye, they ſhould fynde it ſo muſch ye colder, he deferred his proceeding vnto [in?] the moneth of may, at whiche tyme, ye ſharpenes of winter, excedeth with them, when as with vs, ſommer is begon. He found there greate plentie of wood. The ſea alſo miniftrid vnto them greate abundaunce of ſheſhife, beſide other fyfhes of fundrie kyndes. He found lykewyſe many ſpringes of freſhe and holeſome waters: and vſed huntinge and taking of ſoules. Only bread and wyne, was lackiſge in the ſhippe. The ſouth pole was there eleuated forte degrees.

Cotages couered
with beaſtes
skinnes.

Onager.

Abundance of
ſnowe and wynde.

The Giauntes are
putte to flight.

Extreme winter
in maye.

The ſouth pole
eleuated degrees.

¶ How Magellanuſ by a ſtrayght or narrow arme of the ſea, ſayled by the weſt into the Eaſt to dyuers Ilandes: where alſo he was fayne.



He wynter ſw being paſt, the. xxiiij. day of Auguſt, *Magellanuſ* departed from the place aſoreſayde, and ſtill followed the traſte of the firme land toward the ſouth, vntyl at the length, the. xxvi. day of Nouember, he found in that firme land, certayn open places lyke vnto ſtrayghtes or narrow feas. Into the which entring with his nauie, he commaunded that certayn ſhippes ſhould fearche the goufes on eueryc fyde, yf anye way or paſſage might be found into the Eaſt. At the length, they found a certayn depe ſtraiſt, by the which they were perfwaded yat there was enteraunce into ſome other mayne ſea, infomuch that *Magellanuſ* attempted to fearche ye fame. This ſtraiſt was found to be ſomtime of ye breth of the Italian myles, fometyme ſtwo, and ſomtime of tenne, and reached ſomwhat toward the Weſt. The altitude or eleuation of the ſouth pole in this place, was founde to be. iii. degrees. They coulde ſee no people ſtering in the coſtes of this entraunce Therfore *Magellanuſ* ſeing thys lande to be rough and ſalage, and vnpleafaut to abide in, by reaſon of extreme cold, he thought it not worthye the trauayle, to ſpend any time in ferching the fame. Therfore failing forward in his viage thus attempted by ye ſaid ſtrayghte, (which is now caſled the ſtrayght of *Magellanuſ*) he was therby brought into another mayne ſea, verye greate and large. The length of this ſtrayght or narrow ſea, is eſtemed to be a hundredth ſpaniſh miles. The land which he had on his right hande, he doubted not to be mayne lande: and that on the leſt hand, he ſuppoſed to bee Ilandes. *Magellanuſ* fawe lykewyſe the firme lande to be extended directly toward ye North: wherefore letting paſſe that great lande, he fayled by that greate and large ſea betwene the Weſt and the North: and that for this intente, that at the length he might by the Weſt come into the Eaſt, and agayne vnder the burning lyne caſled *Zona Torrida*, beyng well auſſured that the Ilandes of *Molucca* (which he foughte) were in the Eaſte, and not farre from the *Equinoctial* lyne. When they hadde thus fayled forte dayes, and came now agayne vnder the line or circle caſled *Tropicus Capricorni*, they founde two lytle Ilandes inhabyted, but very barren, and therfore caſled them infortunate Ilandes. Departinge from thence they failed on for a great ſpace, and found a certayne Ilande which ye inhabitants caſled

The ſtrayght of
Magellanuſ.

The altitude of
the ſouth pole. iii.
degrees.

The main ſea
beyond the
ſtrayghtes.

The firme lande.

The burning line
Torrida Zona.
The Ilandes of
Molucca
Tropicus
Capricorni.

The Iland of
Inuagana.
The Ilandes of
Gades called
Cales Males.
Archipelagus.
Acatan.
Selani.

Mazzana.
Subuth.
Bread of the
trunkes of trees.
Drinke of the
dropping of date
trees.
Golde and Ginger.
Magellanis is
slayne.

The new
captaine *Serranus*
is betrayed of his
bondman.

The king of
Subuth com-pyreth
agaynst the
Spaniardes.

The captayne
Serranus is taken
prisoner.

The Ilandes of
Gibeth and *Porne*.
Siloli.

Peace and Idlenes.

Bread of Rice

Camphire

Pearles as bigge
as turtle doves
egges.

A maruelous big
shellfish

Gilone.
Men with
hanging eares.

Inuagana, where ye eleacion of the Northe pole, (called pole Artike) was. xij. degrees: And the length from the Ilandes called *Gades*, by the Weste, was iudged to bee. c.lviii. [one hundred and fifty-eight] degrees. Thus proceeding, they saw dyuers other Ilandes, and that so manye, that they supposed they had been brought into a great sea lyke vnto that called *Archipelagus*, where with synges and poyntinges (as the dumme are wont to speake with the dumme) they asked of these Indians, the names of the Ilandes, whereby they learned that thei were in *Acatan*, and not farre from the Ilande called *Selani*, wel inhabited and replenished with abundance of al thinges necessarie for the commodities of this life. Sayling therfore toward the Ilande of *Selani*, thei were with a contrary wind drieuen on the Iland of *Mazzana*, from whence they came to the greate Iland of *Subuth*, where ye Spaniardes were wel enterteyned of the Kinge of the Iland, wher brought them into a certayn cottage, and set before them fuch delicates as he hadde. Theyr bread, was of the trunke of a certen tree, cut in pieces, and fried with oyle. Theyr drinke was of the humoure or ioyse which droppeth out of the braunches of the date trees, when they are cutte. Theyr meate was fuche as they take by soulinge, with such fruities as the contree brought forth. This Ilande was very riche of gold and ginger. In these partes *Magellanis* made warre agaynst the inhabitauntes of certayne other Ilandes: In whiche conflicte, the spaniardes hauing the ouerthrow *Magellanis* was slayne with seuen of hys men. When the Spaniardes hadde thus lost their captayne, they elected a new gouernour of their nauie, appointing one *Johannes Serranus* to that office. *Magellanis* had also a bondman borne in the Ilandes of *Molucca*, whom he had bought in the citie of *Malaccha*. This bondman vnderstode the Spanihe tongue: and where as the captayne *Serranus* could do nothing without him, who now lay sicke by reaon of the wounds which he had receaved in the faid conflicte, so that he was fayne to speake sharplye to him and threaten to beat him or he could geat him out of the shyppe, he here vpon conceaued so great hatered and indignacion agaynst the Spaniardes, that he wente immediately to the Kinge of *Subuth*, declaring the couetousnes of the Spaniardes to be vnsaciablie, and yat thei wold shortely vs crueltie against him also, and bring him into subiecction and feruitude. The barbarous king beleued his wordes, and therwith puyelye with the ayde of the other Ilandes, conspired against the Spaniardes, and toke or flew as many of them as came to a banket whereunto they were bidden vnder pretence of frendship. Among the which also, *Serranus* the Captaine was taken priesoner. But the refydue of the Spaniardes which remayned in the shippes, beying taught and warned by the euyll chaunce which befell to their companions, and fearing greater deceytes and confiracies, lyft vp their ankers and gane wind to their fayles. In the meane tyme was *Serranus* brought bound to the sea banckes, desiring his companions to deluyer or redeme him from that horrible captiuitie of hys enemies. Put the Spaniardes, albeit they toke it for a dishonour, to leau or forfiske their Captayne, yet fearing fraude or further dissimulacion, they fayled afyde from that Iland, and came to the Ilandes of *Gibeth* and *Porne*. In this mayne sea, were two great Ilandes, wherof the one was called *Siloli*, and the other *Porne* the leffe, where our men were wel entreated. The inhabitanthes of *Porne* honoure the funne and the mone: they kepe also a certayn ciuile iustice and frendly loue one to another. And aboue all thinges, desyre peace and yldenes. Therfore their chiefe studie is, in no case to molest their neyghbours or straungers, or to be iniurios to anye man. They haue lyttle houses, made of earth and wood, and couered partly with rubbishe, and partly with ye bowes of date trees. They take as manye wyues as they are able to kepe. Theyr comon meat, is such as they take by soulinge or fiffhinge. They make bread of ryce: and drinke, of the liquor whiche droppeth from the braunches of date trees, cutte. Some vse marchaudyse in the Ilandes nere about them: some applie them selues to huntinge and fysching, and some to husbandy. Theyr apparell, is of Gofflampie cotton. They haue greate abundance of camphire, ginger and cinomome.

¶ How the Spaniardes came to the Ilandes of Molucca, and of the people with great hanging eares.



He Spaniardes takinge their leaue of the king of *Porne*, departed: dyrecting theyr viage towarde the Ilandes of *Molucca*, whiche were shewed vnto them by the same King. They came fyrt to the costes of the Ilande called *Solo*, where are found Pearles as bygge as turtle doves egges: but they are gathered in the depth of the sea. The inhabitanthes of this Ilande, at fuche tyme as the Spaniardes came thereth, toke a shellysse of fuche houdige bignes yat the fleshe therof wayed. xlviij. pound weyght. Wherby it is apparaunt yat great pearles shoulde be found there forasmuch as pearles are the byrth of certayn shelfishes.

From hence thei came to the Iland of *Gilone*, in which are certayn people hauing hanging eares of such length, that they hang downe to theyr shouolders. Wherat as the Spaniardes marueyled, the men

of the Iland tolde them, that not farre from thence was another Iland in which were a kind of men, not onely with hanging eares, but also with eares of fuche breadth and length, that with one of them they myghte couer theyr hole head. But the Spanyardes, who foughte for gold and spycs, and not for monsters, fayled dyrectly to the Ilandes of *Moluca*, where they arryued, the eyghe roneth after the death of their governour *Magellanuſ*. These Ilandes are fyue in noumber, the names wherof are these *Tharant*, *Muthil*, *Thedori*, *Mare*, and *Mathien*. Some of them are sytuate on thys syde the *Equinoctiall* lyne, fome vnder it, and some beyonde it. Some beare cloues, some Nutmegges, and some Cinomome. They are not farre distaunt the one from the other. They are but little and narowe. The inhabitantes are very poore, because ther is no encrease of anye other thinge sauing onely of spycs. They lyue with bread and fyſhe, and sometime popingaiyess. They lurke in lowe cotages: And in fyne, all thinges with them are despicable and vile, beside peace, idlenes, and spycs. In *Thedori* is great plentie of cloues, as also in *Tarante* and *Mathien*. The trees which bringe forth cloues, growe not, but on rockes and broken clifſes, which sometime they grow fo thicke, that they appearre lyke a lytle woode or groue. This tree, bothe in leaues, biggenes, and heyt, is much lyke vnto the baye tree. It beareth the fruite in ye toppes of every braunche. The budde springeth out fyſt, and then in it the floure, not much vnlike the floure of an orange tree. The cloue is fyſt redde: but after beyng foorched by the heate of the sonne, it is made blacke. The inhabitauntes deuide the groues of these trees betwene them, as we doe the ynes. The Iland of *Muthil*, bringeth forth cinomome. This tree, is ful of small braunches and baren, beſt lyking in a drye foyle, and is very like vnto the tree, that beareth the pomegranate. The barke of this tree, by reaſon of the great heate of the sonne, ryſing from the braunches, or bodie of the same, is gathered and dried at the sonne, and is so made perfecte cinomome. Nearē vnto this, is another Iland, called *Beda*, greater and larger, then anye of the Ilandes of *Moluca*. In this Iland groweth the Nutmegge, whose tree is bigge and highe, and much lyke vnto the walnutte tree, for as is the walnutte, so is this fruite defended with a double couering, as fyſt with a grene huske, vnder the whiche is a thinnne skinne or rimme like a nette, encompassing the ſhell of the nutte: which ſkinne we call the flowre of the nutmegge, but of the Spanyardes, it is called mace, an excellent and holeſome ſpyce. The other couering, is the ſhell of the nutte, within the whiche is the fruite it ſelfe, which we call ye nutmegge. Ginger groweth here and there in all the Ilandes of this *Archipelagus*, or mayne ſea. Of the whiche, ſome is fowen, and ſome growth of it ſelfe. But that which is fowen, is the better. The herbe of this, is lyke vnto that which beareth faſſane and hath hys roote, (which is Ginger,) much lyke vnto the fame. In this meane time came two other ſhippes out of Spayne: whereof the one fayled direcetly to the poynete of *Aphrica*, called *Promontorium bona ſpei*: And the other by the greate mayne South ſea, to the coaſtes of that continent or fyrm land wherof we haue ſpoken here befor. It ſhall ſuffiſe that we haue hethero declared of the nauigacions whiche the Spanyardes attempted by the Weſte to fayle into the Eaſte, by the ſtrayghte of *Magellanuſ*, where the paſſage by ſea is open into the Eaſte, by the continent or fyrm lande of the newe worlde, called *Ameriaſ*. Nowe therefore lette vs retorne to the other Nauigacions of *Columbus*, otherwyſe called the Admyrall, who longe beforow was the fyſt fynder of the newe Ilandes, and of the fayde mayne or fyrm land, and yet founde not that ſtrayght or narow ſea, by the which *Magellanuſ* fayled from the Weſte into the Eaſt.



The thyrde nauigacion of Christophorus Columbus.

N the yeaſe of Christ. 1498. *Columbus* the Admyral departed from Spayne with eyght foifties, and arryued fyſt at the Ilandes of *Madera*, where he deuyded hys nauie into two partes. For. v. of theſe ſhippes he directed to the Iland of *Hyppana*: and with the residue, he failed towarde the ſouth, entendinge to paſſe ouer the *Equinoctiall* line, and from thence to turne towarde the Weſte, to ſearche ſuche landes as were hethero vñknowne to the Christian men. Coming therfore to *Caput veride*, he failed to the burning line, called *Torrida zona* where he found ſo great heate, that he was in daunger of death: but returninge his ſhippes towarde the Weſte, he found a more holeſome ayre and (as God woulde) came at the length to a lande well inhabyted, where there came agaynst him and his, a bote with. xxij. young men, armed with bowes, arrowes, and shieldes, couering only theyr priuie members with a clothe of Goffampine cotton, haung also very longe heare. The admirall, (as well as he could by ſignes) allured them to communication. But they truſted not our men, fearing ſome deceaſe. The Admirall perceauing that he could nouȝt preuaile, by ſignes and tokens, he determined with Mufical iſtrumentes to appeafe their wilderneſſe. As the minſtrells therefore blewe theyr ſhawimes, the barbarous people drew neare, ſuſpecting that noyſe to bee a token of warre, whereupon they made ready theyr bowes and arrowes. But the Spaniardes drawinge nearer vnto them, caſte certayne apparell into theyr

The ſpaniardes
arrive at the
Ilandes of
Moluca.

The tree that
beareth cloues.

The cinomone
tree.

The nutmeg tree

Mace.
The nutmegge.
Ginger

*Promontorium
bona ſpei*

Columbus the
admiral, first
fynder of the new
Ilandes

The Ilandes of
Madera
Hyppana or
Hispaniola

Great heate vnder
the burning line.

Signes and
tokens

The faire region
of *Parias*.
Gold and Pearles

Fearne beastes.
Caniabates

The Spanyardes
refuse to obey the
admiral.

Parias.
Curtana.
Pearles for belles
and needles

Peacockes.
Pheasants.

The Region of
Canichtetes.
The region of
Ciniana

Pearles

Naked people.
Gold for belles.

A conflict betwene
the wild men and
the Spanyardes
The Region of
Payra.
Woodes of
Saunders.
The tree yat
beareth *Cassia*
fistula.
A monsterous
beast.

bote, willing by this token of frendshippe to concile them, although all were in vayne. For they fled all awaye. Wherefore the Admirall departing from thence, came to a region called *Parias*, wel inhabited and ful of ciuile people, declaring muche humanitie toward straungers. They shewed our men Pearles and Gold, and such other riches, defyng them to come a land, where they gentelly entreated them. When our men asked them where they had fuche plentie of golde : they (with home poyning was in the fede of speech) declared by signes and tokens, that thei had it in certayne mountaines, and that thei could not without great daunger resort therethen, by reasoun of certaine feare beastes in those partes, and also because of the cruell people called *Canibales*, whiche inhabite those mountaynes. But the Admiral, because his wheate fayled, was enforced to departe thence. Dyrectinge therfore his viage toward ye North easte, he came to the Iland of *Hispina*, where he found all things confounded and out of ordre. For the Spanyardes which were leste in the Ilandes, refused to obeye the Admirall and his brother, mouinge greuous complayntes agaynst them before the King of Spaine, and at the length sente them therethen bound.

¶ Howe Petrus Alonsus soughte newe Ilandes.



After that the Admirall hadde incurred the indignacion of the Kynge, manye of his companions, fuche as hadde been broughte vppe with him, and were experte Sea menne, decreed to searche other partes of the worlde yet vnknownen. Among which number was *Petrus Alonsus*, who with a shipp wel furnished, fayled to *Parias*, and from thence to *Curtana*, where he begon to exercysse merchandisfe with the inhabitantes, receauinge Pearles for belles and needles. Entring also into the land, he was honourably entertyned. In their woodes, he saw innumerable Peacockes, nothinge vnylike vnto oures, sauing that the males differ litle from the females. In this region are great plentie of Pheasants. *Alonsus* departinge from henfe, failed to the region of *Canichtetes*, beyng fixe dayes fayling from *Curtana*, toward the West. In this region is great abundance of golde, Popingaiyes, Gossampine cotton, and mooste temperate ayre. From hence he fayled into another fruiteful region, but inhabited with wilde menne, which could by no gentilnes be allured to frendshippe. Departinge therefore from thence, he came to the region of *Ciniana*, whereas pearls are found in great plentie: but before he came there, he chaunced to come amone the *Canibales*: agaynst whom, dischargeing a piece of ordinaunce, he droue them easly to flight. But *Alonsus* laden with pearles, returned home into Spayne.

¶ Howe Pinzonius, companion to the Admirall, sought newe Ilandes.



Incentius, otherwise called *Pinzonius* in the yeare of Christe, 1499, prepared fourre brigantines, and failed fyrt to the Ilandes of *Canaria*, and from thence to *Caput veride*. From whence directinge his viage toward the south farre beyond the *Equinoctial* lyne, he found men in a certayne Iland, but such as he could by no meanes concyle vnto him. Therefore leauing them, he came to another lande, in whiche were innumerable naked people, dissimulinge that thei desired to ioyne frendship with the Spaniardes. And whereas one of our men caste a bell amone them oute of the shipp, they againe cast to the Spanyardes a maffe or piece of golde: which, one of oure compayne somewhat to bolde, atteymptinge to take vp, they fodeynlye toke him and caried him awaye with merueylous swiftenes: but our men leauing their shippes, made hast to help their fellowe, in so muche that the matter came to handstrokes. This conflict was so sharpe, that our men hadde much a doe to escape wthy their lyues, by reasoun of the fearfenes of the barbarians. Departing therefore from thence, they fayled toward the Northeaste, and came to the region of *Payra*, and to the Ilandes neare abouthe the same in the whiche are woodes of fanders wherewith the marchauentes lade their shippes, and carie it into other countreyes. In this Region alfo growe the trees, whiche bear *Cafisia fistula* of the besfe kynd. There is also founde a fourre foted beast of monstorous shape, whose former parte is lyke vnto a wolle, sauing that the feete are lyke vnto the fete of a man, with eares like an owle: Hauinge alfo beneath his comon belye, an other belye lyke vnto a purse or bagge, in which he kepereth his yonge whelpes so longe, vntyll they be able safely to wander abrode alone, and to geat theyr meatte withoute the helpe of theyr parents. The whelpes while they are very yong, neuer come out of this bagge but when they fuke. This portentous beast with her three whelpes, was broughte to Ciuite in Spaine, and from thence to *Granata*.

¶ Of the foure nauigacions of Americus Vesputius to the newe Ilandes.



Americus Vesputius, beyng sent with Christopher Columbus, in the yere of Christ. M.cccc.xcij. at the commaundement of Ferdinand King of Castile, to seke vnknownen landes, and wel instructed in sayling on the sea, after a fewe yeares, set forward foure viages of hys owne proper charges. That is to witte, two vnder the sayd King Ferdinand, and two other vnder Emanuel, king of Portugale, of the which he himselfe wryteth after this maner.

Ferdinando kinge
of castile.

¶ The fyrste viage of Americus Vesputius.



In the yere of Christ, M.cccc.xvij. the. xx. daye of Maye, we came with foure shippes, to the fortunate Ilandes, called *Insulae fortunatae*, where the North pole hath his eleuacion. xxvij. degrees, and. xl. minutes. And from thence within the space of. xxvii. dayes, we came to a land more Westwarde then the fortunate Ilandes, where the North pole was eleuete. xvi. degrees: where also we founde a nacion of naked people, of innumerable multitude, whiche as fone as they fawte vs, fled to the next mountayne. From hence within two dayes sayling, we came to a safte port wher we founde manye men, which with much ado, we could scarcely allure to communicacion, although we profered them belles, lokinge glafes, cristallyne cuppes, and fuche other jewelles. But at the length perceauing our good wyll and liberalitie towarde them, they came to vs by heapes, and ioyned frendshyp with vs without all feare. They goe all as naked as they came forth of their mothers wombe. They suffre no heare on their bodie sauing only on theyr head, in so much that they pul of flye heares of their browes. They are all so perfectely exercyed in swimmingme, that they can continue therein, for the space of two leages without any thinge to beare them vp and especiallye the women. Theyr weapons are bowes and arrowes. They arme theyr arrowes with ye teeth of beastes and fyshes, bycause they lacke Iron and other metals. They kepe warre against their borderers whiche are of straunge language. They fyght not for the enlarging of theyr dominion, forasmuche as they haue no Magistrates: nor yet for the increase of riches, because thei are contente with their owne commodities: but onely to reuenge the death of theyr predecysours. At theyr meate, they vse rude and barbarous fashions, lyng on the ground without any table clothe, or couerlet. They slepe in certayne greate nettes made of Gostampine cotton and hanged a lofte in the ayre betwene trees. Their bodies are verye smotho and cleane by reasoun of theyr often washinge. They are in other thinges slythy and withoute shame. Thei vse no lawful coniunction of mariage, but every one hath as many women as him listeth, and leaueth them agayn at his pleasure. The women are very fruiteful, and refuse no laboure al the whyle they are with childe. They traualye in maner withoute payne, so that the nexte day they are cherefull and able to walke. Neyther haue they their bellies wrimpelled, or loose, and hanginge pappes, by reasoun of bearinge manye children. Their houfes and cabbens, are all in common. Theyr houfes are fashyoned lyke vnto belles: are made of greate trees fastened together, couered wyth the leaues of date trees, and made very stonge against wind and tempestes. They are also in some places so great, that in one of them sixe hundred persons may lode. Thei vse every seuenth or eyght yeaer, to remoue and chaunge theyr dwelling places, because that by theyr longe continuaunce in one place, the ayre shoulde bee infected. They vse no kynd of marchaundise or bying and felling, beyng content only with that which nature hath lefte them. As for Golde, Pearles, precious stones, iewelles, and fuche other thinges, which we in Europa esteeme as pleasures and delicates, they sette noughe by. They haue no kynde of corne. Theyr common fedinge, is a certayne roote whiche they drye and beate and make floure or meale therof. They eate no kynd of fleshe except mans fleſſe: for they eate all fuche as they kyll in theyr warres, or oþerwise take by chaunce. When we had thus vewed the countreye, and confyderyed the maners of the people, we determyned to sayle further, downe by the landes syde, and came after a few daies, to a certayn hauen, where we fawte about twentie greate houfes, rayfed vppre muche after the fashyon of belles. There came vnto vs a great multitude of men vnder pretense of frendship. Some swimminge, and some in boates. Who, as fone as thei drew neare vnto vs, fodeynly bent theyr bowes against vs, where we defended oure selues manfully. In this bickeringe, we flewe of them about twentie, beefyde manye that were wounded: But of our men, were only fyue hurt, whiche were all perfectely healed. Thus departinge from this hauen, we sayled on, and came to another nacion, in conuerfacion and tongue vtterlye differing from the fyrst. For

Insulae fortunatae.

Naked menne.

Wylde men
allured with
gentlenes

People expert in
swimminge.

Cabens hanging
betwene trees.

Women in
common.

Women very
stronge and
fruitful.

Houses made of
trees.

Houses of
maruelous bignes.

Ryches and
superfluites
contemned
Bread of a certain
root.
Mans flesh eaten

A conflict

A gentle nacion
Parias.

Fruites vnlke
vnto oures.

Gold everywhere,

Canibals.

An expedicion
agayns yo
Canibals

The Equinoctial
line.

Canibals

Fyue hundred
pearles for one bell.
Wine of the iuyse
of frutes

An Iland without
fresh water.

Broad leauas.

The land of
Giauntes.

Pearles
A hundred and
xxx. pearles in one
shefishe.
Antiglio.
Calicium

comming oute of our shipp, we were very frendly entreated of them, where we continued for the space of nyne dayes. This region is verye fayre, and fruitfull, hauinge manye pleasaunt woodes, which continue grene all the yeare longe. They haue fruities innumerable, vterlye vnylike vnto oures. The Region is situate dyrectely vnder the lyne, called *Tropicus Calieri*. The inhabitanthes them selues, call it *Parias*. Saylinge farre beyond this Region, and ouerpassinge manye countreyes and nacions, fyndinge Gold ebery where, (but in no great quantitie) we came to another nacion full of gentlenesse and humanite, where we rested. xxxvij. dayes. These people made greuous complayne vnto vs, that there was not farre from them, a certayne feare and cruell nacion, which vexed them fore, and made incursion into theyr countrey at a certayne tyme of the yeare, kyllinge them and violentlye carrying them awaie, to th[e] intent to eate them, in so muche that they were not able to defend them selues agaisthe their fearfeneffe. Whiche thinge when they hadde fo lamentablye declared vnto vs, and we hadde made them promyse that we woulde reuenge theyr so manye iniuries, they ioyned vnto oure company feuen of theyr men. Thus we wente forward: and after feuen dayes, came to an Ilande, called *Ity*: where these feare people dwelte. Who, as fone as they hadde espied vs, came armed agayns us. We ioyned with them in battaile, which contynued for the space of two houres. At the length we droue them to flyghte, and flewe and wounded a greate numbre of them, and toke. xxv. captiues. But of our men was onely one flayne, and. xxi. wounded, and shortlye after restored to health. We gaue to those feuen men which went with vs, thre menne of oure prisouners and foure women, whom with greate reioysinge they caried with them into theyr countrey: and we returninge home toward Spaine, with many captiues came syrtle to a porte of Spayne called *Calicium*, where we folde oure prisouners, and were ioyefullie receaued: In the yeare of Christ. M.cccc.xcix. the. xv. daye of Octobre.

¶ The seconde viage of Vesputius.



N the moneth of May folowing *Vesputius* attempted another viage and came by Ilandes of Canaria, euen vnto the burninge lyne, called *Torrida zona*, and founde a lande beeyonde the *Equinoctial* line, toward the South, where the South pole is elevete fyue degrees. And wheras he coulde fynde no apte enterauance into the land, and sayled vp and down alonge by the fame, he espied a bote in which was aboue twentie men: who, as fone as they saw the Spaniardes, lept into the Sea and escaped all, excepte two, which they toke. In theyr bote which they forsoke, were founde foure young men which they had by force taken oute of another countrey, hauinge theyr priuie members newelye cutte of. These, *Vesputius* toke into his shippes and learned by theyr signes and tokens, that they hadde been taken of the *Canibals*, and shold shortly haue been eaten. But departinge from these costes, and saylinge on forward, they came to a commodious hauen, where they founde muche people, with whom they ioyned frendfshyp, and fell to chaungeinge of ware, receauinge for one bell, fyue hundred Pearles. In this lande they drinke a certayne kynde of wyne, made of the iuyse of frutes and sedes, being lyke whyte and redde sydar. Departinge from hence, and saylinge yet further, they founde a certayne Ilande in which was a beastly kind of people, and simple, yet very gentle. In this Ilande is no freshe water: but they gather the dew which in the night season falleth vpon certayne leaues muche lyke vnto the eare of an Aise. They lyue for the moste parte, by sea fishe. They haue no cotages or hou ses: but haue certayne broade leaues, wherewith they defende them selues from the heate of the Sunne, but not from showres: but it is verye lykely, that it rayneth but lytle in that Iland. *Vesputius* wylth his compayne departinge from hence, sayled vnto another Ilande: into the whiche when he hadde entered, he founde certayne cotages, and in them two old women, and three young wenches, whiche were of so greate stature, that they marueyled therat. And whereas oure menne sryued with them to bringe them to the shipppe, to th[e] intent to haue caried them into Spayne, they espied cominge toward them syxe and thyrtie men, yet of muche greater stature then were the women, bearing with them bowes, arrowes, and great stakes lyke vnto clubbes: at the syghte of whome, oure menne beinge afrayd, made hafte to theyr shippes. But these Gyauntes folowinge them euen to the Seafyde, bended theyr arrowes towradess the Spaniardes, vntyll they discharged two pieces of ordinaunces, wylth the horryble sounde whereof, they were immediatlye drieuen to flight. Oure menne therefore departinge from thence, called that Ilande, the Ilande of Giauntes. And came to another nacion, which frendlye entreated them, and offered them many Pearles: in so muche that they boughte. xix. markes weyghte of pearles, for a final price. They gaue vs also certayne shelsyfhes, of the whiche some conteyned in them a hundred and thyrtie Pearles, and some fewer. Departinge from thence they came to the Ilande of *Antiglio*, which *Columbus* had discouered a few years before. Leauinge this, they sayled directely to *Calicium*, a porte of Spayne, where they were honourablye receaued.

¶ The thyrde viage of Vesputius.

 *Vesputius* being called from Castile to serue Emanuel the King of Portugale, in the yeare of Christe. M. ccccc. ij. the tenth daye of May, departed from the hauen of lisburne, and sayled downe by the coastes of the sea Atlantike, vntill he came vnder the *Equinoctial* lyne. And the. xvij. daye of Auguste, they arryued at a certayne lande where they found a kind of beastly people. This lande is situate toward the South, fyue degrees beyonde the *Equinoctial* lyne. A greate multitude of the inhabitanteres wer gathered together, and as wel as they could by signes and poyntinges, desired oure men to come alande and to see their countrey. There were two in the shippes, which toke vpon them to vewe the lande, and learne what spycies and other commodities myght be had therein. They were appoynted to returne within the space of fwe daies at the vttermost. But when egypt dayes were now past, they whiche remayned in the shippes, heard yet nothing of their returne: wheras in the meane time great multitudes of other people of the same lande reforted to the Sea syde, but could by no meanes be allured to communicacion. Yet at the length they broughte certayne women, which shewed them selues familer towarde the Spaniardes: Wherupon they sent forth a young man, beyng very strong and quicke, at whom as the women wondered, and stode gasinge on him and feling his apparell: there came soleynly a woman downe from a mountayne, bringing with her secretely a great flake, with which she gaue him such a stroke behynde, that he fell dead on the earth. The other womanne foorthwith toke him by the legges, and drewe him to the mountayne, whyle in the mean tymē the men of the countreye came foorth with bowes and arrowes, and shot at oure men. But the Spaniardes discharginge four pieces of ordinaunce agaynst them, droue them to flighte. The women also which had slayne the yong man, cut him in pieces even in the sight of the Spaniardes, shewinge them the pieces, and rosting them at a greate fyre. The men also made certayn tokens, wherby they declared that not past. viii. daies before, they had in lyke maner ferued other christian men. Wherfore ye Spaniardes hauinge thus fustayned so greuous iniuries vnreuenched, departed with euyl wil: sayling therfore further toward ye south, they found a nacion of great multitude, and of much genteler condicions, with whom thei remained. viij. dayes, bartering and changeinge ware with them. Sayling on yet farther, they went beyond ye line called *Tropicus Capricorni*, where the south pole is eleuate. 32. degrees: and wheras in those parts thei found no great riches, they failed yet further southward vntill ye pole was eleuate. ij. degrees: where thei came into such a tempeste, that they were enforced to gather vppe their sayles, and to rowe only with the maste, directinge their viage toward the coastes of Ethiopia, from whence they returned againe to Lisburne in Portugale.

The sea Atlantike.

Three of the
Spaniardes slayne
and eaten.Fearse and cruele
women.

A civile people.

The south pole
eleuate. ij. degrees.

Lisburne.

The Iland of
melcha.Calicut.
Insuile novides

A shippwracke.

Lisertes and
Serpentes

¶ The fourth viage of Vesputius.

 His nauigation was attempted in the yeare of Christ. M. ccccc. iiiij. but was not brought to the ende hoped for, by reason of a misfortune which chaunced in the goufe of the sea Atlantike. *Vesputius* intended in this viage to sayle to the Ilande of *Melcha*, beyng in the East, in which is sayde to be great ryches, and the flacion or restinge place of all shippes comming from the goufe *Gangticus*, and from the Indian Sea. This *Melcha*, is situate more toward the West, and *Calicut* more enclininge toward the south. *Vesputius* came fyrt to ye grene Ilandes, called *Insuile novides*; and sayled from them to *Serralona*, beyng in the Southe partes of Ethiopia: from whence saylinge on yet further, he sawe in the middest of the sea an Iland, high and merueylous; where also the M[asster]. Pilate of this nauie, lost his shipp by running vpon a rocke: but all the mariners escaped. This shipp was of thre hundred tunnes, and had in it al the power of the nauie. When *Vesputius* had entered into the Iland, he found it rude and vnhabited: yet was it full of byrdes: but had no beastes except Lifertes with forked tayles, and Serpentes. Thus makinge prouision for necessaries, he was enforced to returne to portugale, failing of his purpose.

**C How the king of Portugale subdued certayn places in India:
and of the ryche Cytie of Malacha.**

The Portugales
bid fortes in the
Easte partes.

Alphonfus

Anna
cheroneus.
The great and
ryche cytie of
Malacha
Saracens.
Malacha besieged
The king fighteth
on an elephante.

Plenty of copper.

Marchants.
Spycers.

The cytie of Goa.

The Ambassadours
make a league
wyth *Alphonfus*

The west Ilandes
Cuba.

Iucatana.

*Cozumel or
Santa la Cruz*.
Hispaina.
Sugar presses.

The wood called
Guaiacon.

Medera or
Medora.

Sawe milles.
Fayre trees



Orafmuche as therefore in the yeares folowinge, there were more often nauigacions made from the West by the south into the East, and the Portugales had now founde a safe passage by ye sea, they thought it expedient for theyr better safetie, to make certaine fortifications and places of refuge in the Easte. The which theyr intent the better to accomplishe, King Emanuel appoynted one *Alphonfus* an experte man on the sea, to be captayne of this viage. Who, defyng to reuenge the losses and iniuries which the Portugales had before sustained, sayled directly to *Aurea Chersonesus*, now called *Malacha*, a merueylous great and riche citie, whose king is an infydel of the fete of the Moores: for euen thus farre was the fete of Mahumet extended. *Alphonfus* therfore at his coming therethen, besieged the citie, and made warre agaynst the Saracens whiche helde the same. In this conflict a greate noumber of theyr enemies beyng slayne, the Portugales entred into the citie by force and kept the same, permitting free libertie to theyr souldiers to spoyle, kyll, and burne. The king himselfe, fyghting vpon an Elephante, and beyng fore wounded, fledde with the refydue of his compayne. A greate noumber of the Moores were slaine with the losse of a fewe Portugales: manye were taken, and great spoyle caried awaye, in the whiche were seuen Elephantes, and all kyndes of ordinances perteyning to the warres, made of copper, to the noumber of two thoufande pieces. The cytie beinge thus taken and sacked, and the enemys drieuen to fleyghte, *Alphonfus* the Capitayne the better to prouide for the fauegarde of the Christians, buyllded a strong forte at the mouth or entraunce of the riuier which runneth through ye citie. At this time, that is to witte, in the yeare of Christ. M. ccccc. xij. there were in *Malacha* many straungers and marchaunts of dyuerse nacions, whereby the citie was replenished with great ryches and abundaunce of spycers. They of theyr owne mocion, defyrd to make a leage with *Alphonfus*, and were of him gently receaued: So that for theyr better safetie, he permitted them to dwell in the hou ses neare about the forte. And by this meanes, this markette towne was reedified and broughte to muche better state than euer it was before. These things thus happily atchiued, and al thinges in *Malacha* set in good order, *Alphonfus* leauing in the forte a garrison of. vi. hundredth valiant souldiours, returned into India, where he besieged the chiefe castell of the citie of *Goa*, which (he) a fewe years befoore, hadde with no final daunger of our men, and great slaughter of their enemies, subdued vnder the dominion of Emanuel kynge of Portugale, and was now possest of the mores, he manfully recovered agayne, and enforced them to render vp the same. Also the ambassadours of the Kinge of *Narfinga*, the Kinge of *Cambaya*, and the Kinge of *Grafapha* with the legates of dyuers other kings and Princes, offered them selues to be at a leage wyth *Alphonfus*, and thereupon broughte theyr presentes vnto hym. No leſſe power and dominion obtayned the kinge of Spayne in the Ilandes of the Weſt partes: In ſo muche that at his commaundement, were buyllded fixe townes in the Ilande of *Cuba*. Lykewyfe in the Ilande of *Iucatana*, was buyllded a greate cytie wyth faire houses. The Ilande of *Cozumella*, the Spanyardes called *Sancta Crux*, becaue they came fyſte therethen in Maye, on the daye of the Inuencion of the Croſſe. In the Ilande of *Hispaina* or *Hispaniola*, were erected, 28. ſuger preffes, to preſſe ye ſugre whiche groweth plentifullly in certayne canes or redes of the fame countrye. From hence alſo is brought the wood of *Guaiacon*, otherwyſe called, *Lignum Sanctum*, wherewith dyuerſe diſeaſes are healed by the order of the newe dyte.

**C Of the Iland of Medera, and the fortunate Ilandes, otherwyſe
called the Ilandes of Canaria.**



Etwene Spaine and the Ilandes of *Canaria*, is the Ilande of *Medera*, which the Spaniardes in our time founde vrhabited and faluage. But perceauinge that the foyle thereof, was very fruitefull, they burnt the woodes, and made the ground apt to bringe forth corne, and buyllded manye houſes, and ſo tilled the fane, that at this day is no where founde a more fruiteful lande. It hath in it many ſpringes of freſhſe water and goodly ryuers, vpon the which are buyllded manye ſawe mylles, wherewith manye faire trees, lyke vnto Ceder and Cypress trees, are ſawed and cut in ſunder, whereof are made moſt faire tables, coberdes, cofers, and chayres, and ſuch other curiouſe workeſ made of wood. Theſe trees are of redde colour, and ſwete

faour, the bodies and braunches whereof are broughte into Spayne in great plentie. The Kyng of Portugale thought it goode to plante in this Iland, that kynde of redes in which suger groweth: wherein he was not deceaved in his opinion: For they growe there moche fruitefully, and beare suger which excelleth the suger of Candye or *Sicilia*. There were also vynes broughte out of Candye and planted in this Ilande, where they prosper so wel, that for ye moche parte they bring forth more grapes then leaues, and those very great. In this Iland is also great plentie of Partriches, wyld doves, and Peacockes, wild bores, and diuers kindes of other beastes, which onely possessed the Iland before men dyd inhabite the same. Also the Ilandes called *Insulae fortunatae*, (whiche are now called *Canaria*, for the multitude of dogges which are in them) are fayd to be no lesse fruytfull. These Ilandes are tenne in noumbre, of the which seuen are inhabited, and thre remaine desolate. They which are inhabited, are called by these names: *Fraets lauca*, *Magna fors*, *Grancanaria*, *Teneriffa*, *Ginera*, *Palma*, and *Ferrum*. At Columbus first comming therethen, the inhabitanthes went naked, without shame, religion, or knowledge of God. But in successe of time, foure of the greatest Ilandes embrased the Christian faith: They haue eche of them a priuate language. *Teneriffa* and *Grancanaria*, are bigger then the other. *Teneriffa* may be fene afarre of, to the distaunce of fiftie leages, in a fayre and clere daye. The reasoun whereof is, that in the middest of the Iland, ryfeth a maruylous great and strong rock, which is thought to be. xv. leages high, and casteth foorth continuallye great flames of fyre and pieces of brimstone, as doth the mount *Etna* in the Iland of *Sicilia*. The people of these Ilandes, lye with barlye bread, fleshe, and mylke. They haue also greate plentie of Goates, wylde Asses, and Fygges. They lacke wyne and wheate.

Suger	
Vynes	
The Ilandes of <i>Canaria</i> .	
Christians	
A mount of burninge brimstone. Fygges.	
Libr. i. Capit. v.	
Eratosthenes.	
Ptolomeus.	
Postidonius.	
The Equinoctial line	
The poet Homers	
Macrobius.	
Albertus Magnus.	
Ptolomeus.	
Taprobana	
Ethiopia	
Tigris and Euphrates.	
Sinus Persicus.	
The nearenesse of the sunne.	
Temperatenes under the Equinoctial.	
Torrida zona.	
Ethiopia.	
Plinius.	
The Iland of Meroe	
Syenes in Egypce.	
The conuersione of the sunne.	
Of the furlonges of Italiæ viii. doe make one Italian myle, conteyning a m. [thousand] pases.	
Agyzimba.	
Montes Luna.	
Paludes Nil.	
Ethiopis	

¶ Whether vnder the Aequinoctial circle or burninge lyne (called Torrida zona) be habitable Regions.



Ius secundus (otherwise called *Eneas Silvius*), of this question, wryteth in this maner. It hath beene muche doubted whether habitable regions maye be founde vnder the *Equinoctial* lyne. *Eratosthenes* is of th[e]opinion, that the ayre is there verye temperate. So thinketh *Polybius* alio, affirming that the earth is there verye highe, and watered with many showers. *Pofidonius* supposid that there is no Mountaynes vnder the *Equinoctial*. Some thoughte that the *Equinoctial* lyne was extended beyond the earth ouer the mayne Ocean sea: whiche thinge the Poete Homere femeith to insinuate, where he faineth that the horses which drawe the charioote of [the] sunne, drinke of the Ocean sea, and the sunne it selfe to take his norismenthe of the same. Whiche sentence *Macrobius* also foloweth. Neither was *Albertus Magnus* farre from this opinion, who supposeth yat the sunne draweth vp so much moysture vnder the *Equinoctial* circle, as engendreth the cloudes vnder the poles, where by reason of th[e]excedinge coldnesse, ayre is continuallie turned into water. But Ptolomeus thinketh the earth to bee extended beyonde the *Equinoctial*, whereas he placeth a part of the Iland of *Taprobana*, vnder the *Equinoctial*, and also many nacions of the *Ethiopians*. Many haue thought that th[e]earthly Paradyse was sette vnder that lyne: which opinion is contrary to th[e]uctoritie of the holy scripture which witnesseth the two famous fuddles *Tigris* and *Euphrates* to springe oute of Paradise: whiche neuertheleſſe we know from the North partes to fal into the gouſſe called *Sinus Persicus*: but as concerninge the heate vnder the *Equinoctial* lyne, the nearenesse of the sunne, or the directe beames of the same, are no ſufficiente caufes why vnder that line ſhould be no habitable regions, if we confider how thoſe places are otherwyſe shadowed, and tempered with the moyſtenes and dewes of the nightes, which are all the yeaſe throughē of equal length with the dayes. Yet wyl no man denye, but that vnder the *Equinoctial* throughoute all the burninge lyne there are manye wilderernes and desolate places, lacking water, and incommodious for the lyfe of man: Albeit euē in *Ethiopia*, people dwel neare to the ryuers and woodes. *Plinius* alio fayth that one *Dalton*, and *Ariſtotele*, and *Bion*, and *Basilides*, went Southward beyonde *Meroe* whiche is almoſte vnder the *Equinoctial*. And that *Simonides* who write the descriccion of *Ethiopia*, dwelte fyue yeres in *Meroe*: whiche Ilande, (beeyng in the fyrm lande and compassid aboute wyth the Ryuer of *Nilus*) he affyrmed to bee ſituate. 972. thouſande pases beeyonde *Syenes* of Egypce, as the ſearchers of Nero declared. But at *Syenes* the Astronomers appoynte the ſommer conuerſion of the sunne: and that there the burninge lyne beginneth, being diſtaunte from the *Equinoctial* foure and twentie degrees, that is twelue thouſande furlonges. Wherby we maye perceave that *Meroe* is ſituate ſome what beeyonde the myddle betwene the *Equinoctial* and *Syenes*. *Ptolomeus* alio defreybeth the Region of *Agyzimba* to bee inhabited beeyonde the *Equinoctial*. Lykewyle the Mountaynes of the Mone, called *Montes Luna*, out of the which, the fennes or maries of the riuier *Nilus* haue their ſpring and originall. He addeth hereunto that there are certayne *Ethiopians* called *Anthropophagi*,

*Anthropographia.
Habitable regions
how farre
extenched.
Climate.*

that is, such as eate mans fleshe, which inhabite regions beyond the *Equinoctial* about the space of. xvi. degrees. And thus the inhabitation of men is found to be extended. x. hundred thousand pases beyonde the *Equinoctial* lyne. Whiche space conteyneth no leſſe then two clymes of earth. And a clyme is a porcion of the worlde betwene South and North, wherein is variacion in length of the daye, the space of halfe an houre.

¶ Finis.

¶ Thus endeth the fyfth boke of Sebastian Munster,
of the landes of Asia the greater, and of the
newe founde landes, and Ilandes.

1553.



¶ Imprinted at London, in Lom-
barde Strete, By Edward
Sutton.

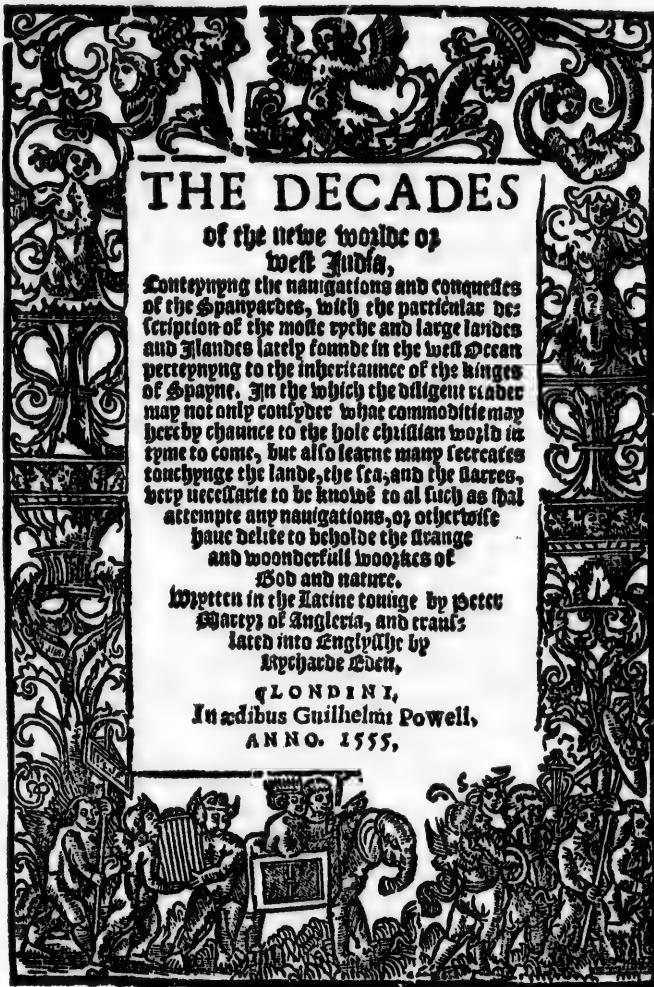


¶ To al aduenturers, and ſuche as take in hande greate enterpryſes.

Who hath not of fowrenes felte the bitter taſt,
Is not worthy of ſwetenes to take his repaſt,
To cracke the nutte, he muſt take the paine,
The which would eate the carnell fayne.
Who that of bees feareth the flinge,
Shal neuer by heny laue great wonninge.
As the ſweete Roſe bringeth forth the thorne,
So is man truly to ioye and paine borne.
The hynde upon hope byldeth her nette,
Where oſtentymes ſhe hath but euyll reſte,
Yet is ſhe not therby drieuen to ſuche feare,
But yet the performeth the fame the nexte yeare.
Much caſting of periles doth noble corage ſwage
Yet do not I commende rashenes or outrage.
What foles do ſable, take thou no hede at all,
For what they know not, they cal phantaſtical.
Nought venter nought haue, is a ſaying of old.
Better it is to blow the cole, then to fy a cold.
Fortes fortuna adiuuat, the Latin prouerbe faith,
But fayleth to ſuch as faint and lacke fayth.
God gueth al thinges, but not ye bul by ye horne
The plowman by traualle encrafeth his corne.
As fortune fauereth thou mayſt be riche or poore,
As *Crefus* or *Irus* that beggeth at the dore.

¶ *Omnis iacta fit atra.*

[The Third English book on America.]



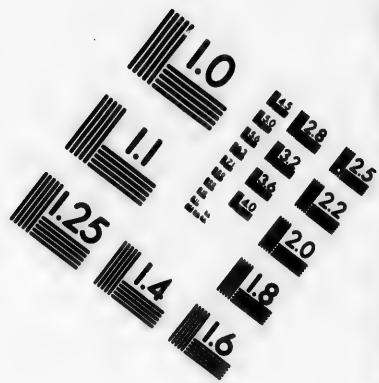
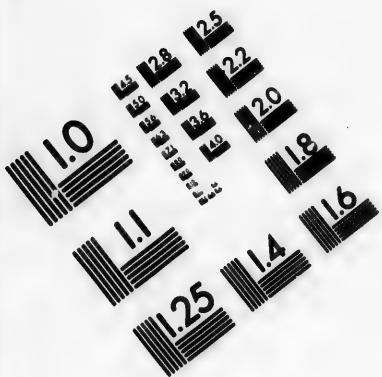
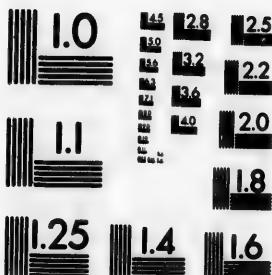


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



6"



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

EEEF
28
EEEF
25
EEEF
22
EEEF
20
EEEF
18

HT
Oil

C C
The
The
Fer
The
Of t
and c
Of t
The
The
Of t
tiall
Of d
beaut
Offre
Of th
theyr
O foun
Of th
foun
Of th
foun
Howe
place
Of the
lande
Or the
Of the
Of the
Other
and o
A dif
yarde
The o
The p
an m
Gentl
Or the
Or the
Or the
The de
gales fo
Of the
and o
elemen
ferente
A disco
spices
tyme fra
Alfa : Al
fea : Al
Of the
A brea
The de
habitatib
Scondia
Laponia
Suetia o
Finlande
The dyf

C Contin
with w
A Carava
Hemisph
water.
Pefus, a

C Canoa
Catiqui,
Zemes an
Tynra, th

C N

Befyde the Decades (the table of whose contentes yow may reade in the ende of the booke [see pp. 391-397.]) are contyned furthermore in this boooke these thynges followyng.

¶ Of the landes and Ilandes lately founde.	Folio. 140. [¶. 186.]	The hytorye of Paulus Iouius of the ambaſſade of great Basilius Prince of Moſcouia to pope Clement the seventh.	278. [¶. 308.]
The popes bulle and donation.	167. and. 171. [¶. 201.]	Other notable thynges as concernyng Moſcouia, gathered owt of the bookeſ of Sigismundus Liberus.	289. [¶. 318.]
The hytorye of the Weſte Indies, wrytten by Gonzalus Ferdinandus.	174. [¶. 208.]	The deſcription of the regions and people lyng North and Eaſte from Moſcouia to the ryer Peizora and the province of Iugaria and the ryer Obi. &c.	294. [¶. 322.]
The ordinarie nauigation from Spayne to the Weſte Indies.	175. [¶. 210.]	Of the famous ryer of Tanais.	297. [¶. 324.]
Of two notable thynges as touchyng the Weſte Indies: and of the grete ryches brought from thense into Spaine.	176. [¶. 211.]	More directly from Moſcouia to Cathay.	298. [¶. 325.]
Of the golde mines and maner of woorkyng in them.	177. [¶. 211.]	Of the Tartars. 299. [¶. 327.] The nauigation by the froſen ſea.	303. [¶. 330.]
The maner of fyſhyng for pearls.	180. [¶. 213.]	The letters misſue which kyng Edwardre the vi. fent to the kynges, princes, and other potentates inhabytinge the north eaſt parts of the worlde towarde the Empire of Cathay. 306. and. 308. [¶. 333.]	
The familiarite that the Indians haue with the deuyl.	181. [¶. 215.]	The letters of the prince of Moſcouia fente to kyng Edwardre. 319. [These are not included in the work.]	
Of temperate and habitable regions under the Equinoctial line. &c.	184. [¶. 217.]	Other notable thynges as touchyng the Indies: and of the foreknowlage that the poet Seneca had of the fyndyng of the newe worlde and other regions not then knownen.	310. [¶. 337.]
Of dyuers particular thynges, as woormes, ferpenes, beaſtes, foulſ, &c.	185. [¶. 218.]	Of the great Ilande whiche Plato cauled Atlantica or Atlan‐tide. 310. [¶. 337.] Of the colours of the Indians.	311. [¶. 338.]
Oftrees, frutes, and plantes. &c. 194. [¶. 225.] [Of Reedes or Canes.] 196. [¶. 227.]	Why they were cauled Indians.	311. [¶. 339.]	
Of the venemous apples wherwith the Canibales inueneme theyr arrowes. 199. [¶. 229.] Of fyſhes & theyr maner of fyſhyng. 201. [¶. 230.]	The fyſt discouerynge of the Weſte Indies.	312. [¶. 339.]	
Of the ryſyng and faulynge of oure Ocean ſea and the ſouth ſea caaled the ſea of Sur.	204. [¶. 233.]	What maner of man Christopher Colon was, and howe he came fyſt to the knowledge of the Indies.	313. [¶. 340.]
Of the freight of lande beinge betwene the north and ſouth ſea.	205. [¶. 234.]	What laboure and traualle he tooke in attemptyng his fyfte vyage to the Indies.	313. [¶. 340.]
Howe thynges of one kynde, dyſter by the nature of the place: and of the beaſtes cauled Tygers.	206. [¶. 235.]	Of newe Spaine cauled Noua Hispania or Mexico.	315. [¶. 342.]
Of the maners and cutomes of the Indians of the firme lande and of theyr women.	208. [¶. 237.]	Of Peru. 316. [¶. 343.] Of the great ryer cauled Rio de la Plata.	316. [¶. 343.]
Of the Ilandes Hispaniolas and Cuba.	210. [¶. 239.]	Of the hygher or ſuperior India cauled India Tercera or Terciera.	317. [¶. 344.]
Of the Ilande of Cuba and other.	213. [¶. 241.]	Agyene of the landes of Laborador and Baccalaos.	318. [¶. 344.]
Of the lande of Baccalaos.	213. [¶. 242.]	The diſcouerynge of the lande of Florida.	319. [¶. 345.]
Other notable thynges gathered owt of dyuers autours: and of the vniuerſall carde and newe worlde.	214. [¶. 245.]	An opinion that Europe, Africa, and Afia, are Ilandes: and of certeyne Nauigations aboue the fame.	320. [¶. 346.]
A diſcouerſe of the maruelous vyage made by the Spaniardes rounde about the worlde.	215. [¶. 246.]	That the Spaniardes haue fayled to the Antipodes whiche inhabit the undermoft halfe of the baule of the earth, contrarye to theſeſtions of the oulde wryters.	321. [¶. 347.]
The order of the ſtares aboue the pole Antartike.	222. [¶. 253.]	Who fyſt founde the needle of the compaſſe and the vſe therof. 322. [¶. 348.] The ſituation and byggeneſie of the earth.	323. [¶. 349.]
The prices of preciuſ ſtones and ſpices with their weigthes and meaſures as they are foulde bothe of the Moores and Gentyles.	233. [¶. 263.]	What degrees are.	324. [¶. 349.]
Of the weigthes of Portigale and India, and howe they agree.	239. [¶. 269.]	A demouſition of the roundeneſſe of the earth.	324. [¶. 350.]
Of the dooies of the Ilande of Madera.	239. [¶. 270.]	What credi ought to be gyuen to wryters as touchyng the woorkes of nature.	325. [¶. 351.]
Of the Ilande of faynt Thomas vnder the Equinoctial line.	240. [¶. 270.]	The preface to the booke of metals.	326. [¶. 355.]
The debate and ſtrife betwene the Spaniardes and Portugales for the diuision of the Indies and the trade of ſpices.	240. [¶. 271.]	Of the generation of metalles and theyr mines, with the maner of fyndyng the fame.	327. [¶. 356.]
Of the pole Antartike and the ſtares aboue the ſauie: and of the qualite of the regions and diſpoſition of the elementes aboue the Equinoctiall line: Alſo of certeyne fecretes touchyng the arte of fyaylyng.	245. [¶. 277.]	Of the mine of golde and the qualitie therof.	334. [¶. 362.]
A diſcouerſe of dyuers vyages and wayes by the which ſpices, preciuſ ſtones, and golde were brought in oulde tyme from India into Europe and other partes of the worlde.	249. [¶. 283.]	Of the myne of iyluer.	340. [¶. 366.]
Alſo of the vyage to Cathay and Eaſte India by the northe ſea: And of the viages of Seabatian Cabot.	249. [¶. 283.]	The maner of woorkyng in the golde mines of Egypte in oulde tyme.	342. [¶. 369.]
Of the vyages to Moſcouia and Cathay.	259. [¶. 291.]	The diſcription of the two vyages made owt of Englaunde to Guineia in Afrike.	343. [¶. 373.]
A brefe deſcription of Moſcouia.	264. [¶. 295.]	A briefe deſcription of Afrike.	344. [¶. 374.]
The deſcription of the north regions: and how they are habitable, contrary to theſeſion of the oulde wryters.	269. [¶. 300.]	The fyſte vyage to Guineia.	345. [¶. 375.]
Sondia. 267. [¶. 298.] Gronlande. 268. [¶. 299.] Ilande. 269. [¶. 301.] Laponia. 270. [¶. 301.] Norway.	273. [¶. 303.]	The feconde vyage to guynea.	350. [¶. 379.]
Gothia or Gothlande. 276. [¶. 305.] Bothnia. 275. [¶. 305.] Finlaude and Eningia. 276. [¶. 306.]	276. [¶. 306.]	The maner of fyndyng the Longitude of regions by dyuers wayes.	360. [¶. 389.]
The diſference of regions and cauſes of great cities.	277. [¶. 307.]	A newe maner of fyndyng the Longitudes of regions.	361. [¶. 390.]
		A briefe reheatall of the contentes of the bookeſ of the Decades, &c. [¶. 391.]	

F I N I S.

¶ The interpretacion of certeyne woordes.

¶ Continente (that is) the firme lande not incloſed with water, or no Ilande.

A Caravel or Carnet, a kynde of ſhippes.

Hemispherium, the haffe globe of the earth and water.

Pſuit, a ducate and a halfe.

Equinoctial, the line that diuideth the heauen and the earthe in the myddel betwene the two poles, in the which when the ſonne commeth, the days and nyghtes are of equal length
Cline, is a portion of the worlde betwene north and ſouth.

Parallels, are lines whereby the ſonne paſſyng cauſeth variation of tyme.

Gati Mammoni, Monkeys.

Schoenus, is a ſpace of xi. furlonges.

Werſ, is an Italian [or Kuffian] mile.

Colonia, an habitation.

The Indian language.

¶ Canoa, a boate or barkē.

Caciqui, kynges or gouernours.

Zemus an Iſle.

Tyra, the deuyl.

Machana, a fworde.

Areteſ, fonges or balades.

Tona, the moone.

Tonatoco, the boonne.

Quines, prefetes.

Chiyu, a man.

Ira, a woman.

Boda, a houſe.

Cauni, golde.

Mayani, nothyngē, &c.

¶ Note that the Ilande of Hispaniola, is nowe cauled San Domingo by reaſon of the chiefe city ſo named. Alſo faynte Johns Ilande cauled ianci Iohannia, or Burichena, is otherwyſe cauled Boriken.

C P O T E N T I S S I M O A C S E R E N I S S I M O
 PHILIPPO, AC SERENISSIMÆ POTENTISSIMÆQVE MARIAE,
 Dei gratia Regi ac Reginæ, Angliae, Franciae, Neapolis, Ierusalem, et
 Hiberniae: Fidei defensoribus, Principibus Hispaniarum et Siciliae,
 Archiducibus Austriæ, Ducibus Mediolani, Burgundiæ, et
 Brabantiae, comitibus Haspurgi, Flandriæ, et Tirolis,
 Richardus Edenus perpetuam optat fœlicitatem.



VM IN PRIMO VESTRO ingressu in hanc celeberimam Londini urbem (illustissimi Principes) cernerem quanto omnium applausu, populi concursu, ac ciuium frequentia, quanto insuper spectaculorum nitore, nobilium virorum splendore, equorum multitudine, tubarum clangore, ceterisque magnificis pompis ac triumphis, pro dignitate vestra accepti estis dum omnes quod sui est officij facere fatigebant, vbi in tanta hominum turba vix unus reperiatur qui non aliquid agendo aduentum vestrum gratulabatur, cœpi et ego quoque aliorum exemplo (propius presertimad me accedentibus Celitudinibus vestris) tanto animi ardore ad aliquid agendum accendi ne solus in tanta hominum corona otiosus viderer, quod vix me continebam quin in aliquam extemporariam orationem temere erupuisse, nisi et præsentiae vestrae maiestas, et mea me obscuritas a tam audaci facinore deterruissent. Verum, cum potea penitus de hac re mecum cogitasse, considerasseque quam haec omnia alioqui per se laude digna, vestris tamen meritis ac regis dignitatis eminentiae comparata, plebeia ac ludicra videantur, cœpi denuo cum animo meo reputare qua in re ita cum immortali rerum memoria fœlicissimum vestrum aduentum gratularer, vt inde nominis vestri fama et splendor, non vllis spectaculorum temporarijs ostentis, sed rerum gestarum gloria, ad posteros perpetuo emanaret. Executio statim diuitias meas. Perscrutor si quid ex penu meo depromere possum quod me ad aliquid agendum vestris heroicis virtutibus dignum excitet. Sed cum penes me nihil tale reperio, agnosco nuditatem meam, atque ad vos confugio. Patrum, auorum, proauorum, atque atauorum vitas et facta recolo. Syluam rerum gestarum video, totque preclarissimorum principum propagines, vt merito ab ipsis heroibus, Saturno videlicet, Ioue, ac Hercule, ceterisque theanthropis, originem duxisse videantur. Quod cum ita sit, non aliunde profecto quam ex hac sylua materies mihi petenda erit quo in mentibus hominum et æterna rerum memoria, perpetua spectacula rerum a vobis et progenitoribus vestris præclare gestarum, in mundi theatro ab omnibus cum summa nominis vestri fama ac veneratione cernantur. Cum itaque inter cætera a maioribus vestris præclare gesta, nihil sit admirabilius aut maiori laude dignum, quam quod incredibili fiducia et plus quam Herculeis laboribus superato Oceano, fœlicissimo tandem euentu, Indiæ Occidentalis

ditissimas Insulas atque Continentis amplissimas regiones, mortalium primi inuenientur, in quibus infinitas incolarum myriades ad fidem Christi conuerterunt (quo nihil augustius aut Christianis principibus magis dignum excogitari potest) visus sum mihi quod non alia in re magis possem felicitati vestrae merito gratulari, quam si nostris quoque hominibus quibus haec hactenus nihil aut parum cognita sunt, innotescere faciam, ut perspectis illorum simul et vestrorum amplissimis imperijs non sine diuina prouidentia (ut credere par est) ad ipsos usque Antipodes et PLVS VLTRA terminatis, omnes boni, ipsa rerum magnitudine in admirationem ducti, vos audent et venerentur: Malis vero et improbis, os obstruatur si quam in maledicendo voluptatem capiunt. Haec dum cogito, venit mihi in mentem quod olim adolescens perlegi Decades de Nouo Orbe a Petro Martyre ab Angleria, illustrissimi Ferdinandi regis Catholici, ac tui (Serenissime rex) proau oratore, Latine conscriptas, atque sacræ Cæsariæ maiestati patri tuo dedicatas. Tanti itaque autoris fide et eruditione motus, eum præ ceteris in nostram linguam traducendum suscepit, quod non solum ut historicus res Indicas cum summa fide scriptis mandauit, sed etiam ut philosophus (quod in ceteris scriptoribus defuderatur) naturalium rerum occultas causas reddit, ac admirabilium naturæ operum (quibus haec vestra India plena est) rationes inuestigat. Atque ut huius Indiae posterior status cognoscatur, quantusque thesaurus auri, gemmarum, aromatum, aliarumque ditissimarum mercium ac anni census inde quotannis in Hispaniam aduehitur, adiunxi doctissimi viri Gonzali Ferdinandi Ouedi libellum quem ille Indicæ historiae generalis Summarij titulo inscripsit, eiusdemque illustrissimi Caroli Imperatoris patris tui nomini consecravit: Cæteraque plurima ex recentioribus scriptoribus excerpti, que mihi in tam immensa rerum memorabilium bibliotheca, præcipue adnotanda videbantur. Quæ, quanta et qualia sunt, quantisque parafangis, omnium herorum ac Argonautarum res gestas toto terrarum orbe tantopere celebratas superent, haec mea sequens præfacio vulgari sermone ad huius historiae lectores populumque Anglicum conscripta, satis prolixa oratione indicabit, adeo ut idem hic repetere superuacaneum sit, minimeque necessarium, quandoquidem Anglica lingua tibi Serenissima Regina vernacula est, idemque illustrissimo Regi quod tibi scriptum aut dictum existimen, non solum quod diuino vinculo unum sitis in carne una, sed etiam quod eadem animi lenitate, humanitate, affabilitate, ceterisque virtutibus, non minus animi moribus quam carnis vinculo unum sitis. Sed neque hic opus est ut ego Latino sermone vestras virtutes, animi moderationem, clementiam, religionem, pietatem, educationem, castitatem felicitatem, fortunas, opes, munificentiam, victorias, imperia, stemmata, cæteraque huiusmodi multa enumerem, cum præfertim vir nobilis et doctus Leonhardus Goretius Polonus de his omnibus deque felicissimo vestro matrimonio, oratione satis fusa tractauit, in qua nihil pretermisit quod ad Celsitudinis vestrae et progenitorum vestrorum gloriam virtute partam, pertineat. Cæterum cum regiae vestrae virtutes nominisque splendor ac regnorum amplitudo alias per vniuersa Christiani orbis imperia satis nota sint, nisi forte ibi minime ubi maxime nota esse deberent, nempe in hoc Angliae regno, ideo opere præcium et rem omnibus bonis gratam, quodque mei est officij erga Celsitudines vestras me facturum existimauit, si haec nostris (ut dixi) hominibus, nostraque lingua ob oculos contemplanda proposuero. Quod quam feliciter aut dextre a me factum sit, aliorum esto iudicium. Quam vero fidelitur, sincere, ac animo in Maiestatis vestras propenso hoc idem aggressus sum, testis est mihi conscientia mea in conspectu illius qui hominum cor et renes scrutatur. Macte igitur virtutis istius animi vestri estote Serenissimi Principes, atque Diuino auxilio freti, pergit ea qua coepistis fiducia, huius deploratae ac collapsæ reipublicæ nostræ statum, pristino decori restituere, id quod omnes a vobis expectant atque efflagitant,

pollicentes infuper vobis in eo negotio suam operam in nullo defuturam. Ne terreat vos quorundam canum latratus qui bonis omnibus oblatrant, et tunc desinent latrare cum desinent viuere. Vulgatissimum semper fuit improbos homines viris probis vel propter inuidiam vel propter dissimilitudinem, solere latrare. Et tamen ille probus semper habitus est, quem peruersi maxime improbauerint. Non est igitur curandum quid de nobis homunculi, sed quid viri boni loquantur. Cogitate (Serenissimi Principes) quod magnanimitate ac maiorum insignijs, aquilis et leonibus similes estis. Aquila natura est, alta petere, et aduersus solis radios in altum volare. Leonis proprium est parcere subiectis et debellare superbos. Generofus equus per plateas incedens, canes ut animalcula imbellia præterit non perturbatus, Virtus non exercita (inquit Seneca ad Neronem) paruam laudem meretur. Non admodum magnificentum fuerit mediocrem fortunam probe administrare: Sed tanta rerum omnium licentia non abuti, hoc vero admirabile est: Multo autem admirabilius in iuuensi ac lubrica ætate cui accedat ætas magistra: hijs præfertim qui contumelia lacefcuntur, quæ alioqui homines vel placidissimos folet de gradu dejicere. Sed (vt supra dixi) non est hic mei propositi (Serenissimi Principes) vestras laudes pro meritis decantare, aut exprimere quo modo in summo rerum fastigio vos humiles præbuistis, de quare fusius in præfacione ad lectores tractauit. Iam itaque ut huic epistolæ dedicatoriæ finem imponam, rogo Serenissimas Maiestates vestras ut has meas lucubrationes in hijs autoribus vertendis, (quas vestro nomini consecraui) ea humanitate ac fauore fuscipiat, quibus omnes beneuolo animo ad vos accedentes, facile admittitis ac neminem rejicitis. Quem admodum enim qui pomarium aut vineam plantauit ac maturos inde fructus collegit, illi merito primitias soluit a quo prima femina primisque arborum infestationes habuit, ita et ego qui a maiorum vestrorum rebus gestis primis sumptis feminibus, hos qualecumque fructus ædidi, video profecto mihi, debito vestro honore vos defraudasse, nisi eosdem vestro nomini ac numini obtulisse.

Deus. Opt. Max. Celsitudines vestras perpetuo seruat incolumes,
saxitque vt fecunda sibolis propagine, summaque pace
ac tranquillitate, huius regni habenas ad Diuini
nominis gloriam, diu gubernetis.

F I N I S.

RYCHARDE EDEN TO THE READER.



He moſte famous oratoure and learned Phylosopher Marcus Tullius Cicero, wryteth, that in all consultations as touchyng owre behauoure and order of lyuynge amonge men, it behoueth vs euer to beare in mynde howe farre the dignite of mans nature, excelleth the condition of brute beaſtes. For they, beinge ruled altogether by ſence, delyte in nothyng but beaſtly appetites, wherunto they runne headlonge as to theyr onely felicitie. But the mynde of man, beinge of more noble nature, is nuryſhed with knowleage, and taketh pleaſure in diuiſyng or excogitatynge ſume honest thynge, whereby it not onely leaueth amonge men a memorie of his immortall nature, but also engendereth the lyke affection in other that delyte to fee and heare ſuch thinges as are commendable in theyr predeceſſours. And this surely thynke I to bee the caufe that eyther the famous factes of woorthy men, or ingenious inuentions of experte artificers, haue not onely nobilitate the autours and diuifers of the fame, or ſuch to whom they haue byn dedicate, but alſo that parte

Commendation
of noble factes.

of theyr commendations haue redounded to all ſuche as haue ſpente theyr tyme and taken peynes in illuſtratyng and ſettyng furthe theyr doynges. For who ſhulde at this daye haue knownen Maufolus the kyng of Caria, with his wyfe Artemifia, or theſe famous artificers, Scopa, Bryaces, Timotheus, Leochares, or Pythis, if the wonderfull and ſumptuous woork of the ſepulcher whiche Artemifia made for kyng Maufolus her husband (beinge of ſuch woorkemanhyppre that it was accompted for one of the marueyls of the worlde) had not geuen vnto all theſe immortall fame, whereas neuertheleſſe it coulde not defende it felfe ageynſt theſe iniurie of tyme conſumyng all thyngeſ. There remayneth at this daye no token of the laborious Tabernacle whiche Moiſes buylde, or of the renoumed and marueilous Temple that was buylde in Hierusalem by Salomon and renewed by Eſdras. Yet ſhall the name of the excellente artificers Oliab and Befelchel, and Hyram the kyng of Tyrus, lyue for euer in the memory of men. Furthermore alſo, Salomon hym ſelfe, althoſe he were many other wayes famous, yet gaue he a greate parte of his glory to that princely buyldynge. But certeynely the moſt trewe and permanent glory, procedeth of ſuch monumēnts as bryngē ſume great and notable commoditie and profite to the lyfe of men, rather then of the hugious heapes of ſtones of the Pyramids of Egypt, wherin is nouȝt els to fee but the fonde and barbarous oſtentation of ſuperfluouſ riches: Or of the Mazes cauled Labyrinth, or of horryble great Images cauled Colofi, of knottes inexplicable, of braſen caudrons of monſtrous byggenesse, of hauens with echo ſeuſ tymeſ reboundyng, and dyuers ſuche other portentous inuentions, the which as they do delite vs in confideryng the maruelous arte and witte of ſuche artificers as diuifid and made the fame, ſo are they otherwyſe vnproufitable: And bryngē rather a fame to theyr inuentourēs, then trewe glorie. Perillus was famous by diuifyingne his braſen bulle: yet ſo, that it had byn better for hym to haue byn obſcure and vñknownen. They haue therefore defered more trewe commendation whiche in buyldynge of cities, townes, forteſſes, bridges, cundites, hauens, ſhypes, and ſuche other, haue ſo ioyned magnificeſce with profeſſe, that bothe may remaine for an eternal teſtimonie of absolute glory, whose perfection extendeth to the gratifyingne of vniuerſal mankind as farre as mans mortalitie wyll permit. The whiche thinge whyle I conſider, and caule to memorie howe Cicero defineth trewe glorie to bee a fame of many and greate deſerteſ eyther towarde owre ciſtens, owre countrey, or towarde all man kynd, and the fame to bee of ſuch excellencie that the oſwle poetes for ſume effecte fayned it to bee the ſweete Ambroſia and Nectar wherwith the goddes are fedde, and that of ſuch force that who ſo may drynke therof, ſhal alſo become a god, (that is to ſay immortall and happy) mee thynke verely that (yf man maye be a god to men as holy scripture ſpeaketh of Moiſes and other) the kynges of Spayne of late dayes (if I may ſpeake it without offence of other) may ſo much the more for theyr iuſt deſerteſ and good fortune be compared to thoſe goddes made of men (whom the antiquitie cauled Heroes and for theyr manyfolde benefites to man kynd honoured theym with diuine honoure) as theyr famous factes ſo farre excell al other, as I dare not ſpeake to ſuch as haue not yet harde or redde of the fame, leaſt the greatnessſe therof ſhulde at the firſt brunte ſo muſche afſonyſhe the reader that he myght geue the leſte credite to the autoure of this booke, who neuertheleſſe hath moſte faythfully wrytten this hystorye of ſuche thyngeſ wherof he hath ſene a greate parte him ſelfe (as being by

Mausolus.
Cunnyng
artificers.

The Tabernacle
of Moiſes.
The Temple of
Salomon.
Hyram.

Trewe glorie.

Great and
ſumptuous works.

Fame differeth
from true glorie.

Absolute glorie.

What is true
glorie.

The kynges of
Spayne.
Heroes.

The certenteſe of
this hystorye

The house of the
contractes of
India.

The counsayl for
the Indies
The heroicall
factes of the
Spanyarde.

Great Alexander.

The Spanyarde
warres in the
Indies.

The benefites that
the Indians haue
recaued by the
Spanyarde.

Lybertie.
The Canibales,

Fearful idlenesse.

Isai. 65.

The warres of
Moises.

The Indians
subdued to the
faith.
Isai. 42.

The contemplation
of goddes workes.

The Christian
Empire enlarged.

The conversion of
the gentylies.

Leuiathan.

the moste catholyke and puissaunt kynge Ferdinando appoynted a commissionarie in th[e]affayres of India) and gathered the residewe partly by information and partly out of the wrytinges of such as haue byn (as Vyrgyll wryteth of Eneas, *Et quorum pars magna fui*) that is, doers and parte of such thynge as are conteyned in the hyflorie: as Gouernours, Lieuetenautes, Capitaynes, Admirals, and Pylotes, who by theyr paineful trauayles and prowes, haue not onely subdued these landes and seas, but haue also with lyke diliger ce commytted th[e]order therof to wrytinge: And not this onely, but for the better tryall of the trewth herein, haue and yet doo in maner dayly fende from thenfe into Spayne such monumentes as are most certeyne testifinonies of theyr doyng, as yow may reade in dyuers places in this booke. This newe worlde is nowe so much frequented, the Ocean nowe so well knownen, and the commodities so greate, that the kynge erected a houfe in the citie of Siuile (cauled the house of the contractes of India) perteynyng only to th[e]affayres of the Ocean, to the whilc al such resorte for necessaries as attempte anye vyage to this newe worlde, and lykewyse at theyr returne make theyr accompte to the counsayle for the Indies for the golde and siche other thynge as theyr bryng from themse. It is therefore apparent that the heroicall factes of the Spaniardes of these days, deserue so greate prayse that th[e]autour of this booke (beinge no Spanyarde) doth woorthely extolle theyr doyng aboue the famous actes of Hercules and Saturnus and such other which for theyr glorious and vertuous enterpryses were accoumpted as goddes amone men. And surely if great Alexander and the Romans which haue rather obteyned then deserued immortall fame amone men for theyr bluddye victories only for theyr owne glory and amplifyinge theyr empire obteyned by flawghter of innocentes and kepte by violence, haue byn magnified for theyr doinges, howe much more then shal we thynde these men worthy iust commendations which in theyr mercyfull warres ageynst these naked people haue so vfed them felues towarde them in exchaungyng of benefites for victorie, that greater commoditie hath therof enfewed to the vanquished then the victourers. They haue taken nothyng from them but such as theym felues were wi wyllinge to departe with, and accoumpted as superfluities, as golde, perles, precious stones and such other: for the which they recompenseed theym with siche thynge as they muche more esteemed. But sum wyll fay, they possesse and inhabyte theyr regions and vse theym as bondemen and tributaries, where before they were free. They inhabite theyr regions indeede: Yet fo, that by theyr diligence and better manuryng the same, they maye nowe better susteyne both, then one before. Theyr bondage is siche as is much rather to be desired then theyr former libertie which was to the cruel Canibales rather a horrible licenciosenesse then a libertie, and to the innocent so terrible a bondage, that in the myndes of theyr ferefull idlenesse, they were euer in daunger to be a pray to those manhuntyng woolues. But nowe thanked be God, by the manhadde and policie of the Spaniardes, this deuelyshe generation is so confusid, partly by the flaughter of siche as could be by no meanes be brought to ciuitie, and partly by reseruyng such as were ouercome in the warres, and conuertyng them to a better mynde, that the prophecie may herein bee fulfylled that the wolle and the lambe shall feede together, and the wylde fieldes with the vale of Achor, shalbe the folde of the heard of gods people. Moises as the minister of the lawe of wrath and bondage geuen in fyre and tempestes, was commaunded in his warres to saue neyther man, woman, nor chylde, and yet brought no commoditie to the nations whom he ouercame and possesid their landes. But the Spaniardes as the mynisters of grace and libertie, brought vnto these newe gentyles the victorie of Chryftles death wherby beinge subdued with the worldy frode, are nowe made free from the bondage of Sathanas tyrannie, by the myghty poure of this triumphante victourer, whom (as sayth the prophet) god hath ordeyned to be a lyght to the gentyles, to open the eyes of the blynde, and to delyuer the bounde owt of prysoun and captiuitie. What other men do phantasie herein, I can not tell: but fuer I am, that lyke as the slowe and brutyfylle wyttes, for the felendernesse of theyr capacitie and effeminate hartes, do neuer or feldome lyste vp theyr myndes to the contemplation of goddes workes and maiestie of nature, but lyke brute beastes lookyng euer downewarde, thynde the worlde to be in maner no bygger then theym owne dungheylles or cagies, lytle paffynge whether the Chrystian faith do spreide through the worlde, or bee dryuen to one corner: Euen so al good wyttes and honest natures (I doubt not) wyl not onely reioyce to see the kyngedom of God to bee so farre enlarged vpon the face of the earthe, to the confusion of the deuell and the Turkyfylle Antichryste, but also do the vttermost of theyr poure to further the same. For surely, as Gonfalus Ouidius wryteth to the Emperours maiestie in his hyflorie of the Wefle Indies, that he thynketh hym no trewe Spanyarde whiche reioyseth not in the good fortune of theyr kynges by whose ayde and godly zeale this myghtie portion of the worlde hath byn added to the flocke of Chryftles congregation, Euen so do I thinken them no trewe Chrystian men that do not reioyce with the Angels of heaven for the deliuerie of these owre brootherne, owre fleshe, and owre bones, from the handes of owre commune enemie the oulde serpente who hath so longe had them in his possesyon, vnyll the fulnesse of the gentyles be accomlyshed accordyng to the time prefinite by hym, who vnto the yeare after his incarnation. M. CCCC. lxxxii. hath suffered the greate serpente of the sea Leuiathan, to haue siche dominion in the Ocean and to caste such mytles in the eyes of men, that sence the creation of the worlde vnyll the yeare before named, there hath byn no passage from our knownen partes of the world to these newe landes, whereas nowe the same

are mooste certeynely knownen to be not past. xxx dayes faylyng from Spayne. Neyther yet had the church of Europe any knowleage of the myghtie Chrystian Empire of Preciosus Iohannes, otherwyse cauled Presbyter Iohannes, Emperour of many Chrystian nations in Ethiope, vntyll the yeare of Chryste. M. CCCC. xxxii. as largely appeareth in the nauigations of the Portugales, and especiallly in the booke of Damianus a Goes, wrytten to the byshop of Rome, Paule the thyrde of that name, of the sayth and religion of the Ethiopians which they haue hadde fence the tyme of the Apostles. A thynge certes most woorderfull, and suche, that if the same were not hydde hetherto by gods vnfercheable prouidence, I can not but thynke much negligence or ignorance in owr forefathers and predicesours vntyll the dayes of the ryght noble, prudent, and Catholike kyng of Aragon Don Ferdinand grandfather to Th[e]Emperours maestie by his eldest dowghter, and to the queenes hygnesse by his seconde dowghter the most vertuous lady queene Catherine her graces mootier: A princ doublefesse of suche nobilitie, prowes, magnificencie, and all other vertues commendable in a prince, that who so shall indifferently way all his doinges and good successe in all his affayres, comparinge the same to th[e]enterpryses and doinges atchyued by siche famous princes in whome the Greekes and Romans haue so greatly gloryed, maye with one eye perceave not only howe farre his noble factes do surmount theirs, but also wel confyder what noble braunches of iffewhe were lyke to spryne owt of so woorthy a stocke. And surely if senge the begynning of the worlde, the fauour of god toward men hath byn knownen by such benefites and blesfynges as he hath geuen to men, it seemeth to me that in maner (onely Chryste excepted) there neuer lyued man to whom god hath geuen greater benefites and shewed more fauoure. Great doublefesse was the fauour and mercie that god shewed vnto Noe, by whom he sauad the remanent of mankynde beinge but fewe in number. But much greater was the grace which he shewed to kyng Ferdinand vnder whom and by whose meanes he sauad not onely the bodies but also the soules of innumerable millions of men inhabytyng a great part of the worlde heretofore vnkownen and drowned in the deluge of errore. What shulde I here speake of Abraham the father of sayth whose promyfes were great, and he cauled the frende of god: Dyd he or his posteritie see Israell increase to such multitudes and nations as kyng Ferdinandos posteritie may see th[e]increafe of this spirituall Israell vnto whome as a feconde Abraham he was the father of sayth? Moyses was so great in the syght of god that he diclofed vnto hym his secrete name, and miraculously caused a corner of the sea to open at his prayer. But howe greater a myracle was it that he opened vnto the nauie of Don Ferdinand the greate Ocean thought before that tyme to bee without ende, where nevertheles he and his posteritie the kynges of Spayne haue nowe planted a newe Israell muche greater then that whiche Moyses ledde through the red sea. It were here superfluous to speake of David whom Godde founde a man accordyng to his hertes defyre: and yet maye it be doubted whether his plages and scourges were greater then his benefites? His sonne Salomon for al his inconstant and waueryng wyfedome and his great ryches obteyned by his nauigations to Ophir, yet was there at this tyme no knowleage of Antipodes, neyther dydde any of his shypes sayle abowt the hole worlde, perce the Ocean, and trauerse the Equinoctial line to th[e]inferior hemispherie or halfe globe of the earthe and sea as dyd the famous shyppe Victoria sent furth by Th[e]Emperours maestie. A thynge doublefesse so strange and marueylous that as the lyke was never done before, so is it perhaps never lyke to be done ageyne: so farre haue the nauigations of the Spaniardes excelled the vyage of Iafon and the *Argonauta* to the region of Colchos, or all that euer were before. And although in the booke of kynges and Paralipomenon it bee hyperbolically wrytten that in the dayes of Salomon golde and syluer were in Hierusalem in maner as plentiful as flones, and that his seruantes brought from Ophir fourre hundredth and fiftie talentes of gold, yet do we not reade that any of his shypes were so laden with golde that they soone, as dyd a shyppe of kyng Ferdinandos as yow maye reade in the last booke of the fyrste Decade. Neyther was the dominion of Salomon extended from the ryuer of Euphrates to the lande of the Philistians and th[e]extreme confines of Egypte to be compared with the large Empire whiche the kynges of Spayne haue in the west Indies: Nor his ryches of golde to be thought much in respect of that which hath byn brought from thensc into Spayne as shall playnely appere to al siche as wyll feeke to knowe the truth hereof. But to let passe to speake any further of the myracles which god hath wrought by the handes of this noble princ in this newe world among these newe gentyles. Is it not well knownen to all the world what a defence and brasen wall he hath byn to all Chrystdome in that he hath quite dryuen out of Spayne the Moores or Sarafens and Iewes which so many hundredth years possessed a greate parte of Spayne to no smaule daungioure of the hole Christian Empire, and yet could neuer before bee cleane vanquysshed vntyll the dayes of this noble and Catholyke princ so named for his warres ageynste the infidelles, whom God rayfed for a Capitayne of his people as an other Gedion vnder whose banner they myght ouercome theyr enemies and purge his vineyard from siche wycked weeds. The which thynge doublefesse may seeme so much the greater and more difficulte, forasmuch as in the myddel of the chiefe heate of his chargeable

Prester John
the Christian
Emperour of
Ethiope.

Don Ferdinand
kyng of Aragon.

The fauour of god
knownen by his
benefites.

Noe.
What god hath
wrought by kyng
Ferdinando.

Abraham.
Spirituall Israell.

Moyses.

Dauid.
Salomon.
Ophir.
Antipodes.
The navigation
rounde about the
worlde.

The dominion
of Salomon.
Paral. 9.
The Indies.

The warres of
kyng Ferdinand
ageynste the
Saracens.

The conqueste of
the Indies

The conqueste
of Naples.

The Emperours
maiestie.

Gen. 17.

The kinges
maiestie

Apostrophe to
Englande.

Isal. 2.

warres ageynste the Moores of Granada, he euen then and at the same tyme sente furth shypes for the conquestyng of the Indies, as though he and the nation of the Spanyardes had byn appoynted by god eyther to subdue the enemies of the fayth or to bringe them to Christes religion. The selfe same kyng Ferdinand also abowte the yeare of Chryst. 1503. sente a nauie of shypes into Italy, where they vanquysshed, chafed, and slewe the Frenchmen, and recovered the kyngedome of Naples with all the dominions belongyng therunto. By which noble victory, his succession and posterite as the[e]mpemours maiestie and nowe his sonne the kyng owe master and soueraigne lorde haue euer fence enjoyed th[e]inheritaunce of the same as of antiquite by iust and ryght tyle dewe to them and theyr predicesours. And as it is the nature of god not only to shewe his loue and fauour to such as haue pleased hym, but also to poure furth the plentie of his grace vpon theyr succession from generation to generation, so hath he with lyke felicitie prospered the reigne of Th[e]empemours maiestie who by his wistdome and prowes hath not only pollitikly governed, but also augmented and enlarged such dominions as fel to hym by discente of inheritaunce. What shuld I speake of his warres and conquestes in India, in Aphrike, in Italie, in Fraunce, in Germanie, and in Flaunders: all the which to be declared accordyngely wolde rather require hole volumes then fewe sheetes of paper. Yet hath one in fewe woordes effectually expressed his dominions and conquestes in these veres folowynge,

*Impiger expauit rapidas transire per vndas
Oceani Alcides : continuuisse gradum.
Maximus at Caesar, PLVS VLTRA tendere cursum
Auspis, et ignotis est dare iura locis.
Et domita aurifera nunc victor gente reuersus,
Catera sub scypho ponat ut ipse suo.
Nam patet omnipotens ut famam terminet astris
Iussit, et imperium fineat Oceano.*

¶ An other also brefely hath declared the same in these veres.

*Consortem Imperij voluit quia Iuppiter orbis,
Astra Deo cedunt, Carole terra tibi.*

And certes who so well considereth the progenie of kynges that in so shorte a time haue linially descended from Don Ferdinand, and howe many kyngedomes they possee, may see that God hath fulfylled in hym also the promises and blesfynges of Abraham, as to make hym the father of many nations, and his feede to growe great vpon the earth: Also that many kynges shulde come furth of his loynes, and to make a perpetuall league and conuenaunt with hym and his posterite to bee theyr god for euer. And here to omytte to speake of other: Was there euer better hope or more likenes then now, that these blesfynges and promyses of god shulde continewe in this princely progenie, syth the vertues and felicitie of them al doo so shyne and florisse in owr noble and gratiouse prince kyng Phyllype, to whom euen in his youth his father (occupied in the warres of Italie and Aphrike) commytted the hole gouernaunce of the kyngedomes of Spayne and the Indies. Of his behauour in Englannde, his enemies (which canker, vertue never lacked) They I say (if any such yet remaine) haue greatest caute to reporte well: ye so well, that yf his naturall clemencie were not greater then was theyr vnnaturall indignation they knowe them selues what myght haue folowed. The properties of fooles and wyse men are declared in these owld veries.

*Quid stulti proprium ? Non posse et velle nocere.
Quid sapientis opus : Non velle et posse nocere.*

That is to say: What is the properte of a foole? To wyl to doo hurte and can not. What is the woork of a wyse man? Not to wyll to hurte though he may. But whether he hath lacked poure or wyll, it is knownen to barbers and blere eyde men. Who lamented theyr folly more then he? Who more humbly admittyd theyr futes and supplications? Ye who obtayned theyr pardon but he? Beynge a Lion he behaued hym selfe as a lambe, and strooke not his enemie hauynge the swoorde in his hande. Stoope Englannde sloop, and learne to knowe thy lorde and master, as horfes and other brute beastes are taught to doo. Be not indocible lyke Tygers and dragons, and such other monstres noyous to man kynde. God by the mouth of Ifaias the prophet reprocheth the Israelite that they knewe not so well theyr diewtie towarde hym as dyd the brute beastes the mangiers of theyr masters. The oxe and the asse (sayth he) knoweth the mangier of theyr master, but Israell knoweth not me. For shame let vs not be worse then oxen and asses, and lyke vnto horfes and mules in whom is no vnderstandinge. But O vñthankfull Englannde and voyde of honest shame? Who hath geuen the the face of a hoore and toonge of a serpent without shame to speake venomous woordes in secretes ageynst the annoyncted of god. O paynted hoore that hast Chryste in thy mouth and the deuyl in thy harte. Hathe not the pocke of thy licentiufulness bruste furth in maner to thyne owne destruction. Howe longe wylt thou nuryfle in thy boosome

that serpente whose nature is to deuoure her moother? Take a vomyte in tyme least thy disease become vncurable. What neede I rehearse vnto the thy manysolde infirmitis and deformities whiche thou arte faulen into by thyne owne outragiousnesse? If the greeves of them bee to thee vnsenfible by reason of thy feblenesse and longe sickenes, take vnto the that glasse wherin thou gloryest with the Iewe and thynkest that thou feest al thynges and canst judge all mysteris: Looke I say in that pure glasse and beholde thy owne deformities, which thou canste not or wylte not feele. I feare greatly that if thou looke therein diligently and looke even through thy selfe, thou wylte abhorre thy selfe to see howe many monstres ly hid in the vnder the shape of man. There is even nowe great talkes of the in the mouthes of all men that thou haft of late yeres brought furthe many monsters and straunge byrthes, wherof dyuers men make dyuers interpretacions more monstrous then the monstres them selues. But shall I brefely and simply declare vnto thee the signification of thy monstres? Fyrst then confyder that they are monstres of mankynde and not of other beastes. Secundarily marke well that in them al, the heade is perfect, so that the monstrofie groweth owt of the body, although not owt of the hole body but certeyne partes therof. But not to go to fare. Confyder ageyne that disorder of the partes is a deformite to the hole. One hath well interpreted that such monstrous byrthes signifie the monstrous and deformed myndes of the people mysshapened with phantaſtical opinions, dissolute lyuynge, licentious talke, and such other vicious behauoures which monstrously deform the myndes of men in the fygth of god who by fuche signes dooth certifie vs in what similitude we appere before hym, and thereby gyueth vs admonition to amende before the day of his wrath and vengeance. What deformed beastes are more monstrous then lyinge, rebellion, strife, contention, priuie malice, flaunderynge, mutterynge, conspiracy, and such other devilyſſhe imaginations. But O Englaunde whyt tyme is gyuen thee, circumcife thy harte. Put to onely thy good wyl, and thou mayſte fynde grace and faouore to recouer thyne aunciente bewtie whiche hath fo longe been defaced. Thou haſte nowe a kynge and queene that defyre thee to remember thy dewtie, and holde theyr armes abrode to embrase thee of thou wylt drawe nere vnto them. They are fory to occupie the whyppe of thou mightest otherwylle bee brought to obedience. But yf thou take pleaſure to perfis in frowarde stooberneſſe, knowe thou that they are Lions whelpes and conquerours of monſters whereof thou haſt had ſucche experience, that proudly truſtyng in thyne owne strengthe, and attemptyng lyke an other Nemroth to buylde a newe towre of conuincion, the woorkes of thy giantes were miraculoſly ouerthrowne by a woman who deliuereſt thee from that captiuitie, whereby thou oughteſt to knowe the daungour thou waſt in, and bee thankfull to thy deliuereſt. Beware therefore leaſte whyle thou contemneſt the peaceable princes that god hath ſent the, thou bee lyke vnto Ifopes frogs to whom for theyr vniquietneſſe, Iupiter ſent a hearon to picke the in the hedes. Conſider what beneſtis thou mayſt receaue at theyr handes if thou doo thy dewtie towarde them. Conſider ageyne that as they are able, ſo may thy gentelneſſe make them wylyng to recompence the fame. Stoppe thyne eares from vayne fables as from the inchauntinge Mermaydes. For as manye ſpeakē of Robbyn Hoode and of his bowe that neuer ſhot therin, fo doo fooles prate of ſuch thynges as they knowe not. But O god? what phantaſies are nowe in the headeſ of men? Howe redy they are to inuent lyes and tales? and of howe ſmaul ſparkes they kyndle great flames? Summe are fo curioſ to fynde faute in other, that for lacke of iuft matter woorthy reproche in them whom they defyre to deprave, they ſpeakē euyll of theyr parentes and kynred of whom they knowe as lyttle. And not fo ſatifyed they diſpife and with lyngē diſprayſe theyr hole nation and countrey. Ye ſum take ſuch pleaſure herein, that if they can fynde noughe elſ to diſprayſe, they wyl fynde faute in ſuche as they fauour not, bycause they weare not theyr apparell as they doo, or perhaſe are not ſo effeminate as they, or eate not as they eate, or fight not as they fygth, fo parciall is the iudgemente of fooles in theyr owne rudeneſſe, thynkyng them felues the better for diſprayſyng of other. Spayne is a beggerly countrey ſayth one: Th[e]emperour is but poore ſayth an other: He is deade ſayth an other: The Indies haue rebelleſt ſayth an other, and eyther there commeth no more golde from thenſe, or there is no more founde nowe: with ſuche other falſe and licentious talke diuiſed by vniquiet braines in whos heads the hammers of fedition ſeaſe not to forge ingens of iniquitie. If I ſhulde here anſwe to all theſe querels particularly and as the woorthynesse of the thyng requireth, I myght fynde matter ſufficient to make a volume of iuste quantitie and perhaſe be tedious to ſumme. Yet not to paſſe ouer fo great a matter vntouched, and partly to ſtoppe the mouthes of ſuche impudente lyers, I haue thought good to ſpeakē ſumwhat hereof. Fyrſt therfore to ſpeakē of Spayne, and by the teſtimonie of oulde autours to declare the commodities therof: Plinic a graue and faſthul autour, in the laſt boke and laſt chapitre of his natural history greatly commendyng Italy aboue al other countreys, giueth the ſecond prayſe vnto Spaine, aſwel for al ſuch thynges as in maner the heuen can geue and the earth bryngē furth for the commoditye of thiſ lyfe as alſo for the excellente wittes of men and Ciuite gouernance. Alſo Diodorus Siculus in the ſixt booke of his Bibliotheca ſpeakyng of Spayne (cauled of the Greces Iberia) writhet that when in the mountaynes named Pyrinei th[e]inhabitantes burnte vp the wooddes, there ranne owt of the mountaynes as it were dyuers ſtreames of pure ſyluer molten by the heate of the fyre. But the estimation and price of ſyluer beinge at thoſe dayes to them vnknoƿen, the Phenician marchaunteſ bought the fame of them for thynges of finaule value: And cariengē

Monſtrous
byrthes.The ſignifications
of monſtrous
byrthes.The deformity
of monſtrous
myndes.The kyng and
Queene.How curioſ
ſumme are to
fynde faute in
other.

Lyes Imagined.

Commendations
of SpainRyche ſyluer
myndes in Spayne.

*The Romane
inriched by the
syluer of Spayne.*

*The
Carthaginenses
inriched by the
syluer of Spain.*

*The commodities
of Spaine*

*The sygne of
the steeple.*

*Englande
impouerished,
Spayne inriched.*

*Siluer mines
founde of late
in Spayne.*

*Syluer brought
from Peru into
Englande.*

*The emperours
reuenues from
the Indias.*

*The Ilandes of
the South sea.*

*The Ilandes of
Malucas.*

it into Grecia, Asia, and other countreys, got great rycheſſe therby. For the defyre of gaynes (ſayth he) ſo greatly moued the marchauantes, that when more ſyluer remayned then myght lade theyr ſhippes, they tooke the leade frome theyr ankers, and put ſyluer in the place therof. The Phenices by theſe gaynes beinge made very ryche, dyd affigne many colonies both in Sicilie and the Ilandes there abowt, and alſo in Libya, Sardinia, and Iberia. But after many years when the Iberians (that is the Spaniardes) knewe the price of ſyluer, and applied them ſelues to the ſeekyng of metals and founde great plentie of ſyluer, they obteyned greate ryches therby forasmuch as in maner al that earth of the mountaynes is ſo replenyfied with ſyluer that it is a marueylous thynge to conſyder the nature of the region and the continual laboure of the woorkemen in thoſe mynes. Lykewyſe when afterwarde the Romans ſubdued the Iberians, the Italiants which for the defyre of gaynes ſearched thoſe metals, gotte great rycheſſe by the fame. For they deputed to that laboure a multitude of bowghte ſerauantes, whiche ſearchyng the vaynes of metals in dyuers places, and percyng the earth dyuers wayes for the ſpace of many furlonges, brought furthe great plentie of golde and ſyluer. But the rycheſſe of theſe mynes was fyrt founde at ſuch tyme as the Carthaginenses (the enemies of the Romane Empire) had the Iberians in ſubiection: which was the cauſe that theyr poure afterwarde increased. For, with monye hyrингe the beſt and moſte experte ſouldiers, they kepte greuous warres ageynſt their enemys. And not vfyng the ayde eyther of their owne ſouldiers or their associates, they were a terrour to the Romanes, Sicilians, and Libyans, whom they brought into great daungour by reaſon they paſted them al in abundance of golde and ſyluer. With better fortune therefore, and greater hope of gayne are ryche metals ſought in Spayne, the goodneſſe of whose foyle yeldeth cloddes of earth conteynyng much golde and ſyluer. And theſe be the very wordes of Diodorus Siculus, which the later wryters doo also conſirme. For Iulius Solinus in his Polyhiſtor, compareth Spayne to the beſt countreys in plentie of grayne, vyttales, oyle, ſyluer, golde, and Iron. Likewyſe Strabo, Statius, and Claudius, do no leſſe commendē it. It were to longe here to ſpeak of the great plentie of fine woolles lytle inferiour vnto ows: alſo abundance of ſugar, vines, pomegranates, limondes, and orangies in ſuch plentie that they ſuffice not only Spayne, but alſo in maner all Europe: whereas the apples and crabbes of Englande are ſcarſely able to ſerue it ſelfe. And althowghe here ſumme wyll obiecte, that they lacke corne, woodde, and certeyne other thyngeſ, yet are theyr commodities ſo great otherwyſe, that al ſuch thyngeſ are brought them owt of other countreys for theyr wares: and that in ſuch plentie, that they are there better chepe then euer they were in Englande ſince the ſigne of the ſteeple the poore mans Inne was pulled downe in all places. Summe for lacke of other matter, fynde greate faute that in trauaylyng in Spayne, men ſhalbe ſerued with halfe a henne, and go to the cookes for theyr meatē and to the tauerne for theyr drynke. And what then I praye yow? What inconuenience enſeweth hereof? Is it not better ſo to doo them to pay thyſe for one thinge as is the maner to doo in ſumme of ovr Innes and in tauernes where all that eate roſte meatē are beaten with the ſpitte, as where they that of late in Barthelmeſe fayre payde forte penfe for a pygge, where the good man of the house was not a ſhamed to make his vaunte that he had made four ſhyllinges of a pygge, and had in one day taken four ſoune pounds for pygges. But if I ſhulde here particularly and at large declare howe Englande is in fewe yeares decayed and impouerished, and howe on the contrary parte Spayne is inryched, I ſhulde perhaps displease more in defrybyng the myſerie of the one, then pleafe other in exprefſyng the floryſhyng flate of the other, which by all reaſon is lyke dayly to increafe, awfull for the great rycheſſe that are yearly brought thyrther from the Indias, as alſo for the ryche ſyluer mynes that are founde of late in Spayne in the countrey of Asturia as I was credably informed by the worthy and learned gentleman Augustinus de Ceratta, Contador (that is) the auditour of the kynges myntes who had longe before byn furveyoure of the golde mynes of Peru, and brought from thenſe and from Rio de Plata. xiii. thouſand pounds weyght of ſyluer which was coyned to the kynges vſe in the towre of London where neuer ſo much hath byn ſeen at once as ſuche as haue byn wld officers in the mynte doo affirme. What ſhulde I heare ſpeakē of the golde which th[e] emperours maie[re] receaue frome all the Indias, whereas onely in the two meltyng shoppes of the gold mines of the Ilande of Hispaniola, is molten yearly three hundred thousande pounds weyght of viii. vnces to the pound, wherof the fyfte parte is dewe vnto hym, whiche amounteth to three ſcore thouſande weyght yearly. Yet doo I not here ſpeakē of the golde mines of the other Ilandes and the firme lande reaſhyng, viii. thouſande myles from the north to the ſouth: Neyther of the ryche Ilandes of the fourth ſea cauled Mare del Sur, where the kyngē of one lyttle Ilande named Tacarequi, Margaritea, or de las Perlas, lying in the goulf of Saynt Michael, payeth yearly for his tribute a hundredth pound weight of perles: Neyther yet of the fyfte parte of other thyngeſ, as precious ſtones, brafile, goſſampine cotton, ſpices, and dyuers other thyngeſ, wheras alſo the ryche Ilandes cauled the Maluchas perteyne to the inheritaunce of Caſtile, althowgh the kyngē of Portugale enjoy them for certeyne yeares by compoſition. But the Indies haue rebelleſſ (fay they) and there commeth no more golde from thenſe. But what if ſumme of them haue rebelleſſ dooth it therby folowe that there commeth no more gold from the other that lyue vnder obedience? But if thou wylte fay that they haue al rebelleſſ at once, thou muſt proue that thou fayest eyther by hystorie or wytnesſe of ſuch as know the truth herof, as I (hauing made diligent ſearche for the fame) am able to proue the contrarie, and that

suche talke is onely imagined by busie headdes. Ageyne: what if they haue rebelled in summe prouinces? dooth it folowe that they maye not ageyne be brought vnder subiection as were oftentimes the prouinces of the Romanes and as were in owe dayes dyuers countreys of Englaunde whiche haue byn fore afflicted with that plague. But whether the fandes of the ryuers and the mountaynes of the Indies bee so emptied with golde that no more can be founde there, I thinke it here superfluous to answere to this obiectiōn, forasmuch as it is hereafter confuted in the booke of metals where yow shall fynde by experiance that metals growe and increafe, and that after certeyne yeares, suche owlde caues of the mynes as haue byn dygged, are ageyne replenyfshed with vre: Also that the sprynges of suche mountaynes turnyng their course and breakyng furth in other places, bryng with them greate plentie of such golden sande as is founde in the ryuers into the which they faule. What impudencie is it therefore with woordes of reproche to caule hym poore whose poure is so greate, his treasure fo infinite, and his doinges so chargeable, that I beleue that when so euer it please almyghtie God to caule hym frome this lyfe to the greate damage of all Chrystendome, it shalbe harde to fynde an other that shall in all pointes bee so well able to suplye that roome and mayntayne the imperiall dignite. Let al honest natures therfore learne to speake well of princes accordyng to the sentece *De Principiis nil nisi bonum*, forasmuch as they are the ministres of god who hath their hertes in his hande and ruleth the same as feemeth besle vnto hym. For there is no poure neyther good nor badde, but of god: and he that refysteth or speaketh euyll of the poure, refisteth and speaketh euyll of god. Thou shalt not speake euyll of the prince or ruler of thy people faith faint Paule.

But wheras no ē by the poure of Neptunus (I wot neire with what wynde) I haue byn dryuen thus farre from my nauigatōns, I haue thought good to turne my sayles and to folowe the ordinarie courſe which I beganne, and by th[e] example of this worthy capitayne kyng Ferdinand, encourage al other to theyr poure to attempte the lyke vyages: As touchyng the which in fewe woordes to declare my opynyon, if any man shulde ask me what I thynke these thinges wyll growe to in tyme, I wyll answere as dooth the autoure of this booke, that when I confydere howe farre owe posteritie shall see the Christian religion enlarged, I am not able with toungue or penne to exprefse what I conceaue hereof in my mynd. Yet one thyng I fee which enforceth me to speake and lament, that the haruest is so great and the workemen so few. The Spanyardes haue shewed a good exemple to all Chryſtian nations to folowe. But as god is great and woorderfull in all his woorkes, so besyde the portion of lande perteynyng to the Spanyardes (beinge eyght tymes bygger then Italeye as yow maye reade in the laſte booke of the ſeconde Decade) and befide that which perteineth to the Portugales, there yet remayneth an other portion of that mayne lande reachyng towarde the northeast, thought to be as large as the other, and not yet knownen but only by the ſea coaſtes, neyther inhabyted by any Christian men: whereare neuertheleſſe (as wrythe Gemma Phrifus) in this lande there are many fayre and frutefull regions, hygh mountaynes, and fayre ryuers, with abundaunce of golde and dyuers kyndes of beaſtēs. Alſo cities and towres ſo wel buylidē and people of ſuſh ciuitie, that this parte of the worlde ſeemeth lytle inferior to owe Europe, if th[e] inhabitaunteſ had receaued owe religion. They are wytte people and refiſe not barteryng with ſtrangars. These regions are cauled Terra Florida and Regio Baccalearum or Bacchallaoſ of the which yow maye reade ſumwhat in this booke in the vyage of the worthy owlde man yet lyuing Seabſtiane Cabote, in the vi. booke of the thyrde Decade. But Cabote touched only in the north corner and moſt barbarous parte hereof, from whence he was repulſed with Iſe in the moneth of Iuly. Neuertheleſſe, the weſt and ſouth partes of theſe regions haue fence byn better ſearched by other, and founde to bee as we haue fayde before. The chiefe citie in the ſouthweſt partes of theſe regions, is cauled Temixtetan, or Mexico in maner under the circle cauled Tropicus Cancri, and ſtrongely defended by the nature of the place. For it ſtandeth in a very great lake hauyng abowt it innumerable bridges, and buyldyngeſ to be compared to the woorkes of Dedalus. Th[e] inhabitaunteſ alſo can wryte and reade. Summe wryters connecte this lande to the firme lande of Afia: But the truthe hereof is not yet knownen. And althoughe the Spanyardes haue certeyne colonies in that part of this lande that is nowe cauled Noua Hispania, yet are the people for the moſte parte Idolatours. Howe muche therfore is it to be lamented, and howe greatly dooth it ſounde to the reproche of all Chryſtendome, and eſpecially to ſuſh as dwell nerest to theſe landes (as we do) beinge muſe nearer vnto the fame then are the Spanyardes (as within. xxv. dayes ſaylinge and leſſe) howe muſe I faye ſhall this ſounde vnto owe reproche and inexcusable ſlothfulneſſe and negligence bothe before god and the worlde, that ſo large dominions of ſuſh tractable people and pure gentiles, not beinge hytherto corrupted with any other falſe religion (and therefore the eaſier to bee allured to embraſe oweſ) are nowe knownen vnto vs, and that we haue no refiecte neyther for goddes caufe nor for owe owne commoditiē to attempte ſumme vyages into theſe coaſtes, to doo for our partes as the Spanyardes haue doone for theyrs, and not euer lyke ſheepe to haunte one trade, and to doo nothynge worthy memorie amonſte men or thankes before god, who maye herein woorthely accufe us for the slackeneſſe of owe diewtie towarde hym. Saynt Paule the doctoure of the gentiles (to whose Apoſtelfhippe alſo theſe newe gentiles doo perteine) was of ſuſh zeale toward the Iewes whom god had reiecte, that

The navigations
of the Spanyardes.

Itali is. 1020 myles
in lengthe and.
126. in breadthe.

The lande cauled
Terra florida, and
regio baccalearum.

Looke the last
booke, thirde
decade.
This region is
now cauled
Hispania. Sum
thinkne that this
cite is Quinsai of
Marcus Paueſ.

Looke the last
booke of the 3.
decade, and the
beginning of the
booke of the
landes lately
found.

The godlye zeale
of S. Paule.

Isai. 66.

Gregorie the First.

Th[e] office of
byshoppes.England
converted to the
faith of christ.This vnfride was
afterward
named Boneface.Whether any may
bee compelled to
the faythe.The tyme of
miracles.Miracles of late
dayes.Howe Israell
possessed the
lande of
promise.Exira. v.
cap. 4.

he wysshed hym selfe to bee accursed of god for theyr sakes. He went from Damasus to Arabie, preached the gospell in Grecia, came prisoner to Rome, was scourged and stoned, and suffered thryse shypwracke, what then thinke yow he wold do if he were now aliae? Is it to be thought that he wolde not aduenture xxv. dayes faylyng to come to such a marte of soules in such redineffe to bee easely obteyned? I beleue verely that neyther death, nor the deuyll, nor Leuiathan, nor the worlde, shulde let hym but that he wolde geue th[e]onset ageynst them all in hope of victorie by hym by whom he fayth he can doo all thynges. He was not negligent in his office nor ignorant of his rewarde, but trusted to the promesse of him that fayde by the mouth of the prophet Isai: Of them that shalbe fauied, I wyl fende sum to the gentyles in the sea, into Aphrike and Libia, Italie, and Grecia, and into the Ilandes a farre of, to them that haue not harde of me, and haue not seene my glorie. The like zeale that Paule had, and proceedyng of the same sprite, hath euer fence Chrystes tyme, moued not only the Apostles, but also many other famous and godly men (as superiuirs of his testamente) to fende owt preachers into dyuers partes of the worlde to shewe furth the gladde tdynges of the gospell. By this zeale dyd Gregorie byshoppe of Rome and fyrste of that name, when he fawe Englysshe mens chyldren in Rome and asked what nation they were, when answere was made hym in the laten tounge that they were Angli, (that is, Englysshe men) he sayd (alludyng to the similitude of the worde) that they myght wel be cauled Angeli, that is, Angels: Meanyng therby that lyke as god had done his part in geuyng them bodies of natural bewtie and comelynesse, so it apperteyned to his office beinge the cheefe pastoure of goddes flocke, to prouide that theyr soules might be made woorthy to inhabite such bodies and the hole nation consecrated vnto god by baptisme. For he fayde furthermore: It is meete that vnto these also, the gospell of life bee preached: And hereupon immediatly sent preachers into Englande whereby the hole nation was in shorte tyme conuerted to Christes faith, although sum had receaued the gospell long before euen from Chrystes tyme by the preaching of Ioseph of Arimathia who asked the body of Chryste of Pilote, and buryed it reverently. I wolde to god that there were now many mo such Gregories in the worlde: And that there might lyke zeale and gentelnesse bee founde in vs Englysshe men towarde other nations, as we haue founde in other towarde vs. Ovre predicesoures were not vitterlye vmyndfull of these benefites, but applied them selues lykewise to spredethe gospell in other nations. For Vadianus in his booke *De tribus terra partibus*, wryteth, that more then feuen hundredthe yeares after the death of Chryste, one Vnefride an Englysshe man and byshoppe of Mogunce, (nowe cauled Mense) was the fyrste that taught the fayth of Chryste amoung the Germaynes, at such tyme as the Franks and Almaynes had passed ouer the ryuers of Rhene and Danubius, and by puttynge the garrissons of the Romans to flight, had possessed a great parte of theyr most notable prouinces. For albeit that these rude and barbarous nations then accustomed onely to warre and robborie did hardly admittethat holosome doctrine at the beginning. Yet by the pollicie and wisedome of the Frankes, it came so to passe that in maner through owt all Germanie, greate increase of the Christian religion folowed there mose ample victories, as the lyke successe is also seene in these barbarous nations subdued by the Spanyardes. Whereby it is apparent, that although sum holde opinion that none ought to bee compelled to the faythe, yet we see by experiance that without disputyng of opinions (leste the pacientes shulde dye before the phisitians agree of the remedie) these entrepryses haue taken good effect to the great glory of god who cauleth men vnto hym by dyuers meanes and at dyuers ages of the declinynge worlde, otherwyse nowe then in the tyme of Chryste and his Apostles when the poure of miracles was giuen vnto men to confirme the newe fayth which had yet preuaied no where in the worlde. Albeit, I beleue verely, that if we wolde take the matter in hande accordyngly, god wolde not forget to ayde vs with miracles if it shuld so be requisite, as yowe may reade in this booke howe he wrought miracles by the fayth of a simple mariner euen in th[e]infancie of faythe. And fuerlye, lyke as there is no caufe why we shulde anye thynges doubt of goddes goodnesse in this behalfe if the faut be not in ovre selues. Euen so, if we wolde fyrste sette owre handes to the plowe, we ought to hope that he wolde giencrease and woorke with vs as he hath doone with other, by whose prosperous successe we may plainly see that it was his wyll that suche thynges shulde go forwarde. For euen Israell to whom promise was made by signes and miracles that they shulde possesse the lande to th[e]inheritaunce wherof, the sea opened it selfe to giue them free paßage, yet were they commaunded by the poure of the swoordes to make way, with greate losse and slaughter of men and by force of armes to obteyne the lande promyfed to theyr fathers, whiche neuertheleſſe fewe of them possesseſſed that first fought for the fame, but leſte theyr carkeſſes in the wilderneſſe. Is it not also written of the Iuwes which repayred the walles of the citie of Hierusalem after theyr captiuitie in Babilon, that Nehemias theyr capitaine ſet the people in order with ſwordes, ſpeares, and bowes to defende the woorke-men? And that also euen the Princes of Iuda wrought vpon the walles and caried burdens lykewyſe that they wrought with one hande and held theyr swoordes in the other? And if it were lawful for Israell accordyng to the fleſſe, to vſe all meanes and pollicies to buylde vp the walles of earthly Hierusalem, howe muche more then ought the ſpirituall Israellites to

yne all possible meanes to buylde vp the walles and temples of spirituall Hierusalem, whose fundation is Christe, wyllyng all the nations of the worlde to be buylded vpon the same. It is the propertie of a wyfe buylder to vfe such tooles as the woorke requireth. And not at all tymes or in all woorkes to vfe one toole. For that that ferueth in softe tymber, wyl not ferue in knottie pieces, nor yet for stones. Th[e] expert phisitian vseth vehement remedies for desperate diseases: And cunninge surgians vse burnyng and cuttyng if the case so require, as in cuttyng of the fynger to saue the hande, or in cuttyng of the hand to saue the hole body. Ye it hath fumtymes so chaunfed that wheras men haue entended hurt, there hath good proceeded therof in fine: As he that wolde haue slaine Prometheus, wounded his wenne with his swoorde, whereby he was healed of that disease. So is god able to turne eyull into good, and to make thynges that are not, as thynges that are. Euen so although summe wyl obiecte that the defyre of golde was the chiese cause that moued the Spanyardes and Portugales to searche the newe founde landes, trewly albeit we shulde admittē it to bee the chiese cause, yet dooth it not folowe that it was the only cause, forasmuch as nothyng letteþ but that a man may bee a warrier or a marchaunte, and also a Christian. Therefore what so euer owre chiese intente bee, eyther to obteyne worldely fame or rychede, (aloughue the zeale to encrease Christian religion ought chiefly to moue vs) I wolde to god we wolde fyrt attempte the matter: And then I doubt not but that it wolde so come to passe with vs as it dyd with them who of longe time after the beginning of the worlde before menne were accustomed to eate fleshe, thought it first sufficient so to vfe them selues amounge beastes that they were not herte of them: but shortly after, vſed them for theyr commoditie: Then begunne to ware theyr skinnes: And in fine, fell to eatynge of theyr fleshe, and to vfe certeine partes of them for remedies ageinst diseases. Euen so may these barbarians by the only conuerſation with the Christians, (although they were enforced thereto) be brought to such familiaritie with ciuittie and vertue, that not onely we maye take greate commoditie thereby, but they may also herewiþ imbibe trewe religion as a thing accidental although neyther they nor we shulde feeke the same. For lyke as they that goo much in the soonne, are coloured therewith although they go not for that purpote, So may the conuerſation of the Christians with the gentyles induce them to owre religion, where there is no greater caufe of contrarye to refyste as is in the Iuves and Turkes who are alredy drowned in theyr confirmed errore. But these ſimple gentiles lyuynge only after the lawe of nature, may well bee lykened to a ſmooth and bare table vnpainted, or a white paper vnrwritten, vpon the which yow may at the fyrt paynte or wryte what yow lytle, as yow can not vppon tables alredy paynted, vnliffe you rafe or blot owt the fyrfle formes. They may alſo th[e]cſyler bee allured to the Christian fayth, for that it is more agreeable to the lawe of nature then eyther the ceremonious lawe of Moifes, or portentous fables of Mahometes Alcharon. If we were therfore as defyrous to enlarge the fayth of Chrysle as to feeke worldly gooddes, why do we deferre to aduenture that wherin we may doo bothe. We muſt not nowe looke for a newe Paule or doctoure of the gentiles to bee conuered by heauenly reuelations: Or for a newe Moifes to leade men through the ſea: Or for an Angel to cary men in the ayer from one place to an other as Habacucke the prophete was caryed by the heare of his heade from Iudea to Babilon: Or as Phylippe th[e]cſyler was caryed by the ſpirite from Gaza to Azotus: but muſt (as fayth the prophete Ifaias) every man exhorte his neyghbour, and bid his broothr be of good cheare: That the mafon and carpenter may buylde togither, and fay to the glewe or cemente, it is good and fale byndyng. What negligence and slackenesſe hath hythero byn in Christian men in this kynde of buyldynge of goddes lyuely temple, the greate clerke Eraſmus hath declared in his booke intituled Ecclesiastes, whose woordes for the woorthyneſſe of the autoure, I haue here thought good to reheare as they are wrytten by hym in the laten toungue in the fyrtle booke of the fayde woorke. He wryteth therfore as foloweth.

Andimus quotidianas queremonias deplorantium collapsam Christianam religionem, eamque ditionem que quondam complexa est uniuersum terrarum orbem, in has angustias effe contractam. Hoc igitur quibus ex animo dolet, eos decti ardentiſbus affiduisque votis flagitare a Christo ut operarios dignetur mettere in messem suam, aut (ut melius dicam) ſeminatores mettere in ſigillum suam. Deum immortalem, quantum in orbe patet agrorum in quibus aut non dum iactum eſt ſemen Euangelicum, aut ita iactum eſt, vt plus fit ſizaniarum quam tritici. Orbis minima pars eſt Europa: Omnia florentissima pars eſt Gracia et Asia minor in quam magno ſucceffu primum a Iudea demigravit Euangelium. At hac fore tota, nonne tenetur a Mahometanis et ijs qui Christi nomen habent iniuriam? Iam in Asia maiore qua latifimere patet, quid obſecro noſtrum eſt? quum ipſa Palestina unde primo effluxit lux Euangelica, ſervat Allophylis? In Africā vero quid noſtrum eſt? Nec dabitandum eſt quin in tanta vastitate regionum ſint populi rudes et ſimplices qui facile poſſent ad Christum alici, ſi mitterentur qui facerent bonam ſementem. Quid quod quotidie regiones haclenſis incognite reperiuntur, ferunturque ſupereſſe quo nullus adhuc noſtrum peruenit. Omitto nunc infinitam Iudeorum vim nobis admixtam: omitto plurimos qui titulo Christi tegunt Ethnicos: omitto tantas ſchismaticorum et haeticorum phalanges. Quantus in his effe prouentus Christo, ſi gnauia ac fideliſ mitterentur operarij qui iacent ſemen bonum, qui reuelant ſizaniam, qui plantent plantulas bonas, malas exterpent, qui extruant domum Dei, demoliantur ſtructuras non innitentes petrae Christo, denique qui metant maturam ſegdem, ſed Christo

The buylding
of spirituall
Hierusalem.

The conuersion
of the gentiles.

The christian
faythe.

Isai. 45.

Augustus
Christianus
ditionis.

Prestian
Aethiopia rex.

Filafili.

Franciscani
Seraphici.
Dominicani
Cherubici.
Lingue
impericia.
Miracula.

Damianus a Goes

To the christian
princes.

The sheepe of
Europe.

The doctoure
of diuinite

An admonition
to riche men.

The merchant.

me tant non sibi, et animas Domino colligant, non opes sibi. Nuper Aethiopia rex quem vulgus appellat Prestean, per oratorem suum submisit se sedi Romanae, non nihil expostulans cum pontifice quod ea gens quam a fide Christi non sit aliena, tam diu fuerit a tocius orbis paatore neglecta. Quidam viri boni, et propagandæ religionis studioſi, queruntur Pilatos Scythie septentrionalis populum mire simplicem ac rudem, a nescio quibus principibus Chriftianis teneri ditione, sed ita duro premi ingo humano, ut eis non imponatur suave iugum Christi, atque ita spoliari bonis externis, vt non dentur opibus euangelicis. Pulcherrimum, Deoque gratissimum erat dare potius quam accipere ijs quos studemus Christo lucifacere, ac sic eos in ditionem nostram recipere vt gaudeant se subiectos esse principibus sub quorum imperio commodius degant quam ante degebant. Nouimus ciuare bestias feras et horribiles, vel ad voluptatem, vel ad rsum vulgarem: et non nouimus manufacere homines vt feriant Christo? Monarchæ alunt qui doccent elephantos ad saltandum, qui doment leones ad lufum, qui doment lynxes et leopardos ad venatum: et monarca ecclesie non inuenit quo homines allicit ad amabile Christi feruicium? Scio vix vilam reperiri beluan domitu difficultorem quam est Iudeus obſtinatus, et obdurus hereticus: quanquam nullum est animal tam immite quod non circaret beneficentia et fauitate. Et repertis regionibus euhicit aurum et gemma: Sed triumpho dignius erat illuc inuohere Christianam sapientiam auro preciosiorum, ac margaritum euangelicum quod omnibus diuenditis bene comparatur. Dominus inbet suis rogare dominum messis vt extrudat operarios quod messis effet ampla, operarij pauci. Non minus opus est nunc rogare deum vt in tam late patentes agros ejiciat operarios, Sed excusat omnes, aliis aliud. Atqui Christiana ditio tot habet myriadas Franciscanorum in quibus probabile est quamplurimos esse qui vere flagrant igni seraphico: nec pauciores sunt myriades Dominicanorum, et in his confentaneum est permultos esse Cherubici spiritus. Ex his cohortibus eligantur viri, mundo vere mortui, Christo viui, qui sincere apud barbaras gentes docent verbum Dei. Excusat lingue imperitia. Atqui principes ob humanas legationes inueniunt qui varias linguas perdiscant: Et Themistocles Atheniensis uno anno sic didicit sermonem Asiaticum vt absque interprete cum rege loqui posset: An idem non studebimus in tam sublimi negocio? Inter barbaras et ignotas nationes Apostoli inueniunt viclum et amictum: et Deus pollicitus est nihil defuturum querentibus regnum Dei. Nec miracula quidem defutura sunt si res posset, modo ad sit sincera fides cum seraphica charitate, &c.

Furthermore Damianus a Goes, wryteth in his booke *De deploratione Lappiane gentis*, that he was the fyrl that moued Erasmus to speake sumwhat hereof: And that he (Erasmus I meane) was determined to write a iust volume of this matter yf he had not byn preuented by death. Albeit (sayth Damianus) in his booke entituled Ecclesiastes, he dyd not keepe silence of so wicked an vngodlynesse, whiche surely is suche, that it may in maner make all Christian men (and especially such vnto whom god hath gyuen poure and knowleage) giltie of so heighnous a crime, that he may take vengeance of them in the day of judgement before the iuste judge Chryſt. Nowe therfore (sayth he) let the Christian Monarchs take heede what accoumpte they shall make before the tribunal of Chryſte at the late daye, when neyther fauorie, nor pardon, or flaterie can take place to bee any excuse for the losse of so manye soules. And these be the very woordes of the woorthiful and lerned man Damianus a Goes, wrytten to the byffhoppe of Rome Paule the thyrde of that name, whom he further chargeth to looke diligently hereunto, as a thynge moste chiefly perteynyng to the office of Christian prelates. Mee thynke verely that the sheepe of Europe shulde by this tyme be so well fedde, that they shulde by good reaon be so stronge and mightie in Christes religion (excepte they be infected with the dyfease which the phisicians caule Cachexia, beinge an euyl disposition of the body whereby the more they are fed the worse they lyke) that many sheppardes myght well bee spared to be sent to other sheepe which ought to be of the same foulde. For this purpoſe the doctoure of diuinite when he commenſeth, hath his ſcapular caſt ouer his headde in token that he hathe forſaken the worlde for Christes fake: And his bootes on his legges in token that he ſhall euer bee in a redineſſe to go forwarde in preachyng the goſpell, as I doubtē not there bee many in Englande wolde gladly doo euen amoneſt theſe newe gentyles if they were thereto mainteyned by the ayde of the ſecular poure as in this caſe it ſhalbe requiſite for the furniture of neceſſaries hereunto apperteynyng, I muſt nowe therfore appelle vnto yow, yow riche men and rulers of the worlde, to whom god hath giuen gooddes as thyngeſ neyther good nor badde of them felues, but onely as they are vfed wel or euil. If yowe vſe them well, they are the gyltes of god wherwith yow may doo many thyngeſ acceptable both to god and men. And if yow vſe them otherwyſe, yow poſſeſſe not them, but they poſſeſſe yow, and theyr canker and rufe (as saythe the Apostle) ſhalbe a teſtimonie againſt yow in the day of the great audit. Thinker not therfore that this thynge perteyneth not vnto yowe, if yowe perteyne vnto Chriſte and looke to haue any parte with hym. Conſyder with yowre felues if it were onely to get worldely ryches, howe redye and greedy yowe wolde bee to venture a greate deale to get a thyrde part, withoutt caſtyng of any perell by lande or by ſea, as the wyttie poet Horatſe hath in ſewe wordes defcrybed the marchauntes deſyre and aduenture to obtayne rycheſſe.

*Impiger extremos currit mercator ad Indos,
Fer mare pauperiem fugiens, per faxa, per ignes.*

The which verfes are thus much to fay in effecte.

The marchaunt in hope greate rychesse to fynde,
By fyre and by water passeth to Inde,
By the burnte line or Equinoctiall,
To fyde from pouertie and hafarde all.

As the poet hath in these verfes, by the marchaunt declared the desyre that couetous men haue to obteyne slippery riches, the lyke affection to obteyne worldly fame and honour, maye we see in valiant and noble capitaynes in the warres where they contende to put them selues forwarde to the mooste daungerous aduenture as to haue the forewardes of the battayle: a token surely of much nobilitie and manly corage. But oh immortall god? Is it not to bee lamented that men can be so valient, stowte, and in maner desperat in theyr owne priuate matters, perteynyng onely to theyr bodies, and yet so coulde, negligent, and fearefull in goddes caufe and thynges touchyng the health of theyr foules? If there were neyther deuyll nor lawe to accuse men before god in this case, shal not theyr owne consciencies bee a lawe of condemnation ageynste theym in that they haue not shewed that loue to mankynde, which the very lawe of nature moueth brute beastes to shewe one to an other in theyr generations? But what hope is there (excepte god wolde in maner by myracle conuerte the hertes of such men) what hope is there I say, that they wyll depart with any of theyr gooddes, muche lesse aduenture theyr bodies, to the furthereauence of Christes religion in these regions beinge so farre from them, wheras many shewe lytle loue, chariti, or liberaliti (if not rather crueltie, tyraunnie, and oppression) to theyr poore neighbours and brootherne dwelling even at home at theyr owne clbowes. But as this couetouefesse is to bee reproched, so is the liberaliti of such to be commended as haue byn at greate coaste and charges in settyng forwarde fuche viages: wherein not onely the marchantes of London, but also diuers noble men and gentelmen awell of the counsayle as other, which bothe with theyr money and furthereauence otherwyse haue furnysshed and sent furth certeyne shypes for the discouerynge of fuche landes and regions as were heretofore vnownen, haue herein deserued immortall fame, for as much as in such attemptes and daungerous vyages, they haue shewed no smaule liberaliti vpon vncerteynie hope of gayne: wherein they haue deserued so much the greater prayse as theyr intent seemed to bee rather to further honest enterprises then for respecte of vantage. And here certeynely in the mention of these viages I myght feeme vngratefull if I shulde omite to giae dewe commendations to the two chiefe capitaynes of the fame as the worthy knyght syr Hugh Wylobby and the excellent pilote Rycharde Chaunceler who haue therein aduentured theire lyues for the commoditi of theyr countrey: Men doublese worthye for theyr noble attemptes to bee made knyghtes of the Ocean or otherwyse preferred if euer god fende them home ageyne although they fayle of theyr purpose. For as fuche haue obteyned absolute glory that haue brought great thynges to passe, so haue they deserued immortall fame which haue only attempted the fame: forasmuch as fortune (who sumtymes fauoureth the vnworthye) is not in the poure of man. Xerxes obteyned glorie in makyng a bridge ouer the sea Hellespontus ioynynge Europe to Asia, and Darius ouer Bosphorus when he passed with his armye towarde the Scythians. No lesse fame and commendation (although not lyke glory) deserued Demetrius, Cesar, Calligula, and Seleucus Nicanor, whiche attempted to cutte in fundre certeyne places cauled Ithmi, (beinge narrowe portions of lande so diuidyng twoo seas, that there is no passage from the one to the other) and yet never finisched that they tooke in hande, being hyndered eyther by deathe, warres, or other chaunces. The auncient Romans and Greekes gaue such gloriye vnto them that had eyther well deserued of the common welthe, or otherwyse attempted such great enterprises as myght bee profitable for mankynde, that after theyr death they caused Images of golde, syluer, brasse, Iury, and marble to bee made to theyr lykenesse, and the fame to be placed in theys solemne haunes, palaices, or temples, with certeyne verfes made to the commendation of them whom the Images representeda. And this no lesse to prouoke and encorage other forwarde natures to th[e] emulation of their vertues, then also to geue them the due honoure of theyr iust deserte. And surely if euer fence the begynnynge of the worlde any enterpryse haue deserued greate prayse as a thyng attchyued by men of heroicall vertue, doubtless there was never any more worthy commendation and admiration then is that whiche owre nation haue attempted by the north feas to discouer the mightie and riche empire of Cathay, by which vyage not only golde, syluer, precious stones, and splices, may be brought hether by a safar and shorter way, but also much greater matters may hereof ensewe in tyme if it shall please God to gyue vnto Christian men such passage into those regions, whereby such familiaritie may further growe betwene the Christiian princes

The desyre of
wordely fame.

Men are slethfull
in goddes cause.

Vyages from
Englaund.

Syr Hugh
Wylobby and
Rycharde
Chaunceler.

Glory and fame.

The rewards of
noble enterprises.

The vyage to
Cathay by the
north seas.

Societie betwene
the Tartars and
the Christianus
The Turke.
The Sophie.
Tambulanes.
Baiasetas.

of Europe and the greate emperoure of Cathay, that (as wryteth Haytho *De societate Christianorum et Tartarorum*) there can nothynge be imagined more effectuall for the confusion of the Turke if the great Cham of Cathay and the Sophie of Persia on the one syde, and the Christian Princes on the other syde, shulde with one consent inuade his dominions, as dyd Tamburlanes Th[e]mperoure of the Tartars who abowte the yeare of Christe. M. CCC. lxxxviii. toke prisoner Baiasetes Ottomanus Th[e]mperoure of the Turkes and flewe. xx. thoufande of his men in one battayle besyde many other great victories, as yowe may further reade in this booke in the hytorye of Paulus Iouius. And to haue fayde thus muche in maner of a preface it may suffice.



[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west Endia, etc.

SECTION I.

Pietro Martire.

The First Decade, . . *Of the Ocean.*

First printed in 1511.

The Second Decade, . . *Of the supposed Continent.*

The Third Decade, . . [*The discovery of the Pacific by
Vasco Nunez de Balboa, on the
25th September 1513. The
voyages of Pedro Arias, and
Sebastian Cabot.*]

The Second and Third Decades were first printed in 1516.

Of the new found islands (i.e. Yucatan and Mexico.)

First printed in 1521.]

woor
thyng
beste
who
of G
depa
and v
had
forasif
nothy
and e
to Ca
mote
from
by th
of an
in vny
of bo
towar
purpo
fee in
As al

[This eloquent Dedication first appeared in the Second and enlarged Edition of the *Decades*, the printing of which was finished at Alcala on 9th November 1516. Nearly the whole of the following First *Decas* (pp. 65-105) had, however, been previously printed in 1511, and was for the most part written even earlier than that year.]

TO THE MOSTE NOBLE PRINCE AND CATHOLIKE KYNGE, CHARLES,
PETER MARTYR OF ANGLERIA WYSHETH
PERPETUALL FELICITIE.



He diuine prouidence, frome the tyme that he syrste created the worlde, hathe referued vnto this day the knowleage of the great and large Ocean sea: In the which tyme he hath opened the same, chievely vnto yowe (moste mightie Prince) by the good fortune and happie successe of your grandfather by your mothers syde. The same prouidence (I knowe not by what destenie) hath brought me owt of my natvie countrey of Milane, and owt of the citie of Rome (where I continued almost. x. yeares) into Spaine, that I myght particularlie collecte, these marueylous and newe thynges, which shoulde otherwyse perhappes haue line drowned in the whirlepoole of obliuion: forasmuch as the Spanyardes (men

The largenes of
the Ocean
vnknownen to this
day.

worthy [of] greate commendation) had onely care to the generall inuentions of these thynges. Notwithstandinge, I doo not chalenge vnto me only, the thankes of the trauaile bestowed herein, wheras the chiefe rewarde therof is due to Ascanius vicounte Cardinal, who perceauyng that I was wyllyng to departe owt of the citie to be present at the warres of Granatum, dissuaded me from my purpose. But seing that I was fully resolued to departe, exhorted and required me to wryte vnto hym such newes as were famous in Spayne and worthy to be noted. I tooke therfore my iorney into Spaine chiefly for the defyre I had to see th[e]expedition whiche was prepared ageynst the enemies of the fayth: forasmuche as in Itale, by reason of the dissention among the Princes, I coulde fynde nothyng wherewith I myght feede my wytte, beinge a younge man desyrous of knowleage and experiance of thynges. I was therefore presente at the warres: from whence I writte to Cardinal Ascanius, and by sundry epistels certifyed hym of such thynges as I thought moste worthy to be put in memorie. But when I perceaued that his fortune was turned from a natural moother to a steppedame, I ceased from wrytyng. Yet after I sawe, that by th[e]ouerthrowe of the enemies of owre faythe, Spayne was pourged of the Moores as of an euyll weede plucked vp by the rootes, Leaste I shulde bestowe my slippery yeares in vnprofitable Idlenesse I was mynded to returne to Italie. But the singuler benigntie of bothe the Catholyke Kynge and queene nowe departed, and theyr large promises towarde me vpon my returne from my legacie of Babilon, deteyned me frome my purpose. Yet dooth it not repent me that I drewe backe my foote: Aswel for that I see in no other place of the worlde at this time the lyke worthy thinges to bee done: As also that in maner throughg owt all Italy, by reason of the discorde of the Christian

Cardinal Ascanius.
The warres of
Granatum ageyns
the Moores.

The autour was
sent ambassador
to the Soltane of
Alcayr in Egypte.

Italy disquieted
with warres.

The sequenes of
warre.

Kynge Frederike.

Leo the tenth,
byshoppe of Rome.

Spayne subdued
from the Moores.

The kynge dome of
Naples.

Note, frome the
begynnyng of the
world.

The temperancess
of the Equinoctial
unknowen to the
ownde wryters.

Continentes or firme
lande as bygge as
thre Europees.

Ryches are the
instrumentes of
conquestes.

Princes, I perceaued all thynges to runne headelonge into ruine, the countreys to be destroyed and made fatte with human bludde: The cities sacked, virgines and matrones with theyr gooddes and possessions caried away as captiues and miserable innocentes without offence to be slayne vnarmed within theyr owne hou ses. Of the which calamities, I dyd not onely heare the lamentable owtcryes, but dyd also feele the same. For euen the bludde of mine owne kinssfolkes and frendes, was not free from that crueltie. As I was therfore musyng with my selfe of these thynges, the Cardinal of Arragonie, after that he had seene the two fyrite bookees of my Decades wrytten to Afcanius, required me in the name of kyng Frederike his vncle, to put foorth the other eyght epistell bookees, In the meane tyme also, while I was voyde of all care as touchyng the matters of the Ocean, the Apostolicall messengers of the bysshope of Rome Leo the tenth, (by whose holosome counsayle and autoritie we trute the calamities of Italy shalbe synysshed) rayled me as it were frome fleape, and encoraged me to proceade as I had begunne. To his holynesse I writte two Decades compyfyd in short bookes after the maner of epistels, and added them to the fyrist, which was printed without myne aduise, as shall further appeare by the preface folowynge.

But nowe I returne to yow (most noble Prince) from whom I haue sumwhat digressed. Therfore wheras yowr graundefathers by your moothers syde, haue subdued all Spayne vnder yowr dominion except onely one corner of the same, and haue also leste yowe the kyngedome of Naples with the frutefull Ilandes of owr feas, it is fuler a greate thyng and worthy to be noted in owre cronacles. But not offendyng the reuerence due to owre prediceffors, what so euer frome the begynnynge of the worlde hath byn doone or wrytten to this day, to my iudgement seemeth but little, if wee confyder what newe landes and countreys, what newe feas, what fundry nations and tonges, what golde mynes, what treasures of perles they haue leste vnto yowre hyghnesse, besyde other reuenues. The whiche, what they are and howe greate, these three Decades shall declare.

Come therfore moft noble Prince elected of God, and enioy that hyghe estate of thynges not yet vnderstode to men. We offer vnto yowe the Equinoctiall line hetherto vnkownen and burnte by the furious heate of the soonne and vnhabitable after the opinion of the owlde wryters a fewe excepted: But nowe founde to bee most replenished with people, faire, frutefull, and moft fortunate, with a thowsande Ilandes crowned with golde and bewtifull perles, besyde that greate portion of earth supposid to bee parte of the firme lande, excedyng in quantite thre Europees. Come therfore and embrase this newe worlde, and suffer vs no longer to consume in defyre of yowr presence. From hense, from hense I saye (most noble younge Prince) shall instrumentes be prepared for yow, whereby al the worlde shalbe vnder yowr obeyfaunce.

And thus I byd yowr maiestie farewell: To whose taste if I shal perceave the fruities of this my tyllage to be delectable, I wyl hereafter doo my endeouore that yowe maye receave the same more abundauntly. From Madrid. The day before the Calendes of October,
In the yeare of Chryste.
M. D. X V I.

F I N E.

THE FIRSTE BOOKE OF THE DECADES
OF THE OCEAN, WRITTEN BY PETER MARTYR OF
Angleria, Milenoes, counsiler to the kyng of Spayne and
Protonotarie Apostolicall, To *Ascanius*
Sphorcias, vicount Cardinall. etc.



HE REVERENDE AND thanckfull antique was accustomed to esteme those men as goddes, by whose industrie and magnanimitie suche Landes and Regions were discouered, as were vnknownen to theyr predicessours. But vnto vs hauynge onely one god whom we honour in triplicite of perfon, this resteth, that albeit we do not woorship that kind of men with diuine honoure, yet do we reuerence them, and woorthely maruell at theyr noble actes and enterprises. Vnto kynges and princes we gyue due obeyfaunce, by whose gouernaunce and furtheraunce they haue bin ayded, to perfume theyr attemptes. We commende bothe, and for theyr iust defertes woorthely extoll them. Wherfore, as concerningy the Ilandes of the west Ocean, lately discouered, and of the auctours of the fame, (whiche thyng you defyre by your letters to knowe) I wyll begynne at the syrft auctoure therof, leste I be iniurious to any man. Take it therfore as foloweth.

¶ *Christophorus Colonus* (other wise called *Columbus*) A gen-

tilman of Italy, borne in the citie of *Genua*, perswaded Fernando and Elyzabeth, catholike prynces, that he doubted not to fynde certayne Ilandes of *India*, nere vnto owre Ocean sea, if they wold furnyfhe hym with shypes and other thynges apperteynyng. Affyrminge that therby not onely the Christian religion myght be enlarged, but Spayne also encryched by the great plentie of golde, pearls, precious stones, and splices, whiche might be founde there. At the lengthe three shypes were appoynted hym at the kinges charges: of the which one was a great carakte with deckes: and the other two were light marchaunte shypes without deckes, whiche the Spaniardes call *Caruelas*. Thus he departed from the costes of Spaine about the calendes of September, in the yere of Christ 1492, and set forward on his viage, being accompanied with. CC. xx. [two hundred and twenty] Spanyardes. The fortunate Ilandes (as manye thinke them to be, whiche the Spaniardes call *Canarie*, found but of late dayes) are distaunta from the Ilandes of *Gades*, a thoufande and two hundred myles, accordyng to theyr accompte: for they say they are distant three hundred leagues: wheras such as are expert sea men, affyrme that every league conteyneth fourtyn miles, after theyr supputations. These Ilandes were called fortunate, for the temperate ayre whiche is in them. For neyther the coldenesse of wynter is sharpe vnto them, nor the heate of sommer intollerable. Yet some men are of opinion, that those were in olde tyme called the fortunate Ilandes, whiche the Portugales call *Capo Verde*. *Colonus* therfore sayled syrft to the Ilandes of *Canarie*, to the intente there to refreshe his shypes with frefhe water and fuell, before he committed him selfe to thys so laborious a vyage. And bycause I haue here made mention of the Ilandes of *Canarie*: It shall not be muche from my purpose to declare howe of vnknownen they became knownen, and of saluage and wilde, better manured. For by the longe course of manye yeres, they were forgotten, and remayned as vnknownen.

These feuen Ilandes (therfore) called the *Canaries*, were founde by chaunce by a frenche man, called *Betanchor*, by the permision of queene Katharine, protecixre of kyng John her son, while he was yet in his nonage, about the yere of Christ. M. CCCC. V. This *Betanchor* invaded twoo of these Ilandes called *Lancelotus* and *Fortisuentura*, whiche he inhabited and brought to better culture. He beinge deade, his son and heire folde bothe the sayde Ilandes to certayne Spaniardes.

After this, *Fernandus Peraria* and his wyfe, invaded *Ferreia* and *Gomera*. The other three were subdued in our tym. *Grancanaria*, by *Petrus de Vera*, citezen of the noble citie of *Xericium*, and Michaell of *Mexia*.

EDEN.

I

65

I
The reward of
virtue

The Ilandes of
the west Ocean.

Christophorus
Colonus.

India.

The first viage
of Colonus.

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
Gades or
Gads malis.
A league, what it
conteyneth by sea.
The fortunate
Ilandes.
Cabouerde.

The seven Ilandes
of Canarie.
Betanchor A
frenche man
subdued the
ilandes of Canarie
Lancelotus.
Fortisuentura.
Ferreia.
Gomera.
Grancanaria

Palma.
Tenerifen.
Alphonfus Lugo.

2
Colonus men rebel
against hym

Faire wordes and
promises.

Hispaniola.
Iohanna.
Nightingales
sing in
November.

The Ilande of
Ophir.

The islandes of
Antilia.

A shypwreck

The people of
the Ilande.
Naked people.

Expert swimmers.
Gold for erth and
glasse.
Many kynges

Relygious and
humaine people.

Canoas.

3
Monoryla.
They haue no
Iren.
Canibales or
Caribes
Anthropophagi.

The cruetie of
the Canibales.

*Palma and Tenerifen, by Alphonfus Lugo, at the kynges charges. Gomera and Ferrea were easely subdued: But the matter wente harde with Alphonfus Lugo. For that naked and wylde nation, syghtinge onely with stones and clubbes, droue his armie to flighte at the fyfth assaulte, and flewe about fourre hundreth of his men. But at the length he overcame them. And thus all the Ilandes of *Canaria* were added to the dominion of Spayne. From these Ilandes *Colonus* directyng his viage towarde the weste, folowinge the fallinge of the sonne, but declining somwhat towarde the left hande, sayled on forwarde. xxxiii. dayes continually, hauyng onely the fruition of the heauen and the water. Then the Spanyardes whiche were accompanied with hym, beganne fyfle to murmurre secretly among them selues; and shortly after with wordes of reproche spake euyll of *Colonus* theiur gouernour, and consulted with them selues, eyther to rydye hym out of the waye, oreles to cast hym into the sea: Ragyng that they were deceyued of a straunger, an outlandishe man, a Ligurian, a Genues, and brought into suche daungerous places, that they myght neuer returne ageyne. And after. xxx. days were past, they furiously cryed out agaist hym, and threatened him that he shulde passe no further. But he euer with ientyll wordes and large promyses, appeased their furie, and prolonged day after day, some tyme defyring them to beare with hym yet a whyle, and some time putting them in remembrance that if they shulde attempte any thinge agaynt hym, or other wife disfobey hym, it wolde be reputed for treason. Thus after a fewe dayes, with cherefull hartes they espied the lande longe looked for. In this fyfth nauigation, he discouered. vi. Ilandes, wherof twoo were exceeding great: Of whiche, the one he called *Hispaniola*, and the other *Iohanna*. But at that tyme he knewe not perfectly that *Iohanna* (other wyfe called *Cuba*,) was an Ilande. As they coasted alonge by the shore of certayne of these Ilandes, they harde nyghtingales syngynge in the thycke woodes in the month of Nouember. They found alio great riuers of freshe water, and naturall hauens, of capacite to harborowe greate nauies of shippes. Saylinge by the coastes of *Iohanna*, from the northe poynete to the west, he rode lyttell lesse then eyght hundredth miles (for they call it a hundredth and fourre score leagues) supposing that it had byn the continent or fyrme land, bicause he coulde nother fynd the landes ende, nor any token of the ende, as farre as he coulde judge with his eye: wherfore he determined to retorne backe agayne, beving thereto partly enforced by the roughnesse of the sea. For the sea bankes of the Ilande of *Iohanna*, by sondrie wyndinges and turnynges, bende them selues so muche towarde the Northe, that the northnortheaste wynde roughly tossed the shypes by reasoun of the wynter. Turnyng therfore the stremmes of his shypes towarde the Easte, he affyrmeth that he had founde the Ilande of *Ophir*, whyther Salomons shypes sayled for golde. But the description of the Cosmographers well considered, it feemeth that bothe theise, and the other Ilandes adioynyng, are the Ilandes of *Antilia*. This Ilande he called *Hispaniola*: on whose northe syde as he appreched nere to the lande, the keele or bottome of the biggeste vessell ranne vpon a blynde rocke couered with water, and cloue in funder. But the playnenesse of the rocke was a helpe to them that they were not drowned. Makynge haste therfore with the other two ships to helpe them, they brought awaye al the men without hurt. Here comming fyfth a land, they sawe certayne men of the Ilande: who perceauyng an vnknowen nation comminge towarde them, flocked together and ranne al into the thycke woodes, as it hadde byn hares coursed with grehounds. Ovre men purfuing them, tooke onely one woman, whom they brought to the shypes: where fylling her with meate and wyne, and apparellinge her, they let her departe to her company. Shortly after a greate multitude of them came runnyng to the shore to beholde this newe nation, whom they thought to haue discended from heauen. They cast them selues by heapes into the sea, and came swimminge to the shypes, bryngyng golde with them, which they chaunged with owe men for erthen pottes, drinking glasse, poyntes, pynnes, hawkes belles, lokinge glasses, and suche other trifles. Thus growing to further familiaritie, owe men were honorably enterteyned of the kyng of that parte of the Ilande, whose name was *Guacanarillus*: for it hath many kynges, as when Eneas arriuied in Italy, he founde *Latiun* diuided into many kyngedomes and prouinces, as *Latiun*, *Meczeitum*, *Turnum*, and *Tarchontem*, which were seperated with narow boundes, as shall more largely appere hereafter. At the euen tyde about the faulyng of the sonne, when owe men went to praiere, and kneled on their knees after the maner of the Christians, they dyd the lyke also. And after what maner so euer they sawe them praye to the crofte, they followed them in all poynetes as well as they coulde. They shewed much humanite towarde owe men: and helped them with theiur lighters or small boates (whiche they call *Canoas*) to vnlaide theiur broken shyppe: And that with suche celerite and cherfulnesse, that no frende for frende, or kynfeman for kynfeman, in suche case moued with pitie, coulde do more. They boates are made only of one tree, made holow with a certain sharpe stone (for they haue no yron.) And are very longe and narowe. Many affirme that they haue fene some of them with fortie ores. The wylde and myscleuous people called *Canibales* or *Caribes*, whiche were accustomed to eate mannes fleshe (and calld of the olde writers, *Anthropophagi*) molest them exedyngly, inuadyng their country, takynge them captiue, kylling and eatyng them. As owe men sayled to the Ilandes of these meke and humayne people, they leste the Ilandes of the *Canibales*, in maner in the middest of theiur viage towarde the south. They complayned that their Ilandes were no lesse vexed with the incursions of these manhuntyng *Canibales* when they go forth a rouyng to seeke theiur praye: then are*

: But the clubbes, length he from these somewhat secretly and con- that they us places, him, and appeased and some se disobey lange longe Of which, at *Iohanna* landes, they great riuers the coastes they call it a he coulde : wherefore For the sea- towarde Turnyng of *Ophir*, sidered, it he called the biggesse esse of the two ships certayne and ranne hem, tooke wyne, and runnyng cast them which they ge glasses, ned of the as when *Mezeantium*, hereafter d on their fawne them humanitie to vnlade nseman for one tree, any affirme *anibales* or holest them men sayled maner in vexed with : then are

other tame beastes, of Lyons and Tigers. Such chyldren as they take, they geld to make them fat as we doo cocke chikyns and younge hogges, and ate them when they are wel fedde: of suche as they eate, they fyfth eate the intralles and extreme partes, as handes, feete, armes, necke, and heade. The other moste fleshy partes, they pouder for store, as we do pestelles of porke and gammondes of bakon. Yet do they abyteyne from eatynge of women and counte it vyle. Therfore suche younge women as they take, they keepe for increase, as we doo hennes to leye eggis. The olde women, they make theyr drudges. They of the Ilandes (which we may nowe call owres) bothe the men and the women when they perceave the *Canibales* coming, haue none other shfyte but onely to flie: for althoughe they vse very sharpe arrowes made of reedes, yet are they of small force to repprese the furie of the *Canibales*: for euen they them selues confess, that tenne of the *Canibals* are able to ouercome a hundredre of them if they encountre with them. Theyr meate is a certeyne roote which they cal *Ages*: mucche lyke a nauue roote in forme and greatnesse: but of sweete taste, mucche lyke a greene cheftnutte. They haue also an other kynde of rootes, whiche they call *Jucca*, wherof they make breade in lyke maner. They vse *Ages* more often rosted or foddern, then to make breade therof. But they neuer eate *Jucca*, excepte it be firste sliced and pressed, (for it is ful of lycoure) and then baked or foddern. But this is to be marueled at, that the iuyce of this roote is a poyson as strong as *Aconitum*, so that if it be dronke it caufeth present death, and yet the breade made of the masse therof, is of good taste and holsome, as all they haue proued. They make also an other kynde of breade of a certayne pulse, called *Panicum*, mucche lyke vnto wheate, wherof is great plentie in the dukedom of Mylane, Spayne, and Granatum. But that of this countrey is longer by a spanne, somewhat sharpe towarde the ende, and as bygge as a mannes arme in the brawne: The graynes wherof are sette in a maruelous order, and are in forme somwhat lyke a peafe. While they be foure and vnrripe, they are white: but when they are ripe they be very blacke. When they are broken, they be whyter then snowe. This kynde of grayne, they call *Maizium*. Golde is of some estimation among them: for some of them hange certain small pieces therof at theyr eares and nofethrilles. A lyttell beyonde this place, our men wente a lande for freshe water, where they chaunced vpon a Ryuer whose sande was myxed with mucche golde. They founde there no kindes of fourre foted beastes excepte three kyndes of lyttell conyes. These Ilandes also nourishe serpentes: but such as are without hurt. Lykewike wylde geefe, turtle dous, and duckes, much greater then ours, and as whyte as swannes, wth heades of purple coloure. Also *Popiniaeis*, of the whiche some are greene, some yellowe, and some lyke them of *India*, with yellowe rynges about theyr neckes, as Plini describeth them. Of these they broughte forte with them, of mooste liuely and delectable colours, hauyng theyr fethers entremengled with greene, yellowe, and purple, whiche varietie, delithet the senfe not a litle. Thus mucche thought I good to speake of *Popiniaeis*, (ryghte noble Prynce) specially to this intente, that albeit the opinion of Christopherus Colonus (who affirmeth these Ilandes to be parte of *India*) dothe not in all poynetes agree with the judgement of auncient wryters as touchyng the bignesse of the Sphere and compasse of the Globe as concernyng the nauigable portion of the same beyng vnder vs, yet the *Popiniaeis* and many other thynges brought from thence, doo declare that these Ilandes fauoure somwhat of *India*, eyther beyng nere vnto it, or elles of the same nature: sommuche as Aristotle also, about the ende of his booke *De Celo et Mundo*, and likewise *Seneca*, with diuerse other authours not ignorant in Cosmography, do affirme that *India* is no longe trachte by sea, distante from Spayne by the weste Ocean, for the soyle of these Ilandes, bryngeth forthe Mastix, Aloes, and fundrye other sweete gummes and spycys as doth *India*. Cotton also of the goffampine tree, as in *India* in the countrey of the people called Seres.

¶ The languages of all the nations of these Ilandes, maye well be written with our Latine letters. For they cal heaven *Turei*. A house, *Boa*. Golde, *Cauni*. A good man, *Taino*. Nothing, *Mayani*. All other wordes of theyr language, they pronounce as playnely as we doo the Latine tongue. In these Ilandes they founde no trees knownen vnto them, but pyne app[le] trees, and date trees: And thoſe of maruelous height and exceeding harde, by reaſon of the greate moyntaineſſe and fatneſſe of the grounde, with continuall and temperate heate of the ſonne, whiche endureth ſo all the hole yere. They playnely affirme the Ilande of *Hifpaniola* to be the moſt fruiteful lande that the heauen compaſſeth aboue, as ſhall more largely appere hereafter in the particular deſcription of the fame, whiche we intende to ſette foorthe when we ſhall be better inſtructed.

Thus makynge a leage of frendshyppe with the kyng, and leauyng with hym xxxviii. men to ſearche the Ilande, he departed to Spayne takynge with hym x. of the inhabitauntes to lerne the Spaniſh tongue, to the intent to vſe them afterwarde for interpretours. *Colonus* therfore at his returne, was honorably receaued of the kyng and queene: who cauſed him to ſytte in theyr preſence, whiche is a token of great loue and honoure amoung the Spaniardes. He was alſo made Admirall of the Ocean: and his brother gouernour of the Illand.

Towarde the fecond viage, he was furnished with xvij. ſhippes: wherof three were great caracters of a thouſand tunne: xii. were of that forte, whiche the Spaniardes call *Caravelis*: without deckes: and two other of the fame forte ſomewhat bigger, and more apte to beare deckes, by reaſon of the gretnesse of theyr maſtes.

Ages.
Rootes in the
ſteede of meate.
Jucca.
Breade of rootes.

An herbe of a
ſtraynge nature.

Maizium.

Golde in
estimation.

Golde in the
ſandes of ryuers.
Serpentes without
venime.
Turtle dous
Duckles.
Popiniaeis.
Plini.

These Ilandes are
parts of *India*.
The Indians are
Antipodes to the
Spaniardes.

Aristotle.
Seneca.
India not far
from Spaine
4
Mastix.
Aloe.
Gossampyne
cotton or bombasa.
Seres.
The language of
these Indians.
Trees and frutes
vnknownen to vs.
Fat and moynte
grounde.
Greate continual
and temperate.
The fruitfulness of
hispaniola

The ſeconde viage
of Colonus.

Corne and sedes
to sowe.

Tooles and
artillery.

Water dropping
from a tree
continually.

Methymna Campi.
Castella Vetus.

Gades

The Iland of
Ferrea.

Ilands of the
Canibales.

The Iland of
Dominica.
viii. hundredth
and xx. leagues in. xx.
dayes.

Lysertes,
The Islands of
Galanta.

The Iland of
Guadalupea.

Vilages of. xx or
xxx. houses
The building of
their houses.

He had also a thousand and two hundredth armed footemen well appoynted: Amonge whiche were many artificers, as smythes, carpenters, myners, and suche other: Certayne horfemen also, wel armed: Likewise mares, shiepe, heylfers, and such other of bothe kindes for incrafe. Lykewise all kynde of pulse or grayne and corne, as wheate, barlye, rye, beanies and pease, and suche other, as well for food as to fowe: Befyde vynes, plantes and feedes, of suche trees, fruities, and herbes, as thosse countreyes lacke. And (not to be for gotten) fundry kindes of artillery and iron tooles, as bowes, arrowes, croffebowes, bylles, hargabufes, brode swoordes, large targettes, pikes, mattockes, shouuelles, hammers, nayles, fawes, axes, and suche other. Thus beyng furnisched accordynge, they fet forwarde from the Ilandes of *Gades*, (nowe called *Cals*), the vii. day before the calendes of October, in the yere of Christe. 1493. and arriuied at the Ilandes of *Canarie*, at the calendes of October. Of these Ilandes, the laste is called *Ferrea*, in whiche there is no other water that maye be drunke, but onely that is gathered of the dewe whiche continually distilleth from one onely tree growyng on the highest backe of the Ilande, and falleth into a rounde trenche made with mannes hande. We were informed of these thynges within fewe dayes after his departure. What shal succede, we wyl certifie yow hereafter. Thus fare ye well, from the courte, at the Ides of Nouember. 1493.



THE SECONDE BOOKE OF THE FYRSTE DECADE to Ascanius Phorcias, vicounte Cardinall, etc.

Owe repeete (ryghte honorable Prynce) that yowe are desirous to knowe what newes we haue in Spayne from the newe worlde: and that thosse thynges haue greatly delyted you which I wrote vnto yowre hignesse of the fyrsle nauigation. Yowe shal now therefore receave what hath fuced. *Methymna Campi*, is a famous towne in high Spayne in the respecte frome yow, and is in that parte of Spayne whiche is called *Castella Vetus*: beyng distante from *Gades* about. xl. myles. Here the courte rayned, when aboue the ix. of the kalendes of Aprell in this yere of nynetie and foure, there were postes sente to the kyng and queene, certifyinge them that there were. xiij. shippes come from the newe Ilandes and arryued at *Gades*. But the governoure of the shypes sente word to the kyng and quene that he had none other matter to certifie them of by the postes, but only that the Admiral with ffe shippes and. iiiij. score and tenne men remayned styll in *Hippaniola*, to searche the secretes of the Ilande. And that as touching other matters, he hym selfe wolde shortly make relation in theyr presence, by worde of mouthe. Therfore the daye before the nones of Aprell, he came to the courte him selfe. What I learned of him and other faythfull and credibl men whiche came with hym from the Admirall, I wyl reherfe vnto yowe in such order as they declared the same to me when I daunded them. Take it therfore as foloweth. The thyrde daye of the Ides of October, departyng from *Ferrea*, the laste of the Ilandes of *Canarie*, and from the costes of Spayne with a nauie of. xvii. shippes, they sayled. xxi. dayes before they came to any Ilande: inclyning of purpose more towarde the lefte hand then at the fyrsle viage, folowing the northnortheast wynde: and arriuied fyrs at the Ilandes of the *Canibales*, or *Caribes* of which, onely the fame was knownen to our men. Amonge these, they chaufed fyrsle vpon one, so beset with trees, that they coulde not se so muche as an elle space of bare earthe or stony grounde. This they called *Dominica*, bicause they found it on the funday. They taried here no tyme, bycause they sawe it to be deferte. In the space of thefe. xxi. dayes, they thynte that they sayled viii. hundredth and. xx. leagues, the Northnortheast wynde was so full with them, and so freshely followed the sterne of theyr shypes. After they hadde sayled a lytell further, they espied dyuerse Ilandes replenysshed with fundry kyndes of trees, from th whiche came fragrant fauours of spycies and sweete gummes. Here they sawe neyther man nor beaste, except certayne lisartes of huge bignesse, as they reported whiche went alande to viewe the countrey. This Iland is cauled *Galana*, or *Galanta*. From the cape or poyn of this Iland, espyng a mountayne a farre of, they yled thysyer. Aboue. xxx. myles from this mountayne, they sawe a ryuer dycending whiche seemed to be token of some great and large fludde. This is the fyrsle lande whiche they founde inhabited from the Iland of *Canarie*, and is an Ilande of the *Canibales*, as they lerned by the interpretours whiche they tooke with them from *Hippaniola* into Spayne at theyr fyrsle viage. Serchynge the Ilande, they founde innumerable villes of. xx. houfes or. xxx. at the mooste, fette rounde abowte in order, makynge the streeete in coompaſſe lyke a markette place. And forasmuch as I haue made mention of theyr houfes, it shal not be greatlye from my purpote to describe in what maner they are buylded. They are made rounde lyke belles or rounde pauylions. Theyr frame is rayfed of excedynghe hyghe trees, fette cloſe together and fast rampaired in the grounde, so standyng a slope and bending inward that the toppes of the trees ioyne

together and beare one agaynst an other, hauynge also within the house, certayne stronge and shorte props or postes whiche susteyne the trees from fallynge. They couer them with the leaues of late trees and other trees strongly compact and hardened, wherewith they make them cloſe from wynde and wether. At the ſhort postes or proppes within the houſe, they tie ropes of the cotton of gosſampine trees, or other ropes made of certayne long and touche rotes much lyke vnto the shrubbe called *Spartum*, wherof in olde tyme they vſed to make bondes for vynes and cabuls and ropes for ſhyppes. These they tye ouerthwarte the houſe from poste to poste. On theſe they ley as it were certayne matrefles made of the cotton of the gosſampine trees, whiche grove plentifull in theſe Ilandes. This cotton the Spaniardes call *Algodon*, and the Italiāns *Bombafine*. And thus they ſleepe in hangyng beddes. At the enteraunce of one of theyr houſes, they ſaw two Images of woodde lyke vnto ferpentes, whiche they thoughte had byn ſuch idoles as they honour. But they lerned afterwarde that they were ſette there onely for coomlynnesse. For they knowe none other god then the Sunne and Moone, althoſe they make certaine Images of gosſampine cotton to the ſimilitude of ſuch phantafies as they ſay appere to them in the nyghte. Our men founde in theyr houſes, all kyndes of erthen veffels, not muſe vnylike vnto oures. They founde also in theyr kichens, mannes fleſſhe, duckes fleſſhe, and goode fleſſhe, al in one pot: and other on the ſpittes redye to be layde to the fire. Entrynge into theyr inner lodgynges, they founde faggottes of the bones of mennes armes and legges, which they referue to make headeſ for theyr arrowes, bycaufe they lacke iron. The other bones they caſte awaye when they haue eaten the fleſſhe. They founde likewiſe the heade of a yonge man fastened to a poste and yet bledinge. They haue in ſome viſages, one great haule or pallacie, aboue the whiche theyr common houſes are placed. To this they reſort, as often as they come together to playe. Whan they perceaued the commynge of our men, they fledde, in theyr houſes they founde alſo about xxx. chyldeſ.. and women captiueſ which were referred to be eaten, but our men tooke them awaye to vſe them for interpretauoures. Searchyng more diuerſly theſelvynner partes of the Ilande, they founde vii. other ryuers, bygger then thiſe whiche we ſpake of before, runnyng through the Ilande, with fruitefull and pleaſante banckes, delectable to beholde. This Ilande, they caſled *Guadalupea*, for the ſimilitude that it hath to the mounte *Guadalupus* in Spayne, where the Image of the virgin MARIE is religiouſly honored. But the inhabitaunteſ cauſt it *Caruceria*, or *Queraquiera*. It is the chiefe habitation of the *Canibales*. They brought from this Iland vii. Popingayes, bygger then pheſantes, muſe diſſerfyng from other in colour: hauynge theyr backes, brefles, and beaſies of purple colour, and theyr wynges of other variable coloures. In al theſe Ilandes is no leſſe plenlie of popingayen then wiſ sparrows or starlinges. As we bryng vp capons and hennes to francke or make them fatte, ſo do they theſe bigger kyndes of popingayen for the ſame purpoſe. After that they hadde thus ſearched the Ilande and dryuen theſe *Canibales* to flyght, (whiche ranne awaye at theyr fyrt approche as ſone as they had eſpied them) they cauſed theiſ company together. And as foone as they had broken the *Canibals* boates or lyghters (whiche they call *Canoas*) they lowfed their ankers the daye before the Ides of Nouember, and departed from *Guadalupea*. *Colonus* the admirall, for the defyre he hadde to ſe his companiones, whiche at his fyrt vyage he leſte the yere before in *Hifpaniola* to ſearche the countrey, lette paſſe many Ilandes bothe on his righte hande and leſte hande, and fayled directly thyther. By the waye, there appeared from the Northe. A great Ilande which the captiueſ that were taken in *Hifpaniola*, cauſed *Madanino*, or *Matinino*: Affirmyng it to be inhabited only with women: To whom the *Canibales* haue acceſſe at certen tymes of the yere, as in owlde tyme the *Thracians* had to the *Amazones* in the Ilande of *Lefbos*. The men children, they ſende to theyr fathers. But the women theye kepe with them ſelues. They haue greate and ſtronge cauſes or denneſ in the ground, to the which they fly for ſafegarde if any men reſorte vnto them at any other tyme then is appoynted. And there defende them ſelues with bowes and arrowes, agenſt the violence of ſuche as atteſte to enuade them. They coulde not at thiſ tyme approche to thiſ Ilande, by reaſon of the Northenortheſt wynde which blewe ſoo vehemently from the ſame, wheras they nowe folowed the Eafeſouth eaſte. After they departed frome *Madanino*, and fayled by the ſpace of xl. myles, they paſſed not farre frome an other Ilande which the captiueſ ſayde to bee verie peopulous, and replenyſhed with all thyngeſ neceſſarie for the life of man. This they cauſed *Mons Serratus*, bycaufe it was ful of mountaynes. The captiueſ further declared that the *Canibales*, are wonte at ſome tyme to goo frome theyr owne coaſtes aboue a thouſande myle to hunte for men. The daye folowynge, they ſaw an other Ilande the whiche, bycaufe it was rownde, they cauſed *Sancta Maria Rotunda*. The nexte daye, theye founde an other, which they cauſed *S. Martini*. Which they lettē paſſe alſo bycaufe they had no leaſure to tarye. Lykewyſe the thiſde daye they eſpied an other, whiche *Diamdral* fyde extendyng frome the Eafe to the weſte, they iudged to bee a hundredth and fyfthie myle. Theye affirme all theſe Ilandes to be maruelous fayre and frutefull. This laſte, they cauſed *Sancta Maria Antiqua*. Saylyng yet forwarde, and leauynge many other Ilandes, after they had fayled aboue fortie myle, they chaunced vpon an other muſe bygger then any of the reſte, which th[e]inhabitan[t]ſ cauſe *Ay Ay*, but they named it *Infula crucis*. Heare they caſt anker to fetche freſſhe water. The Admiral also commaunded. xxx. men to go a lande out of his owne ſhyp, and to ſearch the Ilande. Here they founde four ſonne dogges on the

Gosſampine
cotton.

Bombase.
Hanging beddes.

Images.

Fyne cookery
Arrowe heads of
bones.

The mount
Guadalupas.

Caruceria.
Popingayes
bygger then
pheſantes

The Canibales
dryuen to flyght.

Matinino an
Ilande of women.

The Ilandes of
Mons Serratus.

Huntinge for men
Sancta Maria
Rotunda.
Sanctus Martinus.

Sancta Maria
Antiqua.
An Ilande of the
Canibals.

The Canibales are expert archers. Arrows infected with veneme.

A conflict with the Canibales.

7

The fiercenes and terrible countenance of the Canibales.

Methymna Campi.

Innumerable Ilandes.

The mynes of Metalles and precious stones.

The sea cauled Archipelagus. Insula S. Iohanne. or Buchena.

Death for deathe

The mountaynes are colder than the playnes.

From Dominica to Hispaniola fyue hundred leagues

The Spanyarde left in the Illand are slayne. Kyng Guacanarillus rebelleth.

Two images of goulde.

shore. The Inhabitants are *Canibales*, and maruelous experte in shutinge, as well women as men: And vse to infecte theyr arrowes with poysone: when they had taryed there two dayes, they fawe a farre of, a *Canoa*, in the whiche were eight men and as manye women hauyng with them bowes and arrowes. They fearely assayled owe men withoute all feare, and herte sum of them with theyr venomous arrowes. Amonge thefe there was a certen woman to whom the other gaue reverence and obeyde as though she were theyr queene. Her sonne wayted vppon her, beinge a younge man, strongly made, of terrible and frownyng countenaunce and a lyons face. Ovre men leaste they shold take the more herte by beinge wounded a farre of, thought it beste to ioyne with them. Therfore with all spedē settinge forewarde with their ores the brigantine in whiche they were fette alande, they ouerturned their *Canoa* with a great violence, which beinge overwhelmed, they notwithstandinge, as well the women as the men swymminge, caste theyr darteres at owe men, thicke and threefowle. At the lengthe, gatherynge them selues together vpon a rocke couered with the water, they fought manfullly vntyl they were overcome and taken, one beinge slayne, and the queenes sonne sore wounded. When they were broughte into the Admirals shippe, they dyd no more put of their fiernes and cruell countenances, then do the Lyons of *Libia* when theye perceave them selues to be bownde in chaynes. There is no man able to behowlde them, but he shall feele his bowelles grate with a certen horrour, nature hath endewed them with too terrible menacyng, and cruell affecte. This conjecture I make of my selfe and other which often tymes wente with me to see them at *Methymna Campi*. But nowe to returne to the viage. Proceedinge thus further and further, more then fife hundrethe myles, firste towardes the Westesoutheweste, then towarde the Southwest, and at the lengthe towarde the Weste northe weste, they entered into a mayne large sea hauinge in it innumerable Ilandes, maruelouslys differinge one frome an other, for sum of them were verye frutefull and full of herbes and trees. Other sum, verye drye, barren, and rowgh with high rockye mountaynes of stone, wherof sum were of bright blewe or asurine colour, and other glysteringe white: wherfore they supposid them by good reason to bee the mynes of metalles and precious stones. But the rowghnes of the sea, and multitude of Ilandes standinge so thicke toguther, hindered them too, that they cowld caste no anker leaste the bigger vesselles shulde runne vppon the rockes. Therefore they deferred the searchinge of these Ilandes vntyl an other tyme. They were so manye and stooode so thicke, that they could not number them. Yet the smauler vesselles which drewe no greate depthe, entered emonge them and numbered fortie and fyxe Ilandes. But the bigger vesselles, kepte aloofe in the mayne sea for feare of the rockes. They caule the sea where this multitude of Ilandes are situate, *Archipelagus*. Frome this tracte proceedinge forwarde, in the mydde waye there lyeth an Iland which th[e]inhabitantes caule *Burichena*, or *Buchena*. But they named it *Insula S. Iohannis*. Dyuers of theym whome we had delyuered frome the *Canibales*, sayde that they were borne in this Ilande: affirminge it to be verye populous and frutefull, hauinge a to manye fayre wooddes and hauenys. There is deadly hatred and continual battayle betwene them and the *Canibales*. They haue no boates to passe from their owne coastes to the *Canibales*. But if it bee their chaunce to overcome them, when they make incursion into theyr countreye to feke their praye (as it sumtyme happeneth, the fortune of warre beinge vncerteyne) they serue them with like saufe, requitinge deathe for deathe. For one of theym mangeth an other in pieces, and roste them and eatte them even before their eyes. They taryed not in this Ilande. Yet in the weste angle therof, a fewe of them went a lande for fresshe water, and found a greate and high howse after the maner of their buydling, hauinge xii. other of their vulgare cotages placed abowte the same: but were all lefte desolate, whether it were that they reforted to the mountaynes by refon of the heate which was that tyme of the yeare, and to retorne to the playne when the ayre waxeth cowlde, or els for feare of the *Canibales* which make incursion into the Ilande at certen seafsons. In all this Ilande is only one kinge. The fouth syde hereof extendeth abowte two hundrethe myles. Shortlye after, they came to the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, beinge distante frome the firste Ilande of the *Canibales*, fyue hundred leagues. Here they sownde al thynges out of order, and theyr felowes slayne which they lefte here at their fyrfte vyage. In the beginninge of *Hispaniola*, (hauinge in it many regions and kyngedomes as we haue sayde) is the region of *Xamana* whose kinge is named *Guacanarillus*. This *Guacanarillus* ioyned frenchedisshiپ with owe men at the fyrfte viage, and made a league with them: But in the absence of the Admiral, he rebelled, and was the caufe of owe mens destruction, althowgh he disimuled the fame, and pretended frenchedisshiپ at the Admirals retурне. As owe men fayled on yet a little further, they espied a longe *Canoa* with many ores, in which was the brother of *Guacanarillus* with only one man waytinge on hym. He broughte with hym two Images of goulde, which he gaue the Admirall in the name of his brother. And towld a tale in his language as concerninge the deathe of owe men, as they proued afterwarde, but at this tyme had no regarde to his communication for lacke of interpretours, which were eyther all deade, or escaped or stouline awaye when they drewe nere the Ilandes. But of the x. [ten.] vii. [scuen]dyed by change of ayre and dyet. The inhabitants of these Ilandes haue byn euer too vfed to liue at libertie, in playe and paſtyme, that they can hardlye away with the yoke of feruitude which they attempte to shake of by all meanes they maye. And surely if they had receaued owe religion, I wolde thinke their iſſe moſte happye of all men, if they might

Libertie and idlenes.

A happy kind of lyfe.

8

and vfe to
toa, in the
ly assayled
here was a
Her sonne
and a lyons
ate to ioyne
were fette
ffondinge,
e. At the
vnyll they
re brought
the Lyons of
wlde them,
oo terrible
ate with me
and further,
the innumerable
herbes and
fum were
od reason to
of Ilandes
ger vesuelles
other tyme
Telles which
ger vesuelles,
Ilandes are
Iland which
rs of themy
nge it to be
hatred and
coales to
r countreye
ferue them
roste them
herof, a fewe
in buylding,
ether it were
to returne to
o the Ilande
o hundrethe
lande of the
layne which
regions and
illius. This
n them: But
he dissmuled
further, they
waytinge on
his brother.
arde, but at
all deade, or
by change of
and paftyme,
s they maye
if they might

therwith enioye their aunciente libertie. A fewe things contente them, hauinge no delite in fuche superfluites, for the which in other places men take infinite paynes and commit manie vnlawfull actes, and yet are neuer satifised, wheras many haue to muche, and none inowgh. But emonge these simple fowles, a fewe clothes serue the naked: weightes and measures are not needfull to such as can not skyll of crafte and deceyte and haue not the vfe of perfiferous monye, the feede of innumerable myscheues. So that if we shal not be ashamed to confess the truthe, they feeme to lyue in that goulden worlde of the whiche owlde wryters speake so much: wherin men lyued simplye and innocentlye without inforcement of lawes, without quarrellinges Judges and libelles, contente onely to satifise nature, without further vexation for knowledge of thinges to come. Yet these naked people also are tormented with ambition for the desyre they haue to enlarge their dominions: by reason wherof they kepe warre and destroy one an other; from the which plague I suppose the golden world was not free. For euen then alfo, *Cade, non cedam*, that is, gyue place, and I wyll not give place, had entred emonge men. But nowe to retorne to the matter from which we haue digressid. The admiral desyrous to knowe further of the death of his men, sent for *Guacanarillus* to come to him to his ship, dissimuling that he knew any thinge of the matter. After that he came aboord shyp, saluting the Admiral and his company gyuing alfo certen golde to the Capetaynes and offycers, turned him to the women captiues which not longe before our men had deliuered from the *Canibales*. And earnestly beholding one of them whome owre men cauled Catharyne, he speake gentelly vnto her. And thus when he had seene and marueyed at the horfes and fuche other thinges as were in the shyppe, vnknoen to them, and had with a good grace and mereley asked leave of the Admirall, he departed. Yet sum there were which confeyled the Admirall to kepe hym styll: that if they myght by any meanes proue that he was confenting to the deathe of owre men, he myght bee punished accordinglie. But the Admirall confidering that it was yet no tyme to incense th[e]inhabitantes myndes to wrathe, dysmyfied hym. The next daye folowing, the kinges brother resortyng to the shippes, eyther in his owne name or in his brothers, feduced the women. For on the next nyght about mydnight, this Katherine awell to recover her e vne libertie as also her felowes, being fuborned thereto eyther by the kinge or his brothers promises attempted a much more difficulte and daungerous aduenture then dyd *Cloelia* of Rome, which beinge in hostage with other maydes to the kyng *Porenna*, deceaued her kepers, and rode ouer the ryuer *Tiber*, with the other virgins which were pledges with her. For wheras they swamme ouer the ryuer on horfbacke. This Katharyne with feuen other women, trusyng only to the strengthe of theyr owne armes, swamme aboue three longe myles: and that also, at fuche tyme as the sea was sumwhat rowghe. For euen foo farre of frome the shore, lay the shippes at rode, as nigh as they could coniecture. But owre men folowing them with the shippboates, by the same light seene on the shore wherby the women were ledde, tooke three of them: supposinge that Katharyne with the other four, went to *Guacanarillus*. For in the springe of the morninge, certen messengers beinge fente to hym by the Admirall, had intelligence that he was fledde with all his familie and fluffe, and the women alfo, which thinge ministred further suspcion that he was confenting to the death of owre men. Wherfore the Admirall fente forthe an armye of three hundrethe men, ouer the which he appoynted *ne Melchior* to be capitayne, wylling him to make diligent searche to synde owte *Guacanarillus*. *Melchior* therfore with the smauleste vessells enteringe into the countreye by the ryuers and scouringe the shores, chaunced into certen crooked goulfes defended with. v lyttle and fliepe hilles, supposinge that it had byn the mouth of sum greate ryuer. He founde here also a verye commodious and safe hauen, and therefore named it *Portus Regalis*. They saye that the enterauance of this is so crooked and bendinge, that after the shippes are once within the fame, whether they turne them to the leste hand, or to the ryght, they can not perceave where they came in vnyll they returne to the mouth of the ryuer: Although it be there so brode that three of the biggeste vessells may sayle together on a front. The sharpe and high hilles on the one syde and on the other, to brake the wynde, that they were vncerten howe to rule theyr sayles. In the myddle gulfe of the ryuer, there is a promontorie or point of the lande with a pleasaunte grove full of Popingayes and other byrdes which breed therein and singe verye sweetlye. They perceaued also that two ryuers of no smaule largenes fell into the hauen. Whyle they thus searched the lande betwene bothe, *Melchior* espied a high house a farre of, where supposinge that *Guacanarillus* had lyne hyd, he made towarde it. And as he was goyng, there mette hym a man with a frownyng countenaunce and a grymme looke, with a hundredth men folowynge hym, armed with bowes and arrowes, and long and sharpe staves like iauelynnes, made harde at the endes with fyre. Who approching towardes owre men, speake owte alowde with a terryle voyce, fayengen that they were *Taini*, (that is) noble men, and not *Canibales*. But when owre men had gyuen them signes of peace, they leste bothe theyr weapons and fiercenes. Thus geuyng eche of them certen hauken belles, they tooke it for so greate a rewarde, that they desyred to enter bondes of nere frendeshippe with vs, and feared not immediatly to submitte them felues vnder owre power, and resorted to our shyps with theyr prefentes. They that measured the house (beinge made in rounde forme) fownde it to be from syde to syde. xxxii. greate paces, compased abowte with xxx. other vulgare houses, hauinge in them many beames croffe ouer, and couered with reedes of fundry colours, wretched and as it

Superfluite.	
Many haue to much and none ough.	
The goulden worlde	
Naked men troubled with ambicion.	
Gyue place.	
The Admiral sendeth for the kyng.	
No horses in the Ilandes	
A tyme for all thynges.	
A desperate aduenture of a woman.	
<i>Cloelia</i> of Rome.	
<i>Guacanarillus</i> is sought. <i>Melchior</i> .	
9	
Popingayes and byrdes.	
<i>Taini</i> .	
Haukes belles.	
A large hous	

Reedes of
sundry colours.

Caccius.

Hoiedus and
Gorualanus.

Gold in ryuers
faulinges from
mountaynes.

The maner of
gathering golde.
Graynes of golde.

A masse of rude
golde weighing.
ix ounces.

Caunaboa, kyng
of the house of
gold.
Holome water
and plente of
fyshe.

The day and nyght
of equal length
in December.
Byrdes breed in
December.
The elevation
of the pole.
The starres are
cauled gardens
of the pole. 10

The Equinoctial
lyne.

A chapel and
preestes.

Marchants
Sirophenicians.
The Cynamome
tree.

Xiloaloes or
lignum Aloes.

were weaved with maruelous art When owre men asked sum of them where they myght fynde *Guacanarillus*. They aunswered that that Region was none of his. But therby kynges beyng there prefente. Yet they sayde they supposid that *Guacanarillus* was gone from the playne to the mountaynes. Makynge therfore a brotherly league with this *Caccius*, (that is to faye a kyng) they retourned to the Admirall to make relation what they hadde seene and harde: whervpon he sent forth dyuers other Centurians with their hundrethes to seache the countrey yet further. Emonge the which were *Hoiedus* and *Gorualanus*, noble younge gentlemen and of great courage. And as they went towarde the mountaines to feke *Guacanarillus*, dyuidinge the mountaynes betwene them, one of them fownde on the one syde ofoure ryuers faulynge frome the same mountaynes: and the other fownde, iii. on the other syde. In the fandes of all these ryuers is fownd great plentye of goulde, which the [en]habitantes of the same Ilande which were with vs, gathered in this maner. Making holes in the fande with theyn handes, a Cubette deape, and takynge vp fande with their lefte handes from the botome of the same, they picked out graynes of goulde with their ryght handes withowte any more arte or cunnyng. And so deliuering it to owe men: who affirme that many of them thus gathered, were as bygge as tares or fytches. And I my selfe sawe a masse of rude goulde, (that is to say, such as was never molten) lyke vnto fiche stones as are fownde in the bottomes of ryuers, weighing nyne ownces, which *Hoiedus* him selfe fownde. Beinge contented with these signes, they returned to the Admirall to certifie him hereof. For the Admirall had commaunded vnder payne of punyshement that they shuld meddle no further then their commission: which was only to fearche the places with their signes. For the same went that there was a certayne kyng of the mountaynes from whence those ryuers had their faule, whom they caule *Caccius Caunaboa* that is, the lord of the house of golde. For they caule a house *Boa*, goulde, *Cauni*: and a kyng or Lorde, *Caccius*, as we haue sayde before. They affirme that there can noo where be found better fyshe, nor of more pleasant tast, or more holome then in these ryuers: also the waters of the same to be most holsoom to drynke. *Melchior* hym selfe towld me, that in the moneth of December, the days and nyghtes bee of equal length among the *Canibales*. But the sphere or circles of the heauen, agreeþ not therunto. Albeit that in the same moneth, fume byrdes make their nettes, and fume haue alredy hatched their egges by reaon of the heate beinge rather continual then extreme. He towld me also when I questioned with hym as concernyng the elevation of the pole from the horizontal lyne, that al the sterres cauled *Plastrum* or charles wayne, are hydde vnder the Northe pole to the *Canibales*. And surely there returned none from thense at this viage, to whome there is more credit to be gyuen, then to this man. But if he had byn skilfull in Aſtronomye, he shulde haue sayde that the day was almoſte equall with the night. For in no place towarde the stay of the sonne (cauled *Solſſicium*) can the night be equall with the day. And as for them, they neuer came vnder the *Equinoctiall*, for asmuch as they had euer the northe pole theyr guyde, and euer elevate in sight aboue the *Horizontal*. Thus haue I briefly written vnto yowre honoure, as muche as I thought sufficiēt at this tym. And shall shortly hereafter (by Gods fauoure) wryte vnto you more largely of ſuche matters as þalbe dayly better knownen. For the admirall hym ſelfe (whome I vſe famylieyrlie as my verye frende) haþe promyfed me by his letters, that he wyl gyue me knowledge of al ſuch thynges as ſhall chaunce. He hath nowe choſen a ſtronge place where he may buylid a Citei nere vnto a comodious hauen. And hath alredy buylid many houses and a chapell in the whiche (as in a newe worlde heretofore voyd of all religion) god is dayly ſerued with. xiii. preeetes accordinge to the maner of owe churches. When the tyme nowe approched when he promyfed to fende to the kyng and queene, and hauynge prosperous wynde for that purpoſe, ſent backe the. xi. Carauelles wherof we made mencion before it was no ſmaul hynderance and greefe, vnto hym: Especially conſyderyng the death of his men whom he lefte in the Ilande at the fyrf vyage, wherby we are yet ignorant of many places and other ſecretes wherof we might otherwyſe haue had further knowleage. But as tyme ſhall reueale them ageyne, fo wyl I aduertife yowe of the same. And that you may the better knowe by conference had with the *Apothecaries* and marchaunt ſtrangers *Sirophenicians*, what theſe Regions beare, and howe hotte theyr ground is, I haue ſent you all kyndes of graynes, with the barke and inner partes of that tree whiche they ſuppoſe to bee the *Cynamome* tree. And yf it be your pleaſure to taste eyther of the graynes, or of the ſmaule ſeedes the which you ſhoule perceave to haue fawlen from theſe graynes, or of the wodde it ſelfe, touch them firſt ſoftely mouing them to your lyppes. For although they bee not hurtfull, yet for theyr exceſſe of heate, they are ſharpe and byte the tongue, yf they remayne any whyle theron. But if the tongue be blifſted by taſtyng of them, the ſame is taken away by drynyng of water. Of the corne alſo wherof they make theyr breade, thiſ brynger ſhall deluyer ſume graynes to your Lordeshippe bothe whyte and blacke: And therwith alſo, a Trunke of the tree of *Aloes*. The which if you cutte in peeces, you ſhall feele a sweete fauoure to proceade from the ſame. Thus fare you hartely wel. From the courte of *Methimna Campi*. The thyrde day before the Calendes of May. Anno. Domini, M. CCCC. XCIII.

C THE THYRDE BOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE,
to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonye and Neuie to the kynge.



Owe defyre that folyshe *Phadon* shulde ageine rule the Chariotes of the Sunne: And contende to drawe sweete lycours out of the harde flynte, wheras you requyre me to dyscribre vnto you the newe worlde, fownde in the weste by the good fortune and gouernaunce of the Catholike Princes *Ferdinandus* and *Helisabeth*, your Vnkle and Aunte: shewyng me also the letters of kyng *Frederike* your vncle, wrytten to me in the same behalfe. But sythe you haue layde this burden on my backe, in whose power it is to commaunde me to take vpon me more then I am wel able. Ye bothe shal receaue this precious stone, rudely cleded in leade after my maner of workemanshypp. Wherfore when you shall perceave the lerned forte frendestye: The malicious, eniuiously: And the backebytters, furiously, to bende theyr felaundrous darteres ageynst owre fayre *Nimphes* of the *Ocean*, you shall freely proteste in howe short tyme, and in the myddefte of what troubles and calamities, you haue enforced me to wryte of the same. Thus fare you well frome *Granata* the nithe day before the Calendes of May.

We haue declared in the boke here before, howe the Admirall passed by the coastes of the *Canibales* to the Ilande of *Hippaniola* with his whole nauie. But nowe we entend further to shewe what he fownde as concernynge the nature of this Ilande, after that he had better searched the seacreatures of the same: Likewyse of the Ilande of *Cuba* nere vnto it which he yet supposed to bee the firme lande. *Hippaniola* therfore (which he affirmeth to bee *Ophir*, wherof we reade in the thyrd boke of the kynges) is of latitudo, fyue southe degrees: hauynge the northe pole eleuate on the northe syde. xxvii. degrees: And on the Southe syde (as they saye) xxii. degrees. It reacheth in length from the Easte to the Weste, feuen hundredre and fourre score myles. It is distant from the Ilandes of *Gades* (cauled *Cales*) xlxi. degrees, and more as sum maye. The forme of the Ilande, resembleth the leafe of a chefnuttree. Vpon a high hyll on the North syde of the Ilande, he buyldeid a citie, bycause this place was most apte for that purpote by reasoun of a myne of stones which was nere vnto the same, seruyng well bothe to buylde with, and alfo to make lyme. At the bottome of this hyll, is there a great playne of three score myles in lengthe: and in brendth sumwhere. xii. sunfumere. xx. myles where it is brodest, and. vi. myles where it is narrowest. Through this playne runne dyuers fayre ryuers of holosome waters. But the greatest of them which is nauigable, faulth into the haun of the citie for the space of halfe a furlonge. Howe fertile and fruitfull this valley is, you shal vnderstand by these thynghes which followe. On the shore of this ryuer, they haue lymyted and enclosed certeyne gronde to make gardeynes and orchardes, in the which al kyndes of bygger herbes, as radyfye, letufe, colewortes, borage, and such other, waxe ripe within. xvi. dayes after the feede is fowen. Lykewyse *Melones*, *Gourdes*, *Cucumers*, and fuche other, within the space of xxxvi. dayes. These garden herbes, they haue fresshe and greene all the whole yeare. Also the rootes of the canes or reedes, of the lycour wherof, fuger is made, growe a cubette high within the space of. xv. dayes: but the lycoure is not yet hardened. The lyke they affirme of plantes or shrouddes of younge vines: And that they haue the secound yeare gathered ripe and sweete grapes of the same. But by reasoun of to muche rankenes, they beare but fewe clusters. Furthermore, a man of the countrey fowed a lyttle wheat about the Calendes of February, and brought with hym to the citie a handefull of the ripe eares of the same the thyrd day before the calendes of Aprell: which was that yeare the vigile of the Resurrection of owre Lorde. Also, al kyndes of pulfe, as beanes, peafon, fytches, tares, and fuche other, are ripe twyfe in the yeare, as all they which come from thenselvies, affirme with one voyce: Yet that the gronde is not vniuersally apte to beare wheate. In the meane tym whyle these thynghes were doinge, the Admirall sent owte a compayne of. xxx. men to fearche the Region of *Cipanga*, otherwyse cauled *Cibana*. This Region is full of mountaynes and rockes: And the myddle backe of the hole Ilande in the whiche is greate plentie of goulde. When they that went to fearche the Region, were returned they reported maruelous thynghes as touchinge the great ryches of this Region. Frome these mountaynes, descende fourre greate ryuers, which by the maruelous industrie of nature, deuided the hole Ilande into fourre partes, in maner equall, ouerspreadinge and wateringe the hole Ilande with their branches. Of these fourre ryuers, the one reacheth towarde the Easte. This the inhabitants caule *Junnia*: An other, towarde the Weste, and is cauled *Attibunicus*. The thirde towarde the Northe, named *Iachem*: the laste reacheth into the Southe, and is cauled *Naiba*. The daye before the Ides of Marche, the Admiral him selfe with al his horse men and fourre hundredre footemen, marched directly towarde the South syde of the goulden Region. Thus passinge ouer the ryuer, the plaine and the mountayne which enuironed the other syde of the playne, he chaunced vpon an other vale the which a ryuer muche bygger then the fyfte, and many other meane ryuers

The fable of
Phaeton.

Kyng
Ferdinandus and
queene Helizabith

Nereides.
He meaneth
the Ilandes.

Hispaniola.

11
Ophir whether
Salomons shipp
sailed for golde.

Isabella.

A playne of
threescore myles
of lengthe.

A token of
maruelous
fruitfulnes.

Herbes grene al
the hole year.
Singer reeds
plantes and vines.

Corne and grayne
rype twice a yeaire

The Region of
Cipanga or
Cibana.
Golde.

Fourre greate
ryuers.

The golden
region of *Cibana*.

Vales and mountaynes		runne throwgh. When he had also conueighed his armye ouer the ryuer and passed the feconde vale whiche was in no part inferiour to the firsle, he made away through the thirde mountayne, where was no passage before, and descended into an other vale which was nowe the beginninge of <i>Cibana</i> . Through this also runne many fluddes, and ryuers, out of euer hyll, and in the sandes of them all, is fownde great plentie of goulde. And when he had nowe entered three score and twelue myles into the goulden region from the citie he entended to buylde a fortresse vpon the toppe of a hyll, standing by the shore of a certeyne great ryuer, that he might the better and more safelye searche the fecreates of the inner partes of the Region. This he cauled the fortresse of saynte Thomas. The which in the meane tyme whyle he was buyldynge, th[e]inhabitantes beinge desirous of haukes belles and other of owe things, resorted dayly thyther. To whom the Admirall declared, that if they wolde bryng goulde, they shulde haue what so euer they wolde aske, Forthwith turnynge their backes and runnyng to the shore of the next ryuer, they returned in a short tyme, brynginge with them their handes full of goulde. Amongest al other, there came a owld man bringyng with him two pybble stomes of goulde weighinge an vnce, defyryng them to gyue him a bell for the same whiche when he fawre oure men maruell at the byggernes therof, he made signes that they were but fmaule and of no value in respecte of fume that he had seene. And takynge in his hande fourre stomes the least wherof was as bygge as a walnut, and the byggest as bygge as an orange, he fayde that there was fownde peeces of goulde too bygge in his countrey, beyng but halfe a dayes iourney from thenfe, and that they had no regarde to the gatheringe therof. Wherby we perceave that they passe not muche for goulde inasmuch as it is goulde only, but so farre esteeme it, as the hande of the artificer hath faſhioned it in any coonely fourme. For who doth greatlye esteeme rough marble or vnwrought Iuerye. But if they be wrought with the cunninge hande of <i>Phidias</i> or <i>Praxites</i> , and shaped to the similitude of the fyre nimphes or fayeres of the sea (cauled <i>Nereiades</i>) or the fayeres of the wods, (cauled <i>Hamadriades</i>) they shal neuer lacke byers. Befyde this owld man, there came also dyuers other, brynginge with them pypple stomes of gold weighinge x. or. xii. drammes: And feared not to confesse, that in the place where they gathered that golde, there were found sumtyme stomes of gold as bygge as the heade of a chyld. When he had taryed heare a fewe dayes, he fent one <i>Luxanus</i> , a noble younge gentleman with a fewe armed men to searche all the partes of this Region. Who at his returne, reported that th[e]inhabitantes shewed him greater thinges then we haue spoken of here before. But he dyd openly declare nothyng therof: which they thought was doone by the Admirales commaundement. They haue wooddes full of certeyne spycies: but not fuche as we commonly vfe. These they gather even as they do golde: that is as muche as wyl ferue for theyr purpoe, eury man for hym selfe, to exchange the same with the inhabitantes of other countreys adioyninge to them, for such thinges as they lacke, as dysfhes, pottes, flooles, and fuche other necessaries. As <i>Luxanus</i> returned to the Admiral, (which was about the Ides of Marche) he fownde in the wooddes, certeyne wylde vines, rype and of plefaunt taste. But th[e]inhabitantes passe not on them. This Region though it bee full of stones and rockes (and is therfore cauled <i>Cibana</i> , whiche is as muche to faye as a stome) yet it is well replenyshed with trees and pastures. Ye they instantly affirme, that if the grasse of these mountaynes bee cutte, it groweth ageyne within the space of fourre dayes, higher then wheate. And for as muche as many floweres of rayne doo faule in this Region, whereof the ryuers and fluddes haue their increase, in eury of the which, golde is fownde myxte with fande in all places, they iudge that the golde is dryuen from the mountayne, by the vehement course of the stremes which faule from the same, and runne into the ryuers. The people of this Region are gyuen to Idelnes and playe. For fuche as inhabyte the mountaynes, syt quakynge for coulde in the wynter seafon, and had rather too wonder vppe and downe Idelly, then take the peines to make them apparell, wheras they haue wooddes full of goffampine cotton. But such as dwel in the vales or plaines feele no coulde in wynter. When the Admirall had thus searched the beginnings of the region of <i>Cibana</i> , he repayed to <i>Ifabella</i> (for so he named the citie) where, leauinge the gouernance of the Ilande with his deputies, he prepared hym selfe to search further the lymettes of the Ilande of <i>Cuba</i> or <i>Iohanna</i> , which he yet doubted to bee the firme lande, and distant from <i>Hispaniola</i> , onely three score and ten myles. This dyd he with more speedy expedicion, caulyng to remembraunce the kinges commaundement, who wylled hym fyfth with all celerite to ouer runne the coastes of the newe Ilandes, leaste any other prince shulde in the meane tyme atteympe to inuade the same. For the Kyng of Portugale affirmed that it perteyned only to hym to discouer thefe vnknownen landes. But the byhop of Rome Alexander the. vi. to auoyd the caufe of this disencion, graunted to the Kyng of Spayne by th[e]auttoritie of his leaden bulles, that no other prince shulde be so bould as to make any viages to any of those vnknownen regions, lyenge without the precinct of a directe lyne drawn from the North to the Southe a hundredth leagues westwarde without the paralleles of the Ilandes cauled <i>Capul Viride</i> , or <i>Cabouerde</i> , which we thynke to bee thoſe that in owlide tyme were cauled <i>Hesperides</i> . These perteyne to the kyng of Portugale. And frome theſe, his pylottes whiche doo yearlye searche newe coastes and regions, direcťe their course to the Eaſte, faylyng euer towarde the leſte hande by the backe of Aphrike and the feas of the Ethiopians: Neyther to this day had the Portugales at any tyme fayled Southwarde, or Westwarde from the Ilandes of <i>Cabouerde</i> .		
The vale of Cibana.				
Golde for haukes belles.	12			
Graynes and pipple stones of golde.				
They passe not for golde, in that it is golde only but, etc.				
Stones of golde as byg as the heade of a chyld.				
Spyces.				
Wylde vines of pleaunante taste.				
Fruitful mountaynes				
Golde in the sandes of ryuers faulning from the mountaynes. Libertie and Idelnes. The mountaynes are coulde.				
The Ilande of Cuba.				
Least any other prace, &c				
Disencion betweene the Portugales and Spaniardes.				
The Ilandes of Cabouerde or Hisperides	13			
The Portugales viages				

ale whiche
age before,
inne many
lde. And
e intended
t he might
ge fortresse
ge desirous
lared, that
ynge theyr
with them
bble stones
oure men
te of fume
ut, and the
s countrey,
: Wherby
e it, as the
ough marble
l shaped to
ds, (cauled
nginge with
where they
hen he had
to searche
ter things
ought was
ue as we
sope, every
m, for such
ned to the
ype and of
and rockes
h trees and
eyne within
faule in this
myxte with
ourse of the
e gyuen to
seafon, and
they haue
er. When
he named
arch further
istant from
to rememb
es of the
e Kynge
e byshop of
y th[e]auc
ny of those
: Southe a
which we
Portugale.
urfe to the
: Neyther
Cabouerde.

Preparynge therfore three shippes, he made haste towarde the Ilande of *Iohanna* or *Cuba* whither he came in shorte space, and named the poynt therof where he fyrt arryued, *Alpha* and *O*: that is, the fyrfle and the laste: for he supposed that there had byn th[e]end of owre Easte bycause the sonne faulthe there: And of the weste, bycause it ryfeth there. For it is apparente, that westwarde, it is the beginninge of *India* beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*: And Eastwarde, the furthest ende of the same: which thinge is not contrary to reasoun or asynche as the Cosmographers haue lefte the lymites of *India* beyonde *Ganges* vndetermined: where as also sume were of opinion that *India* was not farre from the coastes of Spaine as we haue sayde before. Within the prospecte of the begynnynge of *Cuba*, he founde a commodious hauen in the extreme angle of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*. For in this part, the Iland receaueth a greate goulfe. This hauen, he named faynt Nycolas porte, beinge scarfely. xx. leagues from *Cuba*. As he departed from hene and sayled westwarde by the south fyde of *Cuba*, the further that he went, so muche the sea seemed to bee extended in breadth and to bende towarde the south. On the south fyde of *Cuba*, he fownde an Ilande which th[e]inhabitantes caule *Jamaica*. This he affirmyeth to bee longer and broder then the Iland of Sicilie: hauyng in it only one mountayne, which on every parte begynninge from the sea, ryfeth by little and little into the myddest of the Ilande: And that soo playnely without rowghnes, that fuche as goo vp to the toppe of the same, can scarfely perceave that they ascende. This Ilande he affirmyeth to bee very fruitfull and full of people as well in th[e]inner partes of the same as by the shore: And that th[e]inhabitantes are of quicker wytte then in the other Ilandes, and more experte artificers and warrelyke men. For in many places where he woulde haue arryued, they came armed ageynst hym and forbode him with threatening wordes. But beinge ouercome, they made a league of frendeship with hym. Thus departyng from *Jamaica*, he sayled towarde the Weste with a prosperous wynde for the space of threescore and tenne dayes: thinkinges that he had pastid so farre by the compasse of the earth being vnderneath vs, that he had byn nere vnto *Aurea Chersonesus* (nowe cauled *Malacca*,) in owre Easte India beyonde the beginninge of *Persides*. For he playnely beleued that he had lefte only two of the twelue howres of the sonne, which were vnknownen to vs, for the owld wryters haue lefte halfe the courfe of the sonne vtouched, where as they haue but onely discusshed that superficiall parte of the earth which lyeth betwene the Ilandes of Gades and the ryuer of *Ganges*: or at the vttermoste, to *Aurea Chersonesus*. In this nauigation, he chaunced on many furious feas, running with a faule as it had byn the stremes of fluddes: Also many whorlepooles, and shelves, with many other daungers, and freyghtes by reasoun of the multytude of Ilandes, which ley on every fyde. But not regardinge all these perilles, he determinyd to proceade vntyl he had certaine knowledge whether *Cuba* were an Ilande or firme lande. Thus he sayled forward coastinge euer by the shore towarde the weste for the space of CC. xxii. [two hundred and twenty-two] leagues, that is, abowte a thoufande and three hundredth myles: And gaue names to feuen hundredth Ilandes by the waye: Leauyng also on the leste hande (as he feared not to reporte) three thoufande here and there. But let vs nowe retorne to suche thinges as he fownde worthy to be noted in this nauigation. Saylinge therfore by the fyde of *Cuba*, and searchinge the nature of the places, he espied not fare from *Alpha* and *O*, a large hauen of capacite to harborowe manye shippes: whose enterauance is bendinge, beinge inclosed on bothe fydes with capes or poyntes which receaue the water. This hauen is large within, and of exceedinge deppthe. Saylinge by the shore of this porte, he fawfe not farre frome the same, two cotages couered with reedes, and in many places fyer kyndled. Here he fente certeyne armed men owte of the shippes to the cotages: where they fownde nother man nor woman, but rofemeate enowgh. For they fownde certeyne spyttes of woodde lyeng at the fyre, hausinge fythe on themys abowt a hundredth pownde weight, and two serpentes of. viii. foote longe a piece, wherat marueylinge, and lokynge abowt if they could espie any of th[e]inhabitantes, and that none appeared in fyght (for they fledde all to the mountaynes at the comminge of owre men) they fell to their meate, and eate the fythe taken with other mens trauayle: But they absteyned from the serpentes, which they affirme to differ nothinge from Crocodiles of Egypt, but onely in byggenes. For (as *Plinie* sayth) Crocodiles haue sumetymes byn fownde of. xviii. cubettes long. But of these the byggest were but of. viii. fote. Thus beinge well refreshed, they entered into the next woodde where they fownde many of the same kynde of serpentes hangyng vpon bowghes of trees: of the which, sume had theyr mouthes tyed with ftrynges, and sume theyr teethe taken owte. And as they searched the places nere vnto the hauen, they fawfe abowte. lxx. men in the toppe of a hyghe rocke, whiche fledde as soone as they had espied owre men. Who by signes and tokens of peace, caulinge them ageyne, there was one which came nere them and stooede on the toppe of a rocke, seymyng as though he were yet serefull. But the Admiral fent one *Didacus* to hym, a man of the same countrey, whom he had at his fyrfle vyage taken in the Ilande of *Guanahaini*, beinge nere vnto *Cuba*: wyllinge hym to come nere and not to bee afryade. When he harde *Didacus* speke to him in his owne tonge he came bowldly to hym: and shortly after reforted to his company, perfuadinge them to come without all feare. After this meffage was doone, there descended frome the rockes to the shippes, abowt three score and ten of th[e]inhabitantes, proferinge frendeshippe and gentelnes to owre men: whiche the Admirall accepted thankefullly, and gaue them dyuers rewardes: And that the rather, for that he had intelligence by *Didacus* th[e]interpretour, that they were the kynge

Alpha and O
The ende of the
Easte and west.

Note.
India not far
from Spayne.
Saynt Nycolas
porte.

The Iland of
Jamaica.

Jamaica.
Quicke wytted
people.

The compaseinge
of the earth.

Aurea
Chersonesus, or
Malacca.
A secrete of
Astronomie.
The ryuer of
Ganges.

Daungerous
straigthes by
reason of many
Ilandes.

The Admiral gaue
names to seuen
hundrethe Ilandes.
Three thousand
Ilandes.

A large hauen

Rosted fyshe and
serpents of. viii.
foote longe.

14
Crocodiles of
Egypte.

Didacus
th[e]interpretour.

The kynge
faythers.

Serpentes
esteemed for
delicate meat
Ophiophagi.

Blossomes and
fruites bothe at
one tym.

Trees which
bearre gourds

A multitude of
Ilandes.

Hotte water.

A straunge kynde
of fysynghe.
A hantynge
fyshee.

Abundance of
tortoyses. 15

Fyssher men.

The fyshee
Guaiacum.

Humaine people.

A mountaine
fruitefull and well
inhabited.

Dogges of strange
shap and blymme.
16

fyshers, fent of theyr lorde to take fyssh ageynst a folemente feaste which he prepared for an other kyng. And wheras the Admirales men had eaten the fyssh whiche they lefte at the fyre, they were the gladder therof, bycause they had lefte the serpentes. For there is nothinge amounghe theyr delicate dysshes, that they esteeme so muche as these serpentes: In soo muche that it is no more lawfull for the common people to eate of them, then peacockes or pheasantes amounghe vs. As for the fysshes, they doubted not to take as many more the same nyght. Beynge asked why they fyrfst rosted the fyssh which they intended to beare to their kyng. They answered, that they might bee the freffher and vncorrupted. Thus ioyninge handes for a token of further frenchedis, every man resorted to his owne. The Admirall went forwarde as he had appoynted, folowing the faulinges of the sonne from the beginningne of Cuba cauled *Alpha* and *O*. The shores or sea bankes euen vnto this hauen, albeit they be ful of trees, yet are they rowgh with mountaines. Of these trees, fume were ful of blossomes and flowres, and other laden with fruites. Beyonde the hauen the lande is more fertile and peopulous, whose inhabitanthes are more gentyll and more desyrous of owe things. For as sone as they had espied owe shippes, they flocked all to the shore, brynginge with them suche breade as they are accustomed to eate, and gourdes full of water, offeringe theym vnto owe men, and further defyringe them to coome alande. In all these Ilandes is a certeyne kynde of trees as bygge as elmes, whiche beare gourdes in the steade of fruites. These they vse only for drinkynge pottes, and to fetche water in, but not for meate, for the inner substance of them, is sowerer then gaule, and the barke as harde as any shelle. At the Ides of Maye, the watche men lokinge owte of the toppe castell of the shyppe towards the Southe, sawe a multitude of Ilandes stadinge thicke together, beynge all well replenished with trees, grasse, and herbes, and wel inhabyted. In the shore of the continent, he chaunced into a nauigable ryuer whose water was too hotte, that no man myght endure to abyde his hande therein any tym. The day folowinge, espying a farre off a Canoa of fyssher men of th[e]jnhabitantes, fearing least they shulde fye at the syght of owe men, he commaunded certeyne to assayle them pruyily with the shyppe boates. But they fearinge nothinge, taryed the comminge of owe men. Nowe shal you heare a newe kind of fysshinge. Lyke as we with greyhounds doo hunte hares, in the playne fieldes. So doo they as it were with a hantynge fyssh, take other fysshes. This fyssh was of shape or fourme vnknownen vnto vs: but the body therof, not muche vnylike a greate yele: hausinge on the hynder parte of the heade, a very towgh skynne, lyke vnto a greate bagge or purse. This fyssh is tyed by the syde of the boate with a corde lette downe foo farre into the water, that the fyssh maye lyce clofe hyd by the keele or bottome of the same, for shee may in no case abyde the figh of the ayer. Thus when they espie any greate fyssh, or tortoysie (wherof there is great abundance bygger then greate targettes) they let the corde at lengthe. But when the feleeth her sel' loosed, shee enuadeth the fyssh or tortoysie as swiftly as an arrowe. And where she hath once fastened her howld shee casteth the purse of skynne wherof we spake before: And by drawyng the same togther, so grafeleth her pray, that no mans strength is sufficient to vnloose the same, excepte by lyttle and lyttle drawinge the lyne, shee bee lyfted sumwhat aboue the brymme of the water. For then, as sone as the feeth the brightnes of the ayer, shee lettethe goo her howlde. The praye therfore, beinge nowe drawnen nere to the brymme of the water, there leapeth foodeny owte of the boate into the sea foo mane fysshers, as maye suffice to holde faste the praye, vntyll the reste of the coompany haue taken it into the boate. Which thinge doone, they loofo so muche of the cord, that the hunting fyssh, may ageyne retorne to her place within the water: where by an other corde, they let downe to her a piece of the praye, as we vse to rewarde greyhounds after they haue kylled their game. This fyssh, they caule *Guianum*, But owe men caule it *Reversum*. They gave owe men fourre tortoyses taken by this meanes: And thoſe of ſuch byggenes that they almoſte fylled their fysshinge boate. For these fysshes are esteemed amounghe them for delicate meate. Owe men recompensed them ageyne with other rewardes, and too lete them depare. Beinge asked of the coompasse of that lande, they aunswred that it had no ende westerwarde. Moſt instantly defyringe the Admirall to coome alande: or in his name to fende one with them to falute their *Casicus*, (that is) their kinge: Affirmynge that he wolde gyue owe men many prefentes, yf they wolde goo to hym. But the Admirall, leaſte he shulde bee hyndred of the vyage which he had begunne, refused to goo with them. Then they defyred to knowe his name, and towld owe men lykewyſe the name of theyr kyng. Thus fayling on yet further euer toward the Weſt, within fewe dayes he came nere vnto a certeyne exceeding high mountayne, wel inhabyted by reaſon of the great fertilitie of the same. Th[e]jnhabitantes of this mountayne, brought to owe shyppe, breade, goſſampine cotton, cunnies, and ſundry kyndes of wyldfowle: demaundynge religiously of th[e]jinterpretours, if this nation defencded not from heauen. The kyng of this people, and dyuers other ſage men that ſtoode by hym, informed hym that that lande was no Ilande. Shortly after, entering into one of the Ilandes beinge on the lefte hande of this lande, they founde no body therin: for they fledde al at the commyng of owe men. Yet fownde they there fourre dogges of maruelous deformed ſhape, and ſuche as coulde not barke. This kynd of dogges, they eate as we do goates. Here is great plentie of geefe, duckes, and hearons. Betwene these Ilandes and the continent, he entered into ſoo narowe ſtreygthes, that he coulde ſcarfely turne backe the ſhippes: And theſe alſo ſo ſhalowe, that the keele of the ſhipps ſumtyme rafed

. And therof, seeme so m, then e nyght. ed, that e, every e of the n, albeit nes and n inhabi- tes, they es full of ades is a wfe only er then e toppe all well ced into ny tyme. ulde fye But they . Lyke ng fyshe, ot mucu te bagge that the at of the en great fyshe or of skynne strength is boue the howlde. e of the company ng fyshe, piece of ey caule meanes: esteemed tte them e. Most utre their e goo to goo with . Thus ing high untayne, undyngc ple, and ly after, for they d shape, of geefe, tes, that me rased

on the sandes. The water of these streyghes, for the space of fortie myles, was white and thycke lyke vnto mylke, and as though mele had byn sparkled throngh owte al that sea. And when they had at the length escaped these strayghes, and were nowe coome into a mayne and large sea, and had fayled theron for the space of fourt score myles, they espdyed an other exceedinge hygh mountayne, whither the Admirall reforted to store his shypes with fresshe water and fuel. Heare amoung certeyne wooddes of date trees, and pyneable trees of excedyng height he fownd two natvie sprynges of fresshe water. In the meane tyme whyle the woodde was cuttyng and the barrelles fylling, one of owe archers went into the wood to hunt: where he espdyed a certeyne man with a whyte vesture, foo lyke a fryer of th[e]order of saynt Marye of *Mercedes*, that at the fyrt fight he supposid it had byn the Admiralles preefet which he brought hym, beyng a man of the same order. But two other folowed hym immediatlye owte of the same wooddes, shortly after, he fawe a farre of a hole coompany of men clothed in apparel, beinge abowte. xxx. in nomber. Then turning his backe and cryinge owte to his felowes, he made haste to the shypes with all that he myght dryue. Thest apparelléd men, made signes and tokens to hym to tary and not to bee afayde. But that notwithstandinge, he ceafed not to fye. The Admirall beinge aduertified hereof, and not a lytle reioyfyng that he had fownde a ciuile people, incontinently sent forth armed men, with commaundement that yf neede shoulde so require, they shulde enter fortie myles into the Ilande, vntyl they myght fynde eyther those apparelléd men, or other inhabitantes of that countrey. When they hadde paſſed ouer the woodde, they came into a greate playne full of grafe and herbes, in which appeared no token of any pathe way. Here attemptinge to goo through the grafe and herbes, they were too entangled and bewratpe therin, that they were feareſlē able to paſſe a myle, the grafe beinge there lyttle lower then owe rype corne. Beinge therfore weryed, they were enforced to retorne ageyne, fyndyng no pathe way. The day folowing he sent foorth. xxv. armed men an other way: Commaunding them to make diligent searche and inquisition what maner of people inhabited the land. Who departinge, when they had fownde not farre from the sea fyde certeyne steppes of wyld beastes, of the which they suspected sum to bee of Lyons feete being striken with feare, returned backe ageyne. As they came they fownde a woodde in the which were many natvie vines here and there crepinge abowte highe trees, with many other trees bearinge aromaticall fruities and spycies. Of these vines they broughth with them into Spaine many clusters of grapes very ponderous and full of lycoure. But of the other fruities, they broughth none bycaufe they putrifid by the waye in the shippe, and were cast into the sea. They faye also that in the laundes or medowes of thoe wooddes, they fawe flockes of greate cranes twyſe as bigge as oweſ. As he went forward and turned his fayles towarde certeyne other mountaines, he espied two cotages on the shore, in the whiche he fawe onely one man: who beinge broughth to the shyppe, signified with heade, fyngers, and by al other signes, that he coulde deuine that the lande which lay beyonde those mountaynes, was very full of people. And as the Admirall drewe nere the shore of the same, there mette hym certeyne *Canoas* haungin in them many people of the countrey, who made signes and tokens of peace and frendeshyp. But here *Didacus* th[e]interpretour whiche vnderſtoode the language of th[e]inhabitantes of the beginning of *Cuba*, vnderſtoode not them one whyte, wherby they conſydred that in fundry prouincies of *Cuba*, were fundry languages. He had also intelligence, that in the inlande of this Region, was a kyng of greate power, and accustomed to weare apparell. He sayth that all the tracte of this shore, was drowned with water and full of mudde, besette with many trees, after the maner of owe maryſhes, yet whereas in this place they wente alande for fresshe water, they fownde many of the shel fysshes in the whiche pearlē are gathered. But that coulde not caufe the Admirall to trate the tyme there, entendinge at this viage, only to proue howe many landes and feas he coulde discouer accordinge to the kynges commaundement. As they yet proceded forwarde, they fawe here and there al the waye alonge by the shore, a great smoke ryſinge, vntyl they came to an other mountayne fourt score myles distant. There was no rocke or hyll that coulde be feene, but the fame was all of a smoke. But whether these fyres were made by th[e]inhabitantes for their necessary busynes, or as we are wont to fette beacons on fyre when we suspecte th[e]approche of owe enemies, thereby to gyue warninge to theyr neyghbours to bee in a redines, and gather togither if perhaſpes owe men shulde attempte any thinge ageynſt them, or otherwyſe as ſeemeth moſt lykely, to caule them togither as to a wonder to behould owe ſhippes, they knewe yet no certentie. In this tracte, the shores bended fumetyme towarde the Southe, and fumetyme towarde the Weste and westesouthwest: And the ſea was euery where entangled with Ilandes: by reaſon whereof, the keeles of the ſhippes often tymes rafed the ſandes for ſhalownes of the water: So that the ſhippes beinge very fore bruſed and appayred, the fayles, cables, and other tackelinges, in maner rotten, and the vtyales, (eſpecially the byſkette breade) corrupted by takyng water at the riftes cuyll cloſed, the Admirall was enforced to turne backe ageyne. This laſte poynete where he touched of *Cuba* (not yet beeing knownen to be an Ilande) he cauled *Euangelista*. Thus turning his fayles toward other Ilandes lyinge not farre from the ſuppoſed continent, he chaunced into a mayne ſea where was fuche a multitude of greate tortoyses, that ſumtyme they flayed the ſhippes. Not longe after, he entered into a gulf of whyte water, lyke vnto that wherof we ſpake before. At the length fearing the ſhelles of the Ilandes, he returned to the ſhore of *Cuba* by

Whyte and thicke water.

Wooddes of date trees.

Men appareld like white fryers.

16
Grasse almost as hyghe as corne.

Steppes of wyld beastes feete.

Natvie vines

Trees bearinge spycies and sweete fruities
Greate Cranes.

Dyuers languages in the Ilande of Cuba.

Pearles in ſhelfyſhes.

The ſea entangled with Ilandes

Euangelista.
A multitudine of great tortoyses

A goufe of whyte
water
Humaine people.
Stock douses of
more pleasaunt
tast then
partiches.

17

The humanite of
a reuerende ownde
gouvernour.

An oration of the
naked gouvernour.

Theyr opinion of
the soul of man.

Desyre of golde
sounde that
which religion
coulde not fynde.
*Virtus post
numinos. &c.*

The Iland as
common as the
sunne and water.

The golden
worlde.

Prouision without
earre.

Simple diete

18

The Iland of
Iamaica.

Hispaniola.

The Canibales.

the same way which he came. Here a multitude of th[e]inhabitantes, as well women as men, reforted to hym with cheerefull countenaunce and without feare: bringyng with them popingayes, breade, water, and cunnyses: But especially flocke douses much bygger then owres: which he affirmeth, in fauour and taste, to bee muche more plefaunt then owe partryches. Wherfore where as in eatinge of them he perceaued a certeyne fauoure of spycce to procede from them, he commaunded the cropp to bee opened of suche as were newly kylled, and fownde the same full of sweete spycses, whiche he argued to bee the caufe of theyr straunge taste. For it standeth with good reasoun, that the fleshe of beastes, shulde drawe the nature and qualitie of theyr accustomed nuryshementes. As the Admirall harde masse on the shore, there came towarde hym a certeyne gouernoure, a man of four score yeares of age, and of great grauitie, althowgh he were naked sauing his pruyue partes. He had a great trayne of menne wayting on hym. All the whyle the preefe was at masse, he shewed hym selfe verye humble and gaue reuerente attendaunce with graue and demure countenaunce. When the masse was ended, he prefenteth to the Admirall, a bafkette of the frutes of his countrey, delyueringe the same with his owne handes. When the Admirall had gentelly interteyned hym, desyryng leaue to speake, he made an oration in the presence of *Didacus th[e]interpretore*, in this effecte. I haue byn aduertised (moste mighty prince) that you haue of late with greate power subdued many landes and Regions hythero vnknownen to you: and haue browght no little feare vpon all the people and inhabitantes of the same. The which your good fortune, you shal beare with lesse infolencie, if you remember that the foulcs of men haue two iourneyes after they are departed from this b[ea]t[e]dye. The one fowle and darke, prepared for suche as are iniurious and cruell to mankynde: The other plefaunt and delectable, ordeyned for them which in theyr lyfe tyme, loued peace and quietnes. If therefore you acknowledge your selfe to bee mortall, and confyder that every man shall receave condigne rewarde or punyshement for such things as he hath done in this life, you wyl wrongefullly hurtre no man. When he had sayde these wordes and other lyke, which were declared to the Admirall by th[e]interpretore, he marueylinge at the iudgements of the naked owlde man, answered, that he was gladdie to heare his opinion as touchinge the sundry iourneys and rewardes of sowles departed from theyr bodyes: Supposinge that nother he, or any other of th[e]inhabitantes of those Regions, had had any knowleage thereof. Declaringe further that the chiefe cause of his comminge thither was to instructe them in such godly knowleage and trewe religion: And that he was sente into those countreys by the Christian kyng of Spayne (his lorde and maister) for the same purpose: And specially to subdue and punishe the Canibales and such other mischeuous people: And to defende innocentes agaynst the violence of such euyll doers wyllynghe hym and all other such as embrased vertue, in no case to bee afraide: But rather to open his mynde vnto him, if eyther he, or any other suche quiete men as he was, hadde fusteyned any wronge of theyr neyghbours: and that he wold fee the same reuenged. Thefe comfortable wordes of the Admirall so pleased the owlde man, that notwithstandingyng his extreeme age, he woulde gladly haue gone with the Admiral as he had doone in deede, if his wyfe and chyldren had not hyndered hym of his purpose. But he marueyled not a lyttle, that the Admirall was vnder the dominion of an other: And muche more, when th[e]interpretour towlde hym of the glorye, magnificence, pompes, greate powre, and furnymementes of warre of owe kynges, and of the multitudes of cities and townes which were vnder theyr dominions. Intending therfore to haue gonue with the Admirall, his wyfe and chyldren fell prostrate at his feete, with teares desyryng hym not to foriske them and leaue them defolate. At whose pytifull requestes, the worthy owlde man beinge moued, remayned at home to the comfort of his people and famylie, satifyenge rather them then hym selfe. For not yet ceasinge to woondre, and of heauy countenaunce bycause he myght not departe, he demanded oftentimes if that lande were not heauen, which browght foorth suche a kynde of men. For it is certeyne, that amonge them, the lande is as common as the sonne and water: And that Myne and Thyne (the feedes of all mycheefe) haue no place with them. They are contente with foo lytle, that in foo large a countrey, they haue rather superfluite then scarfenes. Soo that (as wee haue sayde before) they feeme to lyue in the goulden worlde, without toyle, lyuynge in open gardens, not intrenched with dykes, dyuyded with hedges, or defended with waules. They deale trewely one with another, without lawes, without bookees, and without Judges. They take hym for an euyll and mycbeuous man, which taketh pleasure in doinge hurte to other. And albeit that they delyte not in superfluitie, yet make they prouision for th[e]increas of suche rootes, wherof they make theyr breade, as *Maium, Iucca*, and *Ages*, contented with suche simple dyet, wherby health is preferred, and dyesases ayouded. The Admirall therfore departinge from thenfe, and myndinge to returne ageyne shortly after, chaunced to coome ageyne to the Ilande of *Jamaica* beinge on the southe syde therof: and coasted all alonge by the shore of the same, from the Weste to the Easte. From whose last corner on the East syde, when he fawe towarde the North on his leste hand, certeyn high mountaines he knewe at the length that it was the sowthe syde of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, which he had not yet passed by. Wherfore at the Calendes of September, enteringe into the hauen of the same Ilande, cauled saynt Nicolas hauen, he repayed his shippes to th[e]intent that he myght ageyne wast and spoyle the Ilandes of the Canibales, and burne all theyr Canoas, that thosse raueninges woulos myght no longer perfecute and deuoure the innocent sheepe. But he was at this tymе hyndered of his

purpose by reason of a dysease which he had gotten with to muche watchinge. Thus beinge feeble and weake, he was ledde of the maryners to the citie of *Ifabella*, where, with his two brytherne which were there, and other his familiers, he recovered his health in shorte space. Yet coulde he not at this tyme assayle the Canibales, by reason of fedicion that was ryzen of late amoung the Spanyardes which he had leste in *Hispaniola*, wherof we wyll speake more heareafter. Thus fare ye wel.

Sickenes of to
much watchinge.

THE FOURTH BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonie.



Olonus the Admirall of the Ocean, returning (as he supposid) from the continent or firme lande of East India, had aduertisement that his brother *Boilus* and one *Peter Margarita*, an owld familiere of the kinges, and a noble man, with diuers other of those to whom he had left the gouernement of the Iland, were of corrupted mynde ageynst him, departed into Spayne. Wherfore as wel to purge him of such crimes as they shuld ley to his charge, as also to make a supply of other men in the place of them which were returned, and especially to prouyde for vitailles, as wheat, wyne, oyle, and such other which the Spanyardes are accustomed to eate, bycause they coulde not yet well agree with such meates as they fownd in the Ilandes, determined shortly to take his vyage into Spayne. But what he dyd before his departure, I wyll brefely rehearse.

East India.
The Spanyardes
rebelle in the
Admirals absence.

The kynges of the Ilandes which had hyterto lyued quietly and content with theiры lyttle whiche they thought abundante, wheras they nowe perceaved that owe men began to fasten foote within their Regions and to beare rule amoung them, tooke the matter so greuously, that they thought nothyng elles but by what meanes they myght vterly destroy them, and for euer abolyshe the memory of theiры name. For that kynde of men (the Spanyardes I meane which folowed the Admirall in that nauigation,) was for the most parte vnrule, regardynge nothinge but Idlenes, playe, and libertie: And wolde by no meanes absteyne from iniuries: Rauyshynge the women of the Ilandes before the faces of their husbands, fathers, and brethrene: By which theyr abhomynayre mysdemaynor, they disquieted the myndes of all th[e]inhabitantes: In so much that wherefover they fownd any of owe men vnpreaded, they dewe them with suche fyercenes and gladnes, as though they had offered facryfye to God. Intendynge therefore to pacifie their troubled myndes, and to punyfhe them that flew his men before he departed from thense, he sent for the kyng of that vale, which in the booke before, we decrybed to bee at the foote of the mountaynes of the Region of *Cibaua*. This kynges name was *Guarionexius*: who, the more streightly to concyle vnto hym the frendeshyppe of the Admirall gae hys fyster to wyfe to *Didacus*, a man from his chyldes age brought vp with the Admirall, whom he vseid for his interpreture in the prouinces of *Cuba*. After this, he sent for *Caunaboa*, cauled the lordes of the howfe of goulde: that is, of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*. For this *Caunaboa*, he fente one capitayne *Hoieda*, whom the ditionaries of *Caunaboa* had enforced to keepe his howlde by siegeinge for the space of xxx. dayes, the fortresse of saynte Thomas, in the which *Hoieda* with his fyftie soldierns, stode at theire defence, vntyll the comminge of the Admirall. Whyle *Hoieda* remayned with *Caunaboa*, many ambassadours of the kynges of dyuers Regions were sent to *Caunaboa*, peruaudinge hym in no condicione to permitte the Christians to inhabite the Ilande, except he had rather ferue then rule. On the other parte, *Hoieda* aduertised *Caunaboa* to goo to the Admirall, and to make a league of frendeship with hym. But the ambassadours on the contrary part, threatened hym, that yf he wolde foo doo, the other kynges wolde invade his Region. But *Hoieda* aunswerved them ageyne, that wheras they conspired to maynteyne their libertie, they shuld by that meanes be brought to seruitude and destruction if they intended to refist or keepe ware ageinst the Christians. Thus *Caunaboa* on the one syde and the other, beinge troublede as it were a rocke in the sea, beaten with contrary fluddes, and much more vexed with the stormes of his gyltie confiencie for that he had priuilie flaine. xx. of owe men vnder pretence of peace feared to coome to the Admirall. But at the length, hauing exocitated this deceyte, to haue layne the Admirall and his coompany vnder the colour of frendeshippe if oportunitie wold foo haue ferude, he repayed to the Admirall with his hole familie and many other wayting on hym, armed after theire maner. Beinge demauded why he brought so greate a rout of men with hym, he aunswerved that it was not decente for soo great a prince as he was, to goo foorth of his howfe without suche a bande of men. But the thinge chaunced much otherwyse then he looked for. For he fell into the snares which he had prepared for other. For wheras by the way he began to repente hym that he came foorth of his howfe, *Hoieda* with many fayre wordes and promyses, brought hym to the Admirall: At whose commaundement, he was immediatly taken and put in prisone: So that the fowles of owe men were not longe

The kynges of the
Ilande rebell.

The Spanyardes
misbehaouour.

Guarionexius the
kyng of the
great vale
Didacus the
interpretre
Caunaboa, the
kyng of the
house of golde.

Capitayne Hoieda

19

Kynge Caunaboa,
had slain the
Spanyardes.
Caunaboa
conspireth the
Admiralles death.

Fayre words
make fooles fayne.

Famine in the
Ilande of
hispaniola.

The hunger of
gold causes
great famine.

The towre of
conception.

A masse of gold
weighinge. xx.
ounces.

Tofus.

Electrum is a
metal naturally
mixt of one portion
of gold and an
other of silver
being of properte
to bewray payson,
and was **20**
therfore in
ownde tyme in
greater estimation
then golde.

The myne of
Electrum.

An other kynde of
amber is taken out
of greate whale
fishes
Orpement or oker.
Wooddes of
brasile trees.

Causes of
hindernance.
Licensiounes of
to much libertie

And this only
gathered and not
digged out of the
bodi of the mine

The people make
supplication to
stand to their
tribute

from their bodies vnreuenged. Thus *Caunaboa* with all his familie beinge taken, the Admirall was determined to runne ouer the Ilande. But he was certified that there was such famine amoung the inhabitanates, that there was alredye fiftie thousande menne deade therof: And that they dyed yet dayly as it were rotton sheepe: The caufe wherof was wel knowne to bee theyr owne obstinacie and fowardnes. For where as they sawe that owre men intended to choose them a dwelling place in the Ilande, supposinge that they myght haue driven them from thence if the vtailes of the Ilande shoulde fayle, they determyned with them selues, not only to leauue sowing and plantyng, but also to defroy and plucke vp by the rootes every man in his owne region, that whiche they had alredye fowen of both kyndes of breade wherof we made mencion in the fyrist booke. But especially amoung the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, otherwyse cauled *Cipanga*, for as muche as they hadde knowleage that the golde which abundeth in that Region, was the cheefe caufe that deteyned owre men in the Ilande. In the meane tyme, he sent foorth a Capitayne with a bande of men to searche the sowthe syde of the Ilande. Who at his returme, reported that throwghe out all the Regions that he trauayled, there was suche scarfenes of breade, that for the space of xvi. dayes he eate nowght elles but the rootes of herbes, and of younge date trees, or the frutes of other wylde trees. But *Guarionexius*, the kyng of the vale lyng beneath the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, whose kyngedoome was not so wasted as the other, gaue owre menne certeyne vtayles.

Within a fewe dayes after, bothe that the iourneys myght bee the shorter, and also that owre men myght haue more safte places of refuge, if the inhabitantes shuld hereafter rebell in lyke maner, he buylde an other fort[r]esse (whiche he cauled the towre of Conception) betwene the citie of *Ifabella* and saint Thomas fortresse, in the marches of the kyngdome of this *Guarionexius* within the precincte of *Cibaua* vpon the syde of a hyll, hauyng a fayre ryuer of holosome water runnyng hard by the same. Thus when the inhabitantes sawe newe buyldynges to bee dayly erected, and owre shippes lying in the haue rotten and halfe broken, they beganne to desparye of any hope of libertie, and wandered vp and downe with heuie chere. From the towre of Conception, searchyng diligently the inner partes of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, there was a certeine kyng whiche gaue them a masse of rude golde, as bygge as a mans syl, weighing xx. vnces. This golde was not fownde in the banke of that ryuer, but in a heape of drye earthe: and was lyke vnto the stonye cauled *Tofus*, whiche is soone resolued into sande. This masse of golde, I my selfe fawe in Castile, in the famous citie of *Methymna Campi*, where the courte lay all that wynter. I fawe also a great piece of pure *Electrum*: of the whiche belles and apothecaries morters, and many suche other vessels and instrumentes maye bee made, as were in owlde tyme of copper of the citie of *Corinthus*. This piece of *Electrum*, was of such weight, that I was not onely with both my handes vnable to lise it from the grownde, but also not of strengthe to remoue it eyther one waye or an other. They affyrmed that it wayde more then three hundredth pownde weight, after. viii. vnces to the pownde. It was fownde in the howfe of a certen prynce, and leste hym by his predecесsours. And albeit that in the dayes of the inhabitanates yet liuyng, *Electrum* was no where digged, yet knewe they where the myne therof was: but owre men with muche adoo, coulde hardly cause them to shewe them the place, they bore them suche priuie hatred. Yet at the length, they brought them to the myne, beyng nowre ruinate and stopped with stones and rubbisffe. It is muche easier to dygge then is the iren myne: and myght bee restored againe, if myners and other woorkemen skylfull therin, were appoynted thereto. Not farre from the towre of Conception, in the same mountaynes, is fownd great plentie of Amber: and owte of certen rockes of the same distilleth a substance of the yellowe coloure whiche the paynters vse. Not farre from these mountaynes are many greate wooddes, in the which are none other trees then brasile, whiche the Italians caule *Verzino*. But here perhappes (right noble prynce) yowe wolde aske what shoulde be the caufe, that where as the Spanyardes haue brought owte of these Ilandes certen shypes laden with brasile, sumwhat of goffampine cotton, a quantitiue of amber, a lyttel golde, and sum spices, why they haue not broughte suche plentie of golde and suche other ryche marchaudis as the fruitfulnesse of these regions seeme to promise. To this I answere, that when *Colonus* the admirall was lykewife demaunded the cause hereof, he made answere that the Spanyardes whiche he tooke with him into these regions, were gyuen rather to slepe, pley, and ydlenesse, then to laboure: And were more studious of sedition and newes, then desyrous of peace and quietnesse: Also that beyng gyuen to lycencioufnes, they rebelled and forsooke hym, fyndyng matter of false accusations agaynst hym, bycause he went aboue to represe theyr owtragioufenes. By reaon wherof he was not yet able to breake the power of the inhabitantes, and freely to possesse the full dominion of the Ilande. And these hynderaunces to be the caufe that hitherto the gaynes haue scarsely counteruayled the charges. Albeit, euen this yere whyle I wryte these thynge at yowre requeste, they gathered in two moonthes the summe of a thoufande and twoo hundredh pounds weight of golde. But bycause we intende to speake more largely of theft thynge in theyr place, we wylly nowre retourne from whence we haue digressed. When the inhabitantes perceaved that they could by no meanes shake the yoke from their neckes, they made humble supplication to the Admirall that they myght flande to theyr tribute, and applythem selues to reincrease the frutes of theyr countrey, beinge nowre almoste wasted. He graunted them theyr requeste: and appoynted such order that every Region shulde paye their tribute, with the commodities of theyr countreyes, accordeinge to

determined that there
were: The
that owre
hem from
they had
y amone
the golde
ane tyme,
is returne,
at for the
the frutes of
ua, whose

ight haue
fort[r]esse
e, in the
l, hauynge
ouydynge
despayre of
earchynge
em a maffe
nke of that
volued into
where the
pothecaries
pper of the
my handes
her. They
e. It was
the dayes of
of was: but
che priuie
stones and
nyers and
in the same
bstance of
des, in the
right noble
te of these
e, and sum
ruitfulnesse
emaunded
vere gyuen
ewes, then
ooke hym
enes. By
le the full
ne scarfely
gathered
because we
e we haue
eckes, they
reincreas
appoynted
ordinge to

theyr portion, and at suche tyme as they were agreed vpon. But the violent famine dyd frustrate all these appoyntmentes. For all the trauyales of theyr bodyes, were scarfely able to suffice to fynde them meate in the wooddes, whereby to susteyne theyr lyues, beinge of long tyme contented with rootes and the frutes of wylde trees. Yet manye of the kynges with theyr people, euen in this extreme necessitie, brought parte of their tribute: Moste humbly desyryng the Admirall to haue compassion of theyr calamities, and to beare with them yet a whyle, vntyll the Iland were reflored to the owdle state. Promysinge farther, that that which was nowe wantinge, shulde then bee dowlle recompenſed. But fewe of the inhabitants of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, kepte theyr promyfe, bycaufe they were forer opprest with famine then any of the other. They saye, that the inhabitants of theſe mountaynes, differ no leſſe in maners and language from them which dwel in the playnes, then amone vs, the rusticalles of the countrey from gentylmen of the courte: wheras notwithstandinge, they lyue bothe as it were vnder one portion of heuen, and in many thinges, much after one faſhion, as in nakednes, and rude ſimplicitie. But nowe lette vs retorne to *Caunaboa*, the kyng of the howſe of golde, beinge in captiuitie. When he perceaued him ſelfe to be caſte in prafon, fretting and grating his teethe as it had bin a lyon of *Libia*, and dayely and nightly deuifinge with hym ſelfe howe he myght bee delyuered, beganne to perſuade the Admirall, that for as muche as he had nowe taken vnto his dominion the Region of *Cipanga* or *Cibaua* (wheroft he was king) it shulde bee expedient to ſende thither a garryon of Christian men, to defende the fame from the incursions of his owdl enemies and borderers. For he ſayde, that it was ſignyfied vnto hym, that the countreye was wasted and ſpoyleſd with ſuche incursions. By this crafty deuife, he thought to haue broughte to paſſe, that his brother whiche was in that regyon, and the other his kynfolkes and frendes with their adherentes, ſhoulde haue taken, ethyr by fleyghte or force, as many of owre men, as myght haue redeemeſed hym. But the Admirall vnderſtandyng his crafty meanyng, ſente *Hoiada* with ſuche a coompany of men, as might vanquifhe the Cibauians, if they ſhulde moue warre ageynſte them. Owre men had ſcarfely entered into the Region, but the brother of *Caunaboa* came agenite them with an armie of fyue thouſande naked menne, armed after theyr maner with clubbes, arrowes typte with bones, and ſpeares made harde at the endes with fyre. He ſtole vpon owre men beyng in one of theyr howſes: and encamped rownde about the fame on eury fyde. This Cibauian, as a man not ignorant in the diſcipline of warre, abowte the diſtance of a furlonge from the house, diuided his armye into fyue batayles, appoyntinge to every of them a circuite by equal diuision: And placed the froont of his owne batayle, directiye ageynſt owre men. When he had thus fet his batayles in good array, he gaue certeyne ſigues that the hole army ſhulde marche forwarde in order with equal paces, and with a larome freſhly affayle theyr enemies, in ſuch ſort that none myght eſcape. But owre men iudginge it better to encounter with one of the batayles, then to abyde the brunt of the hole army, gaue onſet on the mayne batayle aranged in the playne, bycaufe that place was moſt commodious for the horſemen. When the horſemen therfore hadde gyuen the charge, they ouerthrew them with the breſtes of theyr horſes, and flewe as many as abode th[e]lende of the fyght. The residue beinge ſtryken with feare, diſparcled, and fledde to the mountaynes and rockes: from whence they made a pytiful houlyng to owre men, desyryng them to ſpare them: proteſtinge that they wolde neuer more rebelle, but doo what ſo euer they woulde commaundē them, if they wolde ſuffer them to lyue in theyr owne countrey. Thus the brother of *Caunaboa* beinge taken, the Admirall licenceſed the people to reſorte every man to his owne. Theſe thinges thus fortunately atchiued this Region was pacified. Amonge thoſe mountaynes, the vale which *Caunaboa* inhabited, is cauled *Magona*, and is excedyng fruitfull: hauinge in it many goodly ſpringes: and ryuers, in the ſande wheroft, is founde great plentie of golde. The fame yeare in the moneth of Iune, they ſaye there roſe ſuſe a boyſt[r]ous tempeſte of wynde from the ſouth eaſte, as hath not lightly been harde of: The violence hereof was ſuſt that it plucked vppe by the roots what ſo euer greater trees were within the reache of the force therof. When this whirle wynde came to the hauen of the citie, it beatē downe to the bottome of the ſea, three ſhippes which lay at anker, and broke the cables in ſundre: and that (which is the greater maruail) without any ſtorme or rowghnes of the ſea, onely turnyng them three or fourre tymes abowte. The inhabitants alſo affirme, that the fame yeare, the ſea extended it ſelfe further in to the lande, and roſe higher then euer it dyd before by the memory of man, by the ſpace of a cubet. The people therfore, muttered amone them ſelues, that owre nation hadde troubled the elementes, and caufed ſuſh portentous ſigues. Theſe tempeſtes of the ayer (which the Grecians caule *Tiphones*, that is, whyrle wyndes) they caule, *Furacanes*: which they ſay, doo often tymes chaunce in this Ilande: But that neyther they nor theyr great grandfathers euer ſawe ſuſe violent and furious *Furacanes*, that plucked vppe greate trees by the rootes: Neyther yet ſuſe ſurges and vehement motions on the ſea, that too wasted the lande. As in deede it may appearre, for as muche as, where ſo euer the ſea bankes are nere to any plaine there are in maner every where, florishing medowes reachinge euen vnto the ſhore. But nowe lette vs retorne to *Caunaboa*. As kyng *Caunaboa* therefore and his brother ſhoulde haue binne broughte into Spayne, they dyed by the waye for verye penfyuenes and anguyſhe of mynde. The Admiral, whos ſhippes were drowned in the forſayde tempeſte, perceauinge him ſelfe to bee nowe encloſed, commaundēd foorthwith two other ſhippes (which the Spaniardes

Famine.

The nature of the Region diſpoſeth the maner of the people.

Kyng Caunaboa in capiuitie.

The perſuasion of Caunaboa.

21

Caunaboa his brother rebelleth.

A conflict betwene the Cibauians and the Spaniardes.

The Cibauians haue the ouerthowre.

A great tempeſt in the moneth of Iune.

Three ſhips drowned lyinge at anker

Whyrle wyndes Furacanes.

The death of kyng Caunaboa and his brother.

Bartholomeus
Colonus the
leauenant
searcheth the
golde mynes.

22

The golde mynes
of Salomon.

Golde in the
superficiall parts
of the earth.

The Admiral
taketh his viage
to spaine

caule *Carrauelas*) to bee made. For he had with hym, all maner of artificers perteyninge therunto. Whyle these things were dooinge, he sent soorth *Bartholomeus Colonus* his brother, being leauenant of the Ilande, with an army of men to searche the golde mynes beinge dystant three score leagues from the citie of *Ifabella*, which were fownde by the conducte of certeyne people of the Ilande, beefore the mynes of *Cipanga* or *Cibaua* were knownen. In these mynes, they fownde certeyne deepe pittes which had byn digged in owlde tyme, owte of these pyttis, the Admirall (who affirmeth this Ilande of *Hispaniola* to bee Ophir, as we haue sayde before) supposeth that Salomon the kyng of *Hierusalem* had his greate ryches of golde wherof we reede in the owlde testamente: And that his shippes sayled to this Ophir by the goule of *Persia* cauled *Sinus Persicus*. But whether it bee so or not, it lyeth not in me to iudge, but in my opinion it is farre of. As the mynes dygged the superficiall or vppermost parte of the earthe of the mynes, duryng for the space of vi. miles, and in dyuers places syfted the fame on the drye lande, they fownde much plentie of golde, that every hyred labourer could easely fynde every day, the weyght of three drammes. These mynes beinge thus searched and fownde, the Lieuetenaunte certyfied the Admirall hereof by his letters. The which when he had receaued the. v. daye of the Ides of Marche. Anno. 1495. he entered into his newe shippes, and tooke his viage directly to Spayne to aduertisfe the kyng of all his affayres, leauinge the hole regiment of the Iland with his brother the Lieuetenaunte,

THE FYFTE BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE, to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonie.



The golden towre.

Lacke of vitayles.

Huntinge
hounds.

Kynge
Mancautexius.

Vitayles brought
from Spayne.

Saynt Dominikes
towre.

Groues of
date trees.

Isabella.

23

After the Admyralles departyng into Spain his Brother the Lieuetenaunte, buylded a fort[re]esse in the golde mynes, as he had commaunded hym. This he cauled the golden towre, bycause the labourers fownde golde in the earth and stone wherof they made the waules of the fortresse. He confusid three monethes in makyng the instrumentes wherwith the golde shulde bee gathered, washed, tryed, and molten. Yet was he at this tyme by reaon of wante of vitayles, enforced to leaue all thynges imperfecte, and to goo seeke for meat. Thus as he with a bande of armed men, had entered three score myles further within the lande, the people of the countrey here and there refortyng to hym, gaue hym a certen portion of theiры breade in exchange for other of owe thynges. But he coulde not long tary here, bicause they lacked meat in the fortresse, whither he hastid with such as he had now gotten. Leauyng therfore in the fortresse a garryson of tenne men, with that portion of the Ilande breade whiche yet remayned, leauyng also with them a hownde to take thoſe kyndes of lytle beastes which they caule *Vitas*, not muche vnylike owe conyes, he returned to the fortresse of Conception. This also, was the moonthe wherin the kyng *Guarionexius*, and also *Manicautexius*, bortherer vnto hym, shulde haue brought in theiры tributes. Remaynynge there the hole moonthe of Iune, he exacted the hole tribute of these two kinges, and vitayles necessary for hym and suche as he brought with hym, whiche were abowt foure hundredth in number. Shortely after, abowte the calendas of Iulye, there came three Caraeles from Spayne, bringyng with them fundry kyndes of vitayles, as wheate, oyle, wyne, bacon, and marckelmas beafe: whiche were dyuyded to euer man accordyng to as neede required. Sum also was lost in the cariage for lacke of good looking too. At the arryuall of these shippes, the lieuetenaunte receaued commaundment from the kyng and the Admyrall his brother, that he with his men shulde remoue their habitation to the fowthe syde of the Ilande, bycause it was nerer to the golde mynes: Also that he shoulde make diligent seache for thoſe kynges whiche had layne the Christian men, and to fende them with theiры confederates, bownd into Spayne. At the nexte viage therfore, he sent three hundredth captiues with three Kinges: And when he had diligently searched the coastes of the south syde, he tranportid his habitation, and buylded a fortresse there, vpon the toppe of a hyll, neere vnto a fure hauen.

This fortresse, he cauled faynt Dominikes towre. Into this hauen, runneth a ryuer of holome water, replenyfshed with fundrye kyndes of good fysshys. They affyrme this ryuer to haue many benefytes of nature. For, where so euer it runneth all thynges are excedyng plefaunte and fruitfull: hauyng on every syde, groues of date trees, and dyuers other of the Ilande frutes so plentyfully, that as they sayled alonge by the shore, ofte tymes the branches therof laden with flowres and frutes, hung foo ouer theiры heads, that they migite plucke them with theiры handes. Also that the frutefulnes of this grownde, is eyther equall with the foyle of *Ifabella*, or better. In *Ifabella*, he leste only certeyne fiske men and shippwrightes, whom he had appointed to make certeyne caraelas. The residue of his men, he conueighed to the sowth, to saint Dominickes towre. After he had buylded this fortresse, leauyng therin a garryfon of xx. men, he with the remanent of his foulidiers, prepared

them selues to searche the inner partes of the Weste syde of the Ilande, hytherto knownen only by name. Therfore abowte. xxx. leagues, (that is) foure score and tenne myles from the fortresse, he chaunced on the ryuer *Naiba*, whiche we sayde to descende from the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, ryght towarde the sowth, by the myndell of the Iland. When he had ouerpassef this ryuer with a coompanye of armed men diuided into. xxv. decurions, that is, tenne in a company with theyr capitaynes, he sent two decurions to the regions of those kinges in whose landes were the great woods of brasile trees. Inclyninge towarde the leste hande, they fownde the woodes, entered into them, and felled the hygh and precious trees, which were to that day, vntouched. Eche of the decurions fylled certeyne of the Ilande howses with the trunkes of brasile, there to be reserued vnyll the fyppes came which shulde cary them away. But the Lieuetenaunt directing his iourney towarde the ryght hande, not farre from the bankes of the ryuer of *Naiba*, fownde a certeyne kyng whose name was *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, encamped ageynf th[er]e in habitantes of the prouince of *Naiba*, to subdue them vnder his dominion, as he had doone manye other kynges of the Ilande, bortherers vnto hym: The palacie of this great kyng, is cauled *Xaragua*: and is situate towarde the Weste ende of the Ilande, distante from the ryuer of *Naiba*. xxx. leagues. All the prynces which dwell betwene the Weste ende and his palacie, are ditionaries vnto hym. All that Region from *Naiba*, to the furthesthe marches of the weste, is vterly withoute golde, althowgh it bee full of mountaynes. When the kyng had espied owe men, layinge a parte his weapons, and gyngue signes of peace, he spake gentelly to them, (incerteyn whether it were of humanite or feare) and demandid of them what they wold haue. The Lieuetenaunt aunsweref: That he shulde paye tribute to the Admirall his brother, in the name of the Christian kyng of Spayne. To whom he sayde: Howe can yowe requyre that of me, whereas never a Region vnder my dominion bringeth foorth golde. For he had harde, that there was a strange nation entered into the Ilande, whiche made greate searche for golde. But he supposed that they defyrd none other thyng. The leauetenaunt aunsweref: God forbydde that we shulde enioyne any man to pay such tribute as he myght not easly forbeare, or such as were not engendered or growinge in the Region: But we understand that your Regions bryngē foorth great plentie of Gossampine cotton, and hempe, with fuche other, whereof we defyre yowe to gyue vs parte. When he harde these wordes, he promyssed with cherefull countenaunce, to gyue hym as muche of these thynges as he wolde requyre. Thus dismiffing his army, and sendyng messengers before, he hym selfe accompanayd the Leauetenaunte and brought hym to his palacie, beinge dystante (as we haue sayde). xxx. leagues. In al this tracte, they passed through the Iurisdiction of other princes beinge vnder his dominion: Of the whiche, sume gave them hempe, of no lesse goodnes to make tackelinges for shippes then owe woodde. Other sume, brougthe breade, and sum gossampyne cotton: And soo every of them payde tribute with fuche commodities as theyr countreys brougthe foorth. At the lengthe they came to the kynges mansion place of *Xaragua*. Before they entered into the palacie, a greate multitude of the kynges seruauntes and subiectes reforted to the courte, honorably (after their maner) to receave theyr kyng *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, with the strangers which he broughth with hym to se the magnificece of his courte. But nowe shall yow heare howe they were interteyned. Amonge other tryumphes and syghtes, two are especially to bee noted. Fyrste there mette them a company of. xxx. women, beinge al the kynges wyues and concubines, bearinge in theyr handes branches of date trees, singinge and daunfinge: They were all naked, saynge that theyr pryuiate partes were couered with breeches of gossampyne cotton. But the virgins, hauyng theyr heare hanginge downe abowte their shulders, tyed abowte the forehead with a fyllot, were vterly nakked. They affirme that theyr faces, brestes, pappes, handes, and other partes of theyr bodyes, were excedyng smoothe, and well proportioned: but sumwhat inclynyng to a louely brown. They supposid that they had seene those most beautifull *Dryades*, or the natyue nymphes or fayres of the fontaynes wherof the antiquites speake so muche. The branches of date trees which they bore in theyr right handes when they daunced, they delyuered to the Leauetenaunt with lowe curtefy and smylyng countenaunce. Thus enteringe into the kynges howse, they fownde a delicate supper prepared for them after theyr maner. When they were well refreshed with meate, the nyght drawinge on, they were brougthe by the kynges officers, every man to his lodginge, accordyng to his degree, in certeyne of theyr howfes abowte the palacie, where they rested them in hangyng beddes after the maner of the countrey, wherof we haue spoken more largely in an other place.

The daye folowing they brougthe owe men to their common haule, into the whiche they coome together as often as they make any notable games or triumphes, as we haue said before. Here, after many daunsynges, synginges, maskinges, runnynges, wretlynges, and other trynges of mastryes, foodeny there appered in a large plaine nere vnto the haule. ii. greate armes of men of warre, whiche the kyng for his pastyme had caused to bee prepared, as the Spaniardes vse the playe with reedes whiche they caule *Juga de Canias*. As the armes drewe neere together, they assayled the one the other as fiersly, as if mortal ennemis with theyr baners spleade, shulde fight for theyr goodes, theyr landes, theyr lyues, their libertie, theyr countrey, theyr wyues and theyr chyldren. Soo that within the momente of an howre, foure men were slayne, and many wounded. The battayle also shoulde haue contynued longer, if the kyng had not at the request of owe men, caufed them to cease. The thyrd day, the

The ryuer of
Naiba

Woodes of
brasile trees.

King Beuchius
Anacauchoa.
The palacie
of *xaragua*.

Mountaynes
without gold

Tribute.

The woolfe
entreath the
sheape.

Hempe and
gossampyne cotton.

Howe the
Lieuetenaunt was
receaved at the
kynges palacie.

The kynges wyues.

Well fauored
women.

Dryades.

24

A delicate supper.

Hangyng beddes.

A common haule.

A pretie pastyme.

Foure men slaine
in sport

Prouision for
diseased men

The castels or
towres of
hispaniola.

The golden
mountaynes
of Cibaua.

Bonauum

Tribute.

The kynges
rebelle.

Guarionexius
capitaine of
the conspiracie.

An army of xv.
thousande
Barbariane.

25

The kynges are
taken prisoners.

Kynge
Guarionexius
is pardoned.

Lacke of vytayles.

Beuchius
Anacauchoa, the
kyng of Xaragua.

Lieutenant confelynge the kyng to fowe more plentie of gossampine vpon the bankes nere vnto the waters fyde, that they myghte the better paye theyr tribute priuately accordyng to the multitude of theyr howfes, he repayed to *Isabella* to vyſte the fickle men whiche he had leſte there, and also to ſee howe his woorkes wente forwarde. In the tyme of his abſence. xxx. of his men were conuicti with diuerfe difeaſes. Wherfore beinge foretrowbled in his mynde, and in maner at his wyttes ende what he were beſt to doo, for as muche as he wanted al thyngeſ neceſſarie as well to reſto them to healthe whiche were yet acraſed, as alſo vitayles to mayntaine the hole multitude, where as there was yet no ſhippe coome from Spaine, as at the length he determined to fende abrode the fickle men here and there to iundry Regions of the Ilande, and to the caſtelleſ which they had erected in the fame. For directly from the citie of Isabella to fayne Dominikeſ towre, that is, from the north to the ſouth, through the Ilande, they had buyldeſ thus many caſtelleſ. Fyrſte. xxxvi. myles diſtante from Isabella, they buyldeſ the caſtelle of *Sperantia*, from *Sperantia*. xxv. myles, was the caſtelle of fayne Catharine, from fayne Catharine. xx. myles, was fayne James towre. Other. xx. miles from fayne James towre, was a stronger fortrefſe then any of the other, which they cauled the towre of Conception: which he made the stronger bicaufe it was ſituate at the rooteſ of the golden mountaynes of Cibaua, in the greate and large playne ſoo fruitefull and well inhabited as we haue before deſcribed. He buyldeſ alſo an other in the myddle waye betwene the towre of Conception and fayne Dominikeſ towre. The which alio was stronger then the towre of Conception, bycaufe it was within the lymitteſ of a great kyng, haunging vnder his dominion fiue thouſande men: whoſe chiefe Citie and heade of the Realme, beyng cauled *Bonauum*, he wylled that the caſtelle ſhulde alſo bee cauled after the fame name. Therfore leauyng the fickle men in theſe caſtelleſ and other of the Ilande howfes nere vnto the fame, he hym ſelfe repayed to fayne Dominikeſ, exactinge tributes of all the kynges whiche were in his waye. Whei he had taried there a fewe dayes, there was a rumor ſpreddē, that all the kynges abowte the borders of the towre of Conception, had conſpyred with deſperate myndes to rebell agenſte the Spaniardes. When the Lieuetenaunte was certiſt hereof, he tooke his iorneye towarde them immediately, not beyng diſcoraged ethyſ by the lengthe of the waye, or feebleneſſe of his fouldyers, beyng in maner forwarde with traunyle. As he drewe nere vnto them, he had aduertifement that kyng *Guarionexius* was choſen by the other prynces to bee the Capitayne of thiſ rebellion: And that he was enfordeſ thereto halfe vnwilling, beyng ſeduced by theiſ perwaſions and prouocations. The whiche is more lykely to be trewe, for that he had before had expeſſe of the power and policie of oure men. They came together at a daye appoynted, accoompanied with xv. thouſande men, armed after their maner, once agen to proue the fortune of warre. Here the Lieuetenaunte conſultyng with the Capitayne of the fortrefſe and the other fouldyers of whom he had the conduete, determined to fette vpon them vñwares in their owne howfes before they coulde prepare theiſ army. He ſent foorthere to eueri kyng, a Centurian, that is, a capitaine of a hundreth, which were comandaunded vpon a ſudden to inuade theiſ howfes in the night, and to take them ſleeping, beofore the people (beinge ſattered here and there) might aſſemblē togther. Thus fecreately enteringe into their vylages, not fortiſt with waules, trenches, or bulwarkeſ, they broke in vpon them, tooke them, bounde them, and led away eueri man his priſoner according as they were comandaunded. The Lieuetenaunte hym ſelfe with his hundreth men, affayled kyng *Guarionexius* as the woorthier perfonage, whom he tooke priſoner as dyd the other capitaynes theiſ kynges, and at the fame howre appoynted. Foureteene of theiſ were broughte the fame nyght to the towre of Conception. Shortlye after, when he had put to death two of the kynges which were the chiefe autours of thiſ newe reuoile, and had ſuborned *Guarionexius* and the other kynges to attempte the fame: leſt the people for forowe of theiſ kynges ſhulde negleete or forſake their countrey, whiche thiſe myght haue byn greate incommodie to oure men, who by thiſe increase of theiſ feedes and fruites were oftentymes ayded, he freely pardoned and diſmiffed *Guarionexius* and the other kynges. The people in the meane tyme flocked togther abowte the towre, to the number of fyue thouſand withoute weapons, with pytiful houling for the delyueraunce of theiſ kynges: The ayer thundered, and the earth tremblede through the vehemencie of theiſ owtcry. The Lieuetenaunte warned *Guarionexius* and the other kynges, with threatenynges, with rewardes, and with promyſes, neuer hereafter to attempte any ſuche thynge. Then *Guarionexius* made an oration to the people of the greate power of oure men, of theiſ clemencie towards offenders, and liberalitie to ſuche as remayne faithfull: defyringe them to quiet theiſ myndes: and from henfefoorth nother in deede nor thought to interprye any thynge ageynſt the Christians, but to obeye and ferue them, excepte they wilde dayly bryngē their felues into further calamities. When the oration was fyſhed, they tooke hym vp and ſet hym on theiſ ſhulders, and ſoo carayd hym home to his owne paialce. And by thiſ meanes, thiſ Region was pacified for a whyle. But oure men, with heauy countenaunce, wandered vppe and downne, as defolate in a ſtrange countrey, lackinge vytayles, and worne owe of apparell, whereas. xv. moonethes were nowe paſſed ſince the Admirals departure: duringe which tyme, they couldiſ hearne nothyngowe of Spayne. The Leauetenaunt comforted them all that he coulde with fyare wordes and promyſes. In the meane tyme, *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, the kyng of the Weſt partes of the Region of *Xaragua* (of whom we ſpake before) ſente messengers to the Lieuetenaunt to ſignifie vnto hym, that he hadde in a redynes the

the waters
wes, he
ente for-
engre fore
anted al
aine the
to fende
they had
north to
Ifabella,
m saynte
stronger
icaufe it
full and
he towre
, bycaufe
iefe Citie
after the
the same,
. Whe-
rs of the
When the
ed eyther
. As he
es to bee
by their
erience of
with. xv.
etenaunte
termyned
at foorte
a sudden
here and
enches, or
according
trioncius
the fame
tyle after,
suborned
es shulde
n, who by
trioncius
the nomber
The ayer
t warned
reafter to
we men,
quiet theyr
ians, but
When the
his owne
tenaunce,
apparell
de heare
romyfes.
(of whom
lynes the

goffampine cotton and fuche other things as he wylled hym to prepare for the paymente of his trybute. Whervpon the Lieuetenaunt tooke his iorney thyster, and was honorably receaued of the kyng and his syster, sumtyme the wyfe of *Caunaboa* the kyng of *Cibaua*, bearing no leſſe rule in the gouernaunce of her brothers kyngdome, then he hym ſelfe. For they affirme her to bee a wyfe woman, of good maners, and pleauant in company. Shee earnestly peruaide her brother by th[e]example of her hufbande, to loue and obeye the Chriftians. This woman was cauled *Anacaona*. He fownde in the palacie of *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, xxxii. kynges whiche hadde broughth their tributes with them, and abode his comminge. They broughth with them also befyde theyr trybute affigned them, further to demerite the fauour of owe men, great plentie of vytayles: as bothe kyndes of breade, cunnynges, and fyffhes, alredy dried bycaufe theyr ſhulde not putrifie: Serpentes alfo of that kynd which wee ſayd to bee eſteemed amounge them as moft delicate meate, and lyke vnto Crocodiles fauing in byggens. These serpentes they caule *Iuannas*, which owe men learned fumewhat to late to haue byn engendred in the Ilande. For vnto that day, none of them durle aduenture to taſte of them by reaſon of theyr horrible deformitie and lotheſumes. Yet the Lieuetenaunt beinge entyed by the pleauantnes of the kynges syſter, determined to taſte of the serpentes. But when he felte the fleſhe therof to bee fo delicate to his tonge, he fel too, amayne without al feare. The which thinge his coompanions perceauinge, were not behynde hym in greedines: In ſoo muche that they hadde nowe none other talke then of the ſweetenes of theſe serpentes: which they affirme to bee of more pleauante taſte, then ethere owe phefauntes or pertriches. But they loſt theyr taſte, excepte they bee prepared after a certeyne faſhion: as doo peacockes and phefauntes excepte they bee interlarded befor they bee roſted. They prepare them therefore after this manner. Fyrſt takyng owe their bowels even from the throte to the thyghes, they waſhe and rubbe their bodies very cleane bothe within and withoute. Then rouling them toguther on a cyrcle, inuolued after the maner of a ſlepyng snake, they thrulſe them into a potte of no bygger capacitie then to houldē them only. This doone, puttinge a lytle water vnto them with a portion of the Ilande pepper, they ſeethe them with a foſt fyre of ſweete woodde, and fuche as maketh no greate ſmoke. Of the fat of them beinge thus fodde, is made an excedinge pleauante brothe or potage. They ſay also, that there is no meate to bee compared to the egges of theſe serpentes, which they vſe to ſeethe by themſelues. They are good to bee eaten as ſone as they are fodde: And may alſo bee referred many dayes after. But hauninge ſayde thus muche of theyr intertaynement and daintie fare, let vs nowe ſpeake of other matters. When the Lieuetenaunt had fylled one of the Ilande howſes with the goffampine cotton which he hadde receaued for trybute, the kynges promyſed furthermore to gyue hym as muche of theyr breade, as he wolde deuaunde. He gaue them hartie thankes and gently accepted theyr frendly profer. In the meane time whyle this breade was gatheringe in fundry Regions to bee browght to the palacie of *Beuchius Anacauchoa* kyng of *Xaragua*, he ſent messengers to Ifabella for one of the two carauelles which were lately made there: intendinge to fende the fame thyster ageyne laden with breade. The maryners glānde of theſe tydnges, ſayld aboue the Ilande, and in hhort ſpace broughth the ſhippe to the coaſtes of *Xaragua*. The syſter of kyng *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, that wyfe and pleauant woman *Anacaona*, (the wyfe sumtyme of *Caunaboa* the kyng of the golden howſe of the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, whose hufbande dyed in the way when he ſhulde haue byn caried into Spayne,) when ſhee harde ſaye that owe ſhippe was arryued on the ſhore of her natvie countrey, peruaide the kyng her brother that they bothe myght goo toguther to ſee it. For the place where the ſhippe lay, was not paſte. vi. myles diſtant from *Xaragua*. They refled all night, in the mydde way, in a certeyne vyllage in the which was the treaſurye or iewell howſe of *Anacaona*. Her treaſurye was nother goulde, ſyluer, or preciuſ flones, but only thyngeſ neceſſary to bee vſed, as cheyars, ſtooles, ſettels, dyſhes, potingers, pottes, pannes, basons, treyes, and fuche other howſholtē ſtuffe and iſtrumentes, workemanly made of a certeyne blacke and harde flyninge woodde which that excellent lerned phiſition John baptiſte *Eliſius*, affirmeth to bee heuenie. What ſo euer portion of wyte nature hath gyuen to the inhabitanſes of theſe Ilandes, the fame doth moſt appeare in theſe kynde of woorkes, in wheſe they ſhewe great arte and cunnyng. But thoſe which this woman had, were made in the Iland of *Guanabba*, ſituate in the mouth of the weſte fyde of *Hifpaniola*. In theſe they graue the lyuely Images of ſuſh phantafies as they ſuppoſe they ſee walke by night which the Antiquitie cauled *Lemures*. Alſo the Images of men, ſerpentes, beaſtes, and what ſo euer other thynge they haue once feene. What wolde yowe thinke (moſt noble Prynce) that they coulde doo, if they had the vſe of Iren and Steele? For they onely fyrtle make theſe foſte in the fyre, and afterwarde make them holowe and carue them with a certeyne ſtone which they fynde in the ryuers. Of ſtooles and chayers, ſhee gaue the Lieuetenaunt. xiii. And of veſſeſles perteynyng to the table and kychen, ſhee gaue hym three ſcore, ſum of wood ani ſume of earthe. Alſo of goffampine cotton ready ſpunne fourre great bottomeſ of excedinge weight. The day folowing when they came to the ſea fyde, where was an other vylage of the kynges, the Lieuetenaunt comauanded the ſhippe boat to bee browght to the ſhore. The kyng alſo had prepared two canoas, paſtēd after theſe maner: one for hym ſelfe and certeyne of his gentelmen: an other for his syſter *Anacaona* and her waytinge women. But *Anacaona* defyred to bee caried in the ſhippe boate with the

Queene Anacaona.
Hwife of kyng
Caunaboa.

xxxii. kynges.

Serpentes eaten.

26

The dressing of
ſerpentes to be
eaten.

Serpentes
egges eaten

Goffampine
cotton.

Queene Anacaona

The treaſurye of
Queene Anacaona

Hebene woode.

The Ilande of
Guanabba

Conning artificers

A ſtone in the
ſteede of Iren

Gunes.

Lieuetenante. When they nowe approached nere vnto the shyppe, certeyne great pieces of ordinaunce were discharged of purpose. The sea was fylled with thunder, and the ayer with smoake. They trembled and quaked for feare, supposinge that the frame of the world had byn in danger of faulng. But when they sawe the Lieuetenaunte lawgh, and looke cherefuly on them, they cauled ageyne theys spires. And when they yet drewe nerer to the shipp, and harde the noyse of the fluites, shalmes, and drummes, they were wonderfully astonyed at the sweete harmony therof. Enterynge into the shyppe and beholdinge the fore-shippe and the sterne, the toppe castel, the maste, the hatches, the cabens, the keele, and the tackelinges, the brother fixinge his eyes on the syster, and the syster on the brother, they were bothe as it were dumme and amased, and wyste not what to faye for too muche wonderynge. Whyle beholdinge thef thinges they wandered vp and downe the shippe, the Lieuetenaunt commaunded the ankers to bee loosed, and the failles to be hoyseed vp. Then were they further astonyshed, when they sawe soo greate a mole, to moue as it were by it selfe, without ores and without the force of man. For there arose from the earth suche a wynde as a man wolde haue wyshed for cō purpose. Yet furthermore, when they perceaued the shyppe to moue sumtyme forwarde and sumtyme backewarde: sumtyme towarde the ryght hande and sumtyme towarde the leste, and that with one wynde and in maner at one instante, they were at theyr wytten ende for to muche admiracion. These thynges synfished and the shyppes beinge laden with breade and siche other rewards, they beinge also recompensed with other of owe thynges, he dismissed not only the kyng *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, and his syster, but lykewise all theyr feruautes and women replenyshed with ioye and woorderinge. After this, he hym selfe tooke his iorney by foote with his fouldiers to the citie of *Ifabella*: where he was aduertised that one *Roldanus Ximenus*, a nawgthy felowe, (whom before beinge his feruante, he had preferred to bee capitayne of the myners and labourers, and after made hym a Judge in causes of controuerzie) had vied hym selfe owtragiouly and was malyciouly mynded ageinst hym, and further, the caufe of muche mischiefe in his absence. For kyng *Guarionexius* (who a whyle before was pardoned of his former rebellion, and perswaded the people to obeye the Spaniardes) was by his nawgthy vsage, and siche other as were confethered with hym, so accensed to reuenge the iniuris which they suffeyned at his handes, bysyde the abhominable actes which they folowynge onely the lawe of nature, abhorred to admyte, that he with his famelie, famlyers, and ditionaries, of deliberate mynde fledde to the mountaynes beinge distant from *Ifabella* onely tenne leagues Westward, towarde the north syde of the sea. These mountaynes, and also the inhabitanthes of the same they caule by one name *Cigauas*. The greater kyng of al the kynges and rugions of these mountayne[s], is cauled *Maiobanexius*: and his courte or palacie is named *Capronus*. The mountaynes are rowgh, hygh, and siche as no man can passe to the toppes therof. They are also bendyng: and haue theire corners reachinge downe to the sea. Betwene bothe the corners of the mountaynes, is there a greate playne, by the which many riuers faule from the mountaynes into the sea. The people are verye fierce and warlyke men, hauing their original of the Canybales. For when they descende from the mountaynes to the playnes to keepe warre with theyr bortherers, they eate all siche as they kyll. *Guarionexius* therfore, flyng to this kyng of these mountaynes, gaue hym many presentes of siche thynges as are wantinge in his countrey: therwith declareinge howe vylely, vylaynously, and violently, he had byn vsed of owe men: with whom he could nothine preuyale nother by fayre meanes, nor by foule: nother by humyltie nor by stoutnes. And that to bee the caufe of his ressortinge to hym at that tyme: mooste humbly defyng hym to bee his defence ageynst th[e]oppressions of siche myscheuous people. *Maiobanexius* here vppon, made hym prom̄e to ayde and helpe hym ageynst the Christians al that he myght. The Lieuetenaunt therfore made haft to the fortresse of Conception: whyther as soone as he was coome, he sent for *Roldanus Xeminus*, who with siche as followed hym, lay in certeyne of the Ilande vylages, twelue miles distant from the fortres. At his comminge, the Leautenant asked hym what al thefe sturres and tumultes ment. He answere without abashement: Yowre brother the Admirall hath to do therwith, and shall answere for the same before the kyng. For we perceau that the kyng hath soo put hym in truse, that he hath hadde no regarde to vs. Here we peryshe for hunger whyle we folowe yowe: and are dryuen to seeke owe vnhappy foode in the desertes. Yowre brother also, assignd me assitant with yowe in gouerninge the Ilande. Wherfore syth yowe haue no more respecte vnto vs, we are determyned noo longer to bee vnder yowre obedience. When *Roldanus* had spoken these wordes and siche other, the Lieuetenaunte wolde haue layde handes on hym: but he escaped his syngers, and fledde to the weste partes of the Region of *Xaragua*, hauning with hym a trayne of threescore and tenne men whiche were of his confetheracie. Here this fylthy fynde of rebels thus conspired, played their vages and lyued with loose brydels in al kyndes of mysches, robbynge the people, spoylinge the countrey, and rauythinge bothe wyues and virgines. Whyle thef thynges were doinge in the Ilande, the Admirall hadde eyght shyppes appoynted hym by the kinge: Of the whiche he sent two laden with vitayles, from *Cales* or *Cades* of Hercules pyllers, directly to the Lieuetenaunt his brother. These shyppes by chaunce arryued first on that syde of the Ilande where *Roldanus Xeminus* ranged with his coompanions. *Roldanus* in shorte tymis hadde seduced them: promysinge them in the steade of mattockes, wenches pappes: for laboure, pleasure: for foyne,

27

Musical instruments.
Ignorance causeth admiration.

Roldanus Xeminus.
The intemperancie
and malice of a
seruile wite
aduanced.

Cigauas.
Maiobanexius, the
great kyng of
the mountaynes

The inhabitanthes
of the mountaynes.

Guarionexius
rebelleth ageyne.

Roldanus Xeminus rebelleth.

28

Licenciousnes
in libertie

Hercules pyllers.
A violent
persuasion.

abundance: and for wearynes and watchinge, sleepe and quietnes. *Guarionexius* in the meane tyme, assemblynge a power of his freendes and confetherates, came ostentynmes downe into the playne, and flewe as many of the Christian men, as he coulde meete conuenientlye, and also of the Ilande menne whiche were theyr freendes: wastynge their grounde, defroyinge their feedes, and spoylinge their vylages. But *Roldanus* and his adherentes, albeit they had knowleage that the *Admiral* wold shortly coome, yet feared they nothyng bycause they had seduced the newe menne whiche came in the fyrite shippes. Whyle the Lieutenaut was thus tossed in the middest of these stormes, in the meane tyme his brother the *Admyrall* set forwarde from the coastes of Spayne: But not directly to *Hispaniola*: For he turned more towarde the southe. In the which vyage, what he dyd, what coastes bothe of the lande and sea he compased, and what newe regions he discouered, wee wyl fyrist declare. For to what ende and conclusion the sayde tumultes and seditions came, wee wyll expresse in th[e]ende of the booke folowynge. Thus fare ye well.

The furie of
guarionexiusThe thyrde vyage
of Colonus the
Admirall.

THE SYXTE BOOKE OF THE FYRSTE DECADE, to Lodouike *Cardinall* of Aragonie.



Colonus the Admyral, the thyrde day of the Calendes of June, in the yeare of Christe. 1498. hoysed vp his sayles in the hauen of the towne *Barramedabas*, not farre distante from *Cales*: and set forwarde on his vyage with eyght shippes laden with vytayles and other necessaries. He diuerted from his accustomed rafe which was by the Ilandes of *Canarie*, by reaon of certeyne frenchemen pirates and rourers on the sea, whiche laye in the ryght way to meeete with hym. In the way from *Cales* to the Ilandes of *Canarie*, abowte foure score and ten myles towarde the leste hande, is the Ilande of *Madera*, more southward than the citie of

Frenche men
pyrats.The Iland of
Madera.

Ciuile by foure degrees. For the pole artyke is eleuate to *Ciuile*, xxxvi. degrees: But to this Iland (as the mariners faye) only xxxii. He sayled therfore fyrite to *Madera*. And sendinges from thense directly to *Hispaniola*, the refydue of the shippes laden with vytayles and other necessaries, he hym selfe with one shyppe with deckes, and two marchaunt carauelles coasted towarde the southe to coome to the *Equinoctial* lyne, and so furth to folowe the tracte of the fame towarde the West, to th[e] intent to searche the natures of suche places as he coulde fynde vnder or nere vnto the fame, leauinge *Hispaniola* on the north syde on his ryght hande. In the myddle of his rafe, lye. xiii. Ilandes of the Portugales, whiche were in owlde tyme cauled *Hesperides*: And are now cauled *Caput Viride*, or *Cabourde*. These are situate in the sea, ryght ouer ageynst the inner partes of Ethiope, Westwarde two dayes saylinge. One of these the Portugales caule *Bonaufista*. With the fnyales, or rather tortoyes of this Ilande, many leprosous men are healed and clenfed of their leprofite. Departing sodainly from hense by reaon of the contagiousnes of the ayre, he sayled. CCCCLXXX. [four hundred and eighty] myles towarde the Weste southwest, which is the myndest betwene the weste and the southe. There was he so vexed with maladies and heate (for it was the moneth of June) that his shypes were almoste fette on fyre. The hoopes of his barrels cracked and brake, and the fresshe water ranne owte. The men also complayned that they were not able to abyde that extremitie of heate. Here the northe pole was eleuate only. v. degrees from the Horizontall. For the space of viii. dayes in the which he suffered these extremites, only the fyrist day was fayre: but all the other, cloudy and rayny: yet neuernethelss feruent hotte. Wherefore it ostentynmes repented hym not a little that euer he tooke that way. Beinge tossed in these dangiours and vexations eyght contynuall dayes, at the lengthe an Eastsoutheaste wynde arofe, and gaue a prosperous blaste to his sayles. Which wynde folowinge directly towarde the weste, he fownde the starres ouer that parallell, placed in other order, and an other kynde of ayer, as the *Admirall* hym selfe towld me. And they al affirme, that within three dayes saylinge, they fownde mofte temperate and plefaunte ayre. The *Admirall* alfo affirmeth, that from the clime of the great heate and vnholome ayer, he euer ascended by the backe of the sea, as it were by a hygh mountayne towarde heauen. Yet in all this tyme, coulde he not once see any lande. But at the length, the day before the Calendes of July, the watcheman lookyng forth of the toppecastell of the greatest shyppe, cryed owte alowde for ioy that he espyed three excedynghe hyghe mountaynes: Exhortinge his felawes to bee of good cheere, and put away all pensiuenes. For they were very heauy and sorowfull, as well for the greefe whiche they susteyned by reaon of th[e] intollerable heate, as also that their fresshe water sayled them, which ranne owte at the ryfles of the barrels, caused by extreme heate as we haue sayde. Thus beinge wel conforted, they drewe to the lande. Yet lookinge owte of theyr shyppes, they might wel perceave that the Region was inhabyted and well cultured. For they sawe very fayre gardens, and plefaunte medowes:

The Admiral
(sayleth to the
Equinoctial).xiii. Ilandes of
Hesperides, now
cauled CabouerdeHealyngre of the
leper.Contagious ayre
and extreem heateThe pole eleuate.
v. degrees.29
The starres placed
in other order.A sea rysing lyke
a mountayne.Heate causeth the
barrels to broke.

Swete sauours
procedyng
frome the lande.

The Iland of Puta.
People of [goodly]
corporature and
longe heare nere
the Equinoctiall.

The higher the
coulder.

Difference
betweene people
of one clime.
Ethiopia.

Note the cause of
difference.

Musical
instrumentes.

30

The violent course
of the water from
the Easte to the
Weste.

The goulfe cauled
Os Draconis.
A conflict betwene
the freshe water
and the saltie.

A sea of fresh
water.

Marmasets and
monkeys.

frome the trees and herbes wherof, when the mornynge dewes beganne to ryse, there proceeded manye sweete sauoures. Twentie myles distant frome henſe, they chaunced into a hauen, verye apte to harborowe ſhippes, but it had no ryuer runninge into it. Saylinge on yet sumwhat further, he fownde at the lengthe a commodious hauen wherin he might repayre his ſhippes and make prouifion of freſſe water and fuell. *Arenalis* cauleth this lande *Puta*. They found no houſes nere vnto the hauen: but innumerable ſteppes of certein wilde beaſtes feete, of the which they fownde one deade much lyke a goate. The day folowynge, they ſaw a Canoa commyng a farre of, hauinge in it. xxiiii. younge men of godly corporature and high stature, al armed with targets, bowes and arowes. The heare of theyr heds, was longe and plaine, and cutte on the forehead much after the maner of the Spanyardes. Theyr priuie partes were couered with fillettes of goſſampyne cotton, of ſundry coloures enteriacē: And were beſyde al ouer naked. Here the Admirall confideringe with hym ſelue the corporature of this people and nature of the lande, he beleaued the ſame to bee ſoo much the nerer heauen then other Regiones of the fame parallele, and further remoued from the groſſe vapours of the vales and maryſſhes, howe muſche the hygheſte toppeſ of the biggeſt mountaynes are diſtanте from the deepe vales. For he ernefly affirmeſth, that in all that nauigation, he neuer wente oute of the paralellēs of Ethiope: So greate diſference is there betwene the nature of th[e]inhabitantes and of the foyleſ of dyuers Regiones all vnder one clyme or parallele: as is to ſee betwene the people and regions being in the firme lande of Ethiope, and themy of the Ilandes vnder the ſame clyme, hauinge the pole ſtarre eleuate in the ſame degree. For the Ethiopians are all blacke, hauinge theyr heare curld more lyke wullſ then heare. But theſe people of the Iland of *Puta* (beinge as I haue fayde vnder the clyme of Ethiope) are whyte, with longe heare, and of yellowe colour. Wherfore it is apparente, the caufe of this ſoo greate diſference, to bee rather by the diſpoſition of the earthe, then conſtitucion of heauen. For wee knowe, that knowe faulthe on the mountaynes of the Equinoctiall or burnte lyne, and the ſame to endure there continually: We knowe lykwyſe that th[e]inhabitantes of the Regiones farre diſtanте frome that lyne towarde the northe, are moleſted with greate heate.

¶ The Admiral that he caught allur the younge men to him with gentelnes, ſhewed them lokynge glaſſes, fyare and bright veſſelles of siluer, haukes belles, and ſuche other thynges vñknownen to them. But the more they were cauled, fo much the more they ſuſpected crafe and deceate, and fledde backewarde. Yet dyd they with greate admiracion beholde oure men and theyr thynges, but ſtyll hauinge their ores in theyr handes redy to flye. When the Admirall ſawe that he coulde by no meanes allur them by gyffes, he thought to proue what he coulde do with muſical instrumentes: and therefore comauandued that they which were in the greateſt ſhippe, ſhulde play on theyr drummes and ſhalmes. But the younge men ſuppoſinge this to bee a token of battayle, leſte theyr ores, and in the twyn[k]lynge of an eye hadde put theyr arrowes in theyr bowes and theyr targettes on theyr armes: And thus directinge theyr arrowes towarde oure men, ſloode in expeſtacion to knowe what this noyſe myght meane. Ouwe men lykewife prepaſinge theyr bowes and arrowes, approched toward them by lyttle and lyttle. But they departinge from the Admirals ſhippe, and truſtinge to the dexteritie of theyr ores came ſo neare one of the leſſe ſhippes, that one of them plucked the cloke from the gouernour of that ſhippe, and as wel as they coulde by ſigues, requyred hym to coome alande, promyſinge feyth that they wolde common with hym of peace. But when they ſaw hym goo to the Admirals ſhippe whether he went to aſke leaue that he might common with them, ſuſpectinge heareby fume further deceate, they lept immediatly into the Canoa, and fledde as fyſt as the wynde. So that to conclude, they coulde by no meanes be allured to familiaritie. Wherfore the Admirall thought it not conuenient to beſtowe any longe tyme there, at this vyage. No greate ſpace frome this Ilande, euer towarde the weſte, the Admirall faith he fownde ſo oþteragious a faule of water, runninge with much a violence from the Easte to the Weste, that it was nothyng inferiour to a myghty ſtreame faulynge from hyghe mountaynes. He alſo confeſſed, that ſince the fyfth daye that euer he knewe what the ſea mente, he was neuer in ſuche feare. Proceedinge yet sumwhat further in this daungerous vyage, he fownde certeyne goulfes of. viii. myles, as it had byn theſe[n]trauance of fume greate hauen, into the which, the fayneſt goulfes dyd faule. These goulfes or ſtreyghtes, he cauled *Os Draconis*, that is, the dragons mouth. And the Iland directly ouer ageynſte the ſame, he named *Margarita*. Owe of theſe ſtreyghtes, iſhewed no leſſe force of freſſe water: whiche encounteringe with the faule, dyd ſtryue to paſſe foorth: Soo that betwene bothe the waters, was no ſmaule conflict. But enteringe into the goulf, at the lengthe he fownde the water therof very freſſe and good to drynke. The Admyrall hym ſelue, and they which were his compaſſions in this vyage, beinge men of good credit, and perceauinge my diligence in ſearchinge for theſe matters, towld me yet of a greater thyng. That is, that for the ſpace of. xxvi. leaques, amountyng to a hundredth and foure myles, he ſayled euer by freſſe water: In ſo muſche, that the further he proceeded, especiellly towarde the weſte, he affirmeth the water to bee the freſſer. After this, he came to a highe mountayne, inhabited onely with moonkeys or marmasets on that part towarde the Easte. For that fyde was rowgh with rockye and ſtony mountaynes: And therfore not inhabyted with men. Yet they that went alande to ſearche the countrey, fownde nere vnto the ſea, many fayre fieldes well tyld and fowen: But noo people, nor yet houſes or cotages. Parphapse they were

ye sweete
ppes, but
modious
is cauleth
le beastes
a Canoa
med with
de much
cotton, of
yhm felte
er heauen
aryffhes,
e ernelly
ference is
clyme or
ym of the
ns are all
z (beinge
fore it is
nstitution
, and the
nte frome
ge glasses,
the more
dyd they
ndes redy
oue what
ft shippie,
t battayle,
targettes
ow what
them by
heyr ores
at shippie,
common
eau that
the Canoa,
miliaritie.
No greate
of water,
y stremme
at the sea
e fownde
the sayde
s mouth.
ewed no
betwene
the water
ns in this
e me yet
nyles, he
affirme
nkeys or
And ther
o the sea,
hey were
gone further into the country to fowe their corne and applye their husbandy, as wee often see owre husbande men to leaue their stations and vylages for the same purpose. In the west fyde of that mountayne, they espyed a large playne, whither they made haste, and cast anker in the brode ryuer. As foone as the inhabitan tes had knowleage that a strange nation was arryued in their coastes, they came flockinge withoute all feare to see owre men. We vnderstode by their fygnes and poynytnges, that this Region was cauled *Paria*: and that it was very iarge: In so muche that the further it reacheth towarde the west, to be so muche the better inhabited and replenished with people. The Admiral therfore, takynge into his shyppe foure of the men of that lande, searched the weste partes of the faine. By the temperatenes of the ayer, the plefauntnes of the grownde, and the multytude of people which they saw dayly more and more as they sayled, they conjectured that these thynges portended sum great matter: As in deede their opinion fayled them not, as we wyll further declare in his place. The foonne not yet rysen, but beginngeing even now to ryse, beinge one day allured by the plefauntnes of the place and sweete sauours which breathed from the land to the shippes, they went alande. Here they fownde a greater multytude of people then in any other place. As owre men approched towarde them, there came certeine messengers from their *Cacici*, that is, the kynges of the country, to defyre the Admirall in the name of their princes to coome to their palaces withoute feare, and that they and al theys shulde bee at his commaundement. When the Admirall had thanked them and made his excuse for that tyme, there came innumerable people with theyr boates to the shippes: hauyng for the most parte cheynes abowte their neckes, garlandes on their heades, and braeflettes on theyr armes of perles of India: And that so commonlye, that owre women in playes and tryumphes haue not greater plentie of stones of glasse and crystall in their garlandes, crownes, gerdels, and fuche other tyrementes. Beinge asked where they gathered them, they poynuted to the next shore by the sea bankes. They signified also by certeyne scorneful giestures which they made with theyr mouthes and handes, that they nothyng esteemed perles. Taking also baskettes in theyr handes, they made signes that the same might bee fyllid with them in shorte space. But bycause the corne wherwith his shyppes were laden to bee caried into *Hispaniola*, had taken hurt by reasoun of the salt water, he determined to deferre this marte to a more conuenient tyme. Yet he sent to lande two of the shipp boates laden with men, to th[e]intent to fetch sum garlandes of perles for exchange of our thynges, and also sumwhat to searche the nature of the Region and disposition of the people. They enterteyned our men gentelly: and came flockynge to them by heapes, as it hadde byn to beholde fume straunge monsters. Fyrste there came to meeete owre men, two men of grauitie, whiche the multitude folowed. One of thefe was well in age, and the other but younge. They thinkte it was the faterne with his foonne whiche shulde succede hym. When the one had saluted and embrased the other, they brought owre men into a certeyne rownde howse, nere vnto the whiche, was a greate courte. Hether were brought many chayers and stooles made of a certeyne blacke woodde, and very coonningly wrought. After that owre men, and theyr Princes were sette, theyr wayting men came in laden, fume with sundry delicate dysfhes, and fume with wyne. But theyr meate, was only fruities: and those of dyuers kyndes and vitterly vnknownen to vs. Theyr wyne was both whyte and redde: not made of grapes, but of the lycour of dyuers fruities, and very pleasaunte in drynkynge. After this banquette made in the owlde mans howse, the younge man brought them to his tabernacle or mancion place, where was a greate coompany bothe of men and women, but they stooed deceauered the one from the other. They are whyte, even as owre men are, fayngre fuche as are much conuerfant in the sonne. They are also very gentyll, and full of humanitie towarde strangiers. They couer theyr pryue partes with goffampine cotton wrought with sundry coloures: and are besyd all naked. There was fewe or none, that had not eyther a coller, a cheyne, or a braeflette of golde and perles, and many had all. Beinge asked where they had that golde, they poynuted to certeyne mountaynes, feemyng with theyr countenaunce to dissuade owre men from goinge thyther. For puttinge theyr armes in theyr mouthes, and grynninges as though they bytte the same, styll poyntinge to the mountaynes, they seemed to insinuate that men were eaten there: But whether they mente by the Canibales, or wylde beastes owre men cowld not well perceave. They tooke it exceedinge greeouflye, that they could nother vnderstande owre men, nor owre men them. When they which were fente to lande, were returned to the shippes abowte three of the clocke at after noone the same daye, bringinge with them certeyne garlandes and collers of perles, they loosed theyr ankers to departe, myndinge to coome ageyne shortly, when all thynges were sette in good order in *Hispaniola*. But he was preuented by an other, which defeated hym of the rewarde of his trauayle. He was also hyndered at this tyme by reason of the shalownes of the sea and violent courfe of the water, which with continual tolling, brooched the greatest ship as often as any great gale of wynde arose. To auoyde the daungiers of fuche shalowe places, and shelves, he euer sent one of the smalest carauelles before, to try the way with foundinge: and the byggest shyppes folowed behynde. The Regions beinge in the large prouince of *Paria* for the space of CCXXX. [two hundred and thirty] myles, are cauled of th[e]inhabitantes, *Cumana*, and *Manacapan*: from these regions distant three score leagues, is there an other Region cauled *Curiana*. When he had thus passed ouer this long tract of sea, supposing styll that it had byn an Ilande, and doutinge that he

The fayre and
large region of
paria.

Temperate ayer
and frutful
grounde.

Swete sauours
procedyng
frome the lande.

Humayne people.

Cheynes and
garlandes of gold
and perles

31

Baskettes ful of
perles, I knowe
who had bags ful.

Howe the
Admirals men
were enterteyned.

Cheyers and
stoles of helbene.

Fruites and wyne.
Wyne of the
lycour of fruities.

Whyte men nere
the Equinoctial

Mountaynes are
the matrices of
golde.

Canibales

Shalownes of the
sea.
The use of
careuelles or
brigantines.

Cumana and
Manacapan
regions of the
province of Paria.
Curiana.

A ryuer of
maruelous depth
and breith.
A sea of weedes.
Lentiscus.
Mastix.

32
The elevation of
the pole at Paria.

Note a secrete
as concerning the
pole starre.

An experience

A maruelous
secrete.

That the earth is
not perfectly
rounde.

Paradise is in the
mountaynes of
paria.
Looke the ninth
booke seconde
decade.

Paria is part of
the firme lande of
india
Tyme reuealeth al
things

Paria more
southerwarde then
hispaniola

The spanyardes
rebell in the
Admirals absence

might passe by the Weste to the Northe directly to *Hispaniola*, he chaunced into a ryuer of xxx. cubettes depth, and of such breadth as hath not lyghtly byn harde of. For he affirmeth it to bee. xxviii. leagues. A lyttle further toward the Weste, yet sumwhat more southwarde as the bending of the shore requyred, he entered into a sea full of herbes or weedes. The feede of the herbes whiche swymme on the water, are muche lyke the berries of the tree cauled *Lentiscus*, which beareth the sweete gumme cauled *Mastix*. They grewe so thicke, that they sumetyme in maner flayed the shippes. The Admirall reported, that here there is not one daye thorowghc owte all the yeare muche longer or shorter then an other: And that the Northe pole is here eleaute onely syue degrees as at *Paria*, in whose tracte all these coastes lye. Hee also declared certeyne thynges as concerninge the variete of the northe pole: The which because they seeme contrarye to the [e]lopynions of all the Astronomers, I wyll touche them but with a drye foote as sayth the prouerbe. But it is wel knownen (moste noble prince) that the flare which we caule the pole flare, or northe flare, (cauled of the Italians *Tramontana*) is not the very poynte of the pole Artyke yppon the whiche the axes or extremities of heauens are turned abowte. The which thyng may well be proved, if when the flarres fyrist appeare, yowe beeholde the pole flare thorugh any narowe hole. For soo, applynges yowre instrument thereto in the morninge sumwhat before the day springe haue blemysched theyr lyght, yf then yowe looke thorugh the same hole, yowe shall perceave it to bee moued from the place where yowe fawteit fyrist. But howe it commeth to passe, that at the beginnyng of the enuyng twilight, it is eleuate in that Region only syue degrees in the moneth of Iune, and in the mornings twylight to bee eleuate xv. degrees by the same quadrante, I doo not vnderstande. Nor yet doo the reasons which he bringeth, in any poynt satyfye me. For he sayth, that he hereby conjectured, that the earth is not perfectely rownde: But that when it was created, there was a certeyne heape refyld theron, much hygher then the other partes of the same. So that (as he saith) it is not rownde after the forme of an apple or a bal (as other thynke) but rather lyke a pear as it hangeth on the tree: And that *Paria* is the Region which posseth the supereminent or hyghest parte thereof nerest vnto heauen. In soo muche that he earnestly contendeth, the earthly Paradyse to bee situate in the topes of those three hylles, which wee sayde beefore, that the watche man fawe owte of the toppe castell of the shipp: And that the outragious stremes of the frefre waters whiche fo violently iishewe owte of the fayde goulfes and stryue so with the salt water, faule headlonge from the topes of the fayde mountaynes. But of this matter, it shal suffice to haue sayde thus muche. Lette vs nowe therfore retorne to the historye from which we haue dygressed. When he perceave hym selfe to bee thus inwrapped in soo greate a goulfe beyonde his expectacion, soo that he had now no hope to fynde any passage towarde the northe whereby he myght fyle directly to *Hispaniola*, he was enforced to turne backe the same way by the which he came, and directed his viage to *Hispaniola* by the northe of that lande lyinge towarde the Easte. They which afterwarde searched this lande more curiouly, wyll it to bee parte of the continent or firme lande of India, ar.d not of *Cuba* as the Admirall supposid. For there are many which affirme that they haue sayled rownd abowt *Cuba*. But whether it bee so or not, or whether enuyng the good fortune of this man, they feake occasions of quereling ageynst hym, I can not judge: But tyme shall speake, which in tyme appoynted, reuealeth both truth and falsched. But whether *Paria* be Continent or not, the Admirall doth not muche contend. But he supposeth it to bee Continenete. He also affirmeth that *Paria* is more southerwarde then *Hispaniola*, by eight hundredre fourscore and two myles. At the length he came to *Hispaniola* (to see his fouldiers which he left with his brethren) the thyrde day of the calendes of September: In the yere 1498. But (as often tymes chaunceth in humayne thynges,) amoneg his soo many prosperous, pleasaunte, and luckye affayres, fortune mengeled sume feedes of wormewoodde, and corrupted his pure corne with the malicious weedes of coccle.

THE SEVENTH BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE, to the same Lodonike Cardinall. etc.



Hen the Admirall was nowe coome to the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, he fownde all thynges confounded and owte of order. For *Roldanus* (of whom wee spake beefore) refused in his absence to obey his brother, trustinge to the multitude of such as were confethered with him. And not onely behaued hym selfe proudly ageynst the Admiralles brother and Lieuetenaunt sumtyme his maister, but also sente letters to his reproche to the kyng of Spayne, therin accusinge bothe the brethren, leyng heynous matters to theyr charges. But the Admirall ageyne, sent messengers to the kyng, which myght informe hym of theyr rebellion: Instantly defyringe his grace, to fende hym a newe suplye of men, wherby he myght supprese theyr licentiousnes and

punyfhe them for theyr mischeuous actes. They accused the Admirall and his brother to bee vniust men, cruel enemies and shadours of the Spanyfhe bludde: declarynge that vpon euyer lyght occasion, they wolde racke them, hange them, and heade them: And that they tooke pleasure therin. And that they departed from them as from cruell tyrantes and wylde beastes reioysinge in bludde, also the kynges enemys. Affyrminge lykewyse that they well perceaued theyr intente to bee none other then to vsurpe Th[e]mpire of the Ilandes: whiche thynge (they sayde) they suspected by a thousand conjectures. And especially in that they wolde permitte none to reforte to the golde mynes, but only suche as were theyr familiars. The Admirall on the contrary parte, when he defyred ayde of the kyng to infringe theyr infolencie, auouched that al thoſe his accusers, which had dewiſed ſuche lyes ageynſte hym, were nowgthyte felowes, abhominable knaues and vylaynes, theues and baudes, ruffians aduouterers and rauifhers of women, faulfe periured vagabundes, and ſuche as had byn eyther conuict in prysions, or fledde for feare of Judgment: ſoo escaping punyfhemēt; but not leauinge vice wherin they flyll contynued and broughte the ſame with them to the Ilande, lyuinge there in lyke maner as before, in theſte, lechery, and all kyndes of myſcheſſe. And ſoo gyuen to Idlenes and ſleepe, that wheras they were broughte thyther for myners, labourers, and feullyans, they wolde not nowe goo one furlonge from theyr houſes except they were borne on mens backes, lyke vnto them whiche in owide tyme were cauled *Ediles Curules*. For, to this office, they put the miſerable Ilande men, whom they handeleſt moſte cruelly. For leaſte theyr handeſ ſhulde diſcontinewe from ſheadinge of bludde, and the better to trye theyr ſtrength and manhood, they vſed nowe and then for theyr paſymēt to flyue amoue them felues and proue who coulde moſt cleanlye with his ſwoorde at one ſtroke ſtryke of the heade of an innocent. Soo that he which coulde with moſte agilitie make the heade of one of thoſe poore wretches to flye quyte and cleane from the body to the gronde at one ſtroke, he was the beſt man and counted moſte honorable. Theſe thyngeſ and many ſuche other, the one of them layde to the others charge beefore the kyng. Whyle theſe thyngeſ were doinge, the Admirall ſente his brother the lieuetenant with an army of four score and tenne footemen, and a fewe horfemen, (with three thouſande of the Ilande men which were mortall enemys to the Ciguauians) to meete the people of *Ciguaua*, with Kynge *Guarionexius* theyr graunde capitayne, who had doone muche myſcheſſe to owre men and ſuche as fauoured them. Therefore when the Lieuetenant had conducted his army to the bankeſ of a certeyne greate ryuer runnyng by the playne which we ſayd before to lye betwene the corneres of the mountaynes of *Ciguaua* and the ſea, he founde two ſcouetes of his enemys lurkinge in certeyne buffhes: wherof the one, caſtynge hym ſelue head longe into the ſea, eſcapēd: and by the mouthe of the ryuer fwamme ouer to his coompayons. The other beinge taken, declared that in the woodde on the other ſide of the ryuer, there lay in campe fyxe thouſande Cyguauians redy, vñwares to affayle owre men paſſyng bye. Wherfore the Lieuetenant fyndyng a ſhalowe place where he myght paſſe ouer, he with his hole army entered into the ryuer. The which thynge when the Ciguauians had eſpyed, they came runnyng owte of the wooddes with a terrible crye and moſte horrible aspect, much lyke vnto the people cauled *Agathyrſi* of whom the poete virgile speaketh. For they were all paynted and ſpotted with ſundry coloures, and especiaſlly with blacke and redde whiche they make of certeyne fruiteſ nooryſhed for the fame purpoſe in theyr gardenes, with the ioyce wherof they paynt them felues from the forheade, euen to the knees: hauing theyr heare (whiche by arte they make longe and blacke if nature deny it them) wretched and rowled after a thouſande faſhions. A man wold thinke them to be deuyiles incarnate newly broke owte of hell, they are ſoo lyke vnto helhoundes. As owre men waded ouer the ryuer, they ſhotte at them and hurled darteres ſoo thick, that it almoſte tooke the lyght of the ſonne from owre men. In ſo much that if they had not borne of the force therof with theyr targettes, the matter hadde gonе wronge with them. Yet at the length, many beinge wounded, they paſſed ouer the ryuer, which thynge when the enemys ſaw, they fledde: whome owre men perſuinge, flewe fume in the chafe: but not many, by reaſon of theyr ſwyfenes of foote. Thus beinge in the wooddes, they ſhotte at owre men more ſafely. For they being accustomed to the wooddes and naked without any lette, paſſed through the buffhes and shrubbes as it had byn wylde bores or harteſ: wheras owre men were hyndered by reaſon of theyr apparell, targettes, longe iauelens, and ignorance of the place. Wherfore, when he had reſted there all that nyght in vayne, and the daye folowinge ſaw none ſterninge in the wooddes, he went (by the counſel and condukte of the other Ilande men which were in his armee) immediatly from thenſe, to the montaynes in the which king *Maiobanexius* had his cheefe manſion place in the vylage cauled *Capronum*, by the which name alſo, the kynges palacie was cauled, beinge in the fame vylage. Thus marchinge forwarde with his army, abowte twelue myle of, he encamped in the vylage of an other kyng, which theſe inhabitanſe had forſaken for feare of owre men. Yet makyngē dyliget ſearch, they founde two, by whom they had knowleage that there was tenne kynges with *Maiobanexius* in his palacie of *Capronum*, with an army of eight thouſand Ciguauians. At the Lieuetenantes fyfth approche, he durſt not gyue them battayle vnyll he had ſumwhat better ſearched the Region: Yet did he in the meane tyme ſkyrmiffhe with them twyfe. The nexte nyght abowte mydnyght, he ſent furth ſcouetes, and with them guydes of the Ilande men which knewe the countrey. Whom the Ciguauians eſpyenge from the mountaynes, prepared them felues

33
The Spaniardes accuse the Admirall.

The Admirales answere.

Inſolencie and idleſſe of libertie.

These had the custodys of the temples.

A cruel and deuyileſhe paſymēt.

Kynge Guarionexius is captaine of vi. thouſand Ciguauians.

Picti Agathyrſi.
Naked men painted with the ioyce of certen fruiteſ.
Heare made long and black by arte.

The vſe of targettes.
The Ciguauians are dryuen to flight.

34
Kynge Maiobanexius.

An army of viii. thouſand Ciguauians.

A Larome.
The Ciguauians
put to flyght
agine

The Lieuetenaunt
his ambassage
to kyng
Maiobanexius.

Kyng
Guarionexius.

Maiobanexius his
answere.
Natural hatred
of vyce.

The
Lieuetenautes
gentelnes toward
maiobanexius

35
A rare faythfulnes
in a barbarous
kyng.

The
Lieuetenautes
messengers are
slayne.

Al the kirges are
dryuen to flyght.

to the battayle with a terrible crye or alarome after their maner: but yet durst not coome owte of the wooddes, supposing that the Lieuetenaunt with his mayne army had byn euen at hande. The day folowynge, when he brought his army to the place where they encamped, leaping owt of the wooddes, they twyse attempted the fortune of warre, fiercely assyaling owe men with a mayne force, and woundinge manye before they coulde couer them with theiρ targettes. Yet owe men put them to flyght, flewe many, and tooke many. The refydewe fledde to the wooddes, where they kept them flyll as in their moste safe houlde. Of them which were taken, he sent one, and wyt hym an other of the Ilande men which was of his parte to *Maiobanexius* with commaundement in this effect. The Lieuetenaunt brought not hether his army (O *Maiobanexius*) to kepe warre eyther ageynst yowe or yowre people: For he greately defyret yowre frendesthippe. But his entent is, that *Guarionexius* who hath persuadet yowe to bee his ayde ageynste hym to the grete destruction of yowre people and vndoynge of yowre countrey, may haue dewe correction awfull for his disobedience towarde him, as also for rayning tumultes amonthe the people. Wherfore, he reuyreth yowre and exorteth yowre, to delyuer *Guarionexius* into his handes. The which thynge yf yowe shall perforne, the Admirall his brother wyll not only gladly admite yowe to his frendesthippe, but also enlarge and defende yowre dominion. And if herein yowe refuse to accomlysshe his requeste, it wyll folowe, that yowe shall shortelye repent yowe therof. For yowre kyngedome shall be wasted with swoorde and fyer, and yowe shall abyde the fortune of warre wherof yowe haue had experiance with fauour, as you shall further know here after to yowre payne, yf with stobernes yowe prouoke hym to shewe the vttermoste of his poure. When the messenger had thus doone his errante, *Maiobanexius* answere, that *Guarionexius* was a good man, indued with many vertues as all men knewe: And therfore he thought hym worthy his ayde: especially in as muche as he fledde to hym for succoure, and that he had made him such promesse, whom also he had proued to bee his faithfull frende. Ageyne, that they were naughtie men, violent and cruell, defyringe other mens gooddes, and fuche as spared not to sheede innocentes bludde: In fyne, that he woldes not haue to doo with fuche myscheuous men, nor yet enter into frendesthippe with them. When these thynghes came to the Lieuetenautes care, he commaunded the vylage to be burnte where he hym selfe encamped, with many other vylages there abowte. And when he drewe nere to the place where *Maiobanexius* lay, he sent messengers to him ageyne, to common the matter with hym, and to wyll hym, to fende fume one of his mooste feythful frendes to entrete with hym of peace. Where vpon the kyng sent vnto hym one of his cheefe gentelmen, and with hym two other to wayte on hym. When he came to the Lieuetenautes presence, he frendly reuyred hym to perfuade his lord and master in his name, and ernestly to admonyssh hym, not to suffer his floryfinghe kyngedome to bee spoyled, or hym selfe to abyde the hafarde of warre for *Guarionexius* sake: And further to exhorte hym to delyuer hym, excepte he woldes procure the destruction bothe of hym selfe, his people, and his countrey. When the messenger was returned, *Maiobanexius* assembled the people, declaring vnto them what was doone, but they cried owte on hym to delyuer *Guarionexius*: And beganne to curse the daye that euer they had receaued hym, thus to disturbe theiρ quietnes. *Maiobanexius* answere them, that *Guarionexius* was a good man, and had well defered of him, giuinge hym many princely presentes: And had also taught both his wyfe and hym to syng and daunce, whiche thynge he dyd not lytle esteeme. And was therfore fully resolued in no case to forsaye hym, or ageynste all humanitie to betraye his frende whiche fledde to hym for succoure: but rather to abyde al extremities with him, then to minister occasion of obloquye to flauderes to reporte that he had betrayed his geſte whom he tooke into his house with warranties. Thus dismisinge the people fighinge and with forowfull hartes, he cauled *Guarionexius* before hym, promyfinge hym ageyne, that he woldes bee partaker of his fortune whyle lyfe lasted. In so muche that he thought it not besete to fende any further woordes to the Lieuetenaunt: but appoynted hym whome before he sent to hym, to keape the way with a garrifon of men, to the intent that if any messengers shulde be sent from the Lieuetenaunt, to fleye them by the way, and admite none to communication or further entretie of peace. In the meane tyme, the Lieuetenaunt sent two, wherof the one was a captiue Ciguauian, and the other an Ilande man of them which were frendes to owe men: They were bothe taken and slayne. The Lieuetenaunt folowed them onely with ten footemen and fourre horfemen. Fydnges his messengers deade in the waye, he was further prouoked to wraþe, and determinyd more extremely to deal with *Maiobanexius*. And therefore wente forwarde incontinently with his hole army to his cheefe palacie of *Capronum* where he yet laye in campe. At his approche, all the kynges fledde, every man his way, and forsooke theiρ capitayne *Maiobanexius*: who also with all his famelye, fledde to the rowgh mountaynes. Sum of the Ciguauians, fowght for *Guarionexius* to fley hym, for that he was the caufe of all these troubles. But his feete fauod his lyfe. For he fledde in tyme to the mountaynes where he lurked in maner alone amonthe the defolat rokkes.

Whereas nowe the Lieuetenautes fouldiers were forweryed with longe warre, with watchinge, laboure, and hunger, (for it was nowe three monethes fence the warres beganne) many defyrd leaue to departe to the towre of Conception, where they had granges and exercised tyllage. He gaue them theiρ passeportes with allowance of vytayles, foo that only thyrtie remayned with hym. These three monethes warre, they

wooddes, when he
empted the
ey coulde
ny. The
hich were
exius with
) to kepe
tent is,
of yowre
le him, as
to deluyer
r wyl not
if herein
erof. For
ere wheroft
stobernes
is errante,
ewe: And
nd that he
they were
nnocentes
endeshippe
be burnte
o the place
y wyl hym,
kyng sent
ame to the
and ernestly
the hasarde
rocure the
Maibanaxius
trionexius:
Maibanaxius
y princely
not lyttle
etraye his
er occasion
th warrant
fore hym,
e that he
before he
sent from
of peace.
other an
uetenant
waye, he
therefore
in campe
cus: who
nexius to
e in tyme

, laboure,
departe to
affepores
arre, they

contynued very paynefull and myserablye: Soo that duryng al that tyme, they had none other meate but only *Casibi*: that is, fuche rootes whereof they make their breade, and that but syldome to theyr fyll: Also *Vfias*, that is, lyttle beastes lyke Conyes, if by chaunce now and then, they tooke fume with their houndes. Their drinke was none other then water, such as they fownde, sumtyme sweete, and sumtyme muddy faueringe of the maryshes. Emonge these delicates, that lyttle sleepe that they had, was euer for the moste parte abrode vnder the firmamente: And that not without watchemen, and in contynual remououinge as the nature of warre requyreth. With these fewe therfore, the Lieuetenaunt determined to searche the mountaynes, dennes, and caues, if he coulde in any place fynde the steppes of *Maibanaxius* or *Guarionexius*. In the meane tyme certeyne of his menne (whom hunger enforced to goo a huntinge to proue if they coulde take any conies) chaunced vpon twoo of *Maibanaxius* familiers, whiche were sent to certeyne vylages of his, to make prouision of breade. These he enforced to declare where theyr lord lay hydde. And vsed the same also for guides to bringe owre men to the place. Twelue of owre men tooke this enterprye in hand, painting them felues after the maner of the Ciguauians. Soo that by this stratageme or policie, they came fodenly vpon *Maibanaxius*, and tooke hym prisoner with his wyfe, children, and familie, and conueighed them to the towre of Conception to the Lieuetenaunt. Within a fewe dayes after, hunger compelled *Guarionexius* to coome owe of the dennes: whome, certeyne of the people fearing the Lieuetenaunt, bewrayde to owre hunters. The Lieuetenaunt beinge certified hereof, sent furthe a bande of foote men, commaunding them to lye in ambufhe vntyll suche tyme as *Guarionexius* wente from the playnes to the mountaynes, and then fodenly to intrappe hym. They went as they were commaunded, tooke hym, and browght hym awaie with them. And by this meanes were all the Regions nere abowe, pacified and quyeted. A certeyne noble woman of nere kynred to *Maibanaxius*, and wyfe to an other kyng whose dominion was yet vtouched, folowed hym in al these aduersities. They affirme this woman to bee the Fayrest and moste bewetyfull that euer nature broughte foorth in the Ilande. Whom, when the kyng her husbande who loued her moste ardently (as her bewety deserued) harde faye that shee was taken prisoner he wandered vppe and downe the deserts lyke a man owe of his wytte, not knowinge what to doo or faye. But at the lengthe, he came to the Lieuetenaunt, promysinge moste faythfully that he wold submitte hym selfe and all that he coulde make, vnder his poure, soo that he wolde restore hym his wyfe. The Lieuetenant accepted the condition and restored him his wife, with certeyne other rulers and gentelmen which he had taken prisoners before: Charginge them, and byndinge them with an othe, to bee euer redye at his commaundement. Shortly after, this kyng, of his owne free motion, came ageyne to the Lieuetenaunt, bringyng with hym fyue thousande men without weapons, fauyng onely suche instrumentes as they vse in tillage of theyr grownde. He brought with hym also, feedes to sowe: wherwith at his owne charge, he caufed suche plente of theyr corne and fruite to growe in sundry places of the large vale wherof we spake before, that shortely after, were seene manye fayre and fruitefull fieldes that came therof. And for his gentelnes beinge rewarded of the Lieuetenaunte with certeyne of owre thynges, he departed ioyfully. When the report hereof came to the Ciguauians, it mooued the myndes of the kynges to hope of clemencie. Where vpon they came toguther to the Lieuetenaunt with humble submision and faythal promise euer after to bee vnder his obedience: defyring hym to restore vnto them theyr kyng, with his famylie. At theyr requeste, the kynges wyfe and his householde was fette at Libertie, but he kepte styll as a prisoner. These thynges dyd the Lieuetenaunt in the Ilande, not yet knowinge what his aduersaries and accusers had layde to his charge before the kyng of Spayne: who beinge disquyeted with theyr querelinges and accusacions, and especially for that by reasoun of theyr disencion, of soo greate abundaunce of golde and other thynges, there was as yet but lyttle browght into Spayne, appointed a newe gouernour which shuld see a redrefe in these thinges: And eyther to punyssh suche as were fautie, or elles to fende them to hym. What was fownde ageynste the Admirall and his brother, or ageynst his aduersaries whiche accused hym, I doo not wel knowe. But this I am sure of, that both the brethrene are taken, browght, and cast in prison, with their goodes confiscate. But as foone as the kyng vnderstoode that they were browght bounde to Cales, he sent messengers in poste, with commaundemente that they shulde bee loosed and coome freely to his prefence: wherby he declared that he tooke theyt troubles greeuouslye. It is also sayde, that the newe gouernour sent letters to the kyng, wrytten with the Admiralles hande in straunge and vnknownen sypheringes, to his brother the Lieuetenaunt beinge absente, wyllyngne hym to bee in a redynes with a poure of armed men to coome and ayde hym if the Gouernour shulde profer hym any violence. Wherof the gouernour hausinge knowleage (as he saythe) beinge also aduertised that the Leauetenaunt was gonue to his brother before the men which he had preparid were in a redines, apprehended them bothe vnwares, before the multitude came toguther. What wyl folowe, tyme, the moste trewe and prudent Judge, wyl declare. Thus fare ye well.

The Spanyardes
are painful in the
warrres.

A desperat
aduenture with
xxii. men

A policie.
Kyng
Maibanaxius
is taken.

36
Guarionexius is
taken.

A Bewyfull
woman.

A kyng sendeth
the lieuetenaunt
fyue thousand men
to tyll the grownde.

The kynges submit
themselves to the
Lieuetenaunt

A newe gouernour
of the ilande.

An vnwoorthy
rewards for soo
greate paynes.

**THE EYGHTH BOOKE OF THE FYRSTE DECADE,
to Cardinall Lodouike.**

The Ocean sea
heretofore
vnknownen.

Shipmasters vnder
the Admirall.

The fyfth portioun
dewe to the kyng.

37
The naviigation of
Petrus Alphonous.
Paria.

Cumana.
Manacapana.
Curiana.

Perles for tryfels.

Great plentie of
perles
Humayne people.

Shel fysches in
which perles are
engendred.
Beastes and
foules.

Hunters and
archers.

Theyr maner of
bargening

The vse of pynnes.

Haukes bels in
great estimation.

Roringes of wyld
beastes



He greate, ryche, and plentifull Ocean sea, heretofore vnknownen, and nowe fownde by *Christophorus Colonus* the Admyrall, by th[e] autoritie and furtherance of the Catholyke kyng, I haue presented vnto yowre honoure (ryght noble Prince) lyke a golden cheyne vnwoorkmanly wrought. But yowe shall nowe receaue a precious iewell to bee appendaunt thereto. Therfore emonge suche as were pylotes or governours vnder the Admyrall, and had dyligently marked the courses and differences of the wyndes, many had licences graunted them of the kyng to seeke further of theyr owne charges, vpon condicione to pay hym faithfully his

portion, which is the fyfth parte. But bycause emonge all other, one *Petrus Alphonous* (cauled *Nigonus* by his surname) fayled towarde the Southe with more prosperous fortune then any of the other, I thinke it best first to speake sumwhat of his vyage. He therfore, with only one shipp, well furnyshed at his owne charges, after that he had his passepore with commaundement in no case to caste anker paste fyftie leagues distante from any place where the Admyrall hadde touched, fayled fyrste to *Paria* where the Admyrall fownde bothe the men and women foo laden with cheynes, garlandes, and braeflettes of perles, as wee haue sayde before. Coaftynge therfore alonge by the same shore accordyng to the kynges commaundement, (yet leauinge behynde hym the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*) he came to the Region wh[ic]h [e]nhabitantes thereof, caule *Curiana*: where he fownd a hauen (as he saythe) muche lyke the porte of *Gades* or *Cales*. In to the whic[i] enteringe, he sawe a farre of certeyne howfes on the shore, and perceaued when he drewe nere, that it was a vylage of onely eyght howfes. Proceedyng yet further for the space of three myles, he espyed an other vylage well replenyshed with people, where there met hym fyftie naked men on a company hausinge with them a certeyne ruler, who defyred Alphonous to coome to theyr coastes. He brought with hym at this tyme, many haukes belles, pynnes, nedels, braeflettes, cheynes, garlandes, and rynges with counterfet stones and glasse, and such other tryfelles, the which within the momente of an houre, he hadde exchaunged for xv. vnces of theyr pearles which they wore abowte theyr neckes and armes. Then they yet more ernestly defyred him to sayle to theyr coastes: Promysyng hym that he shulde there haue as many perles as he wold defyre. He condef[er]ced to their requeste: And the daye folowynge, came to the place where they appoynted hym: Lyinge there at anker, a great multytlude of people resorted to hym, instantely requyrringe hym to coome alande. But when he confidered the innumerable multytlude of people which was there asembled, and that he had only. xxxiii. men in his coompany, he durste not commyt hym selfe to theyr handes, but gaue them to vnderstand by signes and tokens that they shulde coome to the shyppe with theyr canoas. For theyr boates (which the men of the Iland caule *Canoas*) are made only of one hole peece of woodde as in the Ilandes: yet more rude, and not so artificially as theyrs are. Thefe they caule *Gallitas*: They swarmed therefore to the shyp as faste as they myght, bryngyng with them great plentie of perles (which they caule *Tnoras*) exchaunginge the fame for owe marchaudies. He fowndis this people to bee of gentyl nature, simple and innocent, beinge conuersant with them in theyr houses, for the space of xx. dayes. Theyr houses are made of woodde, couered with the leaves of date trees. They meate for the mooste parte, is the shel fysches in the whiche perles are engendred, wherof theyr sea coastes are ful. They haue also great plentie of wylde beastes, as hartes, wylde bores, and coonyes lyke vnto hares, both in colour and byggenes. Stocke doues also, and turtle doues. Lykewyse geefe and duckes which they nooryshe in theyr houses as we doo. Peacockes flye abowte in maner in euerye woodde and groue: but they are not distinct with fundry coloures as ours are: for the cockes are lyke vnto the hennes. These people of *Curiana*, are craftie hunters and exceeding cunning archers, so that they wyl not lyghtly mysse any beast or byrde that they shooote at. Oure men confument certeyne dayes here very pleauantely. Duryng which tyme, who soo euer brought them a peacocke, had for the same, foure pynnes. He that brought a pheasaunt, had twoo: And for a flocke doue or turtle doue, one: And for a goose, a smaul lookyng glasse or a lylle stone of glasse. Thus they bought and foulde with proferynge and byddynge, denyng and refusinge as it had byn in a greate market. When pynnes were profered them, they asked what they shulde doo with them, beinge naked. But oure men satifid them with a craftie answere, declaring by tokens that they were very necessary to picke theyr teeth and to pul thornes owte of theyr fleshe. But aboue al thynges haukes belles were most esteemed amone them, for theyr founde and faire coloure: And wolde therfore gyue much for one of them. Oure men lodginge in theyr houses, harde in the myght seafon horryble noyses and rorynges of wylde beastes in the wooddes which are full of exceedinge greate and hygh trees of fundry kyndes. But the beastes of these

wooddes, are not noysome to men. For the people of the countrey goo dayly a hunting, naked, with theyr bowes and arrowes: Yet hath it not byn harde of, that any man hath byn slayne of any wylde beaste. As many hertes or wylde bores as owe men wooldes defyre them to bryng, they wooldes kyll in the wooddes with their bowes and arrowes, and not fayle to bryng them. They lacke kyne, goates, and sheepe. Theyr breade is made of rootes, as is theyrs of the Ilandes. This nation, hath blacke heare, grosse and sumwhat curle, yet longe also. They keepe theyr teeth very whyte: And for that purpote vse to cary a certeine herbe betwene theyr lyppes for the most parte of the day, and to washe theyr mouthes when they cast it away. The women doo all theyr busynes at home in theyr howfes, and haue also the cure of tyllage of the grounde. But the men apply them selues to the warres and huntyng, to playe, singyng and daunsing. They haue sundry kyndes of water pottes, iugges, and drinckinge cuppes made of earthe in other places abowt them and brought thereth for exchange of other thynges: For theyr vse fayres and markettes for the same purpos: and are gretly desyrous of such thynges, as are not brought forth or made in theyr countrey, as nature hath gyuen a disposition to al men to defyre and bee delyted with newe and strange thynges. Many of them, had hangyng at theyr pearles, the Images of certeine beastes and birdes very artificially made of golde, but not pure. These also are brought them from other places for exchange of other thynges. The golde wherof they are made, is natvie, and of much lyke finenes to that wherof the florenes are coyned. The men of this countrey, inclose theyr priuie members in a gourde, cutte after the fashion of a coddepiece: or els, couuer the same with the shelle of a tortoys, tyed abowte theyr loynes with laces of gossampine cotton. In other places of that tract, they thrust the synew within the sheethe therof, and bynde the skinne fast with a stringe. The greate wylde beastes wherof wee spake before, and many other thynges whiche are not founde in any of the Ilandes, testifie that this region is part of the continent or firme land. But the chiefeſt conjecture wherby they argue the same, is, that by the coaſtes of that lande, from *Paria* towarde the weſte, they fayled aboute three thouſande myles, fyndyng no ſigne or token of any ende. These people of *Curiana* (whiche ſum caule *Curtana*) beinge demaunded where they hadde ſuche plentie of golde, ſignified that it was brought them from a Region cauled *Canchieta* or *Cauchieta*, being diſtant from them fyxe foonneſ, that is, fyxe dayes iourney weſtwarde: And that theyr Images of goule, were made in the ſame Region. Where vpon owe men directed theyr vyage thyrther immediatly: and arryued there at the calendes of Nouember, in the year of Christ a thouſande and fyue hundred. The people of the countrey reſorted to them withoute feare, bryngyng with them of the golde which we ſayde to bee natvye in that Region. This people had alſo collers of pearles abowte theyr neckes, whiche were brought them frome *Curiana* for exchange of theyr marchandies. None of them wolde exchange any of thoſe things which they had owte of other countreys: as nother the Curians golde, nor the Canchietans pearles. Yet amoung the Canchietans, they founde but little gold redy gathered. They toke with them frome thenſe, certen very faire marmafets or munkeys, and many popingayes of ſundry coloures. In the monethe of Nouember, the ayer was there moſt temperate, and nothyng coulde. The guardens of the north pole, were owte of fyght to bothe theſe people, they are ſoo neare to the Equinoctiall. Of the degrees of the pole, they can gyue none other accoumpte. Theſe people, are wel diſpoſed men, of honest condicions, and nothinge ſuspicioſ. For all moſt all the nyght longe, they reſorted to the ſhippe with theyr boates, and went aboordē ſhip withoute feare, as dyd the Curians. They caule pearles, *Corixas*. They are ſumwhat ielous. For, when any ſtraungers coome emonge them, they euer place theyr women behynd them. In this Region of *Canchieta*, the gossampine trees growe of them ſelues commonly in many places, as doo with vs elmes, wyllowes, and falowes. And therfore theyr vſe to make breeches of cotton, wherwith they couuer theyr priuie partes in many other Regions there aboute. When they had yet fayled on forwarde by the ſame coaſtes, there came fourth ageynſte them aboute two thouſande men, armed after theyr maner, forbydding them to coome aland. Theſe people were ſoo rude and ſaluage, that owe men coulde by no meaneſ allure them to familiaritie. Owe men therfore, contented only with their pearles, returned backe the ſame way they came: where they remayned with the Curians continually for the ſpace of twentie dayes, and fylled theyr bellyes wel with good meate. And here it ſeemeth to me, not farre from my purpote, to declare what chaunced vnto them in theyr retурne, when they came nowe within the fyght of the coaſte of *Paria*. They happened therefore in the way, at *Os Draconis* and the goulfes of *Paria*, (wherof wee ſpake before) to meeete with a nauie of xviii. Canoas of Canibales which went a rouyng to hunt for men. Who as foone as they had eſpyed owe men, affailed theyr ſhippe fiercely and withoute feare enclosed the ſame, diſturbing owe men on every fyde with theyr arrowes. But owe men fo feared them with their gunnes, that they fledde immediatly, whom owe menne folowinge with the ſhippe boate, tooke one of theyr Canoas, and in it, only one Canibal (for the other had escaped) and with hym, an other man bownde: Who, with teareſ runnigne downe his cheekeſ, and with giſture of his handes, eyes, and heade, ſignified that fyxe of his coompanyonſ had byn cruelly cutte in pieces and eaten of that myscheuous nation: and that he ſhulde haue byn lykewyſe handeled the day folowinge. Wherfore they gaue hym poure ouer the Canyball, to doo with hym what he wolde. Then with the Canibales owe clubbe, he layde on hym al that he might dryue with

Hartes and wyld bores.

38
Blacks and curle heare.
White teſteſ.

Earthen vefſels.

Conninge artificers.

Base golde.

A ſtrange maner of couering theyr priuities.

Tokens of the continent or firme lande.

The golden Region of Canchieta.

Temperate ayer in Nouember.

The Equinoctal lye.
Humane people

Gossampine trees
Chorlyſhe people

Alphonsus returneth to Paria.
Canibales in the goulfes of Paria.

39

Death for death.

Howe the
canibales fortife
theyr campes

Haraias.

Salte engendred
of the water of
the sea.

Sprynges of salt
water.

The bodies of
princes dried and
reserved

Threescore and
xvi. pounds
weight of perles
for v. shyllinges.
The course of the
sea toward the
weste.

Perles as common
as chaffe
Petrus Alphonſus
in prison.

Orient perles as
hygge as hazel
nuttes.

40

Curiana
Os Draconis.
Cumana.
Manacapana.
The Iland of
Margarita.

The nauigation of
Vincentius and
Aries Pinzonius

Licence and
passeperte.

hande and foote, grinninge and frettinge as it had byn a wylde bore: Thinkynge that he had not yet sufficiently reuenged the death of his companyons, when he had beaten owte his braynes and guttes. When he was demaunded after what forte the Canibales were woont to invade other contreys, he answered that they euer vied to carye with them in theyr Canoas, a greate multitude of clubbes: The whiche, where foo euer they lande, they pitche in the grownde, and encampe them selues within the coompaſſe of the fame, to lye the more safely in the nyght seafon. In *Curiana*, they founde the head of a capitaine of the Canibales naileſ over the doore of a certeyne gouernourie, for a token of victorie, as it hadde byn the flanderde or he ... taken from the enemye in battayle. In theſe coaſtes of *Paria*, is a Region cauled *Haraias*, in t ... whiche, greate plentie of ſalte is gathered after a ſtrange forte. For the ſea beinges there tolled with the poure of the wyndes, dryueth the ſalte waters into a large playne by the ſea fyde: where: afterward when the ſea waxeth caulme, and the ſonne begynneth to ſhyne, the water is congealed into moſte pure and whyte ſalte, wherewith innumerable ſhippes might bee laden, if men doo reſorte therethor for the fame beſfore there faule any rayne. For the rayne meltethe it, and caufeth it to ſynke into the ſande, and ſoo by the pores of the earthe, to returne to the place from whence it was dryuen. Other ſay, that the playne is not ſyld from the ſea, but of certeine ſpringes whose water is more ſharpe and ſalt then the water of the ſea. Th[e]inhabitantes doo greataſtelye eſteeme this bay of ſalte. Which they vſe, not only for theyr owne commoditie, but also woorkinge the fame into a ſquare forme lyke vnto briſkes, they ſell it to ſtrangers for exchaunge of oþer thynges whiche they lacke. In this Region, they ſtretche and drye the deade bodies of theyr kinges and noble men, layinge the fame vpon a certeyne frame of woodde much lyke vnto a hurdle or grediren, with a gentell fyre vnder the fame, thus by lyttle and lyttle conſuminge the fleſſe and keepinge the ſkynne hole with the bones incloſed therein. These dried carcafes, they haue in greate reuerence, and honour them for theyr householde and famylie goddes. They ſay that in this place they ſaw a man, and in an other place a woman, thus dried and reſerved. When they departed from *Curiana*, the viii. day of the Ides of February to returne to Spayne, they had three ſcore and. vi. pounds weight (after. viii. vnces to the pownde) of perles, which they bought for exchange of oþre thynges, amountinge to the value of fyue ſhillinges. Departinge therfore, they conſumēd three ſcore dayes in theyr journey (alþough it were ſhorter then frome *Hispaniola*) by reaſon of the contynual course of the ſea into the weſte, whiche dyd not only greatly ſtey the ſhippe, but alſo ſumtymeſ dryue it backe. But at the length they came home ſoo laden with perles, that they were with every maryner, in maner as common as chaffe. But the maſter of the ſhippe, *Petrus Alphonſus*, beinge accuſed of his coompanyons that he had ſtowlen a great multitude of precious perles, and defrauded the kyng of his portion which was the fyue part, was taken of *Fernando de Vega*, a man of greate leminge and experiance and gouernour of *Gallacia*, where they arryued, and was there kept in prifon a longe tyme. But he ſtill denyeth euer he deteyned anye parte of the perles. Many of theſe perles were as bygge as hafell nuttes, and ori... ſe caule it) that is, lyke vnto them of the Eaſte parts. Yet not of ſoo greate price, by reaſon that the ſame therof are not ſoo perfecte. When I my ſelfe was preſente with the ryght honorable duke of *Methyna*, and was bidden to dynar with hym, in the citie of Ciuite, they browght to hym aboue a hundredth and twentie vnces of perles to be foulde: which ſurely did greatly delyte me with their ſayrenes and brightnes. Sum ſaye, that *Alphonſus* hadde not theſe perles in *Curiana* being diſtant from *Os Draconis* more then a hundredth and twentie leaues, but that he had them in the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*, nere vnto *Os Draconis* and the Ilande of *Margarita*. For they deny that there is any perles founde in *Curiana*. But ſithe the matter is yet in controuerſie, we wyll paſſe to other matters. Thus muſe yowe haue whereby yowe maye coniecture what commoditie in tyme to coome may bee looked for from theſe newe landes of the weſte Ocean, whereas at the fyſte diſcoueringe, they ſhewe ſuch tokens of greate ryches. Thus fare ye well.

THE IX. BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE to Cardynall Lodouike.



Incentiagnes Pinzonius, and also *Aries Pinzonius*, his nevve, by his brothers fyde, which accompanied the Admiral *Colonus* in his fyſte vyage, and were by him appoynted to bee maſters of twoo of the ſmaul ſhippes which the Spaniardes caule *Carauelas*, beinge mooued by the greate ryches and amplytude of the new landes, furnyſhed of tneyr owne charges, fourre carauels in the hauen of theyr owne contrey which the Spaniardes caule *Palos*, bortheringe on the weſte Ocean. Hauynge therfore the kynges licence and passeperte to departe, they looſed from the hauen, aboue the Calendes of December, in the yeaſe 1499. This hauen

of *Pulos* is three score and twelue myles distant from *Gades*, commonly cauled *Cales*: and three score and four myles from *Ciuile*. All th[e]-inhabitantes of this towne, not one excepted, are greatly gyuen to searchinge of the sea, and continually exercyed in sayling. They also directed theyr vyage fyrst to the Ilandes of *Canarie* by the Ilandes of *Hesperides*, nowe cauled *Cabouerde*, which sum caule *Gorgodes Medicias*. Saylinge therfore directly towarde the southe frome that Iland of the *Hesperides* which the Portugales (being possiesers of the same) caule *Sancti Jacobi*, and departinge frome thense at the Ides of Ianuary, they folowed the southwest wynde, beinge in the myddest betwene the south and the weste. When they supposid that they had sayled aboute three hundrethe leagues by the same wynde, they say that they loste the fygth of the North starre: and were shorthelester, tossed with exceedinge tempestes bothe of wynde and sea, and vexed with intollerable heate. Yet sayled they on further (not without greate daunger) for the space of twoo hundrethe and fortie leagues, folowing yet the same wynde by the lost pole. Wherfore, whether habitable Regions bee vnder the Equinoctiall lyne or not, let these men and the owlde wryters, awel Philosophers as poetes and cosmographers discusse. For these men, affirme it to bee habitable, and maruelously replenished with people: and they, that it is vnhabitable by reasoun of the soone beames dependinge perpendicularly or directely ouer the same. Yet were there many of the owlde wryters, whiche attempted to proue it habitable. These maryners beinge demauded, if they sawe the south pole, they answere that they knewe no flare there lyke vnto this pole, that myght be decerned aboue the poynete. But that they sawe an other order of starres, and a certeyne thick myst ryfylge frome the horizontall lyne, which greatly hyndered theyr fygth. They contende also, that there is a great heape or ryfylge in the myddest of the earth, which taketh away the fygth of the southe pole, vntyll they haue vtterly paffed ouer the same. But they verely beleue that they sawe other images of starres, muche differinge frome the situation of the flares of owre hemispherie or halfe circle of heaven. Howe so euer the matter bee, as they informe vs, wee certifie yowe. At the lengthe, the seuenthe day of the calender of Februarie, they espied lande a farre of. And seinge the water of the sea to bee troublous, soundinge with theiร plummet, they founde it to bee. xvi. fathames deepe. Goinge a lande, and tarrienge there for the space of twoo dayes, they departed bycause they saw no people steringe, althowghe they founde certeyne steppes of men by the sea syde. Thus grauinge on the trees and the stones nere vnto the shoure, the kynges name and theyrs, and the tyme of theyr comming thether, they departed. Not farre from this statioune, folowynghe the fyers on the lande by nyght, they founde a nation lyng in vnder the open fyrmamente after the maner of warre. Owr men thought it not besite to trouble them vntyll the morninge. Therefore, at the ryfylge of the soone, forte of owre men well armed, wente toward them: agaynt whom came furth. xxxii. of them, with bowes, slinges and darteres, euery redy to the feyght. The other coompanye folowed them, armed after the same maner. Owr men affirme that they were of hygher stature then ethier the Almaynes or Pannionians. They behelde owre men with frownyng and threatenyng countenaunce. But owre men thought it not good to faule to bickeringe with them, vncerteyne whether it were for feare, or bycause they wolde not dryue them to flight. Wherfore they went aboute to allure them by faire meanes and rewards. But they refusid all kynde of gentnelnes, and stooode euer in a redines to feight, declaringe the same by signes and tokenes. Thus owr men resorted to theyr shippes, and they to the place from whence they came, without any further busynes. The same nyght abowte mydnyght, they fledde, and left the place voyde where they lay in campe. Owr men suppose them to bee a vagabunde and wanderinge nacion lyke vnto the Scythians, withoute houses or certeyne dwellinge places, lyuinge onely with the fruities of the earth, hauing theyr wyues and chyldren folowinge them. Such as measured their footesteppes in the sande, affirme with greate othes, that one of theyr feete is almost as longe as twoo feete of owre men of the meane forte. Saylinge on yet further, they founde an other ryuer, but not of deapth sufficient to beare the carauels. They sent therfore the fourre shippes to lande, ful of armed men to search the countrey. They espedy vpon a hyghe hyll nere vnto the sea syde, a greate multitude of people, to whom owre coompany sent furthe one man with certeyne of owre thynges to allure them to exchaunge. And when he had cast a haukes bell towarde them, they cast downe a wedge of golde a cubette longe. The which as he flouped to take vppe, they foodenly incloised hym, and caried hym awaye. But he was shortly after rescued by his coompanyon, to sum of their paynes: for they flewe eyght of owre men, and wounded many a farre of, with theyr arrowes, and darteres made of wood hardened at the endes with fyre. After this, they encoompased owre shippes boates within the ryuer, and came rasshelye within the reache of owre men, layinge hould on the boates sydes, where they were thrust through and hewen in peeces as it had byn sheepe, by reasoun they were naked. Yet wolde they not for al this, gyue ouer: but tooke from owre men one of their boates, hauing noo men in it. For the governour therof being slayne with an arrowe, the other fledde and escaped. And thus they leste this fierce and warlyke people, saylinge towarde the northweste alonge by the same coastes, with forowfull hartes for the death of theyr coompanyon. When they had sayled abowte. xl. leagues, they chaunced into a sea of suche fresshe water, that they fylled theyr barelles and hogges heads therwith. Searchinge the cause hereof, they vnderstoode that a vehement courfe of ryuers disceded with great violence from the toppes of certeyne greate hylles. They say

Cales. Ciuile.

The Ilandes of
Canarie
Cabouerde.

S. James Bande.

The North pole
owte of syght.Habitable Regions
vnder the
Equinoctiall lyne.An other order of
starres
A thycke mist
A ryfylge in the
myddest of the
earth.41
People of hygh
stature.A vagabunde
kynde of men
Giantes.Desperate
bouldenes.A sea of fresshe
water.

Many fruitefull
Ilandes.

Humane people.

Mariatamball.

Camomorus.

Paricora.

Regions of Paria.

Gold and perles.

Os Draconis.

Cumana.

Manacapania.

Curiana.

The hole earth
largely taken,
may bee cauled
an Ilande.

Maragnonus
a ryuer
of exceedinge
breadth and full
of Ilands looke
decade ii. liber. ix.

42

Boristomea, and
Spiristomea,
mouthes of the
ryuer of Danubius.

The commodities
of the Regions
and Ilandes about
Paria.
Brasile.

Mani fruitful
Ilandes ieste
desolate.
Canibales.

Trees of Cassia
fistula.

Trees of marvulous
byggenes.
A monstrous
beaste.

Alteracion of ayer
and change of
meate

Cathay in India
beyonde the
ryuer of Ganges
A shiwrake
by tempest.

also that there lyeth within the sea, many fortunate and fruitfull Ilandes, and well inhabyted: And that th[e]jnhabitan[n]tes of this tracte are men of meeke nature and fuche as doo not refuse strangers: Yet lytle profitable to them, bycause they had noo marchandyse for their purpose, as golde or pretious stones. For lache wherof, they brought frome thenfe thyrtie captives to sell for slaues. Th[e]jnhabitan[n]tes caule this Region *Mariatambal*. The Region of the easte parte of that ryuer, is cauled *Camomorus*: And that of the weste parte, *Paricora*: in the mid lande wherof, th[e]jnhabitan[n]tes signified that there is greate plentie of golde. For, folowynge this ryuer directly toward the Northe (as the bendyng of the shre required) they recouered ageyne the syght of the north pole. All the coaste of this tracte, perteyneth to *Paria*, the which (as we sayd before) was fyrt founde by *Colonus* hym selfe, and hath in maner in every place, greate abundance of perles. They saye that these coastes are adioynyng vnto, and all one with *Os Draconis*, and also bortherynge vpon the Regions of *Cumana*, *Manacapania*, *Curiana*, *Caucheta*, and *Cuchibachoa*. Wherfore they thought it to bee parte of the firme lande of India beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*. For the greate and large coompaſſe therof, dothe not permit that it shulde bee an Ilande. Albeit, the hole earth vncouered with water, largely taken, may bee cauled an Ilande. From the poynete of that land where they lost the sight of the north pole, faylyng by a continuall tracke abowte three hundredth leagues towarde the weste syde of *Paria*, they say that almoste in the myddle way, they chaunced into a ryuer cauled *Maragnonus*, which they affirme to bee of such exceedinge breadth, that it myght seeme incredible, if the antiquitie dyd not make mention of the lyke. Beinge demaunded of me if it were not falte water where it diuided the lande, they answere, that the water therof was very fresshe and sweete: And that the further it ranne, to bee so muche the fressher: Also full of Ilandes and holſome fyſhe. They dare auouche the breadth therof, to bee more then thirtie leagues. Yet if wee well weighe and confydier the largenes and wydenes of *Boristomea* and *Spiristomea*, the mouthes of the famous ryuer of *Ister* (nowe cauled *Danubius*) and howe farre they violate or corrupte the falle water with their freshenes, wee shall ceafe to marueile, althoug this other ryuer bee greater. For, who can diminyſſe the poure of nature, but that it may make this bigger then the other, and an other byggen then this. And I suppose this to bee the ryuer wherof *Colonus* the Admirall made mention in the diſcription of his vyage in these coastes. But wee shall hereafter haue further knowleage hereof. Let vs nowe therfore retorne to the commodities of these Regions. They founde in many Ilandes abowte *Paria*, great wooddes of brasile trees: And brought awaie with them, three thousande pounds weight thereof. They say that the brasile of *Hispaniola*, is muche better then this, to dye clothe with a more fayre and durable colour. From heneſt, folowynge the wynde (whiche the Spanyardes caule *Nordwſt*, and the Italiens *Grewo*) they passed by many Ilandes very fruitefull, yet leſte defoliate and wasted by reaſon of the crueltie of the Canibales. For they went alande in many places, and fownde the ruines of many destroyed howſes. Yet in ſum places, they founde men, but thoſe exceedinge fearefull, flyinge to the mountaynes, rockes, and wooddes at the ſight of euery ſtraunger or ſhippe, and wanderinge without houſes or certeyne abydinge places, for feare of the Caniballes layinge wayte and huntinge after them. Here they founde thoſe great trees which of them felues in dyuers places bringe furth the fruiti or ſpice whiche the Apothecaries caule *Caffia fistula*: And that of noo leſte goodnes then that which the phiftians minister to ſuch as bee difeaſed with the ague. But it was not ripe at theyr beinge there. They affirme that there are trees of fuche byggenes, that. vi. men ioyninge handes togither and ſtandinge in coompaſſe, can ſcarſely embrake ſum of them. Emonge these trees is fownde that monſtrous beaſte with a fnowte lyke a foxe, a tayle lyke a marmafette, eares lyke a batte, handes lyke a man, and feete lyke an ape, bearing her whelpes abowte with her in an owtwarde bellye much lyke vnto a greate bagge or purſe. The deade carkas of this beaſte, you ſawē with me, and turned it ouer and ouer with yourwe handes, marueylunge at that newe belly and wonderfull prouifion of nature. They ſay it is knownē by expeſience, that ſhee neuer letteth her whelpes goo owte of that purſe, except it bee eyther to play, or to ſucke, vnyl ſiche tyme that they bee able to gette theyr lyuing by them felues. They tooke this beaſte with her whelpes: But the whelpes dyd ſhortely after in the ſhyppes. Yet the damme liued certeyne moonethes: But at the length, not beinge able to abyde ſoo greate alteration of ayer, and chaunge of meate, ſhee dyd alio in the way. But of this beaſte, wee haue ſayde enowgh. Let vs now therfore retorne to the autours of theſe thynghes. Theſe two *Pinsani*, the vncle and the newie, ſuyſtayned manye grea: troubles and horrible tempeſtes and perilles in this nauigation. For when they had nowe ſayled by the coaſtes of *Paria* abowte. vi. hundredth leagues, and (as they ſuppoſed) beyond the citie of *Cathay* and the coaſtes of Eaſte India beyond the ryuer of *Ganges*, there roſe ſoodenly ſoo fierce a tempeſte in the mooneth of Iuly, that, of the fourre carauels which they had with them, twoo were drowned even befor their eyes: and the thyrd lyenge at anker, with lyke ſoodenes carayd owte of theyr ſyght through the violence of the tempeſte: The fourth alio lyenge at anker, was ſoaken and brooſed, that al the ſeames therof were almoſt looſed. Yet came they to lande owt of this laſte ſhypp, but vterlye desparyngē of the ſhypp. Wherfore conſultyng with them felues what was beſt to bee doone in ſoo extreeme a caſe, and how to prouide them a ſafe dwelinge place in thoſe Region: beinge owt of al hope how to departe frome thenfe, they determined

to fley all the inhabitants of the contrey nere abowte them, leaste they with the other shulde conspire togither to kyl them, but theyr fortune was better. For the carauell which the tempeste had carayed away, was coome to them ageyne. This had in it. xviii. men: And the other that remayned, was sauad and repayed. With these two therfore, they tooke theyr vyage directly to Spaine. And thus beinge toffed with tempestes and vexed with aduersities, they returned to theyr natvie contrey of *Palos*, to theyr wyues and children, the day before the Calendes of October, with the losse of many of theyr dere frendes and neighbours. They brought with them Cinamome and gynger: but not very good, bycause they were not there fully seasoned with the heate of the soone before they brought them from thense. They brought also, certeyne precious stones, whiche *Baptista Elysius*, that excellent philofopher and yowre lordshippes phisitian, affirmeth to bee trewe Topafes. After these mens returne, other of theyr neighbours beinge moued thereto by a certeyne emulation, to proue yf theyr fortune wolde bee anye better, lyke men of good corage, beinge nothing discomfited by the harde fortune of theyr neighbours, knowinge that it often tymes chaunceth that that which is one mans vndoinge is an other mans makyng, attempted a newe vyage towarde the sowthe by the coastes of *Paria*, folowinge the steppes of *Colonus* the Admiral, who had fyrt discouered the same. They also brought with them greate plentie of *Caffia fistula*: And fownde that precious medicine cauled of the Spanyardes, *Anima album*, whose perfume is of most excellent effect to heale the reumes, murses, and heauines of the heade. As touchinge this vyage, as yet I knowe noo other newes that I thought worthy to certifie yowe of. Wherfore, I wyl nowe make an ende of this booke, bycause yow put me so often in remembrance of your departure. Yet to accomplayfhe the Decade, I wyl declare sumwhat of the superstitions of *Hispaniola*. Yowe shall nowe therfore vnderstand the illusions wherwith the people of the Ilande haue byn seduced after the errours of the ownde gentilitie, and wandered in the ignorance and blyndenes of humane nature corrupted by the disobedience of our fyrt parentes, which hath remayned in all nations vpon the face of the earth, except where it hath pleased god by the lyght of his spirite by his woerde, to poure vppon his electe the grace of renouement, by the lyght wherof the naturall darkenesse receaueth sume clearenes as in a glasse, vntyll imperfection shalbe abolysched. Owre men therefore, were longe in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, before they knewe that the people thereof honorede any other thyng then the lyghtes of heauen, or had any other Religion. But when theye had byne nowe longe conuerfante with them, and by vnderstandingy their language, drewe to a further familiaritie, they had knowleage that they vsed dyuers rytes and superstitions. I haue therfore gathered these fewe thynges folowinge, owte of a booke wrytten by one *Ramonus* an heremyte, whom *Colonus* had lefte with certeyne kynges of the Ilande to instruct them in the Christian fayth. And bycause in maner their hole religion is none other thing then Idolatry, I wyl begynne at theyr Idoles. It is therfore apperante by the Images which they honour openly and commonly, that there appere vnto them in the nyghte seafons certeyne phantasies and illusions of euyll sptridges, seducinge them into many fonde and folyshe errours. For they make certeyne Images of gossampine cotton foulded or wrethed after theyr maner, and harde flopped within. These Images they make sytting, much lyke vnto the pictures of sptridges and deuellcs which our paynters are accustomed to paint vpon waules. But forasmuch as I my selfe fent yowre foure of these Images, yowe may better presently signife vnto the kyng yowre vncle, what maner of thynges they are, and howe lyke vnto paynted deuelles, then I can expresse the same by wrytyng. These Images, th[e]inhabitantes caule *Zemes*: wherof the leaste, made to the lykenes of younge deuels, they bind to theyr forheads when they goo to the warres ageynst their enemies: And for that purpos haue they those stryngens hangyng at them which yow see. Of these, they beleue to obteyne rayne if rayne be lackyng, and lykewyse fayre wether. For they thinke that these *Zemes* are the mediatours and messengers of the greate god, whom they acknowledge to be only one, eternall, withoute ende, omnipotent and iuisible. Thus every kyng hath his particuler *Zemes* which he honoureth. They caule the eternall god, by these two names, *Iocauana*, and *Guamaonocon*, as theyr prediceffours tawght them. Affirminge that he hath a father cauled by these fyue names: that is, *Attabeira*, *Mamona*, *Guacarapita*, *Licella*, *Guimazoa*. Nowe shall yowre h[er]re what they fable on the earth as touchinge the originall of man. There is in the Ilande a Region cauled *Caunana*, wher they sayne that mankynde came fyrt owte of two caues of a mountayne: and that the byggest forte of men, came furth of the mouth of the byggest caue, and the least forte owte of the leaste caue. The rocke in the which these caues are, they caule *Cauta*. The greatest denne, they name *Casibaxagua*, and the leesse *Amaiauna*. They say, that before it was lawful for men to come foorth of the caue, the mouth of the caue was kepte and watched nyghtly by a man whose name was *Machochael*. This *Machochael*, departinge sumwhat farre from the caue to th[e]intente to see what thynges were abrode, was fodenly taken of the foonne (whose figh he was forbydden) and was turned into a stone. They fayne the lyke of dyuers other, that whereas they went foorth in the nyghte seafon a fysshynge, so farre from the caue that they coulde not returne before the ryfyng of the soone (the which it was not lawful for them to behold) they were transformed into myrobalane trees, whiche of them selues growe plentifully in the Ilande. They saye furthermore, that a certeyne ruler cauled *Vagoniona*, fent one furth of the caue to goo a fysshynge, who by lyke chaunce

Extreme remedie
In a desperat
cas

43

Cinamome and
gynger

Topases.

Men of noble
corage.

A nother vyng

Animæ album

The superstitions
of hispaniola.
The errours of the
ownde gentilitie.

The grace of
renouation.

Ramonus an
heremyte.
Idolatry and
Idoles.

Illusions of euyll
sptridges.
Images of
gossampine cotton

Zemes.
Younge deuelles.

Mediatours.
Only one god
eternall.
The names of god.
The father of god.

The originall of
man kynde

Fables much lyke
Oude his
transformations

44

The original
Mirobalane trees.

The nightingale.

was turned into a nyghtyngale bycause the soonne was rySEN beefore he came ageyne to the caue: And that yearelye abowte the same tyme that he was turned into a byrde, he dothe in the nyght with a moornynge fonge bewayle his myssfortune, and caule for the helpe of his maister *Vagoniona*. And this they thynke to bee the cause why that byrde singeth in the night feasoun. But *Vagoniona*, beinge fore troubled in his mynd for the losse of his familiar frende whom he loued soo intierly, leauinge the men in the caue, brought foorth onely the women with theyr fuckyng chyldren, leauinge the women in one of the Ilandes of that tracte, cauled *MATHININO*, and caried the chyldren awaie with hym: which poore wretches oppresed with famine, fainted and remained on the banke of a certeyne ryer where they were turned into frogges, and cryed *too, too*, that is, *mama, mama*, as chyldren are wont to crye for the mothers pappe. And hereof they say it commeth that frogges vse to cry so pitifully in the spryng tyme of the yere: That and men were scattered abrode in the caues of *HISpaniola* withowte the compayne of women. They say also, that whereas *Vagoniona* hym selfe, was accustomed to wander in dyuers places, and yet by a speciall grace, neuer transformed, descended to a certeyne fayre woman whom he fawe in the bottome of the sea, and recaued of her certeyne pibble stonnes of marble (whiche they caule *Cibas*) and also certeyne yellowe and bright plates of laton, whiche they caule *Guaninos*. These thynges to this day are had in greate estimation amounghe the kynges, as goodly jewells and most holy reliques. These men whiche we sayde before were lefte in the caues withowte women, went furth in the nyght (as they say) to wasshe them felues in a ponde of raine water and fawe a farre of by the way a greate multitude of certeyne beastes in shape sumwhat lyke unto women, creping as thicke as antes aboute the myrobalane trees: And that as they attempted to take these beastes, they flappyd owt of their handes as they had byn yelles. Where vpon they consulted, and determyned by th[er]e adjuice of the elders, that al suche shulde bee sowght foorth amoung them, as were scabbyd and leprosus, to th[er]e intente that with theyr rowgh and hard handes, they myght th[e]-efeler take holde of them. These men, they caule *Caracaracoles*: And sente them foorth the huntinge to take these beastes. But of many which they tooke, they coulde keepe but only four: The whiche as they wolde haue vfed for women, they fownde that they lacked womans priuities. Wherefore caulinge th[e]elders ageyne to counsayle, to consult what were beste to bee done in this case, theyr adjuice was that the byrde which wes caule the Pye, shuld bee admitted with his byll to open a place for that purpose, whyle in the meane tyme these men cauled *Caracaracoles*, shulde hould fast the wemens thighes abrode with theyr rowgh handes. Full wysely therfore was the pye put to this office, and opened the wemens priuities, and hereof the women of the Ilande haue theyr original and offspring. But nowe doo I cease to marueyle that the owide Grekes dyd fable and wryte so manye bookes of the people cauled *Myrmidones*, which they sayden to bee engendred of antes or pissemeres. These and fuche lyke, the sagest and wyseſt of the people, preache continually to the simple forte, and reherſe the same as molte holy oracles. But it is yet more chyldlyſſe that they fable as touchinge th[e]originall of the sea. For they faye that there was once in the Ilande, a man of greate power, whose name was *Iaia*: whose only soonne being dead, he buryed hym within a greate gourde. This *Iaia*, greouflye takyng the death of his soonne, after a fewe moonthes, came ageyne to the gourde: The which when he had opened, there iffneweth foorth many great whales and other monsters of the sea: where vpon he declared to fuche as dwelt abowte hym, that the sea was encloſed in that gourde. By which report, fourre brethren (borne of one woman who dyed in her trauail) beinge moued, came to the gourde in hope to haue many fyſhes. The whiche when they had taken in theyr handes, and espied *Iaia* comming, (who oftentimes resorted to the gourd to vifet the boones of his soonne) fearing least he shulde suspecte them of thefete and sacrifileage, sodaynely let the gourde faule owt of theyr handes: which beinge broken in the faule the sea furthwike brake owt at the ryſtes therof, and so fylled the vales, and overflowed the playnes, that only the mountaynes were vncouered, whiche nowe conteyne the Ilandes which are feene in those coaſtes. And this is the opinion of theyr wyfe men as concernyng th[e]originall of the sea. But nowe (most noble prince) you shall heare a more pleasaunt fable. There is a certeyne caue cauled *Iouanaboina*, in the territorie of a certeyne kynge whose name is *Machinnech*. This caue they honour more religiouſly then dyd the Grekes in tyme past, Corinth, Cyrhra, or Nyſa: And haue adourned it with pictures of a thouſand fashions. In th[e]enterance of this caue they haue twoo grauen *Zemes*, wherof the one is cauled *Binthaitel*, and the other *Marobu*. Beinge demanded why they had this caue in ſoo greate referrence, they answered ernestly, bycaufe the Soonne and the Moone came fyſt owt of the ſame to gyue lyght to the worlde. They haue religious concourſe to theſe caues, as we are accuſtomed to goo on Pylgrame to Rome or Vaticane, Compoſtele, or Hierufalem, and moſt hollye and heade places of oure Religion. They are alſo ſubiect to an other kynde of uerſtition. For they thinkē that deade folkes walke in the nyght, and eate of the fruite cauled *Guannaba*, vnloukened vnto vs, and ſumwhat lyke vnto a quynſe. Affirmyng alſo that they are conuerſant with lyuing people, even in theyr beddes, and to deceaue women in takyng vpon them the ſhape of men, ſhewyng them felues. though they wold haue to doo with them: But when the matter commeth to actual deede, ſoodenly to vanyſſe away. If any doo ſuſpecte that a deade body lyeth by hym when he feeleth anye ſtraunge thynge in the bedde, they ſay hee ſhalbe owt of dout

The Iland of
Mathinino.Children turned
into frogges.

A ſpeciall grace.

Holy reliques

Women are
ſlippery catayle.
Al wiſdom goeth
not by age.Here nedeth ſum
toprologiſical
interpretour.*Myrmidones*
Preachers for the
deuyl.A vengeance
greate gourd.The originall of
the ſea.

45

The originall of
Ilandes.

A holy caue.

Images.

The originall of
the ſoone and
moone.

Pylgrame.

Walkyng sprytes.
Incubi.A remedye
ageynt walkyng
ſpirites

nd that
ge songe
bee the
for the
mely the
athinino,
remained
, mama,
to cry so
spaniola
poned to
the woman
the they
thynges
These
y fay) to
certeine
And that
re vppon
amone
ght th[.]
e to take
ey wolde
gayne to
ree caule
these men
fely ther
nde haue
wryte fo
flemers.
d rehers
all of the
hose only
h of his
ifshewed
t abowte
woman
e whiche
e gourd
vnely let
e at the
couered,
eyr wyfe
leasaunt
name is
rrha, or
ey haue
hy they
me fyrst
wee are
d heade
t deade
e vnto a
decease
oo with
e that a
of dout

by feelynge of the belly therof: affirmynge that the spirates of deade men may take vppon them al the members of mans body, fauinge only the nauell. If therfore by lacke of the nauell he doo perceave that a deade body lyeth by hym, the feelynge is immediatly resolued. They beleue verely, that in the nyght, and osten tymes in theyr iourneys, and espeially in common and hygh wayes, deade men doo meeete with the lyuynge. Ageynste whome, if any man bee stoute and owt of feare, the phantasy vanysfeth incontinently. But yf anye feare, the phantasy or syfion doth soo affaste hym and ftryke hym with further feare, that manye are thereby astonyfshed and haue the lymmes of theyr bodyes taken. Th[e]inhabytantes beinge demaudned of whom they had thoſe vayne ſuperfticions, they anſwered that they were lefte them of theyr forefathers as by difcent of inheritance: And that they haue had the ſame (before the memory of man) composed in certeine rymes and ſonges, which it was lawfull for none to lerne but onely the kynges foonneſ, who commytted the ſame to memorie, bycaufe they hadde neuer any knowelege of letters. These they ſyng before the people on certeine ſolemne and ſefiuall dayes, as moſt religious ceremonies: whyle in the meane tyme they play on a certeine instrumente made of one hole piece of woodde ſumwhat holowe lyke a tymbrell. Their preeſtes and diuines (whom they caule *Boitios*) inſtructe them in theſe ſuperfticions. These preeſtes, are alſo phiftians, diuininge a thouſande craſtes and ſubtyties howe to deceaue the ſimple people which haue them in greate reuerence. For they peruaide them that the *Zemes* vſe to ſpeak with themſelves, and tel them of thynges to come. And if any haue bin ſick and are recovered, they make them beleue that they obteyned their healte of the *Zemes*. These *Boitii*, bynde them ſelues to muche faſiing and owtewarde clenlynes and pourenges: Especialy when they take vppon them the cure of any Prince. For then they drynke the pouder of a certeine herbe, by whose qualitie they are dryuen into a furie: At whiche tyme (as they fay) they leme many thynges by reuelation of the *Zemes*. Then, puttinge fecreatly in theyr mouthes, eyther a ſtone, or a bone, or a piece of fleſhe, they coomme to the ſicke perfon, commaundinge al to depare owt of that place, excepte one or twoo, whom it ſhall pleafe the ſicke man to appoynt. This doone, they goo about hym three or four tymeſ, greatly deforminge theyr faces, lyppes, and nofethrlis with fundry filthy giſtſures: blowyng, breathing, and ſuckynge the forhead, temples, and necke of the pacient, wherby (they fay) they drawe the euyll ayer from hym, and fucke the diſease owt of his veynes. Then rubbiſg hym about the ſhoulders, thygheſ, and legges, and drawyng downe theyr handeſ cloſe by his ſeete, holdiſg them yet faſte togither, they runne to the dore beinge open, where they vnclouſe and ſhake theyr handeſ, affirminge that they haue dryuen away the diſease, and that the pacient ſhall ſhortely bee perfectly reſtored to health. After this, commynge behynde hym, he conueygheth the piece of fleſhe owt of his owne mouth like a iuggeler, and ſheweth it to the ſicke man, fayinge, behoulde what you haue eaten to muche: you ſhall nowe bee hole, bycaufe I haue taken this from you. But if he intende yet further to deceaue the pacient, he perfaudeth hym that his *Zemes* is angry, eyther bycaufe he hath not buylded hym a chapell, or not honored hym religiouſly, or not dedicated vnto him a groue or garden. And if it too chaunce that the ſicke perfon dye, his kinſfolkes by wytcheſcrafte enforce the deade to confeſſe whether he dyed by naturall deſtynye, or by the neglygence of the *Boitios*, in that he had not fasted as he ſhulde haue doone, or not myniftriſt a conuenient medicine for the diſease. Soo that yf this phiftian bee founde fautie, they take reuenge of hym. Of the ſtones or bones which theſe *Boitii* carey in theyr mouthes, yf the women can coome by them, they keepe them religiouſly beleauinge them to bee greaſt effectuall to helpe women whiche traueyle with chylde: And therfore honoure them as they doo theyr *Zemes*. For dyuers of th[e]inhabitantes, honour *Zemes* of dyuers faſhions. Sume make theim of woodde, as they were admynyſhed by certeine viſions apperinge vnto them in the wooddes. Others, whiche haue receaued anſweſe of them amonge the rockes, make them of ſtone and marble. Sum they make of rooteſ to the ſimilitude of ſuche as appeare to them when they are gathering the rooteſ cauled *Ages*, wherof they make theyr breaſte, as we haue ſayde before. Theſe *Zemes*, they beleue to ſend plentie and trutefulnes of thoſe rooteſ, as the antiquitie beleued ſuche fayries or ſpirites as they cauled *Dryades*, *Hamadryades*, *Satyros*, *Panes*, and *Nereides*, to haue the cure and prouidence of the ſea, wooddes, and ſprynges and fountainaynes, affiſhinge to every thyng, theyr peculiur goddes. Euen ſoo doo th[e]inhabitantes of this Ilande attribute a *Zemes* to every thyng, ſuppoſinge the ſame to gyue eare to theyr invocations. Wherfore, as often as the kynges alſo counſaile of their *Zemes* as concerning their warres, increafe of fruites or ſcarfnes, or health and ſickenes, they enter into the houſe dedicate to theyr *Zemes*, where, ſnuffing vp into theyr noſethryls the pouder of the herbe cauled *Cohobba* (wherwith the *Boitii* are dryuen into a furie) they ſay that immediatly they ſee the houſeſ turne topfy turuye, and men to walke with theyr heelis vpwarde: of ſuche force is this pouder vtterly to take away all ſenſe. As ſoone as this maddenſe caſeth, he embrafeth his kneeſ with his armeſ, holdyng downe his heade. And when he hath remayned thus a whyle astonyfshed, he lyſteth vp his heade as one that came newe owt of ſleepe: And thus loking vp towarde heauen, Fyrſt he fumbelēth certeine confounded woordes with hym ſelue. Then certeine of the nobilitie or chiefe gentelmen that are about him (for none of the common people are admytted to theſe myſteries) with lowde voyces gyue tokenes of reioyng that he is returned to them from the ſpeache of the *Zemes*, demaudyng of hym what he haþe ſeen. Then hee openinge hiſ

Phantasies
proceedyng of
feare.
Al is not good that
is oulde

Syngyng and
playng

Preeſtes and
diuines.
Phiftians.
Ignorance is
noryſhed with
ſuperftition.

Fastyng and
outward clenlynes.

A pouder of
maruelous effectu.

Iuggelyng.
A ſtrange maner
of curing

46

Angery gods
They make the
deade to ſpeak.

Diuers Idols
ſundry ſhape.

Fayries or ſpirites
of the gentyles.
Peculiar goddes.
They aſke
conſaile of Idols

The pouder of the
herbe Cohobba.

Secrete myſteries.

Reuelations.

The spirite of
Apollo.
The SibillesI haue harde the
lyke of other in
Englalande.Hungryng and
lecherous gods.Children with two
crownes

47

Wanderinge
Images.

Mediatours.

A woman zemes
of great poure.Fyue dayes
fastinge.A maruelous
illusion of the
deuyll.
The deuyll
sumtyme telleth
truthe.The Idols
abolysched.

mouthe, doateth that the *Zemes* spake to hym duryng the tyme of his traunce: declaring that he had reuelations eyther concerningc victorye or destruction: famyne or plentie: health or syckenes, or what soe euer happeneth fyrt on his toonge. Nowe (moste noble Prince) what neede you hereafter to marueyle of the spirite of *Apollo* soo shakynge his Sibilles with extreme furie? Yowe had thought that the superstitious antiquite hadde peryshed. But nowe wheras I haue declared thus much of the *Zemes* in generall, I thought it not good to lette passe what is sayde of them in particuler. They saye therefore, that a certeyne kyng cauled *Guamaretus*, had a *Zemes* whose name was *Corochotum*: who (they say) was often tymes woont to descende from the hyghest place of the house where *Guamaretus* kepte hym faste bounde. They affirme, that the caufe of this his breakyng of his bandes and departure, was eyther to hyde hym selfe, or to goo feele for meate, or els for the acte of generation: And that sumtymes beinge offended, that the kyng *Guamaretus* had byn negligent and flacke in honouringe hym, he was woont to lye hyd for certeyne dayes. They say also that in the kynges vylage there are sumtyme chyldren borne hauing two crownes which they suppose to bee the children of *Corochotum* the *Zemes*. They fayne lykewyse, that *Guamaretus* beinge ouercome of his enemies in the battayle, and his vylage with the palacie consumed with fyre, *Corochotus* brake his bandes and was afterwarde founde a furlonge of safte and withowte hurte. He hath also an other *Zemes* cauled *Epileguanita*, made of woodde, in shape lyke a four footed beafe: who also is sayde, often tymes to haue gonnes from the place where he is honoured, into the wooddes. As soone as they perceave him to bee gonnes, a great multitude of them gather togyther to seeke hym with deuote prayres: And when they haue fownde hym, bryng hym home religiouly on theyr shulders to the chappel dedicated vnto hym. But they coomplayne that fence the commynge of the Christian men into the Ilande, he fledde for all togyther, and coulde never fence bee founde, wherby they diuided the destruction of theyr countrey. They honoured an other *Zemes* in the lykenes of a woman, on whom wayted twoo other lyke men, as they were ministers to her. One of these, executed th[e] office of a mediatour to the other *Zemes* which are vnder the power and commaundement of this woman, to rayfe wyndes, clouder, and rayne. The other is also at her commaundemente a messenger to the other *Zemes* whiche are ioyned with her in gouernaunce, to gather togyther the waters whiche faule from the hygh hylles to the valleys, that beinge loosed, they may with force burst owte into greate fluddes and overflowe the countrey if the people doo not gyue due honoure to her Image. There remayneth yet one thyng worthy to bee noted, wherwith we wyll make an ende of this booke. It is a thyng well knownen, and yet fresshe in memory amoung the inhabitanentes of the Ilande, that there was sumetyme two kynges (of the which one was the father of *Guarionexius* of whom we made mention before) which were woont to abyteyn fye dayes togyther continually from meate and drinke, to knowe sumwhat of theyr *Zemes* of thynges to coome: And that for this fastyng beinge acceptable to theyr *Zemes*, they receaved answere of them, that within fewe yeares, there shuld coome to the Ilande a nation of men couered with apparell, which shulde destroye al the customes and cerymonyes of the Iland, and eyther slay all theyr chyldren, or bryng them into seruitude. The common sort of the people, vnderstoode this oracle to bee mente of the Canibales. And therefore when they had any knowlage of theyr comming, they euer fledde, and were fully determyned neuer more [to] aduenture the battayle with them. But when they sawe that the Spanyardes had entered into the Ilande, confultinge amoung them felues of the matter, they concluded that this was the nation which was ment by th[e] oracle. Wherin, theyr opinion deceaued them not. For they are nowe all subiecte to the Christians, all suche beinge slayne as stooberney refisted. Nor yet remayneth there anye memory of theyr *Zemes*: for they are al brought into Spayne, that we myght bee certified of theyr illusions of euyl spirites and Idoles, the which yowe yowre selfe (most noble Prince) haue feene and felte when I was presente with yowe. I let passe many thynges bycause yow put me in remembrance that to morowe yowe take yowre iorney towarde yowre countrey, to bryng home the queene yowre aunte, whom yowe accompanayd hether at the commaundemente of kyng Frederyke yowre vncle. Wherfore I byd yowre farewell for this tyme, defyryng yowre to remember yowre *Martyr*, whome yowe haue compelled in the name of the kyng yowre vncle, to gather these fewe thynges owte of a large feilde of hystoryes.

TH E TENTH AND LASTE BOOKE OF THE FYRST DECADE,
as a conclusion of the former booke:

Wrytten to Inacus Lopez Mendocius, countie of Tendilla, and viceroye of Granata.



The fyrf^t begynnynge and newe attempte, when *Colonus* had taken vpon hym th[e]enteprise to search the Ocean sea, I was ernestly moued and reuoyred by the letters of certeyne of my frendes and noble men of Rome to wryte suche thynges as shoulde happen. For they whyfpered with greate admiracion, that where as there were many newe landes founde, and nations which liued naked and after the lawe of nature, they coulde here noo certentie therof, beinge greatly desyrous of the same. In this meane tyme had fortune ouerthrowne *Ascanius* (his brother Lodouike beinge cast owt of Mylayne by the frenchmen) whose autoritie wold not suffer me to bee idle, but euer to haue my pen in hande. To hym I wryte the twoo fyrl bookes of this decade, befylde many other of my hyd commentaries whiche yowe shall see shortly. Fortune dyd noo lesse withdrawe my mynde frome wrytyng, then disturbe *Ascanius* from power. As he was toffed with contrary stormes and ceased to persuade me, euen so slacked my feruentnes to enquire any further, vntyl the yeare of Christe. 1500. When the court remayned at *Granata* where yowe are viceroye: At which time Lodouike the Cardinall of Aragonie, neuie to kyng F[rederick] the brother syde (beinge at *Granata* with the queene *Parthenopea* the syster of oure catholike kyng) brought me kyng Frederikes letters, wherby he exhorted me to fynyshe the other booke whiche folowed the twoo eyffell bookes, which I wryte to *Ascanius*. For they both acknowleaged that they hadde the copie of all that I wryte to cardinall *Ascanius*. And albeit that euen then I was sicke (as yowe knowe) yet tooke I the burden vpon me, and applyed my selfe to wrytyng. I haue therfore chosen these fewe thynges, owt of a greate heape of suche as seemed to me most worthy to bee noted amone the large wrytynges of the autoures and searchers of the same. Wherfore, forasmuch as yowe haue endeououred to wreste owt of my handes the hole exemple of al my woorkes, to adde the same to the innumerable volumes of yowre librarie, I thought it good nowe to make a breefe reherfall of thos thynges which were done from that yeare of a thowfande and fyue hundred, euen vnto this yeare which is the tenth from that. For I entende to wryte more largelye of these thynges hereafter, if god graunte me lyfe. I hadde wrytten a hole booke by it selfe of the supersticions of the people of the Ilande, supposing therewith to haue accomplished the hole Decade confislyng of tenne bookes. But I haue added this to the tenthe as a perpendicular lyne, and as it were a backe guyde or rerewarde to the other: So that yowe may knytte the fyrf^t tenthe, to the nynthe, and impute this to occupie the place of the tenthe to fyll vp the Decade. This order haue I appoynted, lest I shulde bee compelled often times to wryte ouer the hole woorke, or sende yowe the same defaced with blottes and interlynyng. But nowe let vs coome to oure purpoſe. The shipp masters and maryners ranne ouer many coastes duryng these tenne yeares: But euer folowed suche as were fyrf^t fownde by *Colonus*. For rasing continually alonge by the tracte of *Paria*, which they beleue to bee parte of the firme lande or continent of easte India, sume of them chaunced vpon certeyne newe landes towarde the easte, and sume towarde the weste, in which they fownde bothe gould and frankenfence. For they brought from thense many iewels and ouches of golde, and greate plentie of frankenfence, whiche they had of the people of thos countreys, partly for exchange of sume of oure thynges, and partly by force, ouercommynge them by warre. Yet in sume places, althoug̃ they bee naked, they ouercame oure men, and slewe hole armes. For they are exceeding fierce, and v̄e venomous arrowes, and longe staues lyke iauelens, made harde at the ende with fyre. They fownde many beastes, both creeping and foure footed, muche differinge from owres, variable and of sundrye shapes innumerable: yet not hurtfull, excepte Lyons, Tygers, and Crocodiles. This I meane in sundry Regions of that greate lande of *Paria*: but not in the Ilandes: Noo not so much as one. For all the beastes of the Ilandes, are meeke and withoute herte, except men which (as wee haue sayde) are in many Ilandes deououers of mans fleſſe. There are also dyuers kyndes of foulſe. And in many places bates of such bygnes, that they are equall with turtle doves. These bates, haue often tymes assauled men in the nyght in theyr sleepe, and soo bytten them with their venomous teethe, that they haue byn therby almoste dryuen to madnes, in soo much that they haue byn compelled to fyfe from ſuch places, as from rauenous harpies. In an other place, where certeyne of them ſlepte in the nyght ſeaſon on the fandes by the ſea syde, a monſter commynge owt of the ſea, came vpon one of them ſcreatly and carayed hym away by the myddelſte owt of the fight of his felowes to whom he cryed in vayne for helpe vnyll the beaſte lepte into the ſea with her praye.

The Lawe of
nature.

Milayne in the
hands of the
frenchmen

48

Epistel books

The historie
following:
conteyneth
actes of ten yeare

Paria, part of the
firme land of East
India

Golde and
frankenſence.

The fiercenes of
the naked people.
Innumerable
beaſtes vnyke
vnto oures.

Nothing hurtfull
in the Ilandes.

Bates as bigge
as turtle doves.

A man deououred
of a monſter of
the ſea

The Spaniardes
profer them selues
to subdue the
newe landes.

Note the largenes
of the newe landes.

Commandacion of
the Spaniardes.

49
Antipodes.

The autours
excuse.

Hispaniola.

The nature of the
place altereth
the forms and
qualities of
thynges.
Wheate.
Herbes.
Catayle.
Hogges.

Plentie of beastes
and foule.

Cuba, is an
Ilande.

The description
of Cuba.

The Iland of
Burichema or
S. Iohannis.
Golde mynes

The order of
woorkynges in the
golde mynes.
The kynges
bryngre their
subiectes
to woorke in
the golde mynes.
Tyllage.

It was the kynges pleasure that they shulde remayne in these landes, and buyldē townes and fortresses. Where vnto they were so wel wyllyng, that dyuers profered them selues to take vpon them the subduing of the lande, makynge great fute to the kynges that they might bee appoynted thereto. The coaste of this tracte is excedyng greate and large: and the Regions and landes therof extende maruelous farre: Soo that they affirme the continent of thei Regions with the Ilandes abowte the same, to bee thryve as bygge as al Europe, besyde those landes that the Portugales haue fownde southwarde, whiche are also excedyng large. Therfore doubtlesse Spayne hathe deserued greate prayse in these owre dayes, in that it hath made knownen vnto us so many thowfandes of *Antipodes* which leye hyd before and vnknownen to oure forefathers: And hath thereby mynystryed so large matter to wryte of, to suche lerned wytties as are desyrous to sette furthe knowleage to the commoditie of men: to whom I opened a way when I gathered these thynges rudely to gyther as yowe fee: The which, neuerthelesse I trut hewe wyl take in good parte, awell for that I can not adourne my rudenes with better vesture, as also that I never tooke penne in hande to wryte lyke an historiographer, but only by epistles scriebled in haste, to satifise them, from whose comandementes I myght not drawe backe my foote. But now I haue digressed enowghe. Let vs nowe therefore retorne to *Hispaniola*. Ouere men haue founde by experiance, that the breade of the Iland is of fmaule strength to such as haue byn vfed to owr breade made of wheate: And that theyr stren[gh]thes were much decayed by vfyng of the same. Wherfore the king hath of late commauded that wheate shulde bee fowen there in diuers places and at fundry tymes of the year. It growtheth into holowe reedes, with fewe eares, but those verye bygge and frutefull. They synde the lyke softenes or delicatenes to bee in herbes, which growe there to the heighe of corne. Neat or cattall, becoome of bygger stature and excedyng fat, but theyr fleshe is more vnfauery, and theyr bones (as they say) eyther withowte marye, or the same to bee verye wateryfhe. But of hogges and swyne, they affirme the contrarye, that they are more holfoome and of better taste, by reaon of certeyne wylde frutes whiche they eate, beinges of muche better nooryfhemet then maste. There is almost none other kynd of fleshe commonly soulde in the market. The multitude of hogges, are exceedingly encreased, and becoome wylde as foone as they are owte of the swyneheades keepynge. They haue suche plentie of beastes and foules, that they shall hearefter haue noo neede, to haue any brought from other places. Th[e] jncrease of all beastes, growe bygger then the broode they came of, by reaon of the rankenes of the pature, althowgh theyr feadynge bee only of graffe, withowte eyther barley or other grayne. But wee haue fayde enough of *Hispaniola*. They haue nowe fownde that *Cuba*, (which of longe tyme they thought to haue byn firme lande for the greate length therof) is an Ilande. Yet is it noo maruell that th[e] jnhabitantes them selues towldre oure men when they searched the length therof, that it was withowte ende. For this nacion being naked and contente with a lyttle, and with the limittes of theyr owne contrey, is not greatly curyous to know what theyr neyghbours doo, or the largenes of theyr dominion. Nor yet knewe they if there were any other thinge vnder heauen, besyde that whiche they walked on with their feete. *Cuba*, is frome the Easte into the Weste, muche longer then *Hispaniola*: And in breadth frome the Northe to the Southe, much leſſe then they supposid at the fyrſt: for it is very narowe in respecte to the length: And is for the moſte part, very frutefull and pleasaunt, Eastwarde not farre from *Hispaniola*, there lyethe an Ilande, leſſe then *Hispaniola* more then by the halfe, which oure men cauled *Sancti Iohannis*, beinge in maner square. In this they founde excedyng ryche golde mynes. But beinge nowe occupied in the golde mynes of *Hispaniola*, they haue not yet ſent labourers into that Iland. But the plentie and reuenewe of golde of al other Regions, gyue place to *Hispaniola*, where they gyue them selues in maner to none other thyngē then to gather golde, of which woorke this order is appoynted. To every ſuch wyttie and ſkylfull man as is put in trufe to bee a furuoier or ouerfeer of theſe woorkes, there is affigned one or more kynges of the Ilande with their ſubiectes. Theſe kynges accordingy to theyr league, coome with their people at certeyne tymes of the year, and reforte every of them to the golde myne to the which he is affigned: where they haue all maner of dygginge or myninge tooles deliuereſ them: And every kyng with his men, haue a certeyne rewarde alowed them for theyr labour. For when they departe from the mynes to fowyghe of corne, and other tyllage (wherunto they are addicte at certeyne other tymes, leaſte theyr foode ſhulde fayle them) they receaue for theyr laboure, one a ierken, or a dublet, an other a sherte, an other a cloke or a cappe. For they nowe take pleafure in theſe thynges, and goo no more naked as they were wont too doo. And thus they viſe the helpe and laboure of the inhabitants both for the tyllage of theyr ground, and in theyr gold mines as thoughe they were theyr feruautes or bondemen. They beare this yoke of feruitude with an euyl wyl: but yet they beare it. They caule theſe hyred labourers, *Anaborias*. Yet the kynges doth not ſuffer that they ſhulde bee vfed as bondemen: And onely at his pleafure they are fette at libertie or appoynted to woorke. At ſuche tyme as they are cauled together of theyr kynges to woorke (as ſouldiers or pioners are aſſembled of theyr centurians) many of them ſtele away to the mountaynes and wooddes, where they lie lurkyng, beinge content for that tyme to lyue with wyld frutes, rather then to take the paynes to laboure. They are docible and apte to leerne, and haue nowe vterly forgotten theyr ownde ſuperficiions. They beleue godly, and beare wel in memory ſuche thynges as they haue learned of oure faſth. Theyr kynges children are brought vp with the chiefest of oure

50

They abhorre
laboure.
They are docible.

The kynges
chylđren.

men, and are instructed in letters and good maners. When they are growen to mans age, they sende them home to therre countrys to bee exemple to other, and especially to gouerne the people if theyr fathers bee dead that they maye the better set forthe the Christian Religion, and keepe therre subiectes in loue and obedience. By reasoun whereof, they coome nowe by faire meanes and gentell perfusions to the mynes which lye in twoo Regions of the Ilande aboue thirtie myles distante frome the citie of *Dominica*: wherof the one is cauled *Sancti Christophori*: And the other being distante aboue foure score and tenne myles, is cauled *Cibaua*, not farre from the cheefe hauen cauled *Portus Regalis*. These regions are very large: In the which in many places here and there, are founde sumtyme euyn in the vpper crust of the earth and sumtyme amonthe the stones, certeyne rounde pieces or plates of golde, sumtyme of smaule quantite, and in sum places of great weyght: In so muche that there hath byn founde rounde pieces of three hundredth pounde weyght, and one of three thousande, three hundredth and tenne pounde weyght: The whiche (as yowе harde) was fente hole to the kynge in that shyppe in the which the governour *Boadilla* was comming home into Spayne, the shyppe with all the men beinge drowned by the way, by reasoun it was ouer laden with the weight of golde and multytude of men. Albeit, there were moo then a thowefande percons whiche fawne and handeled the piece of golde. And wheras here I speake of a pounde, I doo not meane the common pounde, but the summe of the ducate of golde, with the coyne cauled *Triens*, which is the thyrdre parte of a pounde, whiche they caule *Pesus*. The sum of the weyght hereof, the Spanyardes caule *Castellum Aureum*. Al the golde that is dygged in the mountaynes of *Cibaua* and Porte Regale, is caried to the towre of Conception, where shoppes with al thynges apperteyninge are redy furnysched to fyne it, melte it, and caste it into wedges. That doone, they take the kynges portion therof, whiche is the fyfe parte, and soo restore to every man his owne whiche he gotte with his labour. But the golde whiche is fownde in faynt Christophers myne and the Region there aboue, is caried to the shoppes whiche are in the vylage cauled *Bonauentura*. In these twoo shoppes, is molten yerely, aboue three hundredth thousand pounde weight of golde. If any man bee knownen deceatfully to keepe backe any portion of golde, wherof he hathe not made the kynges officers pryue, he forfitheth the same for a fyne. There chaunce amonthe them often tymes many contentions and controuerries, the whiche onlesse the magistrates of the Ilande doo synfyse, the case is remoued by appellation to the hyghe counsayle of the courte, from whose sentencce it is not lawfull to apeele in all the dominions of Castyle. But lette vs nowe returne to the newe landes frome whence we haue digressed. They are innumerable, dyuers, and exeadyng fortunate. Wherfore the Spanyardes in these owre dayes, and theirre noble enterpryses, doo not gyue place ethir to the factes of *Saturnus*, or *Hercules*, or any other of the ancient princes of famous memorie which were canonized amonthe the goddes cauled *Heroes* for theyr searchinge of newe landes and regions, and bringinge the fame to better culture and ciuilite. Oh God: howe large and faire shal owre posteritie see the Christian Religion extended? Howe large a campe haue they nowe to wander in, whiche by the trewe nobilitie that is in theym, or moued by vertue, wyl attempte ethir to deferue lyke prayse amonthe men, or reputacion of well doinge before god. What I conceaue in my mynde of these thynges, I am not able to expresse with penne or tonge. I wyll nowe therfore foo make an ende of this perpendiculer conclusion of the hole Decade, as myndinge hereafter to searche and gather evry thyng particulerlye, that I maye at further leafare wryte the same more at large. For *Colonus* the Admirall with foure shippes, and a hundredth threecore and tenne men appoynted by the kynge, discouered in the yeare of Christe. 1502. the lande ouer ageynste the weste corner of *Cuba*, distant frome the same aboue a hundredth and thirtie leagues: In the myddest of which tracte, lyeth an Ilande cauled *Guanassa*. Frome hense he directed his vyage backewarde towards the Easte by the shore of that coast, supposinge that he shulde haue founde the coastes of *Paria*: but it chaunced otherwyse. It is sayd also that *Vincentius Agnes* (of whom we haue spoken before) and one *Johannes Diaz* (with dyuers other of whose vyages I haue as yet no certeyne knowlage) haue ouer runne those coastes. But if God graunt me life, I trust to know the truthe hereof and to aduertise yowе of the same. Thus fare ye well.

The two chiefe
golde mynes
of hispaniola.

Golde founde in
the vpper part of
the earth.

A piece of golde
weighing three
thousande three
hundredth and ten
pounds.
A coastly ship
wrake.

Pesus.

The synynge and
distribution of
golde.

Three hundredth
thousand weyght
of gold molten
yerely in
hispaniola.

Controuerries

The newe landes.

The Spanyardes
noble enterpryses
are not inferiour
to the actes of
Hercules or
Saturnus etc.
Enlarging of the
Christian Religion.
The originall of
trewe nobilitie.

51
The Ilande of
Guanassa

The vyage of
Johannes Diaz.



¶ The seconde Decade foloweth.

¶ THE FYRST BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE,
TO LEO BYSSHOP OF ROME, THE TENTHE OF THAT NAME,
Of the supposed Continent or firme lande.



West Antipodes.

The increase of
the Christian
congregation.

*Christophorus
Colonus.*
Of landes distante
from the
Equinoctiall from
fysse degrees to
ten.
The death of
Colonus.
A general lycence.

The nauigation of
Alphonus Fogeda.

52
*Portus
Carthaginis.*

The Region of
Caramairi.
People of goodly
stature.

Apples whiche
turne into
wormes.

ENSE the tyme that *Galeatus Butrigarius* of Bononie, and *Johannes Cursius* of Florence (moste holye father) came to the catholyke kynge of Spayne, the one, of yowre holynes ambasage, and th[e]other for th[e]affaires of his common welth, I was euer for the moste parte in theyr coompanie, and for theyr vertues and wyfedoome, had theym in greate reverence. And wheras they were greatly gyuen to stude, and continuall reueluinge of dyuers autours, they chaunced vppon certeyne bookees negligently let flyppe owte of my handes, entreatinge of the large landes and Regions hetherto lyng hyd, and almost west *Antipodes*, fownde of late by the Spanyardees. Yett beinge allured and delited with the newenes and strangesnes of the matter althowgh rudely adourned, they commended the same: Therwith ernestely defyringe me in theyr owne names, and requyring me in the name of yowre holynes, to addes here vnto all suche thynges as were fownde after that tyme, and to gyue them a copie thereof to fende to yowre holynes, that yowre myght therby vnderstande, bothe howe greate commoditie is chaunced

to the progenye of mankynde, as also increase of the militante congregation in these owre dayes, by the fortunate enterpryses of the kynges of Spayne. For lyke as rafed or vpainted tables, are apte to receave what formes soe euer are fyrt drawnen theron by the hande of the paynter, euen soe these naked and simple people, doo soone receave the customes of owe Religion, and by conuersation with owe men, shake of theyr fierce and natvie barbaroufnes. I haue thought it good therfore to satifise the request of these wylde men, especially vinge th[e]autoritie of yowre name, wherunto not to haue obeyed, I shulde esteeme my selfe to haue commytted a heynous offence. Wherefore I wyl nowe brefely reherfe in order, what hyd coastes the Spanyardees ouerranne, who were the autours therof, where they rested, what further hope they brought, and fynallye what great thynges those tractes of landes doo promesse in tyme to coome. In the declaration of my decade of the Ocean, which is nowe printed and dispersed throughwote Christendome vnwares to me, I described howe *Christophorus Colonus* fownde those Ilandes wherof we haue spoken, and that turnyng from thense towarde the lefte hande southwarde, he chaunced into greate regions of landes, and large feas, distant from the Equinoctiall lyne, onely from fyue degrees to tenne: where he founde brode ryuers and exceedinge hygh mountaynes couered with snowe and harde by the sea bankes, where were many commodious and quyet hauenis. But *Colonus* being now departed owte of this lyfe, the kyng beganne to take care, howe those landes myght be inhabited with Christian men to th[e]increafe of owe fauth: Where vppon he gaue licence by his letters patentes to al such as wolde take the matter in hand, and especially to two, wherof *Diego Nicuesa* was one, and the other was *Alphonfus Fogeda*. Wherfore about the Ides of December, *Alphonfus* departinge fyrt with three hundredth fouldiers from the Ilande of *Hispaniola* (in the which wee sayde the Spanyardees had builded a citie, and planted theyr habitacion) and saylynge in maner full southe, he came to one of the hauenis founde before whiche *Colonus* named *Portus Carthaginis*, bothe bycause of the Ilande standyng ageynste the course of the streame, and also that by reaon of the largenes of the place and bendyng fydies, it is muche lyke to the hauen of Spaine cauled *Carthago*. Th[e]inhabitantes caule the Ilande *Codgo*, as the Spanyarde caule the Ilande of theyr hauen, *Scombria*. This Region is cauled of the inhabitantes *Caramairi*: In the which they affirme bothe the men and women to bee of goodly stature, but naked. The men haue theyr heare cutte rownde by theyr eares, but the women were it longe. Bothe the men and women are very good archers. Owe men fownde certen trees in this prouince, which bore greate plente of sweete apples, but hurtful, for they turne into wormes when they are eaten. Especially the shadowe of the tree, is contagious,

for fuche as sleepe vnder it any tyme, haue theyr headdes swolne and lufe theyr fight. But if they sleepe but a whyle, theyr syght commeth ageyne after a fewe dayes. This porte is dystant fourre hundredre fystie and syxe myles from that parte of *Hispaniola* which the Spanyardes caule *Beata*, in the which also they furnyshe them selues when they prepare anye vyage to feeke other newe landes. When *Fogeda* had entered into the hauen, he inauaded, flewe, and spoyled the people, whome he founde naked and scattered. For they were gyuen hym for a praye, by the kynges letters patentes bycause they hadde bin before tyme cruel ageynst the Christians, and coulde neuer bee allured to permittē them quietly to coome within theyr dominions. Here they founde gold, but in no greate quantitie, nor yet that pure. They make of it, certeyne brest plates and brooches, which they weare for coomelynes. But *Fogeda* not content with these spoyles, vinge certeyne captiues whiche he had taken before, for guydes, entered into a vyllage twelue myles distante frome the sea syde further into the lande, into the whiche they were fledde whom he fyrt inauaded. Here he founde a naked people, but apte to warre. For they were armed with targettes, shieldes, longe swoordes made of wood, and bowes with arrowes typte with bone, or hardened with fyre. As soone as they had espyed owe men, they with their gestes whom they had receaued, assayled them with desperatē myndes, beinge thereto more ernestly prouoked, beholding the calamitie of these whiche fledde vnto them, by the violence doone to theyr women and chyldren, in the spoyle and flawghter. In this confilte owe men had the ouerthrowe: In the which, one *Johannes de Lacoffa* (beinge in autoritie nexte vnto *Fogeda* the capitayne, and also the fyrtē that gathered golde in the sandees of *Vraba*) was slayne with fystie soulidiers. For these people infecte theyr arrowes with the deadly poyson of certeyne herbe. The other with theyr capitayne *Fogeda* beinge discomfited, fledde to the shypes. Whyle they remayned thus in the hauen of *Carthago* forowfull and penfyue for the lufe of their companions, the other capitayne *Diego Nicuesa*, (whom they lefte in *Hispaniola*, preparing hym selfe towarde the vyage in the hauen *Beata*) came to them with fyue shippes and feuen hundredre foure score and fyteene menne. For the greater number of soulidiers, folowed *Nicuesa*, both bycause free libertie was gyuen them to choose which of the captyaynes them lyf, and also that by reaon of his age, he was of greater autoritie: But especially bycause the rumoure was that *Beragua* beinge by the kynges commission appoynted to *Nicuesa*, was rycher in golde then *Vraba* assignd to *Alphonfus Fogeda*. Therfore, at the arryuall of *Nicuesa*, they consulted what was besle to bee doone: And determyned fyrtē to reuenge the deathe of their felowes. Where vppon, settynge theyr battayle in arraye, they marched in the nyght towarde them whiche flew *Coffa* with his coompanions. Thus fealynge on them vnwares in the last watche of the nyght, and encompasynge the vyllage where they laye, confisfyng of a hundredre howfes and more, hauynge also in it thryfe as many of theyr neyghbours as of them felowes, they set it on fyre, with diligent watche that none myght escape. And thus in shorte tyme they brought hem and theyr howfes to ashess, and made them pay the rausome of bludde with bludde. For of a greate multitude of men and women, they spared onely fyxe chyldren, al other being destroyed with fyre or sword except fewe which escaped priuilye. They lerned by the referred chyldren, that *Coffa* and his felowes were cutte in pieces and eaten of them that flew them. By reaon wherof, they suppose that these people of *Caramairi* tooke theyr originall of the *Caribes* otherwyse cauled *Canibales*. Here they founde sume golde amoung the ashess. For the hunger of golde, dyd noo leffe encorage owe men to aduenture these perels and labours then dyd the poiffyngē of the landes. These thynges thus synfyshed, and the death of *Coffa* and his felowes reuenged, they returned to the hauen. After this, *Fogeda* whiche came fyrt, fyrt lykewyse departinge with his army to seeke *Vraba*, commytted to his gouernaunce, fayled by an Ilande cauled *Fortis*, lyngē in the mydwaye betwene *Vraba* and the hauen of *Carthago*. In to the which descendinge, he fownde it to bee an Ilande of the Canibales, brynginge with hym frome themē two men and feuen women: for the residue escaped. Here he fownde in the cotages of themē that fledde, a hundredre foure score and tenne drammes of golde, caste and wrought in dyuers formes. Saylynge forwarde from hense, he came to the Easte coastes of *Vraba*, whiche th[e]inhabitantes caule *Caribana*, from whence the Caribes or Canibales of the Ilandes are sayde to haue theyr name and original. Here he beganne to buylde a forteſſe, and a vyllage nere vnto the same, therein intendenyng to place theyr fyrt habitacion. Shortly after, beinge instructed by certeyne captiues that there was aboue twelue myles further within the lande, a certeyne vyllage cauled *Trufi*, hauinge in it a ryche golde myne, he determyned to destroye the vyllage. To the which when he came, he fownde th[e]inhabitantes redye to defende theyr ryght: And that so stoutly, that encouteringe with themē, he was repulſed with shame and damage. For these people also, vse bowes and venomous arrowes. Within a fewe dayes after, beinge enforced for lacke of vtyaſles to inuaide an other vyllage, he hym selfe was ftryken in the thyghe with an arrowe. Sume of his felowes say, that he was thus wounded of one of th[e]inhabitantes whose wyfe he had ledde awaye captiue before. They say also that he had fyrt frendly comoned with *Fogeda* for redemyngē of his wyfe, and had appoynted a day to bryngē a portion of golde for her rausome: And that he came at the daye assignd, not laden with golde, but armed with bowes and arrowes, with eyght other confetherate with hym, whiche had bin before partetakers of the iniuries doone to themē first at the hauen of *Carthago*, and afterward at the burnyng of the vyllage. In

A tree whose shadowe is hurtfull.

Fogeda his autoritie confirmed by the kynges letters patentes.

Warilyke people.

The Spanyardes haue the ouerthrowe.

Arrowes infected with poyson.

The nauigation of Diego Nicuesa.

The regions of *Vraba* and *Beragua*.

The Spanyardes reuengē the death of theyr companyona.

A greate slawghter.

Canibales.

The hunger of golde.
53

The Ilande *Fortis*

Wrought gold

Caribana.

A gold myne.
The Spanyardes are repulſed.

Fogeda is wounded.

Ransome.

Fogeda consumeth
by force of the
(venem.)

Beragua and
Vraba.
Nicuesa.

The goulfe Coiba.
Dyvers languages.

Bergantynes or
brigantynes.

Barnardino de
Calauera.

Ancisus.

54

Fogeda returneth
to hispaniola.

Famyne

A brigantine
drowned with
the stroke of a fyshe.

The Ilande Fortis.

Ancisus.
The Region of
Cuchibacoa.
Boium gatti.

Mountaynes
covered with
snowe.
Serra Neuata.
Os Draconis.

reuenge wheroft they had desperatly consecrated them felues to death. But the matter beinge knownen, the captyaine of this conspiracie was slayne of Fogeda his coompanions, and his wyfe deteyned in captiuicie. Fogeda also through the maliciousnes of the veneme, confummed and was dryed vp by lyttle and lyttle. Whyle these thynges chaunced thus, they espyed Nicuesa the other capitayne to whom Beragua the region of the west syde of Vraba, was assignd to inhabite. He gaue wynde to his sayles to take his vyage towarde Beragua, the day after that Fogeda departed owt of the hauen of Carthago. He with his army which he brought with hym, coasted euer alonge by the shore vntyll he came to the goulfe Coiba, whose kynges name is Careta. Here he founde theyr language to bee in maner nothyng lyke vnto that of Hispaniola or of the hauen of Carthago: wherby he perceaved that in this trakte there are many languages differinge from theyr owne bortherers. Nicuesa departinge frome Coiba, wente to the prouince or Lieuetenauntshippe of Fogeda his companion. Within a fewe dayes after he hym selfe enteringe into one of those marchaunt shippes whiche the Spanyardes caule Carauelas, commaunded that the bygger vessells, shulde folowe farre behynde. He tooke with hym two smale shippes commenly cauled bergantines or brygantynes. I haue thought it good in all the discource of these bookees, to vfe the common names of thinges, bicause I had rather bee playne then curious: especially forasmuche as there doo dayly araye manye newe thynges vnknownen to the antiquitie, wheroft they haue leste noo trewe names. After the departure of Nicuesa, there came a shyppe from Hispaniola to Fogeda, the capitayne wheroft, was one Barnardino de Calauera, who had stoulne the same from Hispaniola with three score men, withoute leaue or aduice of the Admirall and the other gouernours. With the vytayles whiche this shipp broughte he refreshed theym felues and sumwhat recovered theyr strengthes muche weakened for lacke of meate, Fogeda his companyons whyspred and muttered ageynste hym dayly more and more, that he fedde them furthe with vayne hope. For he had towld them that he left Ancisus in Hispaniola (whom he chose by the kynges commission to bee a Judge in causes, bycause he was lerned in the lawe) to coome shortly after him with a shipp laden with vytayles: And that he marueyled that he was not coome many dayes senfe. And herein he said nothing but trewth. For when he departed, he lefte Ancisus halfe redy to folowe hym. But his felowes supposing that all that he sayde of Ancisus had byn fayned, sume of them determyned priuile to steale away the twoo brigantynes frome Fogeda, and to returne to Hispaniola. But Fogeda hauing knowleage hereof, preuented theyr diuise. For leauyng the custodie of the forteſte with a certeyne noble gentleman cauled Franciso Pizarro, he hym selfe thus wounded, with a fewe other in his companie, entered into the shyppe wheroft we speake before, and sayled directly to Hispaniola, both to heale the wound of his thyghe if any remedy myght bee found, and also to knowe what was the cause of Ancisus taryinge: Leauing hope with his felowes (which were nowe brought from three hundred to three score, partly by famyne and partly by warre) that he wolde returne within the space of xv. dayes: prefcrabyng also a condition to Pizarro and his companions, that it shulde not bee imputed to them for treason to departe from thense if he came not ageyne at the day appoynted with vytayles and a newe supply of men. These xv. dayes beinge nowe past, whereas they could yet heare nothyng of Fogeda, and were dayly more and more oppresfed with sharpe hunger, they entered into the twoo brigantynes which were lefte, and departed from that land. And as they were nowe saylyng on the mayne fea towarde Hispaniola, a tempeste foodeynly arfyng, swalowed one of the brygantynes with all that were therein. Sum of theyr felowes affirme that they playnely sawe a fyfhe of houge greatenes swymmyng abowte the brygantyne (for those feas bryng furthe grete monsters) and that with a stroke of her tayle, she broke the rudder of the shyppe in peeces: which saylyng, the brigantyne beinge dryuen abowt by force of the tempeſt, was drowned not farre from the Ilande cauled Fortis, lyng betwene the coastes of the hauen Carthago and Vraba. As they of the other brygantyne wolde haue landed in the Ilande, they were dryuen backe with the bowes and arrowes of the fierce barbarians. Proceedyng therfore on theyr vyage, they mette by chaunce with Ancisus betweene the hauen of Carthago, and the Region of Cuchibacoa in the mouthe of the ryuer whiche the Spanyardes cauled Boium gatti, that is, the house of the catte, bycause they sawe a catte first in that place: and Boium, in the tonge of Hispaniola, is a house. Ancisus came wyl a shyppe laden with all thynges necessarye, bothe for meate and drynk, and apparell, bryngyng also with hym an other brigantine. This is he for whose comming the capitayne Fogeda looked for soo longe. He looled anker from Hispaniola in the Ides of September: And the fourth day after his departure, he espyed certeyne hyghe mountaynes, the whiche for the abundance of snowe which lyeth continually in the toppes therof, the Spanyardes cauled Serra Neuata, when Colonus the fyfth synder of thos Regions passed by the fame. The fyfte daye, he sayled by Os Draconis. They whiche were in the brygantyne, towld Ancisus that Fogeda was returned to Hispaniola. But Ancisus supposing that they had fayned that tale, commaunded them by th[e] authoritie of his commision to turne backe ageyne. The brigantiners obeyed and folowed hym: yet made they humble fute vnto hym that he wolde graunte them that with his faour they myght eyther goo ageyne to Hispaniola, or that he hym selfe wolde bryng them to Nicuesa: And that they woorle for his gentelnes declared towarde them in this behalfe, rewarde hym with twoo thoufande drammes of golde. For they were

ryche in golde, but poore in breade. But *Ancisus* assent to neyther of theyr requestes: affirmynge that he myght by no meanes goo anye other way then to *Vraba* the prouince assigned to *Fogeda*. Where vpon, by theyr conduct, he tooke his vyage directly toward *Vraba*. But nowe let it not seme tedious to yowre holynes to heare of one thyng worthy to bee remembred, which chaunced to this Lieuetenaunt *Ancisus* as he came thereth. For he also cast anker in the coastes of the region of *Caramairi* whiche wee sayde to bee famous by reasoun of the hauen of *Carthago*: and of the goodly stature, strength, and beautye of both men and women beinge in the same. Here he sent certeyne to goo alande on the shore, both to fetche fresshe water, and also to repaire the shippe boate which was fore broosid. In this meane tyme a greate multitude of the people of the countrey armed after theyr maner, came aboute owe men as they were occupied abowte theyr busynes, and stode in a redynes to feight, for the space of three dayes contynually: duryng whiche tyme, neyther durst they set vpon owe men, nor owe men assayle them. Thus bothe parties keepynge their arraye, stode styl three hole dayes the one gafynge on the other. Yet all this tyme owe men applied theri woorke, placinge the shippwrightes in the myddes of their armee. As they stode thus amased, twoo of owe compaunye wente to fyll theyr water pottes at the mouthe of the ryuer nere vnto them both, where foodenly there came furthe ageynste them a capitayne of the barbarians with ten armed men which incloſed them, and with terrible contenaunce bent theyr arrowes ageynste them, but shotte theym not of. One of owe men fledde: but the other remayned, caulyng his felowe ageyne and rebukyng hym for his fearefulnes. Then he spake to the barbarians in their owne language which he had lerned beinge conuerter with the captiues that were caryed from thenſe longe before. They marueylyng to here a straunger speake in their natvie tonge, put of their fiercenes and fell to frendly communication, demaudinge who were the capitaynes of that coompanie whiche were arryued in theyr lande. He answered that they were strangers paſſyng by: And that he marueyld why they wold attempte to dryue them from their coastes and disturbe theyr shypes: argyng them of follye and crueltie, and further threateninge their ruine and destruction, except they wold vfe them felues more frendly towarde them. For hee aduerterfide them that there wolde shortly coome into theyr lande armed men, in nomber lyke to the fandes of the ſea: And that to theyr vter deſtruacion, not only if they refyſt them not, but also excepte they receaued them and enterteyned them honorably. In the meane tyme *Ancisus* was enformed that his men were deteyned. Wherfore ſuſpectinge ſume deceate, he brought furth al his target men for feare of theyr venemous arrowes: And ſettinge them in battell arraye, he marched forwarde towarde them which ſleyed his men. But he which communid with the barbarians, gyuynge him a ſigne with his hande to proceude noo further, he ſleyed. And cauling to hym the other, he knewe that all was ſafe. For the barbarians profered him peace, bycaufe they were not they whom they ſuſpected them to haue byn: meanyng by *Fogeda* and *Nicufra*, who had ſpoyleſd the vylage ſtandinge there by the ſea fyde, and caryed away many captiues, and alſo burnte an other vylage further within the lande. And therefore (as they ſayde) the caufe of theyr comminge thether, was to reuenge thoſe iniuries, if by any meanes they coulde. Yet that they woulde not exercyſe theyr weapons ageynſte the innocentē. For they ſayde it was vngodly to feyght ageynſt any, not beinge prouoked. Layinge a parte therefore theyr bowes and arrowes, they enterteyned owe men gentelly, and gaue them great plentie of ſalted fyſhe and breade of their contrey: And ſyllid theyr veffels with fyder made of their contrey frutes and feedes, not inferior to wyne in goodnes. Thus *Ancisus* hauinge entered into frendfyſhp and made a league of peace with th[cl]inhabitantes of *Caramairi* whiche were before fore prouoked by other capitaynes, he lanched from that lande, and directed his courſe to *Vraba* by the Ilande *Fortis*, hauinge in his ſhippe a hundredth and fyftie fresshe men whiche were ſubſtitute in the place of ſuche as were deade. Alſo twelue mares, and manye ſwine, and other beaſtes both males and females for increaſe. Lykewyſe, fyftie pieces of ordinaunce, with a greate multytude of targettes, ſwoordes, iauelyns, and ſuche other weapons for the warres. But all this with euyl ſpeeđe and in an euyll hour. For as they were even nowe enteringe into the hauen, the gouernour of the ſhippe which ſatte at the helme, ſtoke the ſhippe vpon the fandes, where it was too fast encloſed, and beaten with the waues of the ſea, that it opened in the myddes, and al lost that was therin. A thyng ſurely miſerable to beholde. For of all the vtyales that they had, they fauied onely twelue barelles of meale, with a fewe chieſes, and a lytle byket brede. For al the beaſtes were drowned: And they them felues ſcaped hardly and haffe naked by helpe of the brigantine and ſhip boate, caryng with them only a fewe weapons. Thus they fell from one calamite into an other, beinge nowe more carefull fo rtheyr lyues then for golde. Yet beinge brought alyue and in health to that land which they ſoo greatly defyred, they coulde doo noo leſſe then to prouide for the ſuſteynynge of theyr bodyes, bycaufe they coulde not lyue onely by ayer. And wheras theyr owne ſayled, they muſt needs lyue by other mens. Yet amouge theſe ſoo many aduerſties, one good chaunce offered it ſelfe vnto them. For they founde, not farre from the ſea fyde, a groue of date trees, amouge the which, and alſo amouge the reke or weedes of the maryſhes, they eſpyed a multytude of wylde bores, with whose fleſhe they fed them felues wel certeine dayes. Theſe they ſay to bee leſſe then owres: And with ſoo ſhorte tayles, that they thought they had byn cutte of. They diſſer also from owres in theyr feete: for theyr hynder feete are hole vndiuided, and alſo withoute any

Riche in gold and
pors in breade.

The Region of
Caramairi

Feare on both
partes.

Ship wryghtes.

55

The vſe of
targettes agaſt
venemous arrowes

The barbarians
haue respect to
justice
Salted fyſhe.

Wyne of frutes
and ſeedes.

Vraba.

Artillerie.

Ancisus ſhip
wracke.

Meale, cheeſes,
and byket.

A groue of date
trees.

Wylde bores.

56

Apples of a
strange kynd

Cedars of Libane.

Sorbes are cauled
in french Cormier
they grow not in
Englante.
The frute cauled
Zizipha or IuubaCanibales.
Men of desperat
boldnes.The goulfe of
Vraba.The great ryuer
of Darien, faultert
into the goulfe of
Vraba.

Prayer and voweis.

The souldiers
make an othe.The barbarians
are dryuen to
flight.

57

Chestnuttis.

The ryuer of
Darien, but viii.
degrees from the
Equinoctial.Golde founde in a
thicket of reedes.

house. But they affirme that they haue proued by experiance their fleshe to bee of better taste and more holfoome then owres. Durynge this tyme, they fedde also of dates and the rotes of younge date trees, which they eate likewyse in Ciuite and *Granata* where they caule them *Palmitos*, of the leaues wherof they make biesomes in Rome. Sumetymes also, they eate of the appels of that Region, which haue the taste of prunes, and haue also stones in them, and are but lyttle and of redder colour. I suppose them to bee of that kynde wherof I eate in the citie of *Alexandria* in Egypt in the moneth of Aprell: The trees wherof, the Iewes that dwel there, beinge lerned in the lawe of Moyfes, affirme to bee the Ceders of Libane, which beare owlde fruitea and newe all the yeare as dothe the orange tree. These apples are good to bee eaten, and haue a certeyne sweetnes myxte with a gentell sharpnes, as haue the frutes cauled *Sorbes*. Th[e]inhabitantes plant these trees in theyr orchardes and garedens, and noorysche them with greate diligence as wee doo cherries, peaches, and quynses. This tree in leaues, heught, and trunke, is verye lyke vnto the tree that beareth the frute cauled *Zizipha*, which the Apothecaries caule *Iuuba*. But wheras now the wylde bores beganne to faille them, they were ageyne enforced to confutte and prouide for the tyme to coome. Where vpon with theyr hole army, they entered further into the land. The Canibales of this prouince, are moste experte archers. *Anicifus* had in his coompany, a hundredth men. They mette by the way with only three men of th[e]inhabitantes, naked, and armed with bowes and venomous arrowes, who without al feare, assayed our men fiercely, wounded manye, and slewe manye: And when they had emptied their quyuers, fledde as swystly as the wynde: For (as we haue sayde) they are exedyng fwyste of foote by reaon of theys looſe goinge from their chyldes age. They affirme that they leete flyppe no arrowe owte of theyr bowes in wayne. Oure men therfore returned the same waye that they came, much more infortunate then they were before and consulted amoung them selues to leaue that lande: especially because th[e]inhabitantes had ouerthrowne the fortrefe which *Fogeda* buylded, and had burnte thirtie houses of the vyllage, as soone as *Pizarrus* and his company lefte of *Fogeda*, had forsaken the lande. By this occasion therefore, beinge dryuen to seeke further, they had intelligence that the wels fyde of that goulfe of *Vraba*, was more frutefull and better to inhabite. Wherfore, they sent the one halfe of theyr men thither with the brigantine, and lefte the other nere to the sea syde on the easte part. This goulfe, is. xxiiii. myles in bredth: And howe muche the further it entereth into the firme lande, it is too muche the narrower. Into the goulfe of *Vraba*, there faule many ryuers: but one (as they say) more fortunate then the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypte. This ryuer is cauled *Darien*, vpon the bankes wherof, beinge verye frutefull of trees and grasse, they entred to playnte their newe colonie or habitacion. But th[e]inhabitantes maruelynge at the brygantie beinge bigger then theyr canoas, and specially at the fayles therof, fyrt sente away theyr chyldren and weakeſte forte of theyr people with theyr baggage and houſhouldē ſluſſe, and assembled all ſuſche toguther bothe men and women, as were meeke for the warres: Thus beinge armed with weapons and desperate myndes, they ſtoode in redynes to feight, and taried the comminge of owe men vpon a lyttle hyl, as it were to take th[e]aduantage of the grounde. Oure men iudged them to bee aboue fyue hundredth in nomber. Then *Anicifus* the capitayne of owe men, and Lieutenant in the steede of *Fogeda*, fettinge his men in order of battayle array, and with his hole coompany kneelinge on his knees, they al made humble prayers to god for the victorie, and a vowe to the Image of the blessed virgin whiche is honoured in Ciuite, by the name of *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, promysinge to fende her manye golden gyftes and a ſtranger of that contrey: alſo to name the vyllage *Sancta Maria Antiqua* after her name: lykewyſe to erecte a temple cauled by the ſame name: or at the leaſte to dedicate the king of that prouince his palacie to that vfe, if it fulde please her to affiſſe them in this daungerous enterpryſe. This doone, al the ſouldiers tooke an othe, that noo man ſhulde turne his backe to his enemies. Then the capytayne commaundinge them to bee in a redines with theyr targets and iauelens, and the trumptyer to blowe the battayle, they fiercely assayed theyr enemyes with a larome. But the naked barbarians, not longe able to abyde the force of owe men, were putte to flight, with theyr kyng and capitayne *Cemaccus*. Oure men entered into the vyllage, where they ſownde plentie of meate ſuſche as the people of the contrey vfe, ſufficiente to affiue theyr preſent hunger, as breade made of rootes, with certeine fruities vnylike vnto oweſ, whiche they referue for ſlore as wee doo cheſtnuttis. Of theſe people, the men are vterly naked: but the women from the nauell downewarde, are couered with a fyne clothe made of goſſampine cotton. This Region is vterly withoute any sharpenes of wynter. For the mouthe of this ryuer of *Darien*, is onyle eyght degrees diſtante from the *Equinoctial* lyne: So that the commone forte of owe men, ſcarce perceauie anye diſference in lengthe betwene the day and nyght all the hole yeaſ. But they are ignorant in astronomie, they can perceauie noo ſmaule diſference. Therfore wee neede neitheſe paſſe if the degree do differ ſum what from theyr opinion, for afmuſe as the diſference can not bee gre. The day after that they arryued at the lande, they ſayled alonge by the ryuer, where they ſownde a greate ſicket of ſedes continuinge for the ſpace of a myle in length ſupposing (as it chaunced in deede) that the bortherers there aboue which had fledde, had eyther lyne lurkyng there, or els to haue hyd theyr ſluſſe amoung those reedes: Where vpon, armynge them ſelues with theyr targettes, for feare of the people lyinge in ambuſſe, they ſearched the thicket diligenty,

and founde it withowte men, but replenysched with householde stoffe and golde. They sownde also a great multitude of sheetes, made of the sylke or cotton of the gossampine tree. Lykewyse dyuers kyndes of vessells and tooles made of woodde, and many of earth: Also many breste plates of gold and ouches wrought after theyr maner, to the sum of a hundredth and twoo pounde weight. For they also take pleasure in the bewtie of gold, and worke it very artificially, although it bee not the price of thynges amoung them as with vs. They haue it owte of other Regions for exchaunge of such thynges as theyr contrey bringeth furthe. For such Regions as haue plentie of breade and gossampine, lache golde: And suche as brynge furth golde, are for the most parte rowght with mountaynes and rockes, and therfore baren. And thus they exercise marchandies withoute the vfe of money. Reioysing therfore with double gladdenes, awell in that they sawe greate lykenes of golde, as also that fortune hadde offered them foo fayre and frutefull a contrey, they sent for theyr felowes whom they hadde leste before in the easte syde of the goule of *Vraba*. Yet sune faye that the ayer is there vnholosome, bycause that parte of the Region lyethe in a lowe valley enuironed with mountaynes and maryfles.

Sheetes of
gossampine.

Breste plates of
golde.

The golden
Regions, are for
the moste parte
baren.

THE SECONDE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE, *Of the supposed continent.*



Hauе described to yowre holynes where *Fogeda* with his coompany (to whome the large tractes of *Vraba* was assignd to inhabite) intended to fasten there foote. Lette vs nowe therfore leauе them of *Vraba* for a whyle, and returme ageyne to *Nicuesa* to whom the gouernance and Lieuetenauntehippe of the moſte large prouince of *Beragua* (beinge the weſte syde of the goule of *Vraba*) was appoynted. We haue declared howe *Nicuesa* departinge with one carauell and twoo brigantines frome *Vraba* the iurisdiction of his frende and companyon *Fogeda*, directed his course weſtwarde to *Beragua*, leauinge the bygger shippes ſumewhat behynde hym, to folowe hym a farre of. But he tooke thiſ diuile in an euyll howre. For he bothe loſte his felowes in the nyght, and went paſt the mouth of the ryuer of *Beragua*, which he chieflye fought. One *Lupus Olanus* a Cantabrian, and gouernour of one of the greate ſhippes, had the conduete of one of the brigantines. He commynge behynde, learned of th[e]inhabitantes which was the waye Eastewarde to the goule of *Beragua* ouer paſſed and leſte behynde of *Nicuesa*. *Olanus* therfore directinge his courſe towarde the Easte, mette with the other brigantine which had alſo wandered owte of the way by reaſon of the darkenes of the nyght. The gouernour of this brigantine, was one *Petrus de Vmbria*. Thus bothe beinge gladde of theyr meetinge, they conſulted what was beſt to bee doone, and which way they coulde coniecture their gouernour had taken hiſ vyage. After deliberation, they iudged that *Nicuesa* could no more lacke him to put him in remembraunce of *Beragua*, then they them felues were myndful therof, hopynge also to fynde hym there. They ſayled therefore towarde *Beragua*: where they founde within. xvi. myles dyſtant, a ryuer which *Colonus* named *Lagartos*, bycause it nooryſheth the greate lyſardes whiche in the Spanyſhē toonge are cauled *Lagartos*. Theſe lyſertes are hurtfull bothe to man and beaſte, and in ſhape muſe lyke vnto the Crocodiles of the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypte. In thiſ ryuer, they founde theyr compaonyons and felowes of theyr erroore lyinge at anker with the greate ſhippes which folowed behynde by the gouernours commaundement. Here the hole assembl[ir]e beinge carefull and diſquieted by reaſon of the gouernours erroore, after conſultacion, by th[e]aduice of the capitaynes of the brigantines, who had rafed neare vnto the coaſtes of *Beragua*, they ſayled directly thether. *Beragua*, in the language of th[e]inhabitantes of the ſame prouince, is as muſch to faye, as the golden ryuer. The region it ſelue is alſo cauled by the ſame name, takyng name of the ryuer. In the mouth of thiſ ryuer, the greateſt vefſels cauld anker, and conueighed al theyr vytails and other neceſſaries to lande with theyr ſhippe boates: and elected *Lupus Olanus* to bee theyr gouernour in the Realdes of *Nicuesa* whom they had loſte. By th[e]aduice therfore of *Olanus* and the other vnder capitaynes, that all hope of departure myght bee taken from the foulidiers which they had nowe brought thether, and to make them the more wyllinges to inhabite that land, they vterly forooke and caſte of thiſ ſhippes beinge nowe rotten for age, and ſuffered them to bee shaken and broſed of the furges of the ſea. Yet of theyr foundeſt plankes, with other newe, made of the trees of that Region (which they ſay to be exceedinge bygge and hygh) they framed a newe carauel shortly after, whiche they myght vfe to ferue for theyr neceſſitie. But *Beragua* was founde by the vnfroture defenſie of *Petrus de Vmbria*. For he, beinge a man of prompt wytte and apt forwardenes to attempte thynges (in whiche ſumetyme fortune wiſt beare a ſtroke notwithstandinge owre prouidence) tooke vpon hym th[e]aduenture to ſearche the ſhore to th[e]intent to find a waye for his felowes where they myght beſte coome alande. For thiſ purpoſe, he chose

Fogeda, the
Lieutenant of
Vraba.

Nicuesa the
Lieutenant of
Beragua.

Nicuesa loſte his
felowes in the
night.

Lupus Olanus

Petrus de Vmbria
The capitaynes
conſulte where to
find theyr loſt
gouernour.

The ryuer
Lagartos.
58

The golden
ryuer
of *Beragua*.

The enterprise
and death of
Petrus de Vmbria.

The dangerous
place of Scilla in
the sea of Sicilie.

Swymminge

The fyssher boate
of Nicuesa his
carauele.

The miserable case of Nicuesa.

5
The Region of
Gratia Dei or
Cerabaro.
The ryuet of
Sancti Matthei.

The rigourishes of Nicuesa.

Corne waxeth
type euery fourth
month

The commendation
of a younge man
brought vp with
Colonus.

Portus Bellus.
Weakenes of
hunger.

Cap. Marmor.

hym twelue marynres, and wente aboorde the shipp boate whiche ferued the greateste shypes. The flowinge of the sea, raged and rored there, with a horrible whurlinge as wee reede of the daungerous place of *Seylla* in the fea of Scicilie, by reasoun of the houge and ragged rockes reachingynto the sea, from which the waues rebounding with violence, make a greate noysse and rowghnes in the water, whiche rowghnes or reflowinge, the Spanyardes caule *Refacut*. In these daungers wretched *Vmbria* wrestled a while. But in thore space, a waue of the sea almooste as bygge as a mountayne, reboundinge from the rockes, overwhelmed the boate and devoured the same with the men, euen in the sight of theyr felowes: So that of them all, onely one escaped by reasoun he was experte in swymmyng. For gettinge holde of the corner of a rocke, and susteynyng the rage of the sea vntyl the nexte daye when it waxed calme, and the shore was drye by the faule of the water, he escaped and reffored to his coompanye. But *Vmbria* with the other eleuen, were vitterly caste away. The refydue of the coompany, durst not committe them feloues to the shipp boates, but went alande with theyr brigantines. Where reinauyngynge a fewe dayes, and saylinge alonge by the ryuer, they founde certeyne vilayges of th[e]inhabitantes, which they caule *Mumu*. Here they beganne to build a fortresse, and to fowe feedes after the maner of theyr countrey, in a certeyne vale of frutefull grounde, bicause in other places the region is baren. As these thynges were thus dooinge in *Beragua*, one of heire coompanye flandyng vppon the toppe of a hyghe rocke of especiali, and lyftynge his eyes towarde the Weste, beganne to crye, *Lynnyn sayles, lynnyn sayles*. And the nerer it drewe towarde hym, he perceaued it to bee a shyppe boate comminge with a lyttle sayle. Yet receaued they it with muche reioyssinge: for it was the fyssher boate of *Nicuſa* his carauel, and of capacite to carye onely fyue men, and had nowe but three in it, which had stoulne it from *Nicuſa* bycause he refused to gyue credit to them that he had passid *Beragua*, and lefte it behynde hym Eastwards. For they seinge *Nicuſa* and his felowes to consume dayely by famynne, thought they woldle proue fortune with that boate, if their chaunce myght bee to fynde *Beragua*, as in deede it was. Debatinge therefore with theyr felowes, of these matters, they declared howe *Nicuſa* erred and losle the carauel by tempeſt, and that he was nowe wanderinge amoung the maryfles of vnknownen coastes, full of myserie and in extreme penurie of all thynges, hauninge nowe lyued for the space of three score and tenne dayes, only with herbes and rootes, and fyldome with frutes of the countrey, contented to drinke water, and yet that often tymes saylyng, bycause he was instant to trauayle westwards by foote, supposing by that meanes to come to *Beragua*. *Colonus* the fyrfte synder of this mayne lande; had coasted alonge by this tracte, and named it *Gratia Dei*: but the inhabitantes caule it *Cerabaro*. Throwghe this Region, there runneth a ryuer which owre men named *Sancti Mathei*, distante from the weste syde of *Beragua* aboute a hundredthe and thirtie myles. Here I lette passe the name of this ryuer, and of manye other places by the names which th[e]inhabitantes vfe, bycause owre men are ignorant thereof. Thus *Lupus Olanus* the conductor of one of the shippes of *Nicuſa*, and nowe also vice Leauetenaunt in his sleede, after that he hadde receaued this information of the marynres, fente therther a brigantine vnder theyr guydylng, these marynres therfore, which came in the fyssher boate, founde *Nicuſa*, and brought hym to the place where *Olanus* laye, whom at his commynge he caste in prysoun, and accused hym of treason bycause he vfurped th[e]autoritie of the Lieuetenauntshippe, and that for the defyre he had to beare rule and bee in autoritie, he tooke no care of his errors: also that he behaued hym selfe negligently: demaudinge further more of hym, what was the caufe of his so longe delay. Lykewyse he speake to al the vnder officers sharplie and with a troubled mynde: And within fewe dayes after commaunded them to trusse vp theyr packes, and make them redye to departe. They defyrd hym to quyet hym selfe, and to forbearde them a while vntyl they had reaped the corne that they had fowne, which woldle shortly bee ripe. For all kynd of corne waxeth ripe there every fourth moonethe after it is fowne. But he vitterly denied to tarye any whytte: but that he woldle forthwith departe from that vnfourtunate lande: And plucked vp by the rootes al that ever was brought into the goule of *Beragua*, and commaunded them to direkte theyr courfe towarde the Easte. After they had sayled aboue the space of xvi. myles, a certeyne younge man whose name was *Gregorie*, a Genues borne, and of a chykle brought vp with *Colonus*, cauled to rememburace that there was a hauen not farre frome thense: And to proue his sayynges trewe, he gaue his felowes thefe tokens: that is, that they shulde fynde vppon the shore, an anker of a losle shyppe halfe couered with sande: And vnder a tree nexte vnto the hauen, a spryng of cleere water. They came to the lande: founde the anker and the spryng, and commended the wyte and memorie of the younge man, that he only amoung manye of the maryn[e]rs which had searched those coastes with *Colonus*, bore the thynges so well in mynde. This hauen, *Colonus* cauled *Portus Bellus*. Wheras in this vyage for lacke of vtyales they were sumetymes enforced to goo alande, they were euell entreated of the inhabitantes. By reasoun wherof, theyr strengthenes were so wakened with hunger, that they were not able to keepe warre agaynst naked men, or scarfely to beare theyr harness on their backes. And therfore owre men losle tv entie of theyr coompanye, which were flayne with venemous arrowes. They consulted to leaue the one halfe of theyr felowes in the hauen of *Portus Bellus*: And the other parte *Nicuſa* tooke with hym towarde the Easte: where abowte twentie and eyght myles from *Portus Bellus*, he intended to buylde a fortresse hardy by the sea syde vppon the nowyte or cape which in tymes past *Colonus* named *Marmor*.

But they were too feble by reasoun of longe hunger, that theyr strength serued them not to susteyne fuche laboure. Yet he erected a litle towre able to refyl the fyrt assaute of the inhabitanates. This towre he cauled *Nomen Dei*. From the tyme that he left *Beragua*, what in the iorney amone the fandie playnes, then also for hunger whyle he buylde the towre, of the fewe which remayned a lyue, he losse two hundred. And thus by litle and litle, the multitude of seuen hundred foyre score and fyue men, was nowe brought to scarcely one hundred. Whyle *Nicuesa* lyued with these few miserabla men, there arose a contention amone them of *Vraba*, as concerninges the Lieutenenantheippe. For one *Vaschus Nunnez*, by the indgements of all men, truthyng more to his strengthe then wytte, stoured vp certeyne lyght felowes ageynst *Ancifus*, fayinge that *Ancifus* had not the kynges letters patentes for that office: And that it was not sufficient that he was autorised by *Fogeda*, And therfore forbodde that he shulde execute the office of the Lieutenantehippe: And wylled them to chuse certeyne of theyr owne coompanye, by whose countysyle and authoritie they myght bee gouerned.

Thus beinge diuided into factions by reasoun that *Fogeda*, their capitayne came not ageyne, whom they supposid to bee nowe deade of his venemous wounde, they contended whither it were bette to substituite *Nicuesa* in his place. The wyfete forte fuche as were famylier with *Nicuesa*, and coulde not beare th[e]c[i]nfolencie of *Vaschus Nunnez*, thought it good that *Nicuesa* shuld bee fowght owt throngh owt all those coautes. For they had knowledge that he departed from *Beragua* bycause of the barennes of the grounde; And that by h[e]cxeple of *Ancifus*, and fuche other as had made shippewrecke, it were possibl[e] that he might wande in sume fereate place: And that they coulde not be quiete in theire myndes vntyll they knewe the certentie, whether he with his felowes were alye or deade. But *Vaschus Nunnez*, fearing lealle at the commyng of *Nicuesa* he shulde not bee had in autoritie emonge his felowes, fayde they were mad men to thinke that *Nicuesa* lyued: And althowgh he were alye, yet that they hadde noo neade of his helpe. For he auouched that there was none of his felowes, that were not as meeete to rule as *Nicuesa*. While they were thus reafonyng too and fro, one *Rodericus Colmenaris* arryued in thoſe coautes with two greate shippes hauninge in theym three score frefſhe men, with greate plentie of vitailes and apparel. Of the navigation of this *Colmenaris*, I intende to speake sumewhat more. He therfore departed from the hauen of *Hippaniola* cauled *Reata* (where they prepare and furnyſſhe theym selues whiche make any viage into theſe landes) aboute the Ides of October in the yeare. 1510: And landed the ix. of Nouember in a Region in the large prouince of *Paria* founde by *Colonus* betwene the hauen *Carthago* and the Region of *Cuchibachoa*. In this viage what by the rowghnes of the ſea and fiercenes of the barbarians, he ſuffered many incommodities. For when his frefſhe water fayled, he fayled to the mouth of a certeyne riuer which th[e]c[i]nhabitantes caule *Gaira*, beinge apte to receaue ſhippes. This ryuer had his courſe from the toppe of an exceedinge hyghe mountayne couered with ſnowe, hygher then the which, all the coompanions of this capitayne *Rodericus*, faye that they never ſawe. And that by good reaſon, yf it were couered with ſnowe in that Region which is not paſt ten degrees ditante from the *Equinoctial* lyne. As they beganne to drawe water owt of their ſhippeboate, a certeyne Kyng made towarde theym appareled with veftures of golſampine cotton, hauninge twentie noble men in his coompanie appareled also: Whyche thinge ſeemed ſtrange to owe men, and not ſeene before in thoſe parties. The Kinges apparel, hunge loofe from his ſhoulders to his elbowes: And from the gerdle downewarde, it was muche like a womans kertle, reachinge even to his heelles. As he drewe neere towarde owe men, he ſeemed frendly to admynyſſe theym to take none of the water of that ryuer, affirminge it to bee vnholome for men: And ſhewed theyn that not farre from thenſe, there was a ryuer of good water. They came to the ryuer. And endenouringe to coome nere the thore, they were dryuen backe by tempeſte. Alſo the burbuling of the fande, declared the ſea to bee but ſhalowe there. They were therefore enforced to retorne to the fyrtle ryuer where they myght ſafely caſte anker. This Kinge layde wayte for owe men. For as they were ſyllinge theire barrelles, he ſet on theym with abouyt ſeven hundred men (as owe men judged) armed after theire maner, althowgh they were naked. For only the kyng and his noble men were appareled. They tooke away the ſhippeboate, and brooke it in maner to chips: ſoo fiercely affaylyng owe menne with theiſr venomous arrowes, that they flewe of them fortie and ſeven beforē they coulde couer them ſelues with theiſr targettes. For that poſon is of ſuch force, that albeit the wounds were not great, yet they dyed therof immedately. For they yet knewe noo remedie ageynſt this kynde of poſon, as they after learned of theſe[in]habitantes of *Hippaniola*. For this I lande bringeth foorth an herbe which quencheth and mortifieth the violent poſon of the herbe wherewith theiſr arrowes are infected, ſoo that it bee miniftred in tyme. Yet of owe coompany whiche went for water, ſeven escaped that conſtict, and hyd them ſelues in a hollowe tree, lurkyng there vntyll nyght. Yet eſcaped they not the handes of theiſr enemyes. For the ſhippe departed from thenſe in the nyght ſeaſon and leſte them there, ſuppoſinge that they had byn flayne. Thus by manye ſuche perels and daungers (which I lightly ouerpasse because I wyl not bee tedious to yowre holynes) he arryued at the length at the hauen of *Vraba*, and caſt anker at the eaſte fyde therof, from whence not longe before, owe men departed to the weſt fyde by reaſon of the barennes of that foyle. When he had

Nomen Dei.
Nicuesa his men
consumed

Contencion
about the
lieutenantheippe
of *Vraba*.
Vaschus Nunnez
moneth sedi
Ancifus
lieutenantheippe
for
Fogeda.

60
Nicuesa.

Rodericus
Colmenaris.
The navigation
of *Rodericus*
Colmenaris.

Cuchibachoa.
The ryuer *Gaira*.
An exceedinge hyghe
mountayne
couered with
ſnowe.

Appareled men

Seuen and forty
Spanyards are
slaine with
venemous arrowes.
A remedy agenſte
venemous arrowes

Seuen men left
behynде.

The hauen of
Vraba.

61

The goulfe of
Vraba.
Dariena.

Famen.

What became of
the contencion
of *Vraba*

contynued a whyle in the hauen, and sawe noo man stouryng, marueyling at the silence of the places (for he supposid there to haue fownde his felawes) he coulde not conjecture what this shulde meane: and there vpon beganne to suspecte that eyther they were deade, or that they had chaunged the place of theyr habitacion. To knowe the certentie hereof, he commaunded all the grete ordinaunce and other smale gunnes which he had in his shippes, to bee charged: And fyres to bee made in the nyght vpon the toppes of the rockes. Thus the fyres beinge kyndled, he commaunded all the gunnes to bee shotte of at one instante: by the horrible noyse whereof, the goulfe of *Vraba* was shakene, althowghe it were. xxiiii. myles distante: for so brode is the goulfe. This noyse was harde of theyr felawes in *Dariena*: And they aunswere them ageyne with mutual fyres. Wherfore, by the folowinge of these fyres, *Colmenaris* brought his shippes to the West syde. Here thofe wretched and miserabla men of *Dariena* which nowe thorowgh famen and feblenes helde theyr very fowles in theyr teethi redy to departe from theyr bodies by reason of the calamities which beefel vnto them after *Ancifus* shippewracke, lytinge vp theyr handes to heauen, with the teares runnyng downe theyr cheekebothe for ioye and forowe, embrased *Rodericus* and his felawes with such kynde of reioysinge as their preffente necessitie seemed to requyre. For whereas they were before his comminge, withowte vytayles and almoste naked, he brought them abundance of meate, drynke, and apparell. It reflethe nowe (moste holy father) to declare what came of the diffention amonge them of *Vraba*, as concernyng the gouernaunce after the losse of theyr capitaynes.

Beragua.

Nicuesa is sought
forth

Nicuesa is fownde
in a miserable
case.

Insolencie of to
much felicitie.

62

Nicuesa fauleth
from one miserie
into an other.



I.I the chiefe officers in *Beragua*, and such as were most politike in counsayle, determyned that *Nicuesa* shulde bee fowght owte if by any meanes he coulde bee founde. Where vpon they tooke from *Ancifus* the gouernoure refusinge the commynge of *Nicuesa*, a brigantyne whiche he made of his owne charges: And agreed, ageynst bothe the wyll of *Ancifus*, and the master of fence *Vaschus Nunnes*, that *Nicuesa* shulde bee fowght foorth to take away the sryfe as touchinge the gouernement. They elected therfore *Colmenaris* (of whom we speake before) to take this matter in hande: wyllyng hym to make diligent search for *Nicuesa* in those coastes where they supposid he erred. For they harde that he had forsaken *Beragua*, the region of an vnfrutefull grounde. They gaue hym therfore commaundement to bryng *Nicuesa* with hym, and further to declare vnto hym that he shulde doo ryght good seruice to coome thether, in takyng away th[e]occation of theyr seditions. *Colmenaris* tooke the thyng vpon hym the more gladly bycause *Nicuesa* was his very frende: Supposinge that his commynge with vytayles shulde bee noo lesse thanfull to *Nicuesa* and his companie, then it was to them of *Vraba*. Furnysshinge therefore one of his owne shippes whiche he brought with hym and also the brigantyne taken frome *Ancifus*, he frayghted the same with part of the vytayles and other necessaries which he brought with hym before from *Hippaniola* to *Vraba*. Thus courfyng alonge by all the coastes and goulfes nere there abowte, at the length at the poynte called *Marmor*, he fownde *Nicuesa*, of all lyuyng men moste infortunat, in maner dried vppe with extreeme hunger, fylthie and horrible to beholde, with only three score men in his company, leste alyue of seuen hundred. They al seemed to hym fo miserable, that he noo lesse lamented theyr case, then yf he had fownde them deade. But *Colmenaris* conforstod his frende *Nicuesa*: and embrasinge hym with teares and cherefull woordes, relyued his spirites, and further encoraged hym with greate hope of better fortune: declarynge also that his commynge was looked for and greateley defyred of al the good men of *Vraba*, for that they hoped that by his autorite, theyr discorde and contention shulde bee synysshed. *Nicuesa* thanked his frende *Colmenaris* after such forte as his calamite requyred. Thus they tooke shyppe to gyther, and fayled directly to *Vraba*. But so variable and vncoustant is the nature of man, that he foone groweth owte of vfe, becommeth insolente and vnmynful of benefites after to much felicitie. For *Nicuesa*, after thus many teares and weepynge, after dyuers bewaylinges of his infortunat desteny, after so many thanken geuyng, ye after that he had faulen downe to the grounde and kysted the feete of *Colmenaris* his fauouire, he beganne to quarrel with hym before he came yet at *Vraba*, reprounge hym and them all for th[e]alteracion of the state of thynges in *Vraba*, and for the gatheringe of golde: Affirmyng that none of them ought to haue layde hande of any golde with owte the aduice of hym or of *Fogeda* his coompanion. When these saynges and suche lyke, came to the eares of theym of *Vraba*, they too flourd vp the myndes of *Ancifus* Lieutenante for *Fogeda*, and also of *Vaschus Nunnes*, of the contrary parte, ageynste *Nicuesa*,

that shortly after his arryall with his three score men, they commaunded hym with threatenynge to departe from thenfe. But this pleased not the better sort. Yet fearyng least tumult shulde bee arnonge the people whom *Vafchus Nunnez* had stered to factious, the best parte was fayne to gie place to the greatest. This wretched man therfore *Nicuesa* thus drowned in miseries, was thrusle into the brigantyne whiche he hym selfe browght: and with hym only feuentene men, of his three score which remayned alwe. He tooke shyppe in the Calendes of Marche in the yeare. 1511. intendyng to goo to *Hispaniola* to coomplayne of the rashenes of *Vafchus Nunnez*, and of the violence doone to hym by *Ancifus*. But he entered into the brigantine in an vnfortunate houre: for he was never feene after. They suppose that the brigantine was drowned with all the men therin. And thus vnhappy *Nicuesa* faulynge headlonge owt of one miserye into an other, ended his lyfe more myterably then he lyued. *Nicuesa* beinge thus vylely reected, and al theyr vytayles confusmed which *Colmenaris* brought them, faulynge in maner madde for hunger, they were enforced lyke raueninge woolues seakynge their praye, to inuade suche as dwelte abowte their confynes. *Vafchus Nunnez* therefore, theyr newe capitayne of their owne election, assenbling toguther a hundredth and thirtie men, and settynge them in order of battell after his swoordeplayers fashyon, puffed vppe with pryd, placed his souldiers as pleased hym in the forwarde and rereward, and sume as pertisens abowt his cwe person. Thus associatieng with hym *Colmenaris*, he wente to spoyle the kynges which were bortherers there abowte, and came fyrt to a Region abowte that coaste, cauled *Coiba*, (wher of we made mencion before) imperiously and with cruel countenaunce commaunding the kyng of the region whose name was *Careta*, (of whome they were never troubled as often as they passid by his dominions) to gyue them vytayles. But *Careta* denied that he could gyue them any at that tyme: alleagynge that he had oftentimes ayded the Christians as they passid by those coastes: by reson wherof his store was nowe confusmed: Also that by the meanes of the contynual warre which he kepte euer from his chylde age with a kyng whose name is *Poncha*, bortheringe vpon his dominion, he and his famelie were in greate scarfenes of all thynges. But *Vafchus* woolde admyte none of these excuses: And thervpson tooke *Careta* prisoner, spoyled his vyllage, and brought hym bownd with his two wyues and chyldren and all his famelie to *Dariena*. With this kyng *Careta*, they founde three of the felowes of *Nicuesa*, the whiche when *Nicuesa* passed by those coastes to seeke *Beragua*, fearyng punysfement for theyr euill defertes stoule away from the shypes lyinge at anker: And when the nauie departed, commytted them felues to the mercie of *Careta*, who enterteyned them very frenedly. They had nowe bynne there. xviii. moonethes, and were therefore as vtterly naked as the people of the contrey. Duringe this tyme, the meate of the jnhabitantes seemed vnto them delicate dishes and princely fare: especially bycause they enjoyed the same withoute any stryfe for myne and thyne, which two thynges moue and enforce men to such harde shyftes and miseries, that in lyng they feeme not to lyue. Yet defydry they to returne to their ownde cares, of suche force is education and natural effection towarde them with whom we haue byn brought vp. The vytayles whiche *Vafchus* brought frome the vyllage of *Careta* to his felowes leste in *Dariena*, was rather sumewhat to assuage theyr present hunger, then vtterly to take away theyr necessitie. But as touchinge *Ancifus* beinge Lieuetenant for *Fogeda*, whether it were before these thynges or after, I knowe not. But this I am sure of, that after the reiectinge of *Nicuesa*, many occasions were sought agent *Ancifus* by *Vafchus* and his factioraries. Howe so euer it was, *Ancifus* was taken, and cast in pryon, and his goodes confiscate. The cause hereof was, (as *Vafchus* alleged) that *Ancifus* hadde his commission of the Lieuetenaunthippe, of *Fogeda* onely whome they sayde to bee nowe deade, and not of the kyng. Sayinge that he woolde not obey any man that was not put in office by the kyng hym selfe by his letters patentes. Yet at the request of the graueste forte, he was sumwhat pacified, and delt more gentelly with hym, hauinge sum compassion of his calamities. And thervpson commaunded hym to bee loofed. *Ancifus* beinge at libertie, tooke shyppe to departe frome themse to *Hispaniola*. But beefore he had hoyld vppe his sayle, all the wyest forte reforted to hym, humbly desyringe hym to retorne agayne: promyfyng that they wolde doo theyr diligence, that *Vafchus* beinge reconciled, he myght bee restored to his full autorite of the Lieuetenaunthippe. But *Ancifus* refused to consent to theyr request and so departed. Yet sume there were that murmurded that god and his angels shewed this reuenge vpon *Ancifus*, bycause *Nicuesa* was rejected through his counsayle. Howe so euer it bee, the searchers of the newe landes, faule headlonge into ruine by theyr owne follye, consuminge them felues with ciuite discord, not weighinge so greate a matter, nor employinge theyr besle endeueaboute the same as the woorthyness of the thyng requyret. In this meane tyme, they determyned all with one agreemente, to sende messengers into *Hispaniola* to the younge Admirall and viceroy, sonne and heyre to *Christophorus Colonus* the synder of these landes, and to the other gouernours of the Ilande (from whom the newe landes receaue theyr ayde and lawes) to signifie vnto them what stafe they floode in, and in what necessitie they lyued: also what they had founde, and in what hope they were of greater things if they were furnyshed with plente of vytayles and other neccesaries. For this purpose they elected at the assaignement of *Vafchus*, one *Valdinia*, beinge one of his factior, and instructed by hym againt *Ancifus*. And to bee affistant with hym, they appoynted one *Zamudius* a Cantabrian: So that commaunde-

The greatest part overcometh the best

The death of Nicuesa.

Famen enforseth them to faule to spoyleynge.

Vafchus usurpeth the autorite of the Lieuetenaunthippe.

Careta, kinge of Coiba.

Kyne Careta is taken and spoyled.

Hunger is the best saunce.
Myne and thynthe
the seedes of al
mischiefe.

Ancifus,
lieuetenant for
Fogeda is cast in
prison.

Ancifus taket
his vyage to
Hispaniola.

The reueng[e] of
God.
The
inconueniences of
discorde.

The sonne and
heire of *Colonus*,
is Admirall and
Viceroy of
Hispaniola.

Valdinia.

Zamudius and
Ancisus, take their
vyage to Spayne

Kynge Poncha.

Swoordes of
woodde.

Kynge Careta
conspiring with
the Spanyardes
against Kynge
Poncha.

Wrought gold

The region of
Comogra, distant
from Dariena
xxx. leagues.

Kynge Comogruss.

The kynges
palace.

64

Wyne and syder

Blacke wine.

The bodyes of
deadly kynges
reliously
honoured.

Penates.
The carcasses of
men dried

The kynges sonne
a yonge man of
excellent wytte.

Foure thousande
ounces of wrought
guld.

ment was gyuen to *Valdavia* to returne from *Hispaniola* with vytayles: And *Zamudius* was appoynted to take his vyage into Spayne to the kynge. They tooke shippes togther with *Ancisus*, hausinge in mynde to certifie the kyng howe thynges were handeled there, muche otherwyse then *Zamudius* information. I my selfe spake with both *Ancisus* and *Zamudius* at their commyng to the courte. Whyle they were occupied aboue these matters, those wretched men of *Dariena* loosed *Careta* the kynge of *Coiba* vpon condicione that he shulde ayde them in theyr warres ageynst his enemy and theyrs, kynge *Poncha* bortheringe vpon his dominions. *Careta* made a league with them, promyfinge that as they pased by his kyngedome, he woold gyue them all thynges necessarie, and meeete them with an armie of men, to goo forwarde with them to the battaile agenst *Poncha*. Theyr weapons are nother bowes nor venemed arrowes, as we sayde th[e]n inhabitants to haue which dwel eastwardre beyonde the goulfe. They feight therefore at hande, with longe swordes (which they caule *Macanas*) made of wood because they haue noo Iren. They vse also longe staues lyke iaucens hardened at the endes with fyre, or typte with bone. Alſo certeyne flynges and darteres. Thus after the league made with *Careta*, bothe he and owe men had certeyne dayes appoynted them to tyll theyr grounde and sowe theyr feedes. This doone, by the ayde of *Careta* and by his conduction, they marched towarde the palacie of *Poncha*, who fledde at theyr commyng. They spoyled his vylage and mytigated theyr hunger with fuch vytayles as they founde there. Yet coulde they not helpe their felowes therwith by reaſon of the farre distance of the place, althowgh they had greate plentie. For the vylage of *Poncha*, was more then a hundredth myles distant from *Dariena*; wheras was also none other remedy but that the same shulde haue byn caryed on mens backes to the ſea fyde beinge farre of, where they left theyr ſhippes in the which they came to the vylage of *Careta*. Here they founde certeyne powndes weyght of gold, grauen and wrought into fundrye ouches. After the facking of this vylage they reforted toward the ſhips intendyng to leaue the kinges of the inland vntouched at this tyme, and to inuade onely them which dwelt by the ſea coaſtes. Not farre from *Coiba*, in the ſame trachte, there is a Region named *Comogra*, and the Kynge thereof, cauled *Comogruss* after the ſame name. To this Kynge they came fyſt next after the ſubversion of *Poncha*: And founde his palacie ſituate in a frutefull playne of twelve leagues in breidthe, at the rootes of the further fyde of the nexte mountaynes. *Comogruss* had in his courte a certeyne noble man of nere confanguinitie to Kynge *Careta*, whiche had fledde to *Comogruss* by reaſon of certeyne diſſention whiche was betwene *Careta* and hym. These noble men, they caule *Jura*. This *Jura* therfore of *Coiba*, mette owe men by the way, and conciled *Comogruss* to them, bycaufe he was well knownen to owe men from the tyme that *Nicuſa* paſſed fyſt by thoſe coaſtes. Owr men therefore went quietlie to the palacie of *Comogruss* beeinge diſtante from *Dariena* thirtie leagues by a plaine waye aboue the mountaynes, This Kynge *Comogruss*, had ſevenfonnes, younge men of comelye forme and ſtature, whiche he had by fundry wyues. His palacie was framed of poſtes or proppes made of trees faſtened together after a ſtraunge forte, and of ſoo ſtronge bylding, that it is of no leſſe strength then waules of ſtone. They which measured the length of the floore thereof, founde it to bee a hundredth and fyftee pafes, and in breadthe, fourre ſcore foote: beinge roofed and paued with maruelous arte. They founde his ſtore houſe, furnyſhed with abundance of delicate vitailes after the maner of theyr country: And his wyne cellar replenished with great vefſelles of earth and alſo of woodde fyllēd with theyr kynde of wyne and fyder. For they haue noo grapes. But lyke as they make theyr breade of thoſe three kyndes of rootes cauled *Jucca*, *agis*, and *Maizium*, (whereof we ſpake in the ſyrle decade) Soo make they their wyne of the frutes of date trees, and fyder of other frutes and feedes, as doo the Almaynes, Flemynges, Englyſſe men, and owe Spanyardes whych inhabit the mountaynes, as the Vascons and Asturians: likewiſe in the mountaynes of the Alpes, the Noricians, Sueuians, and Heluetians, make certeyne drynkies of barley, wheat, hoppes, and apples. They ſay also that with *Comogruss*, they droonk wynes of fundry tafles, both whyte and blacke. But nowe yow ſhall heare of a thyng more monſtrous too behoulde. Enterynge therfor into the inner partes of the palacie, they were broughte into a chamber hanged aboue with the carkeſes of men, tyed with ropes of goſſampine cotton. Beinge demaunded what they ment by that ſuperſtitio[n], they anſwered that thoſe were the carkeſes of the father, graundfather, and great graundfather with the other auncelſours of theyr Kynge *Comogruss*. Declaringe that they had the ſame in greate reverence, and that they tooke it for a godly thyng to honoure them religiouſly: And therfore appareled every of the ſame ſumptuouslie with golde and precious ſtones accordyngē vnto theyr eſtate. After this forte dyd the antiquitie honoure theyr *Penates*, whyche they thought had the gouernance of their lyues. Howe they drye theſe carkeſes vpon certeine instrumen tes made of wood, like vnto hurdels, with a ſoſte fyre vnder the ſame, ſo that onely the ſkyne remayneth to houlide the bones together, we haue deſcribed in the former decade. Of *Comogruss* his ſevenfonnes, the eldeſt had an excellente naturalle wytte. He therfore thought it good to flatter and please thyſ wandryng kynde of men (owr men I meane) lyuyng eonly by ſhiftes and ſpoyle, leaſt beeing offendē and ſeekyng occasions ageynſt hym and his familie, they ſhuld handle hym as they dyd other whiche fought noo meanes howe to gratifie them. Wherefore, he gaue *Vafchus* and *Colmenaris* foure thouſande ounces of golde artificially wrought, and alſo fyſtie ſlaues whyche he had taken in the warres. For ſuche, cyther they ſell for exchaunce of other things, or

to take
tifie the
ke with
natters,
neym in
a league
rie, and
weapons
beyonde
of wood
pte with
men had
ayde of
mynge.
de they
plentie.
the other
ere they
bowndes
reftored
ly them
omogra,
after the
e, at the
of nere
che was
vre men
me that
beinge
us, had
rice was
bylding,
thereof,
ed with
ed with
of those
ake they
mynges,
likewife
, wheat
ynte and
into the
en, tyed
red that
of theyr
a godly
lde and
whyche
umentes
houlde
had an
of men
ageynste
them.
so fyste
nges, or

otherwise vse them as theym lyfeth: For they haue not the vse of money. This golde with as muche more which they had in an other place, owre men wayed in the porche of *Comogruss* his palacie to separate the fyse parte thereof, whiche portion is due to the Kynges escheker. For it is decreed that the fyf parte of both golde, perles, and precious stones, shulde be assigned to the Kinges treafourers: And the refydue, to bee diuided emoooneghe them felues by composition. Here as brabblynge and contention arose emonge our men abowt the diuidinge of gold, this eldeste foonne of Kyng *Comogruss* beinge presente, whome we prayed for his wyfedome, commynge sume what wyth an angry countenaunce towarde hym whiche helde the balances, he strooke them wyth his fyfe, and scatered all the golde that was therein, abowte the porche, sharply rebukyng them with woordes in this effecte. What is the matter yowe Christian men, that yow so greatly esteeme too litte a portion of golde more then your owne quietnes, whiche neuerthelesse yow entend to deface from these fayre ouches and to melte the same into a rude massie. If yowre hunger of gould bee too infatiable that onely for the desyre yowe haue therto, yowe disquiete too many nations, and yow yowre felues also susteyne too many calamites and incommodities, lyuing like banished men owte of yowre owne countrey, I wyll shewe yowe a Region floweinge with gould, where yowe may satifise yowr raueninge appetites. But yowe multe attempte the thynge with a greater poure: For it flandeth yow in hande by force of armes to overcome kynges of greate puissaunce, and rigorous defenders of theyr dominions. For befyle other, the greater kyng *Tumanama* will coome forthe the ageynste yowe, whose kengdome is moste ryche with golde, and distante from hense onely fyx foonne: that is, fyx dayes: for they number the dayes by the sonne. Furthermore, or euer yowe canne coome thether, yow must passe ouer the mountaynes inhabited of the cruell Canibales a fierce kynde of men, deuoures of mans fleshe, lyuing withoute lawes, wanderinge, and withoute empire. For they also, beinge defyrous of golde, haue subdwel them vnder their dominion whiche before inhabited the golde mynes of the mountaynes, and vse them lyke bondemen, vfyng their laboure in dygginge and workyng their golde in plates and fydry Images lyke unto these whiche yowe see here. For we doo no more esteeme rude golde vnwright, then we doo coddles of earthe, before it bee formed by the hande of the worke-man to the similitude ethyer of sume vessell necessarie for owre vse, or sume ouche bewetfull to be worse. These thynghes doo wee receaue of them for exchaunge of other of owre thynghes, as of prisoners taken in warre, whiche they bye to eate, or for sheetes and other thynghes perteynyng to the furnytur of householde, such as they lacke whiche inhabite the mountaynes: And especially for vitayles wherof they stande in greate neede by reason of the barrennes of the mountaynes. This iorney therfore, must bee made open by force of men. And when yowe are passinge ouer these mountaynes (poynting with his fynger towarde the southe mountaynes) yowe shal see an other sea, where they sayle with shyppe as bygge as yowres (meanyng the carauelis) vfling both fayles and ores as yowe doo, althowghhe the men bee naked as wee are. All the waye that the water runnethe frome the mountaynes, and all that syde lyngge towarde the Southe, bryngeth forth golde abundantly. As he sayde these woordes, he poyncted to the vesselles in whiche they vse to serue theyr meate, affirmyng that kyng *Tumanama*, and all the other kynges beyonde the mountaynes, had fuche and al their other householde stufce of golde: And that there was noo lesse plentie of golde amonge those people of the Southe, then of Iren with vs. For he knewe by relation of owre men, wherof owre swoordes and other weapons were made. Owre capitaynes marueylyng at the oration of the naked younge man (for they had for interpretours those three men whiche had byn before a yere and a halfe conuersant in the court of kyng *Careta*) pondered in theyr myndes, and ernestly confidered his saynges. Soo that his rasphenes in scatteringe the golde owte of the balances, they turned to myrr and urbanitie, commendyng his dooinge and sayinge therin. Then they askid hym frendely, vpon what certeyne knowleage he spake those thynghes: Or what he thought beste herein to bee doone yf they shulde brynghe a greater suplye of men. To this, younge *Comogruss*, flayinge a whyle with hym selfe as it were an oratour preparinge him selfe to speake of sume graue matter, and disposyng his bodye to a giesture meeete to perswade, spake thus in his mother tonge. Gyue eare vnto me o yowe Chrytlans. Albeit that the gredie hunger of golde hath not yet vexed vs naked men, yet doo we destroy one an other by reasoun of ambition and desyre to rule. Hereof springeth mortall hatred amonge vs, and hereof commethe owre destruction. Owre prediccours kepte warres, and soo dyd *Comogruss* my father with princes beinge brotherers abowte hym. In the which warres, as wee haue ouercome, so haue wee byn ouercome, as dothe appere by the number of bondemen amonge vs, which we tooke by the ouerthrowe of owre enemyes, of the whiche I haue gyuen yow fitie. Lykewyse at an other tyme, owre aduersaries haunge th[e]cupper hande agente vs, ledde away manye of vs captiue. For fuche is the chaunce of warre. Also, amonge owre familiars (wherof a great number haue byn captiues with them) beholde here is one whiche of longe tyme ledde a paynefull lyfe in bondage vnder the yoke of that kyng beyonde the mountaynes, in whose kyngdome is fuche abundance of golde. Of hym, and fuches other innumerable, and lykewyse by the resort of free men on theyr fyde comminge to vs, and ageyne of owre men resorting to them by safe conduct, these thynghes haue byn euer as well knownen vnto vs, as owre owne possessions. But that yowe maye bee the better assured hereof, and bee owte of all suspcion that yowe

The distribution
of golde.

Young *Comogruss*
his oration.

The hunger of
golde.

A region flowinge
wyth golde.

Kyng *Tumanama*.

Canibales.

65

The golde mynes
of the mountaynes.

Vnwrought golde
not esteemed.

Exchaunge.

Abundance of
golde.

Householde stufce
of gold

Naked people
tormented with
ambition.

A vehement
persuasion.

66

A token of hunger

shal not bee deceaued, make me the guyde of this viage, byndyng me fast and keepyng me in safe custodie to bee hanged on the next tree, yf yowe fynde my sayinges in any point vntrewe. Folowe my counsayle therfore, and send for a thoufande Christian men apte for the warres, by whose power we may with also the men of warre of *Comogrus* my father armed after owe maner, iuade the dominions of owe enemies: where, bothe yowe may bee satifysed with golde, and we for owe conductinge and aydylge yowe in this enterprye, shall thynke owe felues abundantly rewarded, in that yowe shall helpe to delyuer vs from the iniurie and perpetual feare of owe enemies. After these woordes, this prudente younge *Comogrus* helde his peace. And owe men moued with greate hope and hunger of golde, beganne ageine to swalowe downe theyr spetle.

THE FOVRTH BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE, *Of the supposed Continent.*



Kynge Comogrus
is baptised with
his familie.

Valdiuia returneth
from Hispaniola.

Horrible thunder
and lyghtnyng in
the moneth of
Nouember.

Bread of Maizius
and Hobba

Digestion
strengthened by
owtwarde colde.

Hunger.

A newe supply of
a thoufande
souldyers.

Marcha.

Pesum.
A thoufande and
fyue hundred
pounds weighty
of wrought gold

67

After that they had taryed here a fewe dayes and baptisid *Comogrus* with all his famelie, and named hym by the name of Charles after the kyng of Spayne, they returned to theyr felowes in *Dariena* leauinge with hym the hope of the thoufande fouldyers, which his sonne requyred to passe ouer those mountaynes towarde the South sea. Thus enteringe into the vyllage which they had chosen to inhabite, they had knowleage that *Valdiuia* was returned, within fyxe moonethes after his departe: but with noo great plentie of vytayles, bycause he brought but a smaule shipp: yet with hope that shortly after, there shulde bee sent them abundance of vytayles with a newe suply of men. For younge *Colonus*, the Admiral and viceroy of *Hispaniola*, and the other gouernours of the Ilande, acknowleaged that hethereto they had noo respecte to theym of *Dariena*, bycause they supposid that *Ancifus* the Lieuetenant had safely arryued there with his shipp laden with vytayles: wyllyng them from henefoorth to bee of good cheere, and that they shulde lache nothyng hereafter: But that at this present tyme, they had noo bygger shipp wherby they myght sende them greater plentie of necessaries by *Valdiuia*. The vytayles therfore which he brought, serued rather sumwhat to mytigate theyr present necessitie, then to satifysse theyr lacke. Wherefore within a fewe dayes after *Valdiuia* his returne, they fel ageine into lyke scarfnes: especially for asmuch as a great storne and tempest whiche came from the hyghe mountaynes with horrible thunder and lyghtnyng in the moneth of Nouember, brought with it suche a fludde, that it partely carayed away and partly drowned all the corne and feedes whiche they had fowne in the moonethe of September in a frutesfull grounde before they went to kyng *Comogrus*. The feedes which they of *Hispaniola* caule *Maizium*, and they of *Vraba* caule *Hobba*: Wheroft they make their breade, which also wee sayde to bee ryte thryse every yeare, bycause those Regions are not bytten with the sharpnes of wynter by reason of theyr nerenes to the Equinoctial lyne. It is also agreeable to the principles of naturall philosophie, that this breade made of *Maizius* or *Hobba*, shulde bee more holosome for the inabitantes of those contreyes then breade made of wheate, by reason that it is of easyer digestion. For wheras coulde is wantinge, the naturall heate is not dryuen frome the owtewarde partes into the inwarde partes and precordials, whereby digestion is much strengthened. Beinge therfore thus frustrate of the increafe of theyr feedes, and the kynges nere abowte them spoyled of both vytayles and golde, they were enforced to seeke theyr meat further of: And therwith to signifie to the gouernours of *Hispaniola* with what great necessitie they were oppressed: And what they had lerned of *Comogrus* as concernyng the Regions towarde the Southe: wyllyng them in consideracion therof to aduertysfe the kyng to fende them a thoufande soldiers, by whose helpe they myght by force make waye throwghe the mountaynes diuidyng the sea on bothe sydes, if they coulde not bryng the fame to passe quety. The same *Valdiuia* was also fent on this message, caryinge with hym to the kynges treasourers (haunge theyr office of recepte in *Hispaniola*) three hundredth pounds weight of golde after egypt ounces to the pounde, for the fyfte portion dewe to the kynges escheker. This pounde of. viii. vnces, the Spanyardes caule *Marcha*, whiche in weight amounteth to fyfie pieces of golde cauled *Castellani*. But the Caſilians, caule a pound *Pefum*. We conclude therfore, that the sume hereof, was xv. thoufande of those peeces of golde cauled *Castellani*. And thus is it apparente by this accompte, that they receaued of the barbarous kynges, a thoufande and fyue hundredth pounds of egypt ounces to the pounde. All the whiche they founde redy wrought in fundry kyndes of ouches, as cheynes, braſelets, tablets, and plates, bothe to hange before theyr brestes, and also at theyr eares, and nofethryls. *Valdiuia* therefore tooke flyppinge in the fame carauell in the whiche he came last, and returned also befoore the thyrde day of the Ides of Januari, in the yeare of Christ M. D. XI. What chaunced to hym in this vyage, we wyll declare in place conuenient. But let vs nowe retorne to them which

lodie to
herfore,
men of
, bothe
we, shall
erpetuall
re men

remayned in *Vraba*. After the dismisinge of *Valdiuria*, beinge pricked forwarde with owtrogious hunger, they determined to searche the inner partes of that goulfe in sundry places. The extreme angle or poynt of the same goulfe is distant from the enterance therof, aboute fourre score myles. This angle or corner, the Spaniardes caule *Culata*. *Vaschus* hym selfe came to this poynte with a hundredth men, coastyng alonge by the goulfe with one brygantine and certeyne of the boates of thos regions, which the Vrabians caule *Vru*, lyke vnto them whiche th[e]inhabitantes of *Hispaniola* caule *Canosas*. From this poynt, there faulthe a ryuer from the East into the goulfe, ten tymes bygger then the ryuer of *Dariena* which also faulthe into the fame. Saylyng alone by the ryuer about the space of thirtie myles (for they caule it nyne leagues) and sumwhat inclynyng towarde the ryght hande southwarde, they founde certeyne vyllages of th[e]inhabitantes, the Kyng wherof, was cauled *Dabaiba*. Ovre men also were certifited before, that *Cemacchus* the kyng of *Dariena* whom they put to flight in the battayle, fledde to this *Dabaiba*. But at the commynge of owe men, *Dabaiba* also fledde. It is thowght that he was admonyshed by *Cemacchus*, that he shulde not abyde the brunte of owe men. He folowed his counsayle: forsooke his vyllages, and lefte all thynges defolate. Yet owe men founde heapes of bowes and arrowes: Also much household stoffe and many fysshing boates. But thos maryfhe groundes were neyther apte for sowinge of seedes or planting of trees. By reason wherof, they founde there fewe suche thynges as they defyred: that is, plentie of vytailes. For th[e]inhabitantes of this Region, haue noo breade but such as they get in other contreyes nere abowte them by exchange for their fysshe, only to serue their owne necessitie. Yet founde they in the houfes of them that fledde, golde wrought and grauen, amountyng to the sume of feuen thoufande of thos pieces whiche we fayde to bee cauled *Castellani*: Also certeyne canoas: of the whiche brought away twoo with them, and great plentie of their houfholde stoffe, with certeyne bundels of bowes and arrowes. They saye, that from the maryfhes of that ryuer, there coome certeyne batteis in the nyght seafon, as bygge as turtle dooces, inuadynge men and bytinge them with a deadly wounde, as sume of them testifie whiche haue byn bytten of the fame. I my selfe communing with *Ancius* the Lieutenant whoni they reected, and amonge other thynges askynge him of the venemous bytinge of these batteis, he tolde me that he hym selfe was bytten by one of them on the heele, his foote lyng vncouered in the nyght by reasoun of the heate in sommer seafon: But that it hurt hym noo more, then yf he hadde byn bytten by any other beaste not venemous. Other faye, that the bytyng of sume of them is venemous: Yet that the fame is healed incontinently, if it be wasshed with water of the sea. *Ancius* toulde me also, that the venemous woundes made by the Canibales arrowes infected with poysen, are healed by wasshyng with water of the sea, and also by cauterising with hotte Irens: And that he had experiance thereof in the region of *Caribana*, where many of his men were so wounded. They departed therfore, from the poynte of the goulfe of *Vraba*, not well contented bycause they were not laden with vitaleis. In this their returne, there arose soo greate a tempest in that wyde goulfe, that they were enforced to caste into the sea, all the householde stoffe whiche they tooke from the poore wretches whiche lyued onely by fithinge. The sea also swalowed vpp the two boates that they tooke from themy, wherewyth the men were likewise drowned. The same tyme that *Vaschus Nunnes* attempted to searche the poynte of the goulfe toward the southe, even then by agremente, dyd *Rodericus Colmenaris* take his viage towarde the mountaynes by the easte, with thre scor[e] men, by the ryuer of the other goulfe. Aboute fortie miles distante from the mouthe of the ryuer, (for they caule it twelue leagues) he founde certeyne vilages situate vpon the bankes of the ryuer, whose *Chiui*, (that is,) kinge, they caule *Turui*. With this kinge dyd *Colmenaris* yet remayne when *Vaschus* after his returne to *Dariena*, fayling by the same ryuer, came to hym. Here refreshyng their hole company with the vitaleis of this *Turui*, they departed from thense togther. Other fortie miles from henfe, the ryuer encoompaseth an Iland inhabited with fyssher men. In this, bycause they sawe greate plentie of the trees which beare *Caffia fistula*, they named the Iland *Cannafistula*. They found in it, threescore villages of tenne cotages apiece. On the right syde of the Iland there runneth an other ryuer, whose channell is of depth sufficiente to beare brigantines. This ryuer they cauled *Riuum Nigrum*: from the mouthe wherof about xv. myles distante they founde a towne of syue hundredth houses feuered: whose *Chebi*, (that is,) kinge, was cauled *Abenamachei*. They all forsooke theys houses as foone as they harde of owe men commyng. But when they sawe that owe men pursued them, they turned ageyne and ranne vpon them with desperate mindes, as men driuen from their owne possessions. Theyr wepons, are swordes of wod, and long flaues like iuelens, hardened at the ende with fyre: But they vse neyther bowes nor arrowes: nor any other of th[e]inhabitantes of the wesse syde of the goulfe. The pore naked wretches were easely dryuen to flight with owe weapons. As owe men folowed theym in the chafe, they tooke the kinge *Abenamachei* and certeine of his noble men. A common souldier of owes whom the kyng had wounded, coomminge to hym when he was taken, cutte of his arme at one strok with his swoorde. But this was doone vnwares to the capitaynes. The number of the Christian men which were here, was aboute a hundredthe and fiftie: the one halfe wherof, the capytaynes leste here, and they with the resydue, rowed vpp the ryuer ageyne with twelue of the boates of thos Regions, whiche they caul. *Vru*, as they of *Hispaniola* caule them *Canosas*, as we haue fayde. From the ryuer of *Riuus Niger* and the Iland of *Cannafistula*,

The goulfe of
Vraba.

Culata.

Vaschus searcheth
the goulfe of
Vraba.

A maruelous great
ryuer, faulyng
into the goulfe of
Vraba.

Kyng *Dabaiba*
and *Cemacchus*,
are dryuen to
flight.

Maryfhe grounde

Wrought gold
wheyfhyng
vii thousand
Castellanes

Battes as bygge as
turke dooces.

Ancius bytten
of a batte

Remedies ageynst
venemous arrowes

A tempest.

Colmenaris taketh
his viage towarde
the montaines

Kyng *Turui*

The Iland of
Cannafistula.

68
The ryuer of
Riuus Niger.
A towne of v.
hundredth houses.

Th[e]inhabitantes
of the wesse syde
of the goulfe.

Kyng
Abenamachei, is
taken and his
arme cut of.

Many other
ryuers faulinge
into Riuus Niger.

Kyng abibeiba
dwellethe in a
tree.

Abundance of
moyster and heat
is cause of
byggenes.
The ryvynge of
the Ocean sea.

Trees of maruelous
height

Plinie.

Frutefull grounde.

Cellers in the
grounde.

Abibeiba, the
kyng of the tree,
yeldethe to
Vaschus.

60

Gold no more
estemed then
stones.

Canibales.

Kyng Abraiba

for the space of threescore and ten myles, leauing both on the right hande and on the leste many riuers faulinge into it bigger then it selfe, they entred into one by the conductyng of one of the naked inhabitanthes, beinge appoynted a guyde for that purpose. Vppon the banke of this ryuer next vnto the mouthe of the same, there was a kyng cauled *Abibeiba*: who, bycause the Region was full of marysshes, had his palaice buylid in the toppe of a highe tree, a newe kynde of byldyng and feldome scene. But that lande beareth trees of suche exceeding heigh[th], that emonge theyr branches, a man may frame large houses: As wee reedes the like in diuers autoures howe in many Regions where the ocean sea ryfeth and ouerflowethe the lande, the people were accustomed to flye to the high trees, and after the faule of the water, to take the fyfthe lefte on the lande. This maner of buylidng, is to laye beames crosse ouer the branches of the trees, faste bownde togither, and there vppon to rayfe theyr frame, strongly made ageynste wynde and wether. Owr men suppose that they buylde theyr houses in trees, by reasoun of the greate fluddes and ouerflowinges of ryuers whiche often tymes chaunce in those Regions. These trees are of suche heighth, that the strength of no manes arme is able to hurle a ston to the houses buylid therein. And therfore doo I gyue the better credit to Plinie and other autours whiche wryte that the trees in sume places in *India* are soo high by reasoun of the frutefulnes of the grounde, abundance of water, and heate of the Region, that noo man is able to shute ouer theym with an arrowe. And by iudgements of all men, it is thought that there is noo frutfuller ground vnder the foonne, then this is whereof wee nowe entreat. Owr men measuringe manye of these trees, founde them to bee of suche bignesse, that seuen men, ye sumetymes eight, holdinge hande in hande with theyr armes sreached furthe, were scarflye able too fathame them aboute. Yet haue they their cellers in the grounde, well replenysshed with such wynes wherof wee haue spoken befoore. For albeit that the vehemensie of the wynde, is not of poure to caste downe those houses, or to breeke the branches of the trees, yet are they toffed therewith, and swaye sumwhat from syde to syde, by reasoun wherof, the wyne shulde bee muche troublede with moouinge. All other necessayre thinges, they haue with theym in the trees. When the kyng or any other of the noble men, dyne or suppe in these trees, theyr wynes are brought hem from the celleres by their seruantes, whyche by meanes of exercise, are accustomed with noo lesse celaritie to runne vppe and downe the steares adherente to the tree, then doo owr waytyng boyes vppon the playne grounde, fetche vs what wee caule for from the cobarde bysyde owr dyninge table. Owr men therfore, came to the tree of kinge *Abibeiba*, and by the[*e*]interpretours cauled hym foorth to communication, gyuinge hym signes of peace, and there vppon willinge hym to coomme downe. But he denied that he woold coomme owte of his house: Desyringe them to suffer hym to lyue after his fasshion. But owr men fell from sayre woordes to threatening, that excepte he woold defende with all his famelie, they wolde either ouerthrowe the tree, or elles set it on fyer. When he had denied them ageyne, they fell to hewinge the tree with theyr axes. *Abibeiba* seeinge the chippes faule from the tree on evry syde, chaunced his purpose, and came downe with only two of his foones. Thus after they had entreated of peace, they communed of gatheringe of golde. *Abibeiba* answered that he had noo golde, and that he never had any neede therof, nor yet regarded it any more then stones. But when they were instante vpon hym, he sayde vnto them. If yow soo greatly desyre golde, I will seeke for sume in the nexte mountaynes, and bringe it vnto yow. For it is plentifully engendred in those mountaynes. Then he appointed a day when he wold bringe this golde. But *Abibeiba* came neyther at the day, nor after the daye appoynted. They departed therfore from thense well refreshed with his vitiales and wyne, but not with gould as they hoped. Yet were they enformed the like by *Abibeiba* and his ditionaries as concerninge the golde mynes and the Canibales, as they harde before of kinge *Comogrus*. Saylinge yet further aboute thirtie myles, they chaunced vpon certeyne cotages of the Canibales: But vterly voyde with owte men or stufie. For when they had knowleage that owr men wandered in the prouinces nere aboute theym they resorted to the mountaynes, caryinge al theyr goodes and stufie wyth them.

THE FYFTE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE

Of the supposed continent.



In the meane tyme whyle these thynges were doone alonge by the shores or bankes of the ryuer, a certeyne Decurian, that is a capytayne ouer tenne, of the coompanye of those which *Vascus* and *Colmenaris* had lefte for a garryfon in *Riu Niger* in the dominion of kyng *Abinamachei*, whether it were that he was compellid through hunger, or that his fataule dayes was nowe coome, he attempted with his souldiers to fearche the countreyes nere there about, and entered into the vyllage of a king cauled *Abraiba*. This capitaynes name was *Raia*: whom *Abraiba* flewe, with two of his felowes: but the resydue fledde. Within a fewe dayes

after, *Abraiba* hauinge compassion of the calamite of his kynfeman and neyghbour *Abenamacheius* being dryuen from his owne possessions (whose arme also we sayd before that one of the soulidiers cut of at the riuor of *Riou Nigro* and nowe remaynyng with *Abraiba* to whom he fledde by stelth after he was taken, went to *Abibeiba* th[e]inhabitor of the tree, who had nowe lykewife forsaken his contrey for feare of owre men, and wandered in the defolate mountaynes and wooddes. When he had therfore founde him, he spake to him in this effecte. What thyng is this Oh vnfortunate *Abibeiba*: or what nation is this that foo tormenteth vs that wee can not enioye owre quyet libertie? Howe longe, howe longe I say shall wee suffer theyr crueltie? were it not much better for vs to die, then to abyde such iniuries and oppresions as yow, as *Abinamacheius* owre kynfeman, as *Cemachus*, as *Careda*, as *Poncha*, as I and other princes of owr order doo suslyne? Canne any thinge bee more intollerable then to see owre wyues, owre chylldren, and owre subiectes, to bee ledde awaie captiues, and owre goodes to be spoyled even before owre faces.

I take the goddes to wyttes, that I speake not too much for myne owne part as I doo for yow whose case I lament. For albeit they haue not yett touched me, neuerthelesse, by the example of other, I ought to thynke that my destruction is not faire of. Let vs therfore (yf wee bee men) trye owre strengthe and proue owre fortune ageynst them whiche haue delte thus cruelly with *Abenamacheius*, and dryuen hym owte of his contrey. Let vs set on them with all owre poure, and vterly destroy them And yf wee can not fleye them al, yet shall wee make them afayde ethere to asayle vs ageyne, or at the least dimynyshe theyr poure. For what foo euer shall befaule, nothyng can chaunce woorfe vnto vs then that which we now suffer. When *Abibeiba* hardle theſe wordes and ſuch other like, he condef[er]ced to doo in al thinges as *Abraiba* wolde requyre: Where vpon they appoynted a day to bryngē their conpiracie to paffe. But the thyng chaunced not accordyng to their deſire. For of thoſe whiche wee fayne to haue paſſed to the Canibales, there returned by chaunce to *Riuus Niger* the nyght before the day appoynted to woorke their feate, thirtie men to the ayde of them whiche were lefte there yf anye ſedition ſhulde ryde as they ſuſpected. Therfore at the daunyng of the day, the confederate kynges with fyue hundredth of theyr ditionaries armed after theyr maner, beſeaged the vyllage with a terrible alarome, knowyng nothyng of the newe menne which came thether the fame nyght. Here owre target men came forth ageynſt them, and fyrt assayled them a farre of with theyr arrowes, then with theyr pykes, and laſte with theyr ſwoordes: But the naked ſeely ſowles, perceauinge a greater number of theyr aduersaries then they looked for, were ſoone dryuen to flight, and ſlayne for the moft parte lyke ſcateryng ſheepe. The kynges eſcaped, they ſlew manye, and tooke many captiues whiche they ſente to *Dariena* where they vſe them for laboures to tyll and ſowe their grounde. These thynges thus happily atchyued, and that prouince quyeted, they returned by the ryuer to *Dariena*, leauinge their thirtie men for a garryfon vnder the gouernance of one *Furatado* a capitayne. This *Furatado* therfore, ſente from *Riou Nigro* where he was appoynted gouernour, twentie of his felowes and one woman, with. xxiiii. captiues to *Vafchus* and his company, in one of the bygget *Canoas* of that prouince. As they rowed downe by the ryuer, there came forth foodenly ouerthwarte the ryuer ageynſt them, foure greate *Canoas*, which ouerthrew theyr boate and ſlew as many of them as they coulde coome by, bycaufe they were vnprefpareſt ſuſpecting noo ſuch thiſe. Owre men were all drowned and ſlayne excepte twoo, which hyd them ſelues amouge certeyne ſagottes that ſwamme on the water, in the whiche they laye lurkyng, and ſoo escaped to theyr felowes in *Dariena*: who by them beinge aduertysed hereof, beganne to caſte theyr wyttes what this thyng might meane: beinge no leſſe ſolicitate for them ſelues, then meditatynge in what daunger theyr felowes had byn in *Riou Nigro*, excepte by good fortune, thoſe thirtie newe men which were ſente to them, had coome to the vyllage the nyght before the conpiracie ſhulde haue byn wrought. Conſulting therefore what was beſt to bee doone herein, at the lengthe with dylygent ſearchyng they had intelligence that fyue kynges, that is to wytt, *Abibeiba* the inhabitor of the tree, and *Cemachus* dryuen from his vyllage whiche owre menne nowe poſſeſſed, *Abraiba* alſo and *Abenamacheius*, kynfemen, with *Dabaiba* the king of the fyſher men inhabytinge the corner of the goulf whiche we cauled *Culata*, were all assembled to conſpire the Christian mens deſtruſion at a day affiſned. Which thyng had fuli coome to paffe, if it had not byn otherwyſe hyndered by gods prouidence. It is therfore acrybed to a myracle: And trewly not vnoorthwoरthiſt if we weye howe chaunce detected and bewrayed the counſayle of theſe kynges. And bycaufe it is worthy to bee harde, I wyll declare it in fewe woordes. *Vafchus Nunner* therfore, who rather by poure then by election, vfurped the gouernaunce in *Dariena*, beinge a maſter of fence, and rather a rafſhe royster then politike capitayne (alough̄ fortune ſumtyme fauoureth foolies) amouge many women which in dyuers of theſe regions he had taken captyue, had one whiche in fauoure and beutie excelleſt all other. To this woman her owne brother often tymes reſorted, who was alſo dryuen owte of his contrey with kyng *Cemachus*, with whom he was very familiē and one of his chiefe gentelmen. Amouge other communication which he had with his ſyſter whom he loued entierly, he vttered theſe woordes. My deare and welbeloued ſyſter, gyue eare to my ſayinges, and keepe moſte ſecreteleye that whiche I wyll declare vnto yow, yf yow deſyre yowre owne wealth and myne, and the proſperite of owre contrey and kynfekolkes. The inſolencie and crueltie of theſe menne

*Abraiba caueth
the kynges to
rebell.*

*Men good
enough yf they
had iſen*

*The kynges are
dryuen to
flight.*

70
Captiues.

*A garyſon of xxx.
men.*

*xviii. Spanyardeſ
ſlayne and
drowned*

*The kings which
conspired the
death of the
Christians.*

A ſtrange chaunce.

Vafchus.

*Women can keepe
no counſayle.*

An army of C
[hundred] canoas
and fyue. M.
[thousand] men.
Tryumph before
victory

Affection
corrupteth trew
iudgement.

71

The conspiracie
of the kynges is
detected.
Kyg Cemachus,
conspyreth the
deth of Vaschus.

Vaschus pursweth
the kynges with
three score and
ten men.

Colmenaris
sacketh the
village of Tichiri.
Fyue rulers
hanged and shot
through with
arrows.

The golden
regions on the
south side the
mountaynes.

The death of
Valdunia and
Zamudius.

whiche haue dryuen vs owte of owre poffessions, is too intollerable, that the princes of the lande are determyned noo longer to fusteyne theyr oppreſſions.

By the conductinge therfore of fyue kinges (which he named in order) they haue prepared a hundred greata Canoas, with fyue thoufande men of warre by lande and by ſea, with vitailes alſo in the village of *Tichiri*, ſufficient to mantayne ſuch an army. Declaringe further, that the kinges by agremente, had diuided emonge them the goodes and headdes of owre men: And therfore admouneyed her, at the daye appoynted by ſume occation to conueigh her ſelue owte of the way, leſt ſhee ſhuld bee flayne in the conuolution of the bataile. For the ſouldier victourer, is not woont to ſpare any that commethe in his rafe. And thus ſhewinge his iyster the daye affignd to the flawghter, he departed. But the younge woman (for it is the ſword that women feare and obſerue more then the grautie of *Cato*;) whether it were for the loue or feare that ſhee had to *Vafchus*, forgettinge her parentes, her kynſfolkes, her contrey and all her frendes, ye and all the kinges into whos throttes *Vafchus*, had thrufte his woorde ſhee opened all the matter vnto hym, and conceid nony of thoſe things whiche her vndiscrete brother had declared to her. When *Vafchus* therfore had hard the matter, he cauſed *Fuluin*, (for too had they named her) to ſende for her brother, who came to her immediatly, was taken, and enforced to tell the hole circumſtances of the matter. Where vpon, he playnely confeſſed that kinge *Cemachus* hys lorde and master, fente thoſe foura canoas to the deſtruotion of owre men, and that theſe newe conſpiracieſ were attempted by his conſaile. Likewife that *Cemachus* foughte the deſtruotion of *Vafchus* hym ſelue when he ſent hym forte men vnder preſtice of frendſhippe to tyll and ſowe his ground after the maner of the contrey, gyuynge them in comauandement to fleye *Vafchus* at *Marris*, whyther he reforted to comforte his laboures as the maner is of all good husbandes. Yet durfte they at noo tyme execute theyr lordes comauandemente vpon hym, bycaufe *Vafchus* came neuer emonge them afoote or vnaſmed, but was accuſtomed to ryde to them in harness with a iauenlen in his hande and a twoode by his syde. Wherfore *Cemachus* beinge fruſtrate of his particuler conſaile, tooke this laſte thing in hande to his owne deſtruotion and his neighbours. For the conſpiracie beinge detected, *Vafchus* cauſed threescore and tenne ſouldiers, comauandinge them to folowe him, but declared nothing vnto them whether hee wente or what hee entended to do. He wente forwarde therfore fyſte towarde *Cemachus* whic̄ ley from hym, onely tenne myles. But he had knowledge that he was fledde to *Dubaiba* the kinge of the marifhes of *Culata*. Yet ſearchinge his village, he founde a noble man a ruler vnder hym and alſo his kinsfeman, whome he tooke priſoner with many other of his familiers and frendes both men and women. The ſame houre that he ſette forwarde to ſeke for *Cemachus*, *Rodericus Colmenaris* rowed vp the ryuer with foure of theyr byggeſte Canoas and threescore men by the conduction of the maydes brother who broughte hym to the village of *Tichiri*, in the which we ſayd all their vitailes to remayne whiche were prepared for theyr armee. *Colmenaris* therfore, ſacked the village, and poſſeſſed all their vitayles and wyne of fundry colours: likewife tooke the gouernour thereof priſoner, and hanged hym on the tree in whiche he dwelte hym ſelue, comauandinge hym too bee ſhotte throwgh with arrowes in the fight of th[e]inhabitantes, and with hym foure other rulers to bee hanged on iebbettes to the example of other rebelleſ. This punyſhmente thus executed vpon the conſpiratoreſ, ſroke the hartes of all th[e]inhabitantes of the prouince with ſuche feare, that there is not nowe a man that dare ſtoore his finger ageynſt the wrath of owre men. They lyue nowe therefore quietlly: And the other kinges by theyr example doo the gladlyer liue in ſubiection, with leſſe offence bearinge the yoke whyche they can by noo meaneſ ſhake of.

THE SYXTE BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE *Of the ſuppoſed continentē.*



Heſe thynges, thus ſynyſhed, aſſembliinge all their company togither they determined with one conſente, that a meſſynger ſhulde forth with bee ſente to *Hippiola* (from whence they haue their lawes and ayde) to declare the hole order of all theſe affayres, fyſle to the admirall and gouernour of the Ilande, and afterward to the Kinge of Spayne, and to perſuade hym to ſende thoſe thouſande men which younge *Comogrus* ſaid to bee expediente to paſſe ouer the mountaynes lying betwene them and the golden regions towarde the Southe. *Vafchus* him ſelue dyd greatly affeete this embafage: But neyther woulde the reſydewe of his felowes electe hym thereto, nor his factionariesuffer hym to departe: Aſwell for that therby they thought they ſhulde bee left defolate, as alſo that they murmurred that if *Vafchus* ſhulde once goo from them, he woulde neuer returne to ſuche turmoyles and calamities, by th[e]example of *Valdinia* and *Zamudius*, who had byn now abſente ſence

the mooneth of January, in soo muche that they thought they wooldes never coomme ageine. But the matter was otherwise then they tooke it, as I wyl shewe in his place. For they were periflled. At the length after many scrutinies, they elected one John *Quicodus*, a graue man well in yeares, and treasurer of the kings escheker in thosse prouinces. They had conceaued a good opinion of this *Quicodus* that all thynges shulde bee well brought to passe by his meanes, aw^t for his wyfdom, as also that they were in good hop[e] of his retурne, because he had brought his wiffe with hym to thosse regions, whome he leste with his felowes for a pledge of his comminge ageyne. When they had thus elected *Quicodus*, they were ageyne of diuers opinions whome they might ioyne with hym for affiance: Affirminge that it were a daungerous thinge to commite soo weightye a matter to one mans handes. Not that they mistrusted *Quicodus*, but bycause the life of man is frayle, and the chaunge of the ayer perelous, especially to them hauyng nowe of longe tyme byn accustomed to the temperature nere vnto the *Equinoctiall*, if they shulde bee compelled to retурne to the North with alteration of ayer and dyet. They thought it therfore good to appoynt a companion to *Quicodus*, that if by chance the one shuld fayl the other might remayne: And that if they both escaped, the king shuld gyue the better credit to the relation of both: After longe consultation therfore, they chose *Rodericus Colmenaris* a man of good experiance, of whom we haue often tymes made mencion. For from his youth, he had trauayled ouer al Europe by land and by sea, and was present at the doinges of all thynges in Italy ageynst the Frenchmen: Of whose retурne alio, they had noo smaile hope bycause he had many fermes and hadde tyld and sowne much grounde in *Dariena*, by th[e]increase wherof he might get much gold by sellynge the same to his felowes. He leste therfore the charge of al his affayres in *Dariena*, with his partener *Alphonfus Nunez*, a Judge of the lawe, who also was lyke to haue byn chosen procuratore of this vyage before *Colmenaris* if one had not put them in remembraunce that he had a wife at *Matritis*: fearyng least beinge ouercome with her teares, he wooldes no more retύne. *Colmenaris* therefore, a free man and at libertie being associate affilant with *Quicodus* they tooke shypynge togither in a brigantine, the fourth day of the Calendes of Nouember, in the yeaire of Christ. 1512. In this vyage, beinge tossed with fundry tempestes, they were by the violence of the wynde, cast vppon the Weste coastes of that large Ilande whiche in the syrte Decade we cauled *Cuba*, supposid to haue byn fyrmre lande. They were sore oppressed with hunger. For it was nowe three moonethes fence they departed from their felowes. By reasoun whereof, they were enforced to take lande to proue what ayde they coulde gette amoung the inhabitanites. They chaunced therefore, was to arryue in that part of the Ilande, where *Valdiuia* was dryuen alande by tempest. But oh yowe wretched men of *Dariena*? Tary for *Valdiuia* whom yowe sent to prouide to helpe yowre necessities? Prouide for yowre selues rather and trust not to them whose fortune yowe knowe not. For when he arryued in *Cuba*, th[e]inhabitantes flewe him with al his felowes, and leste the carauall wherin they were caried, torne in pieces and halfe couered with sande on the shore: where *Quicodus* and *Colmenaris* syndyng the fragmentes therof, bewayled their felowes myssfortune. But they founde none of theyr carkeses: supposinge that they were either drowned, or devoured of the Canibals, which oftentimes make incursions into that Ilande to hunte for men. But at the length, by twoo of the Ilande men which they had taken, they had knowleage of *Valdiuia* his destruction: And that th[e]inhabitantes the more greedely attempted the same, for that they had harde by the bablynge of one of his felowes that he had great plentie of gold. For they also take pleasure in the bewtie of gold, which they forme artificially into fundry ouches. Thus owe men slyken with penfyuenes for the cruell defenie of theyr felowes, and in wayne feekyng reuenge for theyr iururies, determyned to forfake that vnfortunate lande, departyng from thosse covetous naked barbarians with more forowe and necessitie then they were in before. Or euer they had passed the South syde of *Cuba*, they fel into a thousandde myffortunes: and had intelligence that *Fogeda* arryued thereaboute, leadyng a myserable lyfe, tossed and turmoyled with tempestes and vexed with a thousand perplexities: Soo that departing from thenfe almost alone, his felowes beinge for the most parte all consumed with maladies and famyn, he came with much difficultie to *Hissipiola*, where he dyed by force of the poyson of his venemous wound which he had receaued in *Vraba* as we haue said before. But *Ancifus* elected Lieuetenaunt, sayled by all those coastes with much better fortune. For as he hym selfe toulde me, he founde prosperous wyndes in thosse parties, and was well enterteyned of th[e]inhabitantes of *Cuba*. But this specially in the dominion of a certeyne kynge whose name was *Commendator*. For wheras he defyred of the Christian men whiche passed by, to bee baptised, demaudynge the name of the governour of the Ilande next vnto *Hissipiola*, beinge a noble man and a knyght of th[e]order of *Calatraua* of which order al are cauled *Commendatores*, this kynges defyre was to bee named after hym. Kyng *Commendator* therfore, frenvely receaued *Ancifus*, and gaue hym greate abundance of al thynges necessarie. But what *Ancifus* lerned of theyr religion duryng the tyme of his remaynyng there, I haue thought good to aduertysse yowre holynes. Yowe shall therefore vnderstande, that certeyne of owe men saylinge by the coastes of *Cuba*, leste with kyng *Commendator* a certeyne poore maryner beinge diseased. Who in shorte space recoveringe his health, and hauyng nowe sumwhat lerned theyr language, beganne to growe into great estimation with the kyng and his subiectes, in soo muche that he was oftentimes

Johannes
Quicodus is sent
to Spain

72
Chaunge of the
ayers daungerous.

Rodericus
Colmenaris,
assistant with
Quicodus.

A wiffe is a
hynderance

Cuba.
Three moonethes
from *Dariena* to
Cuba, by reason
of tempests

The death of
Valdiuia.

Hurt of lauyshenes
of the tonge.

The calamitie and
death of *Fogeda*.

Maladies and
famen.

The prosperous
vyage of *Ancifus*.

A kyng of *Cuba*
baptised by the
name of
Commendator.

Ancifus

73
A maruelous
istorie howe God
wrought miracles
by the simple fayth
of a maryner.

Be not rash in
judgement

Zemes.

A chapel builded
to the picture of
the virgin Mary

God respecteth
the infancie of
faith for soles
sake

One Religion
turned into an
other, holdeth styl
many thinges of
the fyrt.

A strange fantasie.

The effect of
godly zeale.

A miracle in the
tyme of the
battayle

The virgin Mary,
is present at the
battayle.

74

A maruelous
experience of
faith

Muche lyke vnto
this, is redde ill.
Reg. A.VII.

the kynges Lieuetenaunt in his warres ageynst other princes his bortherers. This mans fortune was so good, that all thynges prospered well that he tooke in hande. And albeit that he were not lerned, yet was he a vertuous and well meanyng man accordyng to his knowlage, and dyd religiousely honoure the blessed virgin, bearynge euer about with hym her picture fayre paynted vpon paper and fowd in his apparell nere vnto his breste: Signifyinge vnto the kyng, that this holyness was the caufe of al his victories: persuadyng hym to doo the lyke, and to cast away all his *Zemes* which were none other then the similitudes of euyll spirates, mooste cruell enemyes and deouours of owre fowles: And to take vnto hym the holy virgin and moother of god to bee his patronesse if he defyred all his affayres awfull in warre as in peace to succeed prosperously. Alfo that the blessed virgin woorde at noo tyme fayle hym, but bee euer redy to helpe him and his, if they woorde with deuoute hertes caule vppon her name. The maryner had foone periuaded the naked nation: And there vppon gaue the kynge (who demaunded the same) his pycture of the virgin, to whom he buylde and dedicafe a chapell and an altare, euer after contemnyng and reiectyng his *Zemes*. Of these *Zemes* made of gossampine cotton to the similitudes of sprytes walkyng in the nyght which they oftentimes fee, and speake with them familiyer, we haue spoken sufficienly in the nyght booke of the fyrt Decade. Furthermore, accordyng to the institution of this maryner, when the foonne draweth towarde the faule, this kyng Commendator with all his famely bothe men and women, resorte daylye to the sayde chapell of the virgin Marie, where knelyng on they kneen and reverently bowyng downe theyr heades, holdyng theyr handes ioyned togither, they salute th[e]image of the virgin with these woordes: *Aue Maria, Ave Maria.* For fewe of them can rehearse any more woordes of this prayer. At *Anicifus* his beinge there, they tooke hym and his felowes by the handes, and ledde them to this chapell with reioysinge, fayinge that they woorde shewe theym maruelous thynges. When they were entered, they poyned with theyr fyggers to the Image of the virgin al to beset and hanged abowte with ouches and iewels and many earthen pottes, fylled sum with sundry meates, and sume with water, rownde aboue all the tabernacle. For these thynges they offer to the image in the stede of sacrifice, accordyng to theyr owlde superucion towarde theyr *Zemes*. Beinge demaunded why they dyd thus, they answered, leafe the image shulde lacke meat if perhaps it shuld be a hungerd. For they most certeny beleue that images may hunger, and that they doo eat and drynke. But what ayde and helpe they confess that they haue had of the godly poure of this image, that is of the blessed virgin, it is a thyng worthy to be harde, and most assuredly to bee taken for a truthe. For by the report of owre men, ther is such feruent godly loue and zeale in these simple men toward the holy virgin, that to them beinge in the daungers of warre ageynst theyr enemies, they doo in maner (yf I may foo terme it) compel her to descende from heauen to helpe them in theyr necessities: For such is the goodnes of god, that he hath lefte vnto men in maner a prycy wherby wee may purchase hym with his holy angels and sayntes, that is to wytte, burnyng loue, charitie and zeale. Howe therfore can the blessed virgin at any time be abfent from them which cal for her helpe with pure faith and feruent loue? Commendator him selfe, with al his noble men and gentelmen, doo testifie with one voyce, that in a fought battayle in the which this maryner was capitayne, bearyng with hym this picture of the virgin Marie, the *Zemes* of theyr enemies turned their backes and trembled in the presence of the virgins Image and in the syght of them all. For every of them bryngye theyr *Zemes* to the battayle, hopyng by theyr helpe to obteyne the victorie. Ye they say further, that duryng the tyme of the battayle, they sawe not only an Image, but a liuely woman clothed in fayre and whyte apparel, aydyngne them ageinst theyr enemies: whiche thyng also the enemies them selues acknowleaged, confessyng that on the contrarie parte shee appeared to them, shakynge a fepter in her hande with threatenyng countenance, whiche caused theyr hertes to shake and faynt for feare. But after that this maryner departed from them, beinge taken into a shyppe of certeyne Christians passyng by those coastes, Commendator declared that he with all his subiectes, continually obserued his institucions: In soo muche that beinge at contention with another prince, whiche of theyr *Zemes* were mooste holy and of greateste poure, the matter grewe to sufe extremite that they tryed it with hande strokes: And that in all these attemptes, the blessed virgin neuer fayled hym, but was euer prefente in the brunte of the battayle, and gaue hym easye victorie with a fmaule poure of men, ageynst a mayne armee of his enemies. Beinge demaunded with what woordes they cryed vpon the virgin Mary when they assayed theyr enemies, they answered that they had lerned noo other woordes of the mariners doctrine, but *Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos:* That is, holy Mary helpe vs, holy Marye helpe vs: And this also in the Spanyſh tongue. For he had lefte these woordes in the mouthes of all men. Whyle they murthered and destroyed them selues thus on bothe sydes, they fell to entreatie of peace and agreed to trye the matter, not hande to hande by combatte of certeyne chosen for bothe parties as the maner was amounghe the Romaynes and dyuers other nations in the owlde tyme, or by any flignt or policie, but that twoo younge men shulde bee chosen, for eche partie one, with theyr handes bounde fast behynde them in the playne fiedle, bothe parties beinge sworne to acknowleage that *Zemes* to bee the better, whiche fyrt loofed the bandes of the younge man whiche stooode bounde for the tryall of his religion. Thus diuidinge them selues, and placeinge the lyde younge men before them in the syght of them al, with theyr handes fast bounde by theyr enemies, the

contrary parte cauled syrft on theyr *Zemes* (that is, the deuyl to whose similitude theyr Images are made) who immediatly appered in his lykenes aboue the younge man that stode bounde in the defence of Sathans kyngedome.

But as soone as *Commendator* with his coompanye cryed *Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos*, forthwith there appeared a fayre virgin clothed in whyte, at whose presence the deuell vanquished immediatly. But the virgin hausinge a longe rod in her hande, and putting the same on the bandes of the younge man that stode for *Commendator*, his handes were loosed imediately in the syght of them all, and his bandes founde about the handes of hym that stode for the other partie, in somuch that they them selues sownde hym dowlbe bounde. But for all this, were not the enemis satifysyd: querelinge that this thyng was doone by sum flyght or diuise of man, and not by the poure of the better *Zemes*. And there vpon rayred for th[e] aduoydlynge of all suspcion, that there myght bee eyght grae and fage men appoynted, for eche syde four, whiche shulde bynde the men in the syght of theim all, and also gyue iudgements whether the thyng were doone withoute craste or gyle. Oh pure simplicite and conflant fayth: Oh golden and blessed confidence. *Commendator* and his familiars, doubted not to graunte their enemis their requeste with lyke saythe wherwith the diseased woman obteyned healte of the fluxe of her bludde, and wherby Peter feared not to walke on the sea at the syght of his master C'riste. These younge men therfore were bounde in the presence of these eight grae men, and were placed within theyr lyses in the syght of bothe parties. Thus vpon a signe gyuen, when they cauled vpon theyr *Zemes*, there appeared in the syght of them all, a deuyl with a longe tayle, a wyde mouthe, greate teeth, and hornes, rememblyng the similitude of the Image which the kyng being enemye to *Commendator*, honoured for his *Zemes*. As this deuyl attempted to loose the bandes of his cliente, the blessed virgin was immediatly presente as before at the caule of *Commendator* and his subiectes, and with her rodde loosed the bandes of her suppliant, which were ageyne lykewyse founde fast tyed aboue the handes of hym that stode for the contrarye parte. The enemies therefore of *Commendator*, beinge stryken with greate feare and amafed by reason of this great miracle, confessed that the *Zemes* of the virgin was better then their *Zemes*. For the better professe wherof, these pagans beinge bortherers to *Commendator*, which had euer before byn at continuall warre and enmitie with hym, when they had knowleage that *Ancifus* was arryued in those coastes, they sent ambassadours vnto hym, to defyre hym to send them preestes of whom they might bee baptised: Where vpon he sent them two which hee had with hym there at that present. They baptised in one day a hundredth and thirtie of th[e]inhabitantes, sumtyme enemys to *Commendator*, but now his frendes and ioyned with him in aliance. All suche as came to bee baptised, gaue the preestes of theyr owne liberalitie, eyther a cocke or a henne. But no capons: for they can not yett knyl how to carue theyr cocke chykens to make them capons. Also certeyne salted fyshes, and newe fyne cakes made of theyr breade: likewise certeyne foules franked and made fatte. When the preestes resorted to the shippes, fyxe of these newe baptyfied men accompanid them laden with vittailes, wherwith they ledde a ioyfull Easter. For on the Sunday two dayes before synte *Lazarus* day, they departed from *Dariena*, and touched at that tyme, onely to the cape or angle of *Cuba* nere vnto the Easte syde of *Hifpaniola*. At the reueste of *Commendator*, *Ancifus* lefte with hym one of his coompanie, to th[e]intente too teache hym and his subiectes wyth other his bortherers, the salutacion of the angell whiche we caule the *Aue Maria*. For they thinke them selues to be too much the more beloued of the blessed virgin, as they can reherse the more woordes of that prayer. Thus *Ancifus* takinge his leave of kyng *Commendator*, directed his course to *Hifpaniola*, from whiche he was not farre. Shortely after, he tooke his viage to Spayne, and came to *Valladoleto* to the kyng, to whom he made greuous complaint of the infolencie of *Vaschus Nunnez*, in so muche that by his procuremente, the Kyng gaue sentence ageynste hym. Thus muche haue I thought good (moste holy father) wherof to aduertise your holynes as concerningyng the religion of these nations, not only as I haue byn instructed of *Ancifus* (wyth whom I was dayly conuerante in the court and vfed hym familiarlye) but also as I was enformed of dyuers other men of greate autorite, to th[e]intente that your excellencie may vnderstande howe docible this kynde of men is, and wyth what facilite they may bee allured to embrase owr religion. But this can not bee doone foodenlye. Yet we haue greate cause to hope that in shorte tyme they wilbe all drawnen by litle and litle to the euangelicall lawe of Christe, to the great encrease of his flocke. But let vs nowe returne to the messengers or procuratours as concernyng the assayres of *Dariena*.

The deuyl
appereith in his
lykenes

An other miracl.

Math. 14.

The deuyl
appereith againe.

The virgin Mary
overcometh the
deuyl.

Infidels conuerct
by miracl, and
baptised.

75
The preestes
rewarde.

Aue Maria.

Ancifus vyage to
Spain

Ancifus
complayneth of
Vaschus

The haruest is
great, but the
labourers are fewe.

THE SEVENTH BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE
Of the supposed continent.

From Dariena to Hispaniola viii
dayes saylyng.



The procuratours
of Dariena, are
honorabley
receaved at the
courte.

Their complexion
is altered

Of whom the
autour had
information

76

The greate master
of the kynges shippes

Petrus Arias is
elected gouernour
of Dariena

The [e] oracion of
the bishop of
Burges in the
decence of Petrus
arias.

The warres of
Aphrica

Rom *Dariena* to *Hispaniola* is eyghte dayes failinge and sumtymes lesse with a prosperous wynde. Yet *Quicodus* and *Colmenaris* the procuratours of *Dariena*, by reaon of tempestes and contrary wyndes, could scarcely faile it in a hundrethe dayes. When they had taryed a fewe dayes in *Hispaniola*, and had declared the caufe of the comminge to the admirall and the other governours, they tooke shippinge in two marchante shippes beinge re-lye furnysshed, which were also accustomed to faile too and froo betwene Spayne and the Ilande of *Hispaniola*. They departed from *Dariena* (as we sayde before) the fourthe day of the calendes of nouember in the yeare of Christ, 1512, and came not to the courte before the calendes of May in the yeare followinge beinge the yeare of Christe, 1513. At th[e]cyr commynge to the courte, *Johannes Fonseca* (to whom at the begynnyng the charge of these affayres was committed, whom also for hys faithful seruice towarde the kinge, yowre holynes created generall commissarie in the warres agynste the moores) receaved them honorably, as men comminge from the newe world, from naked nations, and landes vnknownen to other menne.

¶ By the prefermente therefore of the byshoppe of *Burges*, *Quicodus* and *Colmenaris* were brought before the kinge, and declared their legacie in his presence. Suche newes and presentes as they brought, were delectable to the kinge and his noble men, for the newnes and straungnes therof. They alio fuioried with me often tymes. Theyr countenaunces doo declare the intemperatenes of the ayer and region of *Dariena*. For they are yellowe lyke vnto them that haue the yellowe gaundies: And also swolne. But they acrybe the caufe hereof, to the hunger which they suffeyned in tyme past. I haue byn aduertised of th[e]cuffayres of this newe woordle, not onely by these procuratours of *Dariena*, and *Ancifus*, and *Zamudius*, but also by conference with *Bacca* the lawier, who ranne ouer a greate parte of those coautes. Likewise by relation of *Vincensius Annes* the patronne of the shippes, and *Alfonsus Nigus*, both being men of greate experiance and wel trauayled in those parties, beside many other, of whom wee haue made mention in other places. For there came neuuer any from thense to the court, but tooke greate pleasure to certifie mee of al thynges ethyr by woorde of mouth or by wrytyng. Of many thynges therfore which I lerned of them, I haue gathered suche as to my Iudgement seeme mooste worthy to fatifie them that take delyte in hytories. But let vs nowe declare what folowed after the comminge of the procuratours of *Dariena*. Therfore, before theyr arryall there was a rumoure spredie in the courte, that the chiefe governours and Lieuetenautes *Nicuefa* and *Fogeda*, also *Johannes De la Cossa* (a man of grete reputacion that by the kinges letters patentes he was named the greate master of the kynges shippes) were all perisched by mischaunce: And that those fewe which yet remayned alyue in *Dariena*, were at contencion and discorde amoung them selues: So that they neyther endeououred their diligence to allure those simple nations to owe saythe, nor yet had regarde to searche the natures of those Regions. In consideration wherof, the kyng was determyned to fende newe capitayne thyther whiche shulde reftore and set all thynges in good order, and put them owe of autoritie whiche hadde vsurped th[e]empire of those prouinces withoute the kynges speciaill commaundement. To this office, was one *Petrus Arias* assigned, a man of greate prowe and a citien of *Sigonia*. But when the procuratours of *Dariena* had publisched in the courte howe greate a matter it was, and of what moment, many laboured ermetly to the kyng to take the office owe of his handes. But the byshoppe of *Burges* beinge the kinges chiefe chaplaine, and one of the commissioners appoynted by hym in these matters, beinge aduertised hereof, came immediatly to the kyng, and spake to hym in this effect. May it please yowre hyghnes to vnderstand (mooste catholyke Prince) that wheras *Petrus Arias* a man of valiente corage and greate seruice, hath offered hym selfe to aduenture his lyfe in yowre maiesties affayres, vnder vncerteyue hope of gayne and mooste certeyne perels, yet that notwithstandingly fum other haue ambitiouly maliced his felicitie and preferment labouringe for th[e]office whereto he is elected: It maye please yowre grace herein foo to shewe hym your fauour and permit hym to enioye his fayde office, as yowre maiestie doo know hym to bee a worthy and meete man for the same, hauyng in tyme past had greate experiance of his prowesse and valiantnesse, awell in behauing hym selfe as orderinge his fouldlers, as yowre hyghnes may the better confyder if it shal please yowre to caule to remembrance his doinges in the warres of Aphrica, where he shewed hym selfe bothe a wyfe Capitayne, and valient foulquier. As concerningis his maners and vflages other wayes, they are not vnknownen to yowre maiestie, vnder whose wynghe he hath of a chylde byn brought vp in the courte, and euer founde saythfull towarde yowre hyghnesse. Wherfore, to declare my opinion vnder yowre graces fauour (whom it hath pleased to appoynt me a

commissioner in these affayres) I think it were vngodly that he shuld bee put from his office at the sute of any other, especially beinge thereto moued by ambition and couetousnes: who perchaunce wold proue them felues to be the same men in the office if they shuld obteyne it, as they nowe shewe them felues in the ambitions desyryng of the same. When the byshoppe hadde fayde these woordes, the kyng confirmed the election of *Petrus Arias* in more ample maner then before: wyllynge the byshoppe to appoynt hym a thousande and twoo hundredre souldiers at his charges, makynge hym a warrante to th[e] officers of his escheker to delyuer hym money in prefe for the same purpse. *Petrus Arias* therfore beinge thus put in office and authorysed by the kynges letters patentes vnder his brode seale, chose a greate number of his souldiers in the court, and too departed frome *Valladolo* aboue the calendes of October in the yeare 1513: And fayled syrft to Ciuite beinge a verye ryche citie and well replenyshed with people: where by the kinges magistrates he was furnyshed with men and vtytayles and other necessaries perteynyng to soo greate a matter. For the king hath in this citie erected a house seruinge only for th[e] affayres of the Ocean, to the whiche al they that goo or coome from the newe landes and Ilandes, reforte to gyne accomptes awell what they carry thynher as what they bringe from thense, that the kyng may bee truly answere of his custome of the fyfe part bothe of golde and other thynges as we haue fayde before. This house, they caule the house of the Contractes of *Indi*. *Petrus Arias* founde in Ciuite aboue twoo thousand younge men which made great sute to goo with hym: lykewyse noo small number of couetous owlde men: of the whiche, many offered them felues to goo with him of their owne charges without the kynges stiplene. But leste the shippes shulde bee pferled with to great a multitude, or leaft vtytayles shulde fayle them, the libertie of free paßage was restraynt. It was also decreed that noo stranger might paſſe without the kynges licence. Wherfore I doo not a lyttle maruaile at *Aloisius Cadamustus* a venetian and wryter of the Portugales vyages, that he was not a shamed to wryte thus of the Spanyardes nauigations: we went: we fawe: we dyd. Wheras he never went, nor any Venetian fawe. But he stoule certeyne annotacions owte of the three first bookees of my syrft Decade wryten to Cardinal *Afianus* and *Arcimboldus*, supposinge that I woolde never haue publyfied the fame. It myght also happen that he came by the copie therof at the hande of sum ambafadoure of Venice. For I haue graunted the copie to many of them, and was not daungerous to forbynd them to communicate the fame to other. Howe so euer it bee, this honeste man *Aloisius Cadamustus* feareſt not to chalenge vnto hym the frut: of an other mans laboure. Of the inventions of the Portugales (which surely are woondurfull) whether he haue wrytten that whiche he hath feene (as he sayth) or lykewife bereaued other men of the iuste commendation of their traunayles, I wyll not judge, but am content to let hym lyue after his maner. Emonge the company of these souldiers, there were none embarked but fuch as were licenced by the kyng, except a fewe Italians, Genues, who by frendshippe and sute were admitted for the Admirals sake younge *Colonus*, sonne and heire to *Chriophorus Colonus* the syrft synder of thone landes. *Petrus Arias* therfore tooke shippynge in the ryuer *Betis* (nowe cauled *Guadalquenir*) runnyng by the citie of Ciuite, aboue the beginnyng of the yeare of Christe, 1514. But he loosed anker in an euylle hour. For suche a tempeſte folowed shortly after his departure, that it rent in pieces two of his shippes, and too tossed the other that they were enforced to haue ouer boorde parte of thyr vtytayles to lyghten them. All such as escaped, fayled backe agayne to the coastes of Spayne: where, beinge newly furnyshed and refreshed, by the kynges officers, they went forwarde on thier viage. The master pylot of the gouernours shyppe, was *Johannes Vespustius* a Florentine, the neue of *Americus Vespustius*, who left hym as it were by difente of inheritance, th[e] experience of the mariners facultie, and knowlage of the sea, carde and compasse. But wee were aduertised of late by certeyne which came from *Hispaniola*, that they had passed the Ocean with more prosperous wynde. For this marchaunt shyppe commyng from *Hispaniola* founde them landinge at certeyne Ilandes nere there aboue. But in the meane tyme whyle my importunate caulers on, *Galeucus Butrigarius* and *Johannes Cursius*, men studious by al meanes to gyntile yowre holynes, ceafed not to put me in remembrance that they had one in a redines to depart into Italy, and taryed onely to cary with hym vnto yowre holynes thefe my fayre *Nereides* althowgh rudely decked, leaſte I shulde beſlow muche tyme in vayne, I haue let paſſe many thynges, and wyll reherfe onely ſuch as feeme in my iudgement moſte woorthy memory, althowgh ſumwhat diſordred as occation hath ſerued. So it is therfore that this *Petrus Arias* hath a wyfe named *Helizabeth a Bordilla*, beinge niefe by the brootheres syde to the marques of *Bordilla*, which rendered the citie of *Sagonia* to Fernando and Helizabeth princes of Spayne at ſuch tyme as the Portugales invaded the kingdome of Castile: by reaſon wherof they were encoraged syrft to reſytle, and then with open warre to affayle and expulſe the Portugales for the greate treſure which kyng Henry brother to queene Helizabeth hadde gathered togither there. This marquelle whyle theſe lyued, dyd euer shewe a manly and ſtoute mynde, bothe in peace and warre, ſo that by her countayle manye noble thynges were brought to good efſecte in Caſtile: vnto this noble woman, the wyfe of *Petrus Arias* was niefe by her brothers syde. Shee folowing the magnanimitie of her aunt, perceauing her hulbande nowe furnyſhyng hym ſelfe to depart to the unknownen coaſtes of the newe worlde, and thoſe large tractes of lande and ſea, ſpake thene woordes vnto hym. My moſte deare and welbeloued hulbande, we ought not nowe to forget that from oure younge

Petrus Arias
Lieutenant of
Dariena.
Petrus Arias hath
a thousand and
two hundred
men appoynted at
the kynges
charges.

A house in Ciuite
appointed to the
affayres of India.

Perularia

77
Many profer
them ſelues to go
of their owne
charges.
Aloisius
Cadamustus
reproued.

The Portugales
inuentors

The nauigation
of *Petrus Arias*.
A shipwrecke

A notable example
of a valiant woman.

Kyng Henry.

The wyfe of
Petrus Arias

78

yeares we haue byn ioyned togither with the yoke of holy matrimonie to th[e]intente that wee shulde foo lyue togither and not a funder duryng the tyme of owre naturall lyfe. Wherefore for my parte to declare my affection herein, yow shall vnderstande, that whyther so euer yowre fatal desteny shall dryue yow, eyther by the furious waues of the greate Ocean, or by the manyfoule and horrible daungers of the lande, I wyll surely beare yowes company. There can no perell chace to me so terrible, nor any kynde of death so cruel, that shal not bee much easyer for me to abyde, then to liue so farre seperate from yow. It were muche better for me to dye, and eyther to bee cast into the sea to bee devoured of the fyshes, or on the lande to the Canibales, then with continuall mournyng and bewaylinge, to lyue in deathe and dye lyuning, whyle I consume in looking rather for my husbandes letters then for hym selfe. This is my full determinacion, not rashely nor prefentely exocigate, nor conceaved by the lyght phantasie of womans brayne, but with longe deliberation and good aduiseement. Nowe therfore choofe to whether of these two yowe wyll aſſente: Eyther to thruste yowre swoorde in my throte, or to graunte me my requeste. As for the chyldren which god hath giuen vs as pledges of owr inseperable loue, (for they had foure sonnes and as many dowghters) shal not stay me a moment. Let vs leauē vnto them suche gooddes and poſſeſſions as haue byn left vs by owre parentes and frendes wherby they may lyue amounge the woorſhipful of theyr order. For other thynges I take no care. When this noble matrone of manly vertue had fyniſhed theſe woordes, her hufbande feinge the conſtant mynde of his wyfe, and her in a redynes to doo accordyngē to her woordes, had no hart to denye her louinge petcion: but embrasinge her in his armes, com-mended her intente and conſented to her requeste. Shee folowed hym therfore as dyd *Ipsicrata* her *Mithridates* with her heare hangeinge loofe aboue her ſhoulders. For ſhee loueth her hufbande as dyd *Halicarnassus* of *Caria*, hers beinge deade, and as dyd *Artemisia* her *Maſolus*: We haue alſo had aduertifeſtence their departure that the (being brought vp as it were amounge ſoft fetheres) bath with no leſſe ſtoute corage furſteyned the rorings and rages of the Ocean, then dyd eyther her hufband or any of the maryners brought vp even amounge the ſourges of the ſea. But to haue ſayde thus much hereof, this shal ſuffice. Let vs nowe ſpeake of other thynges no leſſe worthy memorie. Therfore, whereas in the fyſte Decade we haue made mencion of *Vincentius Annez Pinzonius*, ye ſhal vnderlande that he accoonyed *Chrisſophorus Colonus* the Admirall in his fyſt viage, and afterwarde made an other viage of his owne charges with onely one fyppre. Ageyne, the fyſte yeaſter after the departinge of the Capitaynes *Nicueſa* and *Fogeda*, he ran ouer thoſe coaſtes of *Hijpaniola*, and ſearched all the ſouthe fyde of *Cuba* from the Eafe to the weſte, and ſayled rownde about that Ilande which to that day for the greate length thereof, was thought to haue bin part of the continent or firme land, although ſome other ſay that they dyd the lyke. *Vincentius Annez* therfore, knowyng nowe by experience that *Cuba* was an Ilande, ſayled on further, and found other landes weſtward from *Cuba*, but ſuch as the Admirall had fyſt touched. Wherfore, beinge in maner encompassed with this newe lande, turninge his courſe towarde the leſte hande, and raſing the coaſtes of that lande by the Eaſt, ouerpaffinge alſo the mouthes of the goufes of *Beragua*, *Iraba* and *Cuchi-bachor*, he arryued at the Region which in the fyſt Decade we cauled *Paria* and *Os Draconis*: And entered into the greate goulf of freſhwater, which *Colonus* diſcouered, beinge repleniſhed with great abundance of fyſhe, and famous by reaſon of the multitude of Ilandes lyinge in the fame, beinge diſtant Eaſtwarde from *Curiama* aboue a hundred and thirtie myles, in the which tract are the Regions of *Cumana* and *Manacapana*, whiche alſo in the fyſte booke of the fyſt Decade we ſayle to bee Regions of the large prouince of *Paria*, where many affirme to bee the gretete plentie of the beſte pearls, and not in *Curiama*. The ki[n]ges of theſe regions (whom they caul *Chichones*, as they of *Hijpaniola* caule them *Cacici*) beinge certified of the comminge of owre men, ſente certeyne ſpyes to enquire what newe nation was arryued in theyr coaſtes, what they brought, and what they woold haue: and in the meane tyme furnyſhed a number of theyr *Canoas* (whiche they caule *Chichos*) with men armed after their maner. For they were not a lytle affouliſhed to beholde owre ſhippes with the fyſles ſpreade, wheras they vſe no fayles, nor can vſe but ſmaule ons if they woold, by reaſon of the narownes of theyr canoaſ. Swarmyngē therfore aboue the ſhippe with theyr canoaſ (which we may well caule *Monoxyla*, bycaufe they are made of one hole tree,) they feared not to ſhute at owr men beinge yet within their ſhippe and keepinge theym ſelues vnder the hatches as ſafely as yf they had byn defended with ſtone waules. But when owr men had ſhotte of certeyne pieces of ordnance ageynt them they were ſoo diſcomifted with the noyse and flawghter therof that they droue them ſelues to flight. Beinge thus diſparced, owr men chafed them with the ſhippe bote, tooke many, and flewe many. When the kynges harde the noyſe of the gunnes, and were certyfied of the losſe of their men, they ſent ambafadours to *Vincentius Annez* to entreat of peace, fearinge the ſpoyle of theyr goodes and deſtruſion of theyr people, if owr men ſhulde coommre alande in theyr wrathe and furſe. They defreyed peace therfore, as could bee coniectured by their ſignes and poyntings. For owr men vnderſtoode not one woord of theyr language. And for the better proofe that they defreyed peace, they preſeneted owr men with three thouſand of thoſeweights of gold that the Spaniardes caule *Caffellanum Aurum*, which they commonly caule *Pifum*. Alſo a greate barell of woodde full of moſte excellente maſculine frankenſence, weighing about two thouſand and fyxe hundred pounds weight after eight ounces to the pounde: Whereby they knewe that that lande

The thylde
monigatior
of
Vincentius
Pinzonius.

Cuba.

Beragua.
Iraba.
Cuchi-bachor.
Paria.
Os Draconis.
Curiama.
Cumana.
Manacapana.
Plente of Pearles.

Monoxyla.
The Ilandes
þowſe owr men
beinge in theyr
ſhippes.
The vſe of gunnes.

79

Great abundance
of gold and
bankerſeſceſſe.
Olibanum.

brought furthe grete plentie of frankfence. For there is noo entercourse of marchaudies betwene th[e]inhabitantes of *Paria* and the sabeiis beinge soo farre distante, wheras also the[y] of *Paria* knowe nothynge withoute theyr owne coastes. With the golde and frankfence whiche the[y] presented to owre men, they gaue them also a grete multitude of theyr peacockes, bothe cockes and hennes, deade and alyne, awell to satifise their prent necessitie, as also to cary with them into Spayne for encrease. Lykewylce certeyne carpettes, couerlettes, table clothes and hanginges made of gossampine filke fynely wrought after a straunge cloufe with pleante and variable colours, haung golden belles and fuche other spangles and pendantes as the Italians caule *Sonaglios*, and the Spanyardes *Cascaules*, hanging at the purfles therof. They gaue them furthermore speakeinge popingaisis of sundry colours as many as they wooldle ake. For in *Paria*, there is no lese plentie of popingaisis, then with vs of dooues or sparowis. Th[e]inhabitantes of these Regions both men and women are appareled with vesture made of gossampine cotton, the men to the knees, and the women too the calfe of the legge. The faſhion of theyr apparell, is symple and playne muche like vnto the Turkes. But the mens, is double and quilted like that whiche the Turkes vſe in the warres. The princes of *Paria*, are rulers but for one yeare: But their autoritie is noo leſe emonge the people both in peace and warre, then is th[e]autoritie of other kynges in thos Regions. Theyr villages are buyldeid in coompaſſe, along by the bankes of all that greate goule. Fyus of theyr princes came to owre men wyth their prefentes, whose names I thought worthy to bee put in this historie in remembrance of foo notable a thinge *Chiaconus Chiauacha*, (that is the prince of *Chiauacha*, for they caule princes or kinges *Chiaconos*) *Chiaconus Pintiguanus*, *Chiaconus Chamailaba*, *Chiaconus Polonus*, and *Chiaconus Potto*. The goule beinge fyſte founde of the admirall *Colorus*, they caule, *Baia Natuitatis*, bycause he entered into the fame in the day of the natuitie of Christe: But at that tyme he only paſſed by it withoute anye further searching, and *Baia* in the Spanyſh tong, signifieth a goule. When *Vincentius* had thus made a league with these Princes, folowinge his appoynted course, he founde many regions towarde the East, defolat by reaſon of diuers fludges and overflowynges of waters: also many flandyng pooles in dyuers places, and thoſe of excedyng largenes. He ceaſed not to folowe this tracie vnyll he came to the poynte or cape of that moſte longe lande. This poynte ſemethe as though it wooldle inuaide the monte *Atlas* in *Aphrica*. For it proſpecteth towarde that parte of Aphrike, whiche the portugales caule *Caput Bone Sperantie*. The poyntes or capes of the mount *Atlas*, are rough and faluage nere vnto the ſea. The cape of *Bona Speranza*, gathereth the thirtie and foure degrees of the Southe pole, cauled the pole antartike: But that poynte, onely ſeven degrees. I ſuppoſe this lande to bee that, whiche I fynde in owlde wryters of *Cosmographie* to bee cauled the greate Iland Atlantike, withoute any further declareinge eyther of the ſytuation, or of the nature therof.

Sabea, is a contry in Arabie, which bringeth forth frankensence

Paria.

Peacockes which wee caule Turke cockes.

Carpets and couerlettes fynely wrought.

Popyngayes.

The iapparell of the inhabitants of paria

Rulers for one yeare.

The greate goule of Paria.

Baia Natuitatis the gret goule of Paria.

Vincentius maketh a league with v. princes of Paria.

Mount *Atlas* in aphrike.

The great Iland atlantike

THE EIGHT BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE Of the ſuppoſed continent.



Hen Iohan the king of portugale lyued which was prediceſſoure to hym that nowe reigneheth, there arose a great contention betwene the Caſilians and Portugales as concerninge the dominion of theſe newe founde landes. The Portugales, bycause they were the firſte that durſt atteympte to ſearche the Ocean ſea ſince the memorie of man, affirmed that all the nauigations of the Ocean, ought to perteyne to theym onely. The Caſilians argued on the contrarie parte, that what ſo euer god by the ministracion of nature hath created on the earth, was at the begynnyng common emong men: And that it is therfore lawfull to every man to poſſeſſ ſuche landes as are voyd of Christian inhabiſſours. Whyle the matter was thus vncerteynly debatid, bothe parties agreed that the coniouerſie ſhulde bee deſcernded by the byſhōpe of Rome, and plighted ſaiſte to flande to his arbitrimēte. The kyngedome of Caſtile was at that tyme gouernyd by that great Queene *Helijabed* with her hufbande: for the roialme of Caſtile was her dowerye. Shee also and the kyng of Portugale, were cofyn germanyes of two fyſters: by reaſon wherof the diſtencion was more easely pacified. By th[e]aſſent therofe of both parties, Alexander the byſhōp [of] Rome, the vi. of that name, by th[e]autoritie of his leaden bull, drewe a right line from the North to the South a hundredth leagues westwarde withoute the paralles of thoſe Ilandes whiche are cauled *Caput Viride* or *Cabouerde*. Within the compaſſe of this lyne (althowgh foonne denye it) faulthe the poynts of this lande wherof we haue ſpoken, whiche they caule *Caput Sancti Auguſtini*, otherwyſe cauled *Promontorium Sancti Auguſtini*, that is, faynt Auguſtines cape or poynte. And therfore it is not lawful for the Caſilians to fallen ſoote in the beginnyng of that lande. *Vincentius Annes* therfore, departed from thense, beynge aduertised of th[e]inhabitantes, that on the other ſyde of the hyghe mountaynes towarde the

Contention betwene the Caſilians and Portugales for the newe landes

80

The byſhōp of Rome diuideth the land

Cabouerde loke decade i. lib. iii

The golden region
of Ciamba.

The Iland of S.
Iohannis

Fyue byshoppes
of the Iland(s)
made by the
byshop of Rome.

The Canibales
of the Iland of
Santa Cruz.

81

Beragua and
Vraba.

The ryuers of
Vraba.

South, lyinge before his eyes, there was a Region cauled *Ciamba*, which brought foorth greate plentie of golde. Of certeyne captiues whiche he tooke in the goule of *Paria* (which certenly perteyneth to the dominion of Castile) he brought fume with hym to *Hispaniola*, and leste them with the younge Admirall to lerne owe language. But he hym selfe, repayed to the courte to make ernest sute to the kyng that by his faoure, he myght bee gouernour of the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* (otherwyse cauled *Burichena*, beinge distante from *Hispaniola* onely xxv. leagues) bycause he was the fyrd synder of golde in that Ilande. Before *Vincentius* made sute for this office, one Don Christopher a Portugale, the foone of the countie of *Camigna*, was gouernoure of the Ilande: whom the Canibales of the other Ilandes flewe, with all the Christian men that were in the same, excepte the byshop and his familiars, which fledde and shysted for them selues, forsakynge the church and all the ornamente thereof. For yowre holynes hath consecrated fyue byshoppen in these Ilandes at the request of the most catholyke kyng. In *Sancto Dominico* being the chiese citie of *Hispaniola*, *Garsia de Padilla*, a reguler fryer of the order of saynt Fraunces, is byshop. In the towne of Conception, doctor *Petrus Xuares* of *Deza*: And in the Ilande of saynte Iohn or *Burichena*, *Alfonsus Mansus* a licenciate, beinge bothe obseruantes of th[e]institucion of saynt Peter. The fourth, is fryer Barnarde of *Mesa*, a man of noble parentage, borne in *Toledo*, a preacher, and byshop of the Ilande of *Cuba*. The fyfe is *Johannes Cabetus*, a fryer preacher, whom yowre holynes annoyncted mynister of Chrift, to teache the Christian faithe amonoge the inhabitanthes of *Dariena*. The Canibales shall shortely repent them, and the bludde of owe men halbe reuenged: And that the sooner, bycause that shortly after they had committed this abominable slaughter of owe men, they came ageyne from theyr owe Ilande of *Santa Crux* (otherwyse cauled *Ay Ay*) to the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*, and flewe a kyng whiche was a frende to owe men, and eate hym and all his famely, vterly subuertinge his vyllage, vppon this occasion that violatinge the lawe of hostage, he had flayne seuen Canibales whiche were lefte with hym by composition to make certeyne canoas, because the Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis* beareth greater trees and apter for that purpoe, then doth the Ilande of *Santa Crux* the chiese habitacion of the Canibales. These Canibales yet remaynyng in the Ilande, certeine of owe men sayling from *Hispaniola*, chaunced vpon them. The thynge being vnderstode by th[e]interpretours, owe men quarelynge with theym and caulynge them to accompte for that mischeuous deede, they immediatly directed their bowes and venemous arrowes ageynst them, and with cruell countenaunces threatened them to bee quyet, least it shulde repent them of theyr commyngh thyster. Ovre men fearynge theyr venemous arrowes (for they were not prepared to fyght) gaue them signes of peace. Being daumented why they defroyed the vyllage, and where the kyng was with his famelye, they answere that they rased the vyllage and cutte the kyng with his famelie in pecces and eate them in the reuenge of theyr seuen workemen: And that they had made faggottes of theyr bones to cary them to the wyues and chyldren of theyr flayne woorkemen, in wytnesse that the bodyes of theyr husbandes and parentes lay not vnreuenched: and therewith shewed the faggottes of bones to owe men: who beinge astonfyshed at theyr fiercenes and crueltie, were enforced to disimble the matter and houlde theyr peace, quarelynge noo further with them at that tyme. These and fuche other thynghes doo dayly chaunce, the which I doo let passe least I shulde offendre the eares of yowr holynes with fuche bluddy narrations. Thus haue wee suffisently digressed from the regions of *Beragua* and *Vraba* beinge the chiefete foundations of owe purpoe. Wee wyll nowe therefore entreatre fumewhat of the largenes and depthes of the ryuers of *Vraba*: Also declare bothe what they and the landes whiche they runne through doo bryng forth: lykewise of the greatnes of the lande from the Easte to the West, and of the breidh therof from the Southe to the North, and what theyr opinion and hope is of thynghes yet vnknownen in the same. Wee wyll therfore beginne at the newe names wherwith the Spaniardes haue named these prouinces fence they were vnder the dominions of the Christians.

THE NYNTH BOOKE OF THE SECONDE DECADE, *Of the supposed Continent.*

Beragua, cauled
Castella aurifera,
and *Vraba*.
Andaluzia noua.
Sum caule *Peru*,
Nova Castilia.
Beragua and
Vraba, regions of
Paria.
The frutefulnes
of *Vraba*



Beragua therfore, they cauled *Castella Aurea*, that is golden Castile: And *Vraba* they named *Andaluzia Noua*, that is, newe Andalusia. And lyke as of many Ilandes which they subdued, they choofe *Hispaniola* for the chiese place of theyr habitacion, soo in the large tract of *Paria*, they appoynted theyr colonie or bydying place in the two regions *Vraba* and *Beragua*, that all fuche as attempte any vyages in thosse coastles, may resorte to them as to safe portes to bee refreshed when they are wery or dryuen to necessitie. All owe seedes, and plantes, do nowe maruelously encrease in *Vraba*. Lykewise blades, fettes, slippes, grasis, suger canes, and

suche other as are brought from other places to those regions, as also beastes and soules as we haue fayde before. O maruelous frutefulnes. Twentie dayes after the seede is sowne, they gather ripe cucumbers, and such lyke, But colwortes, beetes, Letuce, Borage are ripe within the space of ten dayes. Gourdes, melones, and pompones, within the space of xviii. dayes. *Dariena* hathe many natvie trees and frutes of dyuers kyndes with sundry tastes, and holome for the vfe of men: of the which I haue thought it good to deferybe certeyne of the best. They noorysffe a tree which they caule *Guaiana*, that beareth a frute much resemblyng the kynde of citrons which are commonly cauled limones, of taste sumwhat sharpe myxt with swetenes. They haue also abundance of nuttes of pynetrees, and great plentie of date trees, whiche beare frutes bygger then the dates that are knownen to vs: but they are not apte to bee eaten for theyr to much fowernes. Wyld and baren date trees, growe of them selues in sundry places, the branches wherof they vse for biefommes, and eate also the buddes of the same. *Guaranana*, being higher and bygger then the orange tree, bringeth furth a great frute as bygge as pome citrons.

Ther is an other tree much lyke to a chestnut tree whose frute is lyke to the bygger sort of fygs, beinge holome and of plefant taste. *Mameis*, is an other tree that bringeth forothe frute as bygge as an orange, in taste nothyng inferiour to the beste kyndes of melones. *Guananala*, beareth a frute leſſe then any of the other, but of sweete fauoure lyke spice, and of delectable taste. *Hous*, is an other tree whose frute bothe in shape and taste, is much lyke to prunes, but sumwhat bygger. They are surely persuadid that this is the *Myrobalane* tree. These growe foo abundantly in *Hispaniola*, that the hogges are fedde with the frute therof as with mastre amonoge vs. The hogges lyke this kynde of fealdyng foo well, that when these frutes wax ripe, the swyneherdes can by no meanes keepe them owte of the wooddes of these trees: by reaſon wherof, a greate multytyde of them are becoome wylde. They also affirme, that in *Hispaniola*, swynes fleshe is of much better taste and more holome then mutton. For it is not to bee doubted, but that dyuers kyndes of meates do engender sundry tastes and qualitieſ in ſuche as are nooryſhed therwith. The moſte puissant prince *Ferdinandus*, declared that he had eaten of an other frute brought from thofe landes, beinge full of ſeales with keyes much lyke a pine apple in forme and colour, but in tendernes equal to melopepones, and in taste excedyng all garden frutes. For it is noo tre, but an herbe much lyke vnto an archichoke, or *Aantho*. The kynde hym ſelfe, gaue the cheefest commendation to this. I haue eaten none of theſe frutes. For of a greate number which they brought from thense, only one remayned vncorruptid, the other being putrifid by reaſon of the longe vyage. All ſuche as haue eaten of theym newly gathered in theyr natvye foyle, doo maruelously comande theyr swetenes and plefaunt taste. They dygge alſo owte of the ground certeyne rootes growyng of them ſelues, whiche they caule *Botatas*, much lyke vnto the nauie rootes of Mylayne, or the greate puffes or muſheroms of the earth. Howe ſoo euer they bee drefſed, eyther fryed or foldē, they gyue place to noo ſuch kynde of meate in plefant tendernes. The flyn is sumwhat towgher then eyther of nauies or muſheroms, and of earthy colour: But the inner meatē therof, is verye whyte. These are nooryſhed in gardens, as we fayde of *Iucca* in the fyfle Decade. They are alſo eaten rawe, and haue the taste of rawe cheiftautes, but are sumwhat ſweeter. Wee haue ſpoken ſufficiently of trees, herbes, and frutes. We wyll nowe therefore entreat of thynges ſcenitie. The laundes and defolat pastures of theſe regions, are inhabited and deouored of wild and terrible beastes, as Lions, Tygers, and ſuch other monſters as we nowe knowe, and haue byn defordyd of owlde autoures in tyme paſt. But there is especially one beast engendered here, in which nature hath endeouored to ſhewe her cunnyng. This beaſt is as bygge as an oxe, armed with a longe ſhoute lyke an Elephant, and yet no Elephant. Of the colour of an oxe and yet noo oxe. With the houſe of a horſe, and yet noo horſe. With eares alſo much lyke vnto an Elephant, but not ſoo open nor ſoo much hangyng downe: yet much wyder then the eares of any other beaſt. Of the beaſt which beareth her whelpes about with her in her ſeconde belly as in a purſe (beinge knowne to none of the owlde wryters) I haue ſpoken in the fyfle Decade which I doubtē not to haue coome to the handes of yowre holynes. Let vs nowe therfore declare what reſleth of the fluddes and ryuers of *Vraba*. The ryuer of *Dariena* faulēth into the goule of *Vraba* with a narowe chanel, ſcarſly able to beare the canoas or lyghters of that province, and runneth by the vyllage where they choſe theyr dwellyng place. But the ryuer in the corner of the goule which we fayde that *Vafchus* paſſed by, they found to bee. xxiiii. furlonges in breſth (which they caule a league) and of excedyng depth, as of two hundredth cubettes, faulynge into the goule by dyuers mouthes. They fay that this ryuer faulēth into the goule of *Vraba*, lyke as the ryuer *Iſer* (otherwyſe cauled *Danubius*, and *Danowe*) faulēth into the ſea Pontike, and *Nilus* into the ſea of Egypte: wherofore they named it *Grandis*, that is great: whiche alſo they affirme to nooryſhe many and great Crocodyles, as the owlde wryters telliſe of *Nilus*, and expecially as I haue learned by experience, hauiing fayled vp and downe the ryuer of *Nilus* when I was ſent ambafadour to the Soldane of Alcayr at the commandement of the moſte catholyke Kyng. What I may therfore gather owte of the wrytinges of ſo many learned autoures as concerninge the ryuer of *Nilus*, I knowe not. For they fay that nature hath gyuen two riuers of that name to water the lande, whether they wyll them to ſpryng owte of the mountaynes of the moone

The frutefulnes of Dariena.

Dyuers holome frutes of trees.

Guaiana,Pine trees.
Date trees.*Guaranana**Mameis*.*Guananala*.*Hous*.*Mirobalani*.
Hogges fed with mirobalans
Swynes fleſhe of better tast and more holum then mutton.

132

Frutes putrifid on the ſea.

Botatas.Lions and Tygers.
A ſtrange beaſt.The ryuers of Vraba.
The ryuer of Dariena faulēth into the goule of Vraba

A league is xxxiiii. furlonges

Danubius.
Grandis or Rio grandis.
A crocodile is much lyke an ente, but of excedyng bignes.
The autoure of this booke was in Egypt

The riu Nilus
in Egypte
Montes Linae.

The Portugales
navigacions.

The ryuer Senega,
another channell
of the ryuer of
Nilus.
Crocodiles.
The thyrd and
fourth Nilus.
Delagartos.

83

The ryuers
springe owt of
the mountaynes.

Crocodiles
engendred on
other ryuers
besyde Nilus in
Egypte.
Byrdes and foulcs.

Popingayes.

A philosophical
discourse as
concerning
the original of
springs and
ryuers.

The breadth of
the lande at
Vraba, from the
North Ocean to
the South sea.

A ryuer of
maruelous
byggesnes like the
first deacute the
ta. boke.

The great ryuer
Magnonus, liber.
iv. deacute. i.
Mariatambal,
Camamorus,
Paricora.

Paradise.
Lake w. lake
fyrst deacute.

The sea.

The land enclosed
with two seas.

or the sonne, or owte of the topes of the rowgh mountaines of *Ethiopia*: Affirming one of the same to faule into the goulfe of Egypte toward the Northe, and the other into the South Ocean sea. What shall wee faye in this place? Of that *Nilus* in Egypte, there is noo doubt. The Portugales also whiche fayle by the coastes of the Ethiopians cauled *Nigrita*, and by the kyngedome of *Melinda* passinge vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, amone theyr maruelous inuentions haue founde an other towarde the South, and ernestly affirme the same to bee also deriu'd from the mountaynes of the moone: And that it is an other channell of *Nilus*, bycause it bryngeth foorth Crocodyles, whereas it hathe not byn reade before tyme that any other ryuer noorysshed Crocodyles faininge onely *Nilus*. This ryuer, the Portugales caule *Senega*. It runneth through the Region of the *Nigritas*, beinge very frutefull towarde the north shore: but on the southe fyde sandie and rowghe. Crocodiles are also engendred herein. What shall wee then fay of this thyrd: ye I may wel fay the fourth. For I suppose them also to bee Crocodiles which *Colonus* with his coompany founde armed with scalles as harde as shelles in the ryuer cauled *Delagartos* wherof wee haue made mention before. Shall wee fay that these ryuers also of *Darien* and *Vraba*, haue theyr originall frome the mountaynes of the moone, wheras they spryngre owte of the nexte mountaynes, and can by noo meanes haue the same originnall with *Nilus* in Egypte, or that in *Nigrita*, or els that in the kyngedome of *Melinda*, from whence soouer they are deryued. Whereas these other (as we haue sayde) springe owt of the next mountaines whiche deuyde an other southe sea with noo greate dislaunce from the North Ocean. Wherfore it appeareth by experiance of such as haue traayled the worlde in owre time, that other waters besyde the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypte, maye lykewyse bryngre foorth Crocodiles. In the maryfhes alfo and fenes of the Regions of *Darien*, are founde greate plentie of Phefauntes and peacockes, (but not of variable coloures) with many other kyndes of byrdes and foulcs vnlkye vnto owres, as well apte to bee eaten, as also to delite the eares of menne with pleauant noyse. But owre Spanyardes, bycause they are ignorant in soulynge, take but fewe. Also innumerable popingayes of sondry kindest are found chattering in the groues of thos fenny places. Of these there are sume equall to Capons in byggens, and sume as lyttle as sparowes. But of the diuerſitie of popingayes, we haue spoken sufficiencie in the fyrt Decade. For in the rase of this large lande, *Colonus* hym selfe brought and sent to the courte a greate number of every kynde, the which it was lawfull for all the people to beholde, and are yet dayly brought in lyke maner. There remayneth yet one thyng moſte worthy to bee put in hystorye: The which I had rather to haue chaunced into the handes of *Cicerio* or *Linie*, then into myne. For the thyng is too maruelous in my estimation, that I synde my wytte more entanglede in the description hereof, then is fayne of the henne when shée feyth her younge chekyn inwraped in tow or flaxe. The breadth of that lande from the North Ocean to the south sea is only fyxe dayes journey by relation of th[e]inhabitantes. The multitude therfore and greatness of the ryuers on the one fide and on the other fyde the narowenes of the lande, bryng me into suche doube howe it can coome to passe, that in foo little a space of three dayes journey, measuryng frome the hygh topes of those mountaynes, I doo not vnderstande howe foo many and foo great ryuers, may haue recourse into this north sea. For it is to bee thought that as many doo flowe towarde th[e]inhabitantes of the southe. These ryuers of *Vraba* are but smaile, in comparisoun of many other in thos coastes. For the Spanyardes fay, that in the tyme of *Colonus*, they founde and passed by an other ryuer after this, whose goulfe faulynge into the sea, they affirme to bee lyttle leſſe then a hundred myles in the fyfe coastes of *Paria*, as wee haue fayne elsewhere. For they fay that it faulth from the topes of hygh mountaynes with foo swye and furious a course, that by the violence and greatness therof, it dryueth backe the sea althoough it bee rowghe and enforced with a contrary wynde. They all affirme lykewyse, that in all the large tracte therof, they felt noo fower or falte water, but that all the water was fresshe, sweete, and apte to bee dronke. Th[e]inhabitantes caule this ryuer *Maragnonus*: And the regions adiacint to the same, *Mariatambal*, *Camamorus*, and *Paricora*. Besyde thos ryuers whiche I haue named before, as *Darien*, *Grandis*, *Dabiba*, *Beragua*, *Santi Mathei*, *Boius goff*, *Delagartos*, and *Gaira*, they which of late haue searched thos coastes, haue founde many other. Deliberatinge therefore with my selfe, from whence these mountaynes beinge foo narowe and nere vnto the sea on bothe sydes, haue such great holowe caues or dennes of suche capacite, and from whence they are fylled to caſt foorth ful abundance of water, hereof also askynge them the opinions of the inhabitantes, they affirme them to bee of dyuers iudgements herein: Alleagynge fyrt the greatness of the mountaynes to bee the caufe, whiche they fay to bee very hygh, which thyng alſo *Colonus* the first fynder therof affirmeth to bee trewe: Adding there vnto that the Paradise of pleasure is in the topes of thos mountaynes whiche appear from the goulfe of *Paria* and *Os Draconis*, as he is fully perſuaded. They agree therfore that there is greate caues within these mountaynes: but it refleſheth to conſider from whence they are fylled. If therefore all the ryuers of fresshe waters by th[e]opinion of manye, do foo flowe owte of the sea as dryuen and compelled thronghe the paffages or pores of the earth by the ponderous weight of the ſea it ſelfe, as we fee them breake furth of the ſprynges and direcute their courſe to the ſea ageyne, then the thyng is leſſe to bee marueyld at here then in other places. For wee haue not redde that in any other place twoo ſuch ſeas haue enuironed any lande with foo narowe lymittes. For it hath on the right fyde, the great Ocean where the ſonne goeth downe on the leſte hande: And an other

on the other syde where the sonne ryseth, nothyng inferiour to the fyrt in greatness, for they suppose it to bee myxte and ioyned as all one with the sea of East India.

84

Conuersion of
ayer into water in
the caues of
mountaynes.

This lande therefore being burdened with so great a weight on the one syde and on the other (yf this opinion bee of anye value) is enforced to swalowe vp such deuoured waters, and ageyne to cast foorth the same in open springes and stremes. But if wee shall denye that the earth draweth humours of the sea, and agree that all fountaynes or sprynges are engendered of the conuercion or turnyng of ayer into water distilling within the holowe places of the montaynes (as the most part thinke) we wyll gyue place rather to th[e]autoritic of them whiche stynke to those reasons, then that owe sene is satisfied of the full truthe therof. Yet doo I not repugne that in sume caues of mountaynes, water is turned into ayer. For I my selfe haue feene, howe in the caues of manye mountaynes in Spayne, in maner showers of rayne doo faule continually: And that he water gathered by this meanes, doth send furth certeyne ryuers by the fydes of the mountaynes, wherwith al fuche trees as are planted on the stiepe or foote of the mountaynes, as vines, Oliue trees, and suche other, are watered. And this especially in one place: As the ryght honorable Lodouike the Cardinall of Aragonie moft obsequious to yowre holynes, and twoo other byshoppes of Italy, wherof the one is *Silvius Pandonus*, and the other an Archebysshop (whose name and tytle I doo not remember) can beare me wytnes. For when wee were togyther at *Granata*, lately delyuered from the dominion of the Moores, and walked for owe paſtyme to certeine pleauante hylles (by the whiche there ranne fayre ryuer) Whyle Cardinall Lodouike occupied hym ſelfe in shutyng at byrdes whiche were in the buſhes nere vnto the ryuer, I and the other twoo byſhops determined to clime the mountaynes to ſearche th[e]originall and ſpringe of the ryuer: for wee were not farre from the toppes thereof. Folowyng therefore the course of the ryuer, wee founde a greate caue in which was continuall faule of water as it had byn a thoure of rayne: the water wherof, faulynge into a trenche made with mans hand, encreaſeth to a ryuer, and runneth downe by the fydes of the mountaynes. The lyke is alſo ſeen in this famous towne of *Valladolido* (where we nowe ſuiorne) in a certeyne greene cloſe, not paſt a furlonge diſtant from the waules of the towne. I graunte therfore that in certeyne places by conuercion of the ayrie dewe into water within the caues of ſuche mountaynes, many sprynges and ryuers are engendered. But I ſuppoſe that nature was not follicitate to bryng ſurthe ſuche greate fluds by this ſo ſmaule industry. Twoo reaſons therfore, do found beſte to my iudgement: whereof the one is, the often faule of rayne: The other, the continuall autumne or spryng tyme which is in thoſe regions beinge ſoo nere vnto the Equinoctiall that the common people can perceave no diſference betwene the length of the day and the night throughe owt al the yere whereas theſe two ſeaſons are more apte to engender abundance of rayne then either extreme wynter or feruent ſummer. An other reaſon in effect much lyke vnto the fyrt, is this: If the ſea bee full of pores, and that by the pores therof beinge opened by the Southe windes, wee ſhal confeſt that vapours are lyfted vp wherof the watery cloudes are engendered, this lande muſt needes bee moyſted with moouhoures then anye other, yf it bee as narowe as they fayre, and enuironed with twoo mayne ſeas collaterally beatinge on the fame. Howe ſo euer it be: I can not but gyue credit to the report of ſuch worthy men as haue recourse to thoſe regions: And can noo leſſe then declare the fame albeſt it may ſeeme incrediblē to ſume ignorant perſons not knowyng the poure of nature to whom Plinie was perſuaded that nothyng was imposſible. Wee haue therfore thought it good to make this diſcourse by the way of argument, leaſt on the one syde, men of good lernyng and iudgement, and on the other syde, ſuche as are ſtudious to fynde occaſions of quarelyng in other mens wrytynges, ſhulde iudge vs to bee ſo vndescreete lyghtly to gyue credite to every tale not beinge conformant to reaſon. But of the force and greate violence of thoſe freſhle waters, which repulſing the ſea make ſo greate a goule (as we haue ſayde) I thiñe the caufe therof to bee the greate multitude of fluddes and ryuers, whiche beinge gathered together, make ſo great a poole: and not one ryuer as they ſuppoſe. And for as muche as the mountaynes are excedyng hyghe and ſtiepe, I thiñe the violence of the faule of the waters to be of ſuch force, that this conflicte betwene the waters, is cauſed by th[e]impulfion of the poole that the falte water may not enter into the goule. But here perhaſſe ſume wyll marueyle at me why I ſhulde marueyle ſoo muche hereat, ſpeakyng vnto me ſcornefully after this maner. Why dothe he foo marueyle at the greate ryuers of theſe Regions? Haſte not Itaſe his *Eridanus*, named the kyngē of ryuers of the owlde wryters? Haue not other regions alſo the lyke? as wee reede of *Tanais*, *Ganges*, and *Danubius*, which are fayde ſoo to ouercome the ſea, that freſhle water may be drawne forte myles within the fame. Theſe menne I wooldē ſatisfie with this anſwere. The famous ryuer of *Padus*, in Itaſe (whiche they nowe caule *Po*, and was of the Greeks cauled *Eridanus*) hath the greate mountaynes cauled *Alpes* diuiding Fraunce, Germanie, and Pannonic from Itaſe, lyng at the backe therof as it were bulwarges full of moyſture: And with a longe trachte receauinge *Ticinum* with innumerable other great ryuers, faulthe into the ſea Adriatike. The lyke is alſo to bee underſtode of the other. But theſe ryuers (as owe men were enformed by the kyngē) faul into the Ocean ſea wiſh larger and fuller chanelles nere hand. And ſume there are which affirme this lande to bee very large in other places althoſh it bee but narowe here. There commeth alſo to my remembrance an other caufe: the whiche althoſh it bee of no greate force, yet doo I entende to wryte it.

Showers of rayne
in the caues of
mountaynes

The often fal of
rayne and
continuall ſpringe
time.
The Equinoctiall.

The pores of the
ſea and the South
wynd.

Nothinge
impossible to the
poure of nature.

The caufe of the
greatnes and force
of the goule.

Hygh and ſtiepe
hylles

85
The fludde
Eridanus.
Tanais.
Ganges.
Danubius.
Padus.
Alpes.

Ticinum.
The ſea Adriatike,
ſume caule the
goule of Veneſe
An other reaſon

The ryuer
Alpheus.

Arethusa

Longe caues in
the mountaynes.

The length and
forme of the Iland.
Cap. S. Augusti.
Eight tyme
longer then Italy
besydes that part
whiche the
portugales
possesse. Italy
is in length a
thousand and two
myles, and in breadth
four hundred
and ten.

Cardes of the sea.
The cardes of
*Americus
Vesputius.*

The cardes of
Colonus.

The cardes of
*Iohannes de la
Cossa.*

86

The cardes of
Andreas Moralis.

The maner of
measuring the
cardes.

Loke decade i.
liber. iii.
The Iland of
Cabouerde.

Maragnonum
Os Draconis

A league.
Cuchibacoa.

Caramairi.
Carthago.
The Iland *Fortis.*
Vraba.
Beragua.

Perhappes therfore the length of the lande reachyng far from the Easte to the weste, if it bee narowe, may bee a helpe hereunto. For as wee reade that the ryuer *Alpheus* passeth through the holowe places vnder the sea from the citie of *Elis* in *Peloponeso*, and breaketh foorth at the fountayne or spryng *Arethusa* in the Iland of *Sicilia*, so is it possible that thefe mountaynes may haue suche longe caues perteynyng vnto them, that they may be the receptacles of the water passing through the landes beinge farre distante: And that the fame waters commynge by soo longe a tracte, may in the way bee greatly encreased by the conuercion of ayer into water, as wee haue fayde. Thus muche haue I spoken freely, permittinge bothe to them whiche doo frenedly enterperte other mens doinges, and also to the malicious scorners, to take the thynges even as them lyfeth. For hetherto I can make no further declaration hereof. But when the truth shalbe better knownen, I wyl do my diligence to commit the fame to writyng. Nowe therefore, forasmuche as we haue spoken thus muche of the breadth of this land, we entend to desribe the length and forme of the fame.



Hat lande reacheth foorth into the sea even as doth Italy, althowgh not like the legge of a man as it doth. But I nowe compare a Pigmecan or a dwarfe to a giant. For that part therof which the Spaniardes haue ouer runne from the fayde Easte poynt which reacheth towarde the sea Atlantike (the ende not beinge yet founde towarde the Weste) is more then eyght tymes longer then Italye. And by what reason I am moued to say eyght tymes, yowre holynes shall vnderstande. From the tyme therefore that I syrste determined to obeye their requestes who wylled me fyrsle in yowre name to wryte thefe thynges in the laten tonge, I dyd my endeououre that all thinges myght coome foorth with dewe tryall and experiance. Wherupon I repayed to the byshoppe of *Burges* beinge the chiese refuge of this nauigation. As wee were therfore secretly togither in one chamber, we had many instrumentes perteynyng to thefe affayres as globes and manye of those mappes which are commonly cauled the shipmans cardes, or cardes of the sea. Of the which, one was drawnen by the Portugales, wherunto *Americus Vesputius* is fayde to haue put to his hande, beinge a man moste experte in this facultie and a Florentyne borne: who also vnder the stypende of the Portugales, hadde fayled towarde the south pole many degrees beyond the Equinoctiall. In this carde we founde the fyrsle fronte of this land to bee brooder then the kynges of *Vraba* had perfauded owe men of theyr mountaynes. To an other, *Colonus* the Admiral whyle he yet lyued and searched those places had gyuen the beginnynghe with his owne handes: Wherunto *Bartholomeus Colonus* his brother and Lieutenaunt had addid his judgement, for he also, had fayled aboute those coastes. Of the Spanyardes lykewyfe, as many as thought them selues to haue any knowleage what perteyned to measure the lande and the sea, drewe certeyne cardes in parchment as concernyng thefe nauigations. Of all other, they most esteeme them which *Johannes de la Cossa* the coompanion of *Fogeda* (whom wee fayde to bee flayne of the people of *Caramairi* in the haun *Carthago*) and an other expert pylot cauled *Andreas Moralis*, had set foorth. And this awfull for the greate experiance which they bothe hadde (to whom thefe tractes were as wel knownen as the chambers of theyr owne houses) as also that they were thought to bee cunnering in that parte of Cognographie which teacheth the description and measuringe of the sea. Conferringe therefore all thefe cardes togither, in euery of the whiche was drawnen a lyne expressinge, not the myles, but leagues after the maner of the Spanyardes, we tooke owe compafes and beganne to measure the sea coastes after this order. From that poynt or fronte which we fayde to bee included within the lyne perteynyng to the Portugales iurisdiction, beinge drawnen by the paralleles of the Ilandes of *Cabouerde*, but a hundredth leagues further towarde the weste (which they haue nowe also searched on every fyde) we founde three hundredth leagues to the enterance of the ryuer *Maragnonum*: And from thense to *Os Draconis*, seuen hundredth leagues: but sumwhat lesse in the deserpcion of sume: For they doo not agree in al poyntes exquisitely. The Spanyardes wyll that a league conteynge fourte myles by sea and but three by lande. From *Os Draconis*, to the cape or poynt of *Cuchibacoa*, which beinge passed, there is a goufle on the lefte hande, we measured three hundredth leagues in one carde, and much thereabout in an other. From this poynt of *Cuchibacoa*, to the region of *Caramairi* in which is the haun *Carthago* (which sum caule *Carthagena*) we found about a hundredth and seuentie leagues. From *Caramairi* to the Ilande *Fortis*, fiftie leagues. From thense to the goufles of *Vraba* amonge the which is the vyllage cauled *Sancta Maria Antiqua* where the Spanyardes haye apoynted theyr habitation, only. xxxiii. leagues. From the ryuer of *Vraba* in the prouince of *Dariena* to the ryuer of *Beragua*

may bee
the sea
land of
that they
the waters
to water,
frendely
lysteth.
I do my
e of the

of a man
t therof
towarde
en eyght
s, yowre
yeir
tonge, I
repayred
ryther in
mappes
n by the
e in this
the south
brooder
Admiral
herunto
about e
ge what
nauigati
om we
cauled
o whom
t to bee
ferringe
s, but
coastes
e to the
leagues
leagues
ies: but
nyardes
cape or
ndrethe
region of
eth and
Vraba
d theyr
Beragua

where *Nicufa* hadde intended to haue fastened his foote if god hadde not otherwyse decreed, we measured a hundredth and thirtie leagues. Frome *Beragua* to that ryuer whiche wee fayne of *Colonus* to bee cauled *Sancti Mathei*, in the which also *Nicufa* loosinge his carauell, wandered in greate calamities, we founde in owre cardes, onely a hundredth and fortie leagues: Yet many other which of late tyme haue coome frome these partes, haue descrybed many moo leagues in this tracte from the ryuer of *Sancti Mathei*: In which alfo, they place dyuers ryuers, as *Aburema* with the Ilande cauled *Scutum Cateba* lyng before it, whose kynges name is *Facies combufla*. Lykewise an other ryuer cauled *Zobraba*: after that, *Vrida*: and then *Duraba* in the which gold is founde. Furthermore, many goodly hauen, as *Cerabaro* and *Hiebra*, foo cauled of th[em] inhabitants. And thus if yowre holynes wyll conferre these numbers togither, yow shall fynde in this accompte, a thousand ffe hundred twentie and fyue leagues, whiche amounte to fyue thousande and feuen hundredth myles from the poyn of *Sancti Mathei*, which they caule *Sinum perditorum*: that is, the goulfe of the loste men. But we may not leaue here. For after this, one *Aflur Ouentes*, otherwyse named *Iohannes Dias de Solis*, borne in *Nebrija* (which bringeth foorth many lerned men) saylinge frome this ryuer towarde the weste, ouer ranne manye coastes and leagues: But the myddeli of that shore, bendethe towarde the North: And it is therfore directly placed in order with the other. Yet may we gather by a diameter or ryght lyne, about three hundredth leagues. Hereby maye yowre gather what is the length of this lande. But of the breadth, perhaps wee shall hereafter haue further knowlage. Let vs nowe speake sumwhat of the varietie of the degrees of the elevation of the pole starres. This lande therfore, althoug it reache foorth from the East into the Weste, yet is it crooked and hath the poyn of bendyng so toward the south, that it lofeth the right of the North pole, and is extended beyonde the Equinoctial lyne feuen degrees towarde the South pole. But the poyn of herof, perteyneth to the iurisdiction of the Portugales as we haue fayne. Leauinge this poyn and saylinge toward Paria the north starre is feene ageyne, and is so much the more lyfted vp, in howe much the region enclyneth more towarde the Weste. The Spaniardes therfore, haue dyuers degrees of elevations, vntyl they come to *Dariena* beinge their chief station and dwellynge place in thos landes. For they haue forsaken *Beragua*, where they found the North pole eleuate, viii. degrees. But from hense the lande doth so muche bende towarde the North, that it is there in maner equall with the degrees of the strayghtes of Hercules pylers: especially yf wee measure certeyne landes founde by them towarde the Northe syde of *Hispaniola*. Emonge the whiche, there is an Ilande, about three hundredth and. xxv. leagues from *Hispaniola*, as they say whiche haue searched the same, named *Boiuca* or *Agnaneo*, in the which is a continual spryng of runnyng water of such maruelous vertue, that the water therof beinge dronk, perhaps with fume dyete, maketh owl men younge ageyne. And here must I make protestacion to yowre holynes, not to thynde this to bee fayne lightly or rashely. For they haue so spredde this rumour for a truth throwghout all the courte, that not onely all the people, but also many of them whom wisedome or fortune hath diuided from the common fort, thinke it to be true. But if yow shal aske my opinion herein, I wyl answere that I wyl not attribute so greate poure to nature: but that god hath noo lesse referred this prerogatiue to hym selfe, then to searche the hertes of men, or to gyue substance to priuation, (that is) beinge to noo beinge: Excepte we shall beleue the fable of *Colchis* of *Efon* renouate, to bee as trewe as the wrytinges of *Sibylla Erythrea*. Albeit perhaps the scoles of phisitiens and naturall philosophers wyll not muche flycke to affirme that by th[e]use of certeyne secrete medecines and dyete, the accidentes of age (as they caule them) may be longe hydden and deferred, which they wyll to bee vnderstoode, by the renouacion of age. And to haue fayne thus much of the length and breadthe of these Regions, and of the rowghe and hugious mountaynes with their watery caues, also of the dyuers degrees of that lande, I thinke it sufficient. But I thought it not good to let passe what chaunced to these miserable men amone theyr generall calamities. I remember that when I was a chylde, mee thought my bowelles grated and that my spirites were maruelously troubled for vryte pitie, when I readde in the poet Virgil howe *Achemenides* was lefte of *Vlysses* vpon the sea bankes amone the giantes cauled *Cyclopes* where for the space of many dayes from the departinge of *Vlysses* vntyll the commyng of *Eneas* he eate none other meat but only berryes and hawes. But owre vnfortunate Spanyardes whiche folowed *Nicufa* to inhabite *Beragua*, woold haue esemed hawes and berryes for greate delicates. What shulde I haue speake of the heade of an alle bowght for a greate price, and of such other extremities as men haue suffered in townes besieged? After that *Nicufa* hadde determinyd to leaue *Beragua* for the barrennes of the foyle, he attempted to searche *Portus Bellum*, and then the coastes of the poyn cauled *Marmor*, if he myght there fynde a place more fortunate to inhabite. In this meane tyme, so greuous famen oppressed his fouldiers, that they neyther absteyned from eatinge of mangy dogges which they had with them awell for theyr defence as for huntyng (for in the warre ageynst the naked people, dogges stode them in greate steade) nor yet sumtymes from the slayne inhabitantes. For they founde not there any frutesfull trees or plentie of foules as in *Dariena*, but a barren grounde and not meete to bee inhabited. Here certeyne of the fouldiers made a bargein with one of theyr felowes for the price of a leane dogge, who also was almooste deade for hunger: They gaue the owner of the dogge many of those pieces of golde which they caule *Pefos* or golden Castellans. Thus agreeinge of the

R. Sancti
Mathei

R. Aburema
Scutum Cateba
R. Zobraba.
Vrida.
Duraba.
Cerabaro.
Hiebra.
Note.
R. d los perditos
The nauigation of
Iohannes Dias.

The elevation of
the pole.

The iurisdiction
of the Portugales.
Paria.

Dariena.
Beragua.

Hercules pylers.

87
The Ilande
Hoiuca or
Agnaneo.
A water of
maruelous vertue.
The renouation
of age.

The accidents of
age may bee
hydden.

Achemenides.
Vlysses.
Eneas.
Extreme hunger.
This was at the
siege of
ierusalem.

Portus Bellus
Marmor.
Mangy doggs eaten.

A mangy dog
dere sold.

Broth of a manky
dogs skynne.
Toades eaten

A deade man
eaten.

88

Note.

Petrus Arias
whom the
Spaniardes cau't
Pediaria.

price, they fled the dogge to bee eaten, and caste his mangie skynne with the bones of the heade hangyng thereto, amonge the bushes. The day folowynge, a certeyne footeman of theyr company, chaunced to fynde the skynne beinge nowe full of maggottes and flynyng. He brought it home with hym, fodde it, and eate it. Many reforted to hym with theyr dysfhes for the brothe of the fode skynne, proferinge hym for euerie dysfhefull a piece of golde. An other founde twoo toades and fodde them which a fiche man bought of hym for twoo fyne shertes curiouly wrought of lynes intermyxt with golde. Certeyn other wanderinge abowte to seeke for vytayles, founde in a patheway in the myddest of a fytelde, a deade man of th[e]inhabitantes whiche had byn flayne of his owne coompanye and was nowe rotten and flynyng. They drewe hym a fyde, dismemberde hym fecreately, rostyd hym and eate hym, therewith affwagynge theyr hunger as yf they had byn fedde with pheafauentes. One also, which departinge from his companions in the nyght season, went a fyhyng amone the reedes of the maryfhes, lyed only with flyme or mudde for the space of certeyne dayes, vntyll at the lengthe creepinge and almoste deade, he founde the way to his felowes. And thus these miserable men of *Beragua* vexed with thefe and siche other aff[li]ctions, were browgh[t]e from the number of feuen hundred threfcore and ten souldiers, scarfly to forte, beinge nowe also added to the coompany of them in *Dariena*. Fewe were flayne of th[e]inhabitantes. But the resydewe consumed by famen, breathed owt theyr wery fowles, openyng a waye to the newe landes for such as shal coome after them, appeasinge the fury of the barbarous nations, with the price of theyr bludde. Consyderinge therfore after these stormes, with what ease other men shall ouerrunne and inhabite these landes, in respecte to the calamities that these men haue suffered, they shall feeme to goo to bryde feastes where all thynges are redy prepared ageynst their commynge. But where *Petrus Arias* arryued with the kynges nauie and newe supply of men, to this houre I knowe no certentie. What shall chaunce herafter I wyll make diligente inquisition if I shall vnderstante this to bee acceptable to yowre holynes. Thus I byd yowe harteley farewell: from the courte of the moothle Catholyke kyng, the daye befoore the nones of December, in the yeare of Christe, M. D. XIIII.



ngynge
nde the
cate it.
euerie
of hym
owte to
whiche
a fyde,
ad byn
yfhyng
ntyll at
men of
ndreth
arena.
r wery
of the
at easc
ffered.
. But
owe no
to bee
holyne

THE FYRST BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE, TO THE BYSSHOPPE OF ROME LEO THE TENTH.



Was determyned (moste holye father) to haue closed vp the gates to this newe worlde, supposinge that I had wandered farre enowgh in the coastes therof, while in the meane time newe letters were brought me frome thense, which caused me ageyne to take my penne in hande. For I receaued letters not only from certeyne of myne acquaintaunce there, but also frome *Vaschus Nunnes* whome we sayde by the confidence of his owne poure with his confetherates, to haue vsurped the gouernaunce of *Dariena* after the reiecting of *Nicuesa* and *Ancifus*, Lieuetenantes. By his letter wrytten after his warlyke maner, wee vnderstand that he hath passed ouer the mountaynes, diuidyng the Ocean knownen to vs, from the other mayne sea on the south fyde of this lande hetherto vnownen. His epistell is greater then that cauled *Caprensis de Seiano*. But wee haue gathered out of that and other, onely suche thynges as we thought moste worthy to bee noted. *Vaschus* foo behaued hym selfe in these affayres, that he dyd not ouerly pacifie the kynges

displeasure conceaued ageynst hym, but also made hym so fauorable and gracious good lordre towards hym, that he rewarded him and his coompagnions with many honorable gyftes and priuileges for theyr attempts. Wherfore I desyre yowre holynes to inclyne yowre attentive cares, and to confyder with a ioyfull mynde what they haue brougght to passe in these great enterpryses. For this valiant nation (the Spanyardes I meane) haue not onely with greate paynes and innumerable dangers subdued to the Christian empire, infinite hundreds and legions, but also myriades of men. *Vaschus Nunnes* therfore, whether it were that he was impacient of Idenes (for a valiente mynde can not rest in one place or bee vnooccupied) or leaste any other shulde preuent hym in so great a matter (suspecting the newe governour *Petrus Arias*) or being moued by both these causes, and especially for that the kyng had taken displeasure with hym for such thynges as he had doone before, toke th[e]adventure uppon hym with a fewe men to brynghe that to passe which the sonne of kyng *Comogrus* thought could hardly haue byn doone with the ayde of a thoufande men, wherof *Petrus Arias* was appoynted capitayne for the same purpose. Assemblynge therfore certeyne of the owlde souldiers of *Dariena*, and many of those whiche came lately from *Hispaniola*, allured by the fame of greater plentie of golde, he gathered an armye of a hundredth fourescore and tenne men. Thus beinge furnysshed and redie to take his vyage by sea, whyle the wynde serued hym, he departed frome *Dariena* with one brygantyne and tenne of theyr boates whiche they caule Canoas as wee haue sayde. Fyrst therfore arruynghe in the dominion of *Careta* kyng of *Coiba* and frende to the Christians, and leauynghe his shyppe and boates there, he made his deuout prayers to almyghtie god, and therwith went forwarde on his iourney by lande toward the mountaynes. Here he fyrst entered into the region of kyng *Poncha*, who fledde at his commyng as he had doone before. But *Vaschus* sent messengers to hym by the conduct of certeyne of *Careta* his men, promysinge hym frendship and defence ageynst his enemies, with many other benefites. *Poncha* thus entysed with the fayre speache and frendly profers bothe of owe men and of the Caretans, came to owr men gladly and wyllyngely makynge a league of frendshipe with them. *Vaschus* enterteyned hym very frendly, and persuaded him never therafter to stande in feare. Thus they ioyned handes, embrased, and gaue greate gyftes the one to the other to knytte vp the knotte of continuall amitie. *Poncha* gaue *Vaschus* a hundredth and ten pounds weyght of golde, of that pounde which the Spanyardes caule *Pefum*. He had no greater plentie of golde at this tyme, by reason he was spoyled the yeare before as we haue sayde. *Vaschus* to recompence one benefyte with an other, gaue hym certeyne of owe thynges, as counterfet rynges, Christal stones, copper cheynes and brafelettes, haukes belles, lokynge glaffes, and suche other fyne stufse. These thynges they set much by and greatly esteeme. For suche thynges as are straunge, are euyer where counted precious. He gaue also to *Poncha* certeyne axes to fell trees: which he accepted as a princely gyfte,

Vaschus Nunnes,
gouvernor of
Dariena

The newe south
Ocean.

Commendation of
the Spanyardes.

A valient mynd
can not bee ydle.

A desperate
adventure

Vaschus his viage
toward the golden
mountaynes.

Careta kyng of
Coiba

Kyng *Poncha*

80

A hundredth and x
pounds weyght
of golde.

Strange things
are counted
precious.

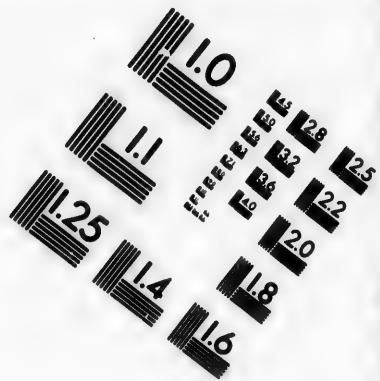
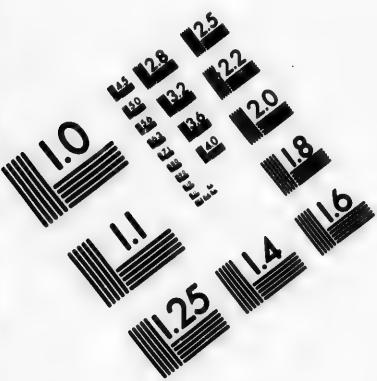
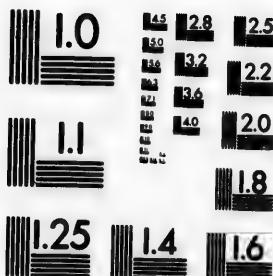
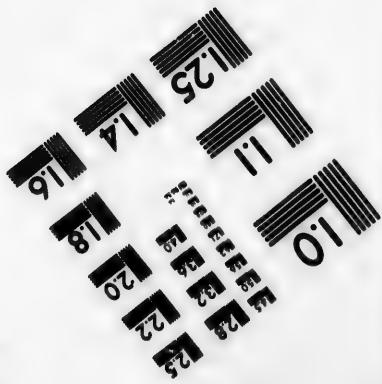
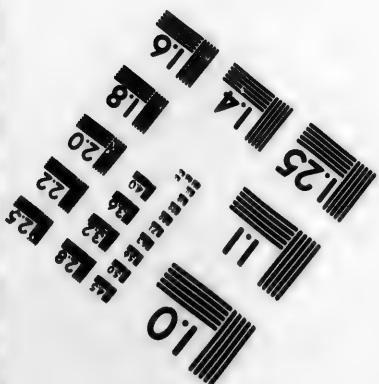


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



6"



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

2.8
2.5
2.2
2.0
1.8

1.0

Lacke of iron

A stone in the
steede of fren-Superfluites
hynder libertie.

Carpenters.

Brydges.

The region of
Quarequa.Kinge Quarequa
is dryuen to
flyght.

Hargabusies.

Crossebowes

vi. C. [six hundred]
Barbarians are
slaine
Vnnatural lechery.90
The vse of dogges
in the warre
against the naked
Barbarians.Natural hatred
of vnnatural sinne.Palatin.
I wolde all men
were of this
opinion.The haruest is
great and the
woorkemen but
fewe.

Warrelyke people.

The hygher the
cuulder.

bycause they lacke Iren and all other metals except golde: by reson wherof they are enforced with greate laboure to cut theyr trees to buylde theyr houfes, and espeially to make theyr boates holowe withoute instrumenetes of Iren, with certeyne sharpe stones whiche they fynde in the ryuers. Thus *Vafchus* leauyng all thynges in safetie behynd hym, marched forwarde with his armye towarde the mountaynes, by the conducte of certeyne guydes and labourers which *Poncha* had gyuen hym, as well to leade hym the way, as also to cary his baggages and open the straigtes through the desolate places and craggy rockes full of the dennes of wylde beastes. For there is feldoome entercourse or byinge and fellynge betwene these naked people, bycause they stand in neede of fewe thynges and haue not the vfe of money. But yf at any tyme they exercise any bartering they doo it but nere hande, exchangynge golde for housholde stufise with theyr confins whiche sumewhat esteeme the fame for ornamente when it is wrought. Other superfluites they vterly contemne, as hynderances of theyr sweete libertie, forasmuch as they are gyuen only to play and Idelnes. And for this cause, the high wayes which lye betwene theyr regions are not much worne with many iorneyes. Yet haue theyr scoutes certeyne priuie markes whereby they knowe the waye the one to inuade the others dominions, and spoyle and infeste them felues on bothe fydes with mutual incursions priuile in the nyght seeson. By the helpe therfore of theyr guydes and labourers, with owe carpenters, he passed ouer the horrible mountaynes and many greate ryuers lyng in the way, ouer the which he made brydges eyther with pyls or trunkes of trees. And here doo I let passe manye thynges whiche they suffered for lacke of necessaries, beinge also in maner ouercome with extreme laboure, leaste I shulde bee tedious in rehersinge thynges of snaule value. But I haue thought it good not to omite such doinges as he had with the kynges by the waye. Therefore or euer he came to the toppes of the hygh mountaynes, he entered into a Region cauled *Quarequa*, and mette with the kyng thereof cauled by the same name, with a greate bande of men armed after theyr maner, as with bowes and arrowes, longe and brode two handed swordes made of wodde, longe staves hardened at the endes with fyer, darpes also and flynges. He came proudly and cruelly ageynst owe men, and sent messengers to them to byd theym stande and procede no further: demaundynge whither they went and what they hadde to doo there. Herewith he came forth and shewed hym selfe beinge appareled with al his nobilitie: but the other were all naked. Then approching towarde owe men, he threatened them with a lions countenance to depart from thense except they woold bee flayne evry mothers sonne. When owe men denyed that they woold goo backe, he assayled them fiercely. But the battayle was fone synfyshed. For as foone as they harde the noysse of the hargabusies, they beleued that owe menne caried thunder and lyghtenyng about with them. Many also beinge flayne and fore wounded with quarels of crossebowes, they turned their backes and fledde. Owe men folowyng them in the chafe, hewed them in piefes as the butchers doo fleſſe in the shamwelles, from one an arme, from an other a legge, from hym a buttocke, from an other a shulder, and from fume the necke from the bodye at one stroke. Thus, syxe hundred of them with theyr kynge, were flayne lyke brute beastes. *Vafchus* founde the houfe of this kyng infected with most abominable and vnnaturall lechery. For he founde the kynges brother and many other younge men in womens apparell, smoth and effeminately decked, which by the report of such as dwelte abowte hym he abused with preposterous venus. Of these abowte the number of fortie, he commaunded to bee gyuen for a pray to his dogges. For (as we haue sayd) the Spaniardes vſe [*t*]he helpe of dogges in their warres ageynst the naked people whom they inuade as fiercely and rauenyngeley as yf they were wylde boares or hartes. In foo muche that owe Spanyardes haue founde theyr dogges noo leſſe faythful to them in all daungious and enterpryses, then dyd the Colophonians or Castabalenes which instituted hole armes of dogges too made to serue in the warres, that beinge accustomed to place them in the fore fronte of the battayles, they never shrunke or gaue backe. When the people had harde of the feuer punyfishment which owe men had executed vpon that fylthy kynde of men, they reforted to theim as it had byn to Hercules for refuge, by violence bryngynge with them al such as they knewe to bee infected with that pestilence, spettynge in theyr faces and crynge owte to owe men to take reuenge of them and rydde them owte of the worlde from amone men as contagios beastes. This stinkynge abomination hadde not yet entered amone the people, but was exercized onely by the noble men and gentleman. But the people lyftinge vp theyr handes and eyes toward heauen, gaue tokens that god was greuously offendid with such vyle deedes. Affirmynge this to bee the caufe of theyr foo many thunderinges, lyghtnyng, and tempestes wherwith they are too often troublid: And of the ouerflowinge of waters which drowne theyr fels and frutes, whereof famenne and dyuers diseased infue, as they simlye and faythfully beleue, althowgh they knowe none other god then the foonne, whom onely they honoure, thinkyng that dooth bothe gyue and take awaye as it is pleased or offended. Yet are they very docible, and easie to bee allureid to owe customes and religion, if they had any teachers. In theyr language there is nothyng vnplesaunte to the eare or harde to bee pronounced, but that all theyr woordes may bee wrytten with latin letters as wee sayde of th[e]inhabitantes of *Hyspaniola*. It is a warlike nation, and hath byn euer hetherto moleſtous to theyr bortherers. But the region is not fortunate with frutful ground or plentie of gold. Yet is it full of greate barren mountaynes beinge sumewhat colde by reson of theyr heught. And

therfore the noble men and gentlemen are apparell. But the common people lyue content onely with the benefytes of nature. There is a region not past two dayes iorney distant from *Quarequa*, in which they founde only blacke Moores: and those excedyng fierce and cruell. They suppose that in tyme paste certeyne blacke mores sayled thether out of *Aethiopia* to robbe: and that by shippewrake or fume other chaunce, they were dryuen to those mountaynes. Th[e]jnhabitantes of *Quarequa* lyue in continual warre and debate with these blacke men. Here *Vaschus* leauinge in *Quarequa* many of his souldiers (which by reason they were not yet accustomed to such trauayles and hunger, fell into dyuers diseases) tooke with hym certeyne guydes of the Quarequatans to conduct hym to the toppes of the mountaynes. From the palacie of kyng *Poncha*, to the prospet of the other south sea, is only fyxe dayes iorney: the which nevertheleſſe by reaſon of many hynderances and chaunces, and eſpecially for lacke of vytales, he coulde accompliſh in noo leſſe then. xxv. dayes. But at the length, the feuenthe daye of the calendes of October, he behelde with woonderinge eyes the toppes of the hygh mountaynes shewed vnto hym by the guydes of *Quarequa*, from the whiche he myght fee the other ſea fo longe looked for, and neuer ſene before of any man commynge owt of owre worlde. Approching therefore to the toppes of the mountaynes, he comandaund his armye to ſtey, and went him ſelfe alone to the toppe, as it were to take the fyrt poſtſion therof. Where, faulynge proſtrate vpon the grounde, and rayfinge hym ſelfe ageyne vpon his knees as is the maner of the Christians to pray, lyftynge vppe his eyes and handes towarde heauen, and directing his face towarde the newe founded ſouth ſea, he poored forth his humble and devout prayers before almyghtie God as a ſpirituall ſacrifice with thankes gwyng, that it had pleafed his diuine maiestie to refere vnto that day the victorie and praife of ſo greate a thynge vnto hym, beinge a man but of maule witte and knowleage, of lyttle experienſe and bafe parentage. When he had thus made his prayers after his warlike maner he beckened with his hande to his coompanions to coome to hym, ſhewynge them the greate mayne ſea heretofore vñknowne to th[e]jnhabitantes of Europe, Aphrike, and Afia. Here ageyne he fell to his prayers as before: deſyringe almyghtie God and the bleffed virgin to fauour his beginniges, and to gyue hym good ſuccesse to ſubdue thoſe landes to the glorie of his holy name and encrease of his trewe religion. All his coompanions dyd lykewyfe, and prayfed god with loude voyces for ioye. Then *Vaschus*, with no leſſe manlye corage then Hanniball of Carthage ſhewed his ſouldiers Italye and the promontories of the Alpes, exhorted his men to lyft vp their hartes, and to behoulde the lande even nowe vnder theyr feete, and the ſea before theyr eyes, whiche ſhulde bee vnto them a full and iuft rewarde of theyr great laboures and trauayles nowe ouerpaffed. When he had ſayde theſe woordes, he comandaund them to raiſe certeine heapes of ſtones in the ſteede of alters for a token of poſtſion. Then deſcendyng from the toppes of the mountaynes, leaſt ſuch as might come after hym ſhulde argue hym of lyngē or falſhod, he wrote the kyng of Castelles name here and there on the barkes of the trees bothe on the ryght hande and on the lefte: and rayfed heapes of ſtones all the way that he went, vnyll he came to the region of the nexte kyng towarde the ſouth whiche name was *Chiapes*. This kyng came foorth ageynſt hym with a greate multitude of men: threateninge and forbyddyng hym not onely to paſſe through his dominions, but also to goo no further. Herevpon, *Vaschus* fet his battayle in array, and exhorted his men (beinge nowe but fewe) fiercely to affayle theyr enemies, and to eſteeme them not better then dogges meate as they ſhulde bee shortly. Placeinge therfore the hargabuifers and mafies in the forefronte, they ſaluted kyng *Chiapes* and his men with ſuich a larame, that when they hard the noyſe of the gunnes, ſaw the flames of fyre, and ſmelte the ſauour of brymſtone (for the wynde blewe towarde them) they droue them felues to flight with ſuche feare leaſte thunderboultes and lyghtnynges folowed theim, that manye fell downe to the grounde: whom owre men purſuinge, fyrt keepinge theyr order, and after breakinge theyr array, ſlew but fewe and tooke many captiue. For they determined to vſe no extremitie, but to pacifie thoſe Regions as quietlie as they myght. Enteringe therfore into the palacie of kyng *Chiapes*, *Vaschus* comandaund many of the captiues to bee loofed: wyllynge them to ſearch owt of theys kyng, and to exhorte hym to coome thither: And that in ſoo doinge. he woolde bee his frende and profer hym peace, beſyde many other benefites. But if he refuſed to coome, it ſhulde turne to the deſtruſion of hym and his, and vter ſubuertiſon of his contrey. And that they myght the more affurredly do this meſſage to *Chiapes* he ſent with them certeyne of the guydes whiche came with hym from *Quarequa*.

Thus *Chiapes* beinge perſuaded aſwel by the Quareqans who coulde coniecture to what ende the matter woolde coome by th[e]xperienſe whiche they had feene in them felues and theyr kyng, as alſo by the reaſons of his owne men to whome *Vaschus* hadde made ſoo frendryly promyſes in his behalfe, came foorth of the caues in the whiche he lurked, and ſubmytted hym ſelfe to *Vaschus*, who accepted hym frendrye. They ioyned handes, embrased the one the other, made a perpetuall league of frendryſhippe, and gaue greate rewards on bothe ſydes. *Chiapes* gaue *Vaschus* four hundred pounds weight of wrought gouſe of thoſe pounds whiche they caule *Pefos*: And *Vaschus* recompensed hym ageyne with certeyne of owre thyngeſ. Thus beinge made frendryes, they remayned togother a fewe dayes vnyll *Vaschus* ſouldiers were coome which he leſte behynde hym in *Quarequa*. Then caulinge vnto hym the guydes and laboures which came with hym from thenſe he

A region of black moores

Diseases of change of ayer and dyet.

The ſouth ſea.

Vaschus is coome to the ſyght of the newe ſouth ſea.

Prayer.

God rayſeth the poore from the dungehyl.

91
Hanniball of Carthage.

Vaschus taketh poſſeſſion of the mountaynes

Kyng *Chiapes*.

A battayle.

Chiapes is dryuen to flight.

Vaschus ſendeth for king *Chiapes*.

Chiapes submitteſt hymſelfe to *Vaschus*.

iii. C. [four hundred] pounds weight of wrought gold

Vaschus addicteþ
the newe land
and sea, to the
dominion of
Castile.

Kyng Coquera
is dryuen to flyght.
Vaschus vseth
both gentelnes
and rigour.

92

vi. C. [six
hundred] and
l. [fifty] pounds
weight of wrought
gold

A goulfe of
threescore myles.
Saynt Michaels
goulfe

The manly corage
and godly zeale
of Vaschus

Ryches are the
synnewes of warre
The faythfulnes of
kyng Chiapes.

A tempest on the
sea.

The increasing of
the South sea.

The Northe
Ocean

Hard shifte in
necessitie.

The Region
Tumaccia.

rewarded them liberallye and dismissed them with thankes. Shortly after, by the conduct of *Chiapes* hym selfe, and certevne of his men, departinge from the topes of the mountaynes, he came in the space of four dayes to the bankes of the newe sea: where assemblyng al his men togither with the kynges scribes and notaries, they addicted al that maine sea with all the landes adiacent there vnto the dominion and Empire of Castile. Here he left part of his souldiers with *Chiapes* that he myght th[e]seluer seache those coastes. And takynge with hym nyne of theyr lyghters made of one hole tree (which they caule *Culchas* as th[e]inhabitantes of *Hispaniola* caul them *Canosas*) and also a bande of fourescore men with certeine of *Chiapes* men, he passed ouer a greate ryuer and came to the region of a certeyne kyng whose name was *Coquera*. He attempted to refyse owre men as dyd the other, and with lyke successe: for he was ouercome and put to flyght. But *Vaschus* who intended to wynne hym with gentelnes, fente certeyne Chiapeans to him to declare the greate poure of owre menne: howe invincible they were: howe merciful to such as submit them selues, also cruell and feuere to such as obstinately withstande them. Promyng hym furthermore, that by the frendshipe of owre men, he myght bee well assured by th[e]exemplē of other, not onely to lye in peace and quietness hym selfe, but also to bee reuenged of th[e]injuries of his enemies. Wylling hym in conclusion so to weigh the matter, that if he refused this gentelnes profered vnto hym by foo greate a victourer, he shulde or it were longe, lerne by feylinge to repeat him to late of that perel which he myght haue auoyded by hearing. *Coquera* with these woordes and exemplēs, shaken with great feare, came gladly with the messengers, bryngynge with hym syxe hundredth and l. [fifty] *Pesos* of wrought gold, which he gaue vnto owre men. *Vaschus* rewarded hym lykewise as we sayd before of *Poncha*. *Coquera* beinge thus pacified, they returned to the palacie of *Chiapes*. Where, visitinge theyr companions, and restyng there a whyle, *Vaschus* determyned to search the nexte greate goulfe, the which, from the furthest reachyng therof into the lande of theyr countreys, from the enterauance of the mayne sea, they faye to bee threescore myles. This they named saynt Michaels goulfe, which they fay to bee full of inhabited Ilandes and hugious rockes. Enteringe therefore into the nyne boates or *Culchas* wherwith he passed ouer the ryuer before, hausinge also with hym the same coompanye of fourescore hole men, he wente forwarde on his purpose, although he were greatly disuaded by *Chiapes*, who earnestly defyred hym not to attempt that vyage at that tyme, affirming the goulfe to be too tempestuous and stormy three monethes in the yeare, that the sea was there by noo meanes nauigable: And that he had seen many *Culchas* devoured of whirlepoles euen befor his eyes. But invincible *Vaschus*, impaciente of idlenes, and voyde of all feare in goddes cause, aunswered that god and his holy sayntes woldes prosper his enterpryses in this case, forasmuche as the matter touched God and the defence of the Christian religion, for the maynetaunce wherof it shulde bee necessarie to haue great abundance of ryches and treaure as the synnewes of war ageynste the enemies of the faythe. Thus vsing also th[e]office both of an oratour and preacher, and h[im]selfe perfuaded his coompanions, he lanched from the lande. But *Chiapes*, least *Vaschus* shulde any thyng doubt of his faythfulnes towarde hym, profered himselfe to goo with hym whither soever he went: And woldes by noo meanes affent that *Vaschus* shulde depart from his palacie, but that he woldie bryng hym on the waye and take part of his fortune. Therfore as foone as they were nowe entered into the maine sea, such surges and conflictes of water arose ageynst them that they were at theyr wyttes endes whither to turne them or wher toreste. Thus beinges tossed and amafed with feare, the one loked on the other with pale and vncherefull countenaunces. But especially *Chiapes* and his coompany, who had before tyme with their eyes seene th[e]xperiance of those ioperdies, were greatly discomfited. Yet (as god woorle) they escaped all, and landed at the nexte Ilande: Where makynge faste theyr boates, they rested there that nyght. Here the water too encreased, that it almost ouerflowed the Iland. They say also that that south sea doth too in maner boyle and fwelle, that when it is at the hyghest it doth couer many greate rockes, which at the faule thereof, are seene farre aboue the water. But on the contrary parte, all suche as inhabite the North sea, affirme with one voyce, that hit scarfely riseth at any tyme a cubet aboue the bankes as they also confessie which inhabite the Ilande of *Hispaniola* and other Ilandes situate in the fame. The Ilande therfore beinge nowe drye by the faule of the water, they resortid to theyr boates which they founde all ouerwhelmed and full of sande, and fume fore brufed, with great ryftes, and almost lost by reason theyr cables were broken. Such as were brufed, they tyed fast with theyr gyrdels, with flippes of the barkes of trees, and with tough and longe stalkes of certein herbes of the sea, stopping the ryftes or chynkes with grasse accordyng to the prente necesitie. Thus were they enforced to returne backe ageyne lyke vnto men that came frome shippewracke, beinge almost consumed with hunger, bycause theyr vytayles were vtterly destroyed by tempeste. Th[e]inhabitantes declared that there is harde all the yeare horrible rorynge of the sea amonge those Ilandes as often as it rysethe or fauleth. But this most especially in those three monethes in the which it is moile boyſ[r]ious as *Chiapes* towide *Vaschus* before: Meanyng (as they couldle coniecture by his woordes) Octoher, Nouember, and December: for he signified the present moone and the two moones folowynge, countynge the moonethes by the moones, whereas it was nowe October. Here therefore refreshyng hym selfe and his souldiers a whyle, and passyng by one vnprofitable kyng, he came to an other whose name was *Tumaccus*, after the name of the region, beinge situate on that syde

of the goulfe. This *Tumacus* came foorth ageynste owe men as dyd the other, and with lyke fortune. For he was ouercome, dryuen to flyght, and many of his men layne. He hym selfe was also fore wounded, but yet escaped. *Vaschus* sent certeyne messengers of the Chiapeans to hym to retorne, and not to bee afrayde. But he could be nothyng moued nether by promyses nor threateninges. Yet when the messengers were instant, and ceased not to threaten death to him and his famely, with the vter defolation of his kyngedom if he persisted in that obstinacie, at the length, he sent his sonne with them: whom *Vaschus* honorably enterteyninge, apparelinge hym gorgiously and gyuing hym many gyttes, sent hym to his father, wyllynge hym to perfaude hym of the pufiaunce, munificence, liberalite, humanite, and clemencie of owe men. *Tumacus* beinge mooued by this gentelnes declared toward his sonne, came with him the thyrd day, bryngyng nothyng with hym at that tyme. But after that he knewe that owe men defyred goulde and perles, he sent for syxe hundredth and. xiii. *Pefos* of golde, and two hundredth and fortie of the Liggest and fayrest perles besyde a great number of the smauleſt forte. Owe men marueyed at the byggernes and fayrenes of theſe perles although they were not perfectly whyte bycause they take them not owe of the ſea muſculs excepte they fyrt roſt them, that they may theſelyer open them ſelfe, and alſo that the fyſſe maye haue the better taste, whiche they eſteeme for a delicate and princely dysſe, and fet more thereby then by the perles them felues. Of theſe thyngeſ I was enformed of one *Arbolantius* beinge one of *Vaschus* coompanions whom he ſent to the kyng with manye perles and certeyne of theſe ſea muſculs. But when *Tumacus* ſaw that owe men ſoo greatly regarded the bewtie of the perles, he comauanduſ certeyne of his men to prepare them felues to goo a fyſſhyng for perles. Who departinge, came ageyne within fourre dayes, bringyng with them twelue pounde weight of orient perles after eight ounces to the pounde. Thus reioyſinge on bothe parties, they embrased and made a league of continual frenchedhippe. *Tumacus* thought him ſelfe happe that he had preſented owe men with ſuch thankeful gyttes and was admitted to theyr frenchedhippe: and owe men thinkyng them felues happe and bleſſed that they had founde ſuche tokens of great ryches, fwallowd downe theri ſpettle for thyrſte. At all theſe doinges, kyng *Chiapes* was preſent as a wytnes and coompanion. He alſo reioyfed not a lyttle, awell that by his conduictinge he ſaw that owe men ſhulde be ſatified of theyr defyre, as alſo that by this meaneſ he had declared to the next kyng his bortherer and enemie, what frendes he had of owe men, by whose ayde he myght lyue in quyetenes and bee reuenged of his aduerſarieſ if neede ſhulde foo requyre. For (as wee haue ſayde) theſe naked kynges infete them felues with greuous warres onely for ambition and defyre to rule. *Vaschus* boſteth in his epiftell, that he lerned certeyne maruelous ſecretes of *Tumacus* hym ſelfe as concernyng the greate ryches of this lande: wheroft (as he ſayth) he wold vter nothyng at this preſente, for alſmuſe as *Tumacus* tolde it him in his eare. But he was enformed of bothe the kynges, that there is an Ilande in that goulfe, greater then any of the other, haung in it but onely one kyng, and hym of ſoo great poure, that at ſuche tymes of the year as the ſea is caulme, he inuadeth theyr dominions with a greate nauie of *Culchas*, ſpoyleyng and caringe a way for a praye, all that he meeteth. This Ilande is diſtant from theſe coaſtes, onely twentye myles: Soo that the promontories or poynetes therof reching into the ſea, may bee ſeen from the hylles of this Continent. In the ſea nere about this Ilande, ſea muſculs are engendred of ſuch quantitie, that many of them are as brode as buckelers. In theſe are perles founde (beinge the hartes of theſe ſhell fyſſes) often tymes as bygge as beanes, ſumtymes bygger then olyues and ſuch as ſumptuous *Cleopatra* myght haue defyred. Althougle this Ilande bee ſoo nere to the ſhore of this firme lande, yet is the begynnyng therof in the mayne ſea without the mouth of the goulfe. *Vaschus* beinge ioyfull and mery with this rych communication, fantafinge nowe in maner nothing but princes treaureſ, beganne to ſpeakē fierce and cruelle woordes ageynſt the tyranne of that Ilande, meanyng hereby too woonne the myndes of the other kynges, and bynde them to hym with a nearer bonde of frenchedhippe. Yet therfore raylyng further on hym with ſpytfull and opprobrious woordes, he ſwore great othes that he wooldle furwith inuade the Ilande, ſpoyleyng, deſtroyinge, burnyng, drownyng, and hangyng, ſparinge neyther ſwoorde nor fyre, vntyll he hadde reuenged theyr iuriuies: And therwith comauanduſ his *Culchas* to bee in a redynes. But the two kynges *Chiapes* and *Tumacus*, exhorted hym frendry to deferre this enterprize vntyll a more quiete ſeafon, bycause that ſea was not nauigable withoute greate daunger, beinge nowe the begynnyng of Nouember. Wherin the kynges ſeemed to ſaye trewe. For as *Vaschus* hym ſelfe wryteth, great roryng of the ſea was harde amoung the Ilandes of the goulfe by reaſon of the ragine and conſiecte of the water. Great ryuers alſo deſcending from the toppes of the mountaynes the fame time of the year, and ouerflowyng their bankeſ, dryuyng downe with theyr vyoſcence greate rockes and treeſ, make a marueyloſe noyſe. Lykewiſe the furie of the South and Northeast wyndes, associate with thunder and lyghtnyng at the fame ſeafon, dyd greatly moleſte them. Whyle the wether was fayre they were vexed in the night with could: and in the day time, the heate of the ſonne troubled them: wheroft it is noo laile, foramuche as they were neare vnto the Equinoctiall lyne, althougle they make noo mention of the elevation of the pole. For in ſuch regiones, in the nyght, the mone and other coulde planettes: but in the daye, the ſonne and other hotte planettes, doo chiefly exercise thei influence: Althowghe the antiquitie were of an other

Kynge *Tumacus*
is driven to flyght.

Golde and perles.

Muſculs of the ſea.

Fyſſhyng for
perles.
xiij pounde weight
of perles.

The thyrd of
golde.

Ambition amonge
naked men.

This Ilande is
cauled Margarita
Diuſ, or Dites.
A kyng of greate
poure.

Bigge perles.
Cleopatra, queene
of Egypte resoluteſ
a pearle in vineger
and drunke it,
price. v. thouſande
pounde of our
money.
The feruences of
Vaschus.

94

Great ryuers
faulnyng from
mountaynes.
Thunder and
lyghtnyng in
Nouember.
Colde in the nyght
nere the
Equinoctiall.

Habitable regions
under the
Equinoctiall lyne.

The nautiations
[? nautigations] of
the Portingales
towarde the southe
pole.
Antipodes.

He meaneath S.
Augustine and
Lactantius.

The starres aboute
the southe pole.

Lactea via.

A similitude
declarynge
Antipodes.

The maner of
fysshinge for
perles.

Thre kindest of
perles.

95

Dyuers questions
as concernynge
perles

Petrus arias

Wanton and
superfluous
pleasures.
Cleopatra.
Asopus.

opinion, supposinge the Equinoctiall circle to bee vnhabitable and defolate by reason of the foonne hauinge his course perpendicularly or directly ouer the same: except a fewe of the contrary opinion, whose assertions the Portugales haue at these dayes by experiance proved to bee trewe. For they faile yearly to th[e]linhabitantes of the south pole, being in maner *Antipodes* to the people cauled *Hyperborei* vnder the North pole, and exercise marchaundies with them. And here haue I named *Antipodes*, forasmuch as I am not ignorant that there hath byn men of singular wite and great lernyng, which haue denied that there is *Antipodes*: that is, such as walke feete to feete. But it is most certeyne, that it is not gyuen to anye one man to knowe all thynges. For even they also were men: whose propertie is to ere and bee deceaued in many thynges. Neuertheleffe, the Portugales of owe tyme haue fayled to the fyue and sytie degree of the south pole: Where, coompainginge abowte the poyn[t] therof, they myght see throughwote al the heauen about the same, certeyne shynynge whyte cloudes here and there amoung the starres, lyke vnto them whiche are seene in the tracte of heauen cauled *Lactea via*, that is, the mylke whyte waye. They say, there is noo notable starre neare about that pole lyke vnto this of owres which the common people thynke to bee the pole it selfe (cauled of the Italians *Tramontana*, and of the Spanyardes *Nortes*) but that the fame faulthe benethe the Ocean. When the sonne descendeth from the myddest of the exiltree of the woorlde frome vs, it rysethe to them, as a payre of balances whose weyght inclynyng from the equall poysse in the myddest towarde eyther of the fydes, caufeth the one ende to rye as much as the other faulthe. When therefore it is autumne with vs, it is spryng tyme with them: And summer with vs when it is wynter with them. But it suffiseth to haue fayne thus much of strange matters. Let vs now therfore returne to the historie and to owe men.

THE SECONDE BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.



Afchus by th[e]aduice of kynge *Chiapes* and *Tumaccus*, determinyd to deferre his vyage to the fayde Ilande vntyll the nexte spryng or summer, at which tyme *Chiapes* offerd hym selfe to accompanie owe men and ayde them therin all that he myght. In this meane tyme *Vafchus* had knowleage that these kynges had nettes and fysshinge places in certeyne stacions of that sea nere vnto the shore, where they were accustomed to fyse for sea muscules in the which perles are engendred: And that for this purposē they had certeyne dyuers or fyshers exercized frome theyr youthe in swymmyng vnder the water. But they doo this onely at certeyne tymes when the sea is calme, that they may th[e]jesfeler coome to the place where these shell fyshes are woonte to lye. For the bygger that they are, soo much ly they the deeper and nerer to the bottome. But the lesser, as it were dawghters to the other, are nerer the bryme of the water. Lykewyfe the leaste of all, as it were their niefes, are yet nearer to the superciall parte thereof. Too them of the byggente forte whiche lye loweste, the fyshers descende the depte of three mens heught, and sumtyme four. But to the dawghters or niefes as their succeſſion, they defend onelye to the mydde thygh. Sumtymes also, after that the sea hath byn disquyeted with vehemente tempestes, they fynde a greate multytude of these fyshes on the fandes, beyng dryuen to the shore by the yolence of the water. The perles of these whiche are founde on the fande, are but lytle. The fisſe it selfe, is more pleasaunte in eatynge then are owe oysters as owe men report. But perhaps hunger the sweete faufe of all meates, caufed owe men foo too thynke. Whether perles bee the hartes of sea muscules (as Aristotell supposid) or the byrthe or spaune of there intrals (as *Pliny* thought) Or whether they cleaue contynually to the rockes, or wander by coompaines in the sea by the guydinge of th[e]eldeste: Whether euerye fyſſe bryngē foorth the one perle or more, at one byrthe or at dyuers: Also whether theye bee fyled frome the rockes wherunto theye cleaue, or maye bee easylie pulled awaye, or otherwyse faule of by them felues when theye are coomme to there full growth: Lykewyfe whether perles bee harde within the shelle or softe, owe men haue as yet noo certayne experyence. But I truse or it bee longe, too knowe the truth hereof. For owe men are even nowe in hande with the matter. Also, as foone as I shall bee aduertyfed of the arryall of *Petrus Arias* the captyayne of owe men, I wyll defyre hym by my letters to make diligent fearche for these thynges, and certifie me therof in all poyntes. I knowe that he wyll not bee flacke or omyte any thynge herein. For he is my verye frende: and one that taketh greate pleasure in confyderynge the woorkes of nature. And surelyt it seemeth vnto me vndecente, that wee shoulde with sylynce ouerlyppre to greate a thynge whiche awfull in the owld tyme as in owe dayes, hathe, and yet dootho, drawe bothe men and women to emmoderate defyre of superfluous pleasure. Spayne therefore shalbe able hereafter with perles to satifise the gredye appetite of suche as in wanton pleasures are lyke vnto *Cleopatra* and *Asopus*. So that frome hensforth we shal neyther enuye nor

the sonne
o, whose
arely to
e North
am not
ntipodes:
nowe all
thynges.
Where,
certeyne
tracte of
re about
ed of
hem the
payre of
caufeth
ge tyme
much of

ge to the
n felse to
Vaschus
as of that
he which
fyschers
only at
ell fyshes
me. But
all, as it
hiche lye
or nieves
athe bny
dryuen
but lytle.
erhappes
tes of fea
ther they
Whether
ed frome
ies when
wre men
wre men
Arias
ges, and
For he is
surelye it
ell in the
desyre of
of fuche
nuoy nor

reuerence the nyse frutefulnes of *Stoidum*, or *Taprobana*, or the redde sea. But lette vs nowe retorne to owre purpose. *Vaschus* therfore determined with the fysshers of *Chiapes* to prove what myght bee doone in his fysh pooles or flations of sea muscules. *Chiapes* to shewe hym selfe obedientie to *Vaschus* his requeste, although the sea were boyſſ[ry]ous, coommaunded thirtye of his fysshers to prepare them selfes and to resorte to the fyſhing places. *Vaschus* fente onely fyxe of his men with them to beeholdie them frome the sea banckes, but not to coommitte them felues to the daunger of the sea. The fyſhynge place was distante frome the palace of *Chiapes* aboue tenne myles. They durſt not aduenture to dyue to the bottome by reaſon of the furie of the ſea. Yet of the muſcules whiche lye hygher, and of ſuche as were dryuen to the ſhore by the volyence of the water, theye broughte fyxe greate farthels in the ſpace of a fewe dayes. The perles of theſe were but lyttle, aboue the bygnes of ſmaule fyſches: yet verye faire and bewtyfull, by reaſon theye were taken newely owt of the fyſhe, beeing yet rawe. And that they ſhuld not bee reprooued of lyng as concerninge the bignes of theſe ſea muſcules, they ſente manye of them into Spayne to the kyng with the perles, the fyſhe beyng taken owt. Wee thinke verily that there maye in noo place bygger bee founde. Theſe ſhelle fyſhes therfore beyng thus founde here in ſo manye places in that ſea, and gold in maner in every house, doo argue the ryche treafurye of nature too bee hyd in thoſe coaſtes, forasmuche as ſuche greate ryches haue byn founde as it were in the lytle fynger of a gianteſ hande. What then maye wee thynde of the hole hande of the gyante (for hetherþo theye haue onely bynne in hande with the conſynes of *Vraba*) when theye ſhall haue thorowly ſearched all the coaſtes and ſecreates of the inner partes of all that large lande. But *Vaschus* contented with theſe fyſhes and ioyfull of his good ſuccesse in theſe enterpris(es), determined by an other waye to retorne to his felowes in *Dariena*, where alſo, they haue golde mynes aboue tenne myles from the viſtage. He gaue therfore kyng *Chiapes* leaue to depart, and to folowe hym noo further: Conſaiſing hym to continue faſthfull to the chriſtian kyng his lord and maiftier. Thus embraſinge the one the other, and ioyninge handes, *Chiapes* departed, with teares declaring the good mynde which he bore to owre men. *Vaschus* leauing his ſickē men with *Chiapes*, went forward on his iourney with the reſidue, hauinge alſo with him for guydes three of *Chiapes* maryners. He conueyghed his armye ouer a greate ryuer into the dominion of a certeyne kyng cauled *Taocha*: who beinge aduertisid of the coommyng of owre men, of whos famous actes he had harde muche before, was verye gladde therof and enterteyned them honorably: So that for a token of his frendly affection towarde them, he gaue *Vaschus* twentie poundes weyght of wrought golde after eighht ounces to the pounde: Alſo two hundredre bigge perles: but not faire, by reaſon they were taken owt of the muſcules after they had byn ſodden. After they had ioynd handes, *Vaschus* recompensed hym with certeyne of owre thynges. Lykewiſe rewardyng his guydes the ſeruantes of *Chiapes*, he diſmissed them with commendations to theyr lord. Kyng *Taocha* at the departure of our men from his paalace, dyd not onely appoint them guydes to conduct them in the way, but also gaue them certeyne ſlaues in the ſteede of beaſtes to cary theyr vytayles, bycause they ſhulde paſſe through manye deſerteſ, baren and rowgh mountaynes and terrible wooddes full of tygers and Lions. He ſent alſo one of his ſonneſ with theſe ſlaues, ladynge them with ſalted and dried fyſhe, and breade of thoſe regions, made of the rooteſ of *Maizium* and *Iucca*. He alſo coommaunded his ſonne not to depart from our men vntyl he were licenceid by *Vaschus*. By theyr conduicting therfore, *Vaschus* came to the dominion of an other kyng whos name was *Pacra*, a cruell tyranne, fearefull to the other kynges his bortherers, and of greater poure then any of them. This tyran, whether it were that his giltie conſcience for his miſcheuous actes, put him in feare that owre menne wooldie reuenge the fame, or that he thought hym ſelfe inferior to refiſt them, fled at theyr commyng. *Vaschus* wryteth that in theſe regions in the mooneth of Nouember he was fore afflictid with greate heate and intollerable thirſt, by reaſon that fyde of the mountaynes hath lytle water: In ſoo muche that they were in daunger to haue perifhed but that certeyne of theſe inhabitants ſhewed them of a ſpringe which was in the ſecrete place of a woodde, whither *Vaschus* with all ſpeade ſent two quycke and ſtronge younge men of his coompanions with theyr gourdes and ſuche water veffelles as *Taocha* his men brougthe with them. Of theſe inabitantes, there durſt none depart from there coompany bycause the wylde beaſtes doo ſoonne inuade naked men. For in thoſe mountaynes, and especially in the wooddes neare vnto the ſpringe, they ſaye that they are ſumtymes taken owt of there houſes in the nyght, excepte they take good heede that the doores bee well ſparde. It shall not bee frome my purpoſe here to declare a particular chaunce before I enter any further in thiſ matter. Theye ſaye therfore that the laſte yeare the regyon of *Dariena* was noo leſſe infiſted and troubeled with a fierfe tyger, then was *Calydonia* in tyme paſte with a wylde bore, and *Nemea* with a horriblie lyon. For they affirme that for the ſpace of fyxe hole moonethes there paſſed not one nyghte without ſumme hurte doone: ſoo that it kyllid nyghtlye eyther a bullocke, a mare, a dogge, or a hogge, ſumtymes even in the highe wayes of the viſtage. For owre men haue nowe greate heardeſ of cattayle in thoſe regions. They ſay alſo that when this tyger had whelpes, noo man myght safelye goo furthe of his doores, bycause ſhee ſpared not men if ſhee mette fyſte with them. But at the lengthe, neceſſitie enforced them to inuent a polcie howe they myght bee reuenged of ſuche bludſhed. Searchyng therfore diligenty her ſooteſteppes, and folowinge the pathe wherbye ſhee was accuſtomed in the

Stoidum.
Taprobana.

The fyſhing place
of king *Chiapes*.

Golde in maner in
every house.
The ryche
treafurye
of nature.

The golde mynes
of *Dariena*.

96

Kyng *Taocha*.
entercyneth
Vaschus frendeliſ.
Twentie poundes
weyght of wrought
golde.

Deserteſ full of
wylde beaſtes.

Dried fyſſeſ

Kyng *Pacra*.
a tyranne.

Great heate in
the monethe of
Nouember.

Hurte by wylde
beaſtes.

A tyger.
Calydonia is a
foreſte in
Scotlande.
Nemea is a woodde
in Greece.
Tigers whelpes.

Thus the Egypcians
take Crocodiles.

The dogge tyger
taken.
The rorynge of
the tyger.

Tigers flesh eaten.

97

The bitche tyger.

Tigers whelpes.

A straunge thynge.

Kynge Pacra

Naturall hatred
of vycce.

Fourre kynges
deuoured of
dogges.

The vse of dogges
in warre agiest
naked men.

The Canibales are
experte archers.

Swoordes of
woodde.

Fiftie pounds
weyght of golde.

98

nyght season to wander owte of her denne to seeke her praye, theye made a greate trenshe or pytte in her walke, coureringe the same with hurdels whervpon theye caste parte of the earthe and diuersed the resydue. The dogge tyger chaunfishte into this pitfaul, and fel vpoun the poynetes of sharpe stakes and fuche other ingens as were of purpose fyxed in the bottome of the trenshe. Beynge thus wounded, he rored soo terrybly, that it grated the bowels of fuche as harde hym, and the wooddes and montaynes neare aboute, rebounded the noyse of the horrable crye. When they perceaued that he was layde faste, theye resortid to the trenshe and flewe hym with stones, darteres, and pykes. With his teethe and clawes, he broke the darteres into a thousande chyppes. Beynge yet deade, he was fearefull to all fuche as behelde hym: what then thinke you he woold haue doone beyng alyue and loose. One *Johannes Ledijma* of Ciuite, a nere frynde to *Vafchus* and one of his coompagnyons of his trauyales, toulde me that he hym selfe dyd eate of the fleshe of that tiger: and that it was nothinge inferiour to biese in goodnes. Beynge demauded howe they knewe hit to bee a tyger forasmuche as none of them had euer feene a tyger, they answered that they knewe hit by the spottes, fiercenes, agilitye, and fuche other markes and token wherby the anciente writers haue describéd the tiger. For sum of them, had before tyme seene other spotted wilde beastes, as lybardes and panthers. The dogge tiger beyng thus kyld, theye folowynge the trase of his steppes towarde the mountaines, came to the denne where the bytche remayred with her two younge fuckynge whelpes. But shee was not in the denne at there commynge. Theye fyrsyte caried awaie the whelpes with them. But afterwarde fearynge leaste they shulde dye bycause theye were very younge, entendyng when they were bygger to fende them into Spayne, they put cheynes of yren aboue there neckes, and caried them agayne to there denne: whither returnyng within a fewe dayes after, theye founde the denne emptye and the cheynes not remoued frome there place. Theye suppose that the damme in her furie tore them in pyeces and caried them awaie, leste anye shulde haue the fruict of them. For theye playnely affirme that it was not possible that they shulde bee loofed frome the chaynes alyue. The skynne of the deade tyger fluffed with drye herbes and strawe, they fente to *Hifpaniola* to the admiral and other of the chiefe rulers frome whome the newe landes receyue there lawes and succoure. It shall at this tyme suffyce to haue written thus much of the tygers, as I haue lerned by the reporte of them whiche bothe fusteyned damage by there rauenynge, and also handeled the skynne of that whiche was slayne. Let vs nowe therfore retorne to kynge *Pacra* frome whome wee haue digressed. When *Vafchus* had entred into the houfes forsaken of *Pacra*, he fente messengiers to reconcyle hym as he had doone the other kings. At the first he refused to coomme. But after threatenynges, he came with three other kynges in his coompanye. *Vafchus* writeþ that he never fawe a more monstrous and deformed creature: And that nature hath onely gyuen hym humane shape, and otherwyse to bee worse then a brute beaste, with maners accordyng to the linyamentes of his bodye. He abused with moste abominable lechery the daughters of fourre kynges his bortherers frome whome he had taken them by vyalence. Of the fylthy behauoure of *Pacra*, of his crueltie and iniurys doone by hym, many of the other kynges made greuous coomplayntes to *Vafchus* as vnto a hygh Iudge and iuste reuenger: Moste humblye besyching hym to see fuche thynghes punyfshed, forasmuche as theye tooke hym for a man fente of god for that purpose. Herevpon *Vafchus* awfull to wynne their good wylles, as also too shewe an exemple of terroure to fuche as vfed lyke faffhions, coomaundyd that this monstrous beaste with the other three kynges whiche were subiecte to hym and of lyke condicions, shulde bee geuen for a praye to his feyghtinge dogges, and their torne carkefes to bee burned. Of these dogges whiche theye vfe in the warres, theye tell maruelous thynghes. For theye saye that theye runne vppon the[e]linhabitantes armed after there maner, with noo lesse fiercenes then if theye were hartes or wylde bores, if the Spaniardes doo but onely poynete towarde them with their syngers: In soo muche that oftentymes theye haue had no neede too dryue their enemys too flight with swoordes or arrowes: But haue doone the same onely with dogges placed in the forefronte of their battayle, and lettynge them flyppe with their watche woerde and priuye token. Wherupon the barbayans ftryken with feare by reason of the cruell countenaunces of the masties, with their desperat bouldenes and vnaccustomed houllynge and barkynge, haue disparced at the fyrsyte onfette and broke their arraye. Yet it chaufseth otherwyse when theye haue anye confilcte agaynst the Canibales and the people of *Caramairi*. For these are eyfer, and more warrelyke men: Also fo experte archer[es], that theye can moste certenlye dyrect their venemous arrowes against the dogges with fuche celeritey as if theye were underboltes: By reason wherof, they fumtymes kyl many of them. Th[e]linhabitantes of these montaynes, doo not keepe warre with bowes and arrowes: But vfe onelye *Machanis*, that is certayne longe and broade swordes made of woodde: Also flynges, longe pykes and darteres hardened at the endes with fyere. Whyle kynge *Pacra* yet lyued, noo man coulde knowe of hym neyther by fayre meanes nor by foul, where he had the golde whiche was founde in his houfe. For oure men founde in his iewel houfe fyftyne poundes weyght of golde. Beynge therfore demauded where he had it, he answered that theye whiche gathered the same in thoſe montaynes in his fathers dayes, were all deade: And that fense he was a chylde, he never esteemed golde more then stooenes. More then this, theye coulde not gette of hym. By this feure punyfshment executed vpon *Pacra*, *Vafchus* concyled vnto hym the myndes of all the other kynges of that prouynce. And

er walke,
e. The
er ingens
y, that it
the noys
ewe hym
chyppe-
he doone
companions
infesyor
had euer
arkes and
ne other
ynghe
her two
d awaye
young, b
e neckes,
he denne
urye tote
playnely
the deade
he chiefe
e to haue
omage by
retorne to
of *Pacra*:
coomme.
he neuer
ape, and
dye. He
hee had
morn, many
er: Moste
te of god
temple of
ee kynges,
gges, and
s thynges.
enes then
fingers:
bordes or
l lettinge
feare by
houlynge
ye when
and more
es against
of them.
Machanis,
ed at the
eanes nor
use fyfye
gathered
he neuer
nyfshment
ce. And

by this meanes it came too passe, that when he sente for the fycke men whiche he leste behynde hym with kyng *Chiapes*, an other kyng whiche was in the mydde waye (whose name was *Bononiama*) enterteyned them gentellye, and gaue them. xx. pounde weyght of pure wrought golde, besyde great plentye of vytayles. And not this onely, but also accompanyyed them hym selfe vntyll he had brought them safely frome his palacie into the domynyon of *Pacra*: Where takyng eche of them by the ryghte handes, he delyuered them to *Vaschus* hym selfe, as a faythfull pledge commytted too his charge, and therewith spake to *Vaschus* in this effecte. Mooste myghtye and valyaunte vctourer, beholde I here delyuer vnto yowe, yowre coompanions in suche plignt as I receaued them: wifshyne that I had byn awfull able to gyue them healthe, as they were hertely welcoome to suche pore enterteynement as I was able to fnewe them. For the fauoure and gentelnesse whiche I haue founde bothe in yowe and them, he shal rewarde yowe whiche sendeth thunderynge and lyghtelyng to the destruction of myscheuous men, and of his clemencye giueth vnto good men plentye of *Iucca* and *Maizium* in dewe seafon. As he spake these woordes, he lyfted vppe his handes and eyes towarde the foonne whome they honoure for god. Then he spake further to *Vaschus*, sayinge: In that yowe haue destroyed and slaine owre vyoilent and proude enemies, yowe haue brought peace and quyetnesse to vs and owre famelyes, and bounde vs for euer to loue and obeye yowe. Yowe haue foo ouercoome and tamed wyld monsters, that wee thynk yowe to be fente from heauen for the punyfement of euyll men and defence of innocentes, that vnder the protection of yowre myghtye swoorde, wee maye hereafter leade owre lyses withoute feare, and with more quietnesse gyue thankes to the grier of all good things for his mercie shewed vnto vs in this behalfe. When th[e]interpretore had toulde *Vaschus* that kyng *Bononiama* had sayde these woordes, and suche lyke, *Vaschus* rendered hym lyke thankes for his humanitee declared towarde owre men, and rewarded hym as he had doone other in whome he founde lyke gentilnesse. *Vaschus* wryteth that he lerned manye thynges of this kyng as concernyng the greate rychesse of these regions: But that he woldte at this prefent speake nothyng therof: And reherfeth the same as thynges lyke to haue good successe. What this implicate *Hiperbole*, or adauancement meaneth, I doo not well vnderstante. But he playnely feemeth hereby to promyss manye greate thynges. And surely it is to be thought that accordyng to his hope, great riches maye bee looked for. For they came in maner into none of th[e]inhabitauntes hou ses, but that they found in them, eyther bresteplates or curettes of golde, or elles golden ouches, iewels, or garlandes to weare aboute there heades, neckes, or armes. I coniecture therfore thus by a symilitude of owre hou ses: If amonge vs any man of great poure were moued with the desyre to haue great plentye of Iron, and woold enter into Italye with a mayne force as dyd the Gothes in tyme past, what abundaunce of Iron shoulde he haue in their hou ses: where as he shuld fynde in one place a fringpan, in an other a chauldron, here a tryuet, and there a spytte, and these in maner in every pore mannes hou se, with suche other innumerable: Whereby any man maye coniecture that Iren is plentifully engendred in suche regions where they haue foo greate vse therof. Owre men also perceaued that th[e]inhabitantes of these regions do no more esteeme golde then we do Iren: nor yet foo muche after they fawe to what vse Iren serued vs. Thus muche haue I thought good to write too yowre holynesse of suche thynges as I haue gathered owt of the letters of *Vaschus Nunnez*, and learned by woorde of mouthe of such as were his companions in these assayres. As wee receyue them, so wee gyue them vnto yowe. Tyme which reueleth all secretes, shall hereafter mynster larger argument of wrytyng. Theye coulde at this tyme doo no greate thyng in searchyng the golde mynes, forasmuche as of a hundredth fourscore and tenne men whiche *Vaschus* broughte with hym from *Dariena*, there remayned onely threescore and ten, or at the most fourscore, whose ayde he nowe vsed in these daungerous aduentures, leauyng euer the crased men behynd hym in the kynges hou ses all the waye that he went. But they mooste espeially fell into fundrye diseases, whiche came lately from *Hippaniola*. For they were not able to abyde suche calamities as to lyue onely contented with the breade of those regions, and wyld herbes without salte, drinkinge none other then ryuer water, and that oftentimes eyther lackinge or vnwholome, where as before their stomakes had byn vsed to good meates. But the owlde souldiours of *Dariena*, were hardened to abyde all forowes, and exeadynge tollerable of labour, heate, hunger, and watchyng: In so muche that merilie they make their booste that they haue obserued a longer and sharper lent then euer yowre holynesse inioyned. For they saye that for the space of fourre hole yeres, they eate none other then herbes and frutes, excepte nowe and then perhappes fyse, and verye feldoomie flefhe: yea, and that sumtime for lacke of al thefe, they haue not abhorred from mangye dogges and fylthy toades as wee haue sayde before. The owlde souldiers of *Dariena*, I caule those whiche fyrfle folowed the captyaynes *Nicuesa* and *Fogeda* to inhabyte the lande, of the whiche nowe fewe were lyuyng. But lette vs nowe omyte these thynges, and returne to *Vaschus* the victourer of the montayng.

Kyng
Bononiama, frende
to the christians.
Wroughte golde.

The oration of
kyng Bononiama

The sparkes of the
lawe of nature, is
the lawe written
in the hartes of
men.

Hiperbole.

Great plentye of
golde.

A symilitude for
the profe of
plentye of golde.

Iren more
esteined then
F. vnde.

99
Chauge of dyet
is daungerous.

Owlde souldiers.

A longe lent.

THE THYRDE BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.



Comogrus.

Two poore kynges.

Desertes.

Kynge Buchebues
submyteth him
selfe

Vessels of golde.

Kynge Chlorisus
sendeth Vaschus
xxx. dyshes of
pur. olde.

100

Axes of Iren more
esteemed then any
gold

Superfluous and
effeminate
plesures

An example of the
lyfe of oure fyrist
parents.

Hen *Vaschus* had remained thirtye dayes in the palaye of kynge *Patra*, concilynge vnto hym the myndes of th[e]inhabitantes and prouidinge thynges necessarie for his coompanions, he departed frome thenfe by the conducte of certayne of kynge *Teaocha* his men, and came too the banke of the ryuer *Comogrus*, wherof the region and king therof, are named by the same name. He founde the fydles of these montaynes so rude and baren, that there was nothinge apte to bee eaten, but wilde rootes and certayne vmplesante frutes of trees. Two kynges beinge neare of bludde, inhabyted this unfortunate region, whiche *Vaschus* ouerpassef with al spedee for feare of hunger. One of these poore kynges was named *Cotochus*, and the other *Ciuriza*. He tooke them bothe with hym to guyde hym in the waye, and dismyssed *Teaocha* his men with vytales and rewardes. Thus for the space of three dayes, he wandered throughe many deserte wooddes, craggye mountaynes, and muddy maryfles full of fuche quamyes that men are oftentimes swalowed vp in them if they looke not the more warely to their fiete. Also through places not frequented with resorte of men, and fuche as nature had not yet opened to their vfe, forasmuche as th[e]inhabitantes haue seldoome entercourte betwene them, but onely by sundrye incursions, the one to spoyle and destroye the other: Beynge otherwise contented to lyue onely after the lawe of nature, withoute worldly toyle for superfluous pleasures. Thus enteringe at the lengthe into the territorie of another kynge whose name was *Buchebues*, they founde all thynges voyde and in silence: For the kyng and his subiectes, were all fledde to the wooddes. When *Vaschus* sente messengers to fetche hym, he dyd not onely at the fyrfte submytte hym selfe, but also promysic his ayde with all that he myght make: Proteftynge furthermore, that he fledde not for feare that oure men woldde doo hym any iniurie, but that he hyd hym selfe for verye shame and griefe of mynde, for that he was not able to receyue them honorably accordyng vnto their dignite, bycause his flore of vitayles was confiument. Yet in a token of obedience and frendshyppe, he sent oure men many vesseiles of golde, defyng them to accepte them as the gifte of a frind whose good will wanted not in greater thynges his abilyte were greater. By whiche woordes the poore man seemed to insinuate that he had byn robbed and otherwise cruelly handled of his bortherers. By reason wherof, oure men were enforced to departe from thense more hungerly then theye came. As theye wente forwarde therfore, they espdyed certayne naked men coomminge downe from a hylle towarde them. *Vaschus* ccommaunded his armye to slaye, and sente his interpretours to them to knowe what theye wold haue. Then one of them to whom the other seemed to gyue reverence, spake in this effect. Ouwe lorde and kynge *Chlorisus*, greeteth yowe well: Wyllynge vs to declare that he hath harde of yowre puissaunce and vertue wherby yowe haue subdued euell men and reuenged the wronges doone to innocentes. For the whiche yowre noble factes and iustyce, as he dooth honour yowre fame, soo woolde he thinke him selfe mooste happye if he myght receyue yowe into his palacie. But, forasmuche as his fortune hath byn so euell (as he imputeth it) that beyng ewte of yowre waye, yowe haue ouerpassef hym, he hath sent yowe this golde in token of his good wyll and fryndshyppe towarde yowe. And with these woordes he deliuere to *Vaschus* thirty dylfhes of pure golde. Addyng hereunto, that when so euer it shulde please him to take the paynes to coomme to their kynge, he shulde receyue greater gyttes. He declared further, that a kynge whyche was their bortherer and mortall enemye, was very ryche in golde: And that in subduyng of hym they shulde bothe obteinre greate rychesse, and alfo delyuer them from daylye vexations: whiche thinge myght easilie be doone by their helpe bycause they knewe the countrey. *Vaschus* put them in good coomforte, and gaue them for rewarde certayne Iren axes whiche they more esteemed then greatheapes of golde. For they haue lytell neede of golde, hauynge not th[e]use of pestiferous money. But he that maye get but one axe or hatchet, thynketh hym selfe rycher then euer was *Craffus*. For euen these naked men doo perceyue that an axe is necessarie for a thoufande vses: And confess that golde is defyred onely for certayne vaine and effeminate pleafures, as a thyng whiche the lyfe of man maye lacke withoute any inconuenience. For oure gluttony and superfluous sumptuousnesse hath not yet corrupted them: By reason wherof they take it for noo shame to lacke cobardes of plate, where as the pride and wantonnes of oure tym dooeth in maner impute it to vs for ignominye to bee withoute that, wherof by nature we haue no neede. But their contention with the benefytes of nature doothe playnly declare that men may leade a free and happy life without tables, table clothes, carpettes, napkyns, and towels, with fuche other innumerable wherof they haue no vfe, excepte perhaps the kynges furnishe their tables with a fewe golden vessells. But the common people dryue awaye hunger with a pyece of their breade in the one hande, and a piece of broyld fyshe or

summe kynde of fruite in the other hande. For they eate fleshe but seldome. When their fingers are imbrued with any ounctuous meates, they wype them eyther on the soules of their feete, or on their thyghes, ye and sumtymes on the skynnes of their priuye members in the stede of a nappkynne. And for this caufe doo they often tymes wafhe them felues in the ryuers. Ovre men therfore wente forwarde laden with golde, but fore afflited with hunger. Thus they came at the length to the dominion of kyng *Pochorrofa* who fledde at their coommyng. Here for the space of thirtye dayes they fylled their emperte bellies with brede of the rootes of *Maisium*. In the meane tyme *Vaschus* fente for *Pochorrofa*: who beyng allured with promyses and fayre woordes, came and submytted hym selfe brynginge with hym for a prefent xv. pounds weighte of wrought golde, and a fewe flaves. *Vaschus* rewarded hym as he had doone other before. When he was mynded to depart, he was aduertised that he shulde passe through the dominion of a certayne kyng whose name was *Tumanama*. This is hee whome the foonne of kyng *Comogrus* declared to bee of soo great poure and fearefull to all his bortherers, and with whom many of *Comogrus* familyers had byn captyue. But ovrre men nowe percieued that they measured his poure by their owne. For their kinges are but gnattes compared to elephantes, in respecte to the poure and pollicye of ovrre men. Ovrre men were also enformed by suche as dwelte neare aboute *Tumanama*, that his region was not beyonde the montaynes as they supposid: Nor yet so ryche in golde as younge *Comogrus* had declared. Yet consulted they of his subduyng: whiche they thoughte they myght th[er]eby bryng to passe bycause *Pochorrofa* was his mortall enemye, whos moste gladly promysed them his aduice and ayde herein. *Vaschus* therfore, leauyng his fycke men in the vyllage of *Pochorrofa*, tooke with hym threfore of his moste valiante fouldiers, and declared vnto them howe kyng *Tumanama* had oftentimes spoken proude and threatening woordes agaynst them: Lykewise that it nowe stode them in hande of necesitye to passe through his dominion: And that he thought is beste to sette vppon hym vnwares. The fouldiers consented to his aduice, and exhorted him to gyue theladventure, promisinge that they woold folowe hym whether so euer he wente. They determined therfore to go two dayes iorney in one daye, that *Tumanama* not knowyng of their fooden commyng, myght haue no leasure to assemble an armee. The thynge came to passe even as they had deuyfed. For in the fyfthe watche of the nyght, ovrre men with the *Pochorrofians*, inuaded the vyllage and palacie of *Tumanama*, where they tooke hym prisoner suspectyng nothinge lesse. He had with hym two younge men whiche he abused vnnaturaly: Also fourfcore women which he had taken vyolently from dyuers kynges. Lykewise a greate number of his gentelmen and subiectes were taken stragelynge in other vyllages neare aboue his palacie. For their houses are not adherent togither as ovrres bee, bycause they are oftentimes troubled with vehement whirlwyndes by reasoun of the sudden chaunges and motions of the ayre caused by the influence of the planetes in the equalitie of the daye and nyght beyng there in maner bothe of one lengthe throughoute all the yere, forasmuche as they are neare vnto the Equinociaall lyne as we haue sayde before. Their houses are made of trees, couered and after their maner thatched with the stalkes of certayne towghe herbes. To the palacie of *Tumanama*, was onely one house adherent, and that even as bygge as the palacie it selfe. Eyther of these houses were in length a hundredth and twentie pases, and in breidh fyfthe pases as ovrre men measured them. In these two houses the kyng was accustomed to muster his men as often as he prepared an armee. When *Tumanama* therfore, was thus taken captyue with all his Sardanapanicall famelye, the *Pochorrofians* bragged and threatened hym beyng nowe bounde, that he shulde shortly bee hanged. The other kynges also his bortherers, reioyed at his myffortune. Wherby ovrre men perceaved that *Tumanama* was no lesse troublefome to his neighbours, then was *Pacra* to the kinges of the southe syde of the montaynes. *Vaschus* also the better to please them, threatned hym greuously: But in deede entended no euell toward him. He spake therfore sharplye vnto hym with these woordes: Thou shalte nowe suffer punyshment thou cruell tyranne, for thy pryd and abhominations. Thou shalte knowe of what poure the christians are whom thou haft so contemned and threathned to drawe by the heare of their heades to the nexte ryuer and there to drowne them as thou haft often tymes made thy vaunte emonge thy naked flaves. But thou thy selfe shalte fyfthe feele that whiche thou haft prepared for other: And herewith commaunded hym to bee taken vppe. Neuertheleſſe gyuyng a priuye tooken of pardon to them whiche layde handes on him. Thus vnhappye *Tumanama*, fearynge and beleuyng that *Vaschus* had mente in erneste as he commaunded, fell prostrate at his feete and with teares defyrd pardon: Proteſtyng he that he never spake any fuche woordes. But that perhapses his noble men in their droonkenesse had so abused their toonges whiche he coulde not rule. For their wynes although they bee not made of grapes yet are they of force to make men droonken. He declared furthermore that the other kynges his bortherers had of malice surmyed suche lyes of hym enuyng his fortune bycause he was of greater poure then they. Moste humbly defyrsing *Vaschus* that as he tooke hym to bee a iuste vytourer, soo to gyue no credyte vnto their vniuste and malicious complaints. Addyng herevnto that if it woold please hym to pardon hym not hauinge offendid, he woold bringe him great plentie of gold. Thus layinge his ryght hande on his breast, he wrore by the fonne, that he euer loued and feared the chrystians fence he fyfthe harde of their fame and vitoryes: Especially when he harte fayte that they had *Machanas*, that is, swoordes sharper then

Plentye of gold
and scarenesse
of meat.

King *Pochorrofa*
submytteth
hymselfe.
xv. pounds
weighte of
wroughte golde.

Kyng *Tumanama*
ooke decad. ii.
lib. iii.

A good policy.

101
Kyng *Tumanama*
is taken prisoner.

The cause of
vehement wyndes
near the
Equinoctiall.

Kyng *Tumanama*
his palacie.

Vaschus his
woordes to kyng
Tumanama.

Oderund que
metnus.

Kyng *Tumanama*
his woordes.

Tumanama is
pardoned.

xxx pounds
weyghte of
wroughte golde.
Ix. pounds
weyghte of golde.

102

They abhorre
labour.

The coloure of the
golden earthe and
a tryall of the
same.

Tokens of great
plente of golde.

Vaschus fauleth
sick.
Feeblenes of
hunger and
watching.

Kynge Comogrus
friendly to the
Christians.

The large and
festual plain of
Zauana.
The ryuer 103
Comogrus.

theare, and such as cutte in pieces al thynges that coomme in their waye. Then directynge his eyes towarde *Vaschus* who had his swoorde in his hand, he spake thus. Who (excepte he were owte of his wytte) dare lyste vppe his hande ageynste this swoorde of yowres wherwith yowe are able with one strooke to cleaue a man from the heade to the nauell. Lette no man therfore perswade yowe (o mole myghtye victouer) that euer suche woordes proceded owte of my mouthe. As *Tumanama* with trembeling spake these woordes, therwith swalowynge downe the knot of deathe, *Vaschus* seemed by his teares to bee moued to compassion: And speaking to hym with chearefull countenance commaunded hym to bee loosed. This doone, he fente immediatly to his palacie for. xxx. pounds weyght of pure gold artificially wrought into fundry ouches whiche his wyues and concubynes vied to ware. Also the thyrde daye folowyng, his noble men and gentylmen fent threscore pounds weight of golde for their syne and raunsumme. *Tumanama* beyng demauded wher they had that gold, answere that it was not gathered in his dominions But that it was brought his auncestours from the ryuer *Comogrus* toward the southe. But the *Pochorrosans* and other his enemies, sayd that he lyed: Affirmynge that his kingdome was ryche in golde. *Tumanama* on the contrary part, instantly protested that he never knewe any golde myne in all his dominions. Yet denyed not but that there hath sumtimes byn found certaine smaule graines of golde, to the gatherynge wherof, he never had any regarde, bycause they coulde not gette it without great and longe labour. Whyle these thynges were dooinge, the fycke men whiche *Vaschus* had lefte in the village of *Pochorrosa*, came to hym the viii. day of the Calendes of Ianuary in the yere of Christe. M. D. XIII. bringyng with them certayne labourers from the kynges of the southe with fundrye instrumentes to dygge the grunde and gather golde. Thus paffynge ouer the day of the nativitiye of Christ without bodely labour, vpon sainte Steuens daye he brought certeyne myners to the syde of a hyll not farre distante from the palacie of *Tumanama*, where (as he faith) he perceaued by the coloure of the earth that it was lykely to bryng further golde. When they had dygged a pyttie not past a hand breadth and a halfe, and syfted the earthe therof, they founde certayne smaule graynes of golde no bygger then lintell feedes, amountyng to the weyght of twelve graynes as they prouyd with their balances of assayfe before a notarie and wytnesse that the better credytte myght bee gyuen thereto. Wherby they argued that the rychenesse of that lande was agreeable to the report of the bortherers, although *Vaschus* coulde by no meanes cause *Tumanama* to confesse the fame. They supose that he nothyng esteeme so smaule a portion. But other saye that he denied his countrey to bee frutefull of golde, leaste by reson therof the defyre of golde, myght intyfe owe men to inhabyte his kyngdome, as in deede the feely kyng was a prophet in foo thinkyng. For they chose that and the region of *Pochorrosa* to inhabyte, and determinyd to buylde townes in them bothe, if it shulde so please the kyng of Castyle: Aswell that they myght bee baytinge places and vtailyng houses for suche as shulde iorney towarde the southe, as also that both the regions were frutfull and of good grunde to bære frutes and trees. Intendyng nowe therfore to departe from thense, he tried the earth by chaunce in an other place, where the colour of the grunde with certayne shyninge stones, seemed to bee a takenen of golde. Where caufynge a smaule pitte to bee dygged lytell beneath th[e]upper cruste of the earthe, he founde so muche golde as weyghed that pyece of golde whiche the Spaniardes caule *Castellanum aureum*, and is commonly cauled *Pefus*, but not in one grayne. Reioysyng at these tookens in hope of great riches, he badde *Tumanama* to be of good comortfe, promysyng hym that he woldbe bee his frende and defender, soo that he troublede not any of the kynges whiche were frendes to the Christians. He also perswaded hym to gather plente of golde. Summe saye that he ledde awaye all *Tumanama* his women, and spoyled him leaste he shuld rebell. Yet he delyuuered his sonne to *Vaschus* to bee broughte vppe with owe men, to learme their language and relygyon, that he myght therafter the better vfe his helpe awfull in all thynges that he shulde haue to doo with owe men, as also more polytyke rule, and obtayne the loue of his owe subiectes. *Vaschus* at this tyme fell into a vehement feuer by reson of excessi of labour, immoderate watchyng, and hunger: In somuche that & partyng from thense, he was fayne too bee borne uppon mennes backs in shietes of goffampyne cotton. Lykewyse also many of his souldiers whiche were too weake that they coulde nothir go nor stonde. To this purpose they vfed the helpes of th[e]inhabitantes, who shewed them felues in al thynges wyllynge and obeyente. Also summe of them whiche were sumwhat feeble and not able to traayle, although not greuously fycke, were ledde by the armes vntyl they came to the domynion of kyng *Comogrus* a greate frende to the Christyans, of whom we haue largely made mention before. At *Vaschus* commynge thereth, he founde that the owld kynge was deade, and his sonne (whome we so prayded for his wifedome) to raygne in his steade: And that he was baptisid by the name of Charles. The palacie of this *Comogrus*, is situate at the foote of a stiepe hyll well cultured. Hauyng towarde the southe a playne of twelue leages in breadth and veary frutefull. This playne, they caule *Zauana*. Beyonde this, are the great and hyghe montaynes whiche deuyde the two seas wherof we haue spoken before. Owte of the stiepe hilles, spryngeth the ryuer *Comogrus*, whiche runneth throwghe the fayde playne to the hyghe montaynes, receauyng into his chanell by their valleys, all the other ryuers, and so faulth into the south sea. It is distante from *Dariena*, aboute threscore and tenne leages

towarde the weste. As owre men therfore came to these parties, kynge *Comogrus* (otherwyse cauled Charles by his christian name) mette them ioyfully and entartayned them honorably, gyuyng them their fyll of pleasaunte meates and drynkes. He gaue also to *Vaschus*, twenty pounde weyght of wrought golde. *Vaschus* recompened him with thinges which he esleemed muche more: As axes and sundry kyndes of carpenters tooles. Also a souldiours cloke, and a faire sherte wrought with needle woorke. By these gyftes, *Comogrus* thought hym selfe to bee halfe a god amonge his bortherers. *Vaschus* at his departyng from hense, ernestly charged *Comogrus* and the other kynges to remayne faithfull and obedient to the christian king of Castile, if they defyred to lyue in peace and quietnesse: And that they shulde hereafter more diligently applie them selues to the gatheringe of golde to bee sente to the great christian *Tiba* (that is) kyng. Declaryng further, that by this meanes they shuld bothe gette them and their posterity a patrone and defender aginst their enen.yes, and also obtayne great abundance of owre thinges. These affayres thus happily acchiued, he wente forwarde on his vyage to the palacie of kyng *Poncha*, where he founde soure young men whiche were come from *Dariena* to certify hym that there were certayne shypes coomme from *Hispaniola* laden wyth vttayles and other necessaries. Wherfore takyng with him twentie of his mooste lusty souldiers, he made haste to *Dariena* with longe iorneys: leauinge the refydue behynd him to folow at their leasure. He writheth that he came to *Dariena* the. xliii. Cal. of Fe. An. 1514. The date of his letter is: From *Dariena*, the. iiiii. day of march. He writheth in the same letter, that he had many sore confictes, and that he was yet neyther wounded, or loste any of his men in the battaile. And the reasoun in al his large letter, there is not one leafe without thankes geuyng to almygthy god for his deluty and preseruation from so many imminent perels. He attempted no enterprize or tooke in hande any viage wⁱ nowt the[re]inuocation of god and his holy saintes. Thus was *Vaschus Balboa* of a vyonente Goliath, tourned into *Heliurus*: And from *Anteus* too *Hercules* the conquerour of monstres. Beyng therefore thus tourned from a rasse royster to a poltyke and discreete capitayne, he was iudged worthy to bee aduaunced to greate honoure. By reason whereof, he was bothe receaued into the kynges fauour, and therewpon created the generall or Lieuetenant of the kynges army in thos Regions. Thus much haue I gathered bothe by the letters of certeyne my faythefull frendes beinge in *Dariena*, and also by woerde of mouth of suche as came lately frome thenese. If yowre holynes desyre to knowe what I thynke herein, Suerly as by suche thynges as I haue seene, I beleue these thynges to bee trewe, even so th[e]order and agreinge of *Vaschus* and his coompagnies warrelyke letters, seeme to confirme the fame. The Spanyarde therfore shall not neede hereafter with vndermynyng the earth with intollerable laboure to breake the bones of owre mother, and enter many myles into her bowels, and with innumerable daungers cut in funder hole mountaynes to make a waye to the courte of infernall *Pluto*, to bryng frome thenese wycked golde the feede of innumerale mischeues, withoute the whiche notwithstanding we may nowe scarcely leade a happy lyfe sithen iniquite hath so preuyaled and made vs flaes to that wherof we are lords by nature: The Spanyarde (I say) shall not neede with such traualyes and difficultie to dygge farre into the earth for gold, but shal fynde it plentifully in maner in the uppere crust of the earth, or in the fandes of ryuers dried vppe by the heate of sommer, onely waishyng the earth softely frome the same: And shall with lyke facilite gather plentie of pearles. Certenly the reuerent antiquite (by al the Cofmographers assent) obteyned not soo greate a benefye of nature, nor yet aspired to the knowleage hereof, bycause there came neuer man before owte of owre knownen worlde to these vnknownen nations: At the leaste, with a poure of men, by force of armes, in maner of conquest: wheras otherwyse nothing can be gotten here, forasmuch as these nations are for the most part seuerre defenders of theyr patrimonies, and cruell to straungers, in no condition admittingte them otherwyse then by conquest: especially the fierce Canibales or Caribes. For these wylle hunters of men, gyue them selues to none other kynde of exercysse but onely to manhuntyng and tyllage after their maner. At the commyng therfore of owre men into theyr regions, they loke as sulerly to haue them faule into their snares as if they were hertes or wylde bores: and with no lesse confydence likke their lippes secreately in hope of their praye. If they gette the uppere hande, they eate them greedely: If they mystrutte them selues to bee the weaker parte, they trusste to theyre feete, and fyle swyfster then the wynde. Ageyne, yf the matter bee tryed on the water, awell the women as men can dyue and swymme, as though they had byn euer brought vp and fedde in the water. It is noo maruayle therefore yf the large tracte of these regions haue byn hytherto vnknownen. But nowe sithen it hath pleased God to discouer the fame in owre tyme, it shall becoome vs to shewe owre naturall loue to mankynde and dewtie to God, to endeuoure owre selues to bryng them to ciuilite and trewe religion, to th[e]increafe of Christes flocke, to the confusyon of Infidels and the Deuyll theyr father who delytethe in owre destruction as he hathe doone frome the begynnynge. By the good succeſſe of these fyſt frutes, owre hope is, that the Christian religion shall streache foorth her armes very farre. Which thyng shulde the fooner coome to passe yf all menne to theyr poure (especially Christian Princes to whom it chiefly perteyneth) woldes put theyr handes to the plowe of the lordes vineyarde. The haruest sulerly is greate, but the woorke men are but fewe. As we haue sayde at the begynnyng, yowre holynes shall hereafter noyſyſe many myriades of broodes of chekins vnder yowre wynges. But let vs nowe returne to speake of *Beragua* beinge the weste fyde

xxv pounds weight
of wrought gold*Vaschus* returneth
to *Dariena*.The good fortune
of *Vaschus*.*Vaschus* was
turned from
Goliath to Eliseus.O flateryng
fortune, look his
death in the booke
of the Ilandes
lately founde.The earthe is owre
general mother.The courte of
internall Pluto.There is a better
waye then this.The Spanyarde
conquestes.

Manhunters

104

The fierenesse of
the Canibales.Owre duty to god,
and naturall loue
to mankynde.The glorie of
Christian prynces
The haruest is
greate, etc.*Beragua*.

Nicuesa.

of *Vraba*, and fyrst founde by *Colonus* the Admirall, then vnfortunate gouerned by *Diego Nicuesa*, and nowe leste in maner desolate: with the other large regions of those prouinces brought from theyr wylde and beastly ridenes to ciuilite and trewe religion.

The fourth
navigation of
Colonus the
Admirall.

From Spaine to
Hispaniola a
thousande and two
hundrethe leagues

The florysshing
Ilande of
Guanassa.

Simple people.

A greate
marchaunt.

105

The regyon of
Quiriquetana or
Ciamba.

Gentle people.

The regyons of
Tiaia and *Maia*.

Seven kyndes of
date trees.
Wylde vines.



THE FOVRTH BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.

Was determyned (moste holy father) to haue proceded no further herein, but that one fiery sparke yet remaynyng in my mynde, wooldе not suffer me to cease. Wheras I haue therfore declared howe *Beragua* was fyrste fownde by *Colonus*, my thincke I shulde commytte a heynous cryme if I shuld defraude the man of the due commendations of his trauayles, of his cares and troubles, and fynally of the daungeours and perels, whiche he susteyned in that nauigation. Therfore in the yere of Christe 1502, in the vi. daye of the Ides of Maye, he hoyſed vppe his fayles and departed from the Ilandes of *Gades* with. iii. shypes of fystie or. iii. score tunne a piece, with a hundredth threfcore and tenne men, and came with prosperous wynde to the Ilandes of *Canarie* within ffe daies folowinge, from thenſe arryuinge the. xvi. day at the Ilande of *Dominica* beinge the chiefe habitation of the Canibales, he fayled from *Dominica* to *Hispaniola* in fyue other daies. Thus within the ſpace of the. xxvi. daies, wit. proþerous wynde and by the fwytte faule of the *Ocean* from the Easte to the weſt, he fayled from Spaine to *Hippaniola*: Which courſe is counted of the mariners to bee no leſſe then a thouſande and twoo hundrethe leaues. He taryed but a whyle in *Hippaniola*, whether it were wyllingly, or that he were fo admoniſhed of the viceroye. Directing therfore his vyage from thenſe towarde the weſt, leauyng the Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Jamaica* on his ryght hande towarde the northe, he wryteth that he chaunſed vppon an Ilande more fouthewarde then *Jamaica*, whiche th[e]inhabitantes caule *Guanassa*, fo floryshing and frutefull that it myght feeme an earthye Paradys. Coaſtyng alonge by the ſhores of this Ilande, he mette two of the Canoas or boates of thoſe prouinces, whiche were drawne with two naked flauers ageynſt the ſreame. In theſe boates, was carayd a ruler of the Ilande with his wyfe and chyldren, all naked. The flauers feyngre owre men a lande, made ſigues to them with proude countenaunce in their maifters name, to ſtanck owte of the waye, and threatned them if they wooldē not gyue place. Their ſympnelnes is ſuche that they nother feared the multitude or poure of owre men, or the greatness and ſtraungenes of owre ſhippes. They thought that owre men wooldē haue honourd their maiftier with like reuerence as they did. Owre men had intelligence at the length that this ruler was a greate marchaunt whiche came to the marte from other coaſtes of the Ilande. For they excryſe byngre and ſellynge by exchaunge with their conſinies. He had also with him good floore of ſuche ware as they ſtanck in neede of or take pleaſure in: as laton belles, rafers, knyues, and hatchettes made of a certeyne ſharpe yellowe bryght ſtone, with handles of a ſtronge kynd of woodde. Alſo many other neceſſary instruments with kychen ſluſſe and veffelles for all neceſſary vſes. Lykewiſe ſheetes of goſſampine cotton wrought of fundrye colours. Owre men tooke hym prafyoner with all his family. But *Colonus* comandaunt hym to bee loſed ſhortely after, and the greateſt parte of his goodes to bee reſtored to wynne his fryndeshippe. Beinge here inſtruſted of a lande lyinge further towarde the ſouthe, he tooke his vyage theſter. Therfore lytle more then tenne myles diſtant from heneſt, he founde a lande whiche th[e]inhabitantes cauled *Quiriquetana*: But he named it *Ciamba*. When he wente a lande and comandaunt his chaplaïne to fayſe masse on the ſea bankes, a great confluence of the naked inhabitants flocked thither ſymplye and without feare, bringyng with them plenty of meate and freſhe water, marueylyng at owre men as they had byn ſumme ſtraunge miracle. When they had preſented their giſtes, they went ſumwhat backewarde and made lowe curteſy after their maner bowing their headeſ and bodyes reuerently. He recompensed their gentylnes rewardinge them with other of owre thynges, as counters, braslettes and garlandes of glaſſe and counterfecte ſtoones, looking glaſſes, nedelleſ, and pyynes, with ſuche other traſhe, whiche ſeemed vnto them preciouſe marchaundies. In this greate trachte there are two regions wherof the one is cauled *Tiaia* and the other *Maia*. He writheth that all that lande is very fayre and holſome by reaſon of the excellent temperateneſſe of the ayer: And that it is inferiour to no lande in frutefull grounde beinge partly full of montaines, and partly large playnes: Alſo replenyſhed with many goodly trees, holſome herbes, and frutes, continuynge greene and florifyng all the hole yeare. It beareth alſo verye many holly trees and pyne aple trees. Alſo. vii. kyndes of date trees wherof ſumme are frutefull and ſumme bare. It bringeth furth lykewyf of it ſelfe *Pelgoras* and wilde vynes laden with grapes euen in the wooddes emonge other trees. He ſaythe furthermore that there is ſuche abundaunce of other pleaſante and profitable frutes, that they paſſe not of vynes. Of one of thoſe kyndes of date trees, they make certeyne longe and brode

nd nowe
d beastly

one fierye
e therfore
nmytte a
es, of his
d in that
Maye, he
fiftie or.
le to the
Dominica
es. Thus
the Easte
lesse then
llingly, or
the weste,
chaunsed
hinge and
he mette
e streame.
es feyng
wte of the
feared the
owre men
the length
For they
sche ware
a certeyne
trumentes
of fundrye
ed shortly
uctured of
anne myles
named it
es, a great
a plenty of
a they had
inge their
e thynges,
d pynnes,
re are two
sayre and
n frutefull
odly trees,
ere many
me baren.
es emonge
ble frutes,
and brode

swoordes and darteres. These regyons beare also gossampyne trees here and there commonly in the wooddes. Lykewife *Mirobalanes* of sundry kyndes, as thoſe which the phitians caule *Emblicos* and *Chebulos*, *Maizium* alfo, *Iucca*, *Ages*, and *Battatas*, lyke vnto thoſe whiche we haue fayde before to bee founde in other regions in theſe coaſtes. The fame nooryſſeth alfo lyons, Tygers, Harters, Roes, Goates, and dyuers other beaſtes. Lykewife ſundry kyndes of byrdes and foulſe: Emonge the whiche they keepe only them to franke and feede, whiche are in colour bygnes, and taste, muſe lyke vnto oure pehennes. He faſh that th[e]inhabitantes are of high and goodly ſtature, well lymmed and proportioned both men and women: Couryng their priuye partes with fyne breeches of golſampine cotton wrought with dyuers colours. And that they may feeme the more cumyle and bewtiful (as they take it) they paynte their bodyes redde and blacke with the iuce of certeyne apples whiche they plante in their gardens for the fame purpoſe. Summe of them paynte their holi bodies: ſumme but parte: and other ſumme drawe the portiures, of herbes, floures, and knottes, every one as ſeemeth beſte to his owne phantafye. Their language diſfereth vterlye from theirs of the Ilandes neare aboue them. From theſe regions, the waters of the ſea ranne with as full courſe towarde the weſte, as if it had byn the faule of a iwyſte riuer. Neuertheleſſe he determined to ſearche the Easte partes of this lande, reuoluynge in his mynde that the regions of *Paria* and *Os Draconis* with other coaſtes founde before toward the Easte, ſhulde bee neare theraboute as in deeđe they were. Departyng therfore from the large region of *Quiriquetana* the. xiii. daye of the calendes of September, when he had failed thirtie leagues, he founde a ryuer, without the mouth wherof he drewe freſhe water in the ſea. Where alſo the ſhoore was fo cleane withowte rockes, that he founde grounde euyer where, where he myght aptely caste anker. He writheth that the ſwifte courſe of the *Ocean* was fo vehement and contrarie, that in the ſpace of fortye dayes he coulde ſcarcelye fayle threfore and tenne leagues, and that with muſe diſſicultie with many fetches and coompaynges, fyndyng him ſelue to bee ſumtimes repulſed and dryuen farre backe by the yoſolente courſe of the ſea when he woold haue taken lande towarde the euenyng, leaſte perhaſes wanderyng in vñknownen coaſtes in the darckeneneſſe of the nyght, he myghte bee in daunger of ſhypprake: He writheth that in the ſpace of eyght leagues, he founde three great and fayre ryuers vpon the banckes wherof, there grewe reedes bygger then a mannes thyg. In theſe ryuers was alſo greate plentye of fyſhe and great tortoyſes: Lykewife in many places, multitudes of Crocodiles lyinge in the fande, and yanng to take the heate of the foonne: Befyde dyuers other kyndes of beaſtes whervnto he gaue no names. He faſh that the foyle of that lande is very diuers and variable: beyng ſumwhere ſtonye and full of rough and craggie promontories or poynthes reachyng into the ſea. And in other places as fruitfull as maye bee. They haue alſo diuers kynges and rulers. In ſumme places they caule a kyng *Cacicus*: in other places they caule hym *Quebi*, and ſumwhere *Tiba*. ſuche as haue behaued them felues valiantly in the warres ageynſte their enemies, and haue their faces full of ſcarres, they caule *Cupras*, and honour them as the antiquite dyd the goddes whiche they cauled *Heroes*, ſuppoſed to bee the foules of ſuche men as in their lyfe tyme excelled in vertue and noble actes. The common people, they caule *Chui*: and a man, they caule *Homem*. When they faye in their language, take man, they ſay *Hoppa home*. After this, he came to an other ryuer apte to beare great ſhyppes: Before the mouthe wherof, leye foure ſmaule Ilandes full of florifhing and fruitful trees. Theſe Ilandes he named *Quatuor tempora*. From henfe iwylyngē towarde the Easte for the ſpace of. xiii. leagues ſtyll ageynſte the yoſolente courſe of the water, he founde twelve other ſmaule Ilandes. In the whiche bycaufe he founde a newe kynde of frutes muſe like vnto oure lemondes, he cauled them *Limonares*. Wanderyng yet further the fame waye for the ſpace of. xi. leagues, he founde a great hauen enteryng into the land after the maner of a gouſle the ſpace of three leagues, and in maner as brode, into the whiche fell a great ryuer. Here was *Nicuela* loſte afterwarde when he ſoughte *Beragua*: By reaſon wherof they cauled it *Rio de los perdidos*: that is, the ryuer of the loſte men. Thus *Colonius* the Admirall yet further contynuynge his courſe ageynſte the furie of the ſea, founde manye hyghe montaynes and horribile valleys, with dyuers ryuers and hauens, from all the whiche (as he ſaythe) proceeded sweete ſauers greatly recreatyng and comfortyng nature. In fo muſe that in all this longe trachte there was not one of his men defeſt vnytill he came to a region whiche th[e]inhabitantes caule *Quicuri*, in the whiche is the hauen cauled *Cariai*, named *Mirobalanus* by the admiral bycaufe the *Mirobalane* trees are native in the region therabout. In this hauen of *Cariai*, there came about two hundredth of th[e]inhabitantes to the ſea fyde with euerye of them three or four darteres in their handes: Yet of condition gentell enoughe, and not refuſyng ſtraungers. Their commyng was for none other purpoſe then to knowe what this newe nation mente, or what they broughte with them. When oure men had gyuen them fynges of peace, they came ſwynnymyngē to the ſhyppes and defyred to barter with hem by exchange. The admiral to allure them to frenclhippe, gaue them many of oure thinges: But they refuſed them, ſuſpectyng ſumme diſſeate thereby bycaufe he woold not receyue theirs. They wroughte all by fynges: for one vnderſtoode not a woord of the others language. ſuche gyftes as were fente them, they lefte on the ſhore and woold take no part therof. They are of ſuche ciuitiye and humanytie, that they eſteeme it more honorable to gyue then to take. They fente oure men two younge women beinge vyrgynes, of commendable fauour and goodly ſtature,

Mirobalanes	
Byrdes and foulſe	
People of goodly ſtature	
They paynt their bodyes	
The ſwifte courſe of the ſea from the Easte to the West.	<i>Paria</i> .
Freshes water in the ſea.	
Fetches and compaſſinges	
106	
Faire ryuers.	
Great reedes	
Great tortoyſes.	
Dyuers languages.	
Heroes.	
Quatuor tempora.	
Twelue Ilandes named Limonares	
Rio de los perdidos.	
The region of Quicuri. The hauen of Cariai or Mirobalanus	
Ciuile and humane people	

107
[Trees grow by
the sea] syde.

Trees growinge
in the sea after a
strange sort.

Plinie.

A straunge kynde
of moonkeyes.

A moonkeye
feygith with
a man.

A conflict betwene
a monkey and a
wyld bore.

The bodyes of
kynges dried and
reserved

Cerabaro.

Aburema.

Cheynes of golde.

Plentie of golde.
Fyue villages ryche
in gold.

Crownes of beasts
claws

108

fygnifyinge vnto them that they myghte take them awaye with them if it were their pleasure. Thefe women after the maner of their countrey, were couered from their ancles sumwhat aboue their priuye partes with a certeyne clothe made of gossampine cotton. But the men are al naked. The women vse to cutte their heare: But the men lette it growe on the hynder partes of their heades, and cutte it on the fore parte. Their longe heare, they binde vppe with syllettes, and winde it in fundry rowles as owre maydes are accustomed to do. The virgins which were fente to the Admirall he decked in fayre apparell, and gaue them many gystes, and fente theym home ageyne. But lykewife all these rewardes and apparel they lefft vppon the shore bycause owre men had refusid their gystes. Yet tooke he two men away with him (and thoſe very wyllyngly) that by lernynge the Spanyshe tongue, he myghte afterwarde vſe them for interpretors. He confidered that the tractes of these coaſtes were not greatlye troublede with vehement motions or ouerflowynges of the ſea, forasmuche as trees growe in the ſea not farre frome the ſhore, euen as they doo vppon the bankes of ryuers. The which thyng also other doo affirme whiche haue lateley ſearched thoſe coaſtes, declaring that the ſea riſeth and faultheſt but lyttle there aboue. He ſayth furthermore, that in the proſpective of this lande, there are trees engendred euen in the ſea, whiche after that they are growen to any height, bende downe the toppes of theyr branches into the grounde: which embrasing them cauſeth other branches to ſprunge owt of the ſame, and take roote in the earth, bringyng forth trees in theyr kynde ſuccesſively as dyd the fyrt roote from whence they had theyr originall, as do alſo the fettes of vines when onely bothe the endes therof are put into the grounde. Plinie in the twelfth booke of his natural hiftorie maketh mention of ſuche trees, defreibunge them to bee on the lande, but not in the ſea. The Admirall wryteth alſo that the lyke beaſtes are engendred in the coaſtes of *Cariai*, as in other prouinces of theſe regions, and much as we haue ſpoken of before. Yet that there is one founde here in nature much differinge from the other. This beaſte is of the byggernes of a greate moonkeye, but with a tayle muche longer and bygger. It lyueth in the wooddes, and remoueth from tree to tree in this maner. Hangyng by the tayle vppon the braunce of a tree, and gathering strength by ſwayinge her bodye twyſe or thryſe too and fro, the cauſeth her ſelfe from braunce to braunce and ſo from tree to tree as though the flewe. An archer of owres hurt one of them. Who perceauing her ſelfe to be wounded, leapt downe from the tree, and fiercely ſet on hym which gaue her the wounde, in ſo muche that he wasayne to defende hym ſelfe with his ſwoorde. And thus by chaunce cutting of one of her armes, he tooke her, and with muche a doo brought her to the ſhips where within a whyle, ſhee waxed tame. Whyle ſhee was thus kepte and bownde with cheynes, certeyne other of owre hunters hadde chafed a wyld bore owt of the maryſhes nere vnto the ſea syde. For hunger and deſyre of fleſhe, cauſed them to take double pleaſure in huntaryng. In this meane tyme other which remayned in the ſhippes, goinge a lande to recreate them ſelues, tooke this moonkeye with them. Who, as foone as ſhee had eſpied the bore, ſet vp her brystels and made towarde her. The bore lykewife ſhooke his briftels and whette his teethe. The moonkeye furiously invaded the bore, wrappyng her tayle about his body, and with her arme referued of her victourer, helde hym ſo fast aboute the throte, that he was ſuffocate. These people of *Cariai*, vſe to drye the deade bodyes of theyr princes vppon hurdels, and ſo referue them inuohued in the leaues of trees. As he went forwarde about twenty leagues from *Cariai*, he founde a goulfie of ſuch largenes that it conteinyd xiij. leagues in compasse. In the mouth of this goulfie were foure lyttle Ilandes ſo nere togither, that they made a ſafe hauen to enter into the goulfie. This goulfie is the hauen which we ſayde before to be cauled *Cerabaro* of theſe inhabitanſes. But they haue nowe learned that only the lande of the one ſyde therof, lyng on the ryght hande at the enterynge of the goulfie, is cauled by that name. But that on the lefte ſyde, is cauled *Aburema*. He ſaythe that all this goulfie is ful of fruteful Ilandes wel replenyſhed with goodly trees: And the grounde of the ſea to bee verye cleane without rockes, and commodious to caſt anker: Lykewife the ſea of the goulfie to haue greate abundance of fyſſe: and the lande of both the ſydes to bee inferior to none in frutulines. At his fyrt arruyng, he eſpyed two of theſe inhabitanſes hauyng cheynes aboute theyr neckes, made of ouches (which they caule *Guanines*) of bafe golde artificially wrought in the formes of Eagles, and lions, with dyuers other beaſtes and foulſ. Of the two *Cariaies* whiche he brought with hym from *Cariai*, he was informed that the regions of *Cerabaro* and *Aburema* were ryche in golde: And that the people of *Cariai* haue all theyr golde frome thenſe for exchaunge of other of theyr thynges. They towlde hym alſo, that in the fame regions there are fyue vyllages not farre from the ſea ſyde, whose inhabitanſes apply them ſelues onely to the gathering of gold. The names of theſe vyllages are theſe: *Chirara*, *Puren*, *Chitaza*, *Iureche*, *Atamea*. All the men of the prouince of *Cerabaro*, go naked, and are paynted with dyuers coloures. They take great pleaſure in weareyng garlandes of floures, and crownes made of the clawes of Lions and Tygers. The women couer onely theyr priuye partes with a ſyllet of gossampine cotton. Departyng from henſe and coaſtlyng ſtyll by the fame ſhore for the ſpace of xviii. leagues, he came to another ryuer, where he eſpyed aboue three hundredth naked men in a company. When they faw the ſhippes drawe neare the lande, they cryed owt aloue, with cruelle countenaunces ſhaynyng theyr wooden ſwordes and huryng darteſ, takynge alio water in theyr mouthes and

spouting the same ageynst our men: wherby they seemed to insinuate that they wold receave no condition of peace or haue ought to doo with them. Here he commundaunce pieces of ordinaunce to be shot of toward them: Yet so to ouerfute them, that none myght be hurt therby. For he euer determinyd to deale quietly and peaceably with these newe nations. At the noyse therfore of the gunnes and fygft of the fyre, they fell downe to the gronde, and defyred peace. Thus enteringe into further frendshippe, they exchaunged theyr cheynes and ouches of golde for glasse and haukes belles and such other marchandises. They vfe drummes or tymbrels made of the shelles of certeyne sea fysshes, wherewith they encorage them selues in the warres. In this tract are these feuen ryuers, *Acateba, Quareba, Zobroba, Aiguitin, Vrida, Durriba, Beragua*, in all the whiche, golde is founde. They defende them selues ageynste rayne and heate with certeyne great leaues of trees in the steade of clokkes. Departinge from hense, he searched the coastes of *Ebetere* and *Embigar*, into the which faule the goodly ryuers of *Zohoran* and *Cubigar*: And here ceafteth the plentie and frutefulnes of golde, in the tracts of fistie leagues or there about. From hense onely three leagues distant, is the rocke whiche in the vnfortunate discouerfe of *Nicusa* we sayde was cauled of owe men *Pignonem*. But of th[e]inhabitantes the Region is cauled *Vibba*. In this tracte alfo aboute fyxe leagues frome thense, is the hauen which *Colonus* cauled *Portus Bellus* (wherof we haue spoken before) in the region whiche th[e]inhabitantes caule *Xaguaguara*. This region is very peopulous: but they go all naked. The kyng is paynted with blacke colours, but all the people with redde. The kyng and feuen of his noble men, had every of them a lytle plate of golde hangyng at theyr nosethrilles downe vnto their lypes. And this they take for a cumly ornamente. The menne inclose theyr priuie members in a shell: And the women couer theyrs with a fyllot of gossampine cotton tyed about their loynes. In theyr gardens they noorysfe a frute muche lyke the nutte of a pine tree: the whiche (as we haue sayde in an other place) groweth on a shrubbe muche lyke vnto an archichoke: But the frute is muche foster, and meate for a kyng. Alfo certeyne trees whiche beare gourdes, wherof we haue spoken before. This tree, they caule *Hibero*. In these coastes they mette sumtymes with Crocodiles lyng on the sandes, the whiche when they fled, or tooke the water, they lefte a very sweete sauour behynde them sweeter then muske or *Castoreum*. When I was fente ambaßadour for the catholike king of Castile to the Soltane of Babilon or Alcayer in Egipte, th[e]inhabitantes nere vnto the ryuer of *Nilus* toulde me the like of their female Crocodiles. Affyrmynge furthermore that the fatte or fewette of them is equall in sweetnes with the plefaunte gummes of Arabie. But the Admirall was nowe at the length enforced of neccesfyte to departe from hense, awell for that he was no longer able to abyde the contrarie and vyonente course of the water, as also that his shypes were daily more and more putrifid and eaten through with certeyne wormes whiche are engendred of the warmenes of the water in all those tracts nere vnto the Equinoctiall line. The Venetians caule these wormes *Biffas*. The same are also engendred in two hauens of the citie of *Alexandria* in Egipte, and destroye the shypes if they lye longe at anker. They are a cubet in length, and sumwhat more: not passing the quanttie of a fynger in bygness. The Spanylsh mariner cauleth this pestilence *Broma*. *Colonus* therfore whom before the great monsters of the sea coule not feare, nowe fearing this *Broma*, beyng also foore vexed with the contrary faule of the sea, directed his course with the *Ocean* towarde the west, and came first to the ryuer *Hiebra*, distant onely two leaues from the ryuer of *Beragua*, bycause that was commodious to harborowe great shippes. This region is named after the riuers, and is called *Beragua* the lesse: Bycause bothe the ryuers are in the dominion of the kyng which inhabiteth the region of *Beragua*. But what chaunfed vnto hym in this vyage on the ryghte hande and on the lefte, lette vs nowe declare. Whyle therfore *Colonus* the Admirall remayned yet in the ryuer *Hiebra*, he sent *Bertholomeus Colonus* his brother and Lieuetenaunte of *Hippaniola*, with the shyppe boates and threscore and. viii. men to the ryuer of *Beragua*, where the king of the region beinge naked and painted after the maner of the country, came towarde them with a great multitude of men waytyng on hym, but all vnarmed and without weapons, gyuunge also sygnes of peace. When he approached nerer, and entered communication with owe men, certeyne of his gentelmen neareste aboue his person, rememberinge the maiestie of a king, and that it stode not with his honour to barge stondyng, tooke a greate stoonowte of the ryuer, wasshyng and rubbyng it veary decently, and so put it vnder hym with humble reverence. The kyng thus fytyng, seemed with sygnes and tokens to insinuate that it shuld be lawful for owe men to searche and viewe al the ryuers within his dominion. Wherfore, the vi. day of the Ides of February, leauing his boates with certeyne of his coompany, he wente by lande a foote from the banckes of *Beragua* vntyl he came to the ryuer of *Duraba*, whiche he affirmeth to be richer in gold then eyther *Hiebra* or *Beragua*. For gold is engendred in al the riuers of that land. In so muche that emonge the rootes of the trees growyng by the banckes of the ryuers, and amoung the stonnes left of the water, and also where so euer they dygged a hole or pyt in the gronde not paste the deapthe of a handfull and a halfe, they founde the earthe taken owte therof, myxte with golde: Where vpon he determinyd to fasten his foote there and to inhabyte. Whiche thynge the people of the countrey perceauyng and finellynge what inconuenyence and myschiefe myght thereof ensewe to their countrey if they shulde permitte straungers to plante their habitation there, assembled a great army, and with horrible owte crye assayed owe

Spytfull peop'.

Guns make peace.

Seuen golden ryuers

Note, where the plentie of golde endeth

*Pignonem.**Vibba.**Portus Bellus.*

Paynted people.

A strange syght.

A shel in the steede of a codpiece.

Crocodiles of sweete sauour.
Alcayr or Babilon in Egipt

Shippes eaten with wormes.

Alexandria in Egipte.

*Broma.**Hiebra.**Beragua.*

109

How the king of Beragua enterred the lieuetenaunte.

Their reverence to the kyng.

Golde in the ryuer Duraba.

Great plenty of golde.

Slynges and darteres.

Liberty more esteemed then ryches.

The Spanyarde are dryuen to flight.

The Ilande of Iamaica.

A miserably case.

110

Necessarie hath no lawe howe farr lyfe is to bee esteemed.

A daungerous enterprize.

Sanctus Dominicus.

Landes found by Colonus.

Temperate regions and holosome aier

Cerabaro.
Hicbra.
Beragua.
Experie myners.

A godly nature in golde.

Golden haruest.

men (who had nowe begonne to buylde hou ses) too desperately that they were scarcely able to abyde the fyriste brunte. These naked barbarians at their fyrist approche, vised onely flynges and darteres: But when they came nearer to hande strookes, they foughte with their wooden swords whiche they caule *Machanas*, as wee haue sayd before. A man wooldre not thinkne what great malice and wrath was kyndled in their hertes ageinst owe men: And with what desperatye myndes they fought for the defense of their lybertie whiche they more esteeme then lyfe or rychedesse. For they were nowe so voyde of all feare, and contemnyng deathe, that they neyther feared longe bowes or crossebowes, nor yet (whiche is mooste to be marueyled) were any thynges discouraged at the terrible noyse of the gunnes shotte off from the shippes. They retyred once. But shortly after encreasyng their noumbre, they returned more fiercely then at the fyriste. They wooldre haue byn contented to haue receyued owe men frendly as straungers, but not as inhabittours. The more instante that owe men were to remaine, so muche the greater multitude of bortherers flocked toguther dayly, disturbing them both nyght and daye sumtymes on the one syde and sumtymes on the other. The shippes lying at anker neare vnto the shore, warded them on the backe halfe. But at the length they were fayne to foriske this lande, and retourne backe the same way by the which they came. Thus with much diffyculty and danger, they came to the Iland of *Iamaica* lyenge on the south syde of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, with their shippes as full of holes as sieues, and so eaten with wormes, as though they had byn bored through with wimbles. The water entered so faste at the rytes and holes, that if they had not with the paynfull labour of their handes empted the same as faste, they were lyke to haue periysshed. Where as yet by this means they arryued at *Iamaica*, althoughe in maner halfe deade. But their calamite ceased not here. For as fast as their shippes leaked, their strengthe dimynisched so that they were no longer able to keepe them from synkyng. By reasoun wherof, faulynge into the handes of the barbarians, and inclosed withoute hope of departure, they led their lyues for the space of tenne monthes emong the naked people more miserably then euer dyd *Achemenides* emonge the gyantes cauled *Ciclopes*: rather lyuing then beinge eyther contented or satifisched with the strange meates of that Ilande: and that onely at fuci tynes as pleased the barbarians to giue them part of theirs. The deadly enmyt and malice whiche these barbarous kinges bearne one agenst an other, made greatly with owe men. For at fuche tymes as they attempted warre ageinst their bortherers they wold sumtymes gyue owe men parte of theyr breading to ayde them. But howe myserable and wretched a thyng it is to lyue onelie with breading gotten by beggyng, yowre holynesse maye easlye conjecture: Especially where all other accustomed foode is lackynge, as wyne, oyle, fleshe, butter, chiese, and milke, wherwith the stomakes of our people of Europe haue euer byn noorished euene from their cradelles. Therfore as necessitie is subiecte to no lawe, to doothe it enforce men to attempte desperatye aduentures. And those the foner, which by a certeyne noblytie of nature do no further esteemme lyfe then it is ioyned with summe felicity. *Bertholomeus Colonus* therfore, intendyng rather to proue what god wooldre do with hym and his companyons in these extremities, then any longer to abide the same, commaunded *Diegus Mendez* his steward with two guydes of that Ilande whome he had hyred with promyses of great rewardes at their retourne, to enter into one of their canoas and take their viage to *Hispaniola*. Beynge thus tost on the sea two and fro from rocke too rocke by reasoun of the shortenesse and narownes of the canoa, they arryued at the length at the laste corner of *Hispaniola*, beyng distante from *Iamaica* fortie leagues. Here his guydes departyng from hym, returned ageinst to *Colonus* for the rewardes which he had promyfed them. But *Diegus Mendez* wente on forward a foote vnyll he came to the citie cauled *Sanctus Dominicus* beyng the chiefe and heade citye of the Ilande. The offycers and rulers of *Hispaniola*, beinge enformede of the matter, appoynted hym two shippes wherwith he retournd to his maister and coompanions. As he founde them, too came they to *Hispaniola*, verye feble and in maner naked. What chaunced of them afterward, I knowe not as yet. Lette vs nowe therfore leauue these particuleres, and speake sumwhat more of generals. In al those tractes whiche we fayde here before to haue bynne found by *Colonus* the Admyrall, bothe he hym selfe writeth, and all his coompanions of that vyage confesse, that the trees, herbes, and frutes, are floryshing and greene all the hole yeare, and the aier so temperate and holesome, that of all his coompanie there never fell one man fycke, nor yet were vexed eyther with extreme coulde or heate for the space of fyfie leagues from the great hauen of *Cerabaro* to the ryuers of *Hicbra* and *Beragua*. Th[er]e[inhabitantes of *Cerabaro*, and the nations whiche are betwyxte that and the fayde ryuers, applye not them selues to the gatheryng of golde but onely at certeyne tymes of the yeare: And are very experie and cunnynge herein, as are owe myners of syluer and Iren. They knowe by longe experiance in what places golde is mooste abundantly engendred: as by the colour of the water of the ryuers, and fuche as faule from the montaynes: And also by the colour of the earthe and stones. They beleue a certeyne godly nature to be in golde, forasmuche as they never gather it excepte they vse certeyne religiouse expiations or pourgynges, as to abfeyn from women, and all kyndes of plefures and delicatymeates and drinke, during all the tyme that their golden haruest lasteth. They suppose that men do naturally lyue and dye as other beastes do, and therfore honour none other thyng as god. Yet doo they praye to the sonne, and honour it when it ryseth. But lette vs nowe speake of the montaines and situation of these landes

From all the sea bankes of these regyons, exceeding great and hyge mountaynes are feene towarde the Southe, yet reachynge by a continual tracte from the Easte into the weste. By reasoun wherof I suppose that the two greate feas (wherof I haue spoken largelly before) are deuided with these mountaynes and were with bulwarkes, leaste they shoulde ioyne and repugne, as Italye deuideth the sea cauled *Tirrennum*, from the sea Adriatyke, which is nowe commonly cauled the goulfe of Venes.

For whiche waye so euer they sayled from the poynt cauled *Promontorium, S. Augustini* (whiche perteyneth to the Portugales and prospecteth ageynste the sea Atlantike) even vnto *Vraba* and the hauen *Cerabaro*, and to the furthest landes found hythero westwarde, they had euer greate mountaynes in syghte both nere hande and farre of, in all that longe rafe. These mountaynes were in sume place, smooth, plefaunt and frutfull, full of goodly trees and herbes: And sumwhere, hygh, rowgh, ful of rockes, and baren, as chaunfeth in the famus mountaynes of *Taurus* in *Asia*, and also in dyuers coastes of our mountaynes of *Apennini*, and suche other of lyke byggenesie. The rydgies also of these mountaynes are diuided with goodly and fayre valleis. That part of the mountaynes which includeth the lymettes of *Beragua*, is thought to be hygher then the clowdes, in so much that (as they faye) the tops of them can seldome bee feene for the multitude of thicke clowdes which are beneath the fame. *Colonus* the Admirall the syrte fynder of these regions, affirmeth that the topes of the mountaynes of *Beragua* are more then fiftie myles in heighth. He sayth furthermore that in the same region at the rotes of the mountaynes the way is open to the south sea, and compareth it as it were betwene Venice and *Genua*, or *Ianua* as the Genues wyll haue it cauled, whiche fable that theri citie was buylde of *Ianus*. He affirmeth also that this lande reacheth foorth towarde the south: And that from hense it taketh the begynnyng of breadth, lyke as from the Alpes owte of the narwe thylgh of Italy, we see the large and mayne landes of *Fraunce*, *Germanye*, and *Pannonye*, to the *Sarmatians* and *Scythians*, even vnto the mountaynes and rockes of *Riphea* and the frozen sea, and embrase therwith as with a continual bonde, all *T[he]racia*, and *Grecia*, with all that is included within the promontorie or poynt of *Malea* and *Helleponthus* southwarde, and the sea *Euxinus* and the maryshes of *Mæotis* in *Sylyria* northwarde. The Admirall supposeth, that on the lefte hande in saylynge towarde the weste, this lande is ioyned to *India* beyonde the ryuer of *Ganges*: And that on the ryght hande towarde the North, it bee extended to the frozen sea, beyonde the Hyperboreans and the North pole: So that both the feas (that is to meane that south sea which we sayde to bee founde by *Vaschus*, and owe Ocean) shulde ioyne and meeet in the corners of that lande: And that the waters of these feas doo not onely incloſe and compasse the fame without diuision as Europe is incloſed with the feas of *Helleponthus* and *Tanais*, with the frozen Ocean and owe sea of *Tirrennum* with the Spanyſh feas. But in my opinion, the vehement course of the Ocean toward the weste, doth signifie and lette that the sayde two feas shulde not so ioyne togither: But rather that that land is adherent to the firme landes towarde the Northe, as we haue sayde before. It shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche of the length hereof. Let vs nowe therfore speake sumwhat of the breadth of the fame. We haue made mention before howe the south sea is diuided with narwe lymettes from owe Ocean, as it was proued by th[e] experience of *Vaschus Nunner* and his coompagnies which fyrt made open the way thyther. But as dyuerſly as the mountaynes of owe Alpes in Europe are sumwhere narwe and in sume place brode, even so by the lyke prouidence of nature, this lande in sume parte reacheth farre in breadth, and is in other places coarcted with narwe lymettes from sea to sea, with valleys also in sume places, wherby men maye passe from the one syde to the other. Where we haue descriyed the regions of *Vraba* and *Beragua* to bee situate, these feas are diuided by fmaule distaunce. Yet ought we to thynde the region which the great ryuer of *Maragnonus* runneth through, to bee very large if we shall graunt *Maragnonus* to bee a ryuer and no sea, as the freshe waters of the fame ought to perſuade vs. For in suche narwe caues of the earth, there can bee no swallowing goules of such byggenesie as to receave or nooryſhe so great abundance of water. The lyke is alſo to bee suppoſed of the great ryuer of *Dabaiba* which we sayde to bee from the corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* in sume place of fortie fathomes depth, and sumwhere fiftie: Alſo three myles in breadth, and so to faule into the ſea. We muſt needs graunt that the earth is brode there, by the whiche the ryuer paſſeth from the hyge mountaynes of *Dabaiba* from the Easte and not from the west. They ſay that this ryuer conſiſteth and taketh his encrease of fourre other ryuers faulynge from the mountaynes of *Dabaiba*. Owe men caule this ryuer *Nun. S. Iohannis*. They ſay alſo that from hense it faulth into the goulfe of *Vraba* by ſeuern mouthes as 100the the ryuer of *Nilus* into the ſea of Egypte. Lykewyſe that in the ſame region of *Vraba* there are in sume places narwe ſtreygthes not paſſyng fyſtene leagues: and the fame to bee ſaluage and without any paſſage by reaſon of dyuers maryſhes and defolate wayes, whiche the Latinen caule *Lamas*: But the Spanyarde accordyng to their varietie, caule them *Tremedales*, *Trampales*, *Cenegales*, *Sumideros*, and *Zahondaderos*. But before we paſſe any further, it ſhall not bee greatly from our purpoſe to declare from whence these mountaynes of *Dabaiba* haue theri name accordyng vnto th[e] antiquities of th[e]inhabitantes. They ſaye therefore that *Dabaiba* was a woman of greate magnamitie and wyſedomē emonge theri prediceſſours in owdle tyme: whom in her lyfe, all th[e]inhabitantes of thoſe prouincies did greatly reverence, and beinge deade gaue her diuine honour and

Hyge and greate mountaynes.

Tyrrennum is nowe cauled Tuscane.
Cap. S. Augustini.
Vraba.
Cerabaro.
Frutful mountaynes.
Apennini are mountaynes which diuide Italy into ii parties
Beragua

The mountaynes of Beragua higher then the cloudes. Montaynes of fiftie miles heigth.

111

Ianus otherwyse cauled Iaphet, the ſon of Noe.

Italy is lyke vnto a legge in the ſea, and the mountaynes of the alpes, are in the thygle thereof

Colonus his opinion of the ſuppoſed Continent.

By this conjecture, the way ſhuld be open to Cathay by the hyperboreans

Looke the nauigation of Cabote, decalde, lib. vi.

The breadth of the lande

The regions of Vraba and Beragua.

The greate ryuer Maragnonus.

The greate ryuer Dabaiba, or sancty Iohannis.

The ryers haue theyre increase from the ſprynges of the mountaynes.

The ryuer of Nilus in Egypte.

Marishes and desolate wayes. A ſuperstitious opinion of the original mountaines of Dabaiba.

112

Dragons and
crocodiles in the
marshes.The haun
Cenbaro.Twentie golden
ryuers.

Precious stones.

A precious
diemonde of
excedyng bygnes.Topases.
The Spaniardes
contemne
effeminate pleasures

Sweete sauours.

A similitude
proving great
plente of golde
and precious
stones.
The haun of
Sancta Martha.
*Cariac.*The heroical
fates of the
Spaniardes.

named the region after her name, beleuyng that shee fendeth thunder and lyghtnyng to destroy the frutes of the earth yf shee bee angered, and to fend plentie if shee bee well pleased. This superstition hatha byn perfuaded them by a craftie kynde of men vnder pretense of religion to th[e]intent that they might enioye suche gystes and offerings as were brought to the place where shee was honoured. This is sufficient for this purpose. They say furthermore that the maryshes of the narowe lande wherof we haue spoken, bryng forth great plentie of Crocodiles, dragons, battes, and gnattes beinge very hurtfull. Therefore when so euer they take any iorney towarde the southe, they go oute of the way towarde the mountaynes, and eschewe the regions neare vnto those perelous fennes or maryshes. Some thinkē that there is a valley lyng that way that the ryuer runneth which owe men caule *Rio de los perdidos*, that is, the ryuer of the lost men (so named by the misfortune whiche there befell to *Nicuesa* and his coompany) and not far distant from the haun *Ceralaro* whiche diuideth those mountaynes towarde the south. But let vs nowe synfise this booke with a fewe other thynges worthy to bee noted. They say therefore that on the ryght hande and lefte hande frome *Dariena*, there are twentie ryuers in all the whiche, great plentie of golde is founde. Beinge demandaуд what was the cause why they brought no greater abundance of golde from thense, they answered that they lacked myners: And that the men which they tooke with them from Spayne thyther, were not accustomed to laboure, but for the moſte parte brought vp in the warres. This lande feemeth alſo to promefſe many precious ſtones. For beſide thoſe which I ſayde to bee founde neare vnto *Cariac* and *Sancta Martha*, one *Andreas Moralis* a pylot (who had traualyed thoſe coaſtes with *Johannes de la Cofa* whyle he yet lyued) had a precious diamonde which he bought of a naked younge man in the region of *Cumana* in the prouince of *Paria*. This ſtone was as longe as two ioyntes of a mans middell fynger, and as bigge as the fyrt ioynte of the thumme: beinge alſo paynted on eueri fyde, coniſtynge of eigh squares perfectly formed by nature. They ſay that with thiſ they made ſcarres in anuilles and hammers, and brake the teeth of fyles, the ſtone remaynyng vnprefyſhed. The younge man of *Cumana*, wore thiſ ſtone aboue his necke emonge other ouches, and foulde it to *Andreas Moralis* for fyue of our counterfeſt ſtones made of glaſe of dyuers colours wherwith the ignorant younge man was greatly delyted. They founde alſo certeyne topafes on the ſhore. But th[e]eftimation of golde was fo farre entered into the headeſ of owe men, that they had no regarde to ſtones. Alſo the moſt part of the Spaniardes, do lawgh them to ſcorne which vſe to weare many ſtones: ſpecially ſuch as are common: Iudging it to bee an effeminate thyng, and more meeſe for women then men. The noble men onely when they celebraue ſolemne mariages, or ſet forth any triumphes, weare cheyneſ of gold byſet with precious ſtones, and vſe faire apparell of fylike embrothered with golde intermixt with pearlſ and precious ſtones: And not at other tymes. They thynke it no leſſe effeminate for men to ſmell of the sweete ſauours of Arabie: And iudge hym to bee infected with fum kynde of fylthy lechery, in whom they ſmell the ſauour of muſke or *Caforeum*. But lyke as by one apple taken from a tree, we may perceyue the tree to bee frutfull, and by one fyſhe taken in a ryuer, we may knowe that fyſhe is ingendered in the fame, euen ſo, by a lyttel gold, and by one ſtone, we ought to coniſider that thiſ lande bringeth forthe the great plentie of golde and precious ſtones. What they haue found in the porte of *Sancta Martha* in the region of *Cariac* when the hole nauye paſſed therby vnder the gouernance of *Petrus Arias* and his coompany with certeine other of the kynges offyccers, I haue ſufficienly declared in hiſ place. To be ſhorte therefore, all thynges do floryſſe, growe, encreafe, and proſper, that the laſte are euer better then the fyrtle. And surely to declare my opinion herin, what ſo euer hath heretofore byn diſcouered by the famous trauayles of *Saturnus* and *Hercules*, with ſuch other whom the antiquitie for their heroical factes honoured as goddes, feemeth but lyttel and obſcure if it be compared to the Spaniardes victoriouſ laboures. Thus I byd yowre holynes fare well, defyring yowe to certifie me howe yowe lyke thiſe fyrtle ſutes of the *Ocean*, that beynge encoraged with yowre exhortations, I maye the gladlyer and with leſſe tediousneſſe write ſuche thynges as ſhal chaunce heraſter.

113

THE FYFT BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



L ſuche lyuyng creatures as vnder the cercle of the moone bringe forthe any thyng, are accuſtomed by th[e]inſtincte of nature as foone as they are delyuering of their byrthe, eyther to cloſe vppre the matrice, or at the leaſte to bee quyete for a ſpace. But owe moſte frutefull Ocean and newe woordie, engendereth and bringeth furthe dayly newe byrthes wherby men of great wytte, and eſpecially ſuche as are ſtudyous of newe and meruelous thinges, may haue ſumwhat at hand wherwith to feede their myndes. If yowre holynesse do akſe to what purpoſe is al thiſ, ye ſhal understand, that I had ſcarcely ſynfyſhed the hiftoreye of ſuche thynges as chaunſed to *Vafchus Nunnes* and his coompanye in their vyage to the southe ſea, when foodenly there came

newe letters from *Petrus Arias* the newe governour whom the kyng had appoynted the yeare before with an army of men and a nauye of shippes to sayle to these newe landes. He sygnifyeth by his letters, that he with his nauye and coompany, arryued all safely. Furthermore, *Johannes Cabedus* (whome yowre holynes at the requeste of the moste catholyke kynge had created bishoppo of that prouunce of *Dariena*) and three other of the chiefe offycers ioined in commission to be his assylance, as *Alfoncus de Ponte*, *Diegus Marques*, and *Johannes de Tauira*, confyrmed the same letters and subscribed them with their names. The nauigation therfore of *Petrus Arias*, was in this maner. The daye before the Ides of Apryll, in the yeare of Christe. 1514. he hoyfedy vppon his sayles in the towne of faincte *Luar de Barrameda*, sytuate in the mouth of the ryuer *Betis*, whiche the Spaniardes nowe caule *Guadalchebir*. The feuen Ilandes of *Canaria* are about fourre hundredth myles distant from the place where this riuier faulthe into the sea. Summe thinke that these are the Ilandes which the owld writers did caule the fortunate Ilandes. But other thynke the contrary. The name of these Ilandes, are these. The two whiche appere fyrste in syght, are named *Lanzelota* and *Fortisuentura*. On the backehalfe of these, lyeth *Magna Canaria* or *Grancanaria*. Beyonde that is *Tenerife*: and *Gomera* sumwhat toward the northe frome that. *Palma* and *Ferreia*, lye behynde as it were a bulwark to all the other. *Petrus Arias* therfore, arriued at *Gomera* the eyghte daye after his departure, with a nauye of. xvii. shippes and a. M. [thousand] and fyue hundredth men, althoughe there were only a thousand and two hundredth assygned hym by the kynges letters. It is sayde furthermore that he leste behynd hym more then two thousande verye pensyus and syghyng that they also myght not be receaued, proferyng them selues to go at their owne charges. He taried. xvi. dayes in *Gomera* to th[e]intente to make prouyson of fuell and freffe water: But chiefly to repayre his shypes beyng fore brofed with tempestes, and especially the gouernours shipp whiche had loste the rudder. For these Ilandes are a commodious reflyng place for all suche as intende to attempte any nauigations in that mayne sea. Departyng fro[n] hens in the nones of Maye, he fawe no more lande vntyll the thirde daye of June, at the whiche he arriued at *Dominica* an Ilande of the *Canibales*, being distant from *Gomera* aboue eyght hundredth leagues. Here he remayned fourre dayes, makinge newe prouision of freffe water and fuell, duryng whiche tyme he fawe no man nor yet any steppes of men: But founde plentie of few crabbes and greate lylartes. From hense he sayled by the Ilandes of *Matinina* (otherwyse cauled *Madanino*) *Guadalupe*, and *Galanta* (otherwyse cauled *Galana*) of all whiche, we haue spoken in the fyrste decade. He passed also throughe the sea of herbes or weedes, continuynge a long traete. Yet nether he, nor *Colonius* the Admyrall (who fyrste founde these Ilandes and sayled through this sea of weedes) haue declared anye reasoun howe these weedes shoulde coome. Summe thynke the sea too be verye muddie there, and that these weedes are engendered in the bottome therof, and so beyng loosed, to ascende to the vppermoste parte of the water, as wee see oftentimes chaunce in certeyne stondyng pooles, and sumtymes also in greate ryuers. Other suppose that they are not engendered there, but to bee beaten from certeyne rockes by the yolencie of the water in tempestes. And thus they leaue the matter in dowte: Neyther haue they yet any certeyne experyence whether they flycke faste and gyue place to the shypes, or wander loofe vpon the water. But it is to bee thought that they are engendered there. For otherwyse they shulde bee dryuen togither on heapes by th[e]lympulysyon of the shypes euen as a beasome gathereth the swepynges of a house, and shulde also lette the course of the shypes. The fourth day after that he departed frome *Dominica*, the hyghe mountaynes couered with snowe (wherof we haue spoken in the seconde decade) appered vnto hym. They saye that there the feas runne as swyftlye towarde the weste, as it were a ryuer faulnyng from the toppes of hyghe mountaynes: Although they sayled not directly toward the west, but inclined sumwhat to the south. Frome these mountaynes faulthe the ryuer of *Gaira*, famous by the slaughter of owe men at such tyme as *Rodericus Colmenares* passed by those coastes as we haue sayde before. Lykewyse many other fayre ryuers haue their originall from the same mountaynes. This prouunce (in the whiche is, also the regyon of *Caramairi*) hath in it two notable hauen[s], of the which owe men named the one *Carthago* or *Carthagena*, and the other *Sancta Martha*, the region wherof, th[e]inhabitantes caule *Saturma*. The porte of *Sancta Martha*, is nearer to the montaines couered with snowe cauled *Montes Niuales*: for it is at the rootes of the same montaines. But the hauen of *Carthago*, is more westwarde aboue fystie leagues. He writh maruelous thynge of the hauen of *Sancta Martha*, whiche they also confirme that came lately from thense: Of the which younge *Vesputius* is one to whom *Americus Vesputius* his vnkle (being a Florentine borne) left the exact knowlege of the mariners facultie, as it were by inheritance after his death for he was a very expert maister in the knowledge of his carde, his compasse, and the elevation of the pole starre with all that perteineth thereto. This younge *Vesputius* was assygned by the kyng to bee one of the maisters of the gouernours shipp, bicause he was cunninge in iudgyng the degrees of the elevation of the pole starre by the quadrante. For the charge of gouernyng the rudder, was chiefly coomytted to one *Johannes Serranus* a Spaniarde, who had oftentimes ouer runne those coastes. *Vesputius* is my verye familiyar frende, and a wyttie younge man in whose coompany I take great pleasure, and therefore vse hym oftentimes for my geste. He hath also made many vyages into these coastes, and

The bishop of Dariena.

The nauigation of Petrus Arias.

Saint Lucas.

The Iland of Canarie.

Proutision of freffe water and fuell.

The Iland of Dominica.

Guadalupe, otherwyse cauled Carucueria, or Queraquiera.

The sea of herbes.

114

These mountaynes are cauled *Montes Niuales* or *Serra Neuvata*. decade ii. librat. i. ann. 1.

The swyft course of the sea toward the west.

The ryuer Gaira.

Caramairi.

Carthago.

Saturma.

Mountaynes couered with snowe.

Americus Vesputius.

The stoutenes
of the Barbarians.

The Canibales
feight in the
water.

The vse of gunnes.

The generacion
of thunder and
lyghtnyng.
Melora.

Venenous arrowes

115

Plentic of fyssh.

Cunnyng
fyssheres.

Theyr householde
stuffe.

Tap[e]stry.
A straunge
phantasy.

This is he whom
Cardanus praiseth.

Precious stones
The Smaragde is
the true corande
Another kind of
amber is founde
in whales.
Gold and brasile.

Marchasales are
flowres of metale,
by the colour
wherof, the kyndes
of metale are
known.

These locustes
burne the corne
with tocching and
devoure the
residue. They are
in India of ill.
foote length.

diligently noted suche thinges as he hath seene. *Petrus Arias* therfore writeth, and he confyrmeth the same, that th[e]inhabitantes of these regyons tooke their originall of the Caribes or Canibales, as appeared by the desperate fiercenes and crueltie which they oftentimes shewed to owe men when they passed by their coastes. Suche stoutenes and fortitude of mynde is naturallye engendered in these naked Barbarians, that they feared not to assayle owe hole nauy and to forbyd them to coome a land. They feyght with venemous arrowes as we haue sayde before. Perceauynge that owe men contempned their threatnynges, they ranne furiously into the sea, euen vppe to the breastes, nothyng fearing eyther the bygnes or multitude of owe syppes, but ceased not continually beinge thus in the water, to cast dartes and shute their venemous arrowes as thicke as hayle: In so muche that owe men had bynne in great daunger if they had not byn defended by the cages or pauisses of the syppes and their targettes. Yet were two of them wounded whiche died shortly after. But this confycte continued so sharpe, that at the length owe men were enforced to shute of their byggest pieces of ordinaunce wth hawleshotte: At the slaughter and terrible noyse wherof the barbarians beyng fore discomfited and shaken with feare, thynkyng the same to be thunder and lyghtnyng, tournd their backes and fledde amayne. They greatlye fear thunder bycause these regions are oftentimes vexed with thunder and lyghtnyng by reason of the hyghe montaynes and nearenesse of the same to the region of the ayer wherin such fierie tempestes are engendered which the philosphers caule *Melora*. And all be it that owe men had nowe dryuen their enimyes to flyght, and sawe them disparcled and owt of order, yet dowted they and were of dyuers opinions whether they shulde pursue them or not On the one partie, shame pricked them forwarde, and on the other syde feare caufed them to caste many perelles, especiallye confydryng the venemous arrowes whiche these barbarians canne direct so certeynely. To departe from theym with a drye foote (as saith the prouerbe) with so great a nauye and suche an armee, they reput it as a thynge greatlye foundyng to their reproche and dishonour. At the length therfore shame ouercommynge feare, they pursued them and came to land with their shippes boates. The gouernour of the nauie, and also *Vespasius* doo wryte, that the hauen is no leſſe then three leagues in compasse, beinge also ſafe without rockes, and the water therof ſo cleare, that a man may ſee pybble ſtones in the bottome twentie cubettes deape. They ſaye lykewyſe that there faulthe two fyare ryuers of freſhe water into the hauen: but the fame to bee meeter to beare the canoas of theſe prouinces then anye bygger vefſels. It is a delectable thynge to heare what they tel of the plentie and varietie, and alſo of the plefaunt taſt of the fyſhes alweſ of theſe riuers as of the ſea there about. By reaſon wherof they founde here many fyſher boates and nettes woonderyfully wrought of the ſtaſkes of certeyne herbes or weedes dried and tawed and wrethed with cordes of ſpunne goſſampine cotton. For the people of *Caramairi*, *Gaira*, and *Saturna*, are very cunnyng in fyſhyng, and vſe to ſell fyſhe to theyr bortherers for exchaunge of fuehe thyngeſ as they lacke. When owe men had thus chafed the Barbaryans from the ſea coaſtes, and hadde nowe entered into theyr houſes, they affayled them with newe ſkymulches, eſpecially when they ſawē them faule to ſackynge and ſpoyleynge, and theyr wyues and chyldren taken captiue. Theyr householde ſtuffe was made of great reedes which growe on the ſea bankeſ and the ſtaſkes of certeyne herbes beaten and afterward made harde. The floures therof were ſtrewed with herbes of fundry coloures; And the waules hanged with a kynde of tap[e]ſtry artificially made of goſſampine cotton, and wrought with pictures of Lions, Tygers, and Eagles. The dooreſ of theyr houſes and chambers were full of dyuers kyndes of ſhelles hangynge loofe by ſmaule cordes, that beinge shaken by the wynde they myght make a certeyne rattelynge and alſo a whystelynge noyſe by gatheryng the wynde in theyr holowe places. For herein they haue greate delyte, and impute this for a goodly ornamente. Dyuers haue ſhewed me many woorderfull thyngeſ of theſe regions: Eſpecially one *Gonzalus Fernandus Ouidius* beinge one of the maieſtrates appointed in that office which the Spaniardes caule *Vedor*, who hath alſo hethereto entered further into the lande then any other. He affirmeth that he chaunced vpon the fragmente of a ſaphire bygger then the ege of a goſe. And that in certeyne hylles where he trauyaled with thirtie men, he founde many of the precious ſtones cauled Smaragdes, calcidores, and Iaspers, beſide great pieces of amber of the montaines. He alſo with dyuers other do affirm that in the houſes of fume of the Canibales of theſe regions, they founde the lyke precious ſtones ſet in golde and incloſed in the tap[e]ſtry or arias (if it may ſoo bee cauled) wherewith they hange theyr houſes. The ſame lande bryngeth forth alſo many woodes of brasile trees and great plentie of golde: In ſo much that in maner in al places they founde on the ſea bankeſ and on the ſhoores, certeyne marchaſales in token of golde: *Fernandus Ouidius* declareth furthermore that in a certeyne region cauled *Zenu*, lyinge foure ſcore and tenne myles from *Dariena* Eastwarde, they exercyse a ſtraunge kynde of marchaundies. For in the houſes of the inhabitants, they founde greate cheſtes and baſketſ made of the twigges and leaues of certeyne trees apte for that purpose, beinge all full of grefſehoppers, grylles, crabbes, or creyſiſhes: faylaſe alſo, and locuſtes whiche deſtroye the fieldes of corne, all well dried and ſalted. Beinge demaunded why they referred ſuch a multitude of theſe beaſtes, they anſwered that they kepte them to bee foulde to theyr bortherers which dwell further within the lande: And that for the exchange of theſe precious byrdes and ſalted fyſhes, they receavede of them certeyne ſtrange thyngeſ wherin partly they take pleaure, and partly vſe them for

theyr necessary affayers. These people dwel not togither, but scattered here and there. Th[e]inhabitantes of *Caramairi*, feeme to dwel in an earthly Paradife, theyr region is so faire and frutefull, withoutw outragious heate or sharpe coulde, with lytle difference of the length of day and nyght throwghout all the yeare. After that owre men had thus dryuen the barbarians to flyght, they entered into a valley of two leagues in breadth and three in length, extendyng to certeyne frutful mountaynes ful of grasse, herbes, and trees, at the rootes wherof, lyte two other valleys towarde the ryght hande and the left, throughe either of the which runneth a fayre ryuer, whereof the ryuer of *Gaira* is one, but vnto the other they haue yet gyuen noo name. In these valleys they iounde manye faire gardeyns and pleasaunte syeldes watered with trensheis distrybuted in marueylous order, with no leſſe arte then owre Infubrians and Hetrurians vſe to water theyr syeldes. Theyr common meate, is *Ages*, *Iucca*, *Maizium*, *Battata*, with ſuche other rootes and frutes of trees, and alſo ſuche fyſſhe as they vſe in the Ilandes and other regions of theſe prouinces. They eate mans fleſhe but ſeldome, bycaufe they meeete not oftentymes with strangiers, except they goo foorth of theyr owne dominions with a mayne armye of purpoſe to hunt for men, when theyr rauenynge appetitie pricketh them forward. For they abyteyne from them felues, and eate none but ſuche as they take in the warres or otherwyſe by chaunce. But furly it is a miſerable thynge to heare howe many myriades of men theſe ſyldy and vnnaturlall deuouers of mans fleſhe haue conſumēd, and leſte thoufandes of moſte faire and frutfull Ilandes and regions defolatē withoutw menne: By reaſon wherof owre men founde ſo many Ilaudes whiche for theyr fayrenes and frutefulnesſe myght ſeeme to bee certeyne earthly Paradyſes, and yet were vtterly voyde of men. Hereby yowre hollyneſſe may confider howe perniſious a kynde of men this is. We haue fayne before that the Ilande named *Sancti Iohannis* (which th[e]inhabitantes caule *Burichena*) is nexte to *Hispaniola*. It is fayne that onely the Canibales which dwell in the other Ilandes nere about this, as in the Ilande cauled *Hayhay* or *Santa Crucis*, and in *Guadalupea* (otherwiſe cauled *Queraqueiera*, or *Carucuiera*) haue in owre tyme volentely taken owt of the fayne Ilande of *Sancti Iohannis*, more then fyue thouſande men to bee eaten. But let it ſuffice thus much to haue wandered by theſe monſtrous bludſuckers. We wyll nowe therfore ſpeakewhat of the rootes wherof they make their breade, forasmuch as the fame ſhall hereafter bee foode to Christian men in ſteede of breade made of wheate, and in the ſteade of radyſſe with ſuch other rootes as they haue byn accuſtomed to eate in Europe. We haue oftentymes fayne before that *Iucca* is a roote wherof the beſte and moſte delicate breade is made bothe in the firme lande of theſe regions, and alſo in the Ilandes. But howe it is tyld or hufbanded, howe it groweth, and of howe dyuers kyndes it is, I haue not yet declared. Therefore, when they intende to plante this *Iucca*, they make a hole in the earth knee deape, and rayfe a heape of the earth taken owt of the fame, fashionyng it lyke a ſquare bedde of nyne foote breadth on euerie fyde, fettinge twelue trunkes of theſe rootes (beinge about a foote and a halfe longe a piece) in euerie of the ſayd beddes conteynyng three rootes of a fyde, ſo layde a ſlope, that the endes of them ioyne in maner togithir in the center or myddelſt of the bedde within the grounde. Owt of the ioyntes of the rootes and ſpacess betwene the fame, ſpryngē the toppes and blades of newe rootes, which by lyttle and lyttle encreaſyng, growe to the byggenes and length of a mans arme in the brawne, and oftentymes as bygge as the thigh: So that by the tyme of theyr full rypenes, in maner all the earthe of the heape, is conuerted into rootes. But they ſay that theſe rootes are not rype in leſſe tyme then a yeaſe and a halfe: And that the longer they are ſuffered to growe euē vnyll two yeaſes complete, they are ſo muche the better and more perfecte to make breade therof. When they are taken foorth of the earth, they ſcrape them and fyſe them with certeyne ſharpe ſtones feruynge for the fame purpoſe: And thus layingne them betwene two great ſtones, or puttynge them in a facke made of the ſtales of certeyne towgh herbes and fmaule reedes, they preſſe them (as we do cheeſe or crabbes to drawe owt the iufe thereof) and ſo let them drye a daye before they eate them. The iufe or lyquoure, they caſt away: for (as we haue fayne) it is deadly poyson in the Ilandes. Yet is the iufe of ſuche as growe in the firme lande, holſome if it bee fodde, as is the whey of owre mylke. They ſaye that there are manye kyndes of this *Iucca*, wherof ſome are more pleafaunte and delycate then the other, and are therefore referred as it were to make fine manchet for the kynges owne tables. But the gentlemanſ eate of the meaner forte, and the common people of the baſeft. The fyndes they caule *Cazabbi*, which they make rounde lyke cakes in certeyne preſſes before they feeth it or bake it. They ſaye furthermore that there are lykewyſe dyuers kyndes of the rootes of *Ages* and *Battata*. But they vſe theſe rather as frutes and dyſhes of feruice, then to make breade therof, as we vſe rapes, radyſſes, muſheroms, nauies, perfeneppes, and ſuch lyke. In this cafe, they mooste especially eſteeme the beſt kynde of *Battatas*, which in pleaſant taſt and tendernes farre exceadeþ owre muſheroms. It ſhal ſuffice to haue fayne thus muche of rootes. We wyll nowe ſpeakewhere of an other kynde of theyr breade. We declared before that they haue a kynde of grayne or pulse muche lyke vnto *Panicum*, but with ſumwhat bigger graines, which they beate into meale vpon certeyne greate hollowe ſtones with the labour of their handes when they lacke *Iucca*: And of this is made the more vulgar or common breade. It is ſownen thrife a yeaſe, ſo that the frutfulnesſe of the grounde may bearit by reaſon of the equalitie of the tyme, wherof wee haue ſpoken ſuſciently before. In theſe regyons they founde alſo the graine of *Maizium*,

The fayre region of Caramairi.

Fruteful montaynes.

Gardens. Insulures are nowe cauled Lumbardes, and hetruci, Tuscans
118

Many countreyſ leſte desolate by the fiercenſe of the Canibales.

One myriade is ten thouſande.

A miſerable heuryng.

Breade of rootes.

The maner of plantinge the roote Iucca.

Earth turned into rootes.

How breade is made of rootes.

A ſtrange thynge.

Cazabbi.

Ages and Battata.

Panicum is a grayne ſumwhat lyke mil. The Italians caule it Melica.

117

He meaneth the equal length of day and night which is continually vnder the Equinoctial lynes.
Maisinus
Earth of dyuers colours.

Golde in ryuers.
Hartes and bores.
Foules.

Holsome ayer

Gossampine cotton.
Fethers.

Bowes and arrowes.
Deade bodies reserved

Ouches of laton.
Guanines. Quicquidius saith that they gift maruelously with the iuse of a certeyne herbe.
Whyte marble.

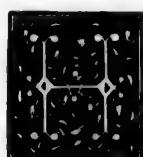
The great ryuer Maragnonus. This ioyneth with the mighty ryuer cauled Flumen Amazonum, found of late.

Clokes of fethers.
118

The swyfte course of the water.
xi. leagues in one nyght.

and sundry kyndes of frutes of trees diligently planted and well husbanded. The waye betwene the regyons of *Caramairi* and *Saturma*, is sayre, brode, and ryghte foorth. They founde here also sundry kyndes of waterpottes made of earthe of dyuers colours, in the whiche they bothe fetche and keepe freshe water. Lyke wife sundry kyndes of iugges, godderdes, drynyng cuppes, pottes, pannes, dysfhes, and platters artificially made. When the gouernour had gyuen commaundement by proclamation, that th[e]inhabitantes shulde eyther obey the Christian kynge and embrase owre religyon, or elles to depart owt of their countrey, they answere with venomous arrowes. In this skyrmyshe, owre men tooke summe of them: whereof clothyng the mooste parte in faire apparel, they sente them ageyne to their owne company: But leadyng the refydue to the shypes to th[e]intent to shewen them the poure and magnyfycence of the christians that they myght declare the same to their cocompanions, therby to wynne their fauour, they appareled them lykewyse and sente them after their felowes. Theye affyrmē that in all the ryuers of these coastes, theye sawe great argumentes and tokens of golde. Theye founde here and there in their hou ses good store of hartes fleshe and bores fleshe wherwith they fedde them selues dilycately. Theye also, haue greate plentie of sundry kyndes of byrdes and foules, wherof they bryngē vppe many in their hou ses, summe for necessarie foode, and other for daynty dysfhes as we do hennes and partriches. Owre men herebye conjecture that the ayer of these regions is veary holsome, for as muche as sleapynge all nyghte vnder the fyrment on the bankes of the ryuers, none of them were at any tyme offended with reumes or heade ache by reason of any noysome humoure or vapoure procedadyng from the earthe, ayer, or water. Owre men furthermore, founde there many great bothomes of goffampyne cotton ready spunne, and fardelles of dyuers kyndes of fethers wherof they make them selues crestes and plumes after the maner of owre men of armes: also certeine clokes whiche they esteeme as mooste cumly ornamente s. Theye founde lykewyse an innumerable multitude of bowes and arrowes. Th[e]inhabitantes also of these regions, in summe places vfc to burne the carkeses of their prynces when theye are deade, and to reserue their bones buried with spycies in certeyne hylles. In other places, they onely drye them and imbaume them with spycies and sweete gummes, and soo reserue them in sepulchers in their owne hou ses. Sumwhere also, they drye them, spycie them, adourne them with preciouys iewells and ouches, and so reuerentl place them in certeyne tabernacles made for the same purpose in their owne palaces. When owre men had many of their tabellats, braslettes, collers, and fusche other ouches (whiche they caule *Guanines*) they founde them rather to bee made of laton then of golde: wherby they suppose that they haue vfed to exchaunge their ware with summe craftie straungers whiche broughte them those counterfet ouches to defraude them of their golde. For euen owre menne perceaued not the deceate vnyll they came to the meltyng. Furthermore, certayne of owre buylders wanderyng a lytell way from the sea coastes, chaunced to fynde certayne pyeces of white marble. Wherby they thynke that in tym past summe straungers haue coome too those landes, whiche haue dygged marble owt of the mountaines, and lefte those fragmentes on the plaine. There owre men learned that the ryuer *Maragnonus* descendeth frome the montaynes couered with snowe cauled *Montes Niuales* or *Serra Neuala*: And the same to bee encreased by many other ryuers whiche faule into it throughowte all the lowe and wate[r]lye regions by the whiche it runneth with so longe a tracte from the fayde montaynes into the sea: And this to bee the caufe of the greatesse therof. These thynghes beyng thus brought to passe, the gouernour commaunded the trumpitour to blowe a retrale: Whervpon they whiche were fente to lande (beyng fyue hundred in noumber) makyngē a great shoute for ioye of their victory, fette them selues in order of battayle, and so keping their array, returned to the shippes laden with spoyle of those prouinces, and shynynge in fouldiers clokes of fethers, with faire plumes and crestes of variable colours. In this meane tyme hauyng repaired their shypes and furnysshēd the same with all necessaries, they loosed anker the xvi. daye of the Calendes of Iuly, directyng their course to the hauen of *Carthagena*, in the whiche viage they destroyed and wasted certayne Ilandes of the Canibales lyinge in the waye, accordyngē as they were commaunded by the kynge. But the swyfte course of the water deceaued bothe *Iohannes Serranus* the chiefe Pilot of the gouernours shyppe, and all the other, althoughe they made their boste that they perfectly knewe the nature therof. For they affyrmē that in one night they were caried forty leagues beyonde their estimation.

THE SYXTE BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



Ere mifte we sumwhat digreffe from cosmography, and make a philosophicall discours to searche the fecrete caufes of nature. For wheras they al affyrme with one conſent, that the ſea runneth there from the Easte to the weſte as iſwiftly as it were a ryuer faulinge from hyghe mountayns, I thoughte it not good to lete ſo great a matter flyppē vntouched. The whiche while I conſider, I am drawn into no ſmaule ambyguities and doute, whether thoſe waters haue their courſe whiche flowe with ſo contynual a tracie in circuite from the Easte, as thoughte they fledde to the weſt neuer to retourne, and yet neyther the weſle therby any whitte the more fylded, nor the Easte emptied. If we ſhall ſaye that they faule to their centre (as is the nature of heuye thynges) and affigne the Equinoctiall lyne to be the centre (as ſumme affyrme) what centre ſhall we appoinete to bee able to receaue fo great abouaunce of water? Or what circumference ſhall be founde weate? They whiche haue ſearched thoſe coaſtes, haue yet founde no lykely reaſon to be trewe. Manye thynke that there ſhulde bee certeyne large ſtraightes or enterances in the corner of that greate lande whiche we deſcribed to bee eigh̄t tymes bygger then Itaſe, and the corner therof to be full of goulfes, wherby they ſuþpoſe that ſumme ſtrayghtes ſhulde paſſe through the ſame lyinge on the weſte ſyde of the Ilande of *Cuba*: And that the ſayne ſtraightes ſhulde swalowe vp thoſe waters, and fo conuey the ſame into the weſte and from thenſe ageyn into oþre Easte Ocean, or north ſeas as summe thynke. Other wyll, that the goulf of that greate lande bee clofed vppe: and the lande to reach farre towarde the northe on the backe ſyde of *Cuba*: fo that it embraceth the northe landes whiche the froſen ſea encompafeth vnder the northe pole: And that all the lande of thoſe coaſtes, ſhoule ioyne togither as one firme lande: Wherby they coniecture that thoſe waters ſhulde bee turned aboue by the obiecte or refyltaunce of that lande fo bendyngē towarde the north, as we ſee the waters turned aboute in the crooked bankes of certeyne ryuers. But this agreeþ not in all poynetes. For they alio whiche haue ſearched the froſen ſea, and ſayled from thenſe into the weſte, do lykewyſe affyrme that thoſe northe ſeas flowe contynually towarde the weſte, although nothing fo iſwiftly. Theſe northe ſeas haue byn ſearched by one ſebastian Cabot a Venetian borne, whom being yet but in maner an infante, his parentes carued with them into Englande hauyng occaſion to reſorte theſter for trade of marchandies, as is the maner of the Venetians too leaue no parte of the worlde unſearched to obtayne richesse. He therfore furniſhed two ſhippes in England at his owne charges: And fyrl with three hundredth men, directed his courſe fo farre toward the northe pole, that euen in the moneth of Iuly he founde monſtrous heapes of Iſe ſwimming on the ſea, and in maner continuall day lyght. Yet ſaw he he lande in that tracie, free from Iſe, whiche had byn molten by heate of the ſunne. Thus ſeyng ſuche heapes of Iſe before hym he was enforced to tourne his ſayles and folowe the weſte, fo coaſtyng ſtyll by the ſhore, that he was thereby broughte fo farre into the ſouthe by reaſon of the lande bendyngē fo muche ſouthward that it was there almoſte equall in latitude with the ſea cauled *Fretum Herculeum*, hauyng the north pole eleuate in maner in the fame degree. He ſayled lykewiſe in this tracie to farre towarde the weſte, that he had the Ilande of *Cuba* [on] his leſte hande in maner in the fame degree of longitude. As he traueyed by the coaſtes of thiſ greate lande (whiche he named *Bacallaoſ*) he ſayth that he founde the like courſe of the waters toward the weſt, but the ſame to runne more ſoftly and gentelly then the ſwift waters whiche the Spaniardes found in their nauigations ſoutheward.

Wherefore, it is not only more lyke to bee trewe, but ought alio of neceſſitie to bee concluded, that betwene both the landes hetherto vñknownen, there ſhulde bee certeyne great open places wherby the waters ſhulde thus continually paſſe from the Easte into the weſte: which waters I ſuþpoſe to bee dryuen about the globe of the earth by the vnceſtaunt mouyng and impulſion of the heauens: and not to bee swalowed vp and caſt owt ageyne by the breathyngē of *Demogorgon* as ſume haue imagined bycause they ſee the ſeas by increase and decrease, to flowe and reflowe. ſebastian Cabot him ſelfe, named thoſe landes *Bacallaoſ*, bycause that in the ſeas therabout he founde fo great multitudes of certeyne bigge fyſhes much lyke vnto tunies (which th[e] inabitantes caule *Bacallaoſ*) that they ſumtymes ſlayed his ſhippes. He founde also the people of thoſe regions couered with beaſtes ſkynnes: Yet not without th[e]ufe of reaſon.

He ſaythe alio that there is greate plentie of beaſtes in thoſe regions, whiche vſe to eate fyſhes. For plungeinge theym ſelues into the water where they perceue a multitude of theſe fyſhes to lye, they falten theiſ claws in theiſ ſcales, and fo drawe them to lande and eate them. So that (as he ſaih) the beaſtes beinge thus ſatified with fyſhe, are not noyſom to men. He declarereth further, that in many places of theſe regions, he

Sundry opinions why the ſea runneth with ſo ſwift course from the Easte into the weſt.

Th[e]equinoctiall lyne.
Why all waters move toward the ſouthe or North pole
Cardanus de ſubtilitate libri. ii. de Elementis.
Strayghtes.

As by the ſtrayght of Magellanus.
The north landes.

The froſen ſea.
Sebastian. Cabot.
The Venetians.
The viage of ſebastian Cabot from Englande to the froſen ſea.
Froſt in the moneth of Iuly.

Fretum Herculeum, diuideth Spayne and the Moores and is nowe cauled the ſtrayghtes of Maroc.
Bacallaoſ, or *Terra Bacallarum*.

The mouyng of heauen cauſeth the ſea to moue.
Demogorgon is the ſpirite of the earth.
People couered with beaſtes ſkins
Howe beaſtes take and eate fyſhes of the ſea.

Perhapses this laton is copper which holdeth gold. For laton hath no myne, and is an artificiall metal and not natural.

Cabot cauled owt of Englannde into Spayne.

The Second viage of Cabot.

The Ilandes of the Canibales.

The Ilande Fortis.

Salte

A straunge thynge.

How Petrus Arias with the kynges nauy arrived at Dariena.

Howe Vaschus receaved the newe gouernour.

Whye these regions are cauled prouinces.

120

Barrelles of meale. Habitabile regions vnder the Equinoctiall lyne.

Where the newe gouernour planted his habitation

The viage of Iohannes Aiora. The hauen of Comogrus.

Sainte Mychaels goulfe

The hauen of Pocchorrofa.

sawe great plentie of laton amoung th[e]inhabitantes. Cabot is my very freade, whom I vse famylierly, and delyte to haue hym sumtymes keepe mee company in myne owne house. For beinge cauled owt of England by the commaundement of the catholyke kyng of Castile after the deathe of Henry kyng of Englannde the feuenth of that name, he was made one of owe counfayle and affystance as touchyng the affayres of the newe Indies, looking dayely for shippes to bee furnysshed for hym to discouer this hyd secrete of nature. This vyage is appoynted to bee begunne in March in the yeare next folowynge, beinge the yeare of Chryst M. D. XVI. What shall succede, yowre holynes shalbe aduertised by my letters if god graunte me lyfe. Sume of the Spanyardes denye that Cabot was the fyrste fynder of the lande of *Bacallao*: And affirme that he went not so farre westwarde. But it shall suffice to haue sayde thus much of the goulfes and strayghtes, and of Sebastian Cabot. Let vs nowe therefore retorne to the Spanyardes. At this tyme, they let passe the hauen of *Carthago* vtouched, with all the Ilandes of the Canibales there aboue, whiche they named *Insulas Sancti Bernardi*: Leauyng also behynde theyr backes, all the region of *Caramairi*. Heare by reaon of a fooden tempeste, they were caste vpon the Ilande *Fortis*, beinge about fyftie leagues distante from the enteraunce of the goulfe of *Vraba*. In this Ilande, they founde in the houses of th[e]inhabitantes, many baskets made of certeyne greate sea reedes, ful of salte. For this Ilande hath in it many goodly salte bayes: by reaon whereof they haue greate plentie of salte which they sell to other nations for such thynge as they stande in neede of. Not farre from henfe, a great curlewe as bygge as a storke came flying to the gouernours shipp, and suffered her selfe to bee easilly taken: which beinge caried about amoung all the shippes of the nauie, dyed shortly after. They sawe also a great multytude of the same kynde of foules on the shore a farre of.

The gouernour his shyppe whiche we sayde to haue loste the rudder beinge nowe fore broosid and in maner vnprofitable, they leste behynde to folowe at leasure. The nauie arriued at *Dariena* the twelfth day of the Calendes of Iuly, and the gouernour his shipp (beinge voyde of men) was dryuen a lande in the same coastes within fourre dayes after. The Spanyardes whiche nowe inhabited *Dariena*, with theyr Capitayne and Lieuetenant *Vaschus Nunnes Balboa* (of whom we haue largely made mention before) beinge certified of th[e]arrayual of *Petrus Arias* and his companye, wente foorth the three myles to meete him, and receaved him honorably and religiouly with the psalme *Te deum Laudamus*, giuing thanks to god by whose safe conducte they were brought so prosperously thether to al theyr confortes. They receaved them gladly into theyr houses buillded after the maner of thone prouinces. I may well caule these regions, Prouinces, a *Procul victis*, (that is) such as are ouercome farre of, forasmuch as owe men doo nowe inhabite the same all the barbarous kynges and Idolatours beinge ejected. They enterteyned them with such chere as they were able to make them: as with the frutes of thone regions, and newe breade bothe made of rootes and the grayne *Maisum*. Other delicates to make vp the feast, were of theyr owne store whiche they brought with them in their shippes, as poudered fleshe, salted fyshe, and breade made of wheate. For they brought with them many barrelles of wheate meale for the same purpose. Here maye yowre holynes not without iuste cause of admiracion beholde a kynges nauie and great multitude of Christians, inhabytinge not onely the regions situete vnder the circle of heaven cauled *Tropicus Cancri*, but also in maner vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, contrary to th[e]opinion of the owlde wryters, a fewe excepted. But after that they are nowe mette toguther, let vs further declare what they determinyd to doo. Therefore, the daye after that the nauie arriued, there assembled a coompany of the Spanyardes th[e]inhabitantes of *Dariena*, to the number of fourre hundredth and fyftie men. *Petrus Arias* the gouernour of the nauie and his coompany, conferred with them bothe priuile and openlie of certeyne articles wherof it was the kynges pleasure he shulde enquire: And most especially as concerning such thynge wherof *Vaschus* the fyrste fynder and Admirall of the Southe sea, made mention in his large letter sent from *Dariena* to Spayne. In this inquisition they founde all thynge to bee trewe, wherof *Vaschus* had certifyed the kyng by his letters: And therewpon concluded that in the dominions of *Comogra*, *Pocchorrofa*, and *Tumanama*, at th[e]assaignement of *Vaschus*, certeine fortreses shuld bee erected foorthwith to th[e]intente there to plant theyr colonie or habitacion. To the better accomplayshement hereof, they sent imediately one *Iohannes Aiora* a noble younge gentleman of *Corduba* and vnder Lieuetenant, with fourre hundreth men and fourre caravelles and one other lyttle shipp. Thus departinge, he sayled fyrst directly to the loun of *Comogrus*, dystant from *Dariena* aboute twentie and fyue leagues, as they wryte in theyr last letters. For he henfe, he is appoynted to fende a hundredth and fyftie of his fourre hundredth, towarde the South by a newe and ryghter way founde of late, by the which (as they say) it is not pasle. xxvi. leagues from the palacie of loun *Comogrus* to the enteraunce of the goulfe of *Santi Michaelis*. The relidewe of the fourre hundredth, shal remayne there to bee an ayde and succour to all such as shall orney to and fro. Those hundredth and fyftie whiche are assignd to go southwarde, take with them for interpretors certeine of owe men which had lerned the sootherne language of the bonde men which were guyen to *Vaschus* when he ouerranne thone regions, and also certeyne of the bondemen them selues which had nowe lerned the Spanyshe tonge. They say that the hauen of *Pocchorrofa*, is onely feuen leagues distante frome the hauen of *Comogrus*. In *Pocchorrofa*, he is assignd to leaue fyftie men with the lyghtest shyp which maye bee a

passinger betwene them: that lyke as we vse poste horses by lande, so may they by this currant shippes, in shorte space certifie the Lieuetenaunt and th[e]inhabitours of *Dariena* of suche thynges as shall chunce. They entend also to buylde hou ses in the region of *Tumanama*. The palacie of kyng *Tumanama*, is distant from *Pachorroso* about twentie leagues. Of these fourre hundredth men, beinge of the owlde fouldiers of *Dariena* and men of good experiance, fyftee were appoynted to bee as it were Decurians to guide and conducte the newe men from place to place to do their affaires. When they had thus sette all thynges in order, they thought it good to aduertisfe the king hereof, and therwith to certifie hym that in those prouincies there is a kyng named *Dabaiba* whose dominion is very riche in golde: But the same to be yet vntouched by rea son of his great power. His kingedome ioyneth to the seconde greate ryuer named *Dabaiba* after his name, whiche faul eth into the sea wot of the corner of the goule of *Vraba* as we haue largely declared before. The common reporte is, that all the lande of his dominions is ryche in golde. The palacie of kyng *Dabaiba* is fyfty leagues distante from *Dariena*. Th[e]inhabitantes saye that from the palacie, the golde mynes reache to the borthers on every syde. Albeit, owe men haue also golde mynes not to bee contempned, sene within three leagues of *Dariena*, in the which they gather golde in many places at this presente: Yet doo theye affyrme greater plentie to bee in the mynes of *Dabaiba*. In the booke of owe syrste frutes wrytten to yowre holynesse, we made mention of this *Dabaiba*, wher in owe men were deceaued and myflooke the matter. For where they founde the fyfthe men of kyng *Dabaiba* in the maryshes, they thought his region had byn there also. They determyned therfore to fende to kyng *Dabaiba*, three hundredth choyse younge men to be chosen owe of the hole army as moche apte to the warres, and well furnysshed with all kyndes of armoure and artillery, to th[e]intent to go vnto hym and wyl hym, eyther frendly and peaceably to permytte them to inhabyte parte of his kingdome with the frution of the golde mynes, or elles to bydde him battayle and dryue hym owe of his countrey. In their letters, they often tymes repeate this for an argument of great rychesse to coome, that they in maner dyggid the grounde in noo place, but founde the earthe myxte with sparkes and fmaule graynes of golde. They haue also aduertisfed the kyng that it shalbe commodious to place inhabitours in the hauen of *Sancta Martha* in the region of *Saturma*, that it maye bee a place of refuge for them that sayle from the Ilande of *Dominica* from the whiche (as they saye) it is but fourre or fyue dayes saylyng to that hauen of the regyon of *Saturma*: And from the hauen, but thre dayes saylyng to *Dariena*. But this is to bee vnderflore in goyng and not in returnyng. For the returning from theme is so laborious and difficulte by rea son of the contrary course of the water, that they seeme as it were to ascende hyghe montaynes and stryue ageynste the poure of *Neptunus*. This swyfste course of the sea towarde the Weste, is not so violente to theym whiche retourne to Spayne frome the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*: Althoughe they also do laboure ageynste the faule of the Ocean: The caufe wherof is, that the sea is here verye large, so the waters haue their full scoope. But in the tracte of *Paria*, the waters are constrainyd together by the bendynges fydes of that great lande, and by the multytude of Ilandes lyng ageynste it, as the lyke is feene in the straites or narowe feas of Sicilie where the violent course of the waters cause the daungerous places of *Scylla* and *Charybdis*, by rea son of those narowe feas whiche conteine *Ionium*, *Libicum*, and *Tirrenum*. *Colonus* the fyrt fynder of these regyons, hath leste in wrytyng, that saylyng frome the Ilande of *Guanafsa*, and the prouynces of *Iaia*, *Maia*, and *Cerabaro*, lyeng regyons of the west marches of *Beragua*, he founde the course of the water so vehemente and furious ageynste the fore parte of his shipp whyle he failed from those coastes towarde the Easte, that he couldle at no tyme touche the grounde with his foundyng plummet, but that the contrary vyolence of the water woolde beare it vppe from the bottome. He affyrmeth also, that he couldle never in one hole daye with a meately good wynde, wynne one myle of the course of the water. And this is the cause why they are oftentimes enforced to sayle fyfte by the Ilandes of *Cuba* and *Hispaniola*, and so into the mayne sea toward the North when they returne to Spaine, that the North wyndes maye further their vyage whiche they can not brynge to passe by a direkte course. But of the motions of the Ocean sea to and fro, this shal suffyce. Let vs now therfore reherse what they write of *Dariena*, and of their habitation there, which they caule *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, planted on the sea bankes of *Dariena*. The situation of the place, hath no natural munition or defense: And the ayer is more pestiferous then in *Sardus*. The Spanyshe inhabitours, are all pale and yelowe, lyke vnto them that haue the yelowe giandyses. Whiche neuerthelesse commeth not of the nature of the region as it is situate vnder the heauen. For in many regyons beyng vnder the selfe same degree of latitude, hauyng the pole of the same elevation, they fynd holosome and temperate ayer, in such places where as the earth bryngeth forth fayre sprynges of water, or where holosome ryuers runne by bankes of pure earthe without mudde: but moche especially where they inhabyte the fydes of the hilles and not the valleyes. But that habytation whiche is on the bankes of the ryuer of *Dariena*, is fytuat in a deepe valley, and enuironed on every syde with hyghe hilles: By rea son wherof, it receaueth the sonne beames at noonetyde directly perpendicular ouer their heades, and are therfore sore vexed by reflection of the beames bothe before, behynde, and from the sydes. For it is the reflection of the sonne beames whiche caufeth feruent heate, and not their accessio or nereneffe to the earth. Forasmuche as

A passynger shyppe.

Kyng *Tumanama*

Decurians are officers deuided into tennes, etc

The gold mynes Kyng *Dabaiba*.

The palacie of kyng *Dabaiba*.

The gold mynes of *Dariena*.

An erroure.
Expedition against kyng *Dabaiba*.

121

Great plentie of golde.

The regyon of *Saturma*
The Ilande of *Dominica*
Dariena.

Difficuite saylyng ageynst the course of the sea.

The daungerous straites of *Scylla* and *Charybdis*.

Guanafsa.

Iaia.

Maia.

Cerabaro.

Beragua.
The vehement course of the sea from the east to the west.

The northe wynde.

Sancta Maria Antiqua, the fyrt habitation of the spanysh in the fyrdeme lande.

Sardus the Ilande of *Sardinia*.

The variety of regions lyng vnder one paralel.

By what meanes are the sonne beames cause of feruent heate.

The pernicious
ayer of Dariena.

122

Toades and flees
engendered of
dropes of water.

Necessytie hath
no lawe

A house sette on
fyre with
lyghtnyng.

A dogge deuoured
of a crocodile,
Tanquam canis,
& *Nilo*.
The byting of
battes.

Lyons and tygers.

Beastes wex
bygger in their
kynde.

How the
gouernour
enterreynd kyng
Careta.

Note.

Broma or Bissas,
are wormes whiche
destroy shippes.

123

A venomous tree.

Perhaps they
venomous arrows
are made of this
woodde or &c.

they are not passyble in them selues as dothe manyfetly appeare by the snoewe lyngē contynually vnmolten vpon certeyne hygh montaynes, as yowre holynesse knoweth ryghte well. The soonne beames therfore faulyng on the montaynes, are reflected downewarde into the valley by reaon of th[e] jobiecte of the declynyng fydes of the hylles, as it were the faule of a greate rounde snoone rowlde frome the toppe of a montayne. The valley therfore receaueth, both those beames whiche faule directly theron, and also those whiche are reflected downewarde from eury fyde of the montaynes. Their habitation therfore in *Dariena*, is pernicious and vnholome only of the particular nature of the place, and not by the sytuatioun of the regyon as it is placed vnder the heauen or nere to the soonne. The place is also contagious by the nature of the foyle, by reaon it is coompased aboue with muddy and flynyng maryshes, th[e] infection wherof is not a litle encreased by the heate. The vylage it selfe, is in a maryshe, and in maner a stanyng puddle, where, of the dropes faulyng from the handes of the bond men whyle they water the pauementes of their houses, toades are engendered immediately, as I my selfe sawe in an other place the dropes of that water turne into flees in the foomer seafon. Furthermore, where so euer they dygge the grounde the deapthe of a handfull and a halfe, there springeth owt vnholome and corrupte water of the nature of the ryuer which runneth through the deepe and muddy chanel of the valley, and so faulthe into the sea. Now therfore they consule of remouyng their habytation. Necesytie caused them syrft to fasten their foote heare, bycause that they whiche syrft arryued in those landes, were oppresed with suche vrgente hunger, that they had no respecte to chaunge the place althoeghe they were thus vexed by the contagion of the foyle and heate of the soonne, besyde the corrupte water and infectious ayer by reaon of venemous vapours and exhalations rysyng from the same. An other greate incommoditie was, that the place was destitute of a commodious hauen, beyng three leagues distante from the mouthe of the goulfe. The waye is also rougue and diffyculte to bryng vttayles and other necessaries from the sea. But lette vs nowe speake sumwhat of other particuler thynges whiche chaunfed. Therfore shortly after that they weare arryued, there happened many thynges wherof they had no knowledge before. A certayne well learned phisition of Ciule, whome partly th[e] autorty of the bysshoppes of *Dariena*, and partly the defyre of golde had allured to those landes, was fo scarred with lyghtnyng in the nyghte seafon lyngē in bedde with his wyfe, that the houfe and all the stiffe therin beyng sette on fyer and burnte, he and his wyfe bothe foore scorched, ranne foorth cryinge and almoste naked, hardely escapyng the daunger of deathe. At an other tyme, as certayne of them stooode on the shrore, a great Crocodile sodenly carayed away a masly of a year and a halfe owtide, as a kyte shulde haue snatched vppe a chicken: And this euen in the prefence of theym all, where the myferable dogge cryed in wayne for the helpe of his mayster. In the nighte seafon they were tormented with the bytyngē of battes whiche are there so noyfome that it they byte any man in his fleape, they putte hym in daunger of lyfe, onely with drawyngē of bludde: In so muche that summe haue dyed therof, fulynge as it were into a consumpcion through the malicioufnesse of the venemous wounde. If these battes chaunce to fynde a cocke or a henne abrode in the nyght seafon, they byte them by the combes and fo kyll them. They also whiche wente late into these regions, do wryte, that the lande is troubled with Crocodyles, Lyons, and Tigers: But that they haue nowe deuised artes and ingens howe to take them. Lykewyfe that in the houfes of their felowes, they founde the hydes and cases of suche Lyons and Tygers as they had kyld. They wryte furthermore, that by reaon of the rankenesse and frutefulnesse of the grounde, kyne, fyyne, and horses, doo maruelously increase in these regions, and growe to a muche bygger quantite then they whiche weare of the first broode. Of the excedyng hynghenesse of the trees with their frutes, of the garden herbes, frutes, plantes, and leedes whiche owre men broughte from Spayne and sowed and set the same in these regyons, lykewyfe of the hertes and other foure footed beastes bothe tame and wylde, also of dyuers kyndes of foulles, byrdes, and fyffles, they write euen as we haue declared in the decades before. *Careta* the kyngē of the regyon of *Cioba*, was with them for the space of three dayes: whome when they had frendly enterteyned and shewed hym the secrete places of their shypes, their horses also with their trappars, bardes, and other furnimentes, befode many other things whiche seemed straunge to hym, and had further delited his mynd with the harmony of their musycall instrumentes, and gyuen hym many rewardes, they dysmyssyd hym halfe amased with to muche admiryation. He sygnified vnto them, that their trees in that prouynce, of the planckes wherof, if shypes were made, they shoulde bee safe from the woormes of the sea whiche they caule *Bromas*. Howe these woormes knawe and corrode the shypes, wee haue declared before. Owre shypes are greatly troubled with this plague if they lye longe in the hauenys of these regyons. But they affyrme that the woodde of this tree is foo bytter, that the woormes wyl not taste therof. There is also an other tree peculiare to these landes: whose leaues if they onely touche the bare in any place of a mannes body, they caufe greate blisters, and those foo malycious that excepte the same bee forthwith healed with saltē water or fastynge spytte, they doo incontynently engender deadly paynes. They saye lykewyfe, that the fauour of the woodde is prefente payson: And that it can noo whither bee carayed without daunger of lyfe. When th[e] inhabitauntes of the Ilande of *Hippaniola* had oftentymes attempted to shake of the yoke of seruytude, and coulde neuer bryngē the same to passe neyther by open warre nor yet by priuya conspiraces,

they were determyned in the nyghte seafon to haue kylled owre men in their sleepe with the smoke of this woodde. But when the Christian men had knowledge hereof, they compelled the poore wretches to confesse their intente, and punysshed the chiefe autours of the deuyfe. They haue also a certayne herbe with the fauour wherof they are preferred from the herte of this venemous woodde so that they maye beare it safely. Of these fmaule thynges it shall suffye too haue fayde thus muche. They looke dayly for many greater thynges to certfyfe vs of from the Ilandes of the south fea. For at suche tyme as the messenger whiche broughte owre letters departed from themse, *Petrus Arias* prepared an expedition to that ryche Ilande whiche lyeth in the mouth of the goulfe cauled *Sinus S. Michaelis*, and reacheth into the southe sea, beyng also lefte vntouched of *Vaschus* by reason that the sea was at that tyme of the yeare fore troubled with tempestes, as wee haue further declared in *Vaschus* his vyage to the southe. Wee looke therfore dayly for greater thynges then are hetherto past. For they haue nowe taken in hand to subdue manye other prouynces, whiche wee suppose too bee ethyer verye ryche, or to bryngre furthe summe straunge woorke of nature. *Iohannes Diaz Solius* of *Nebrija* (of whome we haue made mention before) is fente by the froonte of the cape or poynete of *Sancti Augustini* (whiche reacheth feuen degrees beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne, and perteyneth to the dominion of the Portugales) to th[e]intent to ouer runne the southe syde from the backe halfe of *Paria*, *Cumana*, *Cuquibacoa*, with the hauens of *Carthago* and *Sancta Martha*, of *Dariena* also and *Beragua*, that more perfecte and certeyne knowledge may bee had of those tractes. Furthermore, one *Iohannes Poncius* was sente foorth with throe shypes to defroye the Canibales bothe in the lande and Ilandes there aboue: awell that the nations of the more humane and innocente people maye at the length lyue without feare of that pestiferous generation, as also the better and more safely to searche the fcreates and rychesse of those regions. Many other lykewise were fente dyuers and fundry wayes: as *Gasper Badaicu* too searche West partes: *Franciscus Bezerra*, to sayle by the corner of the goulfe: And *Valleius*, to passe by the mouthe or enteraunce therof to the Easte coastes of the goulfe to searche the fcreates of that lande, in the whiche *Fogeda* with his coompanye had of late begunne to plante their habitation, and had buylded a fortresse and a vyllage. *Badaicu* departed fyrsle frome *Dariena* with fourre score fouldours well appoynted: Whome *Lodovicus Mercado* folowed with fyfte:

To *Bezerra* were also sourefore affygnd, and three score and tenne to *Valleius*. Whether they shal arryue at safe and commodious hauens, or faule into ynfortunate stacions, he onely knoweth whose prouydence ruleth all: For as for vs men wee are included within the knowledge of things after they haue chaunced. Lette vs nowe therfore coome to other matters.

A preservative
ageynst poysen.

The Ilands of the
south sea.
The ryche Iland
cauled Dites.

Cap[el], sancti
Augustini.
Of the euyll
success of these
vages, rede
decade iii.
Liber. ix.
An expdition to
destroy the
Canibales.

Fogeda.

Looke, decad. iii.
Lib. ix.

THE SEVENTHE BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



Etrus Arias the gouernour of the supposid continent, was scarfly entred into the mayne sea with his nauye onwarde on his vyage to *Dariena*. But I was aduertised that one *Andreas Moralis* a pilot who had oftentimes ouer runne the coastes of these new feas and the Ilandes of the same, was coome to the courte to sell suche marchaundies as he broughte with hym frome thense. This man had dyligently searched the tracte of the supposid continent, and especially th[e]inner regyons of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, wherunto he was appoynted by his brother *Nicolaus Ouandus* (the gouernour of the Iland and chiefe Commendatory of the order of the knyghtes of *Alcantara*) bycause he was a wyty man and more apte to searche suche thynges then any other: So that with his owne handes he drewe faire cardes and tables of suche regyons as he discouered. Wherin as he hath bynne founde faythfull of suche as haue senfe had better tryall hereof, so is he in most credyt enongest the best forte. He therfore reforted to me as all they are accustomed to doo, whiche retorne from the Ocean. What I learned of hym and dyuers other of thinges heretofore vnknownen, I wyll nowe declare. The beginnyng of this narration, shalbe the particular description of the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, forasmuche as it is the heade and as it ware the principall marte of all the lyberality of the Ocean, and hath a thoufande and againe a thoufande fayre, pleasaunt, bewtifull, and ryche *Nereides* whiche lye aboue it on every syde, adournyng this their ladye and moother, as it were an other *Tethis* the wyfe of *Neptunus*, enuyronyng her aboue, and attenyngge vppon her as their queene and patronesse. But of these *Nereides* (that is to saye, the ilander placed aboue her) we wyll speake more hereafter. Lette vs in the meane tyme declare sumwhat of the Ilande whiche owre men named *Margarita Diues* (whiche the Spanyardes caule *De las perlas*) beyng nowe well knownen, and lyng in the southe fea in the goulfe cauled *Sinus Sancti Michaelis* (that is) sainte Michaels goulfe. This Iland hath prelenty brought to owre knowledge many straunge and woondershfull thynges and promysseth no fmaule

The navigations
Andreas Moralis.

124

A particular
description of the
Ilande of
hispaniola

Nereides are
nymphes of the
sea, he meaneth
Ilandes.

Tethis the wyfe
of *Neptunus* and
goddess of the
sea.

The Ilande of
Margarita Diues
Saincte Michaels
goulfe

Great peries

Hispaniola lyke
vnto the earthly
paradyse.The fyrest
inhabitours of
hispaniola*Dardanus.*
Teucrus.
Troianum.
Tirians, Sidonians.*Eneas.*
*Latium.*Hierusalem
Mecha.
The Ilandes of
Canarie.Betanchor, a
frenchman.

125

The fyrest names
of hispaniola.*Pan.*The roughnesse
of hispaniola.The maner of
lernyng.Ballets and
rhymes.

hope of greater thynges in tyme to coome. In this is founde great plentie of pearles so fayre and great, that the sumptuous queene *Cleopatra* myght haue seemed to weare them in her crownes, cheynes, and braslettes. Of the shellysshnes wherin these are engendered, wee wyll speake sumwhat more in th[e]jende of this narration. But let vs nowe returne to *Hispaniola* mooste lyke vnto the earthly paradyse. In the descriptiōn hereof, we wyll begynne of the imposytion of dyuerſe names: Then of the forme of the Ilande, temperate ayer and benefyciall heauen: And synally of the deuifyon of the regyons. Therfore for the ryghter pronunsyation of the names, yowre holynesse muste vnderlande that they are pronounced with th[e]accent, as yowe may know by the verge fette ouer the heddes of the vowels, as in the name of the Ilande *Matinino*, where the accent is in the last vowel, and the lyke to be vnderstoode in all other names. They saye therfore, that the fyrtle inhabitous of the Iland were transported in their *Canas* (that is boates made of one hole piece of woodde) from the Ilande of *Matinino*, beyng lyke banyfished men dryuen from thense by reaſon of certaine contrary factions and diuifysons emonge them felues, lyke as wee reade howe *Dardanus* came from *Corytho*, and *Teucrus* from *Creta* into Asia, and that the regyon where they placed their habitacion, was afterwarde cauled *Troianum*. The lyke wee reade howe the Tirians and Sidonians arryued with their nauye in *Lybia* by the fabulos conduction of *Dido*. These Matinians in like maner beyng banyfished from their owne countrey, planted their fyrtle habitation in that parte of the Iland of *Hispaniola* whiche they caule *Cahonao*, vpon the banke of the ryuer named *Bahaboni*: As is redde in the begynnyng of the Romaynes that *Eneas* of Troye arryued in the region of Italy cauled *Latium* vpon the bankes of the ryuer of Tiber. Within the mouthē of the ryuer of *Bahaboni*, lyeth an Ilande where it is sayde that th[e]inhabitauntes buylded their fyrtle howse whiche they named *Camoteia*. This howſe they consecrated shortly after, and honoured the same reuerently with continual gystes and monumentes, even vntyl the commynge of owre men, lyke as the Christians haue euer religyously honoured Ierusalem the fountayne and oryginall of owre saythe: As also the Turkes attribute the lyke to the cytie of *Mecha* in Araby, and th[e]inhabitantes of the fortunate Ilandes (cauled the Ilandes of Canarie) to *Tyrma* buylded vpon a hyghe rocke from the whiche many were wounthe with ioyfull myndes and songes to cast them felues downe headlonge, beyng perfuaded by their priestes that the soules of all fuche as to dyd for the loue of *Tyrma*, shulde therby enioye eternall felicity. The conquerours of the Ilandes of Canarie, founde them yet remayning in that superstition, even vntyl owre tyme: Nor yet is the memory of their sacrificyes vterly worne awaye: The rocke also referto the owlde name vnto this daye. I haue also learned of late, that there yet remayneth in the Ilande summe of the faction of *Betanchor* the Frenſhe man and fyrtle that broughte the Ilandes to good culture and ciuitile beyng thereto licenced by the kyngē of Castile as I haue sayde before. These doo yet (for the moſte parte) obserue bothe the language and maners of the Frenſhemēn, although the heres and successours of *Betanchor*, had ſoule the two subdued Ilandes to certeyne men of Castile. Yet th[e]inhabitours whiche ſucceded *Betanchor*, and buylded them houses and encreased their families there, do contynue to this daye: And lyue quietly and pleauantly with the Spaniardes, not greued with the ſharpe coulde of Fraunce. But lette vs nowe returne to th[e]inhabitauntes of *Matinino* and *Hispaniola*. The Ilande of *Hispaniola* was fyrtle named by the fyrtle inhabitous, *Quisqueia*, and then *Haiti*. And this not by chaunce, or at the pleauure of fuche as diuified theſe names, but of credulite and belefe of ſumme great effecte. For *Quisqueia*, is as muche to faye as a great thiſe: And that ſo great that none maye bee greater. They interprete alſo, that *Quisqueia* ſygnifieth, large, vniuersall, or al, in like ſignification as the Grecches named their god cauled *Pan*: Bycause that for the greatness therof, theſe ſympyle foules ſuppoſed it to bee the hole worlde: And that the ſoonne beames gaue lyghte to none other worlde but onely to this Ilande with the other adiacente aboute the fame: And thervpon thoughte it moſt worthy to bee cauled great, as the greatest of all other knownen to them. *Haiti* is as muche to faye by interpretation, as rougue, ſharpe, or craggie. But by a fyguratiue ſpeache cauled denomination (wherby the hole is named by part) they named the hole Iland *Haiti* (that is) rougue: For as muche as in many places the face of this Iland is rougue by reaſon of the craggie montaynes, horrible thicke wooddes, and terrible darke and ciepe valleys enuyroned with great and highe montaynes, althoſe it bee in manye other places excedyngs bewtiful and floriflyng. Here multe wee ſumwhat digreſe from th[e]order we are entered into. Perhaſes your holynesse wyll maruell by what meanes theſe ſympyle men ſhoule of foo longe contynuance bear in minde ſuche principles, where as they haue no knowledge of letters. So it is therfore, that from the beginningne, their princes haue euer byn accustomed to committe their children to the gouernaunce of their wife men whiche they caule *Boitios*, to bee instructed in knowledge, and to beare in memorie ſuche thynges as they lerne. They gyue them felues chieflie to two thynges: As generally to lerne th[e]originall and ſuccesse of thynges: And particularlye to reherfe the noble factes of their graundefathers great graundefathers and auncientours awſel in peace as in warre. Theſe two thynges they haue of owlde tyme composed in certeyne meters and ballettes in their language. Theſe rhymes or ballettes, they caule *Aretos*. And as owre mynſtreſles are accustomed too ſyng to the harpe or lute, ſo doo they in lyke maner ſyng theſe fonges and daunce to the fame, playinge on tymbrelles made of ſhels of certen

sysshes. These tymbrels they caule *Maguei*. They haue also forges and ballettes of loue: And other of lamentations and moornynge: Summe also to encourage them to the warres, with euer of them their tewnes agreeable to the matter. They exercise theym selues muche in daunceinge, wherin they are verye actyue and of greater agilitie then owre men, by reasoun they gyue them selues to nothyng so muche, and are not hyndered with apparell whiche is also the caufe of their swiftenesse of foote. In their ballettes leste them of their auncestours, they haue prophecies of the comminge of owre men into their countrey. These they syng with moornynge and as it were with gronyng, bewayle the losse of their libertie and feruitude. For these prophecies make mention that there shoulde coome into the Ilande *Maguaochos*, that is, men clothed in apparel, and armed with fuche swoordes as shulde cutte a man in funder at one stroke: vnder whose yoke their posterite shulde bee subdued. And here I do not maruell that their predecessors coulde prophecye of the feruitude and bondage of their successyon, if it bee trewe that is sayd of the familiaritie they haue with spirates whiche appeare to them in the night, wherof we haue largely made mention in the nyght booke of the first decade, where also wee haue entreated of their Zemes (that is) their Idoles and Images of diuelles whiche they honoured. But they saye that fence these Zemes were taken awaye by the Christians, the spirates haue no more appeared. Owre men ascribe this to the sygne of the croffe wherwith they defende them selues from fuche spirates. For they are nowe all clesned and sanctifyed by the water of baptis[f]me wherby they haue renounced the deuel and are consecrated the holy members of Christ. They are vniversally studious to knowe the boundes and lymettes of their regions and kingdomes: And especially their *Mitaini* (that is) noble men. So that euen they are not vterly ignorant in the furveyinge of their landes. The common people haue none other care then of fettynge, fowynge, and plantynge. They are mooste experte sysshers, by reasoun that throughowte the hole yeare, they are accustomed daylye to plouunge them selues in the ryuers, so that in maner they lyue no lesse in the water then on the lande. They are also giuen to huntyng. For (as I haue sayde before) they haue two kyndes of foure footed beastes, wherof the one is litle cunnes cauled *Vtias*, and the other Serpentes named *Juannas*, muche lyke vnto Crocodiles, of eyght foote length, of mooste plefaunte taste, and lyuyng on the lande. All the Ilandes nooryshe innumerable byrdes and foulcs: As stocke dous, duckes, geese, hearcors, byfyde no lesse number of popingais then sparowes with vs. Eueri kyng hath his subiectes diuided to sundrye affair: As summe to huntyng, other to sysshynge, and other summe to husbandrye. But let vs now retorne to speake further of the names. We haue sayde that *Quisqueia* and *Haiti* were the oulde names of this Ilande. The hole Ilande was also cauled *Cipanga* of the region of the montaynes aboundinge with golde: Lyke as owre anciente poetes cauled all Italye *Latium* of parte therof. Therfore as they cauled *Ausonia* and *Hesperia*, Italie, euen so by the names of *Quisqueia*, *Haiti*, and *Cipanga*, they vnderstode the hole Ilande of *Hispaniola*. Owre men dyd fyrste name it *Isabella* of queene Heliabell whiche in the Spanishe tongue is cauled *Isabella*: And so named it of the fyrst Colonie where they planted their habitation vpon the banke nere vnto the sea on the Northe syde of the Ilande, as wee haue further declared in the fyrste decade. But of the names, this shall suffyce. Lette vs nowe therfore speake of the forme of the Ilande. They whiche fyrste ouer ranne it, described it vnto me to bee lyke the leafe of a chestnutte tree, with a goulfe towarde the west syde, lyinge open ageynst the Ilande of *Cuba*. But the experte shyppe mayster *Andreas Moralis* broughte me the forme therof sumwhat differynge from that. For from bothe the corners, as from the East angle and the West, he described it to be indented and eaten with many great goulfes, and the corners to reache foorth the verye farre: and placeth manye large and safē hauens in the great goulfe on the East syde. But I trust shortely so to trauayle further herein, that a perfecte carde of the particular description of *Hispaniola* maye best fente vnto yowre holynesse. For they haue nowe drawne the Geographicall description therof in cardes, euen as yowre holynesse hath seene the forme and sytuacion of Spayne and Italye with their montaines, valleyes, ryuers, cities, and colonies. Lette vs therfore without shamfastnesse compare the Ilande of *Hispaniola* to Italie, sumtyme the heads and queene of the hole worlde. For if wee consider the quantite, it shalbee founde lylle lesse, and muche more frutefull. It reacheth from the East into the West, fyue hundredth and fortye myles accordyng to the computation of the later searchers: Aloughethe the Admirall sumwhat increased this number as wee haue sayde in the fyrste decade. It is in breadth summe where, almoste three hundredth myles: And in summe places narower where the corners are extended. But it is fuerlye muche more blessed and fortunate then Italie: Beynge for the mooste parte therof so temperate and florysshynge, that it is neyther vexed with sharpe coulde, nor afflycted with immoderate heate. It hath bothe the steyninges and conuersyonys of the sonne (cauled *Solstitia*) in maner equall with the Equinoctiall, with lylle difference betwene the length of the daye and nyghte throughout all the yeare. For on the fouth syde, the day ascendeth scarcey an houre in length aboue the nyghte, or contrary wylle. But the diffyrence is more on the northe syde. Yet are there summe regions in the Ilande in the whiche the coulde is of sum force. But yowre holynesse muste vnderstonde this to bee incident by reasoun of the obiecte or nearneffe of the mountaines, as wee wyl more largely declare hereafter. Yet is not this coulde so pearcyng and sharpe, that th[e]inhabitantes are molested with snowe or bytyng froste. In other places, the Ilande enioyeth perpetuall springe tyme, and

Singing and
daunceing.
Soonges of loue
and moornynge.

Prophesies.
Note

Theyr familiaritie
wi[th] spirates

The deuyl is
diuyen awaye
by baptisme

126

Surueyers.
They lyue as much
in the water as on
the lande

Serpentes
A Crocodile is
much lyke to our
ewte or Lyserte
Byrdes and foulcs
Popingayes

Cipanga.
Italy cauled
Latium

Isabella

The forme of the
Ilande of
hispaniola

A particular carde
of hispaniola

Hispaniola
compared to Italie.

The temperature
of Hispaniola.

The equinoctiall.

Coule accidentally,
and not by the
sytuation of the
region.
Perpetuall springe
and somer.

Maruelous frutulines 127	<p>is fortunate with contynual foomer and haruest. The trees floryshe there all the hole yeare: And the medowes contynue alway greene. All thynges are exeadyng fortune, and growe to great perfection. How wonderfully all garden herbes and frutes doo encrease, sooth within the spaoe of syxtene dayes after the feede is sowne, al herbes of finaule stamees, as letesse, borage, radyfhe, and fuche other, coome to their full rypenesse: And also howe herbes of the bygger forte, as gourdes, melones, cucumers, pompons, citrons, and fuche other, coome to their perfection in the space of thirtie dayes, wee haue sufficiently declared elles where. Of the beastes transported out of Spaine thether, wee haue sayde howe they growe too a muche greater kynde: In fo muche that when they faul into communication of the oxen or kyne, they compare them in bignesse to elephantes, and swyne to mules: But this sumwhat by an excessyue kynde of speache. We haue also made mention how their swynes fleshe is more fauourye and farre better and more plefaunte taste and more holosome then owres, by reason they are fedde with the frutes of Myrobalane trees, and other plefaunte and nurysshynge frutes of that contrey, whiche growe there of them felues, as do vs beeches, holly, and okes. Vynes wooldes also prosper ther with maruellous encrease, if they had any regard to the plantinge therof. The lyke encrease commeth of wheate if it be sownen vpon the mountaynes where the colde is of fume strength: but not in the playnes, by reason of to much fatnes and rankenes of the grownde. It is in maner incredible to heare, that an eare of wheate shuld bee bygger then a mans arme in the brawne, and more then a spanne in length, bearynge also more then a thousande graynes as they all confesse with one voyce, and erily affirme the same with othes. Yet they say the bread of the Ilande (cauled) <i>Cazabbi</i> made of the roote of <i>Iucca</i>, to bee more holosome, becaufe it is of easyer digestion, and is culturled with leffe labour and greater increase. The residue of the tyme which they spende not in fettynge and plantynge, they bestowe in gatheringe of golde. They haue nowe fuche plentie of foure footed beastes, that horses and oxe hydes with sheepe skynnes and goate skyns and such other, are brought from thenfe into Spayne: So that nowe the daughter in many thynges helpeith and succurreth her mother. Of the trees of brasile, spices, the graine which coloureth scarlet in bright shinyng redde, maslix, gossampine cotton, the precious metall cauled <i>Elestrum</i>, and such other commodities of this Ilande, we haue spoken sufficiell before. What therefore can chaunce more happy vnto man vpon the earth, then there to lyue where he neede not to bee dryuen to clofe chaumbers with sharpe coulde or fayntyng heate? Nor yet in wynter eyther to bee laden with heauy apparell, or to burne the shinnenes with continual fytyng at the fyer, which thynges make men oulde in short tyme by resoluinge the natural heate, wherof a thousande diseases infue. They also affirme the ayer to bee very healthfull: and the waters of the ryuers to bee no leffe holosome, as they whiche haue theyr continuall courfe through the earth of the golden mynes. For there is in maner no ryuer, no mountaynes, and but fewe playnes that are vterly without golde. But let vs nowe at the length coome to the particular description of the inner partes of this blessed Ilande. We haue before declared howe it is in maner equally diuided with foure greate ryuers descendynge frome hygh mountaynes: wherof that which runneth towarde the East, is cauled <i>Inna</i>, as that towarde the West is named <i>Atibunicus</i>: The thyrde is <i>Naiba</i> or <i>Haiba</i> which runneth Southwarde: The fourth is cauled <i>Jache</i>, and faulth towarde the North. But this shippes maister, hath brought an other description obserued of th[e]jinh:itantes from the begynnyng. Let vs therfore diuide the hole Ilande into fwe partes, caulyng the regions of euyer prouince by theyr owlde names: and fynally make mention of such thynges as are woorthe memory in euyer of them. The begynninge of the Ilande on the East syde, is conteyned in the prouince named <i>Caizcimu</i>: so named for that in theyr language <i>Cimu</i>, signifieth the front or begynnyng of any thyng. After this, foloweth the prouince of <i>Huhabo</i>, and then <i>Caihabo</i>. The fourth is <i>Bainoa</i>. <i>Guaccaiarima</i> conteyneth the west corner. But the last fawe one, <i>Bainoa</i> is of larger boundes then the three other. <i>Caizcimu</i> reacheth from the fyrt fronte of the Ilande to the ryuer <i>Hozama</i>, whiche runneth by the citie of faynt Dominicke. But towarde the North syde, it is ended at the rough mountaynes of <i>Haiti</i>. <i>Huhabo</i>, is included within the mountaynes <i>Haiti</i> and the ryuer <i>Iaciga</i>. <i>Caihabo</i> the thyrde prouince, conteyneth all that lyeth betwene <i>Cuhabo</i> and <i>Dahatio</i>, euen vnto the mouth of the ryuer of <i>Iaccha</i> or <i>Jache</i> (one of the foure which diuide the Ilande equally) and ascendethe to the mountaynes of <i>Cibaua</i>, where the greateste plentie of golde is founde: Owt of the which also the ryuer <i>Demahus</i> springeth: and ioynynge with the springes of the ryuer of <i>Naiba</i>, (being an other of the foure which diuideth the Ilande towarde the south fea) faulth to an other banke of the ryuer of faynt Dominicke. <i>Bainoa</i>, begynneth at the confines of <i>Caiabi</i>, and reacheth euen vnto the Ilande of <i>Cahini</i> which lieth neare vnto the sea bankes of the north syde of the Ilande where wee sayde that they erected the fyrt colonie or habitacion. The prouince of <i>Guaccaiarima</i>, occupieth the remanent towarde the wst. This they named <i>Guaccaiarima</i>, bycaufe it is the extreme or vittermost parte of the Ilande. For <i>Iarima</i> in theyr language signifieth the tayle or ende of any thyng: And <i>Gua</i>, is an article whiche they vse often tymes in the names of thynges: And especially in the names of theyr kynges: as <i>Guarianexius</i>, and <i>Guacanarillus</i>. In the prouince of <i>Caizcimu</i>, are these regions: <i>Higuei</i>, <i>Guanama</i>, <i>Reyre</i>, <i>Xagua</i>, <i>Aramana</i>, <i>Arabo</i>, <i>Hazo</i>, <i>Macorix</i>, <i>Caiacoa</i>, <i>Guaiaguia</i>, <i>Baguanimaho</i> and the rough mountaynes of <i>Haiti</i>. Here let vs speake sume what of theyr aspirations which they vse otherwyfe then the Latins doo.</p>
Beastes Oven and swyne of exceeding hygnesse. Swyne fed with Myrobalanes	
Vines Wheate An eare of wheate as byg as a mans arme in the brawne The bread of the Ilande.	
Golde. Great plentie of cattayle. Brasile. Mastyx. Gossampine <i>Electrum</i> .	
Incommodities of intemperat regions	
Holsome ayer and water Golde every where The description of the inner partes of the Ilande.	
The cite of s. Dominicke The mountaynes of Haiti	
The mountaynes of Cibaua 128	
The Ilande of Cahini Of provinces diuided into regions	
Of theyr aspirations	

It is to bee noted that there is no aspiration in theyr vowels, which hath not th[e]effeete of a consonant. So that they pronounce theyr aspirations more vehemently then wee do the consonant. f. Ye, all such wordes as in their tonge are aspirate, are pronounced with lyke breath and spirite as is. f. sauing that herein the neather lyppe is not moued to th[e]uppermof teethe. With open mouthes and shakynge theyr brestes, they breath out these aspirations, *ha, he, hi, ho, hu*, as the Hebrewes and Arabians are accustomed to pronounce theyrs. I fynde also that the Spaniards vse the lyke vehemence in the aspirations of those wordes whiche they haue receaved of the Moores and Arabians which possessed Spaine, and continued there many yeares: As in these wordes: *Almohadda*, whiche signifieth a pyllowe or bolster: Also *Almohaza*, that is, a horfe combe: with dyuers such other wordes whiche they speake in maner with panting brestes and vehement spirite. I haue thought it good to reherse these thynges, bycause amoung the Latines it often tymes too chaunceth that onely the accent or aspiration, chaungeth the signification of the woerde: as *hora*, for an hour, and *ora* for the pluraile number of this woerde *os*, which signifieth the mouth: Also *ora*, which signifieth regions or coastles. The lyke also chaunceth in the diuerſitie of the accent, as *occido* I kyll, and *occido* I faule. Euen so in the language of these ſimpler men, there are many thynges to bee obſcured. But let vs nowe retorne to the deſcription. In the prouince of *Huhabo*, are theſe regions: *Xamana, Canabacoa, Cuhabo*, with many other, the names wheroſ I haue not yet learned. The prouince of *Caihabo*, conteyneth theſe regions: *Magua, and Cacacubana*. Th[e]inhabitantes of this region, haue a peculiare language much diſſerſing from the common language of the Iland, and are cauled *Maoryxes*. There is also an other region cauled *Cubana*, whose language diſſerſeth from the other. Lykewyf the region of *Baiohaigua*, hath a dyuers toonge. There are also other regions, as *Dahabon, Cyabho, and Manabaho*. *Cotoy* is in the myddle of the Ilande. By this runneth the ryuer *Nizaus*: And the montaynes cauled *Mahaitin, Hazua, and Neibaymao*, confine with the fame. In the prouince of *Bainoa*, are the regions of *Maguana, Taghaiucho, Bauruo, Dabiagua, and Atibuni*, fo named of the ryuer: Also *Caunoa, Buaici, Dahabonici, Maiaguariti, Atiei, Maccazina, Guahabba, Anniuci, Marien, Guarico, Amaguei, Xaragua, Yaguana, Azzuei, Iacchi, Honorucco, Diaguo, Camate, and Neibaimao*. In *Guaccaierima* the laſt prouince, theſe regions are conteyned: *Mauicaroa, Guahagua, Taquenazabo, Nimaca, Bainoa the leſſe, Cahaymi, Jamaizi, Manabaxao, Zauana, Habacoa, and Aygueroa*. But let vs entreat sumwhat of the particulares of the regions. In the prouince of *Caizcimu*, within the great goule of the beginnyng, there is a greate caue in a hollowe rocke vnder the roote of a hygh mountayne, about twoo furlonges from the fea. The enterie of this caue is not much vnlke the doores of a great temple, beinge very large and turnyng many wayes. *Andreas Moralis* the shyp maſter, at the commaundement of the gouernoure, tempted to fearche the caue with the fmauleſt vſells. He ſayth that by certeyne priuii wayes, manye ryuers haue concurſe to this caue as it were to a finke or chanell. After th[e]experience hereof, they ceaſed to maruaile whither other ryuers ranne whiche commynge fourefcore and tenne myles, were swalowed vp, fo that they appeared no more, nor yet fell into the fea by any knownen wayes. Nowe therfore they ſuppoſe that ryuers swalowed vp by the holowe places of that ſtony mountayne, faule into this caue. As the ſhipmaſter entered into the caue his ſhippe was almoſt swalowed. For he ſayth that there are many whyrlepooles and ryſinges or boylinges of the water, which make a violent conſtitute and horrible rorynge one encontroſyng the other. Also many huge holes and holowe places: So that what on the one fyde with the whirle pooles, and on the other fyde with the boyling of the water, his ſhippe was long in maner toſſed vp and downe lyke a baule. It greatly repented hym that he had entered, yet knewe he no way how to come forth. He now wandered in darkenesſe, aſwel for the obſcureneſſe of the caue into the which he was farre entered, as also that in it were thiſe cloudes engendered of the moist vapours proceeding of the conſtitute of the waters whiche continually faule with great violence into the caue on every fyde. He comparreth the noyſe of the waters, to the faule of the famous ryuer of *Nilus* from the montaines of *Ethyope*. They were alſo deafe, that one could not here what an other ſaid. But at the length with great daunger and feare, he came forth of the caue as it had byn owt of hel. Aboute three ſcore miles diſtant from the chiefe citie of fainte Dominicke, there are certeyne hyghe montaines vpon the toppes wheroſ is a lake or ſtandyng poole inacceſſible, neuer yet ſene of them whiche came lateſt to the Ilande, bothe by reaſon of the roughneſſe of the montaines, and alſo for that there is noo pathe or open waye to the toppes of the fame. But at the length the ſhippe maſter, beinge conducted thereth by one of kynges, ascended to the toppes of the montaines and came to the poole. Hee ſayth that the coulde is there of ſum force. And in token of wynter, hee founde ferne and bramble buffhes, whiche two, growe onely in coulde regions. These montaines, they caule *Ymizui Hibahaino*. This poole is of freſhe water three myles in compaſſe, and wel replenyſhed with diuerſe kindes of fyfhes. Many fmaule riuers or brookes faule into it. It hath no paſſage owt, bycause it is on every fyde enclosed with the toppes of montaines. But lette vs nowe ſpeake of an other poole whiche may well bee cauled a ſea in the mydlannde, and bee coompared to the Caſpian or Hircanian ſea in the fyme lande of *Aſia*: with certeyne other lakes and poolies of freſhe water.

The pronunciation
of the Hebrewes
and Arabians

The Moores and
Arabians possessed
Spayne

Howe the
aspiration
changeth the
ſignification
of wordes

Dyuers languages
in the Ilande

A greate caue in
the rocke of a
mountayne

A daungerous
enterprise

Riuers devoured
of caues

129
Whirlpooles
and conſtitute
of waters

Clowdes in the
caue.

The Cataractes
of Nilus

A ſtandyng
poole in the toppe
of a hygh
mountayne.

Ferne and bramble
buffhes, growe
only in coulde
regions.

The Caſpian and
Hircanian ſea.

THE EYGHTE BOOKE OF THE THIRDE DECADE.



A great lake of
soure and salt
water.

Swallowinge
goulfes.

Sea fysshes in
lakes of the
midlande
The deuourynge
fysshe cauled
Tiburonus.

The ryuers that
faule into the lake
Caspium.

CC [two hundred]
sprynges within
the space of a
furlonge

A myracle.

The Indian
language.

130

A kynge stricken
dumme and lame
by a myracle.

Such as are
drowned in the
lake are not cast
up agayne.

The Ilande
Guanizaca in
the myddest of
the poole.
A lake of salt
and freshe water.

A lake of fresshe
water

A lake of ten
myles in length

He prouunce of *Bainoa* beyng thrife as bygge as the three syrl, that is, *Caiscimu*, *Vhabo*, and *Caihabo*, includeth a valley named *Caiouani*, in the whiche there is a lake of falte, soure, and bytter water, as wee reade of the sea cauled *Caspium*, lyng in the firme lande betwene *Sarmatia* and *Hircania*. We haue therfore named it *Caspium*, althooughe it not bee in the region of *Hircania*. It hath manye swalowinge goulfes, by the whiche, bothe the water of the sea springeth into it, and also fuche as faule into it from the mountaines, are swalowed vppe.

They thyncke that the caues therof, are so large and deepe, that great fysshes of the sea passe by the same into the lake. Emonge these fysshes, there is one cauled *Tiburonus* whiche cutteth a man in funder by the myndest at one snappe with his teeth, and deuoureth hym. In the ryuer *Hosama*, runnyng by the chiefe citie of sayncte Dominicke, these *Tiburoni* do sumtymes coome from the sea and deuoure manye of th[e]inhabitantes: Especially fuche as do dayly ploonge them selues in the water to th[e]intent to keepe their bodyes verye cleane. The ryuers whiche faule into the lake, are these. From the Northe syde, *Guanicabon*: From the Southe, *Xacoci*: from the Easte, *Guannabo*: And from the West, *Ocoa*. They faye that these ryuers are great and continuall: And that besyde thefe, there are. xx other fmaule ryuers whiche faule into this *Caspium*. Also on the Northe syde within a furlonge of the lake, there are aboue two hundred sprynges, occupying lykewife aboue a furlonge in circuite, the water wherof is coulde in foomer, frefhe alfo, and holosome to bee droonke. These sprynges make a ryuer that can not bee waded ouer, whiche neare at hande ioynynge with the other, fauleth into the lake. Here muste wee staye a whyle. The kynge of this regyon founde his wyfe praying in a chapel buidled by the Christians within the precincte of his dominion, and required her coompanie to fatissye his fleshely luste. His wyfe reproud hym, and put hym in remembrance to haue respecte to the holye place. The woordes whiche shee spake to hym, were these: *Tetiora*, *Tetiora*: whiche is as muche to faye, as, bee quyet, bee quyet: *Tcheta cynato guamechyna*: That is, god wyl bee greatly angrie. *Guamechyna*, sygnifyeth god, *Tcheta* greatly, *Cynato* angrie. But the husbande halynge her by the arme, sayde: *Guaibba*, that is, go: *Cynato macabuca guamechyna*: That is: what is that to me if god be angerye? And with thes woordes as he profered her violence, foodenlye he became dumme and lame. Yet by this myracle beyng striken with repentaunce, he euer after ledde a religyous lyfe: In so muche that from thense foorth hee woold never suffer the chappell to bee swpte or decked with any other mannes hande. By the same myracle, manye of th[e]inhabitantes and all the Christians beyng moued, resorted deuoutly to the chappell. They take it in good parte that the kynge suffered the reuenge of that reproche. Lette vs nowe retourne to *Caspium*. That falte lake is tossed with stormes and tempestes: And oftentimes drowneth fmaule shypes or syfher boates, and swaloweth them vppe with the maryners: In so muche that it hath not byn harde of, that any man drowned by shypwracke, euer plonged vppe ageyne, or was caste on the shore, as commonly chaunceth of the deade bodys of fuche as are drowned in the sea. These tempestes, are the deintie banquetinges of the *Tiburones*. This *Caspium*, is cauled *Hagueigabon*. In the myndest hereof, lyeth an Ilande named *Guanizaca*, to the whiche they reforte when they go a syfhyng: But it is not cultured. There is in the same playne, an other lake nexte vnto this, whose water is myxte of falte and frefhe: And is therfore nother apte to bee droonke, nor yet to bee refused in vrgente necessitie. This conteineth in length. xxv. miles, and in breadth eight myles: In summe places also nyne or ten. It receaueth manye ryuers whiche haue no passage owte of the same, but are swalowed vppe as in the other. Water springeth out of the sea into this alfo: but in no great quantitiie, whiche is the cause that it is so commyxte. In the same prouynce towarde the Weste syde, there is an other lake of freshe water, not farre distante from *Caspium*. This the[e]inhabitantes caule *Iainagua*. The same falte lake, hath on the North syde therof, an other named *Guacca*. This is but lytle: as not past three or foure myles in breadth, and one in length. The water of this, maye well bee droonke. On the southe syde of the falte lake, there lyeth an other named *Babbareo*, of three myles in length and in maner rounde. The water of this is frefhe as of the two other. This lake bycause it hath no passage owte nor yet anye swalowyne goulfes, conueyeth the superfluous waters to the sea if it be encreased with the streames whiche faule sumtyme abundantly from the montaines. This is in the region of *Xamana* in the prouince of *Bainoa*. There is another cauled *Guaniba*, lying betwene the East and the South nere vnto the syde of *Caspium*. This is ten myles in length and almoste rounde. There are furthermore many other fmaule standyng pooles or lakes dispached here and there in the Iland, whiche I wyll lette passe leste I shulde bee tedious in remayning to longe

in one thyng. I wyll therfore make an ende with this addition, that in all these, great plentie of fyfhe and soule is nouysfhed. All these lakes lye in a large playne, the whiche from the East reacheth into the West a hundredth and twentie myles: beyng of breadth. xviii. myles where it is narowest, and xxv. where it is largest. Lookyng toward the West, it hath collaterally on the lefte hande the montaines of *Daiquani*: And on the ryght hande, the montaines of *Caigua*, so cauled of the name of the vale it selfe. At the rootes of the montaines of *Caigua* toward the North syde, there lyeth an other vale much longer and larger then that before named. For it conteineth in length, almoste two hundredth myles: And in bredth xxx. wher it is largest, and about. xx. wher it is narowest. This vale in summe parte thereof, is cauled *Moguana*: In an other place, *Iguamu*, and elles where, *Hathathiei*. And forasmuche as wee haue here made mention of this parte of the valed named *Hathathiei*, wee wyll sumwhat digress from the discourse of this description, and entreat of a thinge so straunge and maruelous, that the lyke hath not byn hard of. So it is therfore, that the kyng of this region named *Caramatexius*, taketh great pleasure in fyfshinge. Into his nettes chanced a younge fyfhe of the kynde of thoſe huge monſters of the ſea whiche th[e]lhabouris caule *Manati*, not founde I ſuppoſe in oure feas nor knownen to oure men before this tyme. This fyfhe is foure footed, and in ſhape lyke vnto a tortoife althoſe ſhee be not couered with a ſhel, but with ſcales: And thoſe of ſuch hardneſſe and couched in ſuche order, that no arrowe can hurte her. Her ſcales are byfet and defend with a thouſand knobbes. Her backe is playne, and her heade vterly lyke the heade of an oxe. She lyueth both in the water and on the lande: She is ſlowe of mouyng: of condition meeke, gentell, affoycable and louing to mankind and of a maruelous fence or memorie as are the elephante and the delphyn. The king noriſhed this fyfhe certeine daies at home with the breadinge of the country, made of the roote of *Iucca* and *Panycke* with ſuche other rootes as men are accuſtomed to eate. For when ſhee was yet but younge, he caſt her into a poole or lake neare vnto his palaice there to bee fedde with hande. This lake alſo receaueth waters and caſteth not the fame forth ageine. It was in tyme paſte cauled *Guaurabo*: But is nowe cauled the lake of *Manati* after the name of this fyfhe whiche wandered ſafely in the ſame for the ſpace of. xxv. yeares, and grewe excedyng byg. What ſo euer is written of the Delphines of Baian or Arion, are muche inferior to the dooings of this fyfhe: whiche for her gentle nature they named *Matum*, that is gentle or noble. Therefore when ſo euer any of the kynges familiers, especially ſuche as are knownen to her, refor to the bankes of the lake and caule *Matum*, *Matum*, then ſhe (as myndfull of ſuche benefites as ſhe hath receaued of men) lyfthe vp her heade and commeth to the place whither ſhe is cauled, and there receaueth meate at the handes of ſuche as feede her. If any deſirous to paſte ouer the lake, make ſigues and tokens of theyr intente, ſhe boweth her ſelfe to them, therewith as it were gentelly inuitynge them to amount vpon her, and conueyeth them ſafely ouer. It hath by ſeeſt that this monſtrous fyfhe hath at one tyme ſafely caſted ouer tenne men ſinging and playning. But if by chaunce when ſhe lyfthe vp her heade ſhe epyed any of the Christian men, ſhe woolde immediately ploonge downe ageyne into the water and refufe to obey, bycaufe ſhe had once receaued inury at the handes of a certeyne wanton younge man amoung the Christians, who hadde caſte a ſharpe darte at her, although ſhe were not hurt by reaſon of the hardenes of her ſkygne beinge rougue and ful of ſkales and knobbes as we haue ſayde. Yet dyd the beare in memorie th[e]jiniurie the ſufteyned, with ſo gentell a reutenge requitynge th[e]ingratitude of hym which had delte with her ſo vngentelly. From that day when ſo euer ſhe was cauled by any of her familiers, ſhe woolde fyrt looke circumſpectly about her, leaſt any were preſent appareled after the maner of the Christians. She woolde oftentimes play and wrefle vpon the banke with the kynges chamberlens: And eſpecially with a younge man whom the kyng fauoured well, beinge alſo accuſtomed to feede her. Shee woolde bee ſumetimes as pleaufant and full of play as it had byn a moonkey or marmafet: And was of longe tyme a great comfort and folace to the hole Ilande. For no ſmaule confluence awfull of the Christians as of th[e]lhabitanteris, had dayly concourſe to beholde ſo ſtrange a myracle of nature, the contemplation wherof was no leſſe pleaufant then woſderfull. They ſay that the meate of this kynde of fyfhe, is of good taste: And that many of them are engendered in the feas therabout. But at the length, this pleaufant playfelowe was loſte, and caried into the ſea by the great ryuer *Attibunicus*, one of the fourre which diuide the Ilande. For at that tyme there chaunced ſo terrible a tempeſt of wind, and rayne, with ſuch fluds enſewing that the like hath not lightly byn hard of. By reaſon of this tempeſt, the ryuer *Attibunicus* fo ouerflowed the bankes, that it ſylded the hole vale and myxt it ſelfe with all the other lakes. At which tyme alſo, this gentell *Matum* and pleaufante companyon, folowynge the vehementer courſe and faule of the fluddes, was therby restored to his oulde moother and natyue waters, and fence that tyme never ſeen ageyne. Thus hauyng digrefſed ſufficiently, let vs nowe coome to the ſituation of the vale. It hath collaterally the mountayneſ of *Cibaua* and *Caiguam* which bryngē it to the South ſea. There is an other vale beyonde the mountayneſ of *Cibaua* towarde the North. This is cauled the vale of *Guarionexius*, bycaufe that before the memorie of man, the predeceſſours and aunceltores of kyng *Guarionexius* to whom it is descended by right of inheritaunce, were euer the lordes of the hole vale. Of this kyng, we haue ſpoken largely in the fyrl narration of the Ilande in the fyrt Decade. This vale is of length from the East to the West, a hundredth and fourecore myles: And of

A playne of a hundredth and twentie miles

A playne of two hundredth myles in length.

The maruelous fyfhe Manati.

131

A monſter of the ſea fedde with mans hande.

Matum.

A fyfhe caryeth men ouer the lake

A maruelous thyng.

The ryuer *Attibunicus*.

The ſituation of the great vale.

The mountayneſ of *Cibaua* and *Caiguam*.

The greate vale of *Guarionexius*.

132

Mountaynes.
Vales.
Hyles.
Playnes.
Ryuers.
Golde in all
mountaynes, and
golde and fyssh
in all ryuers.
Salte bayes.

Howe the Ilande
is diuided with
mountaynes.
Golde.
The ryuers haue
theyr course
from the caues
of the mountaynes.
No hurtful or
rauenous beast
in the Ilande.

The autours
excuse.

By what meanes
the people of the
Iland are gretly
consumed.

The pleasures of
Hispaniola.

The region of
Cotohi, situate in
the Clowdes.
A playne in the
toppes of
mountaynes.
The hygher, the
coulde.
Moderate coulde
in the mountaynes.
Ferne of
maruelous bignes

Golde.

133
The inhabitants
of Hispaniola can
abide no labour
nor coulde.

The Iland of
Creta or Candie,
vnder the
dominion of the
Venetians.

breadth from the South to the North, thirtie myles wher it is narwest, and fistie where it is brodest. It beginneth from the region *Canabocca* by the prouinces of *Huhabo* and *Caiabo*: And endeth in the prouince of *Bainoa* and the region of *Mariena*. It lyeth in the myddest betwene the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, and the mountaynes of *Cahonai* and *Cazacubuna*. There is no prouince nor any region which is not notable by the maiesie of mountaynes, frutesfules of vales, pleasauntesse of hyles, and delectablenes of playnes, with abundaunce of fayre ryuers runnyng through the same. There are no fides of mountaynes or hyles, no ryuers, which abound not with golde and delicate fysshes, except only one ryuer which from th[e]originall therof, with the sprynge of the same breakyng forth of the mountaynes, commeth owt falte and so contynueth vntyl it perfyhe. This ryuer is cauled *Bahan*: and runneth through the myddle of the region *Maguana* in the prouince of *Bainoa*. They suppose that this ryuer hath made it selfe awaie vnder the grunde by sume passages of playster or falte earthe. For there are in the Ilande many notable falte bayes, wherof we wyl speake more hereafter. We haue declared howe the Ilande is diuided by fourre ryuers and fyue prouinces. There is also an other particion, whiche is this. The hole Ilande confyseth of the tops of fourre mountaines which diuide it by the myddest from the East to the weste. In all these is abundance of nooryshyne moysture and grete plente of golde: of the caues also of the whiche, the waters of al the riuers (into the which the caues emptie them selues) haue theyr originall and increase. There are lykewyse in them horrable dennes, obscure and darke vales, and myghtie rockes of stonye. There was never any noysome beaste founde in it: Nor yet any rauenynge fourre footed beaste. No lyon, no beare no fierce tygers, no cratice foxes, nor deuouring woolfes. All thynges are blessed and fortunate: And nowe more fortunate, for that so many thousandes of men are receaued to bee the sheepe of Christes flocke, all theyr Zemes and Images of deuylls being reiecte and vtterly out of memorie. If I chaunce nowe and then in the discourse of this narration to repeate one thyng dyuers tymes or otherwise to make digression, I must desyre yowre holynes therwith not to bee offended. For whyle I see, heare, and wryte these thinges, mee seemeth that I am herewith so affected, that for verye ioy I feele my mynde stirred as it were with the spirite of Apollo as were the Sibylles, whereby I am enforced to repeate the fame ageyne: Especially when I consider howe farre the amplitude of oure religion spreadeth her wynges. Yet amounges these so many blessed and fortunate thynges, this one greeueth me not a lyttle: That these simble poore men never brought vp in labour, do dayly peryfhe with intollerable trauayle in the golde mynes: And are therby brought to suche desperation, that many of them kyll them selues, hauyng no regarde to the procreation of chyldren. In so much that women with chylde, perceauyng that they shall bringe forth such as shalbe flaues to the Christians, vfe medecines to destroy their conception. And albeit that by the kynges letters patentes it was decreed that they shulde bee set at lybertie, yet are they constrainyd to serue more then seemeth conuenient for free men. The number of the poore wretches is woonderfully extenuate. They were once reckened to bee aboue twelue hundred thousande heades: But what they are nowe, I abhorre to rehearse. We wyll therefore let this passe: and returne to the pleasures of *Hispaniola*. In the mountaynes of *Cibaua*, which are in maner in the myddest of the Ilande in the prouince of *Caiabo* (where we sayd to bee the greatest plente of natyue golde) there is a region named *Cotohi*, situate in th[er]e clowdes, enuironed with the toppes of hygh mountaynes, and well inhabited. It confyseth of a playne of. xxv. myles in length, and. xv. in breadth. This playne is hygher then the toppes of other mountaynes: So that these mountaynes, maye seeme to bee the chiefe and progenitours of the other. This playne suffereth alterations of the fourre tymes of the yeare: as the Sprynge, Soomer, Autumne, and wynter. Here the herbes waxe wythered, the trees loose theyr leaues, and the medowes become hore: The whiche thynges (as we haue sayde) chaunce not in other places of the Ilande, where they haue only the Spring and Autumne. The soyle of this playne bryngeth forth ferne and bramble busshes bearynge blacke berries or wylde raspes, which two are tokens of coulde regions. Yet is it a fayre region: for the coulde therof is not very sharpe: neyther dooth it afflicte th[e]inhabitantes with frost or knowe. They argue the frutesfules of the region by the ferne, whose stalkes or steames are bygger then a sperre or iaeluen. The fydes of thos mountaynes are ryche in golde. Yet is there none appoynted to dygge for the same, bycause it shalbe needfull to haue apparelled myners, and such as are vsed to labour. For th[e]inhabitantes lyuynge contented with lyttle, are but tender: And can not therfore away with labour or abyde any coulde. There are two ryuers which runne through this region, and faule from the toppes of the present mountaynes. One of these is named *Comoiaxza*, whose course is towarde the West, and fauleth into the channell of *Naiba*. The other is cauled *Tirecotus*: which runnyng towarde the East, ioyneth with the ryuer of *Iunna*. In the Ilande of *Creta* (nowe cauled Candie) as I passed by in my legacie to the Soldane of Alcayr or Babylon in Egypete, the Venetians toulde me that there laye suche a region in the toppes of the mountaynes of *Ida*, whiche they affirme to bee more frutesfull of wheate corne then any other region of the Ilande. But forasmuch as once the Cretenes rebelled agenst the Venetians, and by reaoun of the freight and narwe way to the toppes therof, longe defended the region with armes against th[e]autoritie of the Senate, and at the length beinge forwyred with warres, rendered the same, the Senate commaunded that it shulde bee lefte deferte, and the freightes of th[e]enter-

aunces to bee stopped, leste any shulde ascende to the region without their permisyon. Yet in the yeare of Christe M. D. ii. licence was graunted to the husband men to tyll and manure the region, on such condition that no suche as were apte to the warres, myght enter into the same. There is also an other region in Hispaniola named *Cotohy* after the same name. This diuideth the boundes of the prouinces of *Vhabo* and *Caiabo*. It hath mountaynes, vales, and plaines. But bycause it is baren, it is not muche inhabited. Yet is it richest in golde: For the originnall of the abundance of gold, beginneth here: In so muche that it is not gathered in smaule graines and sparkes as in other places: but is founde hole, massie, and pure, emonge certaine softe stones and in the vaines of rockes, by breakynge the stones wherof, they folowe the vaynes of golde. They haue founde by experiance, that the vayne of golde is a lyuynge tree: And that the same by all wayes that it spreadeth and springeth from the roote by the softe pores and pasages of the yearth, putteth forth branches euen vnto the vppermost part of the earth, and ceaseth not vntyl it discouer it selfe vnto the open ayer: At whiche time, it sheweth forth certaine bewtiful colours in the stede of floures, rounde stones of golden earth in the stede of frutes, and thynne plates in stede of leaues. These are they which are disparced throughout the hole Ilande by the course of the ryuers, eruptions of the springes owte of the montaines, and violent faules of the fluddes. For they thincke that such graines are not engendered where they are gathered: especially on the dry land: but otherwise in the riuers. They say that the roote of the golden tree extendeth to the center of the earth and there taketh norisement of increase. For the deeper that they dygge, they fynd the trunkes therof to be so muche the greater as faire as they maye folowe it for abundance of water springing in the montaines. Of the braunches of this tree, they fynde summe as smaule as a thred, and other as bygge as a mannes fynger accordyng to the largenesse or straightnesse of the ryftes and clyftes. They haue sumtimes chaunced vpon hole caues fusteyned and borne vp as it were with golden pylars: And this in the wayes by the whiche the branches ascende: The whiche beyng fyllid with the substaunce of the truncke creapynge from beneath, the branch maketh it selfe waye by whiche it maye passe owte. It is oftentimes diuided by encownterynge with sum kynde of harde stone. Yet is it in other clyftes noorished by the exhalations and vertue of the roote. But now perhappes yowe will aske me what plentie of golde is brought from thense. Yowe shall therfore vnderlande that onely owte of Hispaniola, the sum of foure hundredth and sumtymes syue hundredth thousande ducates of gold is brought yarely into Spayne: as may be gathered by the fyfthe portion dewe to the kynges Excheker, which amounteth to the sum of a hundredth and fourscore, or fourescore and ten thousande Castellanes of golde, and sumtymes more. What is to bee thought of the Ilande of *Cuba* and *Santi Iohannis* (otherwife cauled *Burichena*) beyng both very ryche in golde, we wyll declare further hereafter. To haue sayde thus muche of golde, it shall suffye. Wewyll nowe therfore speake sumwhat of saltē wherwith wee may seafon and referue suche thynges as are bought with golde. In a region of the prouince of *Bainoa*, in the montaynes of *Daiagu*, about twelve myles distant from the saltē lake cauled *Caspis*, there are saltē bayes in the montaynes in a maner as hard as stoones, also clearer and whiter then cristall. There are lykwyse suche saltē baies whiche growe wonderfullly in *Lalatania* (now cauled *Catalonia*) in the territorie of the duke of *Cadona* the chiefe ruler in that region. But suche as knowe them bothe, affyrme that these of *Bainoa* are mooste notable. They saye alſ. that this can not be clefte without wedges and beatelles of Iron. But that of *Lalatana*, maye easlye bee broken as I my selfe haue proued. They therfore compare this to suche stoones as may easlye bee broken: And the other to marble. In the prouince of *Caizimu*, in the regions of *Iguanama*, *Caiacoa*, and *Guariaguia*, there are sprynges whose waters are of maruelous nature, beyng in the superfyttial or vppermoste parte, freshe: In the myddle, mixte of saltē and freshe: And in the lowest parte, saltē and sower. They thincke that the saltē water of the sea, iffneweth owte softely, and the freshe, to springe owte of the mountaynes. The one faulenth downe and the other ryfeth: and are not therfore so vnuerfally myxt wherby the one may vitterly corrupt the other. If any man laye his eare to the grounde neare to any of these sprynges, he shal perceave the grounde there to bee so hollowe, that the reboundyng noyse of a horfeman comminge may be harde for the space of three myles, and a foote man one myle. In the late region towarde the souther named *Guacasarima*, in the lordishyp of *Zauana*, they say there are certeyne wyld men whiche lyue in the caues and dennes of the montaynes, contented onely with wilde fruities. These men never vfed the compayne of any other: nor wyll by any meanes becoome tame. They lyue without any certaine dwellynge places, and with owte tyllage or culturyng of the grounde, as wee reade of them whiche in oulde tyme lyued in the golden age. They say also that these men are withowte any certaine language. They are sumtymes feene. But oware men haue yet layde handes on none of them. If at any tyme they coome to the syght of men, and perceyue any makynge toward them, they flye swifter then a harte. Ye they affyrme them to bee swifter then grehowndes. What one of these folytarie wanderers dyd, it is worth the hearyng. So it is that oware men hauyng granges adioyning nere vnto the thicke wods, certen of them repaired thither in the mooneth of September in the yeare. M. D. xiii. In the meane tyme, one of these wylde men came leapyng owte of the woodde. And approchynge sumwhat toward them with smyng countenaunce, foodenly snatched vppe a childe of therfe beyng the foonne of the owner of the graunge, whiche he begotte of a woman of the

Pure and massie
golde in the
region of Cotoy.
The vaine of golde,
is a lyuynge tree.

These colers or
floures are cauled
Marchasites,
Pyrites.

The roote of the
golden tree.

The braunches of
the golden tree.

Caues susteyned
with pylars of
golde.

The stones of the
gold mynes.

What gold is
brought yarely
from Hispaniola
into Spayne.

Salte of the
mountaynes, very
hard and cleare.

134
Salt as hard as
stones.

Sprynges of salt,
fresche and sower
water.

Holowe caues in
the grounde

Certeynewyld men
lyuing in caues
and dennes

Men without a
certeyne language

Men as swift as
grehowndes
A wyld man
runneth away
with a chylde

Pitche of the
rockes.

Pitche of two
kyndes of trees.
The pine tree.
The tree Copeia.

The leafe of a tree
in the steede of
paper.

They believe that
leaves do speake.
A pretie storie.

135

Ignorance causeth
admiration.

The leafe wherin
they wryte.

A stronge colour
of the iuise of an
apple.

An Herbe whose
smoke is poyson.

Ilande. He ranne awaie with the childe, and made sygnes to owe men to folowe hym. Many folowed awel of owe men as of the naked inhabytances, but all in vayne. Thus when the plefaunt wanderer perceaued that the Christians ceaſed to purſue hym, he leſte the childe in a croſte waye by the whiche the fwyneheardeſ were accuſomed to dryue the fwyne to their paſture. Shortly after, a fwynehearde ſounde the chyld and brought hym home to his father yet tormentynge hym ſelue for forowe, ſuppoſyng that wylde man to haue byn one of the kynde of the Canibales, and that his ſoonne was nowe deuoured. In the ſame Ilande they gather pytche whiche sweateth owte of the rockes, beyng muche harder and ſourer then the pitche of the tree: and is therfore more commodious to calke or defende fyppes ageynſte the woormes cauled *Bromas*, wherof wee haue ſpoken largely before. This Ilande alio bryngeth forth pitche in two kyndes of trees, as in the Pyne tree and an other named *Copeia*. I neede not ſpeakе of the pyne tree, bycause it is engendered and knownen in maner every where. Lette vs therfore ſpeakē ſumwhat of the other tree cauled *Copeia*: Pitche is lykewyfe gathered of it as of the pyne tree: aliothoſe ſumme ſaye that it is gathered by diſtylling or droppynge of the woode when it is burnt. It is a ſtraunge thynge to here of the leafe thereof: and how neceſſary prouifion of nature is ſhewed in the fame. It is to be thought that this is the tree in the leauens wherof the Chaldeans (beyng the fyſte fynders of letters) exprefſed their myndes before the vſe of paper was knownen. This leafe is a ſpanne in breadth and almoſt round. Owe men write in them with pynnes or nedles or any fuche instruments made of metall or woodde, in maner as well as on paper. It is to bee lawghed at what owe men haue perfwaded the people of the Ilande as towchynge this leafe. The symple ſoules beleue that at the comandeſtment of owe men, leaues do ſpeak and diſcloſe ſecreates. They were brought to this credulite by this meaneſ. One of owe men dwellynge in the citie of *Dominica* the chiefe of the Ilande, deluyered to his feruaunte (beyng a man borne in the Ilande) certayne roſted connies, (whiche they caule *Vitas* beyng no bigger then myſe) wyllynge hym to carie the fame to his frende whiche dwelte further within the Ilande. This meſſenger, whether it were that he was therto conſtrayned through hunger, or entyſed by appetiſte, deuoured three of the connies by the waye. He to whom they were fente, writ to his fynde in a leafe howe manye he receaued. When the maſter had looked a whyle on the leafe in the preſence of the feruaunt, he fayde thus vnto hym. Ah ſoonne, where is thy fayne? Couldē thy gredye appetiſte preuayle ſo muſe with the as to cauſe the to eate the connies commytted to thy fydelitie? The poore wretche trembelynge and greatlie amafed, confeſſed his faute: And therwith diſfyred his maſter to tell hym howe he knewe the treweth therof. This leafe (quod he) whiche thou brougtheſt me, hath toluid me all. Then hee further rehearfed vnto hym the houre of his coommyng to his frende, and lykewyfe of his departyng when hee retourned. And thus they merylly deceaue theſe ſeely ſoules and keepe theym vnder obedyence: In ſo muſe that they take owe men for goddes, at whose coomaundement leaues doo diſcloſe fuche thyngeſ as they thyncke moſte hyd and ſecrete. Bothe the fydeſ of the leafe receaueth the formeſ of letters euē as dooeth owe paper. It is thycker then double parchment, and meruelous toughe. While it is yet floryſhyng and newe, it ſheweth the letters whyte in greene. And when it is drye, it becommeth whyte and harde lyke a table of woodde: but the letters wexe yellowe. It dooeth not corrpute or putrifye: nor yet loſeth the letters though it bee wette: nor by any other meaneſ excepte it bee burnte. There is an other tree named *Xagua*: the iuife of whiche ſoure apple beyng of a darke redde coloure, ſtayneth and coloureth what foo euer is touched therewith: And that foo ſyrmely, that noo waſhyng canne take it awaie for the ſpace of twentie dayes. When the apple is full ripe, the iuife looſeth that strength. The apple is eaten, and of good taſt. There is also an herbe whose ſmoke (as we haue reherfed the like before of a certen woodde) is deadly poiſon. On a tyme when the kynges assembled together and conſpired the deſtruſion of owe men, whereas they durſte not atteſt the enterprise by open warre, theyr diuife was, priuilye to ly many bundels of theſe herbes in a certeyne houſe, whiche shortly after they intended to fet on fyre, to th[e]intent that owe men makyng haſte to quenſhe the fame, myght take theyr death with the ſmoke therof. But theyr purpoſed practyſe beinge bewrayed, th[e]autours of the diuife were punyſhed accordyngly. Nowe (moſte holy father) for as muſh as yowre holynesse wryteth that what fo euer we haue written of the newe worlde, dooth pleafe yowe ryght well, wee wyll reherfe certeyne thyngeſ owte of order, but not greatly from owe purpoſe. Of the ſettyng the rooteſ of *Maiſium*, *Agis*, *Iucca*, *Battatas*, and ſuch other beinge theyr common foode, and of th[e]ufe of the fame, we haue ſpoken ſufficiently before. But by what meanes they were fyſte applyed to the commoditiſ of men, we haue not yet declared. We nowe therefore entende to entreate ſumwhat hereof.

THE NYNTH BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.



HEY saye that the fyrsche inhabiitours lyued contented with the rootes of dates, and Magueans, which is an herbe muche lyke vnto that which is commonly cauled Sengrene or Orpin. Alſo the rootes of Guaiegans, whiche are rounde and greate muche lyke vnto puffs of the earth or mufheromes. They did lykewife eate *Guaieros*, lyke vnto perſeneppes: *Cibaios* lyke nuttes, *Cabaives* and Macoanes, lyke vnto onions, with dyuers other fuche rootes. They say that after many yeares, a certeyne *Boition*, that is, a wyſe oulde man, fawe vpon the bankes fyde, a bushe lyke vnto fenel: and transplanting the roote therof, brought it from wyldenes to a better kynde, by nooryſhyng it in gardens. This was the begynnyng of *Iucca*, which at the fyrfte was deadly poſyon to all fuche as dyd eate therof rawe. But for as muche as they perceaued it to bee of pleafaunte tasle, they determyned many wayes to proue the vſt therof: And at the length founde by experiance that beinge fodde or fryed, it was leſſe hurtefull: by whiche meanes alſo, they came to the knowledge of the veneme lyinge hyd in the iufe of the roote. Thus by dryng, ſaltyng, ſeafonyng, and otherwyſe tempreyng it, they brought it to theyr fine breade which they caule *Cazabbi*, more delectable and holſome to the ſtomacke of manne then breade made of wheate, bycaufe it is of eſyer diſtention. The fame is to bee vnderſtoode of other rootes and the grayne of *Maizium* whiche they haue choſen for their chiefē meate amoung the feedes of nature, as we reade howe *Ceres* the daughter of *Saturnus*, gathered wheate and barley (with fuche other corne as are nowe moſt in vſe amoung men) in Egyp̄e of certeyne graynes taken owt of the muddle dryuen from the mountaynes of Ethiopia by th[e]increase of the ryuer *Nilus*, and leſte in the plaine at ſuch tyme as *Nilus* reſorted ageyne to his chanell. For the which facte, we reade that the antiquitie gaue diuine honour to *Ceres*, who fyrfte noriſhed and increased ſuch choſen feedes. There are innumerable kyndes of *Ages*: the varietie wherof, is known by theyr leaues and floures. One kynde of theſe, is cauled *Guanaguax*. This is whyte bothe within and without. An other named *Guaragui* is of vyolet colour without and white within. The other kyndes of *Ages*, they caul *Zazaueios*. Theſe are redde without and whyte within. *Squiuetes*, are whyte within and without. *Tunna*, is all together of vyolet colour. *Hobos* is yellowe booth of ſkyinne and inner ſubſtance. There is an other named *Atibunieix*: The ſkyne of thiſ is of vyolet colour, and the ſubſtance whyte. *Aniguamar*, hath his ſkyinne alſo of vyolet colour, and is whyte within. *Guaccaraca*, hath a whyte ſkyinne, and the ſubſtance of vyolet colour. There are many other which are not yet brought to vs. But I feare me leaſt in the reheatſall of theſe, I ſhal prouoke the ſpurrers of malicioſe perſons ageynt me which wyll ſcorne theſe owr doinges for that we haue wryten of many ſchamale things to a prince occupied in fuche weyghty affayres, as vnto yowre holynes vpon whose ſhulders reſteſt the burthen of the hole Christian worlde. But I wolde alſo of theſe malicioſe enuyers of other mens trauayles, whether Plinie and ſuch other famous wryters, when they dyrected and dedicated theſe things to kynges and princes, intended only to profyte them to whom they confeſcated the frute of theyr knowleage. They fumtymes intermyxt famous thynges with obſcuere thynges, lyght with heauie, and greate with ſmaule, that by the foortheraunce of princes, theyr vniuerſal posterite myght enioye the fruitiſh of the knowleage of thynges. At other tymes alſo, beinge intent about particular thinges, and defyrouſ of newe thynges, they occupied them ſelues in the ſearchinge of particulaſ tractes and coaſtes, with fuche thynges as nature brought forth in the fame, by thiſ means to coome the better to more absolute and vniuerſal knowleage. Let theym therefore contemne owr doinge: And wee wyll laugh to ſcorne, not theyr ignorauice and floſthulnes, but pernicioſ curioufnes: And therewith hauyng pitie of theyr forwardis diſpoſitions, wyll commit theim to the venomous ſerpentes of whom enuie tooke his fyrfte originall. It ſhall in the meane tyme abundantly conteyne that theſe thynges do please yowre holynes: And that yowe doo not diſpife owr ſimple veftures wherwith we haue only weaſed togither and not adourned, gathered and not deſcribed ſuch maruelous thynges in the garnyſhyng wherof, nature hath ſufficiently ſhewed her cunnyng. Owr deſyre is none other but herein for yowre fake to doo owr endeouour that theſe thynges maye not periyſhe. Let every man take hereof what lyketh hym best. Of the ſheepe or bullocke ſoulde in the market, nothyng remayneth in the euenyng, bycaufe the ſhulder pleafeſth one, the legge an other, and the necke an other. Ye, ſume haue moſt phantafie to the bowels, and ſume to the feete. Thus hauyng enough wandered, lette vs returne to owr purpoſe and declare with what woordes they ſalute the kynges chylđren when they are fyrfte borne: or howe they apply the begynnyng of theyr lyues to the end: And why their kynges are cauled by many names. Therfore when the kyng hath a ſonne borne, ſuch as dwel neare about his pallaice or vyllage, repayre to the queenes chamber, where

The kyndes of
frutes wherwith
theſe inhabitantes
lyued fyrf.

Necessarie the
moother of all
artes.

136
The fine breade
Cazabbi, made
of the rootes of
Iucca.
Howe *Ceres* fyrf
founde wheate and
barly in Egyp̄e.

The rootes of ages

The autours
excuse.

Plinie.

By what names
they salute the
kynges chyldren
when they are
born.
The names and
titles of the
Romane
Emperours.

137

Howe they make
theyr testamente

So dyd great[
] Alexander

The kynges wyues
and concubines
are buryed with
hem.

They burie theyr
icewels with them.
A dreame of an
other lyfe after
this.
Where it rayneth
but seldome.

Where it rayneth
much.

Variable motions
of the elementes.
The colonies and
vylages which the
Spanyarde haue
byuylded

The other Ilandes
about hispaniola.

The Ilande
Arethusa.

A spryng
running vnder the
sea frome
hispaniola to
Arethusa.

The Ilande of
Sancti Iohannis.

The Ilande of
Cuba.

one faluteth the newe borne chyld with one name, and an other with an other name. God saue the thowe shyninge lampe sayth one: An other cauleth him bryght and cleare. Sume name him the victourer of his enemies: and other sume, the puissaunt conquerour descended of bludde roiall, and bryghter then gold, with dyuers other suche vayne names. Therfore lyke as every of the Romane emperours was cauled *Adiabenicus*, *Parthicus*, *Armenicus*, *Dacius*, *Gothicus*, and *Germanicus*, accordyng to the titles of their parentes and auncestours, even so by th[e] imposition of names inuented by other kynges, *Beuchicus Anaca[u]choa* the lord of the region of *Xaragua* (of whome and of the wyse woman *Anachaona* his fylter, we haue spoken largely in the fyrsle Decade) was cauled by all these names folowynge: *Tureigua Hobin*: whiche is as muche to saye, as, a kyng shyninge as bryght as laton. *Starei*, that is, bryghte: *Huiho*, hughnesse: *Duiheynequen*, a ryche fludde. With all these names and more then fortye other suche, dooeth kyng *Beuchius* magnifye hym selfe as often as he comandauneth any thyng to bee doone or causeth any proclamation to bee made in his name. If the cryer by neglygence leauie owte any of these names, the king thynketh it to founde greatly to his contumely and reproche. The lyke is also of other. Howe sondely they vfe them selues in makyng their testamente, we wyll nowe declare. They leauie th[e] inheritaunce of their kyngedomes to the[e]eldest sonnes of their eldest fylters. If shee sayle, to the[e]eldest of the seconde fylter and so of the thirde if the secound also faile. For they are owte of doubt that those children coome of their bludde. But the children of their owne wyues, they counte to bee not legitimate. If there remayne none of their fylters children, they leauie th[e] inheritance to their brootheros. And if they faile, it descendeth to their owne sonnes. Laste of all, if al these faile, they assygne it to the woorthiest, as to hym that is of greatest power in all the Ilande, that he may defende their subiectes from their auncient enemyes. They take as many wyues as them lyfeth. They suffer the best beloued of the kynges wyues, and concubynes to bee buryed with hym. *Anachaona* the fylter of *Beuchius* the kyng of *Xaragua*, being a woman of suche wisedome and cunnynghe that in makyng of rhymes and balettes free was counted a propheticke emonge the beste, comandaund, that emonge all the wyues and concubynes of the kinge her brother, the fayrerest (whose name was *Guanahattabenechina*) shulde be buried alyue with him, and two of her wayting maydes with her. Shee woolde also haue appointed dyuers other to that offyce, if shee had not byn otherwise perfwaded by the prayers of certeyne fryers of fainte Fraunces order whiche chaunced then to bee presente. They saye that this *Guanahattabenechina* had none in all the Iland comparable to her in bewtie. She buried with her all her iewelles and twentie of her best ornamente. Their custome is, to place byfyde ebery of them in their sepultures, a cuppe full of water and a portion of the fyne breade of *Cazabbi*. In *Xaragua*, the regyon of this kyng *Beuchius*, and in *Hasua*, parte of the regyon of *Caiabo*, also in the sayre vale of salte and frefhe lakes, and lykewife in the region of *Yaguino* in the prouynce of *Bainoa*, it rayneth but seldome. In al these regyons are fosses or trenches made of oulde tyme, wherby they conueye the waters in order to water their fyldes, with no leste arte then doo th[e]inhabitours of newe Carthage, and of the kyngedome of *Murcien* in *Spartaria* for the feldome faule of rayne. The region of *Maguana*, deuydeth the prouynce of *Bainoa* from *Caiabo*, and *Zauana* from *Guaccaiarima*. In the deepe vales, they are troubled with raine more often then nedeth. Also the confynes of the chiefe citie named fainte Dominike are moister then is necessary. In other places, it rayneth moderately. There are therfore in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, dyuers and variable motions of the elementes, as we reade the lyke of manye other regions. Of their colonies or mantions which the Spaniardes haue erected in this Ilande we haue spoken suffycientely befor. They haue fence that tyme buylded these vylages: *Portus Plate*, *Portus Regalis*, *Lares*, *Villanova*, *Azuam*, and *Saluaterra*. Hauyng sayde thus muche of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* the moother and ladye of the other Ilandes, and as it were *Tethys* the moste bewtifully wyfe of *Neptunus* the god of the sea, let vs nowe entreate sumwhat of her Nympthes and faire *Nereides* whiche waite vpon her and adourne her on every syde. Wee wyll therfore begynne at the nearest cauled the newe *Arethusa*, foo named of the fontayne *Arethusa* in the Ilande of Sicilie. This is famous by reson of a spryng: but otherwyse vnprofytale. Owrre mea named it of late, *Duas Arbores*, bycause it hath onlyne two trees groyng in it: nere vnto the whiche is a fountayne that commeth from the Ilande of *Hispaniola* throughe the fecrete passages of the earth vnder the sea, and breaketh foorth in this Ilande, as the ryuer *Alpheus* in *Achaea* runneth vnder the sea from the citie of *Elide*, and breaketh foorth in the Ilande of Sicilie in the fontayne *Arethusa*. That the fountayne of this newe *Arethusa* hath his original from the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, it is manifest hereby, that the water issnewyng owte of the fountayne, bryngeth with it the leaues of many trees whiche growe in *Hispaniola*, and not in this Ilande. They saye that the fountayne hath his original from the ryuer *Yamiroa* in the region of *Guaccaiarima* confynynge with the land of *Zauana*. This Ilande is not paste a myle in circuite, and commodious for fyfher men. Directly towarde the Easte (as it were the porter keypynge the enterie to *Tethys*) lyeth the Ilande of *Santi Iohannis* (otherwyse cauled *Burichena*) wherof wee haue spoken largely before. This aboundeth with golde: and in fruitefull foile, is equall with her mother *Hispaniola*. In this are many colonies or mansions of Spaniardes, whiche applie them selues to gatherynge of golde. Towarde the west on the Northe syde, great *Cuba* (for the longenesse therof, longe

supposed to be the continent or fyrmē lande) wardeth owre *Tithys* on the backe halfe. This is muche longer then *Hispaniola*: And from the Easte to the Weste, is diuyded in the myddest with the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancri*. *Hispaniola* and the other lyinge on the South syde of this, are included almost in the mydde space betwene the fayde Tropyke and the Equinoctiall lyne, whiche many of the oulde writers supposed to bee vnhabitable and desert by reason of the feruent heate of the soonne in that clyme as they conjectured. But they were deceaued in their opinion They affyrme that rycher golde mynes are founde in *Cuba* then in *Hispaniola*. They faye also that euen nowe while I wryte these thynges, there is golde gathered together ready to the meltynge, amountyng to the quantitie of a hundredth and foure score thousande Castellans of gold, an argument surely of great rycheffe. *Jamaica* is more towarde the Southe then these: And is a pleasaunte and fruitlefull Ilande, of foyle apte for corne, grasses, and settes, it confygleth of onely one mountayne. Th[e]jnhabitauntes are warrelyke men and of good wytte. *Colonus* compared it to Sicilie in bygnesse. They whiche of late searched it more exactlye, faye that it is sumwhat lesse: but not muche. It is thought to be without gold and precious stoones, as the like was supposed of *Cuba* at the begynnynge. The Ilande of *Guadalupea* (fyrfte named *Caraqueira*) lyinge on the Southe syde of *Hispaniola*, is foure degrees nearer the Equinoctiall. It is eaten and indented with two goulfes (as wee reade of great Britanye nowe cauled Engelande, and Caledonia nowe cauled Scotlande) beinge in maner two Ilandes. It hath famous portes. In this they founde that gumme whiche the Apothecaries caule *Anima Album*, whose fume is holome ageynst reumes and heauynesse of the heade. The tree whiche engendereth this gumme, beareth a fruite muche lyke to a date, beinge a spanne in length. When it is opened, it seemeth to conteyne a certayne sweete meale. As owre hufbande men are accustomed to refreue chestenuttes and fuche other harde frutes all the wynter, so do they the dates of this tree, beyng muche lyke vnto a fygge tree. They founde also in this Ilande, Pyne trees of the beste kynde, and fuche other deyntie dysfhes of nature, wherof we haue spoken largely before. Ye, they thyncke that th[e]jnhabitauntes of other Ilandes, had their feedes of soo many pleasaunte frutes from hense. For the Canibales beinge a wylde and wanderynge people, and ouer runnyng all the countreys aboue them to hunte for mannes fleshe, were accustomed to brynges home with them what so euer they founde straunge or profitable in any place. They are intractable, and wyll admyte no straungiers. It shall therfore bee needfull to ouercoome them with great poure. For as well the women as men, are experte archiers, and vfe to inueneme their arrowes. When the men go foortie of the lande a man huntynge, the women manfully defende their coastes ageynst fuche as attempte to inuade the same. And hereby I suppose it was thought that there were Ilandes in the Ocean, inhabited onely with women, as *Colonus* the admirall hym selfe perswaded me, as I haue fayde in the fyrfte decade. This Ilande hath also frutefull mountayne and playnes, and notable ryuers. It nourysith honye in trees, and in the caues of rockes, as in *Palma* one of the Ilandes of *Canarie*, honye is gathered emong the briers and bramble buffishes. Aboue. xviii. myles Eastward from this Iland, lieth an Iland which our men named *Desiderata*, beyng. xx. myles in circuite and verye fayre. Also aboue ten myles from *Guadalupea* towarde the Southe, lyeth the Ilande of *Galanta*, beyng thirtie myles in circuite and playne. It was so named for the neatenesse and bewtifulnes therof. Nyne myles distant from *Guadalupea* toward the East, there are fyxe smaule Ilandes named *Todos Santos* or *Barbata*. These are full of rockes and barren: Yet necessarie to bee knownen to fuche as vfe to trauayle the feas of these coastes. Ageyne, from *Guadalupea*. xxxv. myles towarde the Northe, there is an Ilande named *Monferratus*, conteynynge in circuite fortye myles, hauyng also in it a mountayne of notable heught. The Ilande named *Antiqua*, distante from *Guadalupea* thirtie myles, is aboue fortye myles in circuite. *Diegus Colonus* the foonne and heire of *Christopher Colonus*, tould me that his wyfe (whome he leste in the Ilande of *Hispaniola* at his comming into Spaine to the courte) did write vnto hym, that of late emonge the Ilandes of the Canibales, there is one founde whiche aboundeth with golde. On the leste syde of *Hispaniola* towarde the Southe, neare vnto the hauen *Beata*, there lyeth an Ilande named *Portus Bellus*. They tell maruelous thynges of the monsters of the sea aboue this Ilande, and especially of the tortoyes. For they faye that they are bygger then greate rounde targettes. At fuche tyme as the heate of nature moueth theym too generation, they coome foortie of the sea: And makyng a deepe pytte in the fande, they laye three or four hundredth eggs therin. When they haue thus empited their bagge of conception, they putte as muche of the fande ageyne into the pytte, as maye suffyc to couer the eggs: And so reforte ageyne to the sea, nothyng carefull of their successyon. At the daye appoynted of nature to the procreation of these beastes, there creapeth owt a multitude of tortoyes, as it were pyflemares swarmynge owt of an ante hyll: And this onely by the heate of the soonne withoute any helpe of their parents. They faye that their eggs are in maner as bygge as geese eggs. They also coompare the fleshe of these tortoyes, to be equall with veale in taste. There are befide thefe, innumerable Ilandes the whiche they haue not yet searched: nor yet is it greatly necessarie to fyste this meale so fynely. It maye suffyc to vnderstand that there are large landes and many regyons whiche shal hereafter receaue owre nations, tonges, and maners: and therwith embrase owre relygion. The Troyans dydide not fodenly replenyfhe Asia, the Tyrians Libia, nor the Greekes and Phoenices Spayne.

Habitable regions
under the
Equinoctiall.

The ryche golde
mynes of Cuba.

The Iland of
Jamaica.

The Iland of
Guadalupea.

England and
Scotland.
The gunne
cauled *Anime*
album.
Dates.

Pine trees.

The Canibales.

Wherby it was
thought that there
were Ilandes of
women.

Hony in trees
and rockes.

The Ilande
desiderata.
The Ilande
Galanta.
The Ilandes of
Todos Santos or
Barbata.
The Ilande
monserratus.
139
The Ilande
Antiqua.

The Ilande
Portus Bellus.
Great Tortoyes.
The generation of
Tortoyes.

The eggs of
Tortoyes.

Innumerable
Ilandes.
Troians.
Tirians.
Greekes.
Phenitians.

The North
Ilandes.

The Ilandes
of the south sea.
The Iland of
pearles.

Wylde beasts
must be tamed
with the rod.

An expedition to
the Ilande of
Dites in the south
sea

The Iland of
Margarita.

Os Draconis.
Paria.

140

A conflict.

The kyng of the
Ilande of Dites
submitteith
himselfe.
The kynges
pallacie.

A hundredth and
ten pounds weight
of pearles.

As touchyng the Ilandes which lye on the north syde of *Hispaniola*, I haue let passe to speake. For albeit they are commodious for tyllage and fysshynge, yet are they leste of the Spanyardes as poore and of smaile value. We wyl nowe therefore take owre leue of this owlde *Tethis* with her moyst and watery Nymphes: And receaue to owre newe acquaintance the bewetfull ladye of the South sea rychely crowned with great pearls, the Ilande of *Dites* beinge ryche both in name and in treasure. In my epistell booke whiche I sente vnto yowre holynes this last yearre, I declared howe *Vaschus Nunnes Balboa* the capitayne of them whiche passed ouer the daungerous mountaynes towarde the South sea, learned by report that in the prospect of those coaftes there laye an Ilande aboundinge with pearls of the greatest forte: And that the kyng therof was ryche and of great power, infestynge with warres the other kynges his bortherers, and especially *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus*. We declared further howe at that tyme it was lefte vntouched by reaon of the ragyng tempestes whiche troubled that South sea three moonethes in the yearre. But it is nowe better knownen to owre men, who haue nowe also brought that fierce kyng to humanite: and conuerted hym from a cruell tyger to one of the meeke sheepe of Christes flocke sanctifyed with the water of baptisme with all his famelie and kyngedome. It shall not therefore bee from owre purpose to declare by the gouernaunce of what capitaines or by what meanes these thynges were so happily atchyued.

THE TENTH BOOKE OF THE THYRDE DECADE.



To the arryall of *Petrus Arias* the newe governour of *Dariena*, he gaue commaundement that one *Gafpar Moralis* shuld take in hande th[e]expedition to the Ilande of *Dites*. He therefore tooke his vyage syrly to *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus* kynges of the South, whom *Vaschus* beefore had concyled and left fryndes to the Christians. They frendely and magnifically enterteyned owr men who prepared them a nauie of the kynges boates to passe ouer into this Ilande, which they caule *Dites* and not *Margarita* or *Margaritea*, although it abounde with pearls which in the latin tongue are cauled *Margarita*. For the fyrt cauled an other by this name, which lyeth next to the mouth of *Os Draconis* in the region of *Paria*, in the which also is founde greate plentye of pearls. *Gafpar* brought with hym onely threescore armed men to the Ilande, for that he coulde conuey ouer no greater number by reaon of the smauenes and narownes of theyr boates or barkes which they caule *Culchas*, made of one hole piece of tymber as we haue fayde before. The kyng of the Ilande came foorth aginst them fiercely with cruell and threatenynge countenaunce, and with a great bande of armed men cryinge in maner of a laronne and in token of the battayle, *Guazzauara*, *Guazzauara*, which is as much to saye as, battayle ageynst the enemie: And as it ware a watch worde to giue th[e]onset, wherwith also they threwe theyr darteres. For they haue not th[e]use of bowes. They were so obstinate and desperat that they assayed owre men with fourre *Guazzauaras*, that is, battayles. At the length owre men with certeyne of *Chiapes* and *Tumacchus* men (being eoulde enemies to this kyng of the Ilande) gotte the vpper hande by reaon they assayed the kyng fodenly and vnwares. Yet was he determinyd to assemble a greater power, and once ageyne to attempt the fortune of warre, but that he was otherwyse perfwaded by the kinges his bortherers which counfayled him to gyue ouer and submyt hym selfe: sumtyme by th[e]exemplē of them selues and other threatenynge the destruction of his flooryshyne kyngedome: And otherwhyles declarynge vnto hym the humanite and gentelnes of owre men, by whose frendship he might obteyne honoure and quyvetes to hym and his: wyllyng hym furthermore to consider what chaunced vnto them which the yeare before refysted and aduentured the hafarde of the battayle as dyd thes kynges, *Poncha*, *Pochorrosa*, *Quarequa*, *Chiapes*, and *Tumacchus* with such other. By thes persuasions, the king submytted hym selfe and came freendly to owre men whom he conducted to his palacie which they say to be maruelously adourned and princelyke. As foone as they entered into the pallacie, he brought foorth a basket of curious woorkemanshyp and full of pearls which he gaue them. The summe of thes pearls amounted to the weyght of a hundredth and ten poundes after viii. vnces to the pounde. Beinge ageyne rewarded of owre men with such tryfles as they brought with them of purpoſe, as garlandes of Christall and glasse and other counterfet stones of dyuers colours, with looking glasses also and laton belles, and especially two or three Iren hatchets (which they more esteeme then great heapeſ of gold) he thought hym selfe abundantly recompensed. They laughe owre men to scorne that they wyl departe with ſo great and neceſſarie a thyng for any summe of golde: affirmyng an axe or hatchet to bee profitable for manye viſes of men: and that golde ferueth onely for wanton pleauers, and not to be greatly neceſſary. Beyng therefore ioyfull and gladde of the frendeshippe of owre men, he tooke the capitaine by the hand and brought

him with certeine of his familiars to the highest towre of his palacie, from whence they myght prospecte the mayne sea. Then castynge his eyes about hym on every side, and lookyng toward the Easte, he sayde vnto them. Beholde here lyeth open before yow the infynite sea extended beyond the foonne beames. Then tourning hym toward the Southe and Weste, he sygnyfied vnto them that the lande which laye before their eyes, the topes of whose great montaynes they myght see, was excedyng large. Then coommyng sumwhat nearer, he sayde: Beholde these Ilandes on the ryght hande and on the leste, whiche all obeye vnto owre empyre, and are ryche, happye, and bleffed, if yowe caule those landes blessed whiche abounde with golde and perle[s]. Wee haue in this Ilande lytle plentie of golde: But the deepe places of all the feas aboue these Ilandes, are full of perles: wherof yowe shall receave of me as many as yow wylly requyre, so that ye perfyte in the bonde of frendeshyppe whiche yowe haue begunne. I greatly defyre yowre frendeshyppe, and wooldie gladly haue the frument of yowre thynges, whiche I sette muche more by then myllyons of perles. Yowe shall therfore haue no caufe to doube of any vnsaythfulnesse or breache of frendeshyppe on my behalfe. Owre men gaue hym lyke frendly woordes: and encouraged hym with mary fayre promyfies to doo as he had sayde. When owre men were nowe in a redynesse to departe, they couenaunted with hym to paye yearely to the grete kyng of Castyle a hundred pouarde weyghte of perles. He gladly agreed to their request, and tooke it for no great thyng: nor yet thought hym selfe any whitte the more to become tributarie. With this kyng they founde suche plentie of hertes and connies, that owre men stondyng in their houses myght kyll as manye as them lyfe with their arrowes. They lyue haire verye plefauntly, hauyng greate plentie of al thynges neccesary. This Ilande is scarfely fyxe degrees distant from the Equinoctiall lyne. They haue the same maner of breading made of rootes and the graine of *Maisium*, and wyne made of seedes and frutes, even as they haue in the region of *Comogra* and in other places awfull in the fyme lande. This kyng is nowe baptisched with all his familie and subiectes. His defyre was at his baptisme, to bee named *Petrus Arias* after the name of the governour. When owre men departed, he accompanid them to the sea syde and furnysshed them with boates to retorne to the continent. Owre men diuidid the perles emonge them, referyng the fyfe portion to be delyuered to th[e]offycers of the kynges Excheker in those partes. They saye that these perles were maruelous precious, faire, oriente, and excedyngly bygge: In so muche that they broughte manye with them bygger then haefell nuttes. Of what price and value they myghte bee, I confydere by one perle the which *Paulus* predicesour to yowre holines, bowght at the second hande of a merchant of Venece for fourre and forty thousande ducates. Yet emonge those whiche were brought from this Ilande, there was one bought even in *Dariena* for a thoufande and two hundred Castelans of golde. This was almost as bygge as a meane walnutte: And came at the length to the handes of *Petrus Arias* the governour, who gaue it to that nobble and faithefull woman his wyfe, of whose maner of departure with her hufbande, wee haue made mention before. Wee muste then needes thinke that this was verye precious which was bowght so deare emonge suche a multitude of perles where they were not bought by one at once, but by poundes and at the least by ounces. It is also to be thought that the Venecian marchaunte boughte his for no great sum of mony in the East parts. But he shuld it the dearer for that he chaunced to lyue in those lasciuious and wanton dayes when men were gyuen to sufe nyfe and superfluous pleasures, and mette with a marchaunt for his purpos. But lette vs nowe speake sumwhat of the shelfysshes in the whiche perles are engendered. It is not vnknown to yowre holynesse, that Aristotell, and Plinie his folower, were of dyuers opinions as concernyng the generation of perles. But these Indians and owre men, rest only in one assertion, not assynting to them in any other: as eyther that they wander in the sea, or that they moue at anye tyme after they are borne. They wyll therfore that there bee certayne greene places as it were medowes in the bottome of the sea, bryngyng forth an herbe muche lyke vnto thyme, and affyrme that they haue seene the same: And that they are engendered, norysshed, and growe therin, as wee see th[e]increase and succession of oysters to growe aboue them selues. Also that these fysshes delyteth not in the conuersation or coompanye of the sea dogges: Nor yet to bee contented with onely one, two, or three, or at the mooste foure perleas: Affyrmyng that in the fysshynge places of the kyng of this Ilande, there was founde a hundred perleas in one fysh, the whiche *Gafpar Moralis* the capitayne hym selfe, and his compaunions, diligently numbered. For it pleased the kyng at their beyng there and in their prefence, to commaund his diuers to go a fysshynge for thoſe kynde of fysshes. They compare the matrices of these fysshes, to the places of conception in hennes, in the whiche their egges are engendered in great multitudes and clustres: And beleue that theſe fysshes brynge forth their byrth in lyke maner. For the better profe wherof, they saye that they founde certaine perles coommyng foorth of their matreces, as beyng nowe coome to the tyme of their full rypenesse, and moued by nature to coome owte of their mootheres wombe openyng it felfe in tyme conuenient. Lykewife that within a while after, they sawe other succede in lyke maner. So that to conclude, they sawe sum comynge foorth, and other summe yet abydinge the tyme of their perfection: whiche beyng complete, they also became loofe and opened the matrice. They perceaved the perles to bee incloſed in the myddef of their bellies, there to be norifshed and increase as an infante suckyng his mootheres pappes within her wombe,

The kynges
woorries.

Ilandes rych in
golde and perles.

C. [hundred]
pounde weyght of
perles yearly for
a tribute.
Plentie of hertes
and connies.

141
Wyne of frutes
and sedes
The kyng is
baptisched.

The fyfe part of
perles due to the
kyng.
Byg perles.

A perle for a pope.

An other perle of
great price.

Nise and
superfluous
pleasures.

Dyuers opinions of
the generation of
pearles.

Herbes in the
bottome of the sea.

A hundred perles
in one shel fysh.

The matrice of the
perle fysh.

The byrth of
perles.

142

Where the
biggest, meane,
and least perles
are engendred

Sea crabbes

The sea muscles
wherin perles are
engendred.

The regions of the
East syde of the
goulfe of Vraba.

The region of
Caribana.
The original of
the Canibales.

The vylages of
Caribana.

Manhunters.

143

Booke.
Loke in the
begynnyng of the
booke of the landes
lately founde.

before hee mowe to coome foorth of her priuye places. And if it chaunce any of these shellyfshes to be founde scattered in the fande of the sea (as I my selfe haue feene oysters disparsched on the shores in diuers places of the Ocean) they affyrmē that they haue byn violently dryuen thither from the bottome of the sea by force of tempestes, and not to haue wandered thither of them selues. But, that they becomme white by the clearenesse of the mornynge dewe, or waxe yellowe in troubled wether, or otherwyse that they feeme to reioyce in faire wether and cleare ayer, or contrary wyse to bee as it were astonisched and dymme in thunder and tempestes, with suche other, the perfecte knowledge hereof is not to bee looked for at the handes of these vnlearned men whiche handell the matter but grossly, and enquire no further then occasyon ferueth. Yet do they affyrmē by the experience and industrie of the dyuers, that the greatest perles lye in the deepest places, they of the meane forte hygher, and the least hyghest of all and nearer to the brymme of the water. And faye therfore that the greatest do not wander: but that they are created, nourysched, and increase in the deepest places of the sea, whether fewe, dyuers, and that but feddome dare aduenture to due so deepe to gather them, awel for feare of the sea crabbs whiche wander emonge these perle fyshes to feede of them, and for feare of other monstres of the sea, as also leste their brethe shuld fayle them into long remayninge in the water. And this they faye to bee the caufe why the owldest and therfore biggest sea muscles, inhabyte the deepest places from whence they are not lightly moued by tempestes. Furthermore, howe muche the bygger and oulder these fyshes are, they say that in their larger matrices, the greater number and bygger perles are founde: And that for this caufe, there are fewer founde of the byggest forte. They thyncke alfo, that when they fysole faule from their fyshes in the deepe places, they are devoured of other fyshes, bycause they are not yet harde. Ageyne, the smaulest differ from the byggest in a certayne swellynge or impostumation whiche the Spaniardes caule a tympane. For they denye that to be a pearle which in oulde mufcles cleaueth fast to the shel: But that it is a warte, whiche beyng rafed from the shell with a fyle, is rounde and bright but onely of one syde, and not precious, beyng rather of the nature of the fyse it selfe, then of a pearle. They confesse that they haue feene certayne of these mufcles cleauyng on rockes: Yet these but fewe, and nothyng woorthe. It is also to bee thought that the pearle fyshes or sea mufcles whiche are founde in India, Arabie, the redde sea, or Taprobana, are ruled in fuche order as the afore named famous autours haue written. For their opinion herein is not vtterl, to bee reected, forasmuche as they were learned men and trauayled longe in the ferynghe of these thynges. But wee haue nowe spoken sufficently of thes sea fyshes and of their egges which the fonde nyfenes and wantonnesse of men haue made dearer then the egges of hennes or geese. Lette vs therfore entreat sumwhat of other particuler thynges whiche are coome to oure knowledge of late. We haue elles where largely deseribed the mouthes of the goulfe of *Vraba*, with fundrye and variable regions diuided with the manyfolde goulfes of that sea. But as concerninge the West coastes in the whiche oure men haue buylded houses and planted their habitations on the bankes of *Dariena*, I haue no newe matter to write. Yet as touching the East partes of the goulfe, I haue learned as foloweth. They faye that the vnyuerfal lande of the East region of the goulfe from the corner therof farre reachyng into the sea, and from the extreme or vtter moſte mouthe of the same receauyng the waters of the sea whiche faule into it, even vnto *Os Draonis* and *Paria*, is by one generall name cauled *Caribana*, of the *Caribes* or *Canibales* whiche are founde in every regyon in this tracte. But from whence they had their particuler originall, and howe leauyng their natvie foyle, they haue spredde their generation so farre lyke a pestiferous contagion, we wyll nowe declare. Therfore from the fysole fronte reachyng forth into the sea (in whose tracte we said that *Fogea* fastened his foote) toward the corner, about nyne myles distant, there lyeth a vylage of *Caribana* named *Feneraca*. Three myles distant from this, is the vylage of *Vraba*, of the whiche it is thoughte that the hole goulfe tooke his name, bycause this vylage was once the heade of the kyngedome. Aboute fyxe myles from this, is *Feti*. Nyne myles from *Feti*, is *Zerema*: And about twelue myles from this, *Sorache*. Ovre men founde all thev vylages full of people, all the whiche gyue them selues onely to manhuntyng. In so mucie that if they lacke enemyes ageynst whom they maye keepe warre, they exerce crueltie ageynst them selues, and eyther fleye one the other, or elles dryue the vanquyfshed to flighe. Wherby it is apparaunt that by these their continuall warres, and dryuyng the one the other ouerte of their countreis, this infection hath gonre so farre not onelye on the fyrmre lande, but also into the Ilandes. I was also aduertised of an other thyng the whiche to my judgement, seemeth woorthy to bee putte in memorye.

One *Corrales* a iudge in caufes of lawe amoung the Spanyardes of *Dariena*, fayth that on a tyme walkyng abrode with his booke in his hande, he met by the waye with a fugituyue which had fledde from the great landes lyng farre toward the weste, and remayned here with a Kyng wyth whom he was enterteyned. When this man perceaued the lawier lookyng on his booke, maruelynge therat, he came runninge vnto him, and by interpretours of the kyng whome he serued, spake thus vnto him: Haue yowe also bookees wherin yowe may referue thynges in perpetual memorie? And letters wherby yowe maye declare yowre mynde to fuche as are absent? And herewith defyred that the booke might bee opened vnto hym, supposyng that he shulde therein haue founde the letters of his owne countrey. But when he sawe theim vnylike, he sayde further that in his

country there were cities fortified with waules and gouerned by lawes: and that the people also vised apparel. But of what religion they were, I dyd not learne. Yet had owre men knowleage both by the woordes and signes of this fugitiue, that they were circumcised. What nowe thinke yowe hereby (most holy father) Or what do yowe diuine may come hereof when tyme shall subdue al these vnder yowre throne? Let vs nowe entermyngle certeyne smaule thynges amoung these great matters. I haue not thought good to pretermitte that which chaunced to *Johannes Solisius*, who, to seache the South syde of the supposid continent, departed with three shippes from porte *Ioppa* (not farre distante from the Ilandes of *Gades* or *Cales* in the Ocean) the fourth day of the IDE of September in the yeare. M. D. xv. Or what successe *Johannes Pontius* had, whom the newe governour *Petrus Arias* appoynted to vanquish and destroy the Caribes or Canibales, deuouers of mans fleshe. Also to what ende the vyages of the other capitaynes came, whiche were sent foorth dyuers wayes at the same tyme: As *Gonzalus Badaicu*, *Franciscus Beerra*, and *Valleius*. *Johannes Solisius* tooke the matter in hande in an euyll hourre. He sayled beyonde the poynt of saynt Auguslne, (which they caule *Cabo. S. Augustini*) toward the South syde of the supposid continent beyonde the Equinoctial lyne. Fox (as we haue sayde before) that poynt reacheath Sout'warde to the feuenth degree of the South pole cauled the Antartike. He proceeded in that viage fyxe hundredre leagues: And founde the lande from the poynte to extende so farre towarde the South beyonde the Equinoctial, that he came to the thirtie degree of the South pole. As he sayled thus forwarde, hauyng nowe on his backe halfe the starres named *Caput Draconis*, (that is, the dragons heade) and the regions of *Paria* lyinge northwarde frome hym, and profectyng towarde the pole Artyke, he chaunced to faule into the handes of the fylthy Canibales. For these craftie foxes seemed to make signes of peace, when i. theyr mindes they conceaued a hope of a daintie banquet: And espynge their enemies a farre of, beganne to swalowe theyr spetle as their mouthes watered for greedines of theyr pray. As vnhappye *Solysius* descended with as many of his coompanie as coulde enter into the boate of the byggest shipppe, foodenly a great multytlude of th[e]jnhabitantes burste foorth vppon them, and slew them every man with clubbes, euen in the syght of theyr felowes. They caried away the boate, and in a moment broke it al to fytters. Not one man escaped. Theyr furye not thus satifisfed, they cutte the flayne men in pieces euen vppon the shore where theyr felowes might beholde this horrible spectacle from the sea. But they being stryken with feare through this exemple, durst not coome foorth of theyr shyppes, or diuide howe to reuenge the death of theyr Capitaine and coompanyon. They departed therefore from these vnfourtunat coastes: And by the waye ladynge theyr shippes with braefell returned home ageyne with losse and haueie chere. Of these thynges I was aduertysed of late by theyr owne letters. What they haue els doone, I shal haue more particular knowleage hereafter. *Johannes Pontius* was also repulfed by the Canibales in the Ilande of *Guadalupa* beinge one of the chiefe Ilandes of theyr habitacion. For when they fawre owre men a farre of on the sea, they ley in ambushe foodenly to inuade them when they shulde coome alande. Owre men sent foorth a fewe foote men and with them theyr laundrefies to wasshe theyr shertes and sheetes. For from the Ilande of *Ferrea* beinge one of the Ilandes of Canarie (euen vnto this Ilande, for the space of foure thousande and two hundred myles) they had seene no lande where they myght fynde any fresshe water: for as muche as in all this large space, the Ocean is without Ilandes. At theyr commynge therfore to lande, the Canibales assayled them, caried awaie the women, and put the men to suche distresse that fewe of them escaped. By reason wherof, *Pontius* being greatly discomfited, durste not inuade the Canibales, fearynge theyr venemed arrowes which these naked manhunters can direct most certeny. Thus good *Pontius* saylyng of his purpose, was fayne to gyue ouer the Canibales, whome (beinge safte and vnder the house rouse) he threatened to vanquyshe and destroy. Whether he went from thense, or what newe thynges he founde, I haue as yet no further knowleage. By these myssfortunes, *Solysius* lofte his lyfe; and *Pontius* his honour. Let vs nowe speake of an other whose enterpryse came to lyke purpose the same yeare. *Johannes Aiora* borne in the citie of *Corduba*, a man of noble parentage, sent in feade of the Lieuetenant (as we haue layde) more couetous of golde then carefull of his charge or desyrous of prayse for well deseruyng, fought occasions of querelynge agaynst the kynges and spoyled many, violently extortyng golde of them agaynst ryght and equitie: And further handeled them so extremely, that of frendes they became most cruel enemies: In so much that they ceased not with desperat myndes by all meanes they coulde to fley owre men openly or priuilye. By reason wherof it is cocme to passe, that where before they bartered quetyly exchanginge ware for ware, they are nowe fayne to doo all thynges by force of armes. When he had thus exacted a great quantitiue of golde of them (as it is sayd) he fledde priuile and tooke away a shyppe with him by stelth as the common rumoure goeth: Nor yet hethereto haue we hard whyster he went or where he is arryued. Sum suspect that *Petrus Arias* the governour shulde confente to his departure bycause this *Johannes Aiora* is brother to *Gonfalus Aiora* the kynges historiographer, a man booth lerned, and expert in the discipline of warre: and so much the governors fren, that these two amoung a fewe, may be counted exemplis of rare amitie. I my selfe also am greatly bounde vnto theym bothe and haue longe enioyed theyr frendesthippe. Yet shal I defyre them bothe to pardon me in declaryng my phantasie herein, that in all the turmoyles and tragical affayres of the Ocean,

Circumcised
people.

What chaunced to
the Capitaines
whiche the
gouvernour sent
dyuers wayes.
Looke decade iii.
liber. vi.

The vyage of
Johannes Solisius.
Cap. S. Augustini

John Solisius is
slaine of the
Canibales.
The fiercenes of
the Canibales.

Brasell.

Johannes Pontius
is repulsed by the
Canibales.

144

The vyage of
Johannes Aiora.
Looke decade iii.
liber. vi.

The lewde
behaviour of *Johannes Aiora*.

The variable
fortune
of Gonsalus
Badaocius.

Cerabaro. Decade.
iii. lii(b). iii

The South sea.

A league
conteyneth four
myles by sea and
but three by lande.
The golden region
of Coiba Dyles.

Sande myxte with
golde.

Howe theyr
slaves are marked
in the face.

145

Golde.

A fruteful region
left desolate by
ciuile discorde.

Kynge Periquete.

S. Michael.
Kynge Totonoga.

Six thousand
Castellans of
golde.

Kyng Taracuru.
viii. thousand
pesos of gold
Kynge Pananome

Kyng Tabor.
Kyng Cheuu.
iii. thousand
pesos of gold
Salite.
Kyng Anata.
xv. thousands
pesos of gold

Theyr maner of
warre.

nothyng hath so muche displeased me as the couetousnes of this man who hath so disturbed the pacified myndes of the kynges. Nowe einonge thefe troubelous chaunces, let vs rehearse the variable fortune of *Gonfalus Badaocius* and his felowes, whose prosperous begynnynges, ended with vnfourtunat successe. *Gonfalus* therfore in the moneth of May in the yeare of Christe M. D. xv. departed from *Dariena* with fourescore armed men, directyng his vyage towarde the Sonthe, and restyng in no place vntyl he came to the region of *Cerabaro* which owre men named *Gratia Dei*, distant from *Dariena* about a hundredth and fourescore myles: for they caule it threescore leagues. He spente certeyne dayes here in *Idelneffe*: for he coulder neyther by fayre meanes nor by soule, allure the kynges of the regyon to coome to hym. While he laye thus idelly, there came to hym other fystie men fente frome *Dariena* vnder the gouernaunce of captyayne *Lodouicus Mercado* who departed from *Dariena* in the calendas of Maye, to th[e] intent to search th[e]inner partes of thofe regyons. When they mette together, they determyned after consultation, to passe ouer the montaynes lyngye towarde the Southe, even vnto the Southe sea lateleye founde. Beholde nowe a wonderfull thynge: That in a lande of suche maruelous longitude in other places, they founde it here to bee only aboue fystie myles distant to the Southe sea: for they counte it. xvii. leagues, as the maner of the Spanyardes is to reken, and not by myles. Yet faye they that a league confyseth of three myles by lande and four by sea as wee haue noted before. In the topes of the mountaynes and turnynges of the waters, they founde a kyng named *Juana*, whose kyngdomme is also named *Coiba* as is the regyon of kyng *Careta*, of whome we haue made mention elles where. But for as muche as the regyon of this *Juana*, is rycher in golde, they named it *Cowu Dites*, that is, *Coiba* the ryche. For, wherouer they dygged the grounde, whether it were on the drye lande or in the weate chanelles of the ryuers, they founde the sande whiche they caste foorth, myxte with golde. *Juana* fledde at the commynge of owre men, and coulder never bee brought ageyne. They spoyled all the countrey neare aboutis his palayce. Yet had they but lytle golde: for hee had caryed all his stoffe with hym. Here they founde certeyne slaves marked in the faces after a straunge sorte. For with a sharpe prycke made ethir of bone, or elles with a thorne, they make holes in their faces: and foorthwith sprinkel[ing] a pouder theron, they moiste the pounched place with a certeyne blacke or redde iuife, whose substanciall[ity] is of suche tenacitie and clamminesse, that it wyll neuer ware awaye. They brought these slaves away with them. They faye that this iuife is of such shapnepesse and putteth them to suche payne, that for extreeme doloure they haue no stomacke to their meate certaine dayes after. The kynges whiche take these slaves in their wares, vfe their helpe in seekyng for golde and in tyllage of the grounde, even as do owre men. From the pallaice of *Juana*, folowyng the course of the water aboue tenne myles towarde the Southe, they entered into the dominion of an other kyng, whome owre men named the oulde man, bycause hee was oulde, not passyng of his other name. In the regyon of this kyng also, they founde golde in all places bothe on the lande and in the ryuers. This region is verye fayre and frutefull: and hath in it many famous ryuers. Departyng frome henfe, in fyue dayes iorneye they came to a lande lefte desolate. They suppose that this was defroyed by ciuile discorde for as muche as it is for the mooste parte frutefull, and yet not inhabited. The fyfth daye, they fawe two men commynge a farre of. Thefe were laden with breade of *Maizium*, whiche they caryed on their shulders in fackes. Owre men tooke them: and vnderfloode by them that there were two kynges in that tracte: The one was named *Periquete*, whoe dwelte neare vnto the sea. The others name was *Totonoga*. This *Totonoga*, was blynde and dwelte in the continent. The two men whiche they mette, were the fysshers of *Totonoga*, whome he had fente with certayne fardelles of fyfthe to *Periquete*, and had ageyne receaued breade of hym for exchaunge. For thus do they communicate their commodities one with an other by exchaunge, without th[e]use of wycked money. By the conductinge of these two men, they came to kyng *Totonoga* dwellynge on the Weste syde of sayncte Michaelles goulfe in the Southe sea. They had of this kyng, the sum of fyxe thoufande Castellans of golde bothe rude and artyscially wrought. Emonge those grommes of rude or natyue golde, there was one founde of the weyghe of two Castellans, whiche argued the plentiful rychenesse of the ground. Folowing the same coastes by the sea syde toward the West, they came to a kyng whose name was *Taracuru*, of whome they had golde amountyng to the weyghe of eight thousand *Pefos*. Wee haue sayde before that *Pefos* is the weyghe of a Castelan not coyned. From henfe they wente to the dominion of this kynges brother named *Pananome*, who fledde at their commynge, and appered no more afterwarde. They faye that his kyngdomme is ryche in golde. They spoyled his pallaice in his absence. Syxe leagues from henfe, they came to an other kyng named *Tabor*. From henfe they came to the kyng of *Cheru*. He frenely entertyned owre men, and gaue them four thousand *Pefos* of golde. He hathe in his dominion many goodly falte bayes: the region also aboundeth with golde. About twelue myles from henfe, they came to another kyng cauled *Anata*, of whome they had. xv. thoufande *Pefos* of golde whiche he had gotten of the kinges his brotherers whom he had vanquished by warre. A great part of this golde was in rude forme bycause it was molten when he set the kynges houses on fyer whom he spoyled. For they robbe and sley the one the other, sackyng and fyring their villages, and wastinge their countreys. They keepe warre barbarously and to vtter destruction, executing extreeme crueltie ageinst them that haue

the ouerthow. *Gonfalus Badaicius* with his felowes, wandered at lybertie vntyll they came to this kyng: And had gathered great heapes of gold of other kings. For, what in braflettes, collers, earinges, brefte plates, helmettes, and certeine barres wherwith women beare vppe their brestes, they had gathered together in gold the sum of sourescore thousande Caftellans, whiche they had obteyned partly by exchaunge for owre thinges where they founde the kinges their frendes, and otherwise by forceible meanes where they founde the contrary. They had gotten also forty flaues whose helpe they vfed both for cariage of their vitiales and bagages in the steade of moiles or other beastes of burden, and also to relieue suche as were sycke and forwerid by reasoun of their longe iorneys and hunger. After these prosperous viages, they came by the dominion of kyng *Scoria*, to the palaice of a kyng named *Pariza*: where (fearyng no such thing) *Pariza* enclosed them with a great armye, and assayled them straggelyng and vnwares, in suche forte that they had no leasure to put on their armure. He flewe and wounded about fyftie, and put the refydue to flight. They made suche hast, that they had no respect eyther to the gold they had gathered, or to their flaues: but lefte all behynde them. Those fewe that escaped, came to *Dariena*. The opinion of all wyse men as concernyng the varyable and inconstant chaunces of fortune in humane thinges, were false, if al things shuld haue happened vnto them prosperously. For such is the nature of this blynde goddesse, that she oftentimes delyteth in the ouerthowes of them whom she hath exalted: and taketh pleasure in confounding hygh thinges with lowe, and the contrary. Wee see this order to bee impermutable, that who so wyl applye hym selfe to gather rootes, shall sumtymes meete with sweete lyqueres, and other whiles with soure cockle. Yet wo vnto *Pariza*: for he shall not longe sleape in rest. The gouernour him selfe was of late determined with three hundredth and fyftie choise fouldiers to reuenge the death of owr men: But where as he by chaunce fell sycke, his poure went forward vnder the conducting of his Lieutenant *Gaspar Spinfa*, a Judge in caues of lawe in *Dariena*. At the same time other were sent foorth to the Ilande of *Dites* to exacte the portion of pearles lymited to the king for his tribute. What shal succede, tym will bring to owe knowleage. The other two, attempted th[e]inhabitantes beyonde the goulf, *Franciscus Bezerra* paifying ouer by the corner of the goulf and the mouthes of the ryuer of *Dabaiba*, with two other capitaines and a hundredth and fyftie fouldiers well appointed, went to make warre vppon the Canibales even in *Caribana* their owne chiefe dominion, toward the vllage of *Turufy*, wherof we haue made mention before in the comming of *Fogeda*. They brought also with them diuers engens of warre: as three pieces of ordinaunce whose shot were bygger then eggs: Likewise forty archers, and xxv. hagbutters to th[e]intent to reache the Caniballes a farre of, and to prevent their venemed arrowes. But what became of hym and his company, or where they erriued, we haue yet no parfecte knowleage. Certaine which came of late from *Dariena* to Spaine, reported that at their departure, they of *Dariena* stode in great feare least they also were tossed with sum misfortune. The other capitaine *Valleius*, obteyned the fore parte of the goulf. But he passed ouer by an other waye then dyd *Bezerra*. For he tooke the beginning of *Caribana*, and *Bezerra* the ende. *Valleius* returned ageine. But of the three score and ten men whiche he conueighed ouer with hym, hee lefte fortye and eyght slaine emonge the Canibales. These are the newes whiche they bringe that came laste from *Dariena*.

There came to me the day before the Ides of October in this yeare. M. D. xvi. *Rodericus Colmenares* (of whom we haue made mention before) and one *Franciscus Delapuente*. This *Franciscus*, was one of the vnder capitaines of this bande, whose chiefe capitaine was *Gonfalus Badaicius* who hardly escaped the handes of kyng *Pariza*. These two capitaines therfore, *Rodericus* and *Franciscus* who departed from *Dariena* immediatly after the misfortune whiche befell to *Badaicius* and his compayne, do both affirme, the one that he hath harde, the other that he hath seene, that in the Southe sea there are diuers Ilandes lying westwarde from the Iland of *Dites* and fainte Michaels goulf, in many of the which are trees engendred and nourisched which bring foorth the same aromaticall fruities, as doth the region of *Collocuta*. This lande of *Collocuta*, wirth the regions of *Cochinus* and *Camemorus*, are the chiefe marte places from whence the Portugales haue their splices. And hereby do they conjecture that the land where the fayfulness of spycy begynneth, shulde not be farre from thense. In so much that many of them whiche haue ouerrunne those coastes, do onely desyre that leauue may be graunted them to searche further, and that they wil of their owne charges frame and furnishe shippes and aduenture the viage to searche those Ilandes and regions. They think it best that these shippes shulde bee made and prepared, even in fainte Michaels goulf: And not to attempte this vyage by sainte Augustines point, which waye were both longe and diffyculte, and ful of a thoufande daungers, and is faide to reache beyond the forty degree of the pole Antartike. The same *Franciscus*, being partener of the trauailes and daungiers of *Gonfalus*, saith that in ouer runninge those landes, he founde great heardes of hartes and wylde bores: and that he toke many of them by an arte which th[e]inhabitantes taught him: whiche was to make pites or trenches in their walkes, and to couer the same with bouwes. By this meanes also they deceaue al other kindes of wild and soure footed beastes. But they take foules after the same maner that we do: As flocke dous with an other tame flocke dous brought vp in their houses. These they tie by a stringe, and suffer them to flye a lytle emong the trees. To

Fourscore
thousand
Castellans of
golde.

Kyng Scoria.
Kyng Paria.
Gonfalus Badaicius hath
the ouerthow and
is spoyled of great
ryches of golde.
146

The Inconstancie
of fortune.

The expedition of
Fraunces Bezerra
agaynst the
Canibales.

Gunnes.

Valeius repulsed
of the Canibales.

The Ilandes of the
south sea.
In this sea ly[el]
the Ilandes of
Moluccas, most
frutefull of splices.
Collocuta.
Cochinus and
Camemorus, from
whence the
Portugales haue
thei[r] splices.

He meaneith by
the streight of
Magellanis.

Howe they take
hartes and wylde
bores.
Stocke dous

147
Theyr maner of
foulyng.

Popingiayes are
easely taken.

A straunge kynde
of foulyng.

Fysshes and
wormes
engendered
of slime.
Foules.
Gourdes of the
tree.

Later opinions of
the swift course
of the Ocean
towards the West.

The contin:
firme land.

148

The vyages of
Diegus Colonus.

The vyage from
the new landes
Spayne.

the which as other birdes of their kind refort, they kil them with their arrowes. Otherwyfe they take them with nettes in a bare place pourged from trees and bushes: and scateryng certeyne feedes rounde about that place, in the myddeste whereof they tie a tame foule or byrd of the kynde of them whiche they defyre to take. In lyke maner do they take popingiayes and other foules. But they say that popingiayes are so simple, that a great multitude of them wyll flye euuen into the tree in whose bouwes the foulre sitteth: and swarne about the tame chatteringne popingiaye, sufferynge them felues to bee easely taken. For they are so without feare of the fyghe of the foulre, that they tary whyle he cast the snare about theyr neckes, the other beinge nothyng feared hereby, thoughte they see hym drawe them to him with the snare, and put them in the bagge which he hath about hym for the same purpose. There is an other kynde of foulyng, heretofore never harde of, and pleasaunt to confydere. We haue declared before howe that in certeyne of the Ilandes, and especially in *Hippaniola*, there are dyuers lakes or standynge poolles. In fume of these (beinge no deeper then men may wade ouer them) are feene great multytudes of water foules: as wel for that in the bottome of these lakes, there growe many herbes and weedes, as also that by reasoun of the heate of the sonne pearceinge to the naturall place of generation and corruption, where beinge doubled in force by reflexion and preferred by moyster, there are engendered of the flymynes of the earth and water, and by the prouidence of the vnuerfall creator, innumerable lyttle fysshes, with a thousande sundry kyndes of frogges, wormes, knattes, flies and such other. The foules whiche vse these lakes, are of dyuers kyndes: As duckes, geefe, swannes, seemewes, gullis, and such other. We haue sayde also that in theyr orchardens they norysfe a tree which beareth a kynde of greate gourdes. Of these gourdes therefore well stropped leaste any water shulde enter in at theyr ryfthes and caufe them to sinke, they cast many in the shalowe poolles: where, by theyr continual wanderynge and wauerynge with the motions of the wynde and water, they put the foules owte of suspcion and feare. The foulre in the meane tyme, disguyfinge hym selfe as it were with a visour, putteth a great gourde on his head much lyke to a helmet, with two holes neare about his eyes, his face and hole heade besyde beinge couered therwith. And thus entereth he into the poole euuen vnto the chynne. For beinge from theyr infancie excercised in swymmyng and accustomed to the waters, they refuse not to continue therein a longe space. The foules thynkyng this gourde to be one of the other that swymme vppon the water, the foulre goeth softly to the place wher he feeth the greatest flocke of foules: And with waggynge his heade, counterfectinge the mouing of the wauerynge gourdes, drawethe nere to the foules: where softely puttynge foorth his ryght hande, he foodenly shatcth one by the legges and plungeth her into the water where he putteth her into a bagge whiche he hath with hym of purpose. The other foules supposinge that this dyued into the water of her owne motion to feke for foode (as is their maner) are nothyng moued hereby, but go forwarde on their waye as before, vntyll they also faule into the same snare. I haue here for this caufe entered into the declaration of theyr maner of hunteynge and foulyng, that by these more pleasaunt narrations I may sumwhat mytigate and asswage the horrore conceaued in yowre stomake by the former rehersall of theyr bluddy actes and cruell maners. Lette vs nowe therfore speake sumwhat ageyne of the newe and later opinions as concernyng the swyfte course of the sea towarde the west about the coastes of *Paria*: also of the maner of gathering of golde in the golde myne of *Dariena*, as I was aduertised of late. And with these two quyet and peaceable thynges, we wyl make an ende of the tragical affayres of the Ocean: and therwith byd yowre holynes fare wel. So it is therfore, that *Andreas Moralis* the pylot, and *Ouidius* (of whom we haue made mention before) repayed to me, at my house in the towne of Matrike, As we met thus togyther, there arose a contention betwene them two, as concernyng this course of the Ocean. They both agree that these landes and regions perteynyng to the dominion of Cafile, doo with one continual tract and perpetuall bonde, embrase as one hole firme lande and continent al the mayne lande lyng on the north syde of *Cuba* and the other Ilandes, beinge also northwest both from *Cuba* and *Hippaniola*. Yet as touchyng the courfe of the water, they varie in opinion. For *Andreas*, wyl that this vyonel course of water bee receauen in the lappe of the supposid kontinent which bendeth so much and extendeth so farre towarde the North, as we haue said: And that by the obiect or resistance of the lande so bendyng and crookynge, the water shulde as it were rebounde in coompasse, and by force therof be dryuen about the north syde of *Cuba* and the other Ilandes excluded without the circle cauled *Tropicus Canri*, where the largenes of the sea maye receaue the waters faulyng frome the narwe stremes, and therby represte that inordinate course, by reasoun that the sea is there very large and great. I can compare his meanyng to nothyng more aptly then to the swyfte streame commyng foorth of a myle and faulyng into the myl poole. For in al suche places where waters runne with a vyonel faule through narwe chanelles, and are then receauen in large poolles, they are foodenly disparsched and theyr violence broken: So that wheras before they seemed of such force as to ouerthrowe all thynges beinge in theyr waye, it can not then be perceaued which way they runne. The Admiral him selfe *Diegus Colonus*, fume and heyre to *Chrisophorus Colonus* the fyrist fynder of these landes (who had nowe in commyng and goinge, fourty tymes passed through these feas) beinge demaunded of me what he founde or perceaued in faylyng too and fro, answere that there was mucche difficultie in returnyng the same waye by the which they go. But wheras they fyrist take the waye by the mayne

sea towarde the North before they directe theyr course to Spayne, he saythe that in that tract, he felte the shippes sumtymes a lytle dryuen backe by the contrary courfe of the water. Yet supposeth that this chaunceth onely by the ordinarie flowynge and reflowynge of the sea: And the same not to be enforced by the circumflection or course of the water reboundyng in compasse as we haue sayde. But thinketh rather, that this mayne lande or supposeth continent, shulde sumwher bee open: And that the fayde open place, shoulde bee as it were a gate, enterie, or streight, diuydying the North partes of that lande from the South: by the which alfo, the Ocean runnyng towarde the West, may by the rotation or impulsion of the heauens, bee dryuen about the hole earth. *Ouidius* agreeith with *Andreas Moralis* as touchyng the continual adherence and closenes of the fayde continente. Yet neyther that the waters shulde so beate ageynst the bendyngs backe of the West lande, or bee in suche forte repulfed and dryuen into the mayne sea. But saith that he hath diligently confydered, that the waters runne from the deepest and myddest of the maine sea, towarde the West. Also that saylings nere vnto the shore with fiaule vesailles, he founde the same waters to retorne ageine toward the East. So that in the same place, they runne together with contrary courfe, as we oftentimes see the lyke to chaunce in riuers wher by the obiecte of the bankes, diuers whirlepooles and turnynges aryse in the water. By reasoun wherof, if any chaffe, strawe, woodde, or any other thyng of lyght substance be caste in any suche places in ryuers, it foloweth that al such as runne with the water in the myddest of the chanell, procede well forwarde: But suche as faile into the bendyngs goulfes and indented margentes of the crooked bankes, are caryed ouerthwarte the chanell, and so wander about vnyll they meeet with the ful and directe courfe of the ryuer. Thus haue we made yowre partener of suche thinges as they haue gyuen vs, and writhen their dyuers opinions. We wyll then gyue more certeyne reasoun, when more certeyne truth shalbe knownen. We must in the meane tyme, leane to opinions vntil the day coome appoynted of god to reueale this fecrete of nature, with the perfecte knowleage of the pointe of the pole starre. Hauyng sayd thus muche of the course of the Ocean, a briefe declaration of the golde mynes of *Dariena*, shall cloze vppe owre Decades and make an ende of owre trauayles. We haue sayde, that nyne myles distante from *Dariena*, are the fydes of the hylles and the drye playnes in the whiche golde is gathered bothe on the drye lande, and also on the bankes and in the chanelles of ryuers. Therfore to al such as are wyllyng to gather golde, there is of ordinarie custome appoynted to every man by the furuoiers of the mynes, a square plotte of grounde conteyning twelve pases, at the arbitriment of the choofer, so that it bee not grounde already occupied, or leste of other. The portion of grounde beinge thus chosen (as it were assygned of the augures to buylde a temple) they inclose their flaues within the same, whose helpe the Christians vfe in tyllinge of their grounde and gatheryng of golde, as we haue saide. Thefe places appoynted vnto them, they keepe as longe as them lyste. And if they perceave tookens of lyttle golde, they requyre an other plotte of grounde of twelve pases to be assygned them, leauyng the first in commen. And this is the order which the Spaniardes inhabitinge *Dariena* obserue in gatheryng of golde. I suppose also that they vfe the lyke order in other places: How be it, I haue not yet enquired so farre. It hath byn proued that these twelve pases of grounde, haue yelded to their choofers, the summe of fourefore Caffellans of gold. And thus leade they theyr lyues in fulfyllinge the holy hunger of golde. But the more they fyll their handes with fyndyng, the more increafeth their couetous defyre. The more woodde is layde to the fyer, the more furioosly rageth the flame. Vnfaciable couetoufnesse is no more diminifhed with increase of rycheſte, then is the drincke of the dropiye satiffyed with drinke. I lette pasſe manye thynges wherof I intende to write more largely in tyme conuenient, if I shall in the meane feasoun vnderſtande theſe to be acceptable vnto yowre holynesse: my dewtie and obſeruaunce to whose autoritie, hath caused me the gladdier to take this labour in hande. The prouidence of the eternall creatour of all thynges, graunt yowre holynesse many prosperous yeares.

The contrary
course of waters.

The poynt of the
pole star.

The golde mynes
of Dariena, and
the maner of
gatheryng golde.

149
Owre incliners
would leue no
such comment.
Aurisacra Fancies

The dropisie of
couetousnes.



THE LASTE BOOKE OF PETER MARTYR OF ANGLERIA,
OF THE LANDES AND ILANDES LATELY FOUNDE:
AND OF THE MANERS OF THE INHABITAVNTES OF THE SAME.

Loke Decade iii.
Liber. x

Cities fortifyed
with waules.

The Iland of Cuba
or Fernandina.

The Spaniards of
Cuba attempt new
voyages.

The west angle of
Cuba.

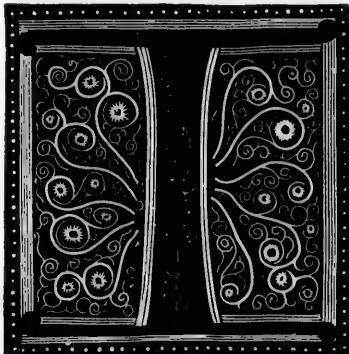
Note.

The Iland of
Iucatana.
A great citie well
buylded.
Temples.
Humane people.

150

Cunning
artificers.

Appareled people.



Haue partli declared before in mi decades how certeine fugitives which came owt of the large West landes arriuied in the confynes of *Dariena*: And howe that marueylinge at the booke of owe men, they declared that they sumtyme dwelte in regions whose inhabitauntes vfed fuche instrumentes and were ruled by politike lawes. Also that they had cities fortified with waules, and faire palaces with streates well paued, and common places whyther marchauntes refort as to the burfe or streate. These landes, owe men haue nowe founde. Therfore who were th[e]autours hereof, or what successe they had herein, who so desirereth to know with the conditions of straunge regions and the maners of the people, let hym glie diligent attendance to such thynges as folowe. Of the Iland of *Cuba* (nowe cauled *Fernandina*, lyngne nexte vnto *Hispaniola* on the weft syde, and yet sumwhat so bendynghe towarde the Northe that the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancri* deuideth it in the myddefte, wher as *Hispaniola* is distante from the Tropike and declinyng certen degrees toward the Equinoctial line) we haue spoken sumwhat before. In this Iland of *Fernandina*, there are nowe syxe townes erected. Wheroft, the chiefe is named *Sanctiago* of saynt Iames the patronne of the Spanyardes. In this, there is natuie golde, found both in the mountaynes and ryuers: By reason wheroft they are daylye occupied in gathering and digging the same. But shortly after that I had finished my sayde bookes, thre Spanyardes that were the most auncient citizens of *Cuba*, as *Franciscus Fernandes* of *Corduba*, *Lupus Ocho*, and *Christophorus Morantes*, determined to seeke newe landes, as the myndes of the Spanyardes are euer vnquiet and geuen to attempte great enterprises. They furnyshed at their owne charges, three of thosse shippes whiche they caule Carauels. And hauynghe fyrsle licence of *Diegus Velasquen* the gouernour of the Ilande, they departed with a hundredth and ten men from the West angle of *Cuba*. For this angle is mooste commodious to relieu shippes and to make prouision for freshe water and fuel. Thus they sayled continually fyxe dayes and a halfe, betwene the West and the South, contented onely with the syght of the heauen and the water: durynge whiche tyme, they suppose that they sayled not past threescore and fyxe myles. For they ley at anker all nyght where so euer the faulynge of the foone tooke the day light from them, leaste by wanderyng in vnknown seas, they myght chaunce to be cast vppon rockes or sandes. But at the length they chaunced vppon a great Ilande named *Iucatana*, whose beginnyng th[e]inhabitauntes caule *Eccampi*. Owe men went to the citie stondynghe on the sea syde, the whiche for the bygnes therof, they named *Cayrus* or *Alcair*. Th[e]inhabitauntes enterteined them very frendry. When they were entered into the citie, they marueyled to behold the houfes buylded lyke towres, magnifycall temples, streates well paued, and great exercize of byng and sellyng by exchaunge of ware for ware. Their houfes are eyther bylte of stome, or of bricke and lyme, and artifcially wrought. To the fyrsle porches of their houfes and fyrs habitationes, they ascend by ten or twelve stearnes. They are couered eyther with tyles, flates, reades, or stalkes of certeyne herbes. They gratified the one the other with mutuall gyftes. The barbarians gaue owe men many brooches and iewelles of golde, verye fayre and of cunnyngh woorkmanshyppe. Owe men recompenfed them with vestures of fylke and woolle, counterfete stomes, of coloured glasse and chritall, haukes belles of laton, and fuche other rewardes whiche they greatly esteemed for the straungenes of the same. They sette nowght by lookynghe glasses, bycause they haue certeyne stooones muche brighter. This nation is appareled after a thousandde fasfhions with vestures made of goffampyne cotton or bombage of dyuers coloures. The women are couered from the girdle to the heele hauynghe dyuers fasfhions of vayles aboute their heade and brestes, with great cautel least any parte of their legges or feete bee seene. They reforfe muche

to their temples: vnto the which the chiefe rulers haue the wayes paued from their owne houes. They are Idolatours and circumcised. They occupie their maner of exchaunginge, with mucche fydelitie. They vse to adourne the heares of their heads. Being demanded by th[e]interpretors of whom they receaued their circumcifyon, they answered that there once passed an excedyng fayre man by their costles, who leste them that in tooken to remember hym. Other faye that a manne brighter then the foone, went emonge them and executed that offyce. But there is no certentie hereof. When owre men had remayned there certeyne dayes, they seemed to bee moleftous to th[e]inhabitantes accordyng to the common sayinge. The longer a geſte tarieth, the woorſe is his enterteynement. The whiche thyngowe men perceauyng, they made the more haſt awaie. Beynge therfore prouided of all thynges necessary, they tooke their vyage direcely towarde the west by the prouince whiche th[e]inhabitantes caule *Comi* and *Maiam*. They ouer paſſed theſe regions takyng onely freſhe water and fuel in the fame. The barbarians both men, women, and children flocked to the ſea fyde, aftonyſhed greatly to behold the huge bygnyſſe of the ſhippes. Owre men marueyled in maner no leſſe to viewe their buyldyngeſ and eſpecially their temples ſytuate neare vnto the ſea, and erected after the maner of towers. Thus at the length hauyng fayled about a hundredth and ten myles, they thought it good to ley anker in a prouince named *Campachium*, whiche chiefe towne conſyleth of three thoufande houes. Th[e]inhabitantes came ſwymmyng to the ſhippes: marueylyng excedyngly at the maner of ſaylinge, and at the ſayles and other tackelyngeſ. But when they hard the thunder of the gunnes, ſaw the ſmoke, and ſmelte the fauour of brimſtone and fyre, they ſuppoſed that thundreboultes and lyghtyngeſ had byn ſente from god. The kyng receaued owre men honorably and broughte them into his pallacie: where he feasted them well after his maner. They are accuſtomed to eate fleſhe, and haue great plentie of beaſtes and foules: as peacockes, and other whiche they francke and feede in their houes: Alſo dyuers kyndes of wylde foulſ of the mountaineſ, wooddeſ, and waters: Likewiſe partriches, quailes, turtle dooues, duckes, and geefe. Of beaſtes, they haue connies, woolues, lyons, tigers, foxes, wylde boores, hartes, and hares. After this banquett, the kyng with his traine and famylie brought owre men into a brode croſſe way where many ſtreates do meeete. In this, they ſhewed them as it were a great and highe auſter buyldeſ fourſ ſquare of marble compacte together partly with the toughe cleye of Babylon cauled *Bitumen*, and partly with ſmaule ſlooneſ. It had on every fyde fourſ ſteares. Vpon the altare was an Image of a man made of marble: and fast by it the Images of two beaſtes of vñknownen ſhape, whiche ſeemed as though they wolde with yanynge moutheſ haue torne in funder the bealy of the manneſ Image. On the other fyde ſloode a great ſerpent compacte of the ſayne toughe cleye and ſmaule ſlooneſ. This ſerpent beyng in length. xlviij. foote, and of the bygnyſſe of a large oxe, ſeemed to deuour a lyon of marble, and was al by ſparcled with freſhe bludde. Harde by the altare, were the poſtes fastned in the ground, the whiche three other trauerſed and were fulſteinid with ſtones. In this place offendereſ were put to death: In token wherof they ſawe innumerable arrowes ſteined with bludde, ſum ſcattered, ſum lyinge on heapeſ, and ſum broken: Alſo a great number of menneſ bones lying in a court or yarde nere vnto this funefal place. Their houes are here alſo buildest of lime and ſtone. They named this king, *Lazarus*, bicaufe they arriuied at this lande on faint *Lazarus* day. Departing from heade and directing theiſt courſe ſtyl toward the West for the ſpace of xv. myles, they came to a prouince named *Aguanil*, whiche chiefe towne is cauled *Mofco*, and the kyng thereof, *Cipoton*. He behelde owre men with a frowarde countenaunce, and fought occation to doo them ſume priuie miſchiefe whyle they fought for freſhe water. For he made ſignde vnto them that on the further fyde of the nexte hyll, they ſhulde fynde ſprynges of water, intendyng to haue affayled them in that narowe paſſage. But by the colouryng of theiſt forheades (as they are accuſtomed in theiſt warres) and by the bearynge of theiſt bowes and other weapons, owre men perceaued theiſt wylynes, and refuſed to go any further. Yet a thouſande of the Barbarians affayled theiſt vñwareſ and vnprefparede. By reaſon wherof, they were put to flighe, and dyuerſe of them flayne in the chafe. Many that fledde towarde the ſhippes, were entangled in the muſte and maryſhes nere vnto the ſhore. Twentie and two, were flayne with arrowes, and the reſydewe for the moſt parte, wounded. *Francifcus Fernandes* the gouernour of the nauie, receaued in this confliete three and thirtie wounded. And in maner none escaped without hurt. If they had gonno to the hyles whiche were appoynted them, they had byn flayne euery man. They therfore that escaped, returned to the Ilande of *Fernandina* from whence they came, where they were receaued of theiſt felowſ with heauie cher. But when *Diegus Velasguen* the gouernour of the Ilande, had intelligence hereof, he immediatly furnyſhed a newe nauie of fourſ Carauelis with three hundredth men. Of this nauie he appoynted John Grifalua his neue, to be the gouernour: And affigned for vnder capitaynes, Alphons[o] Auila, Frances Montegio, and Peter Aluarad^s. For the pylot he affigned Antonie Alamino who had the regiment of the fyſt nauie. They attempted the ſame vyage ageyne, but declyned ſumwhat more towarde the South about threfcore and tenne myles. Before they ſawe any lande, they eſpyed a towre a farre of, by the viue wherof, they came to an Ilande named *Cozumella*, from the whiche they ſmelte ſweete

Circumcized
Idolaters.*Comi.*
*Maiam.**Campachium.*
A towne of three
thouſand houes.Plentie of beaſtes
and foules.Theyr Idoles and
Idolatry.Houes of lime
and ſtone.
151The prouince
Aquinall.
Mosca.The Spaniardes
are put to flighe
and many ſlayneAn other
expedition.The Iland of
Cozumella.

¹ Eden points out later on that William Powell, the printer, had wrongly carried the headline, *The thyrde Decade*, over this, a perfectly distinct book.—(See p. 342.) We have therefore also inserted the true headline within brackets.—E. A.]

Sweete saoures.
A frutefull Ilande.

Towres and
temples.

Cosumella named
Santa Crux.

Idoles lyke beares.
Idolatrie.

Gentell people.

Iucatana but fyue
myles from
Cosumella.

152

The Barbarians
make reiastance.

A confilte.

The lengh of
Iucatana.

The region of
Caluacam, or
Oloan.

The ryuer
Grisalua.
Targets and breast
plates of golde.

fauours proceedyng with the wynde, before they approched to the lande by the space of three myles. They founde the Ilande to be fortie and fife myles in circuite. It is playne and of maruelous frutefull soyle. There is also golde in it, but it is not engendered there, but brought thereth from other regions. It aboundeth with honys, frutes, and herbes: And hath also great plentie of foulcs and foure footed beastes. Theyr order and maner of luyng, is in al thynges lyke unto theyrs of *Iucatana*. Lykewyse theyr howfes, temples, streates, and apparell. In many of theyr houfes, are great postes of marble after the maner of owe buyldyng. They founde there, the foundations of certeyne owlde towres ruinate: And one especially with xviii. steares ascendyng to it, after the maner of soleme temples. They marueleyd greatly at owe shippes and maner of saylyng. At the syrf, they wolde admyn特 no straungers: but shortly after, receaved them gentelly. Theyr chiefe ruler (whom owe men supposed to bee a preeste) led them vp to the toppe of the towre, where they erected a banner and addicted the Ilande to the dominion of the kyng of Castyle, namyng it *Santa Crux*, bycause they entered into the same in the nones of Maye beinge then the feaste of the holly crofe. They saye that it was cauled *Cosumella* of kyng *Cosumellus*, whose auncelours were the syrf that inhabited the Ilande. In the towre, they founde many chambers furnyshed with Images, made bothe of earthe and marble to the simylitude of beares. These they caule vppon with a houlyng and lamentable songe, perfumyng them with sweete odours, and otherwyse honouryng them as theyr domefisical goddes. They were also circumcised. The kyng was in fayre apparel made of gofscampine cotton curiously wrought. He was lame on the one foote by reason that as he once exercyed hym selfe in swymmyng, a deouryng syfhe cauled *Tuberon*, byt of al the toes, of one of his feete. He entreated owe men very frenldy and made them great chiere. After they had byn here thre dayes, they departed. And saylyng styll towarde the Weste, they espyed great mountaynes a farre of. But as they drewe neare, they perceaued it to bee the Ilande of *Iucatana* beinge distant from *Cosumella* onely fyue myles. Directynge therfore their course towarde the southe syde of *Iucatana*, they compased it on that syde which lyeth nearest to the supposid continent: Yet coulde they not sayle rounde about it by reason of the multitude of rockes, shalowe places, and shelles of fandes. Then Alaminus the pylot turned his sailes to the North side wherof he had better knowleage. Thus at the length, they came to the towne *Campechium* and kyng *Lazarus* with whom they had bin that attempted the syrf vyage the yeare before. At the syrf, they were gentelly receaved, and requrred to refort to the towne. But shortly after, they repented that they had bydden them: and there vpon wylled them to stay about a stones cast from the towne, and to proceade no further. When owe men defyred that they myght make prouision for freshe water before theyr departure, they assigned them to a certeyne well which they had lefte behynd them. Declaringe further, that it shulde be lawfull for them to take water there or els no wheare. Owre men rested that nyght in the fyelds adioynyng to the well. The which thyng the Barbarians suspectinge, assembled an army of three thoufande men, and encamped not fare from them. Bothe partes paffed awaie the nyght without sleepe. They fearyng leaste owe menne shulde breake into the towne: And owe men, lefft the Barbarians shulde inuaide them foodenly, on the one parte with trumpettes, and on the other syde with the noyse of timbrels kept them styll wakynge that were dispoſed to fleape. At the spryng of the day, the Barbarians approched to owe mens campe and cauled for the interpretors of *Cuba*, whose language is much agreeable vnto theyrs. They had diuined to lyghte a torche of frankenfence and to place the same betwene bothe th[e]armies to th[e]intent that if owe men dyd not depart before the torche were consumed, to stande to theyr perrell. The torch was waſted and the matter came to hand strokcs. They flewe onely one of owe men with an arrow bycause his target fayled hym. But many were wounded. After this confilte, owe men reforted to theyr ordinaunce which they had planted neare vnto the well. When they had discharged certeyne peeces, the Barbarians fledde backe into the towne. Owre men were of fierce and greedy courage to haue purfued them, but that Grifalua the gouernour wolde not suffer them. From thense they proceeded to the last ende of *Iucatana*, which they founde to reache more then two hundredth myles frome the East to the West. Here they founde a comodious hauen and named it *Portus desideratus*. From hense they fayled to other landes, and came to the region nexte to *Iucatana* Westwarde, whiche they doubted whether it be an Ilande or parte of the firme lande: but thinke it rather to be annexed to the continent. In this there is a goufse which they suppose to be incoompased with bothe the landes. But of this, there is no certaintie. Th[e]inhabitantes caule this region *Caluacam* or otherwyse *Oloan*. They founde here also a great ryuer whiche by his violente course and faule, driueth freshe water two myles into the sea. This they cauled *Grifalua* after the name of the gouernour. The barbarians marueilyng at the huge greatness and mouyng of owe shippes, came swarmyng the bankes on bothe sydes the ryuer, to the number of fyxe thoufande men armed with targettes and breft plates of gold, bowes and arrowes, brode swoordes of heauy woodde, and longe iauelens hardened at the endes with fyer: Thus stondyng in battayle raye to defende their coostes, and with proude countenaunces forbydding owe men to coome alande. Bothe parties watched al that nyght in armes. In the dawne of the day, owe men espyed about a hundredth Canoas (whiche we haue faide to be their boates) full of armed men. Here also the

language of th[e]interpretours of *Cuba* agreed well enowghe with thers. When they had admitted the peace profered them by th[e]interpretours, al the Canoas flaid excepte one whiche appreched toward the shippes. A certeyne ruler that was in this Canoa, demauded of owre men what they fought in other mennes landes. They answered, gold. And that, for permutation of other ware, and not of gift or vyolement. The *Canoa* returned and the ruler certified the kyng hereof, who came gladly to the shippes. When he had saluted the gouernour, he cauled his chamberlen vnto hym, commaundynge him to bringe his armure and other ornamente of golde wherwith he armed *Grisalua* from the toppe of the heade to the soule of the foote: In so muche that, what so ever any man of armes armed at all partes, is emong vs accustomed to weare of Iren or steele when he commeth in to the fielde, all fuche kynde of furnitures made of golde and wrought with woonderyngh arte, the kyng gaue to the gouernour. He recompensed hym with vestures of fy[ll]e, clothe, lynes, and other of owre thinges. In the beginning of this *Iucatana*, when they sayled to *Cozumella*, they chaunced vpon a *Canoa* of fysher men to the number of nyne, fysshing with hookes of golde. They tooke them all prisoners. One of them was knownen to this kyng, who promyfed the daye folowinge to sende the gouernour as muche golde for his raunsome as the man hym selfe wailed. But the gouernour denied that he could release hym withoute the consent of his felowes: And therfore kept hym styll to proue what he could further knowe of hym. Departing from hense and saylynge styll westwarde, they founde a great goulfe in the which three fmaule Ilandes were sytuate. Of these, they went to the byggest. But oh abhominable crueltie: oh most corrupted myndes of men, and deuelyle impietie! Let every godly man close the mouth of his stomake lest he be disturbed. They offer younge children of bothe kyndes to their Idoles of marble and earth. Emonge their Idoles of marble, there standeth a lyon hauynge a hole thorugh the necke, into the whiche they poure the bludde of the miserable sacrifysche, that it maye from thense runne downe into a fyncke of marble. Lette vs nowe declare with what ceremonies they sacryfyce the bludde of these pore wretches. They cutte not their throtes, but open the very brestes of these felye soules and take owe their hartes yet pantynge, with the hotte bludde wherof, they anoynte the lyppes of their Idoles, and suffer the resydue to faule into the fynke. This doone, they burne the harte and bowels, supposyng the smoke therof to be acceptable to their goddes. Of their Idoles, one is made to the shape of a man, bowyng downe his heade and lookinge toward the fynke of bludde, as it were acceptyng the offeringe of the flayne sacrifysche. They eate the fleshe of the armes, thighes, and legges, especilly when they sacryfyce an enemy taken in the warres. They founde a streame of congeled blud as thoughe it had runne from a bouchery. For this myscheuous purpoe, they bringe these wretches from the nexte Ilandes. They fawe also innumerable heades, and trunkes of bodies thus manglede, besyde many other yet remaining hole and couered with certeine mattes. All the tractes of these regions abounde with golde and precious stones. One of owre men wanderynge in the Ilande, chaunced to fynde two water pottes of alabaster artifcially wrought and full of lyttle stones of dyuers colours. They faye also that they founde a stome of the value of two thoufand Caftilans of gold, whiche they sent to the gouernour. This Ilande they named the Iland of sacrifysche. Th[e]inhabitauntes are circumcised. There are also other Ilandes sytuate about this *Col[huacana or Caluacam]*, the whiche are inhabited onely with women lyuing without the coompanye of men after the maner of the *Amazones*. But they that ponder the matter more wiselly, thinke them rather to be certeyne women whiche haue vowed chaftitie and professed a solitarie lyfe as the nunnis doo with vs, or as the virgins cauled *Veffales* or *Bone Doe*, were accustomed to do amonge the gentiles in oulde tyme. At certeyne tymes of the year, men of the other Ilandes reforte vnto them. But not for th[e]intent of generation, but moued with pitie to helpe them to dresse their gardens and tyll their grounde. The reporte goeth lykewise that there are other Ilandes of corrupte women to whom men reforte for carnall copulation: And that they cutte of one of the pappes of their women children least it shuld hinder their shootring. Also that they kepe onely the women children and fende awaye the men children. Owre men therfore drewe nere to the shore of *Colluacana* where they quetyly exercised marchaudies with th[e]inhabitauntes. The kyng gaue them a great potte of gold: Also braslettes, chaynes, brouches, with many other iewelles, and al of gold. Owre men ageyne on the other parte satifysed him with such fluffe as they had done other before. Here woldle they gladly haue planted a newe colonie or habitation, but that the gouernour woldle not permittye them, wherat they gruged not lyttle. The houses and other edifyses of this prouynce, are buylde like vnto towres. It hath also. xv. great townes in it. Of these they affirme that they haue seene sum confisling of more then. xx. thousande houses, not ioyning together, but deseuored with courtes and gardens. They haue also certeyne large market places encompassed with waules, and streates well paued. Likewife fornaces and ouens made of lyme and bricke. Furthermore al fortis of handy craftes men and very cunning artificers. This kinges name was *Potanchanus*: and the region is cauled *Palmaria*. The towne where the king keþeth his court, conteineth. xv. thousand houses. When they receave any straungiers and make a leage of frendshyppe with them, they are accustomed with a knife made of a sharpe stone, to let them felues bludde in the toonge, hande, arme, or sum other parte of the body: And this even in the fyghe of them whom they admittie to frendshyp, in token that they are ready to sheddle

Armure of golde.

Experie artificers

Fysche hokes of golde.
153The Ilandes of Sacrifice.
Children sacrificed to Idoles.
Their Idoles of marble.

Gold and precious stones.

A stome of great price.

Ilandes of women.

Golde.

Houses lyke towres.
xv. great towns
in the prouince of Colluacana.
Towns of xx.
thousande houses.

The region of Palmaria.

A token of frendship.

Presties. 154 Chasttie. The pynishment of adulterie. Marriage is honoured. Fastynge. Kynge Ouandus. Idoles, jewelis, and ouches of gold. Gold in mountaynes and ryuers. Theyr maner of gatheryng golde. Sweete sauours. A stome of great price. 155 Other viages from Cuba or Fernandina. Many Ilands betwene Cuba and the firme lande.	<p>their bludde in their fryndes causes. Their priestes professe a vertuous lyfe, and liue vnmaried. What it is to haue to do with women, no man knoweth before he be maried. Fornication and adultery (which feldome chaunce emonge them) they counte abomination. The women are of maruelous chastitie. Euery noble man after that he haue had one wife, may haue as many concubines as hym lyfeth. But a maried woman taken in adulterie, is foulde of her husbande. But this onely to the prince: at whose handes it shal be lawfull for her kynnesfolkes to redeeme her. It is not lawfull for suche as are not maried, to syt at the same table with them that are maried, or to eate of the same dyshe or drinke of the same cup. In the moneth of August and September, they absteine, xxxv. dayes not onely from fleshe wherof they haue great plentie, but also from fyse and al other thinges that lyue by bludde: And duryng these daies, lyue onely with herbes and frutes. They reken twentie dayes to the moneth, and twentie monethes to the yeare. Ovre men confument certeyne dayes here verye pleasauntly. When they departed, coastynge styl by the same shore, they came to an other kyng whom they named <i>Ouandus</i>. When he had intelligence that owre men desired golde, he brought foorth certeyne plates of molten gold. But when the governour signified vnto him by th[e]interpreters that he defydred great plentie of that metal, the day folowing he brought him a mannes Image of golde beinge a cubette in length: Alfo a fanne of golde, and an Idole of one of his domesticall goddes of curios woorkemanshippe. Likewyfe garlandes of stones of sundry colours, with many breste plattes, brooches, and other kyndes of ornamente, and all of golde. He gaue hym furthermore aboundinge of delycate meates well salted and poudred with spices. When he had required owre men to coome alande, he comandued his seruauntes with all spedee to prepare a great multitude of branches of trees and to waite vpon owre men to his pallaye. As they went thus in order, sum behynde and sum before on bothe sydes, they seemed so to shadowe owre men with the bouwes as though they had gon in a continuall arbour. The kyng hym selfe hauyng a septer in his hand, dyd fette them in their arraye, and sumtyme strike suche as were negligent in bearyng their bouwes. They shewed them selues obedient in all thynges, and with graue countenaunce, humbled them selues to receaue his stripes. When he was demaunded where he had suche plentie of golde, he pointed with his synger to the next mountaynes, and to the ryuers descendyng from the same. They are so accustomed to the riuers and exercised in swymming, that it is al one to them to liue in the water and on the lande. When they desyre to gather golde, they plunge theym selues in the ryuers and brynge from the bottome therof, bothe their handes full of sande, whiche fystynge from hande to hande, they gather owte the graynes of golde. And by this meanes in the space of two hours, they fyll a reede as bigge as a mannes synger. Of the sweete fauours of these landes, many thinges myght be spoken, the whiche bycause they make rather to th[e]effeminatyng of the myndes of men, then for any necessarie purpose, I haue thought best to omyte them. The kyng also gaue the governour a younge virgine of twelve yeares of age, adourned with ryche and sayre iewelles. Of the stones whiche he had of this kyng, one was valued at two thousand Castellans of golde. Thus at the length they departed from this kyng, laden wit golde and precious stoones. <i>Grijatua</i> the governour, fente one of the Carauelles to his uncle <i>Diego Velasq[ue]z</i> governour of the Ilande of <i>Cuba</i>, with messengers to delyuer hym the golde, iewelles, and other ornamer. The refydue in the meane tyme styl folowed the tracte toward the West. One of them in the whiche Frauncis Montegius the vnder governour was caryed, fayled harde by the shone: and the other twoo kept aloofe within prospecte of the land. Th[e]inhabitauntes of these coastes also, no lese marueylyng at the shypes then dyd the other, came with twelve Canoas to Montegius, defyringe hym by th[e]interpretors to coome alande, promysyng in the name of their kyng, that hee shoulde be honorably enterteined. But Montegius answere that hee coulde not assente to their request bycause his cocompanions were so farre from hym. Yet dyd he gyue them certayne of owre thynges straunge vnto them, and thankes for their gentylness. Shortly after espyng a great towne they directed their course thither. Th[e]inhabitauntes prohibyted them to coome alande, and came foorth agaynst them with bowes and quyeris ful of arrowes, brode swoordes made of heauy woode, and Iauelens hardned at the ende with fier. They shotte at owre men a faire of: And owre men discharged certeyne pieces of ordinaunce agaynst them. The Barbarians astonyshed at the noyse of the gunnes, fledde amayne, and desyred peace. Here owre mens vytales began to sayle them, and theyr shippes were brooed with longe vyages. Hauyng therefore founde and doone thefe thynges whereof we haue spoken, <i>Grijatua</i> returned to the Ilande of <i>Fernandina</i> well contented, but so were not his cocompanions. We munte nowe diuerte sumwhat from this matter, and speake of an other nauigation. And from thenye wyll we retorne to these landes which owre men haue founde. So it is therfore, that <i>Diegus Velasq[ue]n</i> the governour of the Iland of <i>Fernandina</i>, about the same tyme that he had sent foorth this nauie of foure Carauelles, he prepared an other nauigation of onely one Carauell and one brygantyne with fortie and fyue men. These exercised vyonent handes agaynst th[e]inhabitauntes of thos regions where they arryued, thynkyng that they myght forceably drawe them to the dyggynge of golde bycause they were Caffranne Idolaters and circumcised. There are at the sea syde not farre from the supposid continent, many lyttle Ilandes of mooste fortunate and frutefull soyle, whereof three are thus named: <i>Guanapan</i>, <i>Guangan</i>, and <i>Quittilla</i>. Owte of one of these (which they named <i>Santa Marina</i>) they </p>
--	--

violently caried away three hundredth men and women which they thrust into the Carauell and returned immediately to *Fernandina*, leauyng the brigantine with. xxv. of theyr felowes to th[e] intent to hunt for more men. The hauen where the Carauell fyste arryued, is cauled *Carena*, beinge distante from the angle of *Cuba* and the chiefe citie of *Santiago*, two hundredth and fyfie myles. For this Ilande of *Cuba*, is very longe, reaching in length from the East to the West, and situate directly vnder the circle cauled *Tropicus Cancri* as we haue sayde before. Now shall you heare how fortune fought the reuenge of these pore wretches. Therfore as theyr kepers went aland and few remained in the Carauell, they perceiving occasion ministred wherby they myght recouer theyr libertie, foodeynely snatched vp ovr mens weapons and flewe fyxe of them which yet remayned in the Carauell, whyle the residue lepte into the sea. And by this meanes the Barbarians possessed the Carauell which they had soone learned to rule, and thus returned to theyr owne countreys. But they fayled fyste to the nexte Ilande where they burnte the Carauell and caried away the weapons with them. From hense they conveyed them felowes to theyr owne countreys with the Canoas of this Ilande. Heare in lyke maner they pruyuile affayled them that were lefte with the brigantyne, and flewe many of them also. The residue that escaped, fledde to the brigantyne where they bewayled theyr felowes deathes and counted theyr owne escape a victorie. On the shore not farre from the place where they suffered this misfortune, there is a tree, in the toppe wherof they fet vp a croffe, and graued this inscription in the barke of the tree: *Vannuis Aldarieci*. There is a ryuer named *Darien*, on the banke wherof standeth the chiefe citie of the supposid continent. The governour therfore hauing intelligence herof, sent with all speede two shippes of warre well furnyshed, to the ayde of them that were lefte. But they were wyse to late. Yet folowinge the viewe of the croffe, they came to the shore and redde the letters grauen on the tree, but durle not attempte fortune. Thus with all theyr hardie souldiers departinge from hense with despayre, they fayled to the nexte Ilande, out of the which they caried away by violence fyue hundredth men and women, supposyng lykewyse that they myght lawfully so doo bycause they were idolatres and circumcised. But the like chaunce happened vnto them when they landed at *Fernandina*. For the Barbarians espyng oportunitie, sette vppon the Spaniardes in one of the shippes with theyr owne weapons and flewe theyr keepers. The residue that escaped, castynge them felowes into the sea, swamme to the nexte carauell, and with theyr felowes assayed the carauell that was taken from them. This conflicte was so sharpe, that for the space of foure houres, it was doubtfull whether parte shulde obteyne the victorie. The Barbarians both men and women fought verye fiercely, awell to recouer theyr libertie, as also to holde faste the praye whiche they had gotten. But in fine, the Spaniardes had the vpper hande by reason they were more experie in handelyng of theyr weapons and rulyng of theyr Carauell. The Barbarians beinge thus ouercome, lepte into the sea: but the Spaniardes tooke theym ageyne with the shipp boates. About a hundredth of the Barbarians peryfyed, beinge partly drowned and partly slayne with the swoorde: And but fewe of the Spaniardes. Thefe thynges thus pacified, the residue of the Barbarians were caried to the towne of *Santiago* and condemned to laboure in the golde mynes. Shortly after they made owte a newe vyage to an other of the Ilandes, whiche lye there about so thicke, that they commonly caule the number of them *Archipelagus*, as they in owre sea of *Ionicum* are cauled *Symplegades*. Here owre men were cruelly handeled: and as many of them as came alande eyther slayne or wounded. This Ilande they named *Florida*, bycause they arryued there on Easter day whiche the Spaniardes caule the floryshyne day of the resurrection. They say also that in this tracte they fawe. xxvi. Ilandes which *Colonus* had ouerpased: And the same so to lye aboute *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, as though they warded them from the furie of the Ocean. In many of these they founde natvie golde of lyke goodnes to that which is founde in *Granatum*. Th[e]inhabitantes also weare many iewels, and haue many Images of theyr domesticall goddes made both of golde artificially wrought and also of woodde gylded. Francis Cheregatus brought one of theyr Idoles with hym, wherby may bee considered of what wytte and aptenes they are. It is a maruelous thyng to see what maner of rafers they haue, made of certeyne yellowe stones cleare and transparent lyke vnto Crystal. With these they shawe and carue as though they were made of fine steele. When the edges are blunte with longe exercise, they sharpen them not with a whetstone, or powder, or any other stone, but temper them onely with water. They haue also a thousande kindes of instrumentes or tooles and such other thynges of fyne deuise, which were to longe to rehearfe. Let vs therefore retorne from whence we haue digressed, as to *Cozumella*, *Iucatana*, *Colluacana* or *Olva*, beinge al landes lately founde, and so rich, fruteful and plefaunt, that they may in maner be compared to the earthly Paradyse. Therfore, after that it was knownen to owre men of howe greate momente these tractes were, the Spaniardes which inhabited the Ilande of *Cuba* Anunctus beinge the governour of the Ilande furnyshed a newe nauie of ten Carauelles and fyue hundredth menne, with twoo smaule brigantynes, as it ware in the steade of lyght horfemen or forerunners whiche ayde they myght vse as scoutes to searche the wayes for daunger of rockes and shalow sandes or shelles. They shipte also certeyne horses, as fyue stoned horses and. xvi. mares apte for the warres. For their general governour and Admiral of the nauy, they elected *Fernando Cortesius* who at that tyme was the chiefe ruler of the citie of *Santiago*. For vnder capitaines, they appointed *Alfons Portucarerius*, *Francis Montegius*, *Alfons*

Santiago the
chiefe citie of
Cuba.

The Barbarians
sley the Spaniards
with theyr owne
weapons.

The chiefe citie of
the supposed
continent.

The Spaniardes
are slayne ageyne
with theyr owne
weapons.

The barbarians are
slaine and put to
flight.

156
Another vyage.
Archipelagus.
A multitude of
Ilandes.

xxvi. Ilandes about
Hispaniola and
Cuba.

Images of golde.

Rasers of stone.

Instrumentes and
tooles.

Ilandes lyke vnto
the earthly
Paradyse.

An other vyage of
x. Carauells and v.
hundredth men.

Horses and mares
Fernando
Cortesius.

The Iland of
Cozumella.

Carpets and
sheetes.
Innumerabla
bokes.

Circumcised
Idolaters.

They Sacrifice
Chyldren

157

The Ilandes of
Distam and
Sestam.
Sacrifice of dogges.

They are soone
perswaded to owe
religion.

The picture of the
blessed Virgine

An other vyage

Aquillaris, viii.
yeares captiue in
the Iland of
Iucatana.

Valdiua.

The shipwracke of
Valdiua.

Auila, A'uerado Spatense, Iohn *Velasquen* and *Diegus Ordaffus*. They styll folowed the same wynde from the last angle of *Cuba* toward the west. As soone as Frauncis Fernandes of Corduba, and then Iohn Grifalua came within prospete of the Ilande of Sacrifices (wherof we haue made mention before) fodenly a tempest of contrary wynde prohibited them to take lande and droue them backewarde to *Cosumella* lyinge on the East syde of *Iucatana*. This Ilande hath onely one hauen named sainte Iohns porte. And hath in it, onely fyxe townes. Alſo none other water therin in welles and cesterns, bycause it lacketh riuers and springes by reaſon it is plaine, conteynyng onely. xlvi. myles in circuite. At the coommyng of owe men, th[e]jhabitauntes fledde to the thicke woods, and forſoke their townes for feare. Owe men entered into their houſes where they founde plentie of vytayles and many ornamenteſ perteynyng to the furnyfhyng of their houſes, as hanginges and carpettes of dyuers colours, sheetes alſo of goſſampine cotton (whiche they caule *Amaccaſ*) and muſe apparell. They haue furthermore innumerabla bookeſ, of the whiche with many other thinges fente to owe newe Empereour, we wyll ſpeake more largely hereafter. The ſouldiers wandered about the Iland and vieweſ[d] al thynges diligently, kepyng them felues ſtill in battell raye leaſt they myght be fodenly inuadēd. They founde but a fewe of th[e]jhabitauntes and onely one woman in their coompanie. By th[e]jinterpretours of *Cuba* and other whiche the Spaniardes tooke fyrt from *Iucatana*, they perfwaded the woman to caule the kynges that were abſente. They came gladly and made a leage of frendſhyp with owe men, wherby they were reſtored to their houſes and a great parte of their ſtuffe. They are circumcized Idolatours, and ſacrifice children of bothe kyndes to their *Zemes*, which are the Images of their familiar and domēſtall ſpirites whiche they honour as goddes. When I enquired of *Alaminus* the pilote, alſo of Frances Montegius and *Portucarerius*, from whence they had the children they offered in ſacrifice, they anſwered that they bowght them in the Ilandes thereaboute by exchaunge for golde and other of their trayfyc. For in al this ſo large a ſpace of land, the deuelyfhe anxiety for the defyre of wicked money, hath not yet opprefſed th[e]jhabitauntes. They ſaye the fame alſo of the Ilandes lately founde, wherof two are named *Diflam* and *Seflam*, whose inhabitauntes go naked: and for ſcarcenefſe of children, ſacrifice dogges whiche they nouriſhe, awell for that purpoſe alſo to eate as wee do conmies. These dogges are dumme and can not barke, hauying no ſnowtes lyke foxes. Suche as they deſtinate to eate, they geld while they are whelpes, wherby they waxe very fat in the ſpace of four monethes. They referue al the bytches for increase, and but fewe dogges. Owe men diſwaſed them from theſe ſuperfluities, declarynge how they were abominable and detefted of god. They were ſoone perfwaded and defyred a law whiche they myght folowe. Owe men therfore declared vnto them that there was onely one god which made heauen and earth, the geuer of al good thynges, beyng of one incomprehenſyble ſubſtaunce vnder triplicite of perfon. As ſoone as they harde theſe woordes, they broke their *Zemes*, and pared, ſcraped, and waſhed the pauementes and waules of their temples. Owe men gaue them a painted picture of the bleſſed vyrgine which they placed reverently in their temple, and aboue it a croſſe to be honored in the remembrance of god and man and the faluation of mankynde. They erected alſo an other great croſſe of woodde in the toppe of the temple, whyther they oftentimes reſorte togither to honour the Image of the vyrgine. Th[e]jhabitauntes ſignified by th[e]jinterpretours that in the Iland of *Iucatana* not far from them, there were ſeven Christians captiues which in tyme paſt were dryuen thither by tempeſte. The Ilande of *Cozumella*, is onely fyue miles diſtant from *Iucatana*. The gouernour *Cortefius* being aduertified herof, furnyfhed. ii. Carauels with fytie men, wylling them incontinent to direcť their viage thither and to make ſerch for theſe men. They tooke with them the interpretours of *Cozumella* (whose language agreeith with theirs) with letters to the Christians if any myght be found. He further declared vnto them howe goodly a matter they ſhulde bringe to paſſe if they couldle bringe away any of them. For he no wayes doubted but that by their information, he ſhulde be fully certified of the commodities of all thoſe tractes, and the maners of th[e]jhabitauntes. Thus they departed with commandement to returne within the ſpace of fyue dayes. But when they had remayned there now. viii. days, and hard no woord of their Cozumellane interpretours whome they had ſent alande with the message and letters, owe men returned to *Cozumella* without them, ſuſpecting that they were other flaine or deteyned. And where as the hole nauye was now determined to depart from *Cozumella* but that they were hyndered by contrary wynde, they fodenly eſpied towarde the weſte a Canoa coommyng from *Iucatana*, and in it, one of the Christian captiues (named *Hieronimus Aquillaris*) who had lyued ſeven yeares in that Ilande. With what ioye they embraſed the one the other, the chace may declare. They were no leſſe defyrous to heare, then he to tell of the myſfortune whiche beſtell to hym and his coompanions. And here it ſhal not bee greatly from my purpoſe brefely to reſearche how the thyng chaunced. In my Decades I haue made mention of a certayne noble man named *Valdiua*, whome the Spaniardes whiche inhabited *Dariena* in the ſuppoſed continent of the goulf of *Vraba*, ſent to the Iland of *Hifpaniola* to *Colonus* the Admiral and viceroy with the refidue of the Senate and counfel there (to whom perteyneth the redrefe and orderynge of all thiſes in theſe newe landes) to ſygnifye vnto them in what extreme neceſſitie and penurie they lyued. Unhappy *Valdiua* therfore, takyng this matter in hand in an euell hour, was with a ſudden and yoylent whirlewind

om the
risalua
empest
the East
ly syxe
reason
tauntes
re they
nginges
muche
to owe
nd and
nuaded.
e]inter-
woman
re men,
d Idola-
iliar and
also of
ce, they
strafycke.
not yet
e named
che they
ot barke,
, wherby
but fewe
detested
declared
beyng of
ey broke
men gau
t a crosse
d also an
our the
a not far
he Ilande
ed herof,
ake serch
eirs) with
itter they
t by their
e]inhabita-
when they
they had
that they
Cosumelia
ommynge
ed feuen
hey were
And here
es I have
Dariena in
ad viceroy
ll things
Vnhappy
irlewind

dryuen vppon certayne quickefandes in the prospecte of the Ilande of *Jamaika*, lyng in the Southe syde of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*. These blind and swalowing fandes, the Spaniardes caule vypers: And that by good reaoun, bycause in them many shypes are entangled, as the lycertes are implicate in the tayles of the vipers. While the Carawell thus wrefted with the water, it was so brufe in funder, that *Valdiuia* with thirtie of his felowes, coulde scarsely with muche difficultie descende into the shyppe boate: where, without oers, and without fayles, they were caried awaye by the volvence of the water. For (as we haue said before in owe Decades) the feas do runne there continually with a violent courfe towarde the West. They wandered thus. xii. dayes not knowyng wherther they went nor yet synfyng any thyng to eate. Famen consumed feuen of them whiche were caste in the sea to feede the fyshes. The refydite lykewife in maner consumed by famen and faulynge from one calamite into an other, were druen to *Iucatana* and fell into the handes of a cruell kyng who flewe *Valdiuia* the governour with certayne of his felowes. And when hee had syrly sacryficed them to his *Zemes*, shortly after he eate them with his frindes of that confiracie. For they eate only their enemyes and straungiers: And doo otherwise absteyne from mannes fleshe. In this meane tyme, while *Hieronimus Aquillaris* with syxe of his felowes were referred to be sacryficed the thirde daye, they brooke their bandes, escaped the handes of that cruell tyranne, and fledde to an other kyng beyng his enemye, who receaued them, yet only as bondemen. It is a straunge thyng to heare of the moother of this *Aquillaris*. For as foone as the harde that her sonne was faulen into the handes of the nations that eate mannes fleshe, shee fell maddle incontinent: So that when so euer after, shee fawe any meate rolyng at the fyer, or onely ready spyted to laye to the fyer, shee ceased not to crye out in this maner. O me moste wretched moother: Behold the members of my son. But to retorne to owe purpse. When *Aquillaris* had now receaued the governours letter sente by the *Cozumellane* messengers, hee declared to the kyng his mayster (whose name was *Taxmarus*) what was their erraunt thither, and wherfore they were sent: syng in the meane tyme many large discourses in exprefsyng the great poure and magnifcence of their kyng who had of late arriuied in those coastes. Also of their humanitie and gentilnesse toward their frindes and fuche as submytted them felues to them, and againe their rygour and fiercenesse ageynst fuche as flooberly eyther contemned them or denied their requestes. With these woordes he broughte *Taxmarus* into fuche feare, that the maister was now fayne to defyre his seruaunt so to handell the matter that they myght quetely enter into his dominion as his freendes and not as his enemys. *Aquillaris* promised in their behalfe that they shuld not onely coome in peace, but also to ayde hym ageynst his enemys if neede shulde so require. Whervpon hee dismissed *Aquillaris* and with hym three of his familiers and cocompanions. Thus they sayled together from *Cozumella* to *Iucatana* to the ryuer whiche they had founde before in the syrle vyage thither by the governour of *Alaminus* the pilot. They found the mouthe of the ryuer stopped with fande, as wee reade of the ryuer of *Nilus* in Egypete when the wyndes (cauled *Eteui*) blowe in summer and especially in the canicular dayes. Therfore where as they could not enter into the ryuer with the biggesse vesselles (although it bee otherwise apte to receave great shypes) the governour caused two hundredth men to be sette alande with the brigantynes and shyppe boates: wyllyng *Aquillaris* to offer peace to the[e]inhabitautes. They demaunded what owe men required. *Aquillaris* answere, vyttayles. There was a longe space of fande by the syde of the towne, whither they wylled them to reforfe, promysyng to bryng them vyttayles thither the daye folowyng. Owe men wente and they came accordyng to their promise and brought with them eyght of their hennes beyng as bygge as peacockes, of browny the coloure, and not inferiour to peacockes in pleaſante tasf. They brought also as muche bread made of *Maiuum* (whiche is a graine not muche vnylike vnto panyke) as woldle scarcey ferue tenne hungry men: And here with defyred them to depart. But when they perceaued that owe men made no haſt away, immediately there came a great coompanye of armed men towarde them demaundyng what they had to do thus to wander in other mennes landes. Owr men made answere by *Aquillaris*, t[hat] they defyred peace, vyttayles, and golde for exchaunge of other thinges. They answere ageyne, that they wolde neither peace nor warre with them. But threatened them to auoyde the lande excepte they woulde bee destroyed every manne. Owr men fayde that they woulde not departe withoute suffyciente vyttayles to mayntayne their fouldyers.

They appoynted the day folowyng to bryng them more vyttayles: but they brooke promesse. Yet perceauing the seconday day that owe men were encamped on the fande and had reposed there that nyght, they brought them as much more vyttayles, and commaunded them in the name of theyr kyng to departe. Owr men fayde that they were defyrous to see the towne, and to haue yet more store of vyttayles. The Barbarians denied theyr request, and therwith departed whisperyng and mutteryng amoung them felues. In the meane tyme owe men were lyll to oppreded with hunger that they were enforced to feeke for meat. The governour therefore sent his vnder capitaines to lande with a hundredth and tytie men. As they went dispersed in dveres companyes about the vyllages of the countrey, the Barbarians met with one of theyr bandes, and put them to great distresse. But when they felowes beinge not farre from them, hardle the noyfe of theyr alarome,

The quickandes
cauled vypers

The course of the
sea towarde the
west.

158

Valdiuia is
sacrificed to
Idoles.

Howe Aquillaris
escaped

Kyng Taxmarus.

The mouth of a
ryuer stopped with
fande.

Turky hem.

159

A conflicte.

The Barbarians
are put to flight.

The great towne of
Potanchana or
Victoria.
A towne of xxv.
thousand houses.

Gunnes and horses.

The man and the
horse, thought to
be one beast.
Centaurus.

Palaces of
maruelous bygnes
and wel buylded.

They recue owe
religion.

A towne of a
thousand and fyue
hundred houses.

they came with all possible haste to theyr rescue. The gournour on the other syde, placing his ordinance in the brygantines and shipp boates, approched to the shore with the residue of his soldiers. The Barbarians lykewise, beinge redy furnyshed to the battayle, came runnyng to the sea syde to disturbe theym that they shulde not coome alande: And with theyr arrowes, wounded manye a farre of vnpreserved. The gournoure discharged aboue. xx. pieces of ordinaunce ageynste them: With the slaughter and terrible thunder wherof, and with the flame of fyer and smel of brimstone, they were so astonisched and put to such feare, that they fled and disperced lyke wylde beastes: whom owe men perusinge, entered the towne which th[e]inhabitantes forsooke in maner for feare of theyr owne men whom they fawe so dismayde. On the banke of this ryuer there is a towne of such portentous byggenes as I dare not speake. But *Alaminus* the pylot, sayth that it conteyneth in circuite fyue hundred myles, and that it consisteth of xxv. thoufande hou ses. Some make it sumwhat lesse: But they all agree that it is excedyng great and notable. The houses are diuided with gardens, and are buyled of lyme and flone verye artificially and of cunnyng woorkemanschipe. To they haules, chambers, parlars, or other places of habitation, they ascende by tenne or twelue staires: And haue certeyne spacs betwene euyer house: so that it is not lawful for any to lade his neighbours waules with rafters or beames. Theyr hou ses are separate one from an other by the space of three hou ses: And are for the more parte couered with reede and thetche: And many also with slate or other stone. The barbarians them selues confessed that they were that day fortie thousande men at the battayle, which were vanquished of a fewe by reason of the newe and vnknownen kynde of feyght with gunnes and horses. For the gournour had vnbarked. xvi horses which were also at the battayle, and so fiercely assayled the Barbarians on the backehalfe, that they brake theyr array and scattered them as it had byn flocks of sheepe, ouerthrowing, woundyng, and kyllynge them on every syde. Whiche thynge the feely wretches so imputed to a miracle, that they had not the poure to occupie theyr wepons. For wheras before they had neufer feene any horses, they thought that the man on horsebacke and the horse, had byn all one beaste, as the antiquitie dyd fable of the monster *Centaurus*. Owr men possest the towne. xxii. dayes where they made good chere vnder couert, whyle the owners of the houses lay vnder the firmament and durst not assayle owe men who had placed them selues in the strongest parte of the towne, where sume kepte continuall watche (least the Barbarians shulde foodenly inuaide them) whyle other gaue them selues to rest and sleepe. Th[e]inhabitantes caule this towne *Potanchana*: But owe men for the victorie which they obteyned here, named it *Victoria*. It is a maruelous thynge to consider the greatness, magnificence and finenes of the buyldinge of certeyne palaces they haue in the countrey to the whiche they resorte sumtymes for theyr folace and paistyme. These are curioufly buylded with many pleasaunt diuises, as galeries, folars, turrets, portals, gutters with chambers boorded after the maner of owe wayncotte and well flowred. Foure of our Spanyardes went into one of them of such greatness, that they wandered in the same for the space of four hours before they could synde the waye owt. At the length by th[e]interpretors and certeyne captiues owe men sent for the kyng and suche rulers as were nexte vnder hym in autoriti, wyllyng them to submyt them selues and to coome into the towne vnarmed. Gyuinge the messengers further in commaundement to certifie them that in their so doinge, they wold comen with them as concernyng conditions of peace, and reflore them theyr towne. They came gladly, and entered euyer man into his owne house vpon condition that they shulde euer thereafter abyeyne from such ceremonys and horrible sacrifices of mans fleshe to devils the mortal enemies to mankynd, whiche Images they honoured. And to directe the eyes of theyr myndes to Christe owe god the maker of heauen and earth, who was borne into this world of a virgin, and suffered death on the croffe for the redemption of mankynde. And fynally to professe them selues subiectes to the great Chrifian kyng of Spayne. They promyfed both, and were instructed as farre as the shortenes of tyme wold permitte. Beinge thus reflored, they recompened owe men with many rewardes: Suppolyng suche men to be sent from heauen, which being so fewe in number, durst attempte battayle ageynst so great a multitude. They gaue owe men also certeyne golde and twentie flaues. Departing therefore from henfe, and coastlyng stylly alonge by the same shore, they came ageyne to the goufse whiche *Alaminus* the pylot founde before vnder *Grisatua*. This they named *Bian Sancti Iohannis*, that is, Saynt Iohns goufse: For *Bian* in the Spanshe tonge signifieth a goufse. Here th[e]inhabitantes reforted to them peaceably. Aboue a myle frome the shore, was a towne of a thousande and fyue hundred hou ses situate vpon a hyll. They profered owe men halfe the towne if they wold dwel with them for euer. This perhaps they dyd the rather eyther fearyng th[e]exemple of th[e]inhabitantes of *Potanchana*, the fame wherof myght haue coome to theyr eares, or els hopyng that vnder the shadowe of suche valiant menne, they myght obteyn ayde and succour ageynst theyr enemies and bortherers. For (as I haue sayde before) they dystroye one an other with continuall warre for the defyre to inlarge theyr dominions. Owr men refused perpetuall habitacion, and accepted theyr frenedly profer for a tyme. As they came alande, the people folowed them on every syde with bouwes in theyr handes which they helde ouer owe mens heades to defende them from the rayne as though they had walked in a continual arbour. Here they encamped. And least the residue leste in the thippes, shulde in the meane tyme waxe flothefull with Idlenes,

the gouernour gaue commaundement to *Alaminus* the pylot and Francis Montegius to search the west partes of that lande, whyle he relieved the wiered fouldiers and healed suche as were wounded. To them that went forward on this vyage, he assigned two brigantines with fistie men. Vnto this goulfe, the course of the water was gentyl enough and moderate. But when they had fayled a lyttle further towarde the Wefte, they founde the sea runnyng with so swift a course as if it were a great ryuer faulynge from the tops of hygh mountaynes: In so much that in a shorte space of tyme it caried them fistie myles from theire felowes. When they were now entered into this violent streame of the water, they sawe on their left hand a large playne sea which mette with the course of the other waters faulynge from the westerne. And lyke as two great ryuers that runne contrary wayes, make a vehement conflycte where they meete, so seemed the waters commyng from the Southe to refyl these waters as enemys that had entered into the ryght or posseffyon of an other. On the contrary parte, they sawe the lande reachyng farre bothe on the leste hande and on the ryght. In this strife betwene the waters, they were so tossed on bothe fydes and entangled with whirlepooles, that they longe wretched with owt hope of lyfe. At the length with muche difficultie, turynge the stummes or forpartes of their shyppe agaynst the streame from whence they came, and labouryng al that they myght with their oers and sayles, they coulde scarfely ouercome the rage of the water: In so much that where as they thought that they had in one nyght fayled twoo myles, they founde that they were dryuen backe foure myles. Yet at the length with goddes helpe, they ouercame this daungerous conflycte. They spente. xxii. daies in this lyttle space of sea: And when they were nowe returned to their felowes, declared vnto them that ende was the land of *Coltuacana* whiche they adiudged to be parte of the supposed continent. The lande whiche they sawe a farre of before their safte, they supposid eyther to be annexed to oweare continent, or to bee ioyned to the large North regions cauled *Bacalaos*, wherof we haue made mention in our Decades in the vyage of Sebastian Cabote. This matter is yet doubtfull. But wee truse it shall once bee better knownen. While *Alaminus* and *Montegius* searched these secreteates, the kyng of the prouince (whose name was *Multosumam*) sent oweare men by one of his chiese offycers (beynge also his Lieuetenaunt of the sayde towne) many ryche and goodly presentes of golde, syluer, and precious stooones, sette and wroughte after a marueylous straunge deuyse and with no lesse cunnynge woorkemanschyp. Here they determined to fende messengiers to oweare newe Emperour to knowe his pleasure that they myght in this prouince plant a newe colonie or habitation. And this dyd they withoute th[e]aduise of *Diegus Velasquen* the gouernour of the Iland of *Cuba Fernandina*, who fyfste fente them forthwith comandaundement to retorne agayne after they had searched these regions and obteyned plentie of golde. While they consulted hereof, they were of dyuers opinions. But the moste part alleaged that in this case it was not requyse to make the gouernour of their counfaile. Forasmuche as the matter shulde be referred to a higher Judge, as to the kyng of Spaine him selfe. When they were thus agreed, they receaued vyttayles of the gentle kyng of the prouince, and assignd the place of their colonie twelve myles from the sayde towne, in a fruteful and holome foyle. For their generall gouernour, they elected *Cortesius* the gouernour of the nauye, against his wyll as sum faye. For other magistrates to gouerne the citie which they intended to build he chose Portucararius and Montegius of whome we haue made mention before. They chose also certeyne messengiers to fende to the kyng by the conduction of *Alaminus* the pylot. Furthermore, foure of the princes of this prouince offered them selues willyngly to go with oweare men into Spaine to th[e]intent to see oweare landes and that kyng whose poure is too great and whose autoritie reacheth so farre. They brought lykewise two women with them, which serued and obeyed them in all thinges after the maner of theyr countrey. The people of this nation is of broune or yellowfie the colour. Bothe the men and the women haue pendauntes of gold and precious stones hangeinge at their eares. The men also, boore their nether lypes full of holes from the vppermoste parte of the lyppe even vnto the nethermoste parte of the gumme. At these they hange certeyne rynges and plates of golde and syluer fastned to a fimaule and thynde plate lyinge within betwene the lippes and the gumme. At the byggest hole in the myldest of the lip, there hangeth a rounde plate of syluer as brode as the coyne cauled a Corolyne, and as thicke as a mannes synger. I do not remember that euer I sawe any thyng that seemed more fylthy in myne eye. Yet do they thynke that there is nothing more cumly vnder the circle of the moone. Wherby we may fee howe vainerly mankynde wandereth in his owne blyndnesse. The Ethiopian thincketh the blacke colour to be fayrer then the white: And the white man thinketh otherwise. They that are pouled, thinke that more decent then to weare a bush and they that weare beardes, iudge it a deformite to be shauen. As appetite therfore moueth, and not as reasoun perswadeth, men runne after vanities: And every prouynce is ruled by their owne sense, as writeth saint Jerome. From whence they haue their golde, we haue spoken sufficienly before. But as oweare men marueyled where they had their syluer, they shewed them certayne highe mountaynes whiche are continually couered with snowe fauyng that at certeyne tymes of the yere, the onely topes are seene bare bicaufe the snowe is there molten by reasoun of the thicke and warme cloudes. The playnes therfore, or mylde, softe, and pleasaunte mountaynes seeme to bryngg foorth the golde: And the rough craggye mountaynes with their coulde valleyes, are the places where syluer

An other vyage of
two brigantines
and fistie men.

Where the sea
runneth swifly
from the East to
the West.
A conflict betwene
the waters
comming from the
west and from the
south.

A dangerous and
peinefull vyage.

The land of
Coltuacana.

The land of
Bacalaos or
Bacalarum
Rych presentes of
golde and precious
stones.

161

A newe colonie.

This *Cortesius*
hath written a
book of these
thinges

They weare rynges
and plates at the
lypes.

The dyuers
phantasies of men.

Syluer

Note where gold
and syluer are
engendered.

I thinke this laton
to be sum kynde
of pure copper, or
els copper that
holdeth golde. For
laton is an artificial
metal, and hath no
naturall myne.
Theyr bokes

162

Theyr letters

What is conteyned
in theyr bookes.Temples rychly
adourmed.

Prayer.

They sacrifice
chydren and
captiues.A wronge way to
heauen

Bludly gods

Villa Ricca.
Stiilla Noua.The force of an
owldie errour.Theyr priests lyue
chast.
Faggots of bones.

is engendered. They haue also laton, wherof they make such maces and hammers as are vsed in the warres. Dyggyng mattockes also, and spades: for they haue nother Iren nor steele. But lette vs nowe speake of the presentes fente into Spayne to the kyng: and syrfe of the bokes. These procuratours therfore of the newe colonie of the prouynce of *Collucana*, emong other their presentes, brought also a great number of bookes, the leaues wherof are made of the inner ryndes or barkes of trees, thinner then eyther that of the elme or of the falowe. These they finere or annoit with the pytche of molten *Bitumen*, and while they be softe, extend them to what forme them lysteth. When they be coulde and harde, they rubbe them ouer with a certeyne playster. It is to bee thoughte that they beat the playster into fine floure, and so temperryng it with sum byndyne moister, to make a crufe therwith vpon the leaues, wheron they wryte with any sharpe instrument, and blotte the same againe with a spunge or sum fuche other thyng, as marchaunt men and noble mens stewardes are accustomed to do with their wrytyng tables made of the woodde of fygge trees. The leaues of their bokes are not set in order after the maner of owres, but are extended many cubettes in length. The matters whiche they wryte, are conteyned in square tables: Not loose, but so bounde togither with the touche and flexible cley cauled *Bitumen*, that they feeme lyke wooden tables whiche had byn vnder the handes of cunnynge bokebynders. Which way so euer the booke lyeth open, there are two leaues feene and two sydes written, with as many lyngyng hyd vnder them, excepte the booke be vnfolded in length. For vnder one leafe there are many leaues ioyned togither. The formes of their letters are nothyng lyke vnto owres. But are muche more crooked and entangled, lyke vnto fyshhookes, knottes, fnares, starres, dife, fyles, and fuche other muche lyke vnto the Egypian letters, and written in lynes lyke vnto owres. Here and there betwene the lynes, are pictured the shapnes of men and dyuers beastes: And especially the Images of kynges and other noble men. Wherby it is to be thought that in fuche bookes, the factes of their kynges are conteyned as wee fee the lyke errownge vs howe owre printers exprefse the summe of historiis in pictures, that men may therby be the more allured to bye fuche bookes. The couerynges of their bookes are also artificially wrought and paynted. When they are shutte, they feeme to differre nothyng from owres in forme. In these bookes are furthermore comprehended their lawes, rytes of ceremonies and sacrificyes, annotations of Astronomie, accomptes, computations of tymes, with the maner of graffynge, sowyng, and other thynges perteining to husbandry. They begynne the yeare from the goyngen downe of the feuen staires cauled *Vergilius* or *Pleiadis*: And counte theyr monethes accordyng to the moones. They name a moneth, *Zona*, of the moone. For in theyr language, they caule the moone *Zona*, they reken the dayes by the soonne. Therfore as many daies as they name, they faye, so many sonnes. The sonne in their tonge, is cauled *Zonatico*. They destrubte the ycare (without any reson why) into twentie monethes: And the moneth into as many dayes. The temples whiche they frequent, they adourne with golden hangynge and other ornamenteis of golde and sylver with precious stones intermixte. At the springe of the daye, they perfume their temples with frankensence and make their priayers before they take in hande any other busynesse. But oh horrible crueltie. For th[e]inhabitauntes of all these tractes also, doo sacrifice chydren to their Idoles in lyke maner as wee haue sayde before. At fuche tyme as the feedes lye in the ground, and when the corne begynneth to shewe foorth the eare, they destinate to their *Zemes* fuche bondmen as they haue bought, or fuche captiues as they haue taken in the warres, which they sacrifice after that they haue made them great chiere and decked them in precious apparell. Alfo before they sacrifice these poore wretches, they lead them about the towne whyle al the people salute them humbly and reverently, affyrmynge that in shorte space, they shalbe receaued into the coompanye of the goddes. They honour their *Zemes* with an other sharp kind of deuotion: For they lette them felues bludde, eyther in the tonge, lyps, eares, legges, thyghes, or breſt, which they take in their handes and hurle it vppe towarde heauen, foo that with the faulfe therof the paument of the temple is all sparced with bludde, wherby they thincke that their goddes are well pleased. From the newe colonie (cauled *Villa Ricca*) nyne myles distante, there is a towne of xv. thoufande houſes, whiche th[e]inhabitauntes caule *Cemobal*, but owre men named it *Sybilla*. The kyng of this towne had fyue men whiche he referred to be sacrificyd. Whom when owre men wold haue delyuering, the kyng made humble request to them, sayinge that if they tooke awaie fuche men as he had consecrated to be offered to the goddes, they shulde bryngye vter destruction to hym and all his kyngdome. For if owre sacrificyses (sayd he) do cease, owre *Zemes* wyll take fuche displeasure with vs that they wyll suffer owre corne, graffes, and frutes, to bee consumed of woormes, scortched with drowth, destroyed with fluddes, or blaſted with lyghtnyng. Owre men perceauyng his ernestnesse herein, thought it beste to chose the least euel, perceauyng that it was yet no tyme to disquyett their myndes, and therfore suffered them to exercise their accustomed ceremonys. And althoughe their prieſtes promyſe them immortall glorie, eternall felicitye, and perpetuall conuerſation with the goddes after the stormye dayes of this lyfe, yet do they with heauy countenaunces giue eare to their promises, and had rather be fette at lybertie. Their prieſtes are named *Quines* in the plurell number, and *Quin* in the ſingular. They leade a pure and chaste lyfe: And are honoured of the people with feare and reverence. They make fagots of the bones of their enemyes which they haue taken in the warres,

and hange vppe the same at the feete of their *Zemes*, as tokens of the victories obteyned by their fauour. To these they adde certayne titles and superscriptions as testimonies of the same. This is straunge and worthy to be noted, that when their children are a yare oulde, the prieſtes in their temples with deuoute ceremonies and murmurynge woordes, poure water in forme of a croſſe vpon their headeſ with a cruet, wherby they ſeeme to baptife them. Neyther do they as the Iewes and Turkes, thinkē their temples polluted if any of a ſtraunge reſigion bee preſent at their ſacrifices and other ſolemnities. Wee haue nowe ſpoken ſufficienly of their bookeſ, temples, and ſuperſtitions. Lette vs nowe therfore coome to the other preſenteſ which were brought to the kyng. Emonge theſe, there were two broode and rounde plates (whiche ſumme haue named the Images of the ſoonne and moone) the one of ſiluer and the other of gold in largenesſe and roundnesſe muche lyke to the ſtones of hand mylles: yet but thynne, and in maner bothe of one of circumfeſure, that is. xxviii. ſpanneſ in circuite.

That of golde is of the weyght of three thouſande and. viii. hundredre Caſtellans, where as wee haue ſayde before that a Caſtellane is a coyne of golde which weyeth more than a Ducate by a trient, that is the thyrde parte of a pounde. In the center of this, was the Image of a kyng of halfe a cubette longe, fytinge in a t[h]rone and appareled to the knee, lyke vnto a maumette, with ſuch countenaunce as oure paynters are wonte to paynte fairies or ſprites. About the Image, were the ſhaſes of trees and floures, fo that it ſeemed to fyte as though it had byn in a field. The other of ſyluer, was made to the ſame ſimilitude, beinge alſo in maner of the fame weyght, and both of pure metall. They brought lykewyſe certeyne graynes of rude golde (that is, ſuſhe as was neuer molten) about the byggenes of fyfches or the pulſe cauled lintels in token of plentie of natvie golde. Alſo two cheyneſ of golde, wherof the one conteyned. viii. lynkeſ in the whiche were ſet two hundredre threeſcore and two fayre and cleare redde ſtoneſ, and yet no rubyeſ: furthermore, a hundredre fourreſcore and three greene ſtoneſ, and yet no emeroideſ. Neuertheleſſe, theſe are in lyke estimation with them as the other are with vs. At the edge of this cheine, there hange. xxvii. golden belleſ, hauyng betwene euyer of them, fourre jewelſ of preciouſ ſtoneſ incloſed in golde, at euyer of the which in lyke maner hange certeyne fpangels of golde. The other cheyne conſiſteth onely of fourre golden lynkeſ, beſet rounde about with a hundredre and two redde ſtoneſ, and a hundredre threeſcore and twelue greene ſtoneſ, with. xxvi. golden belleſ curiouſly wrought and placed in comely order. In the verye myddest of the cheyne, are ten great preciouſ ſtoneſ incloſed in golde, at the whiche alſo hange a hundredre golden pendaunteſ of cunnyngre woorkemanſhippe. They brought furthermore twelve paire of lether buſkynnes of diuers colourſ, ſumme imbrothered with gold and ſumme with ſyluer, with plates and iewelleſ of golde and preciouſ ſtoneſ incloſed, and at euyer of them certayne golden belleſ. Alſo certeyne myters beſette with preciouſ ſtoneſ of dyuerſe colourſ, emonge the whiche ſume are blewe like vnto ſaphires. Of creſteſ, gerdleſ, and fanneſ made of fetherſ, I wotte not what I ſhulde ſaye. But ſuerly if euer he wytteſ and iuentioneſ of men haue deferued honoure or commendacion in ſuſhe arteſ, theſe ſeeme moſte worthy to bee had in admiracion. I do not maruaile at golde and preciouſ ſtoneſ. But am in maner aſtonyſhed to ſee the woorkemanſhippe excell the ſubſtance. For I haue with woonderyngre eyeſ behelde a thouſande formeſ and ſimilitudeſ, of the which I am not able to wryte. And in my judgement, I neuer ſawe any thing whose bewtie myght to allure the eyeſ of men. As they marueyled at the naturall bewtie of the fetherſ of oure peacockeſ and pheafanteſ, fo dyd we no leſſe maruel at the artiſciall bewtie of ſuſhe thiſeſ as they make of fetherſ and quilles impaled with golde. For I ſawe in manye of their woorkes, all maner of natvie colourſ euen in the quilles wherof they make ſuſhe iuſtrumenteſ. They brought alſo two helmetteſ garnyſhed with preciouſ ſtoneſ of a whiteſe blewe colour. One of theſe is edged with belleſ and plateſ of golde, and vnder euyer bell two knobbeſ of golde. The other, befyde the ſtoneſ wherwith it is couered, is lykewyſe edged with. xxv. golden belleſ and knobbeſ: and hath on the creſt, a greene bird with the feete, bylle, and eyeſ, of golde. Alſo fourre ſpear'eſ muſe lyke vnto trout ſpear'eſ or yele ſpear'eſ, the woodde wherof is alſo couered with quilles of diuers colourſ marueilouſly wreathed with golden wyerſ and plateſ intermyxte. Euyer of theſe ſpear'eſ haue three pikeſ, whose edges or teeth are all of preciouſ ſtoneſ made faste with wyerſ of golde. Of like workmanſhip they brought a great ſcepter byſet with preciouſ ſtouneſ and belleſ of gold, alſo a braſlet of gold, and ſhoweſ made of a harteſ ſkyne, fowed and imbrothered with golden wyerſ, with a white ſole beneth. Furthermore a glaſſe of a bryght blewe ſtone, and an other of white, both encloſed in golde. Likewiſe a preciouſ ſtone of the kynde of them that are cauled *Sphinges*, incloſed in golde. Furthermore the heade of a great lyſarde, two great ſhelles, two duckeſ, the ſhaſeſ of diuers other byrdeſ, foul'e, and fyſheſ, and all of maſſie golde. Furthermore. xxiii. rounde and ſquare targetteſ, shieldeſ, and buckelerſ of golde, and fyue of ſyluer. Alſo a triple crowne of plateſ and wyerſ of golde marueylouſly wreathed with quilles and fetherſ of diuers colourſ, hauing on the fronte a plate of golde on the whiche is grauen the Image of the Idle *Zemes*. About this Image, hange fourre other plateſ like croſſeſ of gold in the whiche are grauen the headeſ of diuers beaſteſ, as lyons, tygers, woulues, and ſuch other. They brought alſo the ſymilitudeſ of certeyne beaſteſ made ſumme of roddes or twygges, and ſum of woodde with the beaſteſ owne

163
A figure of baptism.

The preſenteſ ſent into Spayne to the kyng.
Two Images of gold and ſilver.

Two cheineſ of gold marueſchly byſet with preciouſ ſtoneſ and iewel.

Buskynneſ.

Myters.
How can we then cau them beaſtly
or Barbaſous.
If they had changed their
gold for oure Iren,
they had not ſo ſone bynsuſtuct.

Quyll'eſ.

Helmets.

A byrde.
Sppear'eſ.

A ſcepter.
A braſlet.
Shooſ.
164
Glasses.
Byrdeſ, foul'e, and
fyſheſ of gold.
Targeteſ, etc. of
gold.
A crowne of golde

Croſſeſ.

Images of beastes.
Shutes.

Cloth of arras.
A souldyers clooke.

Regesters of the
th[e]jaffayres of
India.

Th[e]lautoritie of
the Lieuetenaunt.

The Spanyardes
of Dariena.

Sancta Maria
Antiqua.

Petrus Arias
whom the
Spanyardes name
Pedrarias.
This sea the
spanyarde caule
Mar del sur.

165
Contention
betwene Vaschus
and Petrus Arias.

Petrus Arias
commadeth that
Vaschus be put
to death.

Vaschus is
accused.

Vaschus is put to
death.

skynnes theron, and garnysshed with collers of laton belles. Lykewise diuers shites weaued of gossampyne cotton of sundry colours, wherof two are rychely frysnged with golde and precious stones, and three other with quilles and fethers intermyxte with gossampyne cotton of sundrye colours and chekered lyke the panes of a cheste borde. Sum are on the one fyde, of blacke, white, and redde colours: and on the other fyde, plaine without any varietie. Other sum, are wrought in lyke maner with variable colours with a wheele or circle of blacke in the myddest intermyxte with shyning fethers and sparkes of golde lyke starres. They brought also cloth of Aras or Verdure of marteylous workmanshyppe. Likewise a souldiers cloke fuche as their prynces weare in the warres, with certeyne priuye coates of fence, and fundrye timentes perteynyng to their heads, with also many fuche other thynges more bewtiful to the eye then ryche or precious, wherof to entreate particularly, it shoulde be more tedious then profitable. I lete passe here also to speake of many particular nauigations and of the trauailes and daungers whiche they susteyned in the same, with the monsters and secretares of nature they fawte: whiche are all conteyned in the regesters of owre Senate of th[e]jaffayres of India, owt of the whiche I haue selected these fewe annotations, fuche as seemed to me moste meete to bee publisched. Notwithstandyng these ryche and goodly presentes, yet were they that brought them, and also *Cortesius* the governour of the nauye and autour of erectinge their newe colonie in thos remote regions, adiudged by the Senate to haue doen ageinst ryght and equitie, in that they attempted the same withoutte th[e]aduice of the governour of the Ilande of *Cuba* who fente them foorth by the kynges auctoritie, where as they dyd other thinges besyde their commysyon, ye aloughye they wente to the kyng, not fyrst knowyng his pleasure whom the kyng had substitute his Lieuetenaunt in that Ilande. In so muche that by his procuratour, he accused them before the Senate as fugitiue theeuues and traytors. They on the other parte alleaged that they had dooen the kyng better seruyce then he: And that they had shewed suffycient obedience in appealing to the kyng as the hygher Judge. But the governour required by the vertue of his commission and the kinges letters pattentes that they myght be headed for their disobedience ageinst hym whom they knewe to be autorised by the kyng. They ageine replied that they had not offend the kyng, but rather deserued rewarde for their great dangiers and trauails. Bothe the rewarde and punishment were deferred, and a daye appointed when bothe parties shoule bee harde. Leete vs nowe therfore coome to the Spaniardes of *Dariena*, th[e]cjhabitours of the goulfe of *Vraba* in the supposid Continent. We haue fayde before that *Dariena* is a ryuer runnyng towarde the West syde of the goulfe of *Vraba*. On the banke of this ryuer, the Spaniardes planted theyr fyrst colonie or habitation after they had vanquysshed kyng *Chemacus*. This colonie they named *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, by reason of a vowe whiche they made to the virgine Marie in the tym of the battaile ageynst *Chemacus*. To these (as wee haue made mention in the ende of owre decades) was *Petrus Arias* fente with a thoufande and two hundredth men at the request of *Vaschus Nunez Balboa*, who was then the governour of *Dariena*, and the fyrst that found and discoured the large South sea heretofore vnknownen. We haue also declared how at the arriall of *Petrus Arias* the newe governour, he deuided his armie into Centurions, that is, capitaines ouer hundrethes, whom hee fent forth dyuers waies. What tragedies folowed hereof, I wyll absolute in fewe woordes, bycause all are horrible and vnplesaunte. For fence we fynysched owre Decades, there hath byn none other then kyllynge, fleyinge, murthrynge and accufinge. The kyng made *Vaschus* governoure but duryng his pleasure. His courage was fuch, and his factes so notorious, that he coulde not longe abyde the hautynes of *Petrus Arias*. To bee breefe, theyr faulyngs owt and discord confounded al thynges. John Cacedus the pulpite fryer of the order of saynt Frances, dyd his vttermoste endeouour to make them frendes, promysyng vnto *Vaschus* the dowghter of *Petrus Arias* to wyse. But no meanes coulde be founde howe these two which bore the chiefe rule, myght bee brought to agreement. At the length the matter grewe to such extremitie, that *Petrus Arias* syndyng occasion of querelyng ageynst *Vaschus*, fent procelle to the maiestrates of the towne, wherby he commaunded them to strangle *Vaschus*, and fyue other which were chiefe capitaynes vnder hym: Alleagynge that they and their confederates conspired to rebel in the South sea: And that *Vaschus* hym selfe for that intente, had buylded and furnished fourre shippes to search the south coastes of the supposid continent: Also that to his three hundredth souldiers and companions which he had with hym, he shulde speake woordes of this effecte as foloweth. My frendes, and felowes of my longe peynes and trauayles: Howe longe shall we be subiecte to the commaundement of other, sythe wee haue bydden the brunt and ouercumme th[e]enterprise for the whiche this newe governour was sent wi so great a multitude? Who can any longer abyde his pryd and infolencie? Lette vs therefore folowe these coastes whither so euer fortune shall dryue vs: And among these so many plefaunt and fruteful prouinces of this large lande, let us chose one in the whiche wee maye with libertie spende that portion of owre lyues which yet remayneth. Who can fynde vs, or shalbe able to profer vs vyolence? When these or the lyke woordes were declared to *Petrus Arias*, he fente to the Southe partes for *Vaschus*, wyllyng hym by the vertue of his commission to repayne to him foorthwith. *Vaschus* obeyed, and at his commynge was caste in pryson: yet constantly denyinge that euer he entended any fuche thyng. Wytnesses were brought ageynst hym, and his wordes rehearsed from the begynnyng. To conclude, he was iudged woorthy death, and was put to

execution. And this is the rewarde wherwith the blynde goddesse oftentimes recompenseth such as haue fusteyned great trauyales and daungours to bee hyghly in her faouure. *Petrus Arias* leauyng his wyfe in *Dariena*, embarked hym selfe in the shippes left of *Vafchus*, to th[e] intent to searche those coaltes. But whether he be returned or not, we haue yet no certeyne knowleage. He hath also his fortune. Yet is there an other governour assignd, whose name is *Lupus Soja*, the viceroye of the Ilandes of *Canarie*. What stomake *Petrus Arias* may haue yf he retorne, let good men judge. There was nothyng doone vnder hym woorthy glorie. Sume thynke that he was at the begynnyng so flacke and negligent in his office, and not feuerie in correctyng errors and misorders. But we wyll leauue him and reheare fumwhat wherof we haue byn lately informed as touchyng the great and diepe ryuer of *Dabaiba*, the whiche for the greatness and largenes thereof, owre men named *Grandis*, that is, great, as we haue noted in owe Decades. This riuere fauleth into the furthest corner of the goulfe of *Vraba* by feuen portes or mouthes dooth the ryuer of *Nilus* into the Egyptian sea, whose large description yowe may also reade in owe Decades. That the mountaynes on every syde about this ryuer, are rych in golde, we haue learned by th[e] information of th[e] inhabitauntes, of whom we made diligent inquisition. *Vafchus*, and befide hym other governours and Lieuetenauntes, haue fourt tymes entered into this ryuer with their armyes in battayle array, and with dyuers kyndes of shippes syrte for the space of fortie myles, then sytiae, and at the last fourefore, at an other tyme also ouerthwarte the ryuer. Oh shamefull chaunce and detestable couwardenes of owe men. A naked nation encouterynge with them that had apparell, the armed ageynste the vnarmed, had the ouerthrowe in maner in all confictes, and were other all slayne or wounded. They vfe inuenemed arrowes, and are suche experte archers, that if they espye any place of their enemie bare or vnarmed, they wyll not lyghtly fayle to ftryke him there. They vfe also many darts, which in the tyme of the battayle they hurle so thicke a farre of, that they take the lyght of the sonne from their enemies as it were with a clowde. They haue lykewise brode and longe swordest made of a heauie and harde kinde of woodde, wherewith they feyght fiercely neare at hande. *Vafchus* hym selfe receaued many woundes in encouterynge with them. And thus by reason of the fiercenes of these barbarians, the ryuer of *Dabaiba* is yet lefte vnsearched. We wil nowe speake fumwhat more of the Iland of *Hispaniola* (which the Spaniardes caule *Spagnuola*) the moother and chief of al other landes or Ilandes wherof we intended to wryte. In it the Senate is now restored, and fyue Judges assignd to give lawes to all the inhabitauntes of those tracts. But in shorte tyme, they shall ceafe gatherynge of golde although there bee greate plentie: by reason they shall lacke labourers and myners, forasmuch as th[e] inhabitauntes whose helpe they vied herein, are brought to a smaule number, consumed partly by warre, and many more by famen that yeaire that they dygged vp the rootes wherof they made their beste breade, and lefte of fowyne their grayne of *Maizium* which is their common foode, supposinge hereby to haue dryuen owe men owt of the Ilande, who had vtyales fente them from Spayne. A great number of them also, dyed of newe and straunge diseases which in the yeaire of Christe a thousande fyue hundred and xviii. consumed them lyke rotten sheep.

And (to faye the truth) owe mens vnfaciable defyre of gold, so oppressed these poore wretches with extreme labour and toyle, where as before they lyued pleasauntly and at lybertie, gyuen onely to playes and paulymes as daunfyng, syffhinge, folyng, and hantynge of lylle connies, that many of them perisched even for verye anguyse of mynde, the whiche (with their vnaccustomed labour) are thynges of them selues suffycient to engender many newe diseases. But the kynge and the Senate haue nowe determyned that they be reduced to a people, and to gyue them selues onely to increaſe, and tyllage of the ground: And that onely such as are bought or taken owt of other regions, bee appointed to labour in the golde mynes. But it shall suffyce to haue fayde thus muche of the pestiferous hunger of golde. Therfore to speake of other matters: It is a marueylous thyng to confyder howe all thynges increaſe and prosper in this Ilande. There are nowe. xxviii. fuder preſſes wherwith great plentie of fuder is made. The canes or reedes wherin the fuder groweth, are bygger and hygher then in any other place: And are as bygge as a mans arme in the brawne, and higher then the stature of a man, by the halfe. This is more woorderfull, that where as in Valentia in Spaine (where a great quantite of fuder is made yearly) where fo euer they applye them selues to the great increaſe therof, yet doth every roote bring foorth not paste fyue, or fyxe, or at the moſte feuen of those reedes: wheras in *Hispaniola* one roote beareth twentie, and oftentimes thirtie. Foure footed beastes and cattayle, are marueylously increased in this Ilande. And albeit that the rauenynge hunger of golde hath hitherto greatly hyndered owe men from tyllage of the ground, yet is there greate plentie of wheate, whiche profereth fo wel that it yealdeſt sumtyme a hundredth foulde: And this eſpecially on the hylls or rydges of the mountaynes propsectyng towarde the North. Vines do also increaſe here with no leſſe frutefulnesſe. What ſhuld I ſpeake of the trees that beare *Cafſia fistula*, brought firſt into this Iland from the other Ilandes neare vnto the ſuppoſed Continent, as we haue noted in our decades? There is nowe ſuche plentie hereof, that after a fewe yeares we ſhall haue a pounde of the price that wee paye nowe for an ounce. Of the brefyle and mirobalane trees, with other innumerable prerogatiues and benefites whiche nature hath plentifullly giuen to this bleſſed Iland, we haue ſpoken ſufficienly

*Petrus Arias.**Lupus Soja.*The great ryuer of
Dabaiba or
GrandisThe goulfe of
Vraba.
The ryche
mountaynes of
Dabaiba.Fierce and warlyke
people.

Dartes.

Swoordes of
beaucie wood.
168Hispaniola.
Ouidius wryteth
that ther are nowe
v. monasteries.Newe and strange
diseases.The ſugar of
Hispaniola.

Sugar of Valentia.

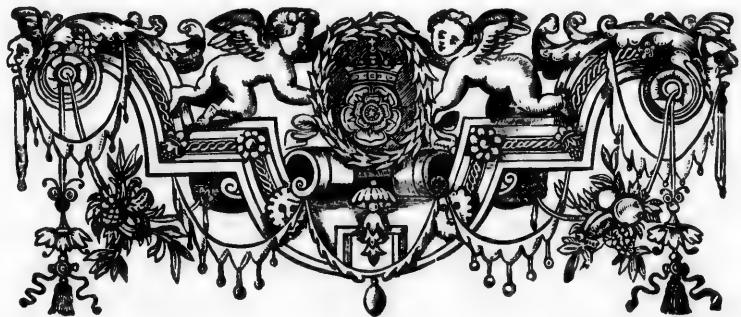
A token of
marueylous
frutefulnes.
Cattayle.

Wheate.

Vines.
*Cassia fistula.*Brasyle.
Myrobalanes

in our decades. Yet haue I thought good to repeate part of the same, bycause I think that the wittes of many readers haue diuerted from the weyght of great affaires, to the recordation of such pleasaunt thynges. And yet do not suche thynges as are fauery, engender tedy-oufnesse, so that a precious matter bee adourned with a precious vesture.

FINIS.



167 EXEMPLAR BVLLAE SEV
DONATIONIS, AVTORITATE
CVIVS, EPISCOPVS ROMANVS

Alexander eius nominis sextus, con-
cefisit et donauit Castellæ regibus
et suis successoribus, regiones
et Insulas noui orbis in
Oceano occidental iHif-
panorum nauigationi-
bus repertas.



LEXANDER EPISCOPVS, seruus
seruorum Dei, Charissimo in Christo
filio Ferdinandῳ Regi, et Charissi-
mae in Christo filiae Elizabeth
Reginæ Castellæ, Legionis, Aragonum,
Sicilie, et Granatæ, illistribus, salu-
tem et Apostolicam benedictionem.

Inter cetera Diuinæ maiestati beneficita opera
et cordis nostri defiderabilia, illud profecto potissimum
existit vt fides catholica et Christiana religio nostris
prefertim temporibus exaltetur ac vibilit amplietur
ac dilatetur, animarumque salus procuretur, ac barbaræ
nationes deprimantur et ad fidem ipsam reducantur.
Vnde cum ad hanc sacram Petri fedem Diuina fauente
clementia (meritis licet imparibus) euocati fuerimus,
cognoscentes vos tanquam veros catholicos reges et
principes: quales semper suisse nouimus, et a vobis
præclare gelta, toti pene orbi notissima demonstrant,
nendum id exoptare, sed omni conatu, studio, et diligen-
tia, nullis laboribus, nullis impensis, nullisque par-
cendo periculis, etiam proprium fanguinem effundendo
efficere, ac omnem animum vestrum, omneque conatus
ad hoc iam dudum dedicare, quemadmodum recuperato
regni Granatæ a tyrannis de Sarracenorum hodier-
nis temporibus per vos, cum tanta Diuini nominis
gloria facta, testatur. Digne ducimur non immerito,
et debemus illa vobis etiam sponte, ac fauorabiliter
concedere, per quæ huiusmodi sanctum ac laudabile
ab immortali deo acceptum propositum, indies feruen-
tiori animo ad ipsius dei honorem et Imperij Christiani
propagationem, prosequi valeatis. Sane accepti-
mus quod vos qui dudum animum propofueratis aliquas

171 THE COPPIE OF THE BULL
OR DONATION, BY TH[E]AU-
TORITIE WHEROF, POPE

Alexander the fyxt of that name,
gaue and graunted to the kynges of
Caystle and theyr successours the
Regions and Ilandes founde in
the Weſte Ocean ſea by
the nauigations of the
Spanyardeſ.



LEXANDER byshoppe, the ſeruaunte of
the ſeruantes of God: To owre moſte
deare beloued fonne in Chrift Kynge
Ferdinande, And to owre deare be-
loued daughter in Chryſte Elyzabeth
Queene of Caystle, Legion, Aragon,
Sicilie, and Granata, moſt noble
Princes, Gretyngē and Apoftolical benediction.

Amonge other woorkes acceptable to the diuine
maieſtie and accordyngē to owre hartes defyre, this
certeinely is the chiefe, that the Catholyke faſth and
Christian religion, ſpecially in this owre tyme may in
all places bee exalted, amplified, and enlarged, wherby
the health of ſoules may be procured, and the Barbarous
nations subdued and brought to the faſth. And there-
fore wheras by the fauoure of gods clemencie (although
not with equall deserthes) we are cauled to this holy
feate of Peter, and vnderſtandyngē you to bee trewe
Catholyke Princes as we haue euer knownen you, and
as youre noble and worthy factes haue declared in
maner to the hole worlde in that with all your ſtudie,
diligence, and induſtrye, you haue ſpared no trauayles,
charges, or perels, aduenturyngē even the thedyngē of
your owne bludde, with applyingē yowre hole myndes
and endeouers here vnto, as your noble expeditions
achyued in recoueryng the kyngdomē of Granata from
the tyranny of the Sarracens in theſe our dayes, do
playnely declare your factes with ſo great glorie of the
diuine name. For the whiche as we thinkē you woorthy,
ſo ought we of owre owne free wyl fauorably to
graunt all thynges whereby you maye dayly with more
feruent myndes to the honoure of god and enlargyngē
the Christian empire, prosecute your deuoute and laud-

insulas et terras firmas remotas et incognitas, ac per alios haec tenus non repertas, querere et inuenire, vt illarum incolas et habitatores ad colendum redemptorem nostrum et fidem catholicam profitendum reduceretis, haec tenus in expugnatione et recuperatione ipsius regni Granatae plurimum occupati, huiusmodi sanctum et laudabile propositum vestrum ad optatum finem perducere nequisiis: Sed tamen sicut Domino placuit, regno predicto recuperato, volentes defiderium vestrum adimplere, dilectum filium Christophorum Colonum virum utique dignum et plurimum commendatum ac tanto negotio aptum, cum nauigis et hominibus ad familia instructis, non sine maximis laboribus, ac periculis, et expensis destinatis vt terras firmas et Insulas remotas et incognitas, huiusmodi per mare vbi haec tenus nauigatum non fuerat, diligenter inquireret. Qui tandem (Divino auxilio facta extrema diligentia in mari Oceano nauigantes) certas insulas remotissimas et etiam terras firmas quae per alios haec tenus repertas non fuerant, inuenierunt. In quibus plurimae gentes pacifice viuentes, et (vt asseritur) nudi incedentes, nec carnis vescentes, inhabitant: Et vt prefati nuncij vestri posunt opinari, gentes ipsae in Insulis et terris praedictis habitantes, credunt unum deum creatorem in Cœlis eise, ac ad fidem catholicam amplexandum et bonis moribus imbuendum, fatis apti videntur: Specie habetur, quod si erudirentur, nomen Salvatoris Domini nostri Iesu Christi in terris et in Insulis praedictis facile induceretur. Ac prefatus Christopherus in una ex principalibus Insulis praedictis, iam vnam turrim satis munitam, in qua certos Christianos qui secum iuerant, in custodiā et vt alias Insulas ac terras firmas remotas et incognitas inquirerent posuit, construi et aedificari fecit. In quibus quidem Insulis et terris iam repertis, aurum, aromata, et aliæ quamplurimæ res preciose diuersi generis et diuersæ qualitatibus reperiuntur. Vnde omnibus diligenter, et præfertim fidei catholice exaltatione et dilatatione (prout decet Catholicos Reges et Principes) consideratis, more progenitorum vestrorum claræ memorie Regum, terras firmas et insulas praedictas, illarumque incolas et habitatores, vobis diuina fauente clementia subiictere et ad fidem Catholicam reducere proposuisti.

Nos itaque huiusmodi vestrum sanctum et laudabile propositum plurimum in domino commandantes, ac cupientes vt illud ad debitum finem perducatur, et ipsum nomen salvatoris nostri in partibus illis inducatur, hortamur vos quamplurimum in domino, et per

able purpose most acceptable to the immortall God. We are credably informed that wheras of late you were determined to seeke and synde certeyne Ilandes and firme landes farre remote and vnknownen (and not heretofore found by any other) to th[e] intent to bringe th[e] inhabitauntes of the same to honoure owre redemer and to professe the catholyke fayth, you haue hethereto byn much occupied in th[e] expugnation and recouerie of the kyngedome of Granata, by reason whereof yow could not bryng yowre fayde laudable purpose to th[e] ende defyred. Neuerthelesse as it hath pleased almyghty god, the foresayde kyngedome beinge recovered, wyllyng t[o] accomplish the your sayde defyre, you haue, not without great laboure, perelles, and charges, appoynted owre welbeloued sonne Christopher Colonus (a man certes wel commended as mooste worthy and apte for so great a matter) well furnyshed with men and shippes and other necessaries, to seeke (by the sea where hethereto no manne hath sayled) suche firme landes and Ilandes farre remote and hitherto vnknownen. Who (by gods helpe) makynge diligente seache in the Ocean sea, haue founde certeyne remote Ilandes and firme landes whiche were not heretofore founde by any other. In the which (as is sayde) many nations inhabite lyuinge peaceably and goinge naked, not accusmuted to eatte fleshe. And as farre as yowre messengers can conjecture, the nations inhabityng the foresayde landes and Ilandes, beleue that there is one god creature in heauen: and feeme apte to be brought to th[e] imbrasinge of the catholyke faythe and to be imbued with good maners: by reason whereof, we may hope that if they well be instructed, they may easely bee induced to receave the name of owre fauour Iesu Christ. We are further aduertified that the forenamed Christopher hathe nowe buildded and erected a fortresse with good munition in one of the foresayde principall Ilandes in the which he hath placed a garrison of certeine of the Chirilian men that wente thyther with him: awell to th[e] intent to defende the fame, as also to seache other Ilandes and firme landes farre remote and yet vnknownen. We also vnderstante, that in these landes and Ilandes lately founde, is great plentie of golde and spices, with dyuers and many other precious thynges of sundry kyndes and qualitatis. Therfore al thinges diligently considered (especially th[e] amplifyinge and enlargyng of the catholike fayth, as it behoueth catholike Princes folowing th[e] exemplis of yowre noble progenitours of famous memorie) wheras yowre are determined by the fauour of almighty god to subdue and bryng to 172 the catholyke fayth th[e] inhabitauntes of the foresayde landes and Ilandes.

Wee greatly commendynge this yowre godly and laudable purpose in owr lorde, and desirous to haue the fame brought to a dewe ende, and the name of owre fauoure to be knownen in thoſe partes, doo exhort yowre in owr Lorde and by the receauyng of yowre holy baptisme wherby yowre are bounde to

faci lauerci susceptionem, qua mandatis Apostolicis obligati estis, et per viscera misericordiae Domini nostri Iesu Christi attente requirimus, vt cum expeditionem huiusmodi omnino prosequi et afflumere prona mente orthodoxae fidei zelo intendatis, populos in huiusmodi Insulis et terris degentes, ad Christianam religionem suscipiendum inducere velitis et debeatis, nec pericula nec labores villo vnuquam tempore vos deterreant, firma spe fiduciaque conceptis quod Deus omnipotens conatus vestros feliciter prosecutur. Et vt tanti negotij prouintiam Apostolice gratiae largitate donati, liberius et audacius assumatis, motu proprio non ad vestram vel

169 alterius pro vobis super hoc nobis oblatas petitionis instantiam, sed de nostra mera liberalitate, et ex certa scientia, ac de Apostolice potestatis plenitudine, omnes Insulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, detectas et detegendas versus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et construendo vnam lineam a polo Arcticō, scilicet Septemtrione, ad polum Antarcticum, scilicet Meridiem, sive terrae firmae et insulae inuentae et inueniendas sint versus India aut versus aliam quamcunque partem qua linea distet a qualibet Insularum qua vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores et Cabo verde centum leuis versus Occidentem et Meridiem.

Itaque omnes Insulae et terrae firmae repertae et reperiendae, detectae et detegendae a prefata linea versus Occidentem et Meridiem, qua per alium Regem aut Principem Christianum non fuerint actualiter possestis vsque ad diem nativitatis Domini nostri Iesu Christi proxime præteritum, a quo incipit annus presens Millesimus Quadringentessimus Nonagesimus tertius, quando fuerunt per nuncios et capitaneos vestros inuentae aliquæ prædictarum Insularum, Autoritate omnipotentis Dei nobis in beato Petro concessa, ac vicariatus Iesu Christi qua fungimur in terris, cum omnibus illatum dominis, ciuitatibus, castris, locis, et villis, iuribusque et iurisdictionibus ac partimentijs vniuersis, vobis hereditibusque et successoribus vestris (Castellæ et Legionis regibus) in perpetuum tenore presentium donamus, concedimus, et assignamus: Vusque et haeredes ac succēdētis prefatos illarum Dominos, cum plena, libera, et omnimoda potestate, autoritate, et iurisdictione, facimus, constituius, et deputamus. Decernentes nihil minus per huiusmodi donationem, concessionem, et assignationem nostram, nullo Christiano Principi quia actualiter prefatas Insulas et terras firmas possederit vsque ad prædictum diem nativitatis Domini nostri Iesu Christi ius quantum, sublatum intelligi posse aut auferri debere.

Et infuper mandamus vobis in virtutæ sanctæ obedi-

Apostolicall obedience, and earnestly require yowe by the bowels of mercy of oure Lorde Iesu Christ, that when yowe intende for the zeale of the Catholyke saythe to prosecute the sayde expedition to reduce the people of the foresayde landes and Ilandes to the Christian religion, yowe shall spare no labours at any tyme, or bee deterred with any perels, conceauyng firme hope and confidence that the omnipotent godde wyll gyue good successe to yowre godly attempts. And that beinge autorysed by the priuilege of the Apostolycall grace, yowe may the more freely and bboldly take vpon yow the enterpryse of so greate a matter, we of oure owne motion, and not eyther at yowre request or at the instant peticion of any other perfon, but of oure owne mere liberalite and certeyne science, and by the fulnesse of Apostolycall power, doo gyue, graunt, and assigne to yowe, yowre heyres and successours, al the firme landes and Ilandes found or to be found, discouered or to be discouered toward the West and South, drawyng a line from the pole Artike to the pole Antartike (that is) from the north to the Southe: Conteynyng in this donation, what so euer firme landes or Ilandes are founde or to bee founde towarde India, or towarde any other parte what so euer it bee, beinge distant from, or without the fore-sayd lyne drawnen a hundredth leagues towarde the Westle and South from any of the Ilandes which are commonly cauled *De los Azores and Cabo Verde*.

All the Ilandes therfore and firme landes, founde and to be founde, discouered and to be discouered from the sayde lyne towarde the West and South, such as haue not actually bin heretofore possesed by any other Christian kyng or pryncie vntyll the daye of the nativitie of oure Lorde Iesu Chryste laste past, from the which begynneth this present yeare beinge the yeare of oure Lorde. M. CCC. lxxxiii. when so euer any such shalbe founde by your messingers and capytaines, Wee by the autorite of almyghtie God graunted vnto vs in saynt Peter, and by the office which we beare on the earth in the steede of Iesu Christe, doo for euer by the tenure of these presentes, gyue, graunte, assigne, vnto yowe, yowre heyres, and successours (the kynges of Castyle and Legion) all those landes and Ilandes, with theyr dominions, territories, cities, castels, towres, places, and vylages, with all the ryght, and iurisdictions therunto perteynyng: constitutyng, assignyng, and deputyng, yowe, yowre heyres, and successours the lordes thereof, with full and free poure, autoritie, and iurisdiction. Decreeinge neverthelesse by this owne donation, graunt, and assignation, that from no Christian Prince whiche actually hath possessed the foresayde Ilandes and firme landes vnto the day o. the nativitie of oure lorde beforesayde theyr ryght obteyned to bee vnderstoode hereby to be taken away, or that it ought to be taken away.

Furthermore wee commaunde yowe in the vertue

entice (vt sicut pollicemini et non dubitamus pro vestra maxima deuotione et regia magnanimitate vos esse facturos) ad terras firmas et Insulas predictas, viros probos et Deum timentes, doctos, peritos, et expertos ad instruendum incolas et habitatores prefatos in fide Catholica et bonis moribus imbuendum, destinare debeatis, omnem debitam diligentiam in praemissis adhibentes.

A quibuscumque personis, cuiuscunque dignitatis, etiam imperialis et regalis status, gradus, ordinis vel conditionis, sub excommunicationis latere sententiae pena quam eo ipso si contra fecerint incurvant, districius inhibemus ne ad Insulas et terras firmas inuentas et inueniendas, detectas et detegendas versus Occidentem et Meridiem, fabricando et construendo lineam a polo Arcticō ad polum Antarcticū, siue terre firmae et Insulae inuentae et inueniendae sint versus Indiam aut versus aliam quamecumque partem quae linea distet a qualibet Insularum quae vulgariter nuncupantur de los Azores et Cabo verde centum leucis versus Occidentem et Meridiem ut praesert, pro mercibus habendis vel quauis alia cauia accedere presumat absque vestra ac heredum et successorum vestrorum predictorum licentia speciali: Non obstantibus constitutionibus et ordinationibus Apostolicis, ceterisque quibuscumque, in illo in quo imperia et dominationes et bona cuncta procedunt: Confidentes quod dirigent Domino actus vestros, si huiusmodi sanctum ac laudabile propositum prosequamini, breui tempore cum felicitate et gloria totius populi Christiani; vestri labores et conatus exitum felicissimum consequentur. Verum quia difficile foret presentes literas ad singula quaque loca in quibus expediens fuerit deferri, volumus ac motu et scientia similibus decernimus, quod illarum transiumpitis manu publici notarij inderogati subscriptis, et sigillo aliquius personae in ecclesiastica dignitate constituta, seu curiae ecclesiastica munitus, ea proribus fides in iudicio et extra ac alias vilibet adhibeatur, quae praesentibus adhiberetur si essent adhibitae vel ostense.

Nulli ergo omnino hominum liceat hanc paginam nostrae commendationis, hortacionis, requisitionis, donationis, concessionis, assignationis, constitutionis, deputationis, decreti, mandati, inhibitionis, et voluntatis infringere vel ei aufu temerario contrarie. Si quis autem hoc attentare praesumperit, indignationem omnipotentis Dei, ac beatorum Petri et Pauli Apostolorum eius, se nouerit incursum.

Datum Romae apud sanctum Petrum: Anno incarnationis Dominicæ. 1493. quarto nonas Maij: Pontificatus nostri anno primo.

of holy obedience (as yowe haue promyfed, and as wee doubt not you wyll doo yppon mere deuotion and princely magnanimitie) to sende to the sayde firme landes and Ilandes, honeste, vertuous, and learned men, suche as feare God, and are able to instructe th[e]inhabitantes in the Catholyke sayth and good maners, applyinge all theyr possible diligence in the premisses.

We furthermore strelly inhibit all maner of persons, of what state, degree, order, or condition so euer they bee, although of Imperiall and regall dignite, vnder the peyne of the sentence of excommunication whiche they shall incurre yf they doo to the contrary, that they in no case presume without speciali lycence of yowe, yowre heires, and successeours, to trauayle for marchaudies or for any other caufe, to the sayde landes or Ilandes, founde or to bee found, discouered, or to bee discouered, toward the west and south, drawing a line from the pole Artyke to the pole Antartike, whether the firme lands and Ilandes found and to be found, be situate toward India or towarde any other parte beinge distant from the lyne drawnen a hundredth leagues towarde the west from any of the Ilandes commonly cauled *De los Azores* and *Cabo Verde*: Notwithstandynge constytutions, deccres, and Apofolcall ordinaunce what so euer they are to the contrary: In him from whom Empyres, dominions, and all good thynges doo procede: Trulynge that almyghtie god directyng yowre enterpryses, yf yowe folowe yowre godly and laudable attempts, yowre laboures and trauayles herein, shall in shorte tyme obteyne a happy ende with felicitie and glorie of all Christian people. But forasmuch as it shulde bee a thyng of great difficultie thefe letters to bee caried to all suche places as shulde bee expedient, we wyll, and of lyke motion and knowlage doo decree that wher so euer they shalbe receaued with the subscription of a common notarie therunto requyred, with the feale of any perlon constitute in ecclesiasticall dignite, or suche as are autorysed by the ecclesiasticall courte, the same sayth and credite to bee gyuen thereunto in iudgement or els where, as shulde bee exhibyted to thefe pre[ente]s.

It shall therefore bee lawfull for no man to infringe or rafhely to contrarie this letter of oure commendation, exhortacion, requeste, donation, graunt, assignation, constitution, deputation, decree, commaundement, inhibition, and determination. And yf any shall presume to attempte the same, he ought to knowe that he shall thereby incurre the indignation of almyghtie God and his holye Apostles Peter and Paule. (.) (.) (.)

¶ Gyuen at Rome at saynt Peters: in the yeare of th[e]incarnation of oure Lord M. CCC. lXXXXIII. The fourth day of the nones of Maye, the syngle yeare of oure seafe. (.) (.) (.)

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

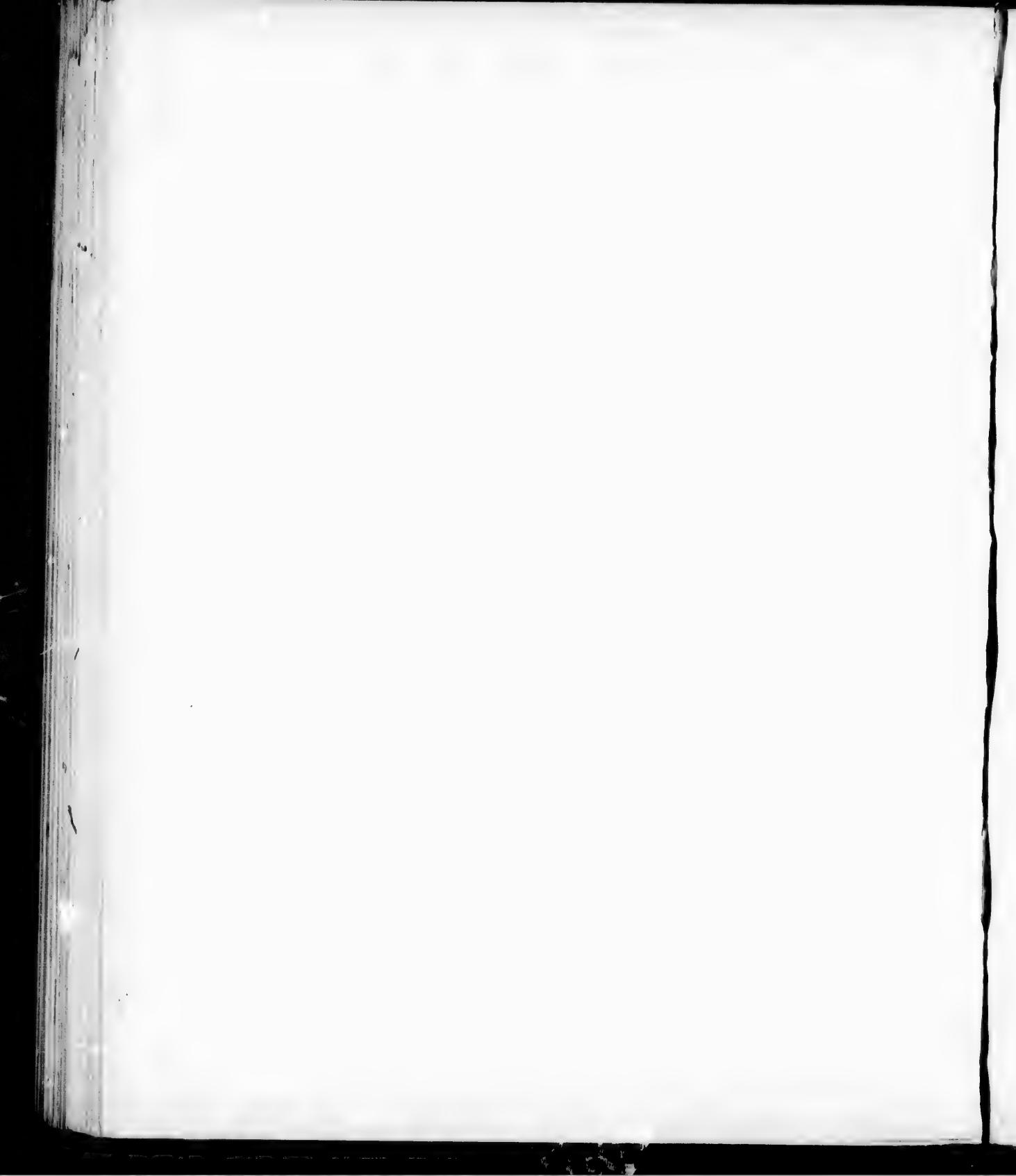
The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

— — —
SECTION II.

Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdés.

The Natural History of the West Indies.

First printed in 1526.]



TO THE READER.



Lthough amonge dyuers which haue wrytten of the Ocean and Weste Indies, there is none to be compared to Peter Martyr of Angleria, in declarynge by philosophical discourses the secrete causes of naturall affectes bothe as touchynge the lande, the sea, the starres, and other straunge woorkes of nature, yet forasmuche as of later dayes those countreys haue byn better knownen and searched, and dyuers suche particular and notable thynges founde as are conteyned in the hystories of later wryters, emonge the number of whom *Gonzalus Ferdinandus Ouidius*,

(whom lerned *Cardanus* comparreth to the ancient writers) is doubtles the chiese, I haue therfore thought good to ioyne to the Decades of Peter Martyr certeyne notable thynges which I haue gathered owte of his booke intituled the Summarie or abbrigement of his generall hystorie of the West Indies wrytten in the firme lande of the same in the citie of *Saneta Maria Antiqua in Dariena* (where he dwelte and was gouernoure many yeares) And dedicated to Th[e]emperou[r]s maiestie, as maye appeare by the epystell folowyng.

¶ TO THE MOST HYGH AND MYGHTIE
PRINCE CHARLES THE FYFTE OF THAT NAME:
EMPEROUR OF ROME, KYNGE OF SPAYNE, AND OF THE TWOO SICILIES,
of bothe the fydes of the streyght of *Faro*, Kynge of Hierusalem
and Hungarie, Duke of Burgonie and Earle of Flaunders,
Lord and inheritoure of the firme lande and Ilandes
of the Weste Ocean, etc. *Gonzalus Ferdinandus*
Ouidius his most humble seruant
wysheth health and per-
petual felicitie.



reddle in autoures that wrote before hym: And thyrdely ioyned to the same hystorie, such thynge as he hym selfe had seene as mooste certeyne testifonie. Whose exemple I folowyng, wyl in this my breefe summarie reduce and represent to yowr maiesties memorie suche thynge as I haue seene in yowre Empyre of the West Indies aswell in the Ilandes as in the firme lande of the Ocean sea, where I haue ferued now more then twelve yeares in the place of furuoyer of the golde mynes by the commaundemente of the Catholyke kynge *Don Fernando* the fyfte of that name and graundfather vnto yowre maestie, to whom god gaue great fame and glorie. Sense whose death also I haue lykewies ferued and truft whyle the rest of my lyfe yet remayneth, to ferue yowre maestie as shall please yowe to commaunde. As touchyng which thinges and such other lyke, I haue more largely written in a hystorie begunne as fone as my age was rype to take suche matters in hande. Wherein furthermore I haue made mention of suche thynge

as haue chaunced in Spaine, from the yeare. 1494. vnto this tyme. Addynge also thereunto fuche thynges worthy memorie as I haue obserued in other realmes and provinces where I haue trauayled. And haue likewife particularly wrytten the lyues and worthy actes of the catholyke Princes of famous memorie *Don Ferdinando* and lady Elizabeth his wyfe to theyr last dayes. After whose fruition of heauenly Paradyse, I haue noted fuche thynges as haue chaunced in yowre most fortunate succession. Not omittynge particularly to wryte a large booke of such thynges as haue seemede moche worthy to bee noted as touchyng yowre maiesties Indies. But for asmuche as that volume remaineth in the citie of *San. Dominico* in the Ilande of *Hippaniola* where I dwell and am placed in houshalde with wyfe, chyldren, and famelie, I haue brought no more with me of that my wrytinge then I beare in memorie. Determynyng notwithstandingynge for yowre maiesties recreation to make a breefe rehearsal of certeyne notable thynges wherof I haue more largely entreated in my sayde general historie, and such as may feeme moche worthy to bee redde of yowre maiestie. Of the which, although a great parte haue byn wrytten by other who haue also seene the same, yet perhappes they are not so exactly and particularly described as of me, forasmuche as in maner all that trauayle into these Indies haue greater respecte to laker and gaynes then diligently to searche the woorkes of nature wherunto I haue byn euer naturally inclyned, and haue therfore with all possible endeouour applied myne eyes and intelligence to fynde the same. And this presente Summarie shall not bee contrary or dyuers from my larger historie wherein (as I haue sayde) I haue more amplie declared these thynges: but shal onely more breefely expresse th[e]ffect therof vntyl such tyme as Godde shal restore me to myne owne house, where I may accomplayfhe and synfishe my sayd general hystorie. Wherevnto to gyue the fyrist principle, I say that *Don Christopher Colonus* (as it is well knownen) beinge the fyrist Admyrall of this India, discouered the fame in the dayes of the Catholyke kyng *Don Ferdinand* and the lady *Elyzabeth* his wyfe, graundfather and graundmother vnto yowre maiestie: In the yeare. 1491. And came to *Barzalona* in the yeare 1492. with the fyrist Indians and other shewes and proffes of the great ryches and notice of this west Empire. The whiche gyste and benefyte was fuche, that it is vnto this daye, one of the greatest that euer any subiect or seruant hath done for his prince or countrey, as is manifeste to the hole worlde. And to faye the trewth, this shall doublefesse bee so commodious and profitable vnto the hole realme of Spayne, that I repute hym no good Castilian or Spanyarde that doothe not recognise the fame. And (as I haue sayde before) forasmuch as in my sayde generall historie I haue more largely intreated of these thynges, I intend at this present only briefly to rehearse certeyne especiall thynges, the whiche furerly are verye fewe in respecte of the thousandes that myght bee sayde in this behalfe. Fyrist therfore I wyl speake sumwhat of the nauigation into these parties. Then of the generation of the nations whiche are founde in the same, with their rytes, customes, and ceremonys. Also of beastes, foulcs, byrdes, woormes, syffhes, feas, ryuers, sprynges, trees, plantes, herbes, and dyuers other thynges which are engendered bothe on the lande and in the water. And forasmuche as I am one of th[e]order and company of them that are appointed to retorne into these regions to serue yowre maiestie, yf therfore the thynges conteyned in this booke shall not bee distincte in such order as I promifed to performe in my greater worke, I desyre yowre maiestie to haue no respecte herevnto, but rather to confyder the noueltie of fuche straunge thynges as I haue herein declared, whiche is the chiefe ende that moued me to wryte. Protestyng that in this Summarie I haue wrytten the trewth of fuche thynges as coome to my remembraunce: wheroft not onely I my selfe can testifie, but also diuers other worthy and credible men which haue bin in those regions, and are nowe presente in yowre maiesties courte. And thus it shal suffyce to haue saide thus much vnto yowre maiestie in maner of a proheme vnto this prefent worke which I most humbly defyre yowre maiestie as thankfully t[o]accept, as I haue wrytten it faythfully.

C Of the ordinary nauygation from Spayne to the Weste Indies.



He nauygation whiche is commonly made from Spayne to the Weste India, is from Siuile, where yowre maiestie haue yowre houfe of contractation for thosse partes, with also yowre offycers therunto perteynyng, of whom the capitaines take their passeporte and lycence. The patrons of suche shippes as are appoynted to these vyages, imbarke them felues at *San Luca di Barameda*, where the ryuer *Cuadalchiber* entereth into the Ocean sea. And from henfe they folowe their courfe toward the Ilandes of Canarie. Of these feuen Ilandes, they commonly touche two, that is, eyther *Grancanaria* or *Gomera*. And here the shippes are furnysshed with freshe water, fuell, cheefe, biefe, and suche other thynges whiche may feeme requyse to be added to suche as they brynge with them owt of Spayne. From Spayne to these Ilandes, is coomonly eyght dayes saylinge, or lyttle more or lesse. And when they are arryued there, they haue sayled two hundereth and fyfie leagues, whiche make a thousande myles, accomptyng fourre myles to a league as is their maner to recken by sea. Departyng

from the sayde Ilandes to folowe their courfe, the shippes tary. xxv. dayes, or a lyttle more or leffe, before they see the fyfte lande of the Ilandes that lye before that whiche they caule *La Spagnuola* or *Hispaniola*. And the lande that is commonly fyfte seene, is one of these Ilandes whiche they caule *Ogni sancti Marigalante* (or *Galanta*) *La Deseada* (otherwise cauled *Defyderata*) *Matanino*, *Dominica*, *Guadalupe*, *San. Christual*, or summe other of the Ilandes wherof there are a great multitude lynginge aboute these aforesaide. Yet it sumtymes so chaunceth that the shippes passe withoute the fylght of any of the sayde Ilandes, or any other that are within that courfe vntyll they coome to the Iland of *Sancti Iohannis* or *Hispaniola*, or *Jamaica*, or *Cuba*, whiche are before the other. It may also chaunce that they ouerpasse all these likewyse, vntyll they faule vpon the coastes of the fyrm lande. But this chaunceth when the pylote is not well practisid in this nauigation or not perfecte in the trewe carde. But makynge this viage with expercie maryners (wherof there is nowe great plentie) one of the sayde fyfte Ilandes shall euer bee knownen. And from the Ilandes of Canarie to one of the fyfte of these, the diafflance is nyne hundredth leagues by saylinge, or more. And from henfe to the citie of saynte Dominike which is in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, is a hundredth and fyfie leagues: So that from Spayne hitherto, is a thousand and three hundredth leagues. Yet forasmuche as sumtymes the nauigation procedeth not so directly, but that it chaunceth to wander on the one syde or on the other, wee may well saye that they haue nowe sayled a thousande and fyue hundredth leagues and more. And if the nauigation be slowe by reasoun of summe hynderaunce, it commonly chaunceth to be synynched in. xxxv. or. xl. dayes. And this happeneth for the moste parte, not accomptyng the extremes: that is, eyther of them that haue slowe paßage, or of them that aryue in verye shorte tyme. For wee owghte to confyder that which chaunceth most commonly. The returne from those partes to Spayne, is not synynched without longer tyme, as in the space of l. [fifty] dayes, or a lyttle more or lesse. Neuertheleſſe in this preſent yeare of. 1525. there came fourre shyps from the Iland of *San Dominico* to saint *Luce* in Spaine, in. xxv. dayes. But (as I haue ſayd) we ought not to iudge of that whiche chaunceth ſeldome, but of that which happeneth most ordinarilie. This nauigation is very ſafe and much vfed, euen vnto the ſayd Ilande. And from this to the firme land, the shippes trauele diuers wayes for the ſpace of fiue, fyxe, or feuen dayes faylyng, or more, accordyng to the partes or coaſtes whither they directe their vyages, forasmuche as the ſayde firme lande is verye great and large, and many nauigations and vyages are directed to dyuers partes of the fame. Yet to the firme land whiche is neareſt to this Iland, and lyeth directly ageynſt *San Dominico*, the paſſage is synynched in the tyme aforeſayde. But it halbe muſche better to remytte all this to the carde of theſe nauigations and the new Coſmographie, of the whiche no parte was knownen to Ptolomie or any other of the owide wrytters.

C Of twoo notable thynges as touchyng the West Indies: And of the great rycheſſe brought from thense into Spayne.

After my vnuerfall description of the historie of the Indies, there commeth to my remembraunce two thynges chiefly to be noted as touchyng th[e]empire of this West Indies perteynyng to the dominion of yowre maiefte. And therof befyde the other particulars wherof I haue suffyciently spoken, are to be confydered as thinges of great importaunce. Wherof, the one is the shorthenesse of the way and with what expedition yowre maiefsties shyppe maye passe beyonde the mayne fyrm lande of theſe Indies into the newe Southeſſe cauled *Mare del Sur* lyynge beyond the ſame. And this to th[e]intent to coome to the Ilandes where the ſpices grove, befyde the other innumerable rycheſſe of the kingdomes and signiories whiche confine with the fayde ſea where are ſo many people and nations of dyuers tonges and maners. The other thinge, is to confyder howe innumerable treasures are entered into Spayne by theſe Indies, awell that whiche commeth dayly from theneſte as alſo that is continually to bee looked for, bothe of golde and perle and other marchaunties which are firſt brought into this yowre realme of Spaine before they are feene of other nations or traded into other realmes. Wherby not onely this yowre realme is greatly inriched, but alſo the benefyte therof redoundeth to the great profyte of other countreys which are neare therunto. A teſtimonye of this, are the double ducades whiche yowre maiefte haue cauſed to bee coyned, and are diſperſed throughouthe the hole worlde. But after they are once paſſed ouſt of this yowre realme, they neuer returne agen bycaufe they are the beſt curraunt money of the world. And therfore if after they haue byn in the handes of ſtraungers they chaunce to be retourned ageyne into Spaine, they coome diſguifeſſe in an other habite, and are diminiſhēd of the goodneſſe of their golde, with the flampe of yowre maiefte chaunged: So that if it were not for their ſuche defacynges in other realmes for the cauſe aforſayde, there ſhulde not bee founde ſo great quantitie of fyne golde of the coyne of any pryncipe in the worlde as of yowre maiefsties. And the cauſe of all this, are yowre Indies.

C Of the mynes of golde, and the maner of woorkyng in theym.

His particuler of the mynes of gold, is a thing greatly to bee noted: And I maye muche better ſpeakē hereof then any other man, foramuche as there are nowe twelue yeares paſte ſene I ſerued in the place of the furuicer of the meltinge ſhoppes perteynyng to the golde mynes of the fyrm lande, and was the gouernour of the mynes of the Catholyke kyng *Don Ferdinand*, after whose departure from thiſ lyfe, I ſerued longe in the fame roome in the name of your maiefte: By reaſon wherof, I haue had great occaſion to knowe howe golde is founde and wrought owt of the mynes: And do knowe ryght well that thiſ lande is excedaynge ryche: hauyng by my accompte and by the labour of my Indians and ſlauues, gathered and fyndēd a great portion of the ſame: and may therfore the better affirme thiſ by teſtimoniſe of fylght. For I am well assured that in no part of *Castilia del oro*, that is, golden Castile (otherwiſe cauled *Beragua*) no man coulde aſke me of the mynes of golde, but that I durfe haue bounde my ſelfe to haue diſcouered them in the ſpace of ten leagues of the countrey where it ſhulde haue byn demaundēd me, and the ſame to bee verye ryche. For I was alowed all maner of charges to make ſearchē for the ſame. And although golde be founde in maner euer where in thiſ regions of golden Castile, yet owtē wee not in euer place to beſtowe the trauell, and charge to get it owtē, bycaufe it is of leſſe quantitie and goodneſſe in ſum place then in ſum. And the myne or veyne whiche owtē to be folowed, ought to bee in a place whiche may ſtande to ſaue muche of the charges of the labourers, and for the administration of other neceſſary thinges that the charges may bee recompensed with gaynes. For there is no doubtē but that golde ſhalbe founde more or leſſe in every place. And the golde whiche is founde in golden Castile, is verye good, and of. xxii. caracters or better in fyneſſe. Furthermore, befyde thiſ great quantitie of golde whiche I haue fynde to be founde in the mynes, there is alſo from day to day found or otherwiſe gotten, great treasure of ſuche wrought gold as hath byn in the cuſtodiſe of the subdued Indians and their kynges, awell of ſuche as they haue gyuen for their fyne and raunfome, or otherwiſe as frendes to the Chriſtians, befyde that whiche hath byn violently taken from the rebelleſſe. But the greatest parte of the wrought gold whiche the Indians haue, is base and holdeth ſumwhat of

copper. Of this they make braslettes and chaines and in the same they close their jewels whiche their women are accustomed to weare and esteeme more then all the richeſſe of the worlde. The maner howe golde is gathered, is this, eyther of ſuche as is founde in *Zauana*, that is to ſaye in the plaines and riuers of the champion countrey being without trees, whether the earth be with graſe or without. Or of ſuche as is ſumtymes founde on the land without the riuers in places where trees growe, ſo that to coome by the ſame, it ſhalbe requisite to cutte downe many and great trees. But after whiche ſo euer of theſe two maners it be founde, eyther in the riuers or ruptures or breaches of water, or elles in the earth, I wyll ſhewe howe it is founde in bothe theſe places, and howe it is feperate and poured. Therfore when the myne or veine is diſcovered, this chaunceth by ſearchyng and prouyng in ſuche places as by certeyne fygnes and tookeſſe do appeare to ſkylfull men apte for the generation of golde and to holde golde. And when they haue founde it, they folowe the myne and labour it, whether it be in the ryuer or in the plaine as I haue ſayde. And if it bee founde on the plaine, fyrt they make the place verye cleane where they intende to dygge. Then they dygge egypt or ten foote in length and as muche in breadth: but they goo no deeper then a ſpanne or two, or more as ſhall ſeeme beſt to the maiftor of the myne, dyggynge equally. Then they wafhe all the earth whiche they haue taken owte of the ſayde place. And if herein they fynde any golde, they folowe it. And if not, they dygge a ſpanne deeper, and wafhe the earth as they dyd before. And if then alſo, they fynde nothyng, they continue in dyggynge and waffhyng the earth as before vntill they come to the hard rocke or ſtone. And if in fyne they fynd no golde there, they folowe no further to ſecke golde in that place, but go to an other parte. And it is to be vnderſtode, that when they haue founde the myne, they folowe it in digginge in the ſame meaſure in leuell and deaþt vntill they haue made an ende of al the myne which that place conteyneth, if it appere to be riche. This myne ought to conſylt of ceren feete or paces in length or breadth accordyng to certeyne orders determined. And within that compaſſe of earth, it is not lawfull for any other to dygge for golde. And where as endeth the myne of hym that ſyrle ſounde the gold, immediatly it is lawfull for any other man that wyl, with a ſtaffe to affygne hym ſelue a place by the fyde of the fame, incloſyng it with stakes or pales as his owne. Theſe mynes of *Zauana* (that is ſuch as are found in the playne) owght euer to bee ſouȝte nere to ſum ryuer or brooke or ſpringe of water, or dyke, or ſtandyn poole, to th[e]jende that the golde maye be waffhed, for the whiche purpoſe they vſe the laboure of certeyne Indians as they doo other in dyggynge of the myne. And when they haue dygged owte the myne, they fyl certeine traies with that earth, whiche other Indians haue the charge immediatly to receaue at their handes, and to carye thoſe treyes of earth to the water where it maye bee waffhed. Yet do not they that brynge it, wafhe it, but deluyer it to other, puttynge it owte of their owne trayes into theirs which they haue ready in their handes to receaue it. Theſe waffhers for the moſte parte, are the Indian women, bycauſe this woorker is of leſſe paine and trauayle then any other. Theſe women when they wafhe, are accustomed to ſytte by the waters fyde, with their legges in the water even vppe to the knees or leſſe as the place ferueth their purpoſe. And thus holdyng the trayes with earth in their handes by the handles therof, and puttynge the fame into the water, they moue them rownde aboue after the maner of ſyſtyng, with a certeyne aptenesſe in ſuche forte that there entreth no more water into the trayes then ferueth their tūne: And with the ſelfe fame apte mouyng of their trayes in the water, they euer auoyd the foule water with the earth owte of the one fyde of the vſell, and receaue in cleane water on the other ſide therof. So that by this meanes by little and lytle, the water waffheth the earth as the lyghter ſublaunce owte of the trayes, and the golde as the heauier matter refleſheth in the bottome of the fame, beyng rounde and holowe in the myddefte lyke vnto a barbars basen. And when all the earth is auoyded, and the golde gathered together in the bottome of the traye, they putte it aparte, and retorne to take more earth, whiche they wafhe continually as before. And thus they that laboure in this woorker, do gather dayly ſuche portion of golde as ſhal pleafe god to graunt to the patroneſſe of theſe Indians and ſuche other as trauaile in the fame. Furthermore, it is to bee noted that for euer two Indians that wafhe, it is requisite that two other feru them to bryng earthe from the myne, and other two to breake the fame ſmaule and ſylye their trayes therewith. Alſo befyde theſe labourers, it is neſſarye that there bee other people in the place where they woorker and reſte in the nyghte. Theſe are ſuche as make their breade, and prouyde for vytayles and other neſſaryes. So that to conclude, there are in all, fyue perſons ordinarily affigned to euerie traye of waffhers.

There is an other maner of woorkyng the mynes in riuers or brookes of runnyng waters. And this is, that in auoydynge the water of his course, after that the beddes of the ryuers are drye and vterlye emptied, they fynde golde emonge the breaches, cliftes, and ryſtes of ſtones, and among all that is in the bottome of the chanell, and where naturally the riuere runneth of greateſt force. So that it chaunceth ſum tyme, that when the bedde of the ryuer is good and ryche, they fynde in it greateſt quantitie of golde. And therfore your maiestie ought to vnderſtande for a generall rule, as it appereth in facte, that all golde is engendered in the topes and hygher places of the montayneſſe: And in continuance of time is by lytle and lytle brought downe to the vales and plaines by ſhoweres of rayne, and the faules of ſprunges, ryuers, and brookes hauyng their originall in the mountayneſſe and deſcendyng from the ſame, notwithstandingyng it bee oftentymes founde in the plaines farre

from the mountaynes. But when it chaunceth to be founde in great quantitie, it is for the moste parte amone the mountaynes and in the riuers, or their branches, more then in any other parte of the plaine. And in these two maners is it commonly founde moste abundantly. And for the better profe that golde is engendered on hyghe, and is brought downe into the lowe places, I haue one great tooken therof whiche caufeth me to beleue it for certeine. And this is to confyder that coles never putrifie nor corrupt vnder the ground, if they be made of stonge woodde. Wherby it chaunceth that diggyng the earth by the fouldes or indented places of the mountaynes, or on the sydes, and breakyng a myne in the earthe where it had not byn broken before, and hauyng nowe dygged one or two or three poles in measure, the myners founde certeyne coles of wood vnder the same leuel where they found gold. And this I saye in the earth whiche was taken for a vrgyne: that is to saye, such as had not before byn opened for any myne. The which coles coulde not naturally bee engendred there, or enter in by any meanes. But when the superficiall part of the earth was equal with the leuel where the coles were founde, it is lyke that the coles were left there by sum occasion of fyre, and that they fastned there in tyme, and that afterward in longe continuance of tyme, they were by lytle and lyttle couered with the earth which the often showers of rayne washed from the mountaynes, so that by the course of yeares the earth ouer-grew the coles vnto the fayde leuell and measure whiche had before tyme byn the superficiall parte of the earthe where the coles and golde were founde togidher: whereby it maye appeare that the golde was no more engendered there then were the coles, but brought thither from the mountaynes by the faules of waters as we haue fayne: forasmuche as the mountaynes are the matrices and bowels of all ryche metals. Further and besyde this, I say that in how muche more the gold is gone farre from the naturall place of his generation to the place where it is founde, it is so muche the more purfied and fyned and of a better carakte. And the nearer that it is founde to his proper myne or vaine where it is engendered, it is so muche the baser, fouler, and more crude, and of a baser alay and carakte, and dothe wast so muche the more in meltynge, and remayneth more brickle. Sumetyme there are founde graynes of golde of greate quantitie and of greate weyght aboue the earth and sumtymes also vnder the earth. And the greateste of all other that was founde to this daye in the Indies, was that which was loste in the sea aboue the Ilande *Beata*, whiche weyed three thousande and two hundredth Castellans of golde, which are in value four thousand a hundredth, thirtie and egypt ducades of golde, which waye one *Arroue* and seuen pounde, or. xxxii. pounde. after. xii. ounces to the pounde, which make threescore and fourre markes of golde. And I fawe in the yearre 1515. in the handes of Mychel Passamonte treaserer to yowre maiestie, two graines of the which one wayde feuen poundes, which are. xiii. markes, and are in value aboute threescore and fyue ducades of golde every marke. The other was of. x. markes, which are fyue poundes of lyke value, and of very good golde of. xxii. caracters and better. There are also founde many other greate graynes, although not equall vnto these in byggynes. And forasmuche as I haue spoken of golde, I haue thought good to declare sumwhat howe the Indians can very excellently gylte suche vesselles of copper and base golde as they make. For they can gyue them so fayre and florlyhyng a colour, that all the maffe whiche they gylte, appereathe as though it were golde of. xxii. caracters and better. This colour they gyue with a certeyne herbe as though it were wrought by the arte of any goldefymyth of Spayne or Italie, and wold of them bee esteemed as a thynge of greate ryches, and a secrete maner of gyldynge. And for as muche as I haue spoken suffisiently of the myne of golde, I wyll nowe speake sumwhat of copper bycause I haue made mention thereof. This metall is founde in many of the Ilandes of the Indies and also in the firme lande: And is founde dayely in greate quantitie holdynge sumwhat of golde. But for the desyre that owre men haue to golde, they nothyng esteeme the copper, although there myght great commoditi and profitte be had therby, and also by other metals whiche they nothyng regarde excepte syluer whiche is founde abundantly in that parte of the firme lande which is cauled newe Spayne. But of this it shall suffice to haue fayne thus muche, bycause I haue more particularly entreated of these thynges in my generall historie of India.

179

A marke, is a
pounde of viii.
ounces to the summa.
with. ii. [or] two
pounds weyght
viii. ounces, after
xii. ounces to the
li. [pound].

¶ Of the maner of fyshyng for perles.



The Indians exercise this kynde of fyshyng for the moste parte in the coastes of the North in *Cubagua* and *Cumana*. And manye of theym which dwell in the houfes of certeyne particuler lordes in the Ilandes of *San Dominico* and *Sancti Iohannis*, resort to the Ilande of *Cubagua* for this purpose. Theyr custome is to go fyue, fyxe, or feuen, or more in one of theyr *Canoas* or barkes erly in the mornynge to fume place in the sea there about where it appeareth vnto them that there shulde bee greate plentie of thosse shell fyfhes (which fume caule muscles and fume oysters) wherin perles are engendered. And there they plunge

them felues vnder the water, euen vnto the bottome, sauyng one that remaynethe in the Canoa or boate which he keepeth flyll in one place as neare as he can, lookyng for theyr retурne owte of the water. And when one of them hath byn a good whyle vnder the water, he ryseth vp and commeth swymmyng to the boate, enterynge into the same, and leauyng there all the oysters whiche he hath taken and brought with hym. For in thefe, are the perles founde. And when he hathe there rested hym selfe a whyle, and eaten parte of the oysters, he returneth ageyne to the water, where he remaynethe as longe as he can endure, and then ryseth ageyne, and swimmeth to the boate with his pray, where he reflethe hym as before, and thus continueth course by course, as doo all the other in lyke maner, being all molte experte swymmers and dyuers. And when the nyght draweth neare, they retурne to the Ilande to theyr houſes, and preſente all the oysters to the master or stewarde of the house of theyr lordē who hath the charge of the fayne Indians. And when he hath gyuen them sunwhat to eate, he layeth vp the oysters in ſafe cuſtodie vntyll he haue a great quantitie therof. Then he cauſeth the fame fyfher men to open them. And they fynde in euery of theym pearles other great or ſmaul, two or three or four, and ſumtymes ſue and fyxe, and many ſmaule graines according to the lyberalite of nature. They faue the pearles bothe ſmaule and great whiche they haue founde: And ethere eate the oysters if they wyl, or caſte them away, hauyng fo great quantitie therof that they in maner abhorre them. Theſe oysters are of hard fleſh, and not fo plefaunt in eatyn as are oweres of Spayne. This Ilande of *Cubagua* where this maner of fyfthing is exercized, is in the Northe coaſte, and is no bygger then the Ilande of Zelande. Oſtentymes the ſea encreaſeth greatly, and muche more then the fyfher for pearles wold, bycaufe where as the place is very depe, a man can not naturally reſt at the bottome by reaſon of the aboundinge of aer yſblaunce whiche is in hym, as I haue oſtentymes proued. For althoughe he may by vyoſence and force defende to the bottome, yet are his feete lyſted vp ageyne ſo that he can continue no tyme there. And therfore where the ſea is verye depe, theſe Indian fyfher vſe to tie two great ſtoones aboue them with a corde, on every fyde one, by the weyght wherof they deſcend to the bottome and remayne there vntyll they lyſteth to ryſe ageyne: At which tyme they vnoſe the ſtones, and ryſe vppe at their pleaſure. But this their aptenesſe and agilitie in ſwimming, is not the thyng that cauſeth men moſte to marauile: But rather to conſider how many of them can ſtanle in the bottome of the water for the ſpace of one hole hour, and ſumme more or leſſe, accordyng as one is more apte hereunto then an other. An other thyng there is whiche ſeemeth to me very ſtrange. And this is, that where as I haue oſtentymes demaunded of ſumme of theſe lordes of the Indians, if the place where they accuſtomed to fyſhe for pearles beyng but lytle and narrowe, wyl not in ſhorte tyme bee vterly without oysters if they conſume them fo faſte, they al anſwered me, that althoughe they bee conſumed in one parte, yet if they go a fyfhyng in an other parte or an other coaſte of the Ilande, or at an other contrary wynd, and continue fyfthing there also vntyll the oysters be lykewife conſumed, and then returne ageyne to the fyſte place, or any other place where they fyſhed before and emptied the ſame in lyke maner, they find them ageine as ful of oysters as though they had neuer bin fyſhed. Wherby we may iudge that theſe oysters ethere remoue from one place to an other as do other fyfhes, or elles that they are engendered and encreaſe in certeyne ordinarie places. This Ilande of *Cumana* and *Cubagua* where they fyſhe for theſe perles, is in the twelfe degree of the part of the ſaid coaſte which inclineth toward the North. Lykewife pearles are founde and gathered in the South ſea cauled *Mare del Sur*. And the pearles of this ſea are verye bygge. Yet not ſo bigge as they of the Ilande of pearles cauled *de las perlas*, or *Margarita*, whiche the Indians caule *Tararequi*, lying in the gouſe of fainte Michael, where greater pearles are founde and of greater price then in any other coaſte of the Northe ſea, in *Cumana*, or any other parte. I ſpeak this as a trewe teſtimonie of ſyght, hauyng byn longe in that South ſea, and makynge curioſe inquifition to bee certenly informed of al that perteyneth to the fyfhyng of pearles. From this Ilande of *Tararequi*, there was brought a pearl of the fyſhyon of a pearle, wayninge. xxxi. caratess, whiche *Petrus Arias* had amouge a thouſande and ſoo many pounds weight of other pearles whiche hee had when capitayne Gaspar Morales (before *Petrus Arias*) paſſed to the ſaide Ilande in the yeaſt. 1515. whiche pearl was of great prie. From the ſaide Ilande alſo, came a great and verye rounde pearl, whiche I brought owte of the ſea. This was as bygge as a ſmaule pellet of a ſtone bowe, and of the weight of. xxvi. caratess. I boughte it in the citie of *Panama* in the ſea of *Sur*: And paide for it fyxe hundredth and fyſtie tymes the weyght therof of good gold, and had it thre yeaſes in my cuſtodie: and after my retурne into Spaine, foulde it to th[e] erle of *Nansao*, Marquesse of Zenete, great chamberleyne to yowre maieſtie, who gaue it to the Marquesse his wyfe, the ladye *Mentia of Mendoza*. I thyncke verely that this pearl was the greateſt, fayref, and roundell that hath byn feene in thoſe partes. For yowre maieſtie ought to vnderſtānde that in the coaſte of the ſea of *Sur*, there are founde a hundredth great pearles rounde after the fyſhyon of a pearle, to one that is perfectly rounde and greate. This Ilande of *Tararequi*, whiche the Christians caule the Ilande of pearles, and other caule it the Ilande of floures, is founde in the eighthe degree on the ſouthe fyde of the firme lande in the prouynce of golden Caſtyle or *Beragua*. And theſe are the coaſtes of the firme lande where pearles are founde euen vnto this day. I vnderſtānde alſo that there are perles founde in the prouynce and Ilandes of *Cartagenia*. And ſence yowr maieſtie appoynted me a gouernour and

Of this reads more
largely in the
decades.

By the
computation of
venice. iiiii. graines
make a carette.

e which
hen one
tarynge
n these,
lers, he
ne, and
purfe, as
draweth
the house
ate, he
the fyssher
ure, and
the pearles
m away,
d not so
xercised,
atly, and
naturally
tentymes
p ageyne
ers vfe to
nd to the
and ryse
feth men
er for the
an other.
tentymes
or pearles
n so faste,
ther parte
he oysters
ed before
neuer bin
fysshers, or
Cubagua
oward the
pearles of
Argarita,
unde and
e this as a
e certenly
s brought
ande and
us Arias)
nde also,
ule pellet
a of *Sur*:
re yeares
ete, great
I thyncke
For yowre
at pearles
Terarequi,
the egypt
se are the
are perles
nour and

capytayne, I haue made further searche, and am aduertised that pearles are founde in dyuers other places as about the Iland of *Codgo* which lyeth ageynst the mouth of that porte of the Ilande of *Cartagenia* which the Indians caul *Coro*. The which Iland and porte, are on the North fyde in the tenth degree of the coastes of the firme lande.

¶ Of the familiaritie which certeyne of the Indians haue with the deuyll, and howe they receaue answere of hym of thynges to coome.



Hen the Indians begynne theyr battayle, or go to any combat or attempte any other greate matter, they haue certeyne electe menne whom they reuerendely esteeme and caule them *Tequinas*, whiche in theyr tonge is as muche to faye as masters. Notwithstandyng that they caule every man that is cunnyng in any science, by the same name, as fysshers, foulers, hunters, or makers of nettes. Thefe *Tequinas* therfore, they caule the masters of theyr aunsweres bycause they speake with *Tyra*, that is the deuyll, and bryng them aunswere what he saythe, eyther as touchyng suche thynges as they haue to doo or shall chaunce to them the day folowyng, or many dayes to coome. For the deuyll beinge fo auncient an Astronomer, knowethe the tymes of thynges and feeth howe they are naturally directed and inclined. And makethe theym beleue that they come so to passe by his ordynaunce, as though he were the lorde and mouer of all that is and shalbe: And that he gyueth the day lyght and rayne: caufeth tempest and ruleth the statons of tymes, gyueng lyfe or takyng awaie lyfe at his pleasure. By reasoun wherof, the Indians being deceaued of hym, and seing also such effectes to coome certeynely to passe as he hath tolde them before, beleue hym in all other thynges and honoure hym in many places with sacrificyes of the bludde and liues of men and odoriferous splices. And when god dispofeth the contrary to that whiche the deuell hath spoken in oracle wherby he is proued a lyer, he caufeth the *Tequinas* to perwade the people that he hath chaunged his mynde and sentence for summe of their synnes, or deuifeth summe suche lys as lyketh hym beste, beyng a skylfull maister in suche subtile and craftie deuises to deceyue the symple and ignorant people whiche hath smaile defence against so mighty and craftie an aduersarie. And as they caule the deuell *Tyra*, so doo they in many places caule the Christians by the same name, thynkyng that they greatly honoure them therby, as in deede it is a name very feete and agreeable to many of them, hauyng layde aparte all honestie and vertue, lyuynge more lyke dragons then men amonge these symple people.

Before th[e]inhabitauntes of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* had receaued the Christian faithe there was amonoge them a fecte of men whiche liued solitarilie in the desertes and wooddes and ledde their lyfe in sylence and abstinence more straightly then euer dyd the phylosophers of Pythagoras fecte, absteyning in lyke maner from the eatyng of al thynges that liue by bludde contented onely with suche fruites, herbes, and rootes as the desertes and wooddes mynistrad vnto them to eat. The professours of this fecte were cauled *Pirates*. They gaue them selues to the knowleage of naturall thynges, and vfed certeyne secrete magickall operations and superstitions wherby they had familiaritie with spirites whiche they allured into theyr owne bodyes at suche tymes as they wold take vppon them to tell of thynges to coome, whiche they dyd in maner as foloweth. When any of the kynges had occasyon to caule any of them owte of the desertes for this purpose, their custome was to fende them a portion of their syne breade of *Cazabbi* or *Maisium*, and with humble requeste and sute to defyre them to tell them of suche thynges as they woulde daundaune. After the request graunted and the place and daye appoynted, the *Pirates* coometh with twoo of his discipiles waytyng on hym, wherof the one bryngeth with hym a vessell of a secrete water, and the other a lyttle fyluer bell. When he coommeth to the place, he syteth downe on a rounde seate made for hym of purpose. Where hauyng his discipiles the one standyng on the one hande and the other on the other euen in the presence of the kyng and certeyne of his nobles (for the common people are not admytted to these misteries) and turnyng his face toward the deserte, he begynneth his inchauntement and caueth the spirit with loude voyce by certeyne names which no man vnderstandeth but he and his discipiles. After he hath dooen thus a while, if the spirite yet deferre his coommyng, he drinketh of the fayde water, and therwith waxeth hotte and furious, and inuertere and turneth his inchauntement, and letteth hym selfe bludde with a thorne, marueilously turmoilyng hym selfe as wee reade of the furious Sybillies not ceafyng vntyl the spirite bee coome: who at his coommyng entereth into hym and ouerthroweth hym as it weare a grehounde shulde ouerturne a squerell. Then for a space, he feemeth to lye as though he were in great paine or in a rapte, wonderfully tormentyng hym selfe, duryng whiche agonie, the other disciple shaketh the fyluer bell

continually. Thus when the agonie is paste and he lyeth quietly (yet withoute any fence or feelyng) the kyng or summe other in his steade, demaundeth of hym what he desyreh to knowe, and the spirite answereþ by the mouth of the rapte *Piace* with a directe and perfecte answere to all poyntes. In so muche that on a tyme certeyne Spanyardes beyng presente at these mysteries with one of the kinges, and in the Spanyshc toung demaundyng the *Piaces* of their shypes whiche they looked for owe of Spayne, the spirite answereþ in the Indian toung, and toulde them what daye and houre the shypes departed from Spayne, how many they were, and what they brought without faylyng in any poynte. If he be also demaunded of the eclypse of the soonne or moone (which they greatly feare and abhorre) he geweth a perfecte answere, and the lyke of tempestes, famen, plentie, warre or peace, and suche other thinges. When all the demaundes are synysched, his discipiles caule hym aloude, rynging the syluer bell at his eare and blowynge a certeyne pouder into his nosethrilles wherby he is rayfed as it weare from a deade sleape beinge yet sumwhat heawy headed and Faynt a good whyle after. Thus beinge ageyne rewarded of the kyng with more breade, he departeth ageyne to the deserues with his discipiles. But fence the Christian sayth hath byn disperasd throughe owe the Ilande, these deuyllis practises haue ceased, and they of the members of the deuyll, are made the members of Chryfle by baptisme forsakynge the deuyll and his workes, with the vaine curiosite of desyre of knowleage of thynges to coome, wherof the most part it is better to be ignorant then with vexation to knowe that which can not be ayoyded.

Furthermore, in many places of the firme lande, when any of the kynges dye, all his housholde seruauntes, awell women as men which haue continually serued hym, kyl them selues, beleauynge as they are taught by the deuyl *Tuyra*, that they which kyll them selues when the kyng dyeth, go with hym to heauen and serue hym in the same place and office as they dyd before on the earth whyle he lyed. And that all that refuse so to doo, when after they dye by their naturall death or otherwyse, theyr soules to dye with their bodyes and to bee diffolued into ayer and become nothyng as do the soules of hogges, byrdes, or fysshys or other brute beastes. And that only the other may enjoy the priualege of immortalitie for euer to serue the kyng in heauen. And of this false opinion commeth it that they which fowe corne or set rootes for the kynges breade, and gather the same, are accustomed to kyll them selues that they may enjoy this priualege in heauen. And for the same purpouse, caufe a portion of the graine of *Maizium* and a bundle of *Iucca* (wherof their breade is made) to bee buried with them in their graues that the same maye serue them in heauen if perhaps there shuld lacke feedes to fowe. And therfore they take this with them to begyn with all, vnyl *Tuyra* (who maketh them all these faire promises) prouyd them of greater quantitie. This haue I my selfe sene in the toppe of the mountaynes of *Guaturo*, where hauyng in pryon the kyng of that prouince (who rebelled from the obediencie of yowre maiestie) and demaundyng of hym to whom perteyned thoſe sepultures or graues whiche I fawe in his houſe, he answereþ that they were of certeyne Indians whiche flewe them selues at the death of his father. And bycaufe they are oftentimes accustomed to burye greate quantities of wrought golde with them, I caufed twoo graues to bee opened, wherein was nothyng founde but a vessell full of the grayne of *Maizium*, and a bundell of *Iucca* as I haue fayde. And demaunding the caufe hereof of the kinge and the other Indians, they answereþ that they that were buried there, were the labourers of the grounde, and men skylful in fowynge of feedes and makyng of breade, and seruauntes to the kynges father. And to the ende that theyr soules shoulde not dye with their bodyes, they flewe them selues at the deathe of the kyng their master to lyue with hym in heauen. And to the intent that they myght serue him there in the same office they referred that *Maizium* and *Iucca* to fowe it in heauen. Whereunto I answereþ them in this maner. Beholde howe your *Tuyra* deceaueth yow? And howe all that he teacheþ yow is false? Yowe fee how in so long a tyme fence they are deade, they haue not yet taken away this *Maizium* and *Iucca* which is nowe putrifid and woorth nothyng, and not lyke to bee fowen in heauen. To this the kyng replied, sayinge. In that they haue not yet taken it away nor fowen it in heauen, the caufe is that they chaunced to fynde enowgh there, by reaſon wherof they had no neade of this. To this errore manye thynges were fayde which seemed of lyttle force to remoue hym from his false opinion, and especially any ſuch as at that age are occupied of the deuyll, whom they paynt of the ſelue fame forme and coloure as he appereþ vnto them in dyuers ſhapes and formes. They make alſo Images of golde, copper, and woodde, to the ſame ſimilitudes in terrible ſhapes and ſo variable as the paynters are accustomed to paynt them at the ſeete of ſainte Mychaell the archangell or in anye other place where they paynt them of moft horriblie port[r]iture. Lykewyfe when the deuyll greatly intendeth to feare them, he threteneth to ſende them great tempeſtes which they caule *Furacanas* or *Haurachanas*, and are ſo vehement that they ouerthrowe many howfes and great trees. And I haue ſene in montaynes full of many and greate trees, that for the ſpace of three quarters of a league the mountayne hath byn ſubuerted and the trees ouerthrown and plucked owe of the earthe with the rootes: a thyng doubtleſſe to fearefull and terrible to behold, that it may verely appere to be done by the hand of the deuell. And in this cafe the Christian men ought to conſider with good reaſon, that in al places where the holy ſacrament is refuered, the ſayd tempeſtes are no more ſo owtragiouſ, or ſo perelous as they were wonte to bee.

¶ Of the temperature of the regions vnder or neare to the burnt lyne cauled
Torrida zona or the Equinoctiall: and of the dyuers seasons
of the yeare.



He landes and regions that are neare about the clymes of the Equinoctiall lyne, are naturally hotte, althowgh they bee otherwyse temperate by the diuine prouidence. And therfore suche fleshe or fyfe as is taken and kylled in these regions, can not bee preferued from putrefaction except it be rosted, foddern, or perboylde, the same daye that it is kylde. And whereas I haue sayde that such regions are naturally hot, and yet temperate by the prouidence of god, it is so in deede. And therfore not without cause the auncient autours were of opinion that the burnte lyne or *Torrida zona* where passeth the lyne of the Equinoctiall, shulde be vnhabitable by reson the soonne hath greater dominion in that place then in any other of the sphere, remaynyng continually betwene the two tropykes of Cancer and Capricorne. For when in these regions the earth is opened or dygged from the superficial parte therof to the depth of a mans heught, it is founde temperate. And within this space, the trees and plantes fasten and spreade their rootes, and no dieper. Extendyng the same as farre in breadth in the ground as do their braunches in the ayer: And enter no dieper into the grounde then I haue sayde, bycause that beneath the depth of the said space of a mans heught, the earth is verye hotte, the vpper parte beinge temperate and verye moyste awell by reson of th[e]aboundaunce of water whiche faulthe from heauen vppon that earth at certeyne ordinarie seafons of the yeare, as also for the multitude of great ryuers, brokes, sprynges and marysshes, wherby the myghtie and supreme lorde which made these landes, hath moyste prudently prouyded for the perferuation of the same.

R. E. As touchyng this poyn特 was vñknownen to the owld wryters, and without consideracion wherof reaon can not perfectly conceaue howe temperate regions shulde be vnder the Equinoctiall lyne, I haue thought good for the better manifestynge of this secrete woorke of nature, to note owte of Cardanus his booke de Elementis, howe all waters haue theiur course toward the South as to the lowest part of the earth. He wryteth therefore as foloweth. The water was made of lesse quantite then the earth and only in maner in the superficial parte therof, that place might bee lefte for the habitation of beastes, and that water by his couldeste myght temperate and not destroy the lyfe of beastes. And bycause this generation of lyuyng creatures, was only necessary on the superficial partes of the earth in comparision to the hole, therfore was the water made to occupie only the superficial parte, in the which, metals, plantes, beastes, and fyfhes shulde bee surfyded. And bycause there was great perell least it shulde be to much confument by the ayer and heate of the soonne, continual mouinge was ioynd to it, wherby it gathereth couldest and is preferued from fodeyne resolusion. For suche waters as do not moue, doo soone putrifie, and are easely refolded into ayer. By reson wherof nature prouyded for the generation of water in coulde places, as vnder the poles and mountaynes. And whereas the earth vnder the Equinoctiall shulde otherwife for lacke of moyster haue bin to much burned and scorched, nature also prouyded that that parte of the earth shulde bee loweft, by reson whereof all waters haue theiur course towards the South to mitigate with moyster th[e]extremite of heate which otherwife shulde haue byn intollerable in that clyme. And by this reson, the famous ryuer of Nilus in Egypte, albeit it haue his originall and spryng, owt of the mountaynes of the mons cauled Montes Lunae nere vnto the cycle of Capricorne, yet runnyng with all his braunches vnder and beyonde the Equinoctiall cyrle, it disparseth through owt the burnt line of *Torrida zona*, and by the same vyolent course faulthe into owre sea nere vnto the citie of Alexandria. It was necessary therfore that the greatest parte of the coulde and moyst element shulde haue recourse thither and conylyt there, whereas was the greatest necessarie therof to temper the heate of the soonne by moystryng and coolyng the earthe and the ayer, as vnder the Equinoctiall. And herewith also hath most prudent nature prouyded for the securtie and preferuation of the places lyinge betwene both th[e]extremities of heate and colde, as betwene the poles and the Equinoctiall. For the waters flowyng euer one wayes and kepyng one course, no regions can be drowned by fluddes: whiche thynge they well obserue that delyuer fieldes from inundations or overflowynges, and that take in hande to drye vp marysshes. If therfore waters had not theiur courfe and faul towards places lower or declynyng, the hole earth shulde bee ouerflowne as a maryssh. And that the most declynyng parte shulde bee towarde the South, and sumwhat hyghe about the poles, the caufe is awell the confumyng heate of the soonne in the Southe partes, as the preferuynge coulde of the hygh mountaynes nere to the poles. For we haue els where proued that heate confumeth and wafeth as coulde gathereth and preferueth. And for this cause that partie of the earthe that is nearest the poles, is, was, and euer shalbe highest, and likewise lowest in the middlef furtherf from the poles. And therfore it was not conuenient that the sonne shuld haue his course on eury syde, neither to the poles. For if it were caried alyke to every parte throughout the worlde, it is necessary that the earth bee equal: and by that reson shulde it euer bee altogether dried, or elles all ouerflowed with water. But where as this coulde not suffyce to the free course of ryuers for the often intercourse of higher places lyinge in the waye, whereby ouerflowynges and staves of waters and their corruption myght ensue, mooste prouyded nature hath gyuen this priuilege to water that it maye so muche ascende as it hath discended: that by this meanes passyng ouer mountaynes and hilles, it maye at the length bee caried into the sea. etc. Hythero Cardanus, lette vs nowe retorne to the historie.

There are also many roughe and hyghe mountaynes with temperate ayer and pleafant, cleare and moderate nightes. Of the whiche particularitie the auncient writers hauyng no certeyne knowleage, affyrmed

the said burntē lyne or *Torrida zona*, or Equinoctiall to be naturally vnhabitable. As touching which thing I am able to witnesse the contrary by testimonie of syght and feeling as by most certeine senfes, hauyng liued many years in these regions, by reason wherof better crediblē ought to be giuen to me then to suche as haue grounded their opinion onely vpon conjectures. And to speake further of the sytuation of these regyons, yowē shall vnderstande that the coaste of the Northe sea, beyng in the goulfe of *Vraba* and in the porte of *Dariena*, where the shypes arryue whiche coome owte of Spayne, is in the fyxe degree and a halfe, and in the seuenthe, and from fyxe and a halfe vnto eyght, excepte a fmaule pointe which entereth into the sea toward the North. That pointe which of this land and new parte of the worlde lieth moile towarde the East, is the cape of fainte Augustine which is in the eight degree. So that the said goulfe of *Vraba* is distant from the Equinoctiall lyne, from a hundredth and twentie to a hundredth and thirtie leagues and three quarters of a league after th[e] accompte of xvii. leagues and a halfe for euerye degree from pole to pole. And thus for a lylle more or lesse, goeth all the coaste. By reason wherof, in the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, and in all that course of the forsayde goulfe of *Vraba*, at all tymes of the yeare the dayes and nyghtes are in maner of equall length. And if there bee any dyffERENCE betwene them by reason of this fmaule distance from the Equinoctiall, it is so lylle, that in. xxiiii. hours makyng a naturall daye, it canne not bee perceaued but by the iudgement of spacioatiue men and suche as vnderstande the sphere. From hense the North flarre is feene very lowe And when the flarres which are cauled the wardens of the north flarre, are vnder the chariotte, it can not bee feene, bycause it is vnder the horisontal. And whereas I haue sayde befoore that it rayneth in these regions at certeyne ordinarie tymes, it is so in deede. For it is wynter and summer there at contrary tymes to that whiche is in Spayne, where the greateste coulde of froste and rayne is in December and Januari: And the greatest heate of sommer aboue saynt Iohannes daye at mydsommer or in the moneth of Iuly. But in golden Castile or *Beragua*, it is contrary. For the sommer and tyme of greatest drowght and without rayne, is at Chrystmas and a moneth before and a moneth after. And the tyme when it rayneth most, is about mydsommer and a moneth before and a moneth after. And this seafon whiche they caule wynter, is not for that it is any coulder then, then at any other tyme of the yeare, or hotter at Chrystmas then at other seafons, the tyme in these regions being euer after one maner, but for that that in this tyme which they caule wynter, the soonne is hyd from theyr syghtes by reaon of cloudes and rayne more then at other tymes. Yet forasmuch as for the moile parte of the yeare they lyue in a cleare, open, and temperate ayer, they sumwhat shrynde and feele a lylle coulde duryng the tyme of the said moist and cloudy ayer, althowgh it bee not coulde in deede, or at the least suche coulde as hath any sensible sharpenes.

185

C Of dyners particular thynges, as woormes, serpentes, beastes, foulē, trees. etc.



Any other thynges myght be sayde, and much differyng from these wherof I haue spoken. But to lette passe the multitude of thynges whiche are as variable as the power of nature is infinite, and to speake of suche thynges as coome chiefly to my remembraunce as mooste worthy to be noted, I wyll syrly speake of certeyne lylle and troubelous beastes whiche maye feeme to bee engendered of nature to moleſt and vexe menne, to shewe them and gyue them to vnderſtand howe fmaule and vyle a thyngē may offend and disquiete them, to th[e]ende that they maye remember the pryncipall ende for the whiche they were created, that is, to knowe theyr maker and procurer of theyr valuation by the waye whiche is open to all Christian men and all other whiche wyll open the eyes of theyr vnderſtandynge. And although the thynges wherof wee entend nowe to speake may feeme vyle and lylle to bee esteemed, yet are they worthy to bee noted and confydered to understand the difference and variable woorkes of nature. So it is therfore, that whereas in many partes of the firme lande by the which awell the Christians as Indians doo trauel, there are such maryſſhes and waters in the way that they are fayne to go without breeches amonge the herbes and weedes, by reason wherof, certeyne fmaule beastes or woormes (whiche they caule *Garapates*) much lyke vnto tykes, cleaue fast to theyr legges. These wormes are as little as the pouder of beaten salt: And cleaue so fast that they can by no meanes be taken away except the place bee noynted with oyle. And after that the legges bee noynted awhyle with oyle, or the other partes where these lylle tykes are fastened, they scrape the place with a knyfe and so take them away. But the Indians whiche haue no oyle, smoke them and burne them with fyre, and abyde great paynes in takynge them awaie by this meanes. Of other lylle beastes which trouble men and are

engende[red] in theyr heades or othe: partes of theyr bodies, I saye that the Christian men which trauell into these partes, haue them but seldome tymes, and that not past one or two, and this also very seldome. For pafyng by the lyne of the Diameter where the compasse maketh difference of faylyng by the wynde cauled *Greco*, (that is North East) and *Magifral*, (that is south west) which is in the course of the Ilandes of *Azori*, they sayle but a lyttle way folowing owe vyage by the west, but hat all the lyfe which the Christians cary with them, or are engendered in theys heades or other places of theyr bodyes, dye and vterlye consume by lyttle and lyttle, and are not engendered in India excepte in the heads or lyttle chylldren in those partes awel amone the chyldren of the Christians which are borne there, as also amone the natural Indians who haue them commonly in theyr heades and sumetymes in other partes of theyr bodyes, and especially they of the prouince of *Cucua*, which is a region conteynnge more then a hundredth leagues in length, and embraseth the one and the other coast of the North sea and of the East. When these Indians are infected with this fylthynesse, they dresse and cleane one an other. And they that exercise this, are for the mooste parte women who eate all that they take: And haue herein such dexterite by reason of theyr exercise, that owe men can not lyghtly atteyne therunto. There is also another thynge greatly to bee confydere. And this is how the Christian men beinge there cleane frome this fylthyness of India, awell in theyr heades as the rest of theyr bodyes, yet when they returne to coomme ageyne into Europe and begyn to arryue in that place of the Ocean sea where wee sayde before that the lyfe dyed and foriske them, suddenly in theyr repaffyng by the same clyme (as though the lye had taryed for them in that place) they can by no meanes auoyde them for the space of certeyne dayes although they change theyr fheres two or three tyme in a day. These lyfe are at the syrste as lyttle as nytties, and growe by lyttle and lyttle vntyl they bee of the byggenesse that they are in Spayne. This haue I often tymes proued, hauyng nowe foure tymes passed the Ocean sea by this vyage.

180

Befyde thewoormes and vermy wherof we haue spoken, there is another lyttle mischeuous woorme, whiche we may number amone the kyndes of fleas. This pestilence the Indians caule *Nigua*: And is much lesse then a flea. It perfeth the fleshe of a man, and so launfeth or cutteth the fame (while in the meane tyme it can nother bee feene nor taken) that from sume it hath cutte of theyr handes, and from other theyr fete vntyll the remedy was founde to annoynce the place with oyle and scrape it with a rasoure.

Nigua.

In the firme lande in golden Caſtyle or *Bergua*, there are many vypers lyke vnto them of Spayne. They that are bytten of them, dye in short space. For fewe lyue to the fourthe daye except present remedy. Of these, sume are of a lesse kinde then other: And haue theyr tayle sumwhat rounde, and leape in the ayer to assayle men. And for this caufe, sume cause this kynde of vypers *Tyro*. They bytyng is most venemous, and for the mooste parte incurable. One of theym chaunced to bite an Indian mayde whiche serued me in my house, to whome I caused the surgians to mynister theyr ordinarye cure, but they coulde doo her no good, nor yet get one droppe of bludde owt of her, but only a yellowe water, so that shee died the thyrday for lacke of remedy as the like hath chaunced to dyuers other. This mayde was of th[e]age of xiii. yeares and spoke the Spanyſhe toonge as yf shee had byn borne in Caſtyle. Shee sayde that the vyper whiche bytte her on the foote, was two spannes longe or lyttle lesse. And that to byte her shee lept in the ayer for the space of more then fyxe spaces, as I haue hard the lyke of other credible percons.

Vypers.

I haue also feene in the firme lande, a kynde of adders very smaule and of feuen or eyght foote longe. Theſe are fo redde that in the nyght they appearre lyke burnyng cooles, and in the day feeme as redde as bludde. Theſe are also venemous, but not so much as the vypers. There are other much lesse and shorter and blacker. Theſe coome owt of the ryuers and wander sumtymes farre on the lande, and are lykwyſe venemous. There are also other adders of a rufet colour. Theſe are sumwhat bygger then the vypers, and are hurtful and venemous. There are lykewyſe an other forte of manye coloures and very longe. Of theſe I ſawe one in the yeare of Christ 1515. in the Illand of *Hispaniola* nere vnto the ſea costes at the foote of the mountaynes cauled *Pedernales*. When this adder was flayne, I measured her and founde her to be more then. xx. foote longe, and sumwhat more then a mans fyft in byggenes. And althoughe ſhe hadde three or foure deadlye wounds with a swoorde, yet dyed ſhee not nor ſtoonke the fame daye, in ſo much that her bludde continued warme all that tyme. There are also in the maryſhes and defertes of the firme lande many other kyndes of lyſteres, dragons, and other dyuers kyndes of ſerpentes wherof I entendē not here to ſpeakē much, bycause I haue more particularly entreated of theſe thynge in my generall historie of the Weſte Indyes.

Adders.

There are also ſpiders of marucyloous byggenſſe. And I haue feene ſumme with the body and legges, bygger then a mannes hande extended every waye. And I ones ſawe one of fuche byggenſſe, that onely her bodye was as bygge as a sparowe, and full of that laune wherof they make their webbes. This was of a darke rufette colour, with eyes greater then the eies of a sparow. They are venemous and of terrible ſhape to beholde. There are also ſcorpions and dyuers other fuche venemous wormes. Wherby we maye ſee, that where as natural cauſes and influence of the planettes are of strongelt actiuitie, they ceafe not to engender and bryngē foorth bothe good and badde accordyngē to the diſpoſition of the matter, whiche they alſo doo partly diſpoſe as the philoſophers affirme.

*Dragons.**Spyders.*

187

Furthermore in the fyrmelande, there are manye toades beyng very noyous and hurtful by reason of their great multitude. They are not venomous. They are feene in greate abundance in *Dariena* where they are so bygge that when they dye in the time of drouth, the bones of sum of them (and especially the rybbes) are of suche greatnessse that they appere too bee the bones of cattes or of summe other beastes of the same byggeneffe. But as the waters dynimishe and the moysture consumeth in the tyme of drouth (as I haue sayde) they also consume therwith vntyll the yare nexte folowing when the rayne and moysture increase, at whiche tyme they are seene ageyne. Neuertheleſſe, at this preſent, there is no ſuch quantitie of them as was wonte to bee, by reaſon that as the land is better cultered by the Christians, as well by the fellynge of wooddes and shrubbes as also by the paſture of kine, horſes, and other beaſtes, ſo is it apparent that this poſon diminifheth dayly, wherby that regyon becometh more holſome and pleauant. These toades ſyng after three or four ſortes. For ſumme of them ſyng pleauantly: other, lyke owres of Spayne. Summe alſo whiſtle: and other ſumme make an other maner of noyſe. They are lykewyſe of dyuers colours: as ſumme greene, ſumme rufſette or grey, and ſumme almoſt blacke. But of all ſortes, they are great, and ſylthy, and noyous by reaſon of their great muſtitude: yet are they not venomous as I haue ſayde.

Crabbes.

There are alſo a ſtraunge kynde of crabbes, whiche coome foorte of certeyne holes of the earth that they them ſelues make. The head and bodye of theſe, make one rounde thing muſche lyke vnto the hoodie of a fawkon: hauyng foure feete commyng owt of the one syde and as many owt of the other. They haue alſo two mouthes like vnto a paire of ſmaule pinſers, the one bygger then the other, wherwith they bite, but do no great hurte bycaufe they are not venomous. Their ſkyn and bodye is ſinoothe and thynne as is the ſkynne of a man, fauyng that it is ſumwhat harder. Their colour is rufſette or white, or blewe, and walke ſydelonge. They are very good to bee eaten: In ſo muſche that the Christians traualyng by the fyrmelande, haue byn greatly nuryſhed by them bycaufe they are founde in maner euery where. In ſhape and forme, they are muſche lyke vnto the crabbe which we paynte for the ſygne Cancer, and like vnto thoſe which are found in Spaine in *Andalufia* in the ryuer *Guadalcibor* where it entereth into the ſea, and in the ſea coaſtes therabout, fauyng that theſe are of the water and the other of the lande. They are ſumtymes hurtfull, fo that they that eate of them dye. But this chaunceth onely when they haue eaten any venomous thyng, or of the venomous apples wherwith the Canibale archers poſon their arrowes wherof I wyll ſpeake hereafter. And for this cauſe the Christians take heede howe they eate of theſe crabbes if they fynde them neare vnto the ſayd apple trees.

Serpentes cauled
Iuannas.

Furthermore in theſe Indies, alſwell in the fyrmelande as in the Ilandes, there is founde a kynde of ſerpentes, which they caule, *Y. V. anas*, which ſumme caule *Iuannas*. Theſe are terrible and fearefull to fyght, and yet not hurtfull. They are very delicate to bee eaten, and it is not yet knownen whether they be beaſtes of the lande or fyſhes, bycaufe they lyue in the water, and wander in the wooddes and on the lande. They haue foure feete, and are commonly bigger then connies and in ſumme places bygger then otters, with tayles lyke lifartes or eutes. Their ſkynne is ſpotted, and of the fame kynd of ſinotheneſſe or barenelleſſe, althouſh of dyuers colours. Vpon the ridge of their backes, they haue many long prickes. Theyr teeth are very ſharpe, and especially theyr fanges or dogge teeth. Their throtes are longe and large, reaſhyng from their beardes to their breafthes, of the lyke ſkynne to the reſydewe of their bodyes. They are dumme, and haue no voyce or make any noyſe or cry, although they bee kept tyde to the foote of a cheſte or any other thyng for the ſpace of xx. or xxv. dayes withoutt any thyng to eate or drynke, excepte they gyue them nowe and then a lyttle of the breade of *Casabbi*, or ſumme ſuch other thyng. They haue foure feete, and their fore feete as longe as a mans fynger with clawes lyke the clawes of a byrd, but weaker, and ſuche as can not graſple or take holde of any thyng. They are muſche better to bee eaten then to beholde. For ſewe that fee them, wyll haue defyre to eate of them, by reaſon of their horrible ſhape excepte ſuche as haue byn accuſtomed to the beaſtes of theſe regyons, whiche are more horrible and fearefull, as this is not but onely in apparence. Their fleſhe is of much better taſte then the fleſhe of connies and more holſome. For it hurteth nore but onely ſuch as haue had the frenche poxe. In ſo much that if they haue onely byn touched of that infyrmite, althouſh they haue byn hole of longe tyme, neuertheleſſe they ſeele herte and complayne of the eatynge of theſe *Iuannas*, as hath byn often tymes proued by expeſience.

Byrdes.

A very lyttle
byrde.

There are founde in the fyrmelande certeyne byrdes ſo lyttle that the hole body of one of theym is no bigger then the toppe of the byggeſt fynger of a mans hande: and yet is the bare body withoutt the fethers not paſte halfe ſo bygge. This byrde, befyde her lyttlenes, is of ſuch velocitie and ſwiftnes in flying that who ſeeth her flying in the ayer, can not ſe her flap or beatе her wings after any other ſort then do the dorres or humble bees or betels: fo that there is no man that ſeeth her flie, that wold think her to be any other then a dorre. They make their neſtes accordyng to the proportion of their bignes. And I haue ſeen that one of theſe byrdes with her neſt put in a paire of gold weights, altogether hath waid no more then ii. *Tomini*, which are in poife. 24. grains, with the fethers with out the which the fulde haue wayed ſumwhat leſſe. And doubt leſſe when I conſider the ſynenesſe of the clawes and feete of theſe birdes, I knowe not whervnto I may

better liken them then to the lyttle byrdes whiche the lymmers of booke are accustomed to paynte on the margentes of churche booke and other booke of deuine seruice. Their fethers are of many faire colours as golden yellow and greene beside other variable colours. Their beake is verye longe for the proportion of theyr bodies: and as fyne and subtile as a fowysg needle. They are very hardye: so that when they see a man clyme the tree where they haue theyr nestes, they flye at hys face and stryke hym in the eyes, commyng, goyng, and retournyng with such swiftnes, that no man wolde lightly beleue it that hath not seene it. And certenly these byrdes are so lyttle, that I durst not haue made mention hereof if it were not that diuers other which haue seene them as wel as I, can beare witnes of my saying. They make their nestes of flockes and heare of cotten wherof there is great plentie in these regions, and serueth wel for theyr purpoe. But as touchyng the byrdes, foules, and beastes of these Indyes, bycause they are innumerable bothe lyttle and greate, I intende not to speake muche heare, bycause I haue spoken more largely hereof in my generall historie of the Indyes.

There is an other kynde of beastes seene in the firme land which seemed very straunge and marueilous to the Chrysitian men to beholde, and muche differyng from all other beastes which haue byn feene in other partes of the worlde. These beastes are cauled *Bardati*: And are fourte foote, haing their tale and at the rest of theyr bodies couered onely with a skyn lyke the coperture of a barbed horse or the chekered skynne of a lysarte or Crocodyle, of coloure betwene whyte and rufset, inclynyng sumwhat more to whyte. This beast, is of forme and shape much lyke to a barbed horse with his barbes and flankettes in all pointes. And from vnder that which is the barbe and coperture, the tayle commeth foorth, and the feete in theyr place, the necke also and the eares in theyr partes, and in fyne all thynges in lyke forte as in a barbed courser. They are of the bygnes of one of these common dogges. They are not hurtfull. They are fylthy, and haue theyr habitation in certen hillockes of earthe where digginge with there feete they make their dens very deepe and the holes therof in like maner as do connyes. They are verye excellent to be eaten, and are taken with nettes and sum also killed with crofbowes. They are lykewise taken often tymes when the husband men burne the stubble in fowysg time, or to renewe the herbage for kyne and other beastes. I haue often times eaten of their fleche which semeth to me of better tast then kyddes fleche, and holome to be eaten. And if these beastes had ever byn feene in these partes of the woord where the first barbed horses had their original, no man wold judge but that the forme and fasshion of the coperture of horses furnished for the warres was syrte deuyfed by the syght of these beastes.

There is also in the firme lande an other beast cauled *Orfo Formigaro*, that is, the Ante beare. This beast in heare and colour, is much lyke to the beare of Spayne, and in maner of the same makyng fau that he hath a much longer snout and is of euyll syght. They are often tymes taken only with flaues without any other weapon, and are not hurtfull. They are also taken with dogges bycause they are not naturally armed althowgh they bite sumwhat. They are founde for the moste parte about and neare to the hillockes where are great abundance of antes. For in these regions is engendered a certeyne kynde of antes very lyttle and blacke, in the fyeldes and playnes where as growe no trees where byt[e]lininct of nature these antes separate them selues to engender far from the wooddes for feare of these bears: The whiche bycause they are fearefull, vyle, and vnarmid (as I haue sayde) they keepe euer in places full of trees vntyll very famen and necetitie, or the great defre that they haue to fiede of these antes, cause them to coomme owt of the wooddes to hunte for them. These antes make a hillocke of earth to the heught of a man, or sumwhat more or less, and as bygge as a great cheft, and sumtymes as bygge as a butte or a hogges head, and as hard as a stone: So that they seeme as though they were stones set vp to lymytis th[e]cendes and confines of certeyne landes. Within these hillockes made of most harde earth, are innumerable and infinite lyttle antes, the whiche may bee gathered by bushelles when the hillocke is broken. The whiche when it is sumtymes moylted by rayne and then dried ageyne by the heate of the sonne, it breaketh and hath certeyne smal rytes as lyttle and subtile as the edge of a knyfe. And it semeth that nature hath gyuen senfe to these Antes to synde such a matter of earth wherwith they may make the sayde hillocke of suche hardenes that it may seeme a stronge pavement made of lyme and stone. And wheras I haue proued and caused sum of them to bee broken, I haue founde them of suche hardenes as if I had not seene I could not haue beleaued: In so muche that they coulde scarcely bee broken with pykes of Iren: So stronge fortrefles doo these lyttle beastes make for theyr laugardre ageynit theyr aduerfaries the beare, who is chiefly nuryshid by them, and gynen them as an enemie, accordyng to the common prouerbe which sayth, *Non e alcuna persona si libera, a chinanchi il suo Bargello*: That is, there is no man so free that hath not his perfecutor or prynie enemie. And here when I confydre the maruelous prouidence which nature hath gyuen to these lyttle boddies, I caule to remembraunce the wittie sentenee of P[etrus] pie, where speakeynge of such lyttle beastes, he sayth thus. Why doo we maruayle at the towrebaryne shoulidris of Elephantes, and not rather where nature hathe placed so many fences and suche industry in suche lyttle boddies? where is hearynge, smellynge, seeinge, and feelynge, ye, where are the vayne and arteries (without which no beaste can lyue or moue) in these so lyttle boddies whereof sume are so smale that theyr hole boddies can scarcely be fene of our

Beastes

Bardati

189
Beares

Antes

180

A straunge best
whiche seemeth a
kynd of
Chameleon.

eyes, what shall we then faye of the partes of the same? Yet euen amoung these are there many of such fagacie and industrie as the lyke is not seene in beastes of greater quantitiue, no nor yet in man, etc. But to retorne to the hystorie. This enimie which nature hath gyuen to these lyttle beastes, vseth this maner to assayle them. When he reforetthe to the hyllocke where the antes lye hid as in theyr fortreffe, he putteth his toonge to one of the ryfies wheroft we haue spokēn being as subtile as the edge of a woorde, and there with continual lyckyng, maketh the place moyſt, the some and froth of his mouth beinge of such propertie that by continual lycking the place, it enlargeth the ryfie in such fort by lyttle and lyttle, that at the length he easely putteth in his toonge whiche he hath very longe and thynne, and much disportionate to his bodye. And when he hath thus made free passage for his toonge into the hyllocke to put it easely in and owt at his pleasure, then he thrusleth it into the hole as farre as he can reache, and so letteth it refte a good space vntyl a great quantitiue of the antes (whose nature reioyseth in heate and moyſter) haue laden his tongue and as many as he can conteyne in the holownesse thereof: at which tyme he suddeynly draweth it into his mouth and eateth them, and returneth ageyne to the same practise immediatly vntyl he haue eaten as manye as hym lyfeth, or as longe as he can reache any with his tongue. The fleſſe of this beaste, is fylthy and vnsauery. But by reaſon of th[e]extreme shyttes and neceſſitie that the Christian men were put to at theyr fyrl commynge into these partes, they were inforced to proue al thynges and fo fel to th[e]eatynge of these beastes. But when they had founde more delicate meates, they fell into hatred with this. These antes haue the apperaunce of the place of their enterauance into the hyllocke, vnder the gronde. And this at fo lyttle a hole that it could hardly be founde yf certeyne of them were not feene to paffe in and owt. But by this way the beastes coulde haue no ſuch poure to hurte them as aboue at the fayde ryfies as I haue fayde. There is an other ſtrange beaste whiche by a name of contrary effecte, the Spaniardes caule *Cagnuolo leggiero*, that is the lyght dogge, wheras it is one of the flowefte beastes in the worlde, and fo heauy and dull in mouyng that it canne ſcarfely go fyſtie pafes in a hole day. These beastes are in the firme lande, and are very ſtraunge to beholde for the diſproportion that they haue to all other beastes. They are aboue two ſpannes in length when they are growne to theyr full hyggeneſſe. But when they are very younge, they are ſumewhat more groſſe then longe. They haue ſoure ſubtile fete, and in every of them foure clawes lyke vnto byrdes, and ioyned togither. Yet are nother theyr clawes or theyr fete able to fulſeyne theyr bodyes from the gronde. By reaſon wheroft and by the heauynesse of theyr boddies, they drawe theyr bellyes on the gronde. Theyr neckes are hygh and streight and all euall lyke the peſtle of a morter, which is altogether euall vnto the toppe withoutt makynge any proportion or ſimilitude of a heade, or any diſference excepte in the noddle. And in the toppes of theyr neckes, they haue verye rounde faces much lyke vnto owles: And haue a marke of theyr owne heare after the maner of a cycle whiche makethe theyr faces ſeeme ſumewhat more longe then large. They haue ſmaule eyes and rounde: And noſtrilles lyke vnto munkeys. They haue lyttle mouthes, and moue theyr neckes frome one fyde to an other as thoughē they were aftonyſhed. Theyr chiefe defyre and delyte is to cleaue and flycke faſte vnto trees or fume other thynge whereby they may clyme aloſte. And therfore for the moſte parte, these beastes are founde vpon trees whervnto cleauyngē faſt, they mounte vp by lyttle and lyttle, ſleyng their ſelues by theyr longe clawes. The colour of theyr heare, is betwene rufſet and whyte, and of the proper colour of the heare of a weſell. They haue no tayles, and theyr voyce is much diſſerwyng frome other beastes: for they ſyng only in the nyght: And that continually frome tyme to tyme ſyngyng euer fyxe notes one hygher then an other, fo faulyng with the fame that the fyſtle note is the hyghest and the other in a baſer tewne as yf a man ſhuld ſay *La, fol, fa, mi, re, vt.* So this beaſt ſayth, *Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha.* And doubleteſſe, it ſeemeth vnto me, that as I haue fayde in the chapter of the beaſt cauled *Bardati*, that thoſe beastes might bee th[e]originall and document to imbarbe horſes, euen fo the fyſtle inuenture of muſycke myght ſeeme by the hearynge of this beaſt to haue the fyſtl principles of that feyence rather then by any other thynge in the worlde. But nowe to retorne to the hystorie: I ſay that in a þorke ſpace after this beaſt hath ſoonge and hath paſed a whyle, the returneth ageyne to the ſelue fame ſonge, and doth this only in the nyght and not in the day. By reaſon wheroft and also bycaufe of her enyill ſyght, I thynke her to be a nyght beaſt and the frende of darkeſſe. Sumtymes the Christian menne fynde these beastes and bryngē theym home to theyr houſes, where alſo they creepe all abowte with theyr naturall floweneſſe, in fo much that nother for threatenyng or prykynge they wyll moue any falſer then theyr natural and accuſtomed pafe. And yf they fynde any trees, they creepe thyrther immediatly, and mounte to the toppe of the hyghest braunche thereof, where they remayne continually for the ſpace of eyght, or tenne, or twentie dayes without eatyng of any thinge as farre as any man can judge. And wheras I my ſelfe haue kepte theym in my houſe, I couldſe neuer perceave other but that they lyue only of ayer. And of the fame opinion are in maner all men of thoſe regions, bycaufe they haue neuer ſeene them eate any thynge, but euer turne theyr headeſ and mouthes towarde that parte where the wynde bloweth moſt: whereby may bee conſidered that they take moſe pleaſure in the ayer. They bite not, nor yet can bite, hauyng very lyttle mouthes. They are not venemous or noyous any way: but altogether brutiſhe and vterly viproſtyable and without commoditie yet knownen to

men, fauyng only to moue their myndes to contemplate th[e]infinite poure of god, who delyteth in the varietie of creatures, wherby appeareth the poure of his incomprehensible wisedome and maiestie so farre to excede the capacite of mans vnderstandinge.

In these regions there are likewise found certeyne foules or byrdes which the Indians caule *Alcatraz*. These are much bygger then geese. The greatest parte of ther fethers are of ruffet colore, and in fume partes yellowe. Theyr bylles or beakes are of two spannes in length and verye large neare to the heade, and growynge finaule towarde the poynete. They haue greate and large throtes: And are much lyke to a foule which I fawfe in Flaunders in yowre maiesties pallaice which the Flemynghes caule Haina. And I remember that when yowr maiestie dyned one day in yowre great haule there was brought to yowre maiesties presence a chauderne of water with certeyne fyshes alyne, which the sayde foule did eate vp hole. And I thynke verely that that foule was a foule of the sea bycause shée had fiete lyke foules of the water as haue also these *Alcatrasi*, which are likewyse foules of the sea: and of such greatefesse that I haue seene a hole cote of a man put into the throates of one of them in *Panama* in the year 1521. And forasmuch as in that coaste of *Panama*, there passeth and flyeth a greate multitude of these *Alcatrasi* beinge a thyng very notable, I wyll declare the maner hereof as not onely I, but also dyuers other nowe presente in yowre maiesties courte haue often tymes seene. Yowre maiestie shall therfore vnderstante that in this place (as I haue sayde before) the sea of *Sur ryfeth* and faulthe two leagues and more from fyxe hours to syxe hours: so that when it increaseth, the water of the sea arryuethe so neare to the houses of *Panama* as doth oþre sea (cauled *Mare Mediteraneum*) in Barzalona or in Naples. And when the sayd increasynge of the sea commeth, there commeth also therwith such a multitude of the fmaule fyshes cauled fardynes, that it is so maruelous a thyng to beholde, that no man wolde beleue it that hath not seene it. In so much that the *Cacique*, (that is) the kyng of that land at such tyme as I dwelt there, was bounde dayly as he was commaunded by yowre maiesties governour, to bryng ordynarly three canoas or barkeres full of the sayde fardynes and to vnlade the same in the markette place, whiche were afterwylle by the ruler of the citie diuyded amoung the Chrystian men without any coste or charge to any of them. In so much that yf the people had bin a much greater multitude then they were, and as many as are at this presente in *Tolado* or more, and had none other thyng to lye by, they myght haue byn suffisently susteyned by these fardynes, byfyde th[e]ouerplus which shulde haue remayned. But to retorne to the foules wherof we haue spoken. As the sea commeth, and the fardynes with the same, even fo lykewyfe coome the sayde *Alcatrassi* therewith: and fye continually ouer it in suche a multytyde, that they appear to couer th[e]upper parte or floure of the water. And thus continue in mountynge and faulynge from the ayer to the water, and from the water to the ayer durynge all the tyme of theys fyshyng. And as foone as they haue taken any of these fardynes, they fye aboue the water and eate them incontinently, and suddeynly returne ageyne to the water for more, continuing thus course by course without ceafyng. In lyke maner when the sea faulthe, they folowe there fyshyng as I haue sayde. There goethe also in the company of these foules, an other kynde of foules cauled *Coda inforcata*, (that is) the forked tayle, whereof I haue made mention before. And as foone as the *Alcatras* mounteth from the water with her pray of the fardynes, suddeynly this *Coda inforcata* gyueth her so many strokes, and so perfecuteth her, that shée caufeth her to let faule the fardynes which shée hath in her mouth. The which as foone as they are faulne, and before they yet touch the water, the *Coda inforcata* catcheth them even in the faule, in suche forte that it is a great pleasure to beholde the combatte betwene them all the daye longe. The number of these *Alcatrassi* is such, that the Chrystian menne are accustomed to fende to certeyne Ilandes and rockes which are neare abowte *Panama*, with theyr boates or barkeres to take these *Alcatrassi* whyle they are yet younge and can not fye: and kyll as many of them with staucs as they wyll, vntyll they haue therwith laden theyr barkeres or canoas. These younge ones are so fatte and wel fedde that they can not bee eaten. And are taken for none other intent but only to make greafe for candels to burne in the nyght, for the whiche purpose it ferueth very well: and gyueth a cleare lyght, and burneth easely. After this maner and for this purpose, innumerable of them are kylde. And yet it feemeth that the number of them that fyfhe for fardynes doo dayly increaſe.

There are other foules cauled *Paffer sempia*: that is, simple sparowes. These are sumwhat leſſe then femewes: and haue theyr fiete lyke vnto great malardes: And flande in the water sumtymes. And when the fyppes sayle fyftie or a hundredth leagues abowte the Ilandes, these foules beholdynge the fyppes commynge towarde them, breake theyr flight and faule downe vpon the sayle yarde, mastes, and cables therof. And are so ſimple and folyſhe that they tary vntyll they maye easely be taken with mens handes, and were therfore cauled of the maryners ſimple sparowes. They are blacke, and vpon their blacke, haue theyr heade and ſhoulders of fethers of a darke ruffet colore. They are not good to bee eaten, althouȝ the mariners haue sumtymes bin enforced to eat them.

There is an other kynde of byrdes in the fyrmē lande, which the Christians caule *Picuti*, bycause they haue very great beakes in reſpecte of the lytlenesse of theyr boddies: For theyr beakes are very heauy and waye

191
Foules, and byrdes.
Alcatras.

Panama.

Paffer sempia.
192

Picuti.

more then theyr hole boddies byfyde. These byrdes are no bygger then quayles, but haue a much greater bushement of fethers, in so much that theyr fethers are more then theyr boddies. Theyr fethers are very sayre and of many variable coloures. Theyr beakes are a quarter of a yarde in length or more, and bendyng downe towarde the earthe, and thre synges brode neare vnto the heade. Theyr tonges are very quilles, wherwith they make a great hyfysyng. They make holes in trees with theyr beakes, in the which they make theyr nestes. And surely these byrdes are maruelous to beholde for the great difference whiche they haue from all other byrdes that I haue feene, awel for theyr toonges (which are quylls as I haue sayde) as also for the strangenesse of theyr syght and disproportion of their greate beakes in respect of the rest of theyr boddies. There are no byrdes founde that prouide better for the safegarde of theyr younge in the tyme of theyr breedynge to bee withoutw daunger of wylde cattes that they enter not into theyr nestes to destroye theyr egges or younge. And this awell by the straunge maner of buyldyng theyr nestes, as also by theyr owne defence. And therfore when they perceave that the cattes approche towarde them, they enter into theyr nestes: and holdyng theyr beakes towarde the [e]nterauance of the same, stande at theyr defence, and so vexe the cattes that they cause them to leue theyr enterprye.

*Folysche
sparowes.*

There are also other byrdes or sparowes, whiche the Christians by contrary effect caule *Matti*, that is fooles. Wheras neuertelleſſe there is no byrd that sheweth more wyt and craste in defendynge her younge from perell. These byrdes are lytle and in maner blacke, and sumewhat bygger then owe thriffhes. They haue certeyne whyte fethers in theyr neckes, and the lyke fagacitie or sharpenes of fene as haue the byrdes or pyes cauled *Gazzoule*. They feldome tymes light vppon the earth. They make theyr nestes in trees separated from other, bycause the wylde cattes (cauled *Mammoni*) are accustomed to leape frome tree to tree, not descendynge to the grounde for feare of other beastes, excepte when they are enforced by thyrſle to coome downe to drynke at sume tymes as they are sure not to bee moleſted. And for this caufe doo not these byrdes make theyr nestes but in trees farre diuyded from other. They make them of a cubette in length or more, after the maner of bagges or lytle sackes, large at the bottome, and growyng narower and narower towarde the mouth whereby they are fastened: hauyng the hole wherat they enter into the facke, of such byggens as may onely suffice to receaue them. And to th[e]nde that the cattes maye not deuoure theyr younge yf they chaunce to mounte vpon the trees where they haue theyr nestes, they vſe an other craste, which is, to make theyr nestes in thycke braunches of trees, and to defende the same with sharpe and stronge thorns implycate and fet in such order that no man is able to make the lyke. So that the cattes can by no meanes put theyr legges into the hole of the neste to take owe younge byrdes, awel for the sharpenes of the thirnes as also for the depth of the nestes, in the bottome wherof, the younge birdes ſet withoutw daunger of theyr enimie. For sum of theyr nestes beyng three or four spannes in lengthe, the legge of the catte can not reache to the bottome therof. They vſe also an other pollicie: which is, to make many of theyr nestes in one tree. The which they doo for one of these two caufes: that is, that eyther of theyr owne naturall disposition they are accustomed to go in great multitudes, and riotoyfe in the company of theyr owne generation as do the byrdes which we caule flares, or elles to th[e] intent that yf it ſhoulde ſo chaunce that the cattes ſhulde clyme the trees where they make theyr nestes, they might bee a greater company to refyle and molest the cattes, at whose approach they make a feareful and terrible cry, wherby the cattes are put to flyght.

Furthermore, in the firme land, and in the Ilandes, there are certeyne byrdes cauled *Piche* or *Gassoule*, sumewhat lyke vnto thoſe which we caule woodwaules, or woodpeckes, beinge leſſe then owrs of Spayne. These are al togither blacke, and go hoppyng and leapyng. Theyr beakes are alſo blacke and of the fame fashyon as are the popingays beakes. They haue longe tayles, and are sumwhat bygger then flares.

There are other byrdes cauled *Pintadelli*, whiche are lyke vnto certeyne greene byrdes whiche the Italians caule *Fringuelli*: and are of feuen coloures. These byrdes for feare of the cattes, are euer woonte to make theyr nestes ouer the bankes of ryuers or the ſea, where the braunches of trees ſo reache ouer the water that with a lytle weight they maye bowe downe to the water. Theyr nestes are made ſo neare the toppes of the braunches that when the cattes coome theron, the braunches bende towarde the water, and the cattes turne backe ageyne for feare of faulyng. For althoſe no beafe in the worlde bee more malicious then this, yet whereas the moſte parte of beastes are naturally inclyned to fwymme, this catte hath no maner of aptenesſe thereunto, and is therefore ſooone drowned or ſtrangeled in the water, and by a pruie ſene of nature feareth the daunger which he can not eſcape. These byrdes make theyr nestes in ſuche forte, that althoſgh they bee weete and ſylded with water, yet doo they ſo ſuddenly ryſe vp ageyne, that the younge byrdes are not thereby herte or drowned.

There are also many nyghtyngales and other byrdes whiche fyngē maruelously with great melodie and diſference in fyngyng. These byrdes are of maruelous dyuers coloures the one from the other. Sum are al togither yellowe, and ſum other of ſo excellente, delectable, and hyghe a coloure as it weare a rubye. Other are alſo of dyuers and variable coloures: ſum of fewe coloures, and other ſume all of one coloure: beinge all ſo

193

Gassoule.

Pintadelli

faire and bewtfull, that in bryghtnesse and shynynge they excell all that are seene in Spayne, or Italy or other prouinces of Europe. Many of these are taken with nettes, lyme twygges, and sprynges of dyuers sortes.

Dyuers other sortes of geate foules lyke vnto Eagles, and suche other as lyue of pray, are founde in the firme lande of suche diuerstie, that it is in maner impossible to defcrybe them all particularly. And forasmuche as I haue more largely intreated hereof in my generall hystorie of the Indies, I thynke it not requyfite to make any further mention of the same.

Great foules.

¶ Of trees, fruities, and plantes.



Here is bothe in the firme lande and the Ilandes a certeyne tree cauled *Cocus*, beinge a kynd of date trees and hauyng their leaues of the self fame greatnesse as haue the date trees which bear dates, but dysier much in their growyng. For the leaues of this *Cocus* grow owt of the trunkes of the tree as doo the fyngers owt of the hande, wreathynge them selues one within an other and so spreadyng abrode. These trees are hygh: and are founde in great plentie in the coaste of the sea of *Sur*, in the prouince of *Cacique Chiman*. These date trees brynge furth a frute after this sorte. Beinge al togather vnite as it groweth on the tree, it is of greater circumference then the heade of a man. And from the superficiall parte to the myddelst which is the frute, it is iuolued and couered with many webbes much lyke vnto those hyrdes of tow whiche they vse in *Andalusia*. Of this tow or webbe, the East Indians make a certeyne kynde of clothe of three or foure sortes, and cordes for the sayles of shippes. But in these Indies of your maiestie, they passe not for these cordes or this clothe that may be made of the frute of *Cocus*, by reasoun of the great plentie that they haue of the bombage or cotton of the golampine trees. The frute which is in the myddelst of the fayde tow, is (as I haue sayde) as bygge as a mans syfe, and sumtymes twyse as bygge and more. It is in forme, lyke vnto a walnutte, or sum other rounde thynge sumwhat more longe then large, and very harde. The rynde or barke herof, is as thycke as the cyrcle of letters of a riale of plate. And within, there cleaueth faste to the rynde of the nutte a carnositie or substaunce of coornell, of the thyckenesse of halfe a fynger or of the least fynger of the hande: And is verye whyte, lyke vnto a fayre Almonde, and of better taste and more pleasaunt. When this fruite is chewed, there remayne certeyne crummes as do the lyke of almondes. Yet if it bee swalowed downe, it is not vnplesaunt. For althoug that after the iewfe or moystryre bee gon downe the throte before the fayde crummes bee swalowed, the rette whiche is eaten seeme sumwhat sharpe or fower, yet doth it not so greatly offend the taste so as to bee castle away. Whyle this *Cocus* is yet freshe and newly taken from the tree, they vse not to eate of the fayde carnositie and frute: But syfle beatyng it very much, and then straynyng it, they drawe a mylke thereof, much better and sweeter then is the mylke of beastes, and of much substaunce: The which the Christian men of those regions put in the tortes or cakes which they make of the grayne of *Maiizium* wherof they make their breade, or in other breades as we put breade in porrage: So that by reason of the fayde mylke of *Cocus*, the tortes are more excellent to be eaten without offence to the stomake. They are so pleasaunte to the taste, and leaue it awell latiflyed as thoughe it had byn deltyed with many delicate dysshes. But to proceade further, your maiestie shal vnderland, that in the place of the stome or coornell, there is in the myddelst of the fayde carnositie, a voyde place, which neverthelesse is full of a mose cleare and excellent water, in such quantitiie as maye fyll a greate egge shell, or more or leise accordyng to the byggeneesse of the *Cocus*. The which water furerly, is the moste substantiall, excellent and precious to be droomke, that maye bee founde in the worlde. In so much that in the momente when it passeth the palete of the mouth and begynmeth to goo downe the throte it feemeth that frome the sole of the foote to the crowne of the headle, there is no parte of the boddye but that feelethe great comfort therby: as it is doutlesse one of the most excellent thynges that maye be tastyd vpon the earth, and suche as I am not able by wrytyng or toonge to exprefse. And to proceade yet further, I say that when the meate of this frute is taken from the vessell therof, the vessell remayneth as fayre and nette as though it were pullyshed: and is without, of colour inclynynge towarde blacke, and shyneth or glystereth very fayre. And is within of no leffe dilicatenesse. Suche as haue accustomed to drynke in these vesselles, and haue bynne troubleid with the disease cauled the fretinge of the guttes, say that they haue by experiance founde it a maruelous remedie ageynst that disease: And that it breakethe the stome and prouoketh vrine. This frute was cauled *Cocus* for this cause, that when it is taken from the place where it cleaueth faste to the tree, there are seene two holes, and aboue them two other naturall holes, which al togather, doo reprefente the giesture and fygure of the cattes cauled *Mammon*, that is, munkeys, when they crye: whiche crye the Indians caule *Coca*: But in very deede, this tree is a kynd of date trees: and hath the same effecte to boale fretynge of the guttes, that Plinie deferybeth all kyndes of date trees to haue.

Cocus.

194

I haue seene one of these frutes opened, the whiche when it was hole, yf it were shaken the water was hard shogge therin as it were in a bottle; but in symply it comounde and was partly congeled into a salte substance.

Great trees.

There are furthermore in the firme lande, trees of suche byggeneſſe that I dare not ſpeakē therof but in place where I haue ſo many wytnefſes which haue feene the fame as wel as I. I ſay therfore, that a leaque from *Dariena* or the citie of *Sancta Maria Antiqua*, there paſſeth a ryuer very large and diepe, which is cauled *Cuti*: ouer the which the Indians had layde a grete tree ſo trauerſinge the fame that it was in the ſteade of a brydge, the which I my ſelfe with dyuers other that are at this preſent in yowre maiefies courte, haue often tymes paſſed ouer. And foraſmuch as the fayle tree had lyne longe there, and by the great weight therof was ſo ſtronke downewarde and partly couered with water that none could paſſe ouer it but were weete to the knee, I being then in the yeaſt 1522, th[e]official of Iuſtice in that citie at yowre maiefies appoyntemente, cauſed an other grete tree to bee layde in that place whiche in lyke maner trauerſed the ryuer and reacheſt more then fyſtie foote ouer the further ſyde. This tree was excedyng greate, and reſted aboue the water more then two cubytes. In the faule, it caſt downe all fuehe other trees as were within the reache thereof: And diſcouered certeyne vynces whiche were ſo laden with blacke grapes of pleauante taste, that they ſatifyed more then fyſtie perſons whiche ate theyr fyſle therof. This tree in the thyckelſt parte therof, was more then fyxtene ſpannes thicke: And was neuertheleſſe but lytle in reſpect of many other trees which are founde in this prouince. For the Indians of the coaſte and prouince of *Cartagenia*, make barkes or boates therof (which they caule *Canoas*) of ſuch byggeneſſe, beinge all of one hole tree, that ſume conteyne a hundredth men, ſume a hundredth and thirtie, and ſume more, hauyng neuertheleſſe fuehe voylde ſpace within the fame, that there is lefte ſufficiente roome to paſſe to and fro through owte all the *Canoa*. Sum of theſe are ſo large byfyde the length, that they conteyne more then tenne or twelve ſpannes in breadht, and fayle with twoo fayles as with the maſter fayle and the trinkette which they make of verye good cotton. The greateſt trees that I haue feene in theſe partes or in anye other regions, was in the prouince of *Guaturo*, the kyng wherof rebellynge from th[e]obediencie of yowre maiefie, was perfuſed by me and taken pryoner: At whiche tyme I with my company, paſſed ouer a very hygh mountayne ful of great trees, in the toppe wherof we founde one tree whiche had three rootes or rather diuisions of the roote aboue the earth in forme of a tryangle or triuette: fo that betwene every foote of this triangle or three feete, there was a ſpace of twentie foote betwene every foote. And this of ſuch heyght aboue the earthe, that a laden carte of theſe wherewith they are accuſtomed to bryngē home corne in the tyme of harueſt in the kyngedom of *Toledo* in Spayne, myght eaſely haue paſſed through every of theſe particions or wyndowes whiche were betwene the three feete of the ſayd tree. From the earth vpwarde to the trunke of the tree, the open places of the diuisions betwene theſe three feete, were of fuehe heyght from the grounde, that a footeman with a iauenly was not able to reache to the place where the ſayde feete ioyned togither in the trunke or body of the tree which grewe of great height in one piece and one hole body, or euer it ſpreadde in braunches, which it did not before it exceeded in heyght the towre of fainte Romane in the citie of Toledo: from whiche heyght and vpwarde, it ſpreade very greate and ſtronge braunches. Amonge certeyne Spanyardes which clymed this tree, I my ſelfe was one. And when I was aſcended to the place where it begunne to ſpreade the branches, it was a maruelous thing to beholde a greate courtey of fuehe trees toward the prouince of Abrayme. This tree was eaſy to clyme, by reaſon of certeyne *Befuchi* (wherof I haue ſpoken before) which grewe wreathed aboue the tree in fuehe forte that they ſeemed to make a ſcalyng ladder. Euerie of the foreſayde three feete which bore the boddie of the tree, was twentie ſpannes in thyckeneſſe. And where they ioyned al togither aboue in the trunke or boddie of the tree, the principall trunke was more then fortie and fyue ſpannes in circuite. I named the mountayne where theſe trees grow, the mountayne of three footed trees. And this which I haue now declared, was feene of all the companye that was there with me when (as I haue ſayde before) I tooke kyng *Guaturo* pryoner in the yeaſt 1522. Many thyngeſ more myght here bee ſpoken as touchyng this matter, as alſo howe there are many other excellent trees founde of dyuers forteſ and diſference, as ſweete Ceder trees, blacke date trees, and many other: of the which ſum are ſo heauy that they can not flote aboue the water but fynde immediately to the bottome. And other ageyne as light as a corke. As touchyng all whiche thyngeſ I haue written more largely in my generall hystorie of the Indies.

Kyndlyng of fyre
without fyre.

And foraſmuch as at this preſent I haue entered to intreate of trees, before I paſſe any further to other thyngeſ, I wyl declare the maner howe the Indians kyndle fyre, only with woodde, and without fyre, the maner wherof is this. They take a piece of woodde of two ſpannes in lengthe, as bygge as the leaſte fynger of a mans hande, or as an arrowe well pullyfihed, and of a ſtronge kyndle of woodde whiche they keepe onely for this purpoſe. And where they intende to kyndle any fyre, they take two other pieces of woodde of the dryeft and lighteft that they can fynde, and bynde them fast togither one with an other as cloſe as two fyngers ioyned. In the myldest or betwene theſe, they put the poynt of the fyſte lytle ſtaſſe made of harde and ſtronge wood which they hold in theyr handes by the toppe thereof, and turne or rubbe it rounde aboute continually in one place betwene the two pieces of woodde which lye bounde togither vpon the earthe, which by that vnceſſant rubbyng, and chafyng, are in ſhort ſpace kyndled and take fyre.

I haue also thought good here to ſpeakē ſumwhat of ſueh thyngeſ as coomme to my remembraunce of

of but in
a leaque
is cauled
deade of a
knee,
caused an
more then
then two
discovered
then fyste
spannes
ce. For
anoas, of
dritte
te roome
conteyne
and the
rites or in
of yowre
very hygh
or rather
e of this
ght aboue
tyme of
cions or
ake of the
le, that a
he trunke
braunches,
m which
les which
reade the
ouince of
re) which
ery of the
here they
fortie and
ted trees.
as I haue
ee spoken
yfierence,
not flote
ouchyng
to other
the maner
of a mans
y for this
ryeft and
rs ioyned.
nge wood
y in one
vncessant
raunce of

certeyne trees which are founde in this lande, and sumetyme also the lyke haue bynne feene in Spayne. These are certeyne putrifyed troonkes which haue lyne so longe rottyng on the earth that they are verye whyte and shyne in the nyght lyke burnyng fyre brandes. And when the Spanyardes synde any of this woodde, and intende priuily in the nyght to make warre and inuade any prouince when easie to requyret that it shalbe necessary to go in the nyght in fuche places where they knowe not the way, the formost Chyrstian man whiche guydethe the waye, associate with an Indian to direete hym therin, taketh a litle flarre of the fayde woodde, which he putteth in his cappe hangyng behynde on his shoulders, by the lyght wherof he that foloweth nexte to him, directeth his iourney, who also in lyke maner beareth an other flarre behynde hym, by the shynynge whereof the thyrde foloweth the same waye, and in lyke maner do at the rest, so that by this meanes none are losse or strake owt of the way. And forasmuche as this lyght is not feene very farre, it is the better pollicie for the Chyrstians bycause they are not thereby disclosed before they inuade their enemies.

Furthermore as touchyng the natures of trees, one particular thyng seemeth worthy to bee noted, wherof Plinius maketh mention in his natural historye where he saythe that there are certeyne trees which contynewer greene and never loseth their leaues, as the baye tree, the Ceder, the orange tree, and the olyue tree with such other, of the whiche in all togither he nameth not paste fyue or fyxe. To this purpose, I saye, that in the Ilandes of these Indies, and also in the firme lande, it is a thyng of muche difficultie to fynde twoo trees that lose or cast their leaues at any tyme. For althowgh I haue diligently searched to knowe the trewthe hereof, yet haue I not feene any that lose their leaues, eyther of them which we haue brought owt of Spayne into these regions, as Orange trees, Limons, Cedars, Palmes, or date trees and Pomegranate trees, or of any other in these regions excepte onely *Caffia*, which loseth his leaues and hath a greater thyng appropriate to it selfe onely: which is, that whereas all other trees and plantes of India spreade their rootes no deeper in the earthe then the depth of a mans heighth or sumwhat more, not descendyng any further into the ground by reaon of the greate heate which is found beneth that depth, yet dooth *Caffia* pearce further into the grounde vntyl it fynd water: whiche by the Phylosophers opinion shoulde be the caufe of a thynne and watery radycall moyster to fuche thynges as drawe their nuryshement therof, as fat and vncetuous groundes with temperate heate, yelde a fast and firme moysture to fuche thynges as growe in them, whiche is the caufe that fuche trees lose not their leaues, as the fayde thynne and waterysse moysture is cause of the contrarie, as appearethe by the fayde effecte which is feene onely in *Caffia*, and none other tree or plante in all these parties.

Purified woodde
shynynge in the
nyght.

196

Plinia.

Trees which
continuer greene.

Cassia.

A secrete thyng

Radycall
moysture.

¶ Of Reedes or Canes.



Hau not thought it conuenient in the chapiture before to speake of that whereof I intende nowe to entreaten of, reedes or canes, to th[e]intente that I woolde not mangle them with plantes or trees, beinge thynges of them selues worthy to bee particularly obserued. So it is therfore, that in the firme lande there are many sortes of reedes, so that in many places they make their howses therof, coueryng them with the toppes of the same, and makyng their waules of them in lyke maner, as I haue sayde before. And amonge these kyndes of reedes, there is one so greate, that the canes therof are as bygge as a mans legge in the knee, and three spannes in length frome ioynt to ioynt or more: in so much that every of them is of capacite to conteyne a lytle bucket of water. In this kynde, there are founde sum greater and sum lesse, of the which sum they vse to make quyuers for arrowes. There is founde an other kynde which surly is marueylous, beynge iyllie bygger then a Iauelen, the canes whereof are longer then two spannes. These reedes growe one farre from an other, as sum tymes twentie or thirtie paces, and sumetymes also two or three leagues. They growe in maner in all prouynces in the Indies: And growe nere to very hygh trees wherunto they leane, and creepe vp to the toppes of they braunches, which they imbrase and defende ageyne downe to the earth. Theyr canes are full of moste cleare water without any maner of taft or fauour eyther of the canes or of any other thyng: And suche as yf it were taken owt of the fressheste spryng in the worlde. Nor yet is it knownen that euer it hurte any that droonke therof. For it hath oftentimes so chaunced that as the Chyrstian men haue traayled in these regions in desolate wayes where for lacke of water they haue byn in great daunger to dye for thysse, they haue escaped that perell by reason that they founde the fayde reedes, of the water of whose canes they haue droonke a greate quantitie without any hurte thereof enswynge. Therefore when they fynde these in any place, they make water vesselles of the canes therof, and carie as many of them ful of water as may suffice for one dayes iornay. And sumtyme they carie so many, that they take for every man two or three quartes of water which may serue them for many dayes bycause it doth not corrupte, but remaynethe styll fresshe and good.

197

Platani.

There are also certeine plantes which the Christians caul *Platani*. These are as hygh as trees, and become as bygge in the trunke as the knee of a man or more. Frome the foote to the toppe, they beare certeyne longe and large leaues, beinge more then three spannes in largenes, and about ten or twelue in length: The whiche when they are broken of the wynde, the stalle remayneth hole in the myddel. In the myddel of this plant in the hyghest parte thereof, there groweth a cluster with forte or fystie Platans abowt it, eury of them beinge a spanne and a halfe in length, and as bygge as a mans arme in the smaule, or more or lesse accordyng to the goodnesse of the soyle where they growe. They haue a rynde not very thycke, and easie to bee broken: being within altogether full of a substaunce lyke unto the marye of the bone of an oxe as it appeareth when the rynde or barke is taken frome the same. This cluster ought to bee taken from the plant, when any one of the Platans begynne to appere yellowe. At which tyme they take it and hange it in theyr houfes where all the cluster waxeth ripe with his Platans. This cluster is a very good frute: And when it is opened and the rynde taken of, there are founde within it many good drye fygges which beyng rosted or stewed in an ouen in a cloſe pot or sum fuche other thynge, are of pleauante taste muche lyke the conserue of honys. They putrifie not on the sea so foone as sume other frutes do: but continue fyſteene dayes and more yf they bee gathered sumwhat greene. They feeme more delicate on the sea then on the lande, not for that they any thinge increase in goodnesse on the sea, but bycause that whereas on the sea other thynge are lacking wherof is plentie on the land, thofe meates feeme of beſte taste which satisfie preſente neceſſtie. This troonke or sprygge whiche bryngeth forth the fayne cluster is a hole yeare in growyng and brynging forth frute. In whiche tyme it hath put forth rounde abowte it tenne or twelue sprygges as bygge as the fyſl or principall, and multiplieth no leſſe then the principall in bryngyngge forth of clusters with frutes lykewyſe at theyr tyme, and also in bryngyngge forth other and many sprygges as is fayne beforē. From the which sprygges or trunks, as ſoone as the cluſter of the frute is taken away, the plante begynneth to drye and wyther, which then they take owt of the grounde bycause it doth none other then occupie it in vayne and without profyt. They are ſo many and doo ſo maruelouslie increaſe and multiplie, that it is a thynge in maner incrediblē. They are excedyng moyle. In ſo much that when they are plucked vp from the place wher they grow, there iſheweth forth a great quantitiue of water as well owt of the plante as owt of the place where it grewe: In ſuch forte that all the moyſture of the earth farre abowte, myght feeme to bee gathered togidher abowte the trunke or blocke of the fayne plante: with the frutes wherof, the antes are ſo farre in loue, that they are feene in great multitudes in the branches of the plantes. So that for the multitude thereof it ſumetyme ſo chaunceth that men are inforced to take away the Platans frome theyr poſſeſſion. These frutes are founde at all tymes of the year.

Tunas.

There is also an other kynd of wyld plantes that growth in the fyeldes: which I haue not feene but in the Ilande of Hispaniola, althowgh they be founde in other Ilandes of the Indies. Theſe they caule *Tunas*. They growe of a thifflie full of thornes, and bryngge forth a frute muche lyke unto great fygges, which haue a crowne lyke medlers, and are within of a hyghe coloure, with graynes and the rynde lyke vnto a fygge. They are of good taste: And growe abundantly in the fyeldes in many places. They woorkē a ſtrangle effeſte in fuche as eate them. For if a manne eate two or threed or more, they caufe his vrine to bee of the verye coloure of bludde, which thynge chaunced once to my ſelfe. At whiche tyme as I made water and fawe the colour of my vrine, I entered into a great ſufpition of my lyfe, beinge fo aftonyſhed for feare, that I thought the fame had chaunced to me vpon ſum other caufe. In ſo muche that ſurely my imagination myght haue doone me hurte, but that they whiche were with me dyd comforte me immediatly, declarynge the caufe therof as they knewe by experience beeing auncient inhabitours in thofe regions.

Bihaoſ.

There growth also an other plante whiche the people of the countrey caule *Bihaoſ*. This putteth forth certeyne freight braunches and very brode leaues which the Indians vſe for dyuers purpoſes. For in ſum places they couer theyr houfes with the leaues therof cowched and layde after the maner of thetchē, wherunto it ſerueth very well. Sumtymes alſo when it rayneth, they caſt theſe ouer theyr headeſ to defende them from the water. They make alſo certeyne cheſtēs whiche they caule *Hauas*, weaued after a ſtrangle forte and intermixt with the leaues of this *Bihaoſ*. Theſe cheſtēs are wrought in ſuch fort, that although it rayne vpon them, or they chaunce to faule into the water, yet are not ſuch thyngeſ wette as are within them. They are made of the braunches of the fayne *Bihaoſ* with the leaues weaued togidher therwith. In theſe they keepe falte and other ſubtyle thyngeſ. They vſe theym alſo for an other purpoſe, which is this: That finding them in the fieldes at ſuch tyme as they haue ſcarfenesſe of vytayles, they digge vp the rootes of theſe plantes whyle they are yet younge, or eate the plante it ſelfe in that parte where it is moſte tender, which is from a foote vnder the grounde, where it is as tender and whyte as a reede or bulruffe.

Hauas.

And forasmuch as wee are nowe coomme to the end of this narration, it commeth to my remembraunce to make mention of an other thynge which is not farre from my purpoſe. And this is howe the Indians do ſtayne or dye cloth of bombagie cotton, or any other thynge which they intende to dye of dyuers coloures: as blacke, tawny, greene, blewe, yellowe, and redde, whiche they doo with the barkes or ryndes, and leaues of certeyne trees,

Dying of cotton.

1 become
yne longe
me whiche
e plant in
being a
ge to the
en: being
the rynde
the Platans
er waxeth
of, there
ot or sum
the sea so
at greene.
ndness on
and, thofe
eth foorth
ut foorth
then the
orth other
f the frute
because it
y increase
that when
well owte
e abowte,
s whereof,
o that for
ome theyr

but in the
as. They
a crowne
hey are of
n fuche as
coloure of
our of my
fame had
me herte,
knewe by

teth forth
um places
it ferueth
ter. They
the leaues
haunce to
ches of the
e thynges.
ne as they
or eate the
ere it is as

eraunce to
do stayne
as blacke,
yne trees,

whiche they knowe by experiance to bee good for this practife. And by this arte they make colours in such perfection and excellencie that no better can bee diuyfed. But this feemeth a straunge thyng, that they doo all this in one felfe same vefell: So that when they haue caused the fayne ryndes and leaues to boyle togither, they make in the same vefell without any chaunge (as I haue fayne) as many colours as them lyfeth. Whiche thyng I suppose to coomme to paffe by the disposition of the colore whiche they haue fyrfle gyuen to the thyng that they intende to drye or colour, whether it bee threede, webbe, or clothe, or any thyng that they intende to colour.

A straunge thyng.

¶ Of venomous apples wherwith they poyson theyr arrowes.



He apples wherewith the Indian Canibales inuenemie theyr arrowes, growe on certeyne trees couered with many braunches and leaues beinge very greene and growyng thicke. They are laden with abundaunce of these euyll frutes, and haue theyr leaues lyke the leaues of a pear tree, but that they are lesse and rounder. The frute is much lyke the muscadell peares of the Ilande of Sicilie or Naples in forme and byggenesse: And are in sum partes fleyned with redde spottes, and of very sweete sauoure. These trees for the mooste parte, growe euer by the sea coastes and neare vnto the water: And are so fayre and of pleasaunte sauour, that there is no man that seeethe theym but wyll defyre to eate therof.

In so much that if it may bee spoken of any frute yet growynge on the earth, I wolde faye that this was the vnhappy frute wherof our syrfe parentes Adam and Eue tastid, whereby they both lost their felicitie and procured death to them and theyr posterite. Of these frutes, and of the greate antes whose bytyng caufeth swellynge (whereof I haue spoken els where) and of the eutes or lyfartes, and vypers, and such other venomous thynges, the Canibales which are the chyef archers amoung the Indians, are accustomed to poyson theyr arrowes wherwith they kyll all that they wounde.

Thevenemous they mangle togither and make thereof a blacke masse or composition which appeareth lyke vnto very blacke pytche. Of this poyson I caused a great quantiti to be burnt in *Sancta Maria Antiqua* in a place two leaques and more within the lande, with a greate multitude of theyr inuenemed arrowes and other munition, with also the house wherein they were referred. This was in the yere. 1514. at suche tyme as th[e]army arriuied there with capitayne *Padrarias da villa* at the commaundemente of the Catholyke kyng *Don Ferdinand*. But to retorne to the hystory. These apples (as I haue said) growe neare vnto the sea. And wheras the Christians which serue your maieslie in these parties, suppose that there is no remedy so profitable for suche as are wounded with these arrowes, as is the water of the sea if the wounde be much wasshed therwith, by which means sum haue escaped although but fewe, yet to faye the trewthe, albeit the water of the sea haue a certeyne cauylke qualitie ageynst poyson, it is not a sufficient remedie in this case: nor yet to this day haue the Christians perceaued that of fiftie that haue byn wounded, three haue recovered. But that your maieslie may the better confyder the force of the veneme of these trees, yowe shall furth vnderstande that of a man doo but repose hym selfe to sleepe a lyttle whyle vnder the shadow of the same, he hath his head and eyes so swolne when he ryseth, that the eye lyddes are ioyned with the chekes. And if it chaunce one droppe or more of the dewe of the fayne tree to faule into the eye, it vterly destroyeth the fyghe. The pestilent nature of this tree is such that it can not bee declared in fewe woordes. Of these there groweth greate plentie in the goulfe of *Vraba* towarde the North coast on the Weste and Easte syde. The wood of these trees when it burneth, maketh fo greate a flynke that noo man is able to abyde it, by reaon it causeth so greate a peyne in the heade.

Amonge other trees which are in these Indies as well in the Ilandes as in the firme lande, there is an other kynde which they caule *Xagua*, wherof there is greate plentie. They are very hygh and streyght, and fayre to beholde. Of these they vse to make pykes and iuelyns of dyuers lengthes and byggenesse. They are of a fayre colour betwene russette and whyte. This tree bryngeth foorth a greate frute as bygge as Papauer or poppie and much lyke therunto. It is very good to be eaten when it is ripe. Owte of this they gette a very cleare water wherwith they wasshe their legges and sumetymes all theyr boddyes when they feele theyr fleshe werye, faynt, or loose. The which water, byfyde that it hath a byndyng qualitie, it hath also this propertie, that what so euer it toucheth, it steyneth it blacke by lyttle and lyttle vnyll it bee as blacke as giette, which coloure can not be taken away in lesse space then tenne or twelue dayes. And as the nayle bee but touched therwith, it is so staineid that it can by no meanes bee taken away vnyll it eyther faule of, or growe owte and bee clypped away by lyttle and lyttle, as I my selfe haue ostentymes feene by experiance.

There is another kynde of trees which they call *Hobi*. These are very great and fayre, and caufe holfome ayer where they growe and a pleasaunte shadow, and are founde in great abundaunce. Their frute is very good,

Note.

Canibales ar biers.

Wherwith they
inuenym their
arrowes199
*Petrus Arias.*The water of the
sea.The goulfe of
Vraba.*Xagua*.*Hobi*.
Sum thyngs these
to be microbalancis.

and of good tast and fauoure, and much lyke vnto certeyne damfons or prunes beinge lyttle and yellowe. But theyr stonre is very great: by reasoun wherof they haue but lyttle meate. Theyr barke or rynde boyled in water, maketh a holosome bathe for the legges, bycause it bindeth and steyneth the loosenesse of the fleshe so sencibly that it is a marueyle to confyder. It is sulerly a holosome and excellent bathe ageynst such fayntnesse: And is the besste tree that may bee founde in those parties to sleepe vnder. For it caufeth no heauinessse of the headde as doo dyuers other trees. Whiche thynge I speake bycause the Christians are muche accustomed in those regions to lye in the fyeldes. It is therfore a common practise amonge them, that where so euer they fynd these trees, there they spreade theyr mattresses and beddes wherin they sleepe.

Date trees.

The inhabitants
of the sea of Sur.

200

An herbe
that
barethe cordes.Cabuia and
Henequen.A straung[e]
thinge.

Leaues.

A leafe of great
vertue.

There are also a kynde of hyghe date trees and full of thornes. The woodde of these is mooste excellent: beinge very blacke, and shynynge, and so heauy that no parte thereof can swymme aboue the water, but synketh immediatly to the bottome. Of this woodde they make theyr arrowes and dartes: Also iauelyns, speares, and pykes. And I faye pykes, bycause that in the coastes of the sea of *Sur*, beyonde *Ezqueua* and *Vracha*, the Indians vse great and longe pykes made of the woodde of these date trees. Of the same lykewyse they make clubbes and swoordes and dyuers other weapons. Also vesselles and houfholde stoffe of dyuers sortes very fayre and commodious. Furthermore of this woodde the Christians vse to make dyuers musicall instrumentes, as clarisimbals, lutes, gyterns, and suche other, the whiche bysyde theyr fayre shynynge coloure lyke vnto giete, are also of a good founde and very durable by reasoun of the hardnesse of the woodde.

After that I haue sayde thus much of trees and plantes, I haue thought good also to speake sumwhat of herbes. You shall therefore vnderstande that in these Indies there is an herbe much lyke vnto a yellowe lyllye, abowte whose leaues there growe and creepe certeyne cordes or laces, as the lyke is partly seene in the herbe which we caule lafed sauery. But these of the Indies are muche bygger, and longer: and so stronge that they tye theyr hangynge beddes thereby whiche they caule *Hamacas* wherof we haue spoken elwher. These cordes, they caule *Cabuia* and *Henequen*, which are al one thing fauyng that *Henequen* is lesse and of a syner substaunce as it were line: And the other is grosser lyke the wycke or twyste of hempe, and is imperfekte in comparisyon to the other. They are of coloure betwene whyte and yellowe lyke vnto abarne, and sum also whyte. With *Henequen* whiche is the mooste subtile and fyne threede, the Indians sawe in funder fettters, cheynes, or barres of Iren in this maner. They moue the threede of *Henequen* vppon the iren which they intende to saw or cutte, drawyng the one hande after the other as doo they that sawe, puttynge euer nowe and then a portion of fyne sande vppon the threede, or on the place or parte of the Iren where they continue rubbyng the sayde threede. So that yf the threede be worne, they take an other, and continewe in theyr woorke as before vntyl they haue cutte in funder the iren although it bee never so bygge: and cut it as yf it were a tender thynge and easye to bee fawne.

And for asmuch as the leaues of trees may bee counted amounghe herbes, I wyll here speake sumwhat of the qualitie of the leaues of certeyne trees which are founde in the Iland of *Hispaniola*. These trees are so full of thornes, that there is no tree or plante that feemeth more wylde and deformed: so that I can not well determyne whether they bee trees or plantes. They haue certeyne braunches full of large and deformed leaues, which braunches were fyrtle leaues lyke vnto the other. As the braunches made of these leaues growe foorth in length, there commeth other leaues of them. So that in fine it is a difficult thynge to descreybe the forme of these trees except the same shulde bee doone by a paynter wherby the eye myght conceaue that wherein the toonge sayleth in this behalfe. The leaues of this tree are of such vertue, that beynge well beaten and spreadde vppon a cloth after the maner of a playster, and so layde to a legge or arme that is broken in many pieces, it healeth it in systene dayes, and maketh it as hole as though it had never byn broken. Duryng the tyme of this operation, it cleaueth so fast to the fleshe that it can not without muche difficultie bee taken away. But as soone as it hath healed the sore and wrought his operation, it loofeth it selfe from the place where it was layde, as I myselfe and dyuers other which haue proued it, knowe by experiance.

¶ Of fysshes and of the maner of fysshynge.



In the sea coastes of the firme lande, there are dyuers and sundry kyndes of fysshes muche differynge in shape and forme. And althoughe it be impossible to speake of all, yet wyll I make mention of sum. And syrly to begynne at fardynes, yow shall vnderstande that there is founde a kynde of these fysshes very large and with redde tayles, beinge a very delicate fyssh. The besste kyndes of other fysshes are these: *Moxarre*, *Diahace*, *Brettes*, *Dahaos*, *Thornbackes*, and *Salmons*. All these and dyuers other which I do not now remember, are taken in great quantitie in ryuers. There are lykewyse taken very good creuysshes. There

ve. But
in water,
ſencibly
: And is
the heade
in thoſe
they fynd

excellent:
t ſynketh
ares, and
acha, the
ney make
very fayre
mentes, as
giete, are

mewhat of
owe lyllie,
the herbe
that they
e. These
of a fyner
erfecte in
ſum alſo
er fetters,
ich they
nowe and
continue
in theyr
it as yf it

newhat of
are fo full
not well
deformed
ues grove
ſcrybe the
caue that
ell beaten
broken in
Duryng
bee taken
ace where

hes muſe
yet wyll I
that there
y delicate
, Dahao,
ember, are
s. There

are alſo founde in the ſea, certeyne other fyfhes: as foles, mackerelles, turbuttis, *Palamite*, *Lizze*, *Polpi*, *Chieppe*, *Xaibas*, *Locutes*, Oysters, excedyng great Tortoſes, and Tiburoni of maruelous byggenefte: Also Manates, and Murene, and manye other fyfhes which haue no names in oure language. And theſe of ſuch diuerſitie and quantitiſe as can not bee exprefſed without large wrytyng and longe tyme. But to let paſſe to intreate particularly of the multitude of fyfhes, I intende to ſpeake chiefly and ſumwhat largely of three forteſ of moſte notable fyfhes: wheroſ the firſt is, the great Tortoſe, the feconde is cauſed Tiburon, and the thyrde Manate. And to begynne at the firſt, I ſaye that in the Ilande of *Cuba*, are founde great Tortoſes (which are certeyne ſhell fyfhes) of ſuch byggenefte that tenne or fyſteene men are feareſly able to lyſte one of them owt of the water, as I haue byn informed of credible perſons dwellynge in the fame Ilande. But of that which I my ſelfe haue ſene, I can teſtifie that in the firme lande in the vylage of Acla there are of this forte ſum taken and kyld of ſuche byggenes that ſixe men with much diſſicultie coulde scarcely drawe them owt of the water. And commonly the leaſt forte of them are as muſh as two men may cary at a burden. That which I ſawne lifted vp by fyxe men, had her ſhell a yarde and a quarter in length, and in breadþ more then fyue yardeſ. The maner of takynge them, is this. It ſumtymes chaunceth that in theys greate nettes (whiche they caule ſhoote nettes) there are founde certeyne Tortoſes of the common forte in great quantities. And when they coome owt of the ſea and bringe forth their eges and go togþer by coompaines from the ſea to feade on the lande, the Christians or Indians folowen their ſteppes whiche they fynde in the ſande, and foone ouertake them bycause they are very heauy and flowe in goyng, although they make all the haſte they can to retorne to the ſea as foone as they elfe any boddie. When they that purwe them haue ouertaken them, they put a ſlacke or ſtaffe vnder their legges and ouerturne them on theyr backes as they are yet runnyng, ſo that they can go no further nor yet ryfe ageyne or turne. And thus they ſuffer them to lyſtill whyle they folowen after the reſte which they ouerturne in lyke maner: And by this meaneſ take very manye at ſuche tymes as they coome furth of the ſea as I haue ſayde. This fyſhe is very excellent and holſome to be eaten, and of good taste. The feconde of the three fyfhes wheroſ I haue ſpoken, is the Tiburon. This is a very greate fyſhe and very quicke and ſwift in the water, and a cruell deuourer. Theſe are often tymes taken, awfel when the ſhippes are vnder fayle in the Ocean, as also when they ly at anker, or at any other time, and eſpecially the leaſte kynd of theſe fyfhes. When the ſhippes are vnder fayle, the biggest forte are taken after thiſ maner. When the Tiburon ſeeſ the ſhippe failinge he foloweth it fwymmyng behynde. The which thinge the mariners ſeeing, caſte furthe all the fythe of the ſhippe into the ſea for the fyſhe to eate, who neuertheleſſe foloweth them with equal paſſe althouſh they make neuer ſuch haſte wyth full wynd and failes, and waloweth on every fyde and about the fyſhe: And thus foloweth it fumetymeſ for the ſpace of a hundredth and fyſtie leaqueſ and more. And when the mariners are diſpoſed to take them, they caſt downe by the ſtern of the ſhippe, a hoke of yren as bigge as the biggest finger of a mans hande of three ſpannes in lengthe and crooked like a fyſhehooke with beardeſ accorſe to the bigneffe thereof, and fastened to an iren chayne of fyue or fyxe linkes neare vnto the ſende, and from thenſe tyed with a greate rope, fastening alſo on the hooke for a bayte, a piece of ſum fyſhe, or hogges fleſh, or ſum other fleſh, or the bouwelles and in traſſes of an other Tiburon whiche they haue taken before, whiche may eaſely bee doone, for I haue ſene nyne taken in one day. And if they wolde haue taken more, they myght alſo. Thus when the Tiburon hath pleaſantly folowed the ſhip a longe viage, at the lengthe he waloweth the baite with the hooke. And awfel by his ſtryuynge to flye or eſcape, as alſo by the fwife paſſage of the fyſhe, the hooke ouerthwarteth and catcheth hold of his chappes. The which fyſhe when it is taken, it is of ſuche huge biggenefte that twelue or fyſteene men are ſcarceably able to drawe it owt of the water and liſte it into the fyſhe: Where one of the mariners gyueth it many knockes on the heade with a clubbe or beetle vntil he haue ſlaine it. They are ſumtymes founde of tenne or twelue foote long, and of fyue, fyxe, or ſeven ſpannes in breadþ where they are brodeſt. They haue very greate and wyde mouthes to the proportion of the reſte of theyr boddieſ, and haue two rowes of teeth the one ſumwhat ſeparate from the other, of cruell ſhape and ſtanding very thiſke. When they haue ſlayne thiſ fyſhe, they cutte the boddy therof in ſmaule pieſes, and put it to drye, hangynge it three or four dayes at the cordes of the fayle clothes to drye in the wynde, and then eatte it. It is doubtleſſe a good fyſhe and of great commoditie to ſerue the ſhippes for vitalles for many dayes. The leaſte of theſe fyfhes are moſte holſome and tender. It hath a ſkinne much like to the ſkyne of a foſe, whervnto the fyde Tiburon is lyke in ſhape. Which I ſaye bycause Plinie hath made mention of none of thiſe three fyfhes among the number of them wheroſ he wryteth in hiſ natural hystorie. Theſe Tiburons coomme furth of the ſea and enter into the ryuers, where they are no leſſe perelous then greate lifartes or Crocodiles wheroſ I haue ſpoken largely before. For they deuoure men, kine, and horſes, euen as doo the Crocodiles. They are very daungerous in certeyne waſhyng places or pooleſ by the ryuers ſydes, and where they haue deuoured at other tymes. Dyuers other fyfhes both greate and finaule, of fundry forteſ and kyndes are accuſtomed to folowe the fyppes goyng vnder fayle, of the which I wyl ſpeake ſumwhat when I haue wrytten of Manate which is the thyrde of the three wheroſ I haue promyſed to entreate. Manate therefore, is a fyſhe of the ſea, of the byggelſt forte,

Tiburoni
Manates

Great Tortoſes

201

Tiburoni

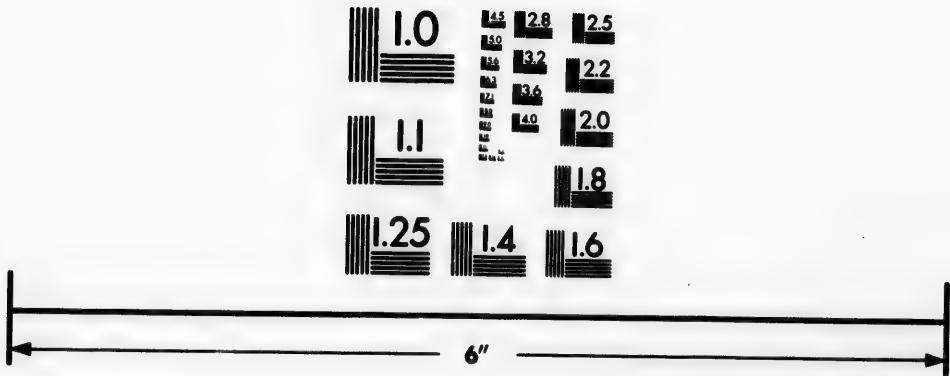
Plinie.

Crocodyles.

202

Manates.

IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

4
3
2.8
2.5
2.2
2.0

1.0

and muche greater then the Tiburon in length and breadth: And is very brutyſſhe and vyle, ſo that it appereath in forme lyke vnto one of those great veffelles made of goates ſkynnes wherin they vſe to cary newe wyne in *Medina de Campo* or in *Arealo*. The headle of this beaſt is lyke the head of an oxe, with alſo lyke eyes. And hath in the place of armes, two great ſlumpes wherwith he fwymmeth. It is a very gentle and tame beaſte: And commeth oftentymes owt of the water to the next ſhore: where if he find [a]ny herbes or graffe, he feedeth therof. Owe men are accustomed to kyl many of theſe and dyuers other good fyſſhes with their croſſebowes, purſuinge them in barks or Canoas, bycaufe they fwymme in maner aboue the water. The whiche thynge when they fee, they drawe them with a hooke tyde at a fmaule corde, but ſumwhat ſtronge. As the fyſſhe flyeth away, the archer letteth go and prolongeth the corde by lyttle and lyttle vntyll he haue lette it go many fathams. At the ende of the corde, there is tyde a corke or a piece of lyght woodde. And when the fyſſhe is goone a lyttle way, and haþe coloured the water with his bludde, and feeleth hym ſelue to faint and drawe towarde th[e]nde of his lyfe, he reforteþe to the ſhore, and the archer foloweth gatherynge vp his corde: wherof whyle there yet remaine fixe or eȝht fathams or ſum what more or leſſe, he draweth it towarde the lande, and draweth the fyſſhe therewith by little and lyttle as the waues of the ſea helpe hym to doo it the more eaſely. Then with the helpe of the reſte of his compagnie he lyfþeþe this greate beaſt owt of the water to the lande, beinge of ſuch bygynesse that to conuey it from thense to the citie, it ſhalbe requisite to haue a carte with a good yoke of oxen, and ſumtymes more, accordyng as theſe fyſſhes are of byggenesse, ſum being much greater then other ſum in the fame kyndē as is ſeene of other beaſtes. Sumtyme they lyfþeþe theſe fyſſhes into the Canoa or barke, withoutw drawinge them to the lande as before. For as ſoone as they are flayne, they floþe aboue the water. And I beleue verely that this fyſſhe is one of the beſt in the world to the taſte, and the lykeſt vnto fleſſe. Eſpecially fo lyke vnto bief, that who fo hath not ſeene it hole, can iudge it to bee none other when he ſeethe it in pieces then verye bief or veale. And is certeynly fo lyke vnto fleſſe, that all the men in the worlde may herin bee deceaued. The taſte lykewyfe, is lyke vnto the taſt of very good veale, and laſteth longe yf it bee poudered. So that in fine, the bafe of theſe parties, is by no meaneſe lyke vnto this. This Manate, hath a certeine ſtone or rather bone in his headde within the brayne, which is of qualitie greatly appropriate ageynſte the difeaſe of the ſtone, if it bee burnte and grounde into fmaule pouder, and taken faſtyngne in the mornynge when the payne is felte, in ſuch quantitie as maye lye uppon a penye with a drawght of good whyte wyne. For beyngne thus taken three or foure mornynges, it acquieteth the grefe as dyuers haue tolde me whiche haue proued it trewe. And I my ſelue by teſtimonie of fight, doo wytneſſe that I haue ſeene this ſtone fought of dyuers for this effecte.

There are alſo dyuers other fyſſhes as bygge as this Manate: Emonge the which there is one cauled *Vihuella*. This fyſſhe beareth in the toppe of his headde, a ſwoorde beinge on euery fyde full of many ſharpe teeth. This ſwoorde is naturally very harde and ſtronge, of four or fyue ſpannes in length and of proportion accordançyng to the fame byggenes. And for this caufe is this fyſſhe cauled *Spada*: that is the ſwoord fyſſhe. Of this kyndē ſum are found as lyttle as ſardines: and other fo greate, that two yokes of oxen are ſcarfely able to drawe them on a carte. But whereas before, I haue promyſed to ſpeak of other fyſſhes whiche are taken in theſe ſeas whyle the ſhyppes are vnder ſayle, I wyl not forget to ſpeak of the Tunnye which is a greate and good fyſſhe, and is oftentymes taken and kyld with troute ſpeares and hookes caſte in the water when they play and fwymme aboue the ſhyppes. In lyke maner alſo are taken many turbuts which are very good fyſſhes as are lyghtly in all the ſea.

And here is to bee noted, that in the greate Ocean ſea, there is a ſtraunge thynge to bee confidered, whiche all that haue byn in the Indies affirme to bee trewe. And this is, that lyke as on the lande there are ſum prouincies fertile and frutfull, and ſum barren, even to dooth the lyke chaunce in the ſea: So that at ſum wyndes the ſhyppes ſayle fitte or a hundredth, or two hundredth leagues and more, withoutw takyng or feinge of one fyſſhe. And ageyne in the ſelue fame Ocean, in ſum places, all the water is ſeene tremble by the mouynge of the fyſſhes, where they are taken abundantly.

It commeth further to my remembrance to ſpeak ſumwhat of the flyinge of fyſſhes, which is doubtleſſe a ſtraunge thynge to beholde, and is after this maner. When the ſhyppes ſayle by the greate Ocean folowynge their vyage, there ryfeth ſumtymes on the one fyde or on the other, many coompaniies of certeyne lytle fyſſhes, of the which the byggeſt is no greater then a ſardyne: and foo diminifhe leſſe and leſſe from that quantitie that ſum of them are very lyttle. Theſe are cauled *Volatori*: that is, flyinge fyſſhes. They ryse by great coompaniies and flocken in ſuch multitudenes that it is an aſtonyfhemē to beholde them. Sumtymes they ryſe but lyttle from the water: and (as it chaunceth) contine new one flight for the ſpace of a hundredth paſes and ſumtymes more or leſſe before they faule ageyne into the ſea. Sumtymes alſo they faule into the ſhyppes. And I remember that on an euening when all the company in the ſhippe were on theyr knees ſyngynge *Salte regina* in the highest parte of the Caſtel of the poope, and ſayled with a full wynde, there paſſed by vs a flocke of theſe flyinge fyſſhes: and came fo neare vs that many of them fell into the ſhypp, amoung the which, two or three fell hard

The fyſſhe
Manate.
A remedy ageynſte
the ſtone.

The ſwordes
fyſſhes.

Tunnye.

Turbut.

Note.

Flyinge fyſſhes.

203

appareareth
wyne in
yke eyes.
and tame
grasse, he
with theyr
ter. The
onge. As
haue lette
And when
e to faint
ge vp his
towardre
doo it the
the water
ue a carte
eing much
ffishes into
ayne, they
e, and the
bee none
at all the
veale, and
vnto this.
tie greatly
and taken
a drawght
uers haue
haue feene

one cauled
any sharpe
proportion
fyse. Of
ely able to
e taken in
t and good
they play
ffishes as

considered,
e there are
hat at fum
or feinge of
e mouynge

oubtlesse a
folowynge
tle fyshes,
antitie that
companies
e but little
ymes more
remember
ina in the
ese flyngie
e fell hard

by me which I tooke alyue in my hande: so that I myght well perceave that they were as bigge as fardynes and of the same quantite, hauyng two wynges or quylles growyng owt of their fynnes, lyke vnto those wherwith all the fysshys swymme in ryuers. These wynges are as longe as the fysshys them selues. As longe as theyr wynges are moyste, they beare them vp in the ayer. But as soone as they are drye, they can continewe theyr flight no further then as I haue sayde before, but faule immediatly into the sea, and so ryse ageyne, and flye as before from place to place.

In the yeare A thousand fyue hundredre fistene, when I came syrft to informe your maiestye of the state of the thynges in Indya, and was the yearre folowinge in Flanders in the tyme of youre mooste fortunate successe in these youre kyngedomes of Aragonie and Caſtyle, wheras at that vyage I fayled aboue the Iland *Bermuda* otherwyse cauled *Garza*, beyng the furtheste of all the Ilandes that are founde at thys daye in the worlde, and arruyng there at the deapthe of eight yeardes of water, and dystant from the land as farre as the shotte of a piece of ordynaunce, I determined to fende sume of the thyppe to lades as well to make searche of suche thynges as were there, as also to leaue in the Ilande certayne hogges for increase. But the tyme not seruynge my purpose by reason of contrarie wynde, I could bryng my fypphes no nearer the Ilande beinge twelue leagues in lengthe and fyxe in breadth and about thyrty in circuite, lying in the thyrty and thre degré of the northe syde. Whyle I remayned here, I fawfe a stryfe and combate betwene these flyinge fysshys and the fysshys named gytle headeſ, and the foules cauled feamewes and cormorauntes, whych fuerlye seemed vnto me a thyng of as greatt pleafure and folace as could bee deuyfed, whyle the gytle headeſ swamme on the brymme of the water and sumtymes lyfted ther shuldres aboue the fame to rayfe the swymmyng fysshys owt of the water to dryue them to flight, and folowe them swymming to the place where they faule to take and eate them fodaynlye. Agayne on the other syde, the feamewes and cormorantes, take manye of these flyinge fysshys: so that by thys meanes theye are nother safe in the ayre nor in the water. In the selfe fame perrell and daunger doo men lyue in thys mortall lyfe wherin is no certayne securtye nether in hygh estate nor in lowe. Which thyngue fuerlye ought to put vs in remembraunce of that blessed and safte refyngye place whych god hath prepared for such as loue hym, who shall acquyete and fynyshe the trauayles of thy troubelous worlde wherin are so manye daungours, and bryngem them to that eternall lyfe where they shall fynde eternall securtye and rest. But to retorne to the hystorye: these byrdes and foules whych I fawfe, were of the Ilande of *Bermuda* nere vnto the whych I fawfe these flyinge fysshys. For they could bee of no other lande, forasmuche as they are not accustomed to wander farre frome the coastes where they are bredde.

*The Iland of
Bermuda.*

*Not to hie for the
pye, nor to lowe
for the crowe.*

204

¶ Of th[e]increase and decrease, (that is) ryſyngē and faullynge of our Ocean ſea and Southe ſea cauſed the ſea of Sur.



Wyll nowe speake of certayne thynges whiche are feene in the Prouynce, or at the leaste in the citie of golden Caſtyle otherwyſe cauled *Beragua*, and in the coaſtes of the North ſea and of the South ſea cauſed the ſea of *Sur*. Not omittynge to note one ſynguler and meruelous thyng which I haue conſidered of the Ocean ſea, wherof hytherto no coſmographer, pylon or maryner or any other haue ſatisfyed me.

I ſay therfore as it is well knownen to your maiestye and all ſuch as haue knowledge of the Ocean ſea, that this greate Ocean caſteth from it ſelfe the ſea *Mediterraneum* by the mouthe of the ſtrayght of *Gibilterra*: in the which the water from th[e]end and furtheſte parte of that ſea, even vnto the mouth of the ſayne ſtrayght, eyther in the East towarde the coaſte commonlie cauſed *Leuante*, or in any other parte of the ſayne ſea *Mediterraneum*, the ſea doothe not ſo faule nor increase as reaſon wolde judge for ſo greate a ſea. But increſethethe verye lyttle and a ſmaule ſpace. Neuertheleſſe, withoute the mouthe of the ſtrayght in the mayne Ocean, it increaſeth and fauleth verye muche and a great ſpace of grounde from fyxe hours to fyxe hours, as in all the coaſtes of Spayne, Britanny, Flanders, Germanye, and England. The ſelfe fame Ocean ſea in the fyrmē lande newly founde, in the coaſtes of the fame lyngē towarde the Northe, dothe neyther ryſe nor faule, nor lykewife in the Ilandes of *Hippaniola* and *Cuba* and all the other Ilandes of the fame ſea lyngē towarde the northe, for the ſpace of thre thouſande leagues, but onelye in lyke maner as doothe the ſea *Mediterraneum* in Itale: whiche is in maner nothyng in reſpecte to that increase and decrease whiche the ſayne Ocean hath in the coaſtes of Spayne and Flaunders. But this is yet a greateſt thyng, that alſo the ſelfe fame Ocean in the coaſtes of the ſayne fyrmē lande lyngē towarde the Southe in the citie of *Panama*, and alſo in the coaſte of that lande whiche lythe towarde the Easte and Weſte frome that citie, as in the Ilande of pearls or *Margarita* whiche the Indians cauſe *Tarrarequi*, and alſo in *Taboga* and *Otoque*, and

Beragua.

The west Ocean.

*The ſea
Mediterraneum.*

*Hippaniola.
Cuba.*

The South sea.

The power and
wisdome of god is
seen in his
creatures.

in all other Ilandes of the southe sea of *Sur*, the water ryfeth and fauleth so much, that when it faulthe it go[e]th in maner owt of fyghe, which thynge I my selfe haue seene oftentimes.

And here youre maiestie may note an other thynge, that from the northe sea to the southe sea beyng of fuche dyfference the one from the other in ryfynge and faulyng, yet is the lande that deuydeth them not paſte eightheene or twentye leagues in breadthe frome coaſte to coaſte. So that bothe the fayde feas beyng all one Ocean this ſtraunge effeſte is a thynge worthy greatlye to bee conſidered of al fuche as haue inclination and defyre to knowe the ſecrete woorkes of nature wherin the infinite powre and wyfedome of god is ſeen to bee ſuch as may allure all good natures to reuerence and loue fo diuine a maiestie. And wheras by the demouſtrations of lerned men I am not ſatiſfyed of the natural cauſe hereof, I content my ſelfe to knowe and beleue that he which haþe made theſe thynge, dooth knowe this and many other whiche he hath not granted to the reaſon of man to comprehend, much leſſe to ſo bafe a wyt as myne is. They therefore that are of greater vnderſtāndyng, ſhall ſearche the caufe hereof, for them and for me, forasmuch as I haue onely put the matter in queſtion as a wytnesse that haue ſeene th[e]xperience of the thynge.

¶ Of the ſtrayght or narowe paſſage of the lande lyinge betwene the North and South ſea, by the whiche ſpices may much ſooner and eaſylyer be brought from the Ilandes of Molucca into Spayne by the West Ocean then by that way wherby the Portugales ſayle into Eaſt India.

Esqueua and
Vrraca.*Nomen Dei.*
*Panama.*The ryuer of
Chagre.

T hath byn an opinion amone the Cosmographers and Pylottes of late tyme, and other which haue had practife in thyngeſ touchinge the ſea, that there ſhulde bee a ſtrayght of water paſſyng from the North ſea of the firme, into the South ſea of *Sur*, whiche neuertheleſſe hath not byn ſeene nor founded to this daye. And fuerlye yf there be any fuche ſtrayght, we that inhabite thoſe partes do thynke the fame ſhulde bee rather of lande then of water. For the firme lande in ſum partes therof is ſo ſtrayght and narowe that the Indyans faye that frome the mountaynes of the prouynce of *Esqueua* or *Vrraca*, (whych are betwene the one ſea and the other) If a man affend to the toppe of the mountaynes and looke towarde the Northe, he maye ſee the water of the North ſea of the Prouynce of *Beragua*. And ageyne lookyng the contrarye waye, may on the other fyde towarde the Southe, ſee the ſea of *Sur* and the prouynces whyche conyne with it, as doo the territories of the two Lordes or kynges of the fayde prouynces of *Vrraca* and *Esqueua*. And I beleue that if it bee as the Indyans faye, of al that is hethereto knownen, this is the narroweſt ſtrayght of the firme lande, whiche ſume affyrme to bee full of rough mountaynes. Yet doo I not take it for a better waye, or ſo ſhorte as is that whyche is made from the porte cauled *Nomen dei* (whiche is in the Northe ſea) vnto the newe citye of *Panama* beyng in the coaſte and on the banke of the ſea of *Sur*. Whiche waye is likewyfe very rough ful of thick wods, mountaynes, ryuers, valleys, and verye diffyculte to paſſe through, and can not bee doone without greate laboure and trauyyle. Sum measure this waye in this part, to bee from ſea to ſea. xviii. leagues, whych I ſuppoſe to bee rather. xx. not for that it is any more by meaure, but bicaufe it is rough and diffyculte as I haue fayne, and as I haue founded it by expyrence hauyng nowe twyſe paſſed that way by foote: countyng from the porte and vyllage of *Nomen Dei* vnto the dominion of the *Cacique* of *Iuanaga* otherwyſe cauled *Capira*. viii. leagues: And frome thens to the ryuer of *Chagre*, other. viii. leagues. So that at this ryuer beinge. xvi. leagues from the fayde porte, endeth the roughneſſe of the way. Then from hene to the maruelous brydge are two leagues: And beyonde that, other two vnto the port of *Panama*: So that all togither in my iudgmente, make xx. leagues. And if therfore this nauigation may bee founded in the South ſea for the trade of ſpices (as we truft in God) to bee brought from thens to the fayde porte of *Panama* (as is poſſible enough) they may afterwarde eaſy paſſe to the Northe ſea notwithstandinge the difficultie of the waye of the xx. leagues aforeſayde. Whiche thynge I affirme as a man well traayled in theſe regions, hauyng twyſe on my ſeate paſſed ouer this ſtrayght in the yere. 1521. as I haue fayne. It is furthermore to bee vnderſtode, that it is a maruelous facilite to bryng ſpices by this waye which I wil now declare. From *Panama* to the ryuer of *Chagre*, are four leagues of good and fayre way by the which cartes may paſſe at pleaſure by reaſon that the mountaynes are but fewe and lytle, and that the greateſte parte of theſe foure leagues is a playne grounde voyde of trees. And when the cartes are coomme to the fayde ryuer, the ſpices may be carayed in barkes and pinnesſes. For this ryuer entereth into the

fauleth it
eynge of
hem not
s beyng
inclination
feene to
as by the
nowe and
t granted
hat are of
y put the

North
er

ther which
ant of water
uertheleffe
e strayght,
n of water.
dyans faye
etwene the
e, he maye
ye, may on
as doo the
leue that if
de, whiche
as is that
of *Panama*
al of thicke
owt greate
ych I sup
e as I haue
ing from the
Capira. viii.
vi. leagues
ge are two
ente, make
(as we trust
afterwarde
de. Whiche
his strayght
tie to bryng
nes of good
e and lyttle,
e cartes are
eth into the

North sea fyue or. vi leagues lower then the port of *Nomen dei*, and emptieth it selfe in the sea nere vnto an Ilande cauled *Bastimento*, where is a very good and safe port. Your maiesie may now therfore confyder howe great a thyng and what commoditie it may bee to conuey spices this way, forasmuch as the ryuer of *Chagre* hauyng his originall only two leagues from the South sea, contineweth his course and emptieth it selfe into the other North sea. This ryuer runneth fast and is very greate, and so commodious for this purpote as may be thought or defyred. The marueilous bridge made by the worke of nature, being two leagues beyonde the sayd ryuer, and other two leagues on this syde the porte of *Panama*, so lyinge in the mydde way betwene them both, is framed naturally in such fort that none which passe by this viage see any such bridge or thyng that there is any such buydlyng in that place vntyl they bee in the toppe therof in the way toward *Panama*. But as soone as they are on the brydge, lookyng towarde the ryght hande, they see a litle ryuer vnder them which hath his chanell distante from the feete of them that walke ouer it, the space of twoo speares length or more. The water of this ryuer is very shalowe, not paffyng the depth of a mans legge to the knee: and is in breadth betwene thyrtie and fortie pases: and faulethe into the ryuer of *Chagre*. Towarde the ryght hand standyng on this brydge, there is nothyng feene but great trees. The largenesse of the brydge, conteyneth xv. pases: and the length thereof about threefcore or fourescore pases. The arche is so made of moiste harde stonye, that no man can beholde it without admiration, beinge made by the hyghe and omnipotent creatour of all thynges. But to retorne to speake sumwhat more of the conueyng of spices, I say that when it shal please almyghty god that this nauigation aforesayde shal bee founde by the good fortune of yowre maiesie, and that the spices of the Ilandes of the South sea (which may also bee otherwyse cauled the Ocean of the East India in the whiche are the Ilandes of *Molucca*) shalbe brought to the sayd coaste and the porte of *Panama*, and bee conueyed from thenfe (as we haue sayde) by the firme lande with cartes vnto the ryuer of *Chagre*, and from thenfe into this ovr other sea of the North, from whence they may afterward bee brought into Spayne, I say that by this meanes the vyage shall bee shortened more then seuen thousande leagues, with mucche lesse daunger then is by the viage nowe vied by the way of Commendator of Ayfa capitayne vnder yowre maiesie, who this present yeare attempted a vyage to the place of the sayde splices. And not only the way is thus much shortened, but also a thyrde parte of the tyme is abbreviate. To conclude therfore, if any had hethereto attempted this vyage by the sea of *Sur*, to seeke the Ilandes of splices, I am of firme opinion that they shuld haue byn founde longe fence, as doubtlesse they maye bee by the reasons of Cosmographie.

The Ilande
Bastimento.

The maruelous
bridge.

206

The Ilandes of
Molucca.
The commoditie
of this viage.

¶ Howe thynges that are of one kynde, dyffer in forme and qualitie, accordynge to the nature of the place where they are engendred or growe. And of the beastes cauled Tygers.



N the firme lande are fownde many terryle beastes which sum thinke to be Tigers. Which thyng nevertheleffe, I dare not affirme, confyderynge what auctoures doo wryte of the lyghtnes and agilitie of the Tyger, whereas this beast beyng other wyfe in shape very like vnto a Tyger, is notwithstandyng very slowe. Yet trewe it is, that accordynge to the marauyles of the worlde and differences which naturall thynges haue in dyuers regions vnder heauen and dyuers constellations of the same vnder the whiche they are created, wee see that sum fuche plantes and herbes as are hurtfull in one countrey, are harmeleffe and holosome in other regions. And byrdes which in one prouince are of good taste, are in other so vnfaery that they may not bee eaten. Men likewyse which in sum countreys are blacke, are in other places whyte: and yet are both these and they men.

Tigers.

Plantes and
herbes.
Birdes.
Men.

Euen so may it bee that Tygers are lyght in sum region as they wryte, and maye nevertheleffe bee slowe and heawy in thes Indies of yowr maiesie wherof we speake. The sheepe of Arabic drawe theyr tayles longe and bigge on the ground, and the bulles of Egypt haue theyr heare growyng towarde theyr headdes: yet are those sheepe and these bulles. Men in sum countreys are hardy and of good courage, and in other naturally fearefull and brutyne. All these thynges and many more which may bee sayde to this purpote, are easy to bee proued and worthy to bee beleued of sume as haue redde of the lyke in autours or trauayled the worlde, whereby theyr owne syght may teache them the experience of these thynges wherof I speake. It is also manifest, that *Jucca* wherof they make theyr breade in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, is deadely poyson yf it bee eaten greene with the iuse: And yet hath he it no fuche propertie in the firme land where I haue eaten it many times and found it to bee a good frute. The bats of Spayne although they bite, yet are they not venomous.

Sheepe.
Bulles.

Incas.
Battes.

Plinie.

The Tiger.

207

The hunting of tigers.

A reward for killing of tigers.

Colonus compared to Hercules.
The pillars of Hercules.The straites of Gibilterra.
Note.
PLVS VLTRA.Howe farre
Th[er]e emperours
maiestie excellenth
Hercules.

A tiger made tame.

208

But in the firme lande many dye that are bytten of them. And in this fourme may so many thynges bee sayde that tyme shall not suffice to wryte, wheras my intent is only to proue that this beast may be a Tiger or of the kind of Tigers although it be not of such lyghtnesse and swiftnes as are they wherof Plinie and other autours speake, discrybyng it to bee one of the swyfteste beastes of the lande, and that the ryuer of *Tigris* for the swift courfe therof was cauled by that name. The first Spaniardes which fawe this Tyger in the firme lande, dyd so name it. Of the kynde of these was that which Don Diego Columbo the Admirall sent yowre maiestie owte of newe Spayne to Toledo. Theyr heades are lyke to the heades of Lyons or Lioneses, but greater. The restes of all theyr boddies and theyr legges, are full of blacke spottes one nere vnto an other and diuided with a circumference or frynge of redde colour shewinge as it were a fayre woorke and correspondent picture. Abowt theyr croopes or hynder partes, they haue these spots byggest: and leste and leste towarde theyr bellies, legges, and headdes. That which was brought to Toledo, was younge and but lyttle, and by my estimation, of th[e]age of three yeares. But in the firme lande there are many founde of greater quantite. For I haue seene sum of three spannes in heught, and more then fyue in length. They are beastes of greate force, with strogne legges, and well armed with nayles and fanges which we caule dogge teeth. They are so fierce that in my iudgement no reall lyon of the byggest forte is so strogne or fierce. Of these, there are many founde in the firme land whiche deuour many of the Indians and do much hurte otherwyse. But fyns the comming of the Christians, many haue byn kylid with Crossebowes after this maner. As foone as the archer hath knowlege of the haunt of any of these Tygers, he goeth searchyng theyr traue with his crossebowe and with a lyttle hounde or bewgle and not with a greehounde, bycause this beast wolde foone kyll any dogge that wolde venter on hym. When the hounde hath founde the Tyger, he runneth about hym bayinge continually, and approcheth so neare hym snappynge and grynnynge with so quicke flyinge and returnyng, that he hereby so molesteth this fierce beaste that he dryueth hym to take the next tree, at the foote whereof he remayneth styl baying and the Tyger grynnynge and shewyng his teeth, whyle in the meane tyme the archer commeth neare, and. xii. or. xiii. pafes of, stryketh hym with the querel of his crossebowe in the breste, and flyeth incontinent, leauyng the Tyger in his trauyle for lyfe and death, bytyng the tree and eatyng earth for fiercenesse. Then within the space of twoo or three hours or the day folowyng, the archer returneth thyther, and with his dogge syndeth the place where he lyethe deade.

In the year. 1522. I with the other rulers and magistrates of the citie of *Santa Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, toke order in our counsayle, A rewarde of soure or fyue pieces of golde to bee giuen to every man that kylde any of these Tygers: by reaon wherof many were kylde in shorte space both with crossebowes and alfo with dyuers snares and ingens. But to conclude, I wyll not oblynatly stand in opinyon whether these beastes bee Tygers or Panthers, or of the number of any other such beastes of spottet heare, or also peraduenture sum other newe beaste vnknownen to the owlde wryters as were many other wherof I haue spoken in this booke. Of which thyng, I doo not greatly meruayle, For asmuche as vnto oure tyme thys greate parte of the worlde was vnknownen to the antiquite: In so muche that none of the wryters of that age, nor yet Ptolomie in his Cofmographie, or any other fence hym, haue made any mention herof, vntill the fyrist Admyrall Don Chryſtopher Colonus diſcouered the fame. A thyng douteleſſe without comparyſon muche greater then that whyche is sayd of Hercules, that he fyriste gaue th[e]enterance of the ſea *Mediterraneum* into the Ocean, whiche the Grekes coulde never doo before hym. And herof ryfthe the fable that the mountaynes of Calpe and Abila (which are directly one agaynst an other in the straignt of *Gibilterra*, the one beyng in Spayne and the other in Affryke) were ioyned togither before they were opened by Hercules, who erected thos hys pylers whiche your maiefſte gyue in token of prehemynence and lyke enterpryfes with lykewyfe theſe hys wordes PLVS VLTRA: wordes douteleſſe worthy for so greate anſ[d] vnyuerfall an Emperoure, and not conuenyent for any other Prynce. Foramuche as your holy Catholyke Maiefſte haue ſpredd them in ſo ſtroung and remote regyons, ſo manye thouſande leagues further then euer dyd Hercules. And certeynlye fy, If there had byn an Image of golde made in the prayſe and fame of *Colonus*, He had as well deserued it as any of thos men to whom for theyr noble enterpryſe the antiquytie gaue deuyne honoure, if he had byn in their tyme. But to retorne to the matter whereof I began to ſpeak: I neede ſay no more of the forme of thys beaſte, for as muche as your Maiefſte haue ſeeene that whych is yet alyue in Toledo. And ſuerly the keper of your Maiefſies lyons, who hath taken vpon hym the charge to tame this beaſte, myght better haue beftlowed his paynes in an other thyng that myght haue bynne more profitable for the ſafegarde of his lyfe bycause this Tyger beinge yet but younge, wyl dayly bee stronger and fiercer and increafe in malice. The Indians (and eſpecially they of the firme lande in the prouince whiche the Catholyke Kyng Don Ferdinand comauanded to bee cauled golden Caſtyle) caule this beaſte *Ochi*. This thinge is ſtroung that chaunced of late: that wheras the Tiger wherof we haue made mention before, wolde haue kylde his keeper that then kept hym in a cage, was in fewe daies after made ſo tame that he ledde her tyed only with a ſmaule corde and playde with her ſo familiarily that I maruayled greatly to ſee it, yet not without certeyne belefe that this frendfſhip wyll not laſte longewiſhout daunger of lyfe to the keeper, foramuch as ſuerly theſe beaſtes are not meete to bee amounge men for theyr fiercenes and cruel nature that can not bee tamed.

 *Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the firme laude,
and of theyr women.*



He maners and customes of theſe Indians, are dyuers in diuers prouinces. Sum of them take as many wyues as them lyſte, and other lyue with one wyfe whome they forſake not without conuent of both parties, which chaunceth elſpecially when they haue no chyldren. The nobilitie aſwel men as women, repute it infamouſ to ioyne with any of bafe parentage or ſtrangers, except Christians, whom they count noble men by reaſon of theyr valientnes, althoſh they put a diſference betwene the common forte and the other to whom they ſhewe obedience, countynge it for a great matter and an honorable thyng yf they bee beloued of any of them. In fo much that yf they knowe any Christian man carnally, they keepe theyr fayth to hym, ſo that he bee not longer abſent farre from them. For theyr intent is not to bee widowes or to lyue chaff lyke religious women. Many of them haue this cuſtome, that when they perceave that they are with chylde, they take an herbe wherwith they deſtroy that is conceaued. For they ſay that only wel aged women ſhulde beare chyldren, and that they wyl not forbear their pleaſures and deform their boddies with bearinge of chyldren, wherby their teates become loofe and hangyng which thyng they greatly diſpraye. When they are delyuered of their chyldren they go to the ryuer and washe them. Whiche doone, their bludde and purgation ceafeth immediatly. And when after this they haue a few days abſteyned from the company of men, they becomme ſo ſtrayght as they ſay which haue had carnall familiaritie with them, that ſuch as vſe them, can not without much diſſicultie ſatiſfie their appetitie. They also whiche neuer had chyldren, are euer as vyrgins. In ſum partes they weare certeyne lyttle apernes rounde about them before and behynde as lowe as to their knees and hammes, wherwith they couer their priuie partes, and are naked all their boddie byfyde. The principal men beare their priuities in a holowe pype of golde: but the common forte haue theym incloſed in the ſhelles of certeyne great welkes, and are byfyde viterly naked. For they thynke it no more shame to haue their coddes ſeen then any other parte of their boddies. And in many prouinces bothe the men and women go viterly naked without any ſuch couerture at al. In the prouince of *Cueua* they caul a man *Chuy*, and a woman *Ira*: which name is not greatly diſagreeable to many both of their women and of owres.

These Indians gyue great honour and reuerence to their *Cacique* (that is) their kynges and rulers. The principall *Cacique*, hath twelue of his moft ſtronge Indians appoynted to beare hym when he remoueth to any place, or gothe abrod for his pleaſure. Two of them cary hym ſytting vpon a longe piece of woodde which is naturally as lyght as they can fynd. The other tenne folowe nexte vnto hym as foote men. They keepe continually a trottyng pafe with hym on their fulders. When the two that cary hym are very, other two coomme in their places without any diſturbance or ſtey. And thus if the way bee playne, they cary hym in this maner for the ſpace of xv. or xx. leaques in one day. The Indians that are assigned to this office, are for the moft parte flauers or *Naboriti*, that is, ſuch as are bounde to continual ſeruice.

I haue alſo noted that when the Indians perceave them ſelues to bee troubled with to much bludde, they lette them ſelues blud in the caſes of their legges and brawnes of their armes. This doo they with a very ſharpe ſtone, and fumytmes with the fmaule toothe of a vyper, or with a ſharpe reede or thorne.

All the Indians are commonly without beardes: In fo much that it is in maner a maruayle to ſee any of them eyther men or women to haue any downe or heare on their faces or other partes of their boddies. Albeit, I ſawe the *Cacique* of the prouince of *Catarapa* who had heare on his face and other partes of his boddie, as had alſo his wyfe in ſuche places as women are accuſtomed to haue. This *Cacique* had a great part of his body payned with a blacke colour which neuer faſeth: And is much lyke vnto that wherwith the Moors payned them ſelues in Barberie in token of nobilitie. But the Moores are payned ſpecially on their vyfage and throte and certeyne other partes. Likewyfe the principall Indians vſe theſe payntynges on their armes and bretſes, but not on their vyfages, bycaufe amoung them the flauers are ſo marked. When the Indians of certeyne prouinces go to the battayle (elſpecially the Caniball archers) they cary certeyne ſhelles of greate welkes of the ſea which they blowe and make therewith great founde muche lyke the noyfe of hornes. They carye alſo certeyne tymbrels which they vſe in the ſteade of drummes. Also very fyare plumes of fetheres, and certeyne armure of golde: elſpecially great and rounde pieces on their bretſes, and ſplintes on there armes. Lykewyfe other pieces whiche they put on their headeſ and other partes of their bodyes. For they elſeeme nothyng fo much as to appeare galante in the war[re]s, and to go in moft coomely order that they can deuyſe, glifteryng with preciuſ ſtones, jewelles, golde, and fetheres. Of the leaſte of theſe welkes or perewincles, they make certeyne lyttle

The Indian women.

The men of India.

The kyng is borne on mens backs.

Lettinge of bludde.

They haue no beardes.

They paynte their bodies.

209

The Canibals.

Armure of golde.

Their galantes in the warres.

Their iuelis

beades of diuers fortis and colours. They make alfo little braffelets whiche they mangle with gaudies of golde. These they rowle about there armes frome the elbowe to the wreste of the hande. The lyke also doo they on theyr legges from the knee to the soles of theyr feete in token of nobilitie. Especially theyr noble women in dyuers prouincies are accustomed to ware such Iewelles, and haue theyr neckes in maner laden therwith. These beades and Iewels and such other trynkettes, they caule *Caquiras*. Bifyde thefe alfo, they ware certeyne rynges of golde at theyr eares and nostrelles which they bore ful of holes on both fides, so that the ringes hange vpon theyr lyppes. Sum of thefe Indians, are poulde and rounded. Albeit, commonly both the men and women take it for a decent thyng to ware longe heare, which the women ware to the myddest of theyr shulders and cut it equally, especially aboue theyr browes. This doo they with certeyne harde stones which they kepe for the same purpose. The principall women when theyr teates faule or becomme loofe, bear them vp with barres of golde of the length of a spanne and a halfe, wel wrought, and of such byggenesse that sum of them way more then two hundredre Castilians or ducades of golde. These barres haue holes at both the[en]des, whereat they tye two finaull cordes made of cotton at every ende of the barres. One of these cordes goeth ouer the shulder, and the other vnder the arme holes where they tye togither, so that by this meanes the barre beareth vp theyr teates. Sum of thefe chiefe women go to the battayle with theyr husbands, or when they them selues are regentes in any prouincies, in the which they haue all thynges at commaundement and execute the[el]office of generall capitaines, and caufe them selues to bee caryed on mens backes in lyke maner as doo the Caciques of whom I haue spoken before.

Howe the women
bearre vp their
teates wth barres
of golde.

The stature and
coloure of the
Indians.

The Indians
cauled Coronati.
¹The Ilande of
giantes.
Iucatan.

The scullis of the
Indians headeis.

210

New Spaine.

The houses of the
Christians in India

Dariena.

Gardena.

These Indians of the firme lande are muche of the same stature and coloure as are they of the Ilandes. They are for the most part of the colour of an olyue. If there bee any other difference, it is more in byggenesse then otherwyse. And especially they that are cauled *Coronati*, are stronger and bigger then any other that I haue seene in thefe parties, except thoſe of the Ilande of giantes whiche are on the south fyde of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* nere vnto the coastes of the firme lande: And lykewyse certeyne other which they caule *Yucatos* which are on the north fyde. All which chiefly, although they bee no giantes, yet are they doubtlesſe the byggeste of the Indyans that are knownen to this day, and commonly bigger then the Flemynghes: and especially many of them awell women as men, are of very hyghe stature, and are all archiers bothe men and women. These *Coronati* inhabite thirtie leagues in length by thefe coastes from the poyn of *Canoa* to the greate ryuer which they caule *Guadalechir* nere vnto *Santa Maria de gratia*. As I traured by thoscoastes, I syld a butte of freshe water of that ryuer syxe leagues in the fex frome the mouthe therof where it faulthe into the sea. They are cauled *Coronati* (that is crowned) bycause theyr heare is cutte round by theyr eares, and poulde lower a great compafe aboue the crowne much lyke the fryers of faynt Augustines order. And bycause I haue spoken of theyr maner of wearynge theyr heare, here commeth to my remembraunce a thyng which I haue ostentyned noted in thefe Indians. And this is, that they haue the bones of the scullis of theyr headeis fourtymes thycker and much stronger then owres. So that in commyng to hand strokes with them, it shalbe requisite not to strike them on the headeis with swoordes. For so haue many swoordes bynne broken on theyr headeis with lytle hurt doone. And to haue fayde thus much of theyr customes and maners, it shal suffice for this tyme, bycause I haue more largely intreated herof in my generall hystorie of the Indies. Yet haue I nother there nor here spoken much of that parte of the firme lande whiche is cauled *Nova Hispania* (that is, newe Spayne wherof the Ilande of *Iucatana* is part) forasmuche as Ferdinand Cortese hath wrytten a large booke thereof.

Of the houses of thefe Indians, I haue spoken sufficienly elsewhere. Yet haue I thought good to informe yowr maiestie of the buyldynge and houses which the Christians haue made in dyuers places in the firme lande. They buylde them nowe therfore with two solars or loftes, and with loopes and wyndowes to open and shutte. Also with stronge tymber and very fayre bordes. In fuche sorte that any noble man maye wel and pleafantly bee lodged in sum of them. And amonge other, I myfelfe caused one to bee builded in the citie of *Sancta Maria Antigua* in *Dariena* whiche coste me more then a thoufande and fyue hundredre Castelians: being of such fort that I may well interteyn and commodiously lodge any Lorde or noble man, referuyng also a parte for myfelfe and my famelie. For in this may many householdes bee kepte both aboue and benethe. It hath also a fayre garden with many orange trees bothe sweete and fowre: Ceders alfo, and Lemondes, of the which there is nowe great plentie in the hovis of the Chryſtians. On one fyde of the gardeyne, there runneth a fayre ryuer. The situation is very pleauante, with a good and holſome ayer, and a fayre proſpecte abowte the ryuer. In fine, owe trute is that in fewe yeres al thynges in theſe regions ſhall growe to a better ſtate accordyngē to the holy intention of yowr maiestie.

Of the chiefe Ilandes Hispaniola and Cuba.



He Indians which at this present inhabite the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, are but fewe in number, and the Chrystyans not so many as they ought to bee forasmuche as many of them that were in this Ilande, are gone to other Ilandes and to the syrme lande. For beyng for the mooste parte younge men vnmaried, and desirous dayly to see newe thyngs wherin mans nature deliteth, they were not willinge to continewe longe in on[e] place: especially seeing dailie other newe landes discouered where they thoughte theye might sooner sylle there purfes by beinge present at the firsle spoyle. Wherin neuerthelesse their hope deceaued many of them, and especially suche as had houses and habitations in thys Ilande. For I certeynly beleue, confirmyng my selfe herein with the Judgement of many other, that if any one Prynce had no more signiores then only this Ilande, it shuld in shorte tyme bee suche as not to giue place eyther to Sicilie or Englannde: whereas euen at this present there is nothyng wherfore it shulde malice their prospereitie not beinge inferiour to them in any filicite that in maner the heauens can graunte to any lande: beinge furthermore suche as maye inrichie many prouinces and kyngdomes by reason of manye riche golde mynes that are in it of the besle golde that is founde to this day in the worlde, and in greatest quantitie. In this Ilande, nature of her selfe bringeth furthe suche abundance of cotton that if it were wrought and maynteyned there shuld be more and better then in any parte of the world. There is so greate plentie of excellent *Caffia* that a greate quantitie is brought from thense into Spayne: from whence it is caried to dyuers partes of the worlde. It increaseth so muche that it is a meruelous thyng to consider. In this are many ryche shoppes wher fuder is wrought: and that of such perfectenes and goodnes, and in suche quantitie that shippes come laden therwith yearly into Spayne. All suche fedes, fettes, or plantes, as are brought out of Spayne and planted in this Ilande, becomme muche better, bygger, and of greater increase then they are in any parte of owre Europe. And if it chaunce otherwyse that sumetymes they prosper not so well, the caufe is that they whiche shulde tyll and husband the grounde, and sowe and plant in dewe seafons, haue no respect hereunto, being impacient whyle the wheate and vynes waxe ripe, being gyuen to wanderynge and other assayres of present gaynes (as I haue sayde) as searchyng the gold mines, fyfshyng for pearles, and occupyinge marchaudisies, with such other trades, for the greedy folowingherof, they neglecte and contempne both sowynge and plantynge. Such frutes as are brought owt of Spayne, into this Ilande, prosper maruelously and waxe ripe all tymes of the yeare: as herbes of all sortes very good and pleasaunt to bee eaten. Alfo many pomegranates of the best kynde, and oranges bothe sweete and fower. Lykewyse many fayre Lymones and ceders: and a greate quantitie of all such as are of sharpe, sowre, and bytter taste. There are also many fygge trees whiche bryng furth theyr frute al the hole yeare. Lykewyse those kynd of date trees that beare dates: and dyuers other trees and plantes which were brought owt of Spayne thyster.

Beastes doo also increaife in lyke abundaunce: and espeially the heordes of kyne are so augmented both in quantitie and number, that there are nowe many patrones of cattayle that haue more then two thoufand heedes of neat: and sum three or foure thoufande, and sum more. Byfyde thefe, there are very many that haue heordes of foure or fyue hundrethe. And trewth it is, that this Iland hath better pasture for such cattayle then any other countrey in the worlde: alfo holosome and cleare water and temperate ayer, by reason whereof the heordes of such beastes are much bygger, fatter, and also of better taste then oweys in Spayne bycause of the ranke pasture whose moysture is better digested in the herbe or grasse by the continuall and temperate heate of the foonne, wherby being made more fatte and vncytuous, it is of better and more stedfast nuryshement. For continuall and temperate heate, dooth not only drawe muche moysture owt of the earth to the nuryshement of such thynges as growe and are engendered in that clyme, but dooth also by moderation preferue the fame from resolution and putrefaction, digeflyng alfo and condensatyng or thyckenyng the sayde moyste nuryshemente into a gummie and vncytuous subflaunce as is feene in all suche thinges as growe in thos regions. And this is the only naturall cause awell that certeyne great beastes and of longe lyfe (as the Elephante and Rhinoceros with such other) are engendered only in regions nere unto the Equinoctiall, as also that the leaues of such trees as growe there, do not wyther or faule, vnyll they bee thrusht owt by other, accordyng to the verfe of the poete which sayth: *Et nata pira pis, et fuscus in fuscibus extant.* That is in effecte: peares growyng vpon peares, and fygges vpon fygges. Plinie alfo wryteth, that suche trees are never infected with the diseafe of trees that the Latines caule *Caries*, which we may caule the worme or canker, being but a certeyne putrifaction by reason of a wateryshe nuryshement not well consolidate. The fame thyng hath bynne the caufe that certeyne Phylofophers confideryng awell that man is the hottest and moyste beast that is (which is the best complexion) as also that men lyue longeste in certeyne partes of India nere the Equinoctiall (where

Men are desirous of newe thinges.

The commodities of Hispaniola

Englannde and Sicilie.

Gold mines.

Cotton.

Cassia.

Suger.

Plantes and herbes.

Great thynges hindered by respecte of presente gaynes.

211

Orangies.
Pomegranates.
Figges al the yeare.
Dates.

Beastes.

Great heordes of cattail.

Good pasture.

The effecte of continuall and moderate heate.

The cause of fatte nurisshemente.

Beastes of longe lyfe in regions abowte the Equinoctiall line
Trees whos leaues doo not wither

The cancar of the tree

Longe lyuyde men in India. Paradise neare the equinoctiall line	yet to this daye summe liue to th[e]age of a hundredth and fiftie yeares) were of opinion that yf mankynde had any begynnyng on the earthe, that place owght by good reason to be vnder or not farre from the Equinoctiall lyne for the caufes aforesayde. Sum of the diuines also vppon lyke consideration haue thought it agreeable that theyr Paradise shulde bee about the fame within the precincte of thofe ryuers which are named in the booke of Genefis. But to lette passe these thynges and to returne to the historie.
Shepe and hogges	In this Ilande furthermore, are many sheepe and a great number of hogges: of the which (as also of the kyne) manye are becoome wyld: And lykewyfe many dogges and cattes of thofe which were brought owt of Spayne. These (and especially the dogges) doo much hurte amounghe the cattayle by reason of the negligence of the hearde men.
Dogges and cattes becom[e] wyld	There are also many horses, mares, and mules, and suche other beastes as serue th[er]e of men in Spayne, and are much greater then they of the fyfste brode brought thereth owt of Spayne. Sum places of the Ilande are inhabyted, although not so many as were requisite: Of the whiche I wyll saye no more but that all the regions of the Ilande are so well situate that in the course of tymc all thynges shall coomme to greater perfection by reasoun of the rychnesse and pleasauntesse of the countrey and fertilitie of the foile.
The situation of Hispaniola.	But nowe to speake sumwhat of the principall and chiefe place of the Ilande, which is the citie of <i>Sen Domenico</i> : I saye that as touchyng the buildynges, there is no citie in Spaine so muche for so muche (no not Barfalona whiche I haue oftentimes seene) that is to bee preferred before this generallie. For the houses of <i>San Domenico</i> , are for the mooste parte of stone as are they of Barfalona: or of so stonge and well wrought earth that it maketh a singuler and stonge byndyng. The situation is muche better then that of Barfalona by reason that the streates are much larger and playner, and without comparyson more directe and streyght furth. For beinge buylded nowe in owr tyme, byfyde the commoditie of the place of the foundation, the streates were also directed with corde, compasse and measure, wherin it excelleth al the cities that I haue seene. It hath the sea so nere, that of one syde there is no more space betwen the sea and the citie then the waules. And this is about fyftie pases where it is furthest of. On this syde, the waters of the sea beate vppon the naturall stones and fayre coaste. On the other parte, harde by the syde and at the foote of the houſes, passeth the ryuer <i>Ozama</i> whiche is a marueylyous porte wherin laden shypes ryfe very nere to the lande and in maner vnder the houſe wyndowes, and no further from the mouth of the ryuer where it entereth into the sea, then is frome the foote of the hill of <i>Monyne</i> to the monaſtrey of faynt Frances or to the lodge of Barfalona. In the myddest of this ſpace in the citie, is the forteſſe and caſtle, vnder the which and twentie pases diſtant from the ſame, paſſe the ſhippes to aryfe ſumwhat further in the fame ryuer. From the enteraunce of the ſhippes vntyll they caſt anker, they ſayle no further from the houſes of the citie then thyrte or fortie pases, becauſe of this ſyde of the citie the habitacion is nere to the ryuer. The port or hauen alſo, is ſo fayre and comodious to defraight or vnlaide ſhippes, as the lyke is founde but in fewe places of the worlde. The chymineis that are in this citie, are abowt fyxe hundredth in number, and ſuch houſes as I haue ſpoken of before: Of the which ſum are ſo fayre and large that they maye well receaue and lodge any lord or noble manne of Spayne with his trayne and famelie. And eſpecially that which Don Diego Colon viceroy vnder your maieſtie hath in this citie, is ſuche that I knowe no man in payne that hath the lyke by a quarter in goodnesſe conſiderynge all the commodities of the ſame. Lykewyfe the ſituation thereof, as beinge aboue the fayde porte and altogether of ſtone and hauynge many faire and large roomeſ with as goodly a proſpect of the lande and ſea as may be deuyfed, ſeemeth vnto me ſo magnificall and princelyke that your maieſtie maye bee as well lodged therin as in any of the mooste exquife buylded houſes of Spayne. There is alſo a Cathedrall churche buylded of late where awell the byſhop accordanſ to his dignitie, as alſo the canones are wel indued. This church is wel buylded of ſtone and lyme, and of good woorkemanshipl. There are furthermore three monaſteries bearing the name of faynt Dominike, faynt Frances, and faynt Marie of Mercedes: The whiche are all well buylded althouſe not ſo curiouſlye as they of Spayne. But ſpeakynge without preiudice of any other religious monaſterie, yowre maieſtie may bee well auſſured that in theſe three monaſteries, god is as well ſerued as in any other religious houſe with men of holy lyuyng and vertuous exemplē. There is alſo a very good hospital for the ayde and ſuccour of pore people, whiche was founded by Michaell Paſſament threasurer to your maieſtie. To conclude, this citie from day to day increaſeth in welth and good order, awel for that the fayde Admyrall and viceroy with the lorde Chaunceloure and counſayle appoynted there by your maieſtie, haue theyr continuall abydynghe here, as alſo that the rycheſt men of the Ilande reſort hyther for theyr mooste comodious habitacion and trade of ſuch marchaudis as are eyther brought owt of Spayne or ſent thryther from this Iland which nowe ſo abundeth in many thynges that it ſerueth Spayne with many commodities, as it were with vſury requytyng ſuch benefites as it fyſt receaued from thenſe.
The riuier Ozama	The people of this Ilande are commonlye of ſumewhat leſſe ſtature then are the Spaniardes, and of a ſhyngre or cleare browne coloure. They haue wyses of theyr owne, and abſteyne from theyr dowghters, ſyters, and mothers. They haue large forheads, longe blacke heare, and no beardes or heare in any other
The hauen	
A cathedrall churche and monaſteries in Hispaniola.	
An hospitale.	
The people	

kynde had
Equinoctiall
greable that
the booke of

also of the
ight owt of
negligence

in Spayne,
of the Ilande
that all the
r perfection

citie of *San*
che (no not
the houses of
well wrought
arafalona by
eyght furth,
treates were

It hath the

And this is
naturall stonnes
yuer *Osama*
er the house
the foote of
eldest of this
ne, passe the
cast anker,
in the citie the
nt or vnlade
re, are about
re and large
helie. And

I knowe no
f the same.
e many faire
vnto me so
te exquisite
the byshop
e and lyme,
Dominike,
curiously as
tie may bee
with men of
pore people,
day to day
haunceloure
the rychest
ndies as are
nges that it
eaued from

es, and of a
dowghthers,
n any other

parts of theyr bodies aswel men as women, excepte very fewe as perhaps scarsly one amoung a thousand. They go as naked as they were borne, excepte that on the partes which may not with honestie bee scene, they weare a certeyne leafe as brode as a mans hande, which neuerthelesse is not kepte clost with fuche diligence but that sumtymes a man may see that they thynke sufficiently hydde.

In this Iland are certeyne glo woormes that thyne in the nyght as doo owres. But are muche bygger and gyue a greater lyght: In so much that when the men of the Ilande goo any iorneys in the nyght, they bearre summe of these woormes made fast abowt their fiete and beade, in suche forte that he that shulde see them a farre and ignorant of the thinge, wold bee greatly afaynyshed therat. By the lyght of these also, the women worke in theyr houses in the night. These woormes they caule *Cicuas*. Theyr lyght lasteth for the space of three dayes, and diminissheth as they begynne to drye vp.

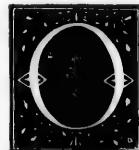
There is also a kynd of crowes whose breath flynketh in the mornynge and is sweete at after noone. The excremente which they auoyde, is a lyuyng worme.

As touchyng other thynges of this Ilande whereof Peter Martyr hath more largely intreated in his Decades, I haue thought it superfluous to repeate the same ageyne owt of this historie of *Gonzalus Ferdinandus*: but haue here gathered only suche thynges as eyther are not touched of Peter Martyr or not so largely declared: as I haue doone the lyke in all other notable thynges which I haue collected owt of this Summarie of *Gonzalus*.

(Glo worms)

213

Crowes stynkyng
and sweete.



F the Ilande of Cuba and the other, as the Ilandes of *Sancti Iohannis* and *Jamaica*, the fame maye be fayde in maner in all thynges as before of *Hifpaniola* although not so largely. Yet in lesse quantitie doo they brynge forth the lyke thynges: as gold, copper, cattayle, trees, plantes, fyshes, and such other of the which wee haue spoken there.

In Cuba, is a certeyne kynde of Partyches beinge verye little, with theyr fethers much of the colour of turtle dooies: but are of muche better taste to bee eaten. They are taken in great number. And beinge brought wylde into the houses, they becoome as tame within the space of three or fourre dayes as though they had byn hatched there. They becoome excedayng fatte in short space, and are doubtlesse the most delicate and pleasaunt meate that euer I haue eaten. But to let passe many other thynges that myght here bee fayde, and to speake of two maruelous thynges which are in this Iland of Cuba: wherof the one is, that a valley conteynynge two or three leagues in length betwene two mountaynes, is full of a kynde of very harde stones of fuche perfecte roundenesse and lyke vnto pellettes of gunnes that no arte can make better or more exactly polisched. Of thefe, sum are as smaule as pellettes for handegunnes: and other so increaefyng bygger and bygger from that quantitie, that they may serue for all fortis of artyllerie althoughe they bee of byggenesse to receave one or two or more quintales of pouder, every quintale conteynynge one hundredth weyght: or of what other quantitie so euer they bee. These pellettes are founde through owt al the valley within the earth as in a myne, which they digge and take owt such as they neede of all fortis.

The other marueylous thinge of this Iland is this: That farre from the sea, there issheweth owt of a mountayne a certeyne lycour much lyke the cleyn of Babilon cauled *Bitumen* or lyke vnto pytche in great quantitie and such as is very commodious for the calkyng of fyppes. This faulth continually from the rocke and runneth into the sea in fuche abundaunce that it is feene flotyng aboue the water on every side of the sea there abowt as it is dryuen frome place to place by the wynde or course of the water.

Quintus Curtius wryteth in his historie, that great Alexander came to the citie of *Momi* where is a great caue or denne in the which is a spryng or fountayne that continually auoydethe a great quantitie of *Bitumen* in such fort that it is an easy thing to beleue that the stones of the walles of Babilon myght bee layde therwith accordyng as the fayde auctoore wryteth. I haue seene this myne of *Bitumen*, not only in the Iland of Cuba, but also such an other in newe Spayne, which was found of late in the prouince of *Panuw* where it is much better then the other of Cuba, as I haue seene by experiance in calkyng of fyppes.

Saint John his
Ilande.
Jamaica.

Pariches.

Pellettes for
gunnes wrought
by nature.

A fountayne of the
pytche of *Bitumen*.

Quintus Curtius
Bitumen of
Babilon.

Panuw.

¶ Of the lande of Bacoaleos cauled Terra Baccallearum, situate on the
North syde of the firme lande.

Bacallos.

214

Indians.

Ryche furrers and
syluer.

Idolaters.



Hortly after that your Maiestie came to the citie of Toledo, there arryued in the moneth of Nouember, Steuen Gomes the pylot who the yeare before of 1524. by the commaundement of yowre maiestie fayled to the Northe partes and founde a greate parte of lande continueate from that which is cauled *Bacallos* discoursyng to the West to the. xl. and. xli. degree, from whense he brought certeyne Indians (for so caule we all the nations of the new founde landes) of the whiche he brought sum with hym from thense who are yet in Toledo at this present, and of greater stature then other of the firme lande as they are commonlye. Theyr colour is much lyke th[e]other of the firme lande. They are great archers, and go couered with the skinnes of dyuers beastes both wylde and tame. In this lande are many excellent furrers, as marterns, sables, and such other ryche furrers of the which the fayde pilote brought summe with hym into Spayne. They haue syluer and copper, and certeyne other metalles. They are Idolaters and honoure the soonne and moone, and are seduced with suche supersticions and errours as are they of the firme.

And to haue wrytten thus muche, it maye suffice of suche thinges as haue seemed to me most worthy to be noted in the Summarie of *Gonzalus Ferdinandus* wrytten to Th[e]emperours maiestie



on the

the moneth of
Iunaundement
de continuare
l. xli. degree,
the new founde
Toledo at this
onlye. Theyr
the skinnes of
les, and such
the syluer and
l are seduced

au semed
wrytten to

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

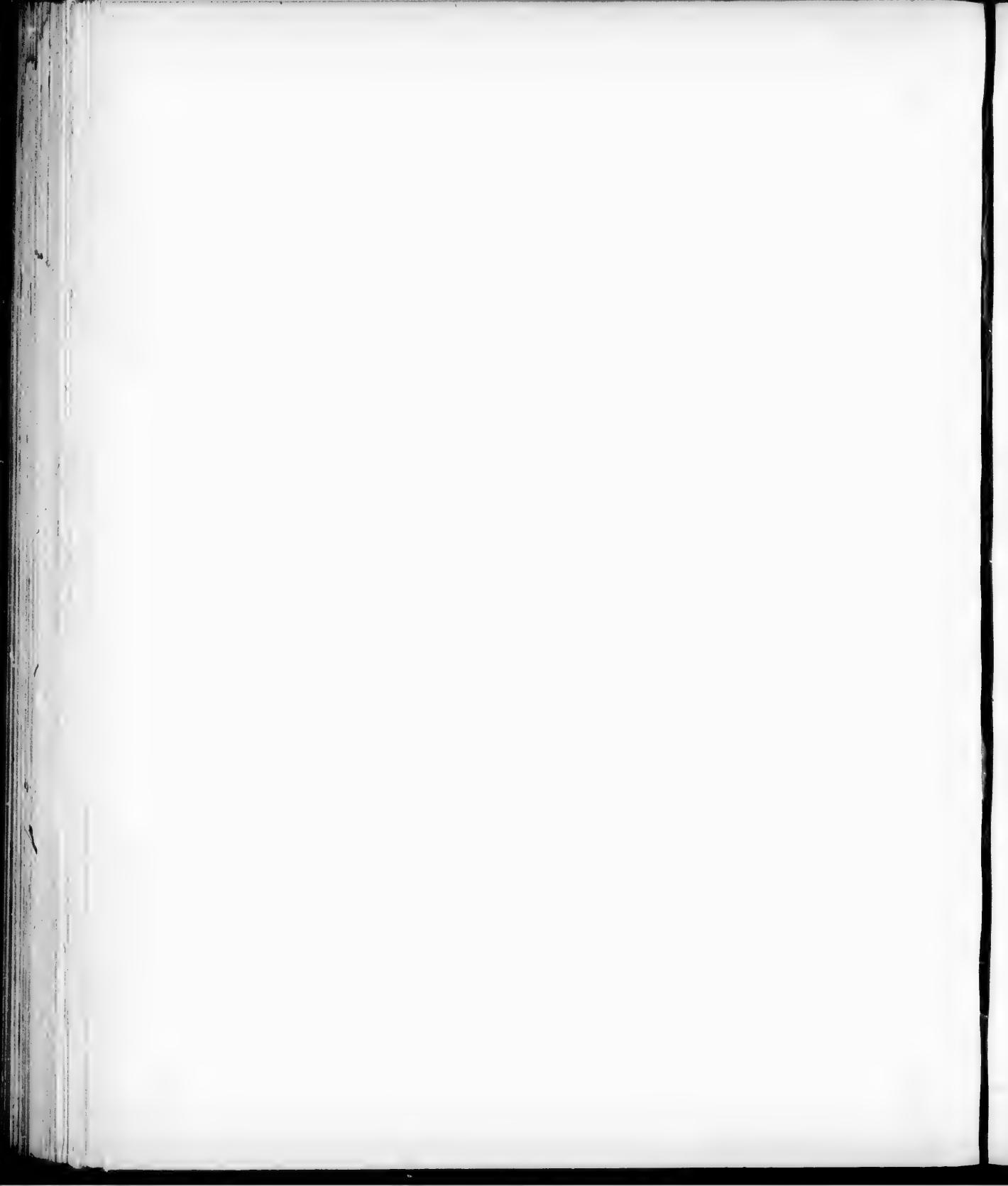
The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION III.

Antonio Pigafetta.

*The first Circumnavigation of the Globe, by Fernam de
Magalhaens's Expedition, in 1519-22.*

First printed in 1526.]



C OF OTHER NOTABLE THYNGES GATHERED OWTE OF DYUERS AUTOOURS:

AND FYRSTE OF THE VNIVERSAL CARDE AND NEWE WORLDE.



He hole globe or compase of the earth was dyuyded by the auncient wryters into three partes, as *Europa*, *Africa*, and *Asia*: whiche partes conteyne in longitude. 180. degrees, begynnyng the fyrist degree at the Ilandes of Canarie. And conteyne in latitude towarde the North. 63. degrees, begynnyng the fyrist degree frome the Equinoctiall: And. 10. degrees towarde the South. All the reste of the longitude which conteyneth other. 180. degrees, is discouered of late tyme, as the West India cauled the newe worlde, bycause none of the owlde autoures had any knowlege or made any mention therof. All that

therfore is cauled newe which is Westwarde from the Ilandes of Canarie. And thus accomptynge these. 180. degrees towarde the East discouered in owlde tyme, with the other. 180. degrees discouered of late dayes, they make, 360. degrees, which is al the circle of the Equinoctiall in the sphere. Also the part aboue the. 63. degrees of the North latitude, was founde by men of late tyme, as Norway and Grutlande with many other prouinces. Lykewise the part more south then. 10. degrees of latitude, was discouered of late dayes, althoughe Ariane and Plinic say that it was knownen in owlde tyme: whiche yf it were, yet had they no suche particular description thereof as we haue in these dayes.

West India the
newe worlde.

The circumference
of the Equinoctiall
lyne.

The North
regions.
The South
regions.

**C A DISCOVRSE OF THE VYAGE
MADE BY THE SPANYARDES
ROVNDE ABOWTE THE WORLDE.**



Don Peter Martyr.

Rome sacked

A day lost in three
years and one
moneth.

215

Antonie Pigafetta.

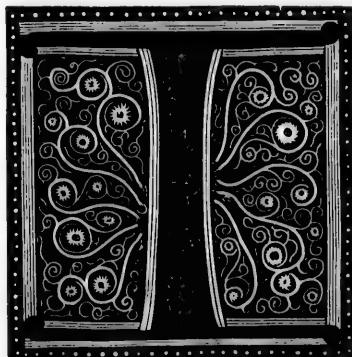
Iacobus Faber.

He vyage made by the Spanyardes rowntre abowt the worlde is one of the greatest and mooste marueylous thynges that hath bynne knownen to owe ryme. And althoughe in many thynges we excell owe runciente predicessours, in this especiallye wee so farre excede all theyr inuentions, that the lyke hath not heretofore byn knownen to this day. This viage was written particularly by Don Peter Martyr of Angleria being one of the counsayle of Th[e]emperours Indies, to whom also was commytted the wrytyng of the hystorie and examination of al fuche as returned from thense into Spayne to the citie of Siuile, in the yeare M. D. xxii. But sendynge it to Rome to bee prynctyd in that miserieable tyme when the citie was sacked it was lofte and not founde to this day or any memory remaynyng therof, sauynge suche as sum that redde the same haue borne in mynde. And amone other notable thynges by hym wrytten as touchyng that vyage, this is one, that the Spanyardes hauynge fayled abowt three yeares and one moneth, and the most of them notyng the dayes, day by day (as is the maner of all them that fayle by the Ocean) they founde when they were returned to Spayne, that they had lofte one daye: So that at theyr arryall at the porte of Siuile beinge the seventh day of September, was by theyr accompt but the sixth day. And where as Don Peter Martyr declared the strange effecte of this thyng to a certeyne excellente man who for his singuler lernyng was greatly aduaunced to honoure in his common welthe and made Th[e]emperours ambafadoure, this worthy gentleman who was also a greate Philosopher and Astronomer, answere that it coulde not otherwyse chaunce vnto them hauynge fayled three yeares continually, euer folowyng the soonne towarde the West. And fayde furthermore that they of owlde tyme obserued that all suche as fayled behinde the soonne towarde the West, dyd greatly lengthen the day. And albeit that the fayde booke of Peter Martyr is perysshed, yet hath not fortune permitted that the memorie of so worthy and marueylous an enterpryse shulde vtterly bee extincte: forasmuch as a certeyne noble gentleman of the cytie of Vincenza in Italie, cauled master Antonie Pigafetta (who beinge one of the coompanie of that vyage and after his retурne into Spayne in the shyppe Victoria, was made knyght of the Rhodes) wrote a particular and large booke therof which he gaue to Th[e]emperours Maiestie, and sente a coppie of the same into Fraunce to the lady Regente moother vnto the frenche kynge, who committed it to an excellent philosopher cauled master Iacobus Faber, hauyng longe studyed in Italy, wyllynge him to translate it

into the Frenche toonge. This booke therefore was printed fyrst in the frenche toonge and then in the Italien, with also an epistle to the Cardinall of Salspurge as touchyng the same viage, written by Maximiliane Transiluane secretarie to Th[e]emperours Maiestie, in the yeare. 1522. And doubteleffe amonge al the cities of Italie, the citie of Vicenza may herein much glorie, that beside the ancient nobilitie and many excellent and rare wyttes whiche it hath browght furth awell in learnynge as discipline of warre, it hath also had so worthy and valiaunt a gentleman as was the fayde master Antonie Pigafetta, who hauing compased abowte the ball or globe of the worlde, hath lykewyse described that vyage particularly. For the whiche his so noble and woonderfull an enterprise so happily atchiued, if the same had byn doone in the owlde tyme when th[e]-empyre of the Grekes and Romans florysshed, he shulde doubtlesse haue byn rewarded with an Image of marble or golde erected in a place of honoure in perpetuall memorie and for a singular exemple of his vertue to the posteritie. In fine, this may we bouldly affirme, that the antiquitie had neuer such knowlege of the worlde whiche the soonne coompaſeth abowte in. xxiiii. hours, as we haue at this presente by th[e]industrye of men of this owre age. But before I speake any thynge of the viage, I haue thought it good fyrst to adde hereunto, the Epistle of Maximilian Transiluane which he wrote to the Cardinall of Salspurge as a preface to his fayde booke.

Maximilian
TransiluaneThe rewarde of
noble enterpryses.The antiquitie had
no suche knowlege
of the worlde as
we haue.

**¶ THE EPISTLE OF MAXIMILIAN TRANSILVANE,
SECRETARIE TO THE EMPEROVRS MAIESTIE:
wrytten to the ryght honorable and reuerende lorde,
the lorde Cardinall of Salspurge, of the maruey-
lous and woonderfull nauigation made by the
Spanyardes rounde abowt the worlde in
the yeare of Christ. M. D. xix.**



N these daies my most honorable and reuerend lorde, returned one of those fve shippes which the yeare before Th[e]emperours beinge at Saragosa in Spayne, were at his maiesties commaundement sent to the newe worlde heretofore vntoken vnto vs, to seeke the Ilandes of spycys. For albeit the Portugales brynge vs great quantitie of spycys from that parte of Easte India whiche in owlde tyme was cauled *Aurea Chersonesus* (where is nowe thought to bee the greate and ryche citie of *Malaccha*) yet in Easte India growe none of those spycys excepte pepper. For other spycys, as Sinamome, cloues, nutmegges, and mase, (whiche is the huske that couereth the shell of the nutte) are brought frome other farre con-

The Ilandes of
Molucca.
*Aurea
Chersonesus.
Malaccha.
Spycys.*

treys and from Ilandes scarſely knownen by theyr names. From the whiche Ilandes they are brought in shyps or barkes made withoutt any iren tooles, and tyed togynther with

The Ilandes of
Spyses vnknownen
in owlde tyme.

216

Herodotus.

Sinamome.

The Phenyx.

Plinie

The nauigations of
greate Alexander.
Ethiope.

Trogloditi

The nauigation
abowte the worlde.

The owlde
autours reprooved.

Monsters.
The vyages of the
Spaniardes and
Portugales.

Sinus Magnus.

cordes of date trees: with rounde fayles lykewife made of the smaule twiggis of the branches of date trees weaued togyther. These barkes they caule *Giunche*: with the whiche barkes and fayles they make theyr vyages with onely one wynde in the stearne or contrarywyse.

Neyther yet is it a thynge greatly to bee marueyled at that these Ilandes where the spycses growe haue byn vnknownen so many worldes past vnto owre tyme, forasmuch as all fuch thynges as vnto this day haue byn wrytten of owlde autours of the places where spicces growe, are all fabulous and false: In so muche that the countreys where they affirme theym to growe, are nowe certeynely founde to bee further frome the place where they growe in deede, then we are from them. For lettynge passe many other thynges that are wrytten, I wyll speake only of this which *Herodotus* (otherwise a famous auctour) affirmeth that Sinamome, is founde in the topes of the nestes of certeyne byrdes and foules that bryngē it frome farre countreys, and especially the Phenyx, the which I knowe no man that euer hath seene. But Plinie who myght more certeynely affirme thynges by reason that before his tyme many thynges were knownen and discouered by the nauigations of great Alexander and other, sayth that Sinamome groweth in that parte of Ethiope whiche the people inhabite cauled *Trogloditi*. Neuerthelesse it is nowe founde that Sinamome groweth very farre from all Ethiope and muche further frome the *Trogloditi* whiche dwell in caues vnder the grounde. But to owre men which are nowe returned from thosē partes and the Ilandes of spicces, hauynge also good knowlege of Ethiope, it was necessarie to passe farre beyonde Ethiope beforē they coome to these Ilandes, and to coompaſſe abowte the whole worlde, and many tymes vnder the greatest circumference of heauen. The which nauigation made by them, being the most marueylous thynge that euer was doone by man vpon the earth fence the fyrt creation of the worlde, and neuer founde before, or knownen, or attempted by any other, I haue deliberated faythfully to wryte to yowre honorable lordshippe and to declare the hole successe therof. As touchyng which matter, I haue with all diligence made inquisition to knowe the trewth awell by relation of the Capitayne of that shyppe as also by conference with euery of the maryners that returned with hym. All which, gaine the self same information both to Th[e]en perours maiestie and dyuers other: And this with such faythfulnesse and sinceritie, that not only they are iudged of all men to haue declared the trewth in all thynges, but haue thereby also gyuen vs certeyne knowlege that all that hath hytherto byn sayde or written of owlde autours as touchyng these thynges, are false and fabulous. For who wyll beleue that men are found with only one legge. Or with such fete whose shadowe courereth theyr bodyes? Or men of a cubite heught, and other such lyke, beinge rather monsters then men? Of the which, neyther the Spanyardes who in owre tyme faylyng by the Ocean sea, haue discouered al the coastes of the lande toward the West both vnder and aboue the Equinoctiall, nor the Portugales who compaffsynge abowt al Affryke haue passed by all the Easte and lykewife discouered all thosē coastes vnto the great goulfe cauled *Sinus Magnus*, nor yet the Spanyardes in this theyr laste nauigation, in the which they compased abowt the hole earth, dyd neuer in any of their vyages wryte of such monsters: which doubtlesse they wold not haue omytted if they myght haue had certeyne knowlege therof. But nowe intendyng to speake of the whole world, I wyll not bee longe in my preface, but begynne my narration as foloweth.

es of the
with the
e stearne

where the
uch as all
ere splices
ne theym
groe in
wrytten,
neth that
at bryng
that euer
hat before
eat Alex-
the people
veth very
nes vnder
e Ilandes
beyonde
e worlde,
ion made
the earth
attempted
pe and to
diligence
hyppe as
ich, gauie
this with
declared
at all that
, are false
Or with
and other
rdes who
e toward
passyng
e coastes
his theyr
er in any
not haue
dynge to
narration

A BRIEFE DECLARATION OF THE VYAGE OR NAVIGATION MADE ABOWTE THE WORLDE.

GATHERED OWT OF A LARGE BOOKE WRYTTEN HEREOF BY

MASTER ANTONIE PYGAFETTA VINCENTINE, KNYGHT OF THE RHODES

and one of the coompanye of that vyage in the which,

Ferdinando Magalianes a Portugale (whom

fum caule Magellanus) was generall

Capitayne of the nauie.



Lthowgh Sebastian Munster in his vniuersall Cosmographie in the fyfthe booke of the landes of the greater Asia (which I translated into Englyshe abowte two yeres fence) hath wrytten of the vyage of *Magellanus*, declarynge therein howe the Spanyardes by the West, and the Portugales by the Easte, saylyng to the Ilandes of *Molucca*, compased the hole globe of the worlde betwene them, yet haue I here thought it good to make a breefe repeticion of thys vyage, addynge hereunto dyuers notable thynges which were not touched of Munster, as I haue gathered them owt of the bookes of Antonie Pigafetta and Transiluanus wrytten of the same vyage. For albeit in deede it was a straunge

Sebastian Munster.

The Ilandes of
Molucca.

and woonderful thyng that the Spanyardes and Portugales compased the hole circumference of the worlde betwene them, yet is it more marueylous that the fame was doone with one shipp and one coompanie of men as dyd the Spanyardes in this vyage, who keepynge theyr continuall course by the Weste, returned into Spayne by the Easte. A thyng doublelesse so much more woondervull and strange then yf they had returned from the halfe circumference by the same way they went. In howe muche they were ignorante in the vyage neuer attempted befoore, besyde the thousande daungiours and perylls whiche they were daylye lyke to faule into, awell by wrynge in vnknownen coastes as also by faulyng into the handes of the Portugales by whose dominions in the Easte, they shulde needes passe of necessitie, not trystyng to theyr gentelnesse for the controuersetie which had byn longe betwene them for the Ilandes of *Molucca*. I wyll therefore (as I haue sayde) make a briefe rehearsal of thys vyage from the begynnyng to the endyng: Omyttinge neuerthelesse many notable thynges whiche are more largely described in the bookes of *Maximilianus Transiluanus* and *Antonius Pigafetta*.

217

Controuersetie
betweene the
Spanyardes and
Portugales.

Ferdinando
Magalanes.

The Cape of saynt
Vincent

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
Water engendered
of a clowde.

The Illand of saynt
Thomas.

Capo verde.

Guinea in
Ethiopie.
Serrallonia.

Fysshes and
monsters of
the sea.

The fyrs of saints
Helene and S.
Nicolas.
A tempest.

The natural cause
of such fiers as
faule in the shypes.

Cardanus.

Two kyndes of
fyers engendered
of exhalations.

Trewe fyer and
false fyer.

218

Castor and Pollux.
The lyghtes of
saynt Peter and
saynte Nycolas.

They lost the
lyght of the North
starre.
The lande of
Bresilia.
The South pole.
Suga.

The tenth day of August, in the yeare of owre lord M. D. xix. Ferdinando Magalanes departed from the porte of Siuile in Spayne with a naxie of fyue shypes and two hundred thirtie and feuen men, wel furnysshed with all thynges necessarie. And saylynge fyrste downe by the ryuer of *Guadalchiber* which runneth from the sayde porte into the sea, they came fyrste to a place named *Gionan Dulfaras* where are manye vyllages of the Moores: And from thense arryued at a castel of the Duke of *Medina Sidonia*, where is the porte from whence they enter into the sea and to the cape saynte Vincent beinge distant from the Equinoctiall. xxxvii. degrees, and frome the sayde port. x. leagues, and is from thense to Siuile betwene xvii. and. xx. leagues. Here they remayned certeyne dayes to make newe provisyon of such thynges as they lacked.

Departynge from hense the. xx. daye of September, they arryued the. xxvi. day of the same moneth at one of the Ilandes Canarie cauled *Tenerife*, beinge. xxv. degrees aboue the Equinoctiall. In one of these Ilandes is none other water but that is continually engendered of a clowde which appeareth dayly at noone tyde as though it descended from heauen and compaseth abowt a certeyne great tree from whose branches distilleth greate abundaunce of water, and faulethe in streames from the roote of the same into certeine trenches and cestarnes made and placed to receaue it. This water serueth sufficently all th[e]inhabitautes and cattayle of the Ilande. The lyke thyng is also feene in the Iland of saynt Thomas, lyng directly vnder the Equinoctiall lyne.

The thyrde day of October abowt mynyght, the capytayne commaunded them to lyght fyrebrandes and to hoyse vp theray fayles directyng their course towarde the South, saylynge betwene *Capo Verde* of Affryke and the Ilandes lyng abowt the same, beinge from the Equinoctiall. xiii. degrees and a halfe. They sayled thus, manye dayes in the fygth of the coaste of *Guinea*, of Ethiopie, where is the mountayne cauled *Serra Leone* beinge. viii. degrees aboue the Equinoctiall. In this coast they had no maner of contrary wynds but a great calme and fayre wether for the space of threefore and tenne dayes, in the which they came vnder the Equinoctiall lyne. In thys vyage they sawe many straunge fysshes and monsters of the sea befide an other straunge thyngs whiche appeared vnto them. For there appeared in theys shypes certeyne flames of fyre burnyng verye cleare, which they caul saynt Helen and saynt Nicolas. These appeared as though they had byn vpon the mast of the shypes, in such clearnesse that they tooke away their fygth for the space of a quarter of an houre: by reason wheroft, they so wandered owe of their course and were disparted in funder, that they in maner dispayred to meete ageyne. But as God wolde, the sea and tempest beinge quieted, they came safely to their determinyd course.

And before I speake any further of the vyage, I haue here thought good to faye sumewhat of these straunge fyrs, which sum ignorant folkes thynke to bee spirites or fusche other phantasies wheras they are but natural thynges proceedyng of natural causes and engendered of certeyne exhalations. Of these therefore, the greate Philosopher of owre tyme *Hieronimus Cardanus* in his seconde booke *de Subtilitate*, wryteth in this maner.

There are two maner of fyrs engendered of exhalations wherof the one is hurtfull and the other without hurte. That which is hurtfull, is fyer in deede, engendered of malicious and venomous vapours which in successe of time take fyer as apt matters to be kyndled. The other kynd, is no trew fyer, but lyke the matter that is in such owld putrifid wod as giueth the shynyng of fyer without the substaunce or qualite therof. Of the kynde of trewe fyer, is the fyer baule or starre commonly cauled saynt Helen which is sumtyme feene abowt the mastes of shypes, beinge of fusche fyery nature that it sumtyme melteth brafen vesselles, and is a token of drownyng, forasmuch as this chaunceth only in great tempestes. For the vapoure or exhalation whereof this fyre is engendered, can not bee dryuen togther or compacte in forme of fyre, but of a grofe vapoure and by a great poure of wynde, and is therfore a token of imminent perell: As on the contrary parte, the lyke fyrs cauled in owlde tyme *Caflor* and *Pollux* and nowe named the two lyghtes of saynt Peter and saynt Nycolas whiche for the most parte faule on the cables of the shypes, leapyng from one to an other with a certeyne flutteryng noise lyke byrdes, are a token of securtie and of the tempeste ouerpased. For they are but vapours cleauyng to the cables: which in successe of tyme, the fyre passyng from one to an other, appere in the similitude of a lyght candell. They are a token of securtie bycause they are lyttle, nor flowe or groffe, wherby they myght haue ioyned altogther in one, and byn thereby more malicious and lasted longer, wheras beinge many and but lyttle, they are the sooner consumed.

Hetherto *Cardanus*. But let vs nowe returne to the vyage.

When they had sayled past the Equinoctiall lyne, they lost the syght of the north starre, and sayled by southweste vnyll they came to a lande named the lande of *Bresilia* whiche sum caule *Brafisia*, beinge. xxii. degrees and a halfe toward the south pole or pole Antartyke. This lande is continuete and one firme lande with the cape of saynte Augustine whiche is. viii. degrees from the Equinoctiall. In this lande they were refresched with many good frutes of innumerable kindes, and founde here also very good sugar canes and diuers kyndes of beastes and other thynges which I omitte for breuitie. They entered into this hauen on saynt Lucies

ed from the
l furnysshed
t from the
glages of the
rom whence
degress, and
ey remayned

oneth at one
le Ilandes is
e as though
leth greate
nd cesternes
t the Ilande.
yne.

Iandes and to
Affryke and
safyed thus,
Sion beinge.
at calme and
noctiall lyne.
ynghe whiche
leare, which
raft of the
e: by reason
displayed to
yned course.

od to faye
es or siche
auses and
er of owre
maner.

ther without
h in succeſſe
te that is in
of the kynde
t the mastes
drowning,
this fyre is
by a great
rs cauled in
s whiche for
the flutteryng
es cleauyng
ilitud: of a
they myght
any and but

d safyed by
beinge. xxii.
firme lande
e they were
s and diuers
aynt Lucies

day: where the sonne beinge there *Zenith* (that is the poynct of heauen directly ouer theyr heades) they felte greater heate that daye then when they were vnder the Equinoctiall line. This lande of Brasile is very large and great: and bygger then all Spayne, Portugale, Fraunce, and Italie: and is mooste abundaunte in all thynges. The people of this countrey praye to noo maner of thinge: but lye by th[e]inflincte of nature, and to th[e]age of. C. xx. [one hundred and twenty] and. C. xl. [one hundred and forty] yeares. Bothe the men and women go naked, and dwell in certeyne longe houses. They are very docible, and soone allured to the Chryſtian fayth.

Therteene dayes after that they arryued at the safyd port, they departed from this lande and safyed to the. xxxiii. degree and a halfe toward the pole Antartike where they found a great ryuer of freſſe water and certeyne Canibales. Of theſe they ſawne one owt of theyr huyppes, of ſtature as bigge as a giante, hauyng a voyce lyke a bul. Owr men purſued them, but they were ſo ſwyſte of foothe that they coulde not ouertake them. Abowt the mouth of this ryuer, are ſeuēn Ilandes, in the biggeliſt wheroft, they founde certeyne precious ſtones, and cauled it the cape of faynt Marie. The Spanyardeſ thought that by thiſ ryuer they miſt haue paſſed into the ſouth ſea. But they were deceaſed in theyr opinion. For there was none other paſſage then by the ryuer which is. xvii. leaqueſ large in the mouth.

Thus folowingne this coaſte by the traſte of the lande towarde the pole Antartyke, they came to a place where were two Ilandes replenyſhed with gieſe and woolues of the ſea which ſum thynke to bee thoſe fyſhes that wee caule pikes. Theſe were in ſuſh number that in an houre all the fyue ſhippes miſt haue byn ladē with gieſe beinge vll of blacke colour, and ſuſh as can not flye. They lyue of fyſſe and are ſo fatte that they coulde ſcarſely ſlie theym. They haue noo fetheres but a certeyne downe: and theyr byls like rauens byls. Theſe woolues of the ſea are of dyuers coloures, and of the byggeneſſe of cauſes, with theyr headeſ of golden coloure. Here were they in great daungour by tempeſt. But as ſoone as the three fyers cauled faynte Helen, faynte Nycolas, and faynt Clare, aporeed vpon the cabels of the huyppes, ſuddeynely the tempeſte and furye of the wyndes ceaſed.

Departyngne frome henge, they safyed to the. 49. degree and a halfe vnder the pole Antartyke: where beinge wyntered, they were inforced to remayne there for the ſpace of two monethes, all which tyme they ſawne no man except that one daye by chaunce they eſpyed a man of the ſtature of a giante, who came to the hauen daunſyng and ſyngyng, and shortly after ſeemed to caſt dufte ouer his heade. The Capitayne ſente one of his men to the ſhore with the huypp boate, who made the lyke ſigne of peace. The which thynge the giante ſeinge, was owt of feare and came with the capitanaynes feruante to his preſence into a lytle Ilande. When he ſawne the capitanayne with certeyne of his coompany abowte hym, he was greatly amafed and made ſigues holdyng vppe his hande to heauen, ſignyng therby that owr men came frome thenef. This giante was fo bygge, that the heade of one of owr men of a meane ſtature, came but to his waste. He was of good corporature and well made in all the partes of his bodie, with a large vyfage paynted with dyuers coloures, but for the moſt parte yelowe. Vpon his cheekeſ were paynted two harteſ, and redde circles abowt his eyes. The heare of his heade was coloured whyte, and his apparell was the ſkyne of a beaſte ſowde togither. This beaſte (as ſeemed vnto them) had a large heade and great eareſ lyke vnto a mule, with the body of a camel and tayle of a horſe. The feete of the giante were ſoulder in the ſkyne after the maner of ſhoos. He had in his hande, a bygge and ſhorte bowe, the ſtryng whereof was made of a ſynewe of that beaſte. He had alſo a bundell of longe arrowes made of reedes feathered after the maner of owr, typte with sharpe ſtones in the ſteade of iern headeſ. The Capitayne cauſed him to eate and drynke, and gaue him many thyngeſ, and amone other a greate lookyng glafe: In the which as ſoone as he ſawne his owne likeneſſe, was ſuddeynely afraide and flarſted backe with ſuch violence that he ouerthrew two that floode neareſ abowte hym. When the Capitayne had thus gyuen hym certeyne haukes belles and other great belles, with alſo a lookyng glafe, a combe, and a payre of beadeſ of glafe, he ſente hym to lande with ſoure of his owne men well armed.

Shortely after, they ſawne an other giaunte of ſumewhat greater ſtature, with his bowe and arrowes in his hande. As he drewe neare vnto owr menne, he layde his hande on his heade and poyncted vp towarde heauen, and owr men dyd the lyke. The Capitayne ſente his huypp boate to bryng him to a lytle Ilande beinge in the hauen. This giante was verye tractable and p'eaſaunt. He ſoonge and daunſed: and in his daunſyng leſte the printe of his feete on the grownde. He remayned longe with owr men who named hym *Johan*. He coulde wel ſpeakē and playnely pronounce theſe wordes: *Iefus: Aue Maria, Iohannes*, euē as we doo, but with a bygger voyce. The Capitayne gaue hym a ſhert of lynnen clothe, and a coate of whyte woollen clothe: Alſo a cappe, a combe, a lookyng glafe, with dyuers ſuche other thyngeſ, and ſo ſente hym to his coompany. The day folowing, he reforted ageyne to the huyppes, and brought with hym one of thoſe greate beaſtes, which he gaue the Capitayne. But after that daye they neuer ſawne hym more, ſuppoſyng hym to bee ſlayne of his owne coompany for the conuerſation he had with owr men.

After other. xv. dayes were paſte, there came fourē other gianteſ without any weapons, but had hyddre theyr bowes and arrowes in certeyne buffiſhes. The Capitayne reteyned two of theſe whiche were youngſt and

*The greatnessſe of
the land of Brasile.*

*Canibales.
Gianteſ.*

*Insula
gemmarum.
Cap[er] S. Marie.*

*The pole
Antartike.
Geese.
Sea woolues*

*The. xix. degree
of the ſouth pole.*

Gianteſ

*219
The bygnes of the
gianteſ.*

An other giante.

*Fourē other
gianteſ.*

Two giantes are
taken by a pollicie.

The deuyll
Setebos.

Deuylis appere to
the gyantes when
they dye.

Patagoni.

220

The gyantes
feedyng.

They conspire
agaynt their
Capitayne.

Confession.

The straight of
Magellanis.
The South sea.

Mare pacificum.
The giantes died
for heat.

Capo Desiderato

Short nighte in the
moneth of October.

Flying fysshes

The gyantes
language.

The gyant is
baptised.

Three monethes
sayling without
the syght of lande.
Extreme famen.

besle made. He tooke them by a deceyte in this maner, that gyuynge them knyues, sheares, lookynge glasses, belles, beades of crystall, and fuche other tryfels, he so fylled theri handes that they coulde hold no more. Then caused two payre of shackels of iren to bee put on theri legges, makyng signes that he wold also gyue them those chaynes: which they lyked very wel by caufe they were made of bryght and shynynge metal. And wheras they could not cary them bycause theri handes were full, the other gyantes wolde haue caryed them: but the Capitayne wolde not suffer them. When they felte the shakels faste abowte theri legges, they begunne to doubte: but the Capitayne dyd put them in conforte and badde them flande flyll. In fine when they fawe how they were deceaued they rored lyke bulles and cryed vppon theri greate deuyll *Setebos* to helpe them. Being thus taken, they were immediatly seperate and put in fundry fysshes. They coulde neuer bynde the handes of the other two. Yet was one of them with much difficulte ouerthrowne by nyne of owe men, and his handes bownde: but he fuddeynely loosed hym selfe and fledde, as dyd also the other that came with them. In theri flying, they shot of theri arroves and flewe one of owe men. They say that when any of them dye, there appere. x. or. xii. deuylis leapyng and daunsyng about the bodys of the deade, and feeme to haue theri boddyes paynted with dyuers colours. And that amonge other, there is one feene bygger then the residue, who maketh great mirth and reioysyng. This greate deuyll they caule *Setebos*, and caule the leffe *Chelule*. One of these giantes which they toke, declared by signes that he had feene deuylis with two hornes aboue theri heades, with longe heare downe to theri feete: And that they cast furth fyre at theri throtes both before and behynde. The Capitayne named these people *Patagoni*. The most part of them weare the skynnes of fuche beastes wherof I haue spoken before: And haue no houses of continuaunce, but maketh certeyne cotages whiche they couer with the fayde skynnes, and cary them from place to place. They lyue of raw fleisshe and a certeyne sweete roote whiche they caule *Capar*. One of these which they had in theri shippes, dyd eate at one meale a basket of bysket, and drunke a bowle of water at a draughte.

They remayned fyue monethes in this porte of sainct Iulian, where certeyne of the vnder capitaynes conspiryng the death of theri general, were hanged and quartered: Amonge whom the treasurer Luigo of Mendoza was one. Certeyne of the other conspiratours, he left in the sayd land of *Patagoni*.

Departyng from hene to the. 52. degree toward the pole Antartike lackynge a thyrde parte, where they founde a ryuer of fresshe water and good fyfhe. Theyr fysshes were here in great daungour. They remayned two monethes in this porte where they made newe prouision of fresshe water, fuell, and fyfhe. Here the Capitayne caused all his men to bee confessed.

Approchynge to the. 52. degrees, they founde the straight nowe cauled the straight of Magellanis, beinge in sum place. C. x. [one hundred and ten] leagues in length: and in breadth sumwhere very large and in other places lyttle more then halfe a leaque in breidt. On both the sydes of this strayght, are great and hygh mountaynes couered with snowe, beyonde the whiche is the enterauance into the sea of *Sur*. This enterauance the Capitayne named *Mare Pacificum*. Here one of the fysshes stole away priuile and returned into Spaine. In this was one of the giantes who dyed as foone as he felte the heate that is abowte the Equinoctiall lyne.

When the Capitayne *Magalanis* was past the straight and fawe the way open to the other mayne sea, he was so gladde therof that for ioy the teares fell from his eyes, and named the poynct of the lande from whence he fyft fawte that sea, *Capo Desiderato*.

Supposing that the fysh which stole away had byn loste, they erected a croffe vpon the top of a hyghe hyll to direkte their course in the straight yf it were theri chaunce to coome that way. They founde that in this strayght in the moneth of October the nyght was not past fourre hours longe. They found in this strayght at euery three myles, a safe hauen and excellent water to drynke: woodde also and fyfhe, and greate plentie of good herbes. They thynke that there is not a fayrer strayght in the worlde. Here also they fawe certeyne fysshes.

The other giante which remayned with them in the fysh, named breade *Capar*: water, Oli: redde clothe, Chereca: red colour, Cheiche: blacke colour, Amel: And spoke al his wordes in the throte. On a tyme, as one made a croffe before him and kyssed it, shewynge it vnto hym, he fuddeynely cryed *Setebos*, and declared by signes that if they made any more crosfes, *Setebos* wold enter into his body and make him brust. But when in fine he fawe no hurte coome therof, he tooke the croffe and imbrafed and kyssed it oftentimes, defyringe that he myght bee a Chrystian before his death. He was therfore baptysed and named Paule.

Departyne owt of this strayght into the sea cauled *Mare Pacificum* the. xxviii. day of Nouember in the yeare. 1520. they sayled three monethes and. xx. dayes before they fawe any lande. And hayngynge in this tyme consumed all theys bysket and other vytayles, they fell into fuche necessarie that they were inforsed to eate the pouder that remayned therof beinge nowe full of woormes and flynyng lyke pyse by reason of the saltie water. Theyr fresshe water was also putrifysyd and become yellowe. They dyd eate skynnes and pieces of letcher which were foulde abowt certeyne great ropes of the fyshes. But these skynnes beinge made verye harde by reaoun of the foonne, rayne and wynde, they hungen them by a corde in the sea for the space of fourre

ynge glasses,
ld no more.
ld also gyue
metal. And
aryed them:
ey begunne
on they fawe
helpe them.
er bynde the
men, and his
e with them.
of them dye,
o haue they
reidue, who
eleule. One
heir heade,
nd behynde.
che beastes
whiche they
d a certeyne
one meale a

itaynes con-
er Luigo of

where they
ey remayned
. Here the

is, beinge in
other places
mountaynes
le Capitayne
ne. In this

yne sea, he
from whence
o of a hyghe
nde that in
this strayght
reate plentie
we certeyne

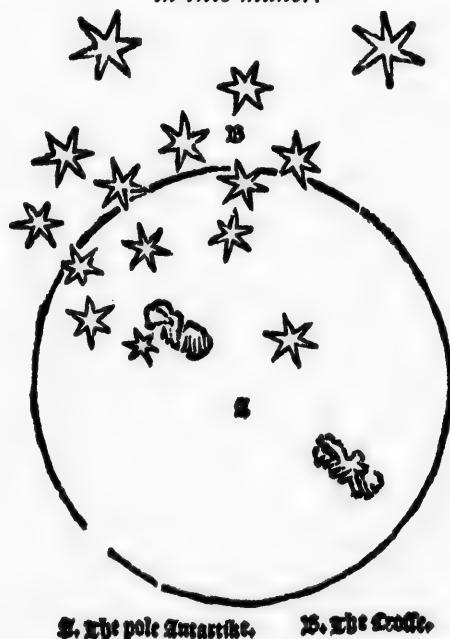
edde clothe,
n a tyme, as
and declared
But when
es, desyrringe

ember in the
ynge in this
inforced to
eafon of the
nd pieces of
made verye
ace of four

or ffe dayes to mollifie them, and fodde them and eate them. By reasoun of this famen and vnclene feedyng, summe of theyr gummes grewe fo ouer theyr teethe, that they dyed miserably for hunger. And by this occasion dyed. xix. men, and also the giante with an Indian of the lande of Braille otherwyse cauled *Terra de papagalli*, that is, the lande of popingayes. Befyde thefe that dyed. xxv. or. xxx. were so sicke that they were not able to doo any seruice with theyr handes or armes for feeblenesse: So that there was in maner none without sum diseafe. In these three monethes and. xx. dayes, they sayled soure thousande leagues in one goulfe by the sayde sea cauled *Pacificum* (that is) peaceable, whiche may well bee so cauled forasmuch as in all this tyme hauyng no ffeight of any lande, they had no misfortune of wynde or any other tempeft. Duryng this tyme also, they discouered only two little Ilandes vnhabited, where they fawe nothing but birdes and trees, and therefore named theym infortunate Ilandes, beinge one from the other abowte two hundredth leagues distante. The firſte of theſe Ilandes is from the Equinoctial toward the pole Antartike. xv. degrees, and the other fyue. Theyr failinge was in ſuche forte that they failed daily betweene. l. [fifty] ix. [ſixty] to. lxx. [ſeuenty] leagues. So that in fine, if god of his mercy had not gyuen them good wether, it was necessarie that in this ſoo greate a ſea they ſhuld all haue dyed for hunger. Whiche neuertheleſſe they escaped ſoo hardely, that it may bee doubted whether euer the like viage may be attempted with fo good ſuccesse.

They conſidered in thiſ nauigation that the pole Antartike hath no notable ſtarre after the forte of the pole Artike. But they fawe many ſtarres gathered togither, whyche are like two clowdes one ſeparate a little from an other, and ſum what darke in the myddel. Betweene theſe, are two ſtarres not very bigge, nor muche ſhyninge, whiche moue a little: And theſe two are the pole Antartike. The needell of theyr compasse varied ſumwhat, and turned euer towarde the pole Artike. Neuertheleſſe, had no ſuche force as when it is in theſe partes of the pole Artike. In ſo muche that it was necessarie to helpe the needle with the lode ſtone (commonly cauled the adamant) before they could fail therwith, bycaufe it moued not as it doothe when it is in theſe oware parties. When they were in the myddel of the goulfe, they fawe a croſſe of five cleare ſtarres directly toward the Weſte, and of equall diſtance the one from the other.

 *The order of the ſtarres abowt the pole
Antartike, ſumme haue figured
in thiſ maner.*



Diseases of famen.

221

Infortunate
Ilandes.

What they sayled
dayly.

The ſtarres abowt
the ſouth pole.

The needle of the
coompasse.

The lode ſtone.

222

The Equinoctial
line.

The Ilandes of
Cipanghu and
Sumbidit

In theſe dayes they sayled betwene the Weſt and South fo farre that they approched to the Equinoctiall line, and were in longitude from the place from whence they fyrl departed, a hundredth and twentie degrees. In thiſ courſe they sayled by two Ilandes of excedyng height, wheroſt the one named *Cipanghu*, is. xx. degrees from the pole Antartike: And the other named *Sumbidit*. xv. degrees. When they were paſt the Equinoctiall line, they sayled betwene the Weſt and Southwest at the quarter of the Weſt towarde the Southwest more then a hundredth leagues, changinge theyr fayles to the quarter of the Southwest vntyll they came to the. xiii. degrees aboue the Equinoctial towarde the pole Artyke, intendyng as much as were poſſible, to approche to the cape cauled of the owlde wryters *Cattigara*: The whiche is not founde as the owlde Cofmographers haue deſcribed it, but is towarde the north abowt. xii. degrees as they afterward vnderſtoode.

When they had thus sayled. lxx. [ſeuenty] leagues of thiſ

*Insula Latronum*People with longe
haireThey colour
theyr teethes.The Ilande of
Zamal.Wyne of date
trees.The maruelous
frute Cocus.

223

The Iland of
Zuluan.
The sea cauled
Archipelago di san
Lazaro
Gentyles.

vyage in the. xii. degree aboue the Equinoctial, and. C.xvi. [one hundred and forty-six] degrees of longitude (as I haue sayde) the fyxe day of March they discouered a lytle Ilande towarde the northweste, and two other towarde the southweste: but the one was hygher and bygger then the two other. In the byggest of these, the generall capitayne wolde haue rested hym selfe a whyle: but he coulde not by reasoun the people of these Ilands resortid continually to the shippes with their canoas, and stole nowe one thynge and nowe an other, in such forte that our men could take no reste, and therfore demaunded of the capitayne that they myght ftryke their sythes to bryng the shippes to land. But the Capitayne beinge prouoked to anger, wente alande with fortis armed men, and burnt about fiftie of their hou ses with many of their Canoas: And flewe also abowt seuen men, and recoverid a shyppe boate whiche the Barbarians had stolne, and so departed folowyng his vyage. The Capitayne named these Ilands *Insula Latronum*, that is, the Ilands of theees. When our men had so wounded summe of them with arrowes that they were ftryken through bothe sythes, they pulled furth the arrowes not ceafyng to marueyle at them till they fell downe deade: And yet coulde not the other so depart, but styll folowed the shippes with more then two hundredth of their boates, appochyng as nere to the shippes as they coulde, and proferyng oure men certeyne syfhes. As the shippes passed with full fayle in the myddeſte of their boates, they fawe in sum of them certeyne women lamenting and tearyng their heare, which oure men thought they did for the death of their husbandes. As farre as they could perceave, these people lyue at theyr owne libertie without anye ruler or gouernour. They go naked and haue blacke beardes and blacke heare on theyr heades whiche they weare longe downe to theyr wistles. They are of the same stature that we are, and well made, of coloure lyke vnto an olyue. Theyr women are well fauored with blacke and thicke heare on theyr heades reachyng to the grownde. The menne colour their teeth redde and blacke, which they esceeme a coomely thyng. They annoyst their bodies and heare with the oyle of *Cocus*. Their boates are sum all blacke, sum whyte, and sum redde, and haue fayles made of the broade leaues of date trees fowd togither. In the steade of a rudder, they vſe a certeyne brode boorde with a flacie in the toppe, and maye when they wyll, make the sterne the forecastell, or the forecastell the sterne. They fayle so swytely that they feeme a farre of, lyke Delphyns fwymmyng aboue the water.

The tenth day of March, in the yeare. 1527. they wente alande vpon a little Ilande named *Zamal*. xxx. leagues dystant from the Ilande of theees. Bycause this Ilande was not inhabyted, they rested here a whyle, where the capitayne caufed a pavilion to bee pitchyd for the sickle and crased men, and a hogge to bee kylde.

The xviii. day of Marche, they fawe a boate with nyne men commynge towarde them shewynge theim felues ioyfull and reioysyng of theyr commynge. They brought many prefentes with them, and seemed to bee people of much humanite. They gaue the capitayne a great fyſhe, and a great vessel of the wyne of those date trees whiche beare the frute *Cocus*. They made also signes that within the space of foure dayes, they wolde bryng ryſſe and dyuers fouldes and beaſts as they dyd in deede.

This *Cocus* is a frute of certeyne date trees wherof they make breade, wyne, oyle, and vineger. They make wyne in this maner. They cutte a bygge braunche of the tree, and hange therat a reede as bigge as a mans legge, into the which droppeth a sweete licour from the tree lyke vnto newe whyte wine sumwhat tart, and let the reede continewe there from mornynge till euynyng, and from euynyng to mornynge. The frute of this tree cauled *Cocus*, is as bygge as the head of a man or more. The fyſte rynde of this, is greene and of the thycnenesse of two fyngers, hauyng in it certeyne threedes wherof they make cordes with the which they tye theyr boates. Vnder this rynde, there is a thicke ſhell whiche they burne and make pouder therof and vſe it as a remedie for certeyne diseaseſ. Vnder this ſhell, is a whyte ſtauance lyke the carnell of a nutte being a fynger in thickenesse, which they eate with fleshe and fyſhe as wee doo breade. It hath the taste of an almonde, and is vſed in the ſteade of breade when it is dryed. In the myddeſte of this carnell, is a cleare and sweete water, beinge very holſome and cordiale. This water ſumtyme congeleth and lyeth within the ſhell lyke an egge. When they intende to make oyle hereof, they ley it to putrifie in water, and boyle it vntyll it bee lyke oyle or liquide butter. When they intende to make vineger, they ſuffer only the water to putrifie and then ſet it to the ſoonne where it becometh vineger lyke vnto that which is made of whyte wyne. And when they mengle the carnell with the water which is in the myddeſte of the frute, and ſtrayne it thorowe a cloth, they make a mylke therof lyke vnto goates mylk. These date trees are lyke vnto them that beare dates, but are not fo full of knottes. With the iuife of two of these date trees, a hole famelie of tenne perſons may bee maynteyned with wyne vfyng one. viii. dayes, and the other, other. viii. dayes: for they ſhulde els bee dryed and wythered. Theſe trees continue for the ſpace of a hundredth yeres. This Ilande where they founde this humane and gentell people, is cauled *Zuluan*, and is not verye bygge. Abowt this Ilande they founde manye other Ilandes, and therefore named this ſea *Archipelago di San Lazarus*, beinge tenne degrees aboue the Equinoctial towarde oure pole, and. C. lixi. [one hundred and fifty-one] frome the place from whence they departed. The people of this Ilande are *Caphranita* that is gentyles. They go naked ſauyng that they couer theyr priuie partes with a clothe made of the rynde of a certeyne tree. The

[] degrees
the north-
er. In the
reaso[n] of
hynghe and
itayne that
d to anger,
moas: And
so departed
of theeuces.
fydes, they
ot the other
as nere to
full fayle in
theyr heare,
cause, thefe
cke beardes
ame flature
blacke and
and blacke,
rus. Theyr
of date trees
toppe, and
wytelty that

Zamal. xxx.
ere a whyle,
bee kylde.
wynge them
emed to bee
of those date
they wolde

ger. They
is bigge as a
hat tart, and
The frute
cene and of
which they
erof and v[e]
nutte being
taste of an
cleare and
he shell lyke
ntryll it bee
putrifacie and

And when
owre a cloth,
e dates, but
ns may bee
s s bee dryed
founds this
nde manye
nte Lazarus,
-one] frome
They go
tree. The

chiefest men, haue abowte theyr heades a sylken cloth of needle woorke. They are grosse and brode set and of the colore of an oylie. They annoynce theyr bodies with the oyle of *Cocus* to defend them ageynst the heate of the foonne and drynnesse of the wynde. The xxv. day of Marche, they departed from hene and directed theyr course betwene the Weste and southwest, and sayled betwene fourre Ilandes named *Cenalo*, *Huinangkan*, *Hibuson*, and *Abarien*, etc.

The xxviii. daye of Marche, they came to the Ilande of *Buthuan* where they were honorably interteyned of the Kynge and the Prince his foonne who gaue them muche golde and splices. The capitayne gaue the kyng a vesture of red clothe and an other of yelowe made after the Turkyfhe fasshyon, and also a red cappe. And gaue likewise to other that came with hym, certeyne knyues, glasses, and beades of cristalle: After that, the capitayne had shewed the Kyng the fcreates of his shipp and suche marchaundies as he had therin, he caused a piece of ordinaunce suddenly to bee shote of, whereat the kyng was greatly amased vntil the capitayne comforted hym. Then the Capitaine commaunded one of his men to be armed from the heade to the foote, and caused three other to strike hym with theyr swoordes, whereat the Kyng maruayled greatly, and fayde to th[e]interpretoure (who was a flauie borne in Malacha) that one of those armed men was able to encounter with a hundredth of his men. But he maruayled muche more when the capitaine tould hym by th[e]interpretoure howe he founde the straight by the compasse and lode stone, and howe many dayes they were without sight of any lande. Then askyng licence to departe, the capitayne sente two of his men with him, of the whiche Antonie Pigafetta was one. When the kyng fawe Antonie Pigafetta write the names of many thinges, and afterwarde reheatre them ageyne, he maruayled yet more, makynge sygnes that fuche men descended from heauen. The Kyng brought them firste to his pallaice where he interteyned them honorably and gaue them manye gyftes, as dyd also the Prince in his pallaice beyng in an other Ilande named *Calghan*.

As they syfted a certeyne myne of earthe in the Kynges Ilande, they founde pieces of golde, sum as bigge as nuttes and other as bigge as eggs. All the kynges vesselles were of golde, and his house well furnysshed. In all the hole nation there was no man of coomlier personage then the kinge. He had his heare long downe to his shulders, and very blake, with a vaile of silke rowled abowte his head, and two greate ringes of golde hanginge at his eares. He had abowte hys myddle, a clothe wroughte of cotton and silke impaled wyth golde, and reacheinge downe to his knees. On his one syde, he had a long dager with a haste of golde, and the shethe of a fayre kynde of carued woodde. He had on every finger, three ringes of golde, and had his boodie annoynct with oyle of storax and Beniamin. The natural colore of his face was like vnto the colore of an oylie: And all his bodye bysyde paynted with diuers colours. The kynges name was Raia Colambu, and the Prince was cauled Raia Siagu.

The laste day of Marche neare vnto Easter, the capitaine caused his preefte to fay masse, and sente to the kinge by th[e]interpretoure, that his commyng a lande at that tyme was not to dyne with hym, but only to heare masse. The Capitayne came alande with fyftie of his men in theyr best apparel withouthe weapons or harnesse, and all the refydye well armed. Before the boates came to lande, he caused sixe pieces of ordinaunce to be shotte of in token of peace, and so came aland, where the two kings embrased hym, and accompanied hym to the place appoynted for masse to be fayde not farre frome the sea syde. Sumwhat before the beginnyngne of masse, the Capitayne sprinkeled the Kynges with damaske water. When the preefte was at mid masse at the offitorie, the kings proffered them selues to go to kyffe the crofse with the capytayne, but offered nothyng. At the tyme of sacringe when the preefte lifted vppe the bodie of Christ, and the Christians kneeled downe and helde vppe their handes ioynd together, the kynges dyd the like also wyth greate reverence. In the meane tyme, whyle certeyne of the Christians were at the communion, a handegunne was shott of to signifie vnto them that were in the shypes, to discharge all theyr ordinaunce. When masse was synfysshed, the Capitaine caused certeyne of his men to put on theyr harnesse and to make a combat with theyr naked swoordes, wherat the kynges tooke great pleasure. This doone, the Capitaine caused a crofse to be brought furth, with nayles and a crowne of thornes, gyuyng comandaumente to all his men to gyue reuerence therunto, and signifyinge to the kynges by th[e]interpretour that that banner was gyuen hym by Th[e]jemproure his lordes and master, with comandaumente to leaue the same in al places where he came to the great commoditie and profite of all such as wolde reuerendly receave it as an assured token of frendship: And that he wold therfore leaue it there awel to accomlyshe his lords comandaumente, as also that if at any tyme any shyppes of Christians shulde chaunce to coome that way, shulde by seing that crofse perceave that owre men had byn well enterteyned there, and wolde therfore not onely abysteyn frome doing them any hurte or displeasure, but also helpe to ayde them ageynste theyr enemies. And that therfore it shulde bee requisite to erecte that crofse vpon the toppe of the hyghesthe mountayne that myght bee seene from the sea on euer syde. Also to pray vnto it reuerently. And that in so doinge, they shulde not bee hurt with thunder, lighntyng, or tempestes. When the kynges harde these woordes, they gaue the Capitayne great thankes, promysinge gladlye to obserue and fulfyll all fuche thynges as he required. Then the Capitayne demaudede whether they were Moores or gentyles. They answere that

Fourre Ilandes

The Iland of
*Buthuan*The Iland of
Calghan

Plente of golde.

224

The kyng of
Buthuan

Mass

A combatte.
The Crosse and
crowne of thornesMoores and
gyuyngles.

Many Ilands

The Iland of
Messana.Battes as bygge as
Eagles.
Fowles with
hornes.

225

Egges hatched in
sand.The Ilands of
Zubut.The kyng of
Zubut.A shyp laden with
gold and slaues.Calicut.
Malaca.

they had none other kynde of religion, but that lyftynge vppe theyr handes ioyned togither and theyr faces toward heauen, they cauled vppon theyr god *Abba*, whiche answere lyked the Capitayne very well, bycause the gentyles are sooner perfwaded to owe fayth then the Moores. etc.

Departyng from henfe, they came to the Ilandes of *Zelion*, *Zubuth*, *Messana*, and *Calaghan*, by the conducte of certeyne pylottes of the fayde kynges. Of these, *Zubuth* is the beste, and hath the trade of beste trafique. In the Ilande of *Messana*, they sounde dogges, cattes, hogges, hennes, goates, ryse, ginger, Cocus, mylle, panyke, barlye, fygges, oranges, waxe, and golde in greate quantitie. This Ilande is aboue the Equinoctiall towarde owe pole. ix. degrees two thyrdle partes: and. 162. degrees frome the place frome whence they departed. They remayned in this Iland for the space of viii. dayes, and then directed theyr vyage towarde the northwest, and passed betwene these fyue Ilandes, *Zelion*, *Bohol*, *Canghu*, *Barbai*, and *Catighan*. In this Ilande of *Catighan*, are certeyne great battes as bygge as Eagles, of the which they toke one. They are good to bee eaten, and of taste muche lyke a henne. There are also flocke dooues, turtle dooues, popingayes, and certeyne foules as bygge as hennes. These foules haue lyttle hornes, and lay greate egges, which they couer a cubet depte in the fande, by the heate whereof and vertue of the sonne, they are hatched, and the younge byrdes creepe owte of the fande by them selues. From the Ilande of *Messana* to *Catighan* are. xx. leagues saylynge towarde the West. And bycause the kyng of *Messana* coulde not folowe the shypes, they taryed for him about the Ilandes of *Polo*, *Ticobon*, and *Poson*, where the Capitayne tooke hym into his shipp with certeyne of his principall men, and so folowed theyr vyage towarde the Ilande of *Zubut*, whiche is abowte fiftie leagues distante from *Catighan*.

The vii. day of Apryll abowte noone, they entered into the porte of *Zubut*: And passyng by many vylages and habitacions in trees, they came to the citie, where the Capitayne gaue commaundement to the marynerys tostryke theyr fayles and to set them felues in order in maner of battayle ray, causing all the ordinaunce to bee shotte of, wherewith all the people were put in greate feare. After this, the Capitayne sent an ambassadour with th[e]interpretour to the kyng of *Zubut*. When they approached nere to the citie, they founde the kyng with a great company of men fore astonfysched at the noyse of the gunnes. But th[e]interpretour aduertised them that it was the custome of owe men in al fuche places where they coome, to discharge theyr ordinaunce in token of frendefyppye and to honour the lorde of the citie. With which woordes the kyng and his coompany were well quieted. After this, th[e]interpretour declared that his master was the Capitayne of the shippes of the greatest Prince in the worlde, and that they wente to discouer the Ilandes of Molucca: And further, that hearyng of his good name and fame by the reporte of the kyng of *Messana*, they determinyd to vistite hym and to haue vytayles for exchaunge of theyr marchaundies. The kyng answered that he was well contented therwith, and that they were hertely welcoome. Neuerthelesse, that it was a custome in that place, that all such shypes as entered into that hauen, shuld pay tribute: And that there were not many dayes past, fence a shyppe laden with golde and flaues dyd so paye. In token wherof, he caused to coome before hym certeyne marchauntes of that coompany whiche yet remayned with hym. To this th[e]interpretour answere, that forasmuch as his lorde was the Capitayne of so myghtie a Prince, he never payde tribute to any kyng in the worlde, and wolde not nowe begynne. Wylyng hym to take this for a resolute answere, that if he wolde accepte the peace that was profered hym, he shulde enioy it, And if he rather defyred warre, he shoulde haue his handes full. When th[e]interpretour had fayde these woordes, one of the fayde marchauntes (who was a Moore) spake to the kyng in this maner. *CATACAIA Chita*: that is. Take hede syr. For these men are they that haue conquered Calicut, Malaca, and all the greater India: and are of suche poure that yf yowe intreate them otherwyse then well, yowe may to late knowe what they are able to doo more then they haue doone at Calicut and Malaca. When th[e]interpretoure harde these woordes, he fayde that the kyng his lorde was of much greater puissance and more dominions, and lorde of more shyppes then was the kyng of Portugal: declareynge further that he was kyng of Spayne and Emperour of all Christendome Addynghe hereunto that yf he wolde not bee his frende, he wolde hereafter fende thyther fuche a poure of armed men as shulde destroy his contrey. The Moore conferred all these woordes with the kyng, who fayde that he wolde further deliberate with his counfayle, and gyue theym a full answere he daye folowyng. In the meane tyme he fente theym certeyne vytayles and wyne. When all these thyngs were declared to the kynges of *Messana* who was the chiefest there abowt nexte vnto hym, and lorde of m[any] Ilandes, he wente alande and repayred and curtefie of the generall Capitayne. retур to the kyng of *Zubut* to knowe his pleasure and what aunswere he wolde make them. As they w[ere] towarde the courte, they mette the kyng comyng in the streeete accompanied with many of his chiefe men. He caused owr men to sit downe by him, and demaunded of them if there were any more then one Capitayne in theyr coompanie: And whether it were theyr reueste that he shulde pay tribute to Th[e]emperour. They answered that they defyred none other thynge but that they myght exercise marchaundies with them, and to barter ware for ware. The kyng

theyr faces
bycause the

han, by
ade of besle
nger, Cucus,
Equinoctiall
whense they
rage towarde
an. In this
They are
oues, poping-
great egges,
are hatched,
Catighan are.
shyppes, they
to his shipp
he is abowte

ge by many
ment to the
all the ordi-
ayne fent an
the citie, they
th[e]interpre-
to discharge
des the kyng
the Capitayne
olucca: And
determined to
t he was well
in that place,
dayes paste,
e before hym
our answered,
any kyng e
t if he wold
hould haue
(who was a
hefe men are
that yf yowe
en they haue
the kyng e
the kyng e
the Addynge
armed men as
hat he wold
meane tyme
e of Messiana
and repayred
l Capitayne.
but to knowe
ey mette the
to fit downne
And whether
defyred none

The kyng e

made answere that he was well content therwith: wyllynge the Capitayne in token of frendshippe to fende him a little of the blud of his ryght arme, affirmyng that he wold do the lyke, etc.

After this the kyng e of Messiana with the kyng e of *Zubut* his neue (who was the prince) and certeyne other of his gentylmen, came to the shyppes and brought the Capitayne many goodly prentes. They entered into greate amitie, and had large communication of many thynges. The Capitayne perfaused them to the Christian sayth, which they gladly embrased, and tooke siche pleasure in hearyng the articles of owre beliefe, that the teares fell from theyr eyes for ioye. They were baptised, and shortly after all the people of the Ilande. They esteeme nothing more precious then drynkyng glases of Venice woorke.

When they came to the citie, they founde the kyng e in his pallacie sittynge vpon a floure or fluorie made of the leaues of date trees wrought after a curious diuise lyke a certeyne kynde of mattes. He had vpon his body, none other apparell but only a cloth of bombasine cotton hangyng before his priuie partes. On his heade, he had a vayle of needle worke: and abowte his necke a chaime of greate price. At his eares, hunge two rynges of golde wherein were inclosed many precious stones. He was but of smaile stature, but somewhat grosse, and had the residu of his body paynted with dyuers coloures wherof sum were lyke vnto flamynge fyre. Before hym, he had two vesselles made of the fine earth cauled *Porcellana*, with foddern egges. Also four vessells of *Porcellana* full of wyne made of date trees, and couered with many odoriferous herbes. The prince brought them to his house, where he had foure daughters verye well fauoured and whyte lyke owres. He caufed them to daunce all naked, and therwith to syng, and play on certeyne tymbrelles made of metall.

At this tyme it so chaunced that one of the Spanyardes dyed in one of the shyppes. And when certeyne of theyr coompanye defyred the kyng e to gyue them leaue to burie hym on the land, he answered that forasmuch as he and all his, were at the commaundement of theyr kyng e and master, how much more ought the grounde so to be.

They greatly marueyled at the ceremonys perteynyng to the maner of owre funeralles, and honoured the crosses whiche were set at bothe th[e]endes [of] the graue.

They lyue with iustice, and vfe waigtes and measures. Theyr houfes are made of Timber and fawne boordes: and are so buylid aboue the grownde vpon propes and pyles, that they ascende to the same by certeyne stayers. Vnder theyr houfes, they keepe theyr hogges and hennes.

When they came to bartersyng, they gaue golde, ryffe, hogges, hennes, and dyuers other thynges for sume of owre tryfels of smaile value. They gaue tenne *Pesos* of golde for. xvi. pounds weyght of iren. One *Pesus* is in value a ducate and a halfe. The sunday folowynge, the kyng e was baptysyd with great solemnitie. At which tyme, the Capitayne admonysshed him before not to bee afraide at the shooting of the ordinaunce, bycause it was theyr custome so to doo at such solemne feastes. After this, the Capitayne caufed theym to breake all theyr Idoles, and to set vppe the croffe in dyuers places, prayng to the same bothe mornynge and euening kneelyng on their knees and holdyng vp their handes ioyned togidher. The kinge in his baptisme, was named Charles after the Emperours name, and the Prince, Ferdinand after the name of his maiesties brother. The kyng e of Messiana was named Iohn, and the Moore Christopher. To all other they gaue such names as are commonly vfed in Christendome. And thus besyde mass was begunne, were ffe hundredth men baptisid. When mass was synysshed, the Capitayne invited the kyng e to dyne with him in his shyppe, and at his commynge, caused the ordinaunce to bee discharged.

The queene was also baptisid with fortie of her gentlewomen, and her daughter the Princes wife. The queene was very younge and fayre, hauyng her body couered with a white cloth. Her lypes were redde, and she had on her head a hat, on the toppe wherof was a triple crowne much lyke the popes. This crowne and the hat, were made of the leues of dates trees.

Within the space of. viii. dayes, th[e]inhabitauntes of the Ilande were baptisid excepte one vyllage of Idolaters who wold not herein obey the kynges commaundement. Whervpon the Capitayne sent certeyne of his menne thyther, who burnt the towne and erected a croffe in that place bycause the people of the vyllage were gentylles (that is) Idolaters. But if they had byn Moores (that is Machumetistes) they wold haue erected a pyller of stone, bycause the Moores are more stooberne and harder to bee conuerted then are the gentylles.

When the queene came to the place where she shuld haire mass, shee came furth with great pompe and solemnitie, hauyng goinge before her three younge damofelles and three men with theyr cappes in theyr handes, whom shee followed apparellid in whyte and blacke, with a great vayle of sylke vpon her heade fringed abowte with golde, whiche couered her hatte and hunge downe to her shouolders. Shee had also a great trayne of women folowyng her, beinge all barefooted and naked, excepte that vpon theyr heades and priuie partes, they wore certeyne vayles of silke, and hadde theyr haire spredde.

Before the kyng e of *Zubut* was baptisid, he was named Raia Humabuon. When the Capitayne demaunded of hym why all the Idoles in the Ilande were not burnt accordyng to his promesse, he answered that they esteemed them no more as goddes, but only made sacrifice to them for the Princes brother who was very sycke,

Shadwyng of
bludde is a token
of frendshippe

226

The kyng e of
Zubut is baptisid

The kyng e of
Zubut his apparel

Well fauoured
women.

Bartersyng
Pesus what.

They breake theyr
Idoles and erette
the croffe.

Ffe hundredth
men baptisid.

The queene of
Zubut.

227

The queene
apparell

A miracle.

The Iland of Mathan.

The capitaine Magellanis is slayne.

The Iland of Bohol.
They burste one of their shypes.

Blacke men.

The Iland of Chippit.

The Iland of Caghaian.

The Iland of Pulaoan.

The Iland of Burnei or Porne.

A great citie.

Elephantes

The Iland of Cimbulon.

Leaves of trees which seeme to liue.

228

and as noble and wyttie a man as was in the Ilande. The Capitayne answered that if he wolde burne al his Idoles and beleue saythfully in Christ, and bee baptised, he shulde be immediatly restored to health, and that he wolde els gyue them leue to stryke of his heade. By these woordes and persuasions of the Capitayne, he conceaued such hope of health, that after he was baptised he fel no more greefe of his diseafe. And this was a manifest myracle wrought in owe tyme wherby dyuers infidels were conuerted to owr sayth, and theyr Idoles destroyed, and also theyr altars ouerthrownen on the whiche they were accustomed to eate the facrifyced fleshe. The people of the Ilande pay the kyng a portion of vitayles for theyr tribute by all theyr cities and vylages.

Not farre from this Ilande of *Zubut*, is the Iland of *Mathan*, whose inhabitauntes vfe maruelous ceremonies in theyr sacrifices to the sonne and burying the deade. They were rynges of golde abowt theyr priuie members. The Ilande is governed by two Princes wherof the one is named *Zula*, and the other *Cilapulapu*. And wheras this *Cilapulapu* refusid to pay tribute to the kyng of Spayne, the Capitayne went ageynst hym in his owne person with. ix. of his menne armed with coates of mayle and helmettes. *Cilapulapu* diuided his army into three battayles, hauyng in euery battaile two thoufand and fiftie men armed with bowes, arrowes, darteres and iaelins hardened at the poyntes with fyre. This continued longe and sharpe. But the Capitayne beinge a valient man and prefyng hym selfe in the brunte of the battaile, was fore wounded and slayne, forasmuch as the mooste of the Barbarians directed all theyr force ageynst hym. Befyde the Capitayne, were slayne of owe men abowt. viii. or. ix. Of the Barbarians, were. xv. slayne and many fore wounded. After the death of the Capitayne, they chose two other in his place, of the which one was *Odoardo Barbesia* a Portugale, and the other *John Serrano* who was shortely after betrayde by th[e]interpretour and taken prisoner with dyuers other.

Certeyn dayes before the Capitaynes death, they hadde knowleage of the Ilandes of Molucca whiche they chiefly fought. Departyng therfore from the Ilande of Mathan, they sayled farre and came to the cape of an other Iland named *Bohol*. In the myddeft of this mayne fea (whiche they named *Archipelagus*) they consulted to burne the shyppe named *Conception*, bycause they were nowe fewe in number, and to furnyshe the other two shyppes with th[e]artillerie therof. Thus directyng theyre courfe towarde Southewest, they came to an other Ilande named *Pauloghon*, where they founde blacke men lyke vnto the Sarasins. Shortly after, they arriued at an other great Iland, whose kyng named *Raia Calauar*, intreated them very frendly in all thynges as dyd the kyng of *Messiana*. This Ilande is ryche in golde, and hath plentie of ryssie, gynger, hogges, goates, hennes, and dyuers other thynges. It is named *Chippit*, and is. viii. degrees aboue the Equinoctiall line towarde owe pole: And in longitude from the place from whence they first departed. 170. degrees: And abowt. 50. leagues from *Zubut*.

Departinge frome hente they came to an other Iland named *Caghaian* being. 40. leagues from Chippit as they sayled betwene the weste and Southe weste. This Ilande is very greate, and in maner vnhabited. The people are moores, and were banyffled out wot the Ilande of *Burnei* whiche sum caule *Porne*.

Frome this Ilande aboue. xxv. leagues betwene the weft and northewefte, they founde a maruelous frutefull Ilande named *Pulaoan*, beinge towarde owe pole aboue the Equinoctiall ix. degrees and a thirde parte: And C.Ixxix. [one hundred and seventy-nine] degrees and a third parte in longitude frome the place of theyr departing.

Frome this Ilande. x. leagues towarde the South weft, they sawe an other Ilande whiche seemed to them sumtymes to mounte as they sayled by the coales therof. As they were enteringe into the porte, there arose a boyflious and darke tempeste which ceased as foone as the fiers of the three fayntes (wherof we haue spoken before) appeared vpon the cabells. Frome the beginninge of this Ilande to the porte, are fyue leagues. This Ilande is greate and riche: and the chiefe citie therof conteyneth. xxv. thousandes houses. The kyng interteyned owe men very frendlye, and sent them byfyde many other prefentes, two elephantes trapped with filke to bring them to his pallace that brought the prefentes which the Capytaynes sent hym. He hath a magnyfycalle courte and a greate garde. Also a multitude of concubynes. He is a moore, and is named *Raia Siripada*. He is a kyng of greate poure, and hath vnder hym many other kynges, Ilandes, and cities. This Ilande of *Burnei* is aboue the Equinoctiall towarde owe pole fyue degrees and a quarter. And in longitude frome the place of theyr departyng. C. lxxvi. [one hundred and seventy-six] degrees and two thirde partes.

Departinge frome *Burnei*, they came to an Ilande cauled *Cimbubon*, beinge. viii. degrees aboue the Equinoctiall lyne. Here they remayned. xl. days to calke theyr shyppes and furnyfhe them with fresshe water and fuell whiche was to them great Payne and trauayle because they were in maner all bare footed, theyr shooes and in maner theyr other apparell being worne by reaoun of the longe vyage. In the wooddes of this Ilande, they founde a tree whose leaves as foone as they faule on the grounde, doo sturre and remoue frome place to place as though they were alyue. They are muche lyke the leaves of a mulbery tree: And haue on every fyde as it were two short and blunt fiete. When they are cut or broken, there is no bludde feene come furth of them. Yet when any of them are touched, they suddeynely moue and starte away. Antonie Pigafetta kepte one of them in a platter for the space of. viii. dayes. And euer when he touched it, it ranne rounde abowt the platter. He supposeth that they liue only by aver.

burne al his
and that he
apitayne, he
and this was a
theyr Idoles
sycyd fleshe.
and vyllages.
s ceremonys
nie members.
And wheras
in his owne
his army into
s, darters and
yne beinge a
forasmuch as
ayne of owre
death of the
and the other
other.

whiche they
the cape of an
ey consulted
the other two
e to an other
ey arriuied at
es as dyd the
hennes, and
de our pole:
leagues from

m Chippit as
abitid. The

ruelous frute-
e parte: And
r departing.
ned to them
there arofe a
haue spoken
ques. This
e interteyned
ilke to bring
magnyfycalle
aia Sripada.
his Ilande of
le frome the

s. aboue the
fresfhe water
theyr shooes
this Ilande,
me place to
n every syde
one furth of
rafetta kepte
le abowt the

Departyng from hense, they directed their course by the Weste quarter towarde the Southeaste, to synde the Ilandes of Molucca, and sayled not farre from certeyne mountaynes where they founde the sea full of great weedes and herbes.

From hense, they came to the Ilandes of *Zolo* and *Zaghima*, in the which are founde perles of exceeding biggenesse.

Folowyng their course toward the north East, they came to a great citie named *Manglando*, lyng aboue the Ilandes of *Buthuan* and *Calaghan*, where they tooke a canoa of certeyne of th[e]inhabitaunts: by whome being informed of the Ilandes of *Molucca*, they lefte their course towarde the north Eafl, and folowed the South eaflere vnto a cape of the Iland of *Buthuan*, they were aduertised for certentie that on the bankes of a certeyne ryuer, there dwelte men ouergrown with heare, and of high stature.

Folowyng still their course by the south eafl, and pafyng by many finaule Ilandes, they came to the Ilandes of *Molucca* the fyxt daye of Nouember and the. xxvii. moneth after their departure owt of Spayne. Beinge therfore ioyfull and guyng thankes vnto god, they discharged all their ordynaunce. In the coate of all these Ilandes, euen vnto the Ilandes of Molucca, foundyng with their plummet, they founde the deapthe of the sea to bee no lesse then a hundredth and two yardes, which is contrary to the saying of the Portugales who affirme that no shyppe can passe that way without great daungioure by reason of the shalownes and rockes or shelues: and for the darkenesse which the clowdes cause in the heauen. All which thyngs they fayned to th[e]elintent that none other shulde haue knowleage of their vyages.

The viii. day of Nouember in the yeare. 1521. before the rynginge of the foonne, they entered into the porte of the Ilande of *Tidore*, being one of the chiefe Ilandes of Molucca, where they were honorably interteyned of the kyng who declared that he had longe before feen: a sygne in heauen that certeyne shyppes shuld come from a faire contrey to the Ilandes of Molucca: And that wheras for the better certificat therof he conseydered the statious of the moone, he fawe therin the commynge of owre shyppes, and that we were the men whome he seemed to see in the same. Wherupon he profered hym selfe to enter into leaque of frenshshyppe with the kyng of Spayne, and to accepte owre men as his brotherne and chyldren: wylling them to come alande as into their owne hou ses. Alfo that for theyr commynge, that Ilande shulde no more bee cauled *Tidore*, but *Caſile* for the greate loue whiche he bore to theyr kyng whom he reputed as his lorde and maſter. This kyng is a Moore, and is named Raia Sultan Mauzor.

The Ilandes of Molucca are fwe in number, and are thus named: *Tarenate*, *Tidore*, *Mutir*, *Macchian*, and *Bacchian*. Of theſe, *Tarenate* is the chiefe.

Directly ageynſte the Ilande of *Tidore*, there is an other great Ilande named *Gilolo*, inhabited of Moores and Gentyles. The Moores haue two kynges, of the which one hath fyxe hundredth chyldren, and the other ſix hundredth and fiftie. The Gentyles kepe not ſo many women as doo the Moores nor yet lyue in ſiche ſuperſtitios. They praye to the fyſte thyng that they meeete in the mornynge when they go furth of theyr houſes, and honoure that as theyr god for that day. The kyng of the gentyles is very ryche in golde. In the ſayde Ilande of *Gilolo*, are reedes as bygge as a mans legge, and full of cleare water holſome to bee drunke.

The xii. daye of Nouember, the kyng of *Tidore* appoynted owre men a ware houſe in the citie where they might fell theyr marchaundies. Theyr maner of exchange was in this fort. For tenne yardes of good redde cloth, they had one Bahar of cloues, whiche amounteth to four Cantari and fyxe pounde weight: And one Cantar is a hundredth pounde weight. For. xv. yardes of cloth ſumwhat worse then the other, they receaued in Cambie, one Bahar. For. xxxv. drynkyngē cuppes of glaffe, they had one Bahar. For. xvii. Cathyls of quicke ſyluer, one Bahar. They came dayly to the shyppes with many of theyr barkes full of goates, hennes, fyges of a ſpanne longe, alſo the frute cauled *Cucus*, with dyuers other kyndes of vyttailes in ſuch quantitiue that it was a marueylos thyng to beholde. They furnyſched alſo theyr shyppes with fresfhe water which is hotte as it iſfneweth owt of the ſprynge, but is very coulde when it hath ſloode a while in an other place. It ſpryngeth from the mountaynes on the which the cloue trees growe. They fawe a cloude ryfe in maner dayly, which compafeth about the ſayde mountaynes.

The kyng of the Ilande of *Bacchian*, ſente the kyng of Spayne two deade byrdes of ſtraunge forme. They were of the byggernes of turtle dooues, with lytle headeſ and longe bylles: alſo longe and ſmaule legges and no wynges, but in the ſteade therof certeyne longe fetheres of diuers colours, and tayles lyke turtle dooues. All the other fetheres are of one coloure much lyke vnto tawny, except thoſe of the wynges. They flye not but when the wynde bloweth. Theſe Moores are of opinion that theſe byrdes come from the heauenlye Paradyſe, and therfore caule them *Manuccodiata*, that is the byrdes of god.

When they were determyned to depart from the Ilandes of Molucca, certeyne kynges of the Ilandes accompanied them with theyr canoas, and conducted them to an Ilande cauled *Mare* where they refreſhed theyr shyppes with fresfhe water and fuell. The kynges ſent Th[e]emperouris maiefſie many preſentes: and embraſyngē owre menne, departed with the teares in theyr eyes: And owre men for theyr laſte farewell, ſhotte

A ſea full of
weedes.

Perles.

Men ouergrown
with heare.

The Ilandes of
Molucca.

The Portugales
are reproved.

Tidore one of the
Ilandes of
Molucca.

A vision in the
planettes

229

The fyue Ilandes
of molucca.

Tarenate.

The Ilande of
Gilolo.

Moores and
gentyles.

Golde.

We... in reedes.

Theyr maner of
bartering.

Water of a
ſtrange qualite

Byrdes of a
ſtrange forme

They leue one of
their shippes
behyn্ড them.

The Ilandes of
Molucca.
Hony of flies.

Popingayes.

The Iland of
Tidore.

Terenate.
Mutir.
Macchian.

230

Bacchian.
Many Ilandes

The Iland of
Mallua.
Pepper.

Lytle men with
longe eares.

The Iland of
Timor.
Whyte sanders
and ginger.

The deuyll
appereith.
Sainct Iob his
diseas.

Cinamome
The Ilandes of
Giana.
Malaccha.

The greates goulfe
of China.

The cape of
Malaccha.

The names of
many regions.

Reubarbe.

The greates kyng
of China.

of all theyr ordinaunce. When in the Ilande of *Mare*, they perceaued that one of their shippes leaked and toke water very fore: wherby they were inforced to tary there three dayes. But feinge that they coulde fynde no remedie for the same but in longe tyme, they determined to leave it, gyuonge order that if afterwarde it coulde bee repayed, they shuld retorne into Spayne as well as they coulde.

In all the Ilandes of Molucca is founde cloues, ginger, breade of the roote of Sagu, ryse, goates, sheepe, hennes, fygges, almondes, sweete pomegranates and fowre, oranges, lemondes, and hony which is made of certeyne flies less than antes: Also canes of suger, oyle of Cocus, mellons, gourdes, and a marueilous coulde frute which they name Camulicai and dyuers other frutes. Furthermore whyte and redde popingayes, and other of variable coloures. It is not paste fiftie yeares fence the moores syrte inhabited anye of these Ilandes, which were before inhabited only with gentyles.

The Ilande of Tidore, is aboue the Equinoctiall line towarde owre pole, abowt. 27. minutes: And in longitude from the place from whence they departed. 171. degrees. And from the *Archipelagus* in the which is the Iland of *Zama* which our men named the Iland of theees. ix. degrees and a halfe, and runneth to the quarter of south southwest, and north northeast. *Terenate*, is vnder the Equinoctiall line four minutes vnder the pole Antartike. *Mutir*, is directly vnder the Equinoctiall line. *Macchian* is xv. minutes toward the pole Antartike, and *Bacchian* one degree. These Ilandes are lyke fourre sharpe mountaynes, except *Macchian* which is not sharpe. The bygget of all these, is *Bacchian*.

Departyng from the Iland of *Mare* and directyng their course towarde the southwest, with onely. xlvi. men in theyr shyppe and. xiii. Indians, they passed by the Ilandes of Chacouan, Lagoma, Sico, Gioghi, Caphi, Sulacho, Lumatola, Tenetum, Buru, Ambon, Budia, Celaruri, Beniaia, Ambalao, Bandan, Zorobua, Zolot, Noceuamor, Galian, and Mallua, with dyuers other Ilandes both great and smaule, of Moores, Gentyles, and Canibales. Oure men remayned xv. dayes in the Ilande of Mallua to repaire their shyppe in certeyne places where it tooke water. All the fieldes of this Ilande is full of longe and rounde pepper, and is situate towarde the pole Antartike vnder the Equinoctiall line. viii. degrees and a halfe, and is in the longitude of. 169. degrees and. 40. minutes.

The pilote which owre men brought owt of the Ilandes of Molucca, tolde them that not farre from thenese, was an Iland named Arucetto in the which are men and women not past a cubite in height, hauyng eares of such byggenesse that they lye vpon one and couer them with the other. But owr men woide not sayle thither, bothe bycause the wynde and course of the sea was ageynste theym, and also for that they gaue no credite to his reporte.

The. xxv. day of Ianuary in the yeare. 1522. they departed from Mallua, and the day folowing, arryued at a greate Iland named *Timor*, beinge fife leagues distante from Mallua betwene the south and southwest. In this Ilande is founde the woodde of whyte sanders and ginger, and dyuers kindes of frutes. Also fundry kyndes of beastes, and plentie of vytayle and golde. They of the Ilandes of *Giana*, *Molucca*, and *Lozon*, refort to this Ilande for sanders. Th[e]inhabitauntes are gentyles. They say that when they go to cut the woodde of sanders, the deuyll appeareth to them in dyuers formes and alketh theym what they haue neede of: And that after this vision, many of them are longe sicke. In al the Ilandes of this Archipelagus, rayneth the diseafe of sainct Iob (whiche wee caule the frenche poxe) more then in any other place in the worlde.

Farre from this Ilande betwene the west and northwest they came to an Ilande named *Eude*, in the whiche growethe great plentie of Sinamome. In this tracte are founde manye Ilandes lying in order as it were one directly behyn্ড an other, even vnto the Ilande of the greater *Giana*, named *Giana maior*, and vnto the cape of *Malaccha*, beinge in East India. *Giana* the less, is as bygge as the Ilande of *Madera*, and is but halfe a league distante from *Giana maior*. Here they were informed that aboue *Giana maior* toward the north, is a great goulfe cauled the goulfe of *China*, in the which are trees of exceeding byggenesse, inhabyted with foules of suche greatenes that they cary great beastes in the ayer. The frutes of these trees are as bygge as cucumbers.

The cape of *Malaccha* is one degree and a halfe aboue the Equinoctiall line towarde the pole Artike. On the East side of this cape, runneth a very longe coaste in the which are many regions and cities wherof sum are cauled by thei names, *Cingapora* which is the cape. Also *Pahan*, *Calantan*, *Patani*, *Braulin*, *Benu*, *Longon*, and *Odia* wherin is the citie in the which dwelleth the kyng of *Sian* named *Zacabedera*. Their cities are buildest as ower are, and subiecte to the kyng of *Sian*. After the realme of *Sian*, are the regions of *Jamgoma* and *Campaa* where Reubarbe growtheth, of the which are dyuers opinions, sume supposyng it to bee a roote, and other a putrifried tree, affirmyng that yf it were not putrified, it shulde not haue so great a faour. They caule it *Calama*. Next vnto this, is found the great *China*, whos kyng is thought to bee the greatest prince in the worlde, and is named *Santoa Raia*. Furthermore, al that is written hereafter of this kyng and these regions, they lerned by th[e]information of a Moore that was in the Ilande of *Timor*. He affirmed that the sayde kyng hathe threefore and tenne crowned kynges vnder his empyre, and hathe a porte in the sea named *Canthan*: And two principal cities named *Nauchin* and *Connulaha* where he remayneth hym selfe, and hath euer fourre of

es leaked and
coulde synde
afterwarde it
roates, sheepe,
which is made of
seilous coulde
singayes, and
these Islands,

utes: And in
in the which
unneth to the
minutes vnder
ward the pole
achian which
ely. xlvi. men
aphi, Sulacho,
, Noceuamor,
nd Canibales.
laces where it
ward the pole
grees and. 40.

e from thense,
yngne eares of
fayle thyther,
credite to his

ng, arryued at
outhwest. In
fundry kyndes
refort to this
le of saunders,
that after this
e of saynt Iob

in the whiche
as it were one
ynto the cape
is but halfe a
the north, is a
ed with foules
as cucumbers
Artike. On
herof sum are
Benu, Longon,
theyr cities are
s of Iamgoma
e a roote, and

They caule
prince in the
thes regions,
e fayle kyng
ned Canthan:
euer soure of

his chiefe princes lying abowt his pallaice on evry syde, towarde the Easte, Weste, Northe, and South giuinge dylgente attendaunce what is doone in eurye of theyr quarters. All the prynces of the greater India (cauled *India Maior*,) and of that wherof I haue spoken before, are obedient to this kyng. And in token that they are trewe subiectes, they keepe in theyr pallaices which are in the middeft of theyr cities, the beste cauled *Linx*, being fayrer then a lyon, And is the great kynges signette, whiche all fuche as intende to go to *China*, beare with them sealed in waxe or on a piece of Iuerye for theyr safe conducte, without the which they may not enter into the hauen.

When any of his kyngs rebell or are disobedient, he causeth them to be flene, and salted and dried at the foone: Then to bee stufed with chaffe, and sette vppe on sum hygh thyg in the myddeft of the chiefe streate of the citie where al the people may see it. He never suffereth his owne person to bee openly feene to any man. But when his noble men of the courte are desyrous to see hym, he commeth downe frome hys pallaice into a ryche paulyon accompanied with syxe of hys principall concubynes appareyled with lyke vestures as is he hym selfe. All thys way he is not seene by reaſon of the paulyon. When he hath paſſed through the paulyon, he entereth into a serpent named *Nagha*, being the moſt marueylous and ryche woorke of the worlde, and placed in the greatest courte of the pallaice. When the kyng entereth into this with the women, to th[e]intent that he may not be knownen among them, he causeth the fayd noble men only to looke in at a glasse which is in the breſte of the serpente, where they ſee the kyng amoung the women, but can not dicerne which is he. He ioyneth in mariage with hys fylter that the blud royll bee not myxt with any other. His pallaice is enuironed with ſeven large walles, the one being farre dyſtant frome the other. And hath in every ſuch circuite tenne thowſande men for the garryfon of hys pallaice, who haue theyr waytinge dayes appoynted them courfe by courfe with freſhe men in theyr places, and thus keepe theyr watch continually both daye and nyght. In this pallaice are lxxix. haules, in the which is an infinite number of women that ſerue the kyng hauyng euer lyght torches in theyr handes for the greater magnyfycence. He that wolde fee all the pallaice, ſhulde ſpend a hole day therin. Amonge other, there are fourre principal haules where ſumtymeſ the kyng gyueth audience to hys noble men. Of theſe, one is couered both aboue and beneth with metall, an other all ouer with ſyluer, the thyrde with gold, and the fourth with pearles and precious flones. Theſe people of *China*, are whyte menne, appareled as we are, and eate theyr meate on tables as wee doo. They haue the croſſe in ſum estimation, but knowe not the caufe whye. Beyonde the coaſte of *China*, are dyuers other nations and people as *Chenchii* where pearlles and cynamon are founde. Alſo the people named *Lichii*, where reyneth the great kyng of Mien, hauyng vnder hym. xxii. kynges, and is ſubiecte to the kyng of *China*. Here is alſo founde the great citie of *CATHAY* in the East, and dyuers other nations in the fayd firme land, of the which ſum are brutifche and beſtiall which vſe to kyll and eate theyr parentes when they are owlde, thinking therby that they ſhall reuyue in them. All theſe people are gentyles.

The xi. day of February in the yeare. 1522. they departed from the Iland of *Timor* and were ingulfed by chance in the great ſea cauled *Lantchidol*, and tooke theyr courfe betwene the weſte and ſouth weſte, leauyng the northe coaſtes on theyr ryght hand, fearing leaſt if they ſhuld fayle toward the firm land, they myght bee ſeen of the portugales who are of great power in *Malaccha*: and therfore dyrected theyr cours without the Iland of *Sumatra* cauled in owd tyme *Taprobana*: Leauyng alio on theyr ryght hand vpon the fyrm land, the prouincies and regions of *Pegu*, *Bengala*, *Calicut*, *Canonor*, *Goa*, *Cambaia*, the goulf of the Ilande of *Ormus*, and all the coaſtes of the greater India. And more ſafely to paſſe the cape of *Buona Speranza* being aboue Affrike, they fayled about. xlii. degrees toward the pole *Antartike*, and remayned ſeven weekes abowte that cape with many fetches compaffyng the wynd with theyr fayles contynually aloſte, because they had a weſt and north weſte wynd in the proos of theyr ſhippe which wolde notuffer them to paſſe. The cape of *Buona Speranza*, is toward the pole *Antartik* beneth the Equinoctiall line. xxxiiii. degrees and a halfe: and. 1600. leagues from the cape of *Malaccha*: And is the greateſte and moſte daungyrouſe cape that is founde at thys day in al the worlde.

When they had by theſe perels ouerpaffed thys cape, certeyne of them awell for lacke of vytailes as alſo by reaſon of lyckenefſe, were mynded to fayle to a hauen of the Portugales named *Mouambique* aboue Afrikye. But the other anſwered that they wold rather dye then go to any other place then directly to Spayne. They folowed theyr courſe therfore faylynge towarde the Southwest two monethes continually without touchyng at any porte: In whiche tyme there dyed abowte. xxi. of theyr coompany, whom they caſt into the ſea. And ſuerly if god of his infinite mercie had not preferued the reſidue in tyme, they hadde all dyed of famen.

In fine, beinge inforſed of neceſſitie, and halfe of theyr coompanye deade, they fayled to one of the Ilandes of *Capo verde* cauled *Infula Sancti Iacobi*, that is, fayneſt Iamde, parteyning to the kyng of Portugale. Where, as foone as they arryued, they ſent certeyne alande in the ſhippe boate for vytailes, declarayng to the Portugales with all loue and fauour what neceſſitie they were dryuen to and what miferies and trauayles they had ſufteyned, informyng them further of theyr marueylous viage and fuche thygnes as they

The greater India

231
The beast cauled
linx.

The punishment
of rebelleſ.

The kyng
marueylous ſyſteſ.
His pallaice.
A marueylous
garde.

Women ſerue the
kyng.

Fourre marueylous
haules

The people of
China.
The *Cru. sc.*

The greate kyng
of mien
CATHAY.

The ſea of
Lantchidol.

Malaccha.
The Iand of
Sumatra.
Pegu.
Bengala.
Calicut.
Canonor.
Goa.
Cambaia.
Ormus.
East India.
*Capel de Buona
Speranza*.

The port of
Mouambique.

232
Famen.

Capo Verde.
S. Iames Iand.

The ingrati(t)ude
of the Portugales.

The port of saynt
Lucar nere vnto
Siule.

What became of
the other shyppe.

Dariena

The cape of
Cattigara.
Ptolome.
The vyage hardly
performed.

They bye slaues
for lacke of helpe

Maryners worthy
immortal fame.
Argonauti.

The vyage of Iason
to wyn the golden
fleese.
The shyppe more
worthy fame then
ownde Arg of
Grecia.
The vyage

hadde feene in both the East and West India, with such other gentel woordes wherby they obteyned certeyne measures of rife. But when afterwarde. xiii. of them returned for more ryse, they were deteyned: Whereupon the rest whiche remayned in the shippe, fearynge the lyke chaunce, departed with full sayles, and the vii. day of September with the helpe of god entered into the hauen of *San Lucar* nere vnto Siule, where discharynge all theyr ordinaunce for ioy, they wente immediatly to the greate churche in theyr shertes and barefooted with a torch before them to gyue thanks to almyghtie god who had brought them safe to theyr owne countrey, and reforded them to theyr wyues and chyldren.

As touchynge th[e]ende of this viage, Transiluanus wryteth sumwhat more largely as foloweth.

The other shyppe which they lefte behynde them to bee repayed, returned afterwarde by the Archipelagus aforefayde and by the great sea to the coastes of the firme of the west India, and arryued at a region of the same being ageynst *Dariena*, where the South sea of *Sur* is separate but by a lyttle space of lande from the Weste Ocean in the which are the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, and other Ilandes of the Spanyardes. The other shyppe which returned into Spayne by compaing abowt the whole bowle of the worlde by the coastes of East India and Affrike, departyng from the Iland of *Tidore*, and faylyng euer on this syde the Equinoctiall, dyd not fynde the cape of *Cattigara* beinge aboue Af'a, and (by the descriptiōn of Ptolome) rechynge many degrees beyonde the Equinoctiall. But hauyng fayled many dayes by the mayne sea, they came to the cape of *Buona Speranza* and frome thenſe to the Ilandes of *Capo verde*, where their shyppe beinge foore brooſed by reaſon of the longe viage, leaked and tooke water, in ſuche forte that the marinērs being nowe but fewe in number, and thoſe also weake and feeble by reaſon of longe fickenesse and hunger, were not able both to drye the poompe continually and otherwyſe gouerne the ſhippe: and were therfore of neccſitie inforced to goo alande at the Ilande of fayne Iames to bye theym certeyne ſlaues to helpe them. But beinge deſtitute of mony, according to the custome of the marinērs, they profered them cloues for theyr ſlaues. The which thyngh when it came to the eares of the Portugale that was Capitayne of that Ilande, he caſt. xiii. of them in priſon. Wherby the refidue that remayned in the ſhippe (beinge nowe but. xvii. in number) were put in ſuch feare that they departed immediatly without refcuing theyr felowes, and fayled continually both by daye and by nyght by the coastes of Affrike, and came in fine to Spayne the. vi. day of September in the year. 1522. and arryued at the porte nere vnto Siule the. xvi. moneth after they departed from the Ilande of *Tidore*. Marinērs doubleſte more worthy to bee celebraue with eternal memorie then they whiche in owlde tyme were cauled *Argonauti* that fayled with Iason to win the golden fleſe in the region of *Cholchis* and the riuere of *Phasis* in the greate ſea of *Pontus*. And the ſhippe it ſelfe, more worthye to bee placed amounghe the ſtarres then that owlde Arg which departyng owt of Grecia, fayled to th[e]ende of that greate ſea. For this owe marueylous ſhippe, takynge her vyage from the ſtraightes of Gibilterra and faylyng by the greate Ocean towarde the South and pole Antartike, and turnyng frome thenſe to the Weste, folowed that courfe ſo farre that paſſyng vnder the greate circumference of the worlde, ſhee came into the Easte, and frome thenſe ageyne into the Weste, not by returnyng backewarde, but ſtyll faylyng forwarde, ſo compafyng abowt the baule of the world vnder the hole circumference of heauen vnytly ſhee were myraculouſly reforded to her natuue region of Spayne and house of Siule.



**C OF THE PRICES OF PRECIOVS STONES AND SPICES,
WITH THEYR WEIGHTES AND MEASVRES**

as they are accustomed to bee soulde bothe of the
Moores and the gentyles: And of the
places where they growe.

233

Oursmuch as in dyuers places of this historie, mention is made of precious stones, I haue thought good to declare sumwhat aswell of theyr prices as of the places of theyr generation, that wee may not vitterly bee ignorant of the thinges which we so grately esteeme and bye so deare.

Of the Rubie.



He Rubies growe in India: and are founde for the most parte in a ryer named Pegu. These are of the besfe kind and fineste, whiche they of the lande of Malabor caule Nunpuclo, and are well foulde if they bee faire and cleane without spottes. The Indians to knowe theyr finenesse, put them vpon their toonges, comptyng that to bee best that is couldeit and most harde. And to see theyr finenesse, they take them vp with a piece of waxe by the sharpest poynt: and lookyng ageynst the lyght, espie in them eueri fmaule spot or flake. They are also founde in certeyne diepe fosses or pittes which are made in mountaynes that are beyonde the faid ryuer. They are scoured and made cleane in the countrey of Pegu. Yet can they not square and polyshe them. But for this purpose sende them to dyuers other contreys, and especially to Paleacate, Narfinga, Calicut, and the region of Malabar, where are many cunnyng Lapidaries.

And to gyue yow intelligence of the value of these stones, ye shall vnderstande that this woerde Fanan, signifieth a weight sumwhat more then two of owre caratess: And. xi. Fanans and a quarter, is one Mitigal: And. vi. Mitigales and a halfe, make one vnce. This Fanan, is also a kynde of money which is in value, one ryale of syluer. And therefore after this accompte I say that

Eight fine rubies of the weyght of one
Fanans (which are in all, abowt two
caratess) are in value.

Foure Rubies that wey one fanan, are
worth

Two that wey one fanan

One that wey three quarters of one fanan

One that wey one fanan

One that wey one fanan and a quarter.

One that wey one fanan and a halfe

One that wey one fanan and three
quarters

One that wey two fanans.

One that wey two fanans and a quarter

One that wey two fanans and a halfe

		One that weyth two fanans and thre quarters	Fanan	cccl.
		Of three fanans	Fanan	cccc.
		Of three and a quarter	Fanan	D.
		Of three and a halfe	Fanan	D l.
		Of three and three quarters	Fanan	D c.
		Of three and three quarters and a halfe	Fanan	D cxxx.
		Of foure fanans	Fanan	D cix.
		Of foure and a quarter	Fanan	D cc.
		Of foure and a halfe	Fanan	D cccc.
		Of fyue fanans	Fanan	M.
		Of fyue and a halfe	Fanan	M cc.
		Of fyxe fanans, which are about. xii. caratess. Fanan M D, which make.		
		150. crownes of golde.		

One caratte is iii
graines

{*Which is one
crown of golde

And these are commonly the prices of perfecte Rubies. But suche as are not perfecte, and haue any spottes in them, or are not of good colore, are of lesse prise accordyng to the arbitrimint and estimation of the byer.

234

¶ Of the Rubies which growe in the Ilande of Zeilam.



N the Ilande of Zeilam, beinge in the seconde India, are founde many Rubies which the Indians name *Maneas*, the greatest parte wherof do not arriue to the perfection of the other aforesayde in colour, bycause they are redde as though they were wasshed, and of a fleshye colour. Yet are they very coulde and harde. The perfectest of them are greatly esteemed amoung the people of the Ilande, and refreded only for the kyng hym selfe if they bee of any great quantitie. When his jewelers fynde any hygge piece of this rocke of the besfe kynde, they put it in fyre for the space of certeyne houres. Which if it coomme owt of the fyre vncorrupte, it becommeth of the colore of a b. mynge cole, and was therfore cauled of the Greekes, Anthrax, which signifieth a burnyng cole. The same that the Greekes caule Anthrax, the Latines caule *Carbunculus*. These they greatly esteem. When the kyng of Narfinga can get any of them, he caufeth a fine hole to bee boored in the vndermost part of them to the myddest: And suffereth none of them to passe owt of his realme: especially if they haue byn tryed by the fayde profe. These are of greater value then the other of Pegu, if they bee in their naturall perfection and cleaneneffe.

Of these, one that weith a caratte
(whiche is halfe a fanan) is woorthe
in Calecut.

One of two carattes
Of three carattes.
Of three carattes and a halfe
Of foure carattes
Of foure carattes and a halfe
Of fyue carattes
Of fyue carattes and a halfe
Of syxe carattes

Fanan	*xxx.	Of fixe carattes and a halfe
Fanan	lxv.	Of feuen carattes
Fanan	cl.	Of feuen carattes and a halfe
Fanan	cc.	One of. viii. carattes that hath bynne wel proued in the fier, is woorthe
Fanan	ccc.	Of. viii. carattes and a halfe
Fanan	ccl.	One fuch of tenne carattes
Fanan	cccc.	One of. x. carattes and a halfe
Fanan	ccccl.	Of. xii. carattes
Fanan	Dxxx.	Of. xiii. carattes
		Of. xvi. carattes

Fanan	Dlx.
Fanan	Dcxx.
Fanan	Dlx.
Fanan	Dccc.
Fanan	Dcccc.
Fanan	Mccc.
Fanan	MDc.
Fanan	MM
Fanan	MMM
Fanan	6ooo.

*Which are iii.
crow[n]es of golde

¶ Of the kynde of Rubies cauled Spinelle.



Here is also founde an other kynde of Rubies which wee caule Spinelle and the Indians, Caropus. They growe in the selfe same countrey of Pegu where as are the fine Rubies: And are found in the mountaynes in the vpper crust or floure of the earth. These are not so fine nor of so good colour as are the trewe Rubies: But haue sumwhat the colour of a granate which we commonly caule a garnet. Yet of these suche as are parfecte in theyr colour, are of value halfe lesse then trewe Rubies.

¶ Of the Rubies cauled Balaffi.



Balaffi, are of the kyndes of Rubies, but are not so harde. Theyr colour is sumwhat lyke a rose, and sum are in maner whyte. They growe in Balaffia, whiche is a region within the firme lande aboue Pegu and Bengala: And are browght from thense by marchautes of the Moores to Calecut where they are wrought and polifched: And are sould of the same price that are Spinelle.

¶ Of the Diamundes of the owlde myne.



Hese Diamundes are founde in the fyrste India in a kyngdome of the Moores named Decan, from whence they are brought to other regions. There are also founde other Diamundes whiche are not so good, but sumewhat whyte, and are cauled Diamundes of the newe myne which is in the kyngedome of Narfinga. They of the owlde myne, are not polifhed in India, but in other places. There are made lykewyfe in India, other false Diamundes of Rubies, Topases, and whyte Saphires, whiche appere to bee fine: and are also founde in the Ilande of Zeilam. These stones differ in none other, sauyng that they haue loste theyr

natural colour. Of these, summe are founde that haue halfe the colore of Rubies, and other of Saphires: other also of the colore of a Topafe. Other haue all these coloures mengled togither. They bore a fine hole in them through the myddel, wherby they appere lyke the eyes of a catte. Of the whytelf, they make many smaule diamundes whiche can not bee knownen from the trewe, sauynge by touchinge of such as are skylfull in that practife. They are foulde by a poysse or weight which they caule Mangiar, which wayeth two Tarre, and two thyrdes, which amount to two thyrdes or thirde partes of one carat. For four Tarres, wey one fanan whiche is about two caratess.

Viii. Diamundes that wey one mangiar
(which is two third partes of a caratte)
are in value.

	Fanan	xxx.	which are three crownes of golde.
235 vi.	Diamundes that wey one mangiar	xl.	
	Foure that wey one mangiar	lx.	
	Two that wey one mangiar	lxxx.	
	One that weith one mangiar	C.	
	One of one mangiar and a quarter	clxv.	
	One of one mangiar and a halfe	clxxx.	
	Of one mangiar and three quarters	ccxx.	
	Of two mangiar	cccx.	

Of two mangiar and a quarter	Fanan	cclx.
Of two mangiar and a halfe	Fanan	ccclxxx.
Of two mangiar and three quarters	Fanan	420
ful perfect		cccc.
Of three mangiar of lyke perfection	Fanan	cccc.
Of three mangiar and a halfe	Fanan	ccccxxx.
Of foure mangiar	Fanan	Dl.
Of fyue mangiar	Fanan	Dcl.
Of fyxe mangiar	Fanan	Dccc.
Of feuen mangiar	Fanan	Mcc.
Of eyght mangiar	Fanan	Mcccc.

And thus they proceade, increasynge the price as they increase in weight.

¶ Of Saphires.

In the Ilande of Zeilam are founde the besse and moste trewe Saphires, beinge very harde and fine, and of the colore of azur. They are of price as foloweth.

One that weith one caratte is of value Fanan ii. which are about two marcelz of syluer.

One of the weight of two carattes

Fanan v.

Of three carattes

Fanan x.

Of foure carattes

Fanan xv.

Of fyue carattes

Fanan xviii.

Of fyxe carattes

Fanan xxviii. Of xiiii. carattes

Fanan Clx.

Of feuen carattes

Fanan xxxv. Of xv. carattes

Fanan Clxxx.

Of eyght carattes

Fanan l. Of xvi. carattes

Fanan CC.

Of nine carattes

Fanan lxv. Of xviii. carattes

Fanan CCl.

Of tenne carattes

Fanan l. One that weith a mitigal, which is. vi.

Of xi. carattes

Fanan lxv. fanans and a quarter that is about

Of xii. carattes

Fanan lxxv. xxiiii. carattes

Fanan CCCI.

Of xiii. carattes in all perfection of colore Fanan

Cxv.

Lykewyse in the Ilande of Zeilam, is founde an other forte of Saphires which they caule *Quinigelinam*. These are not so stonge, of darker colour and of much lesse value then are the other of the best kynde, wherof one is woorthe xiii. of these of equall poise. Also in the kyngedome of Narfinga, in a mountayne aboue Bacanor and Mangalor, is founde an other sort of Saphires more tender and of woorse colour, whiche they caule *Cinganolam*. These are sumwhat whyte and of smaule value: So that the most perfect of this kynde, weyng. xx. carattes, is not woorthe one ducate. Their colour is inclynynge sumwhat to yellowe. There is lykewyse founde an other kynde of Saphires vppon the sea coastes of the kyngedome of Calicut, in a place named Capucar. These the Indians caule *Carahatonilam*. They are of a darke asure colore not shynynge but in the cleare ayer. They are also tender and brickle, and of smaule estimation amonge the Indians. They seeme on the one syde lyke glasse.

¶ Of Topases.

The natural Topases, growe in the Ilande of Zeilam, and are named of the Indians *Purceragua*. It is a harde and fine stonye: and of equall estimation with the Rubie and the Saphire, bycause all these three are of one kynd. The perfecte colour of this, is yellowe lyke unto fine beaten golde. And if it bee perfect and cleane, whether it bee greate or lyttle, it is woorthe in Calicut as much fine gold as it weyeth. But if it bee not perfect, it is woorthe the weight of gold the fanan, which is lesse by the halfe. And if it bee in maner whyte, it is woorthe much lesse. And of these, are smaule diamundes counterfecte.

A marcell, is a
syluer coine of
Venice, of xi.
vnces. iii. d. with
fine, wherof ten
make an vn[c]e



236

¶ Of Turqueffes.

Vrqueffes are founde in Exer a place of Siech Ifmael. Theyr mine is a drye earth that is founde vpon a black stome, which the Moores take of in smaule pieces, and carye them to the Iland of Ormus, from whence they are brought to dyuers partes of the worlde by sea and by lande. The Indians caule them *Peroſe*. They are soft stomes, of smaule weight and not much coulde. And to knowe that they are good and trewe, in the day they shall appere of the verye colour of the Turqueffe: and in the nyght by the lyght, they shall appere greene. They that are not so perfect, do not so change their colour to the night. If theſe ſtones bee cleane and of fine colour, they haue vnderneath in the bottome, a blacke ſtone, vpon the which they growe. And if any lytle vayne ryſe vpon the fayde ſtone, it ſhalbe the better. And to knowe more certeynely that they are trewe Turqueffes, they put on the toppes of them a lytle quicke lime tempered with water after the maner of an oyntment. So that if the quicke lime appere coloured, they are iudged perfecte, and are of value as foloweth.

One that weith one caratte, is worth in
Malabar.

Of. viii. carattes

Fanan CC.

One of two carattes

Of. x. carattes

Fanan CCC.

Of fourre carattes

Of. xiij. carattes

Fanan CCCC.

Of. vi. carattes

Of. xiiij. carattes

Fanan Dl.

Of greater then theſe they make none accompte bycause they are lyghter pieces and of greater circuite. Theſe of the biggeſt forte the Moores carie into the kyngedome of Guzerath.

¶ Of Iacinthes.

Acinthes growe in the Ilande of Zeilam. They are tender ſtones and yellowe. They are beſt that are of diepeſte colour. The greateſt part of theſe, haue in them certeine pimpls or burbuls, whiche diminifhe theiſr fayreneſſe. And they that are in theiſr perfeſtion cleane from thiſ deſormitiſ, are neuertheleſſe of smaule value. For in Calicut where they are polyfliſhed, they that wey one fanan are woorth no more then halfe a fanan. And they of xviii. fanans, are not worth.xvi. fanans.

There are alſo founde other ſtones lyke vnto cattes eyes, as Chriſolites, and Amethiſtes, whiche they doo not muche eſteeme bycause they are of smaule value, as alſo the ſtones cauled *Giaſonze*.

¶ Of Smaragdes or Emeraldes.

Maraſdes growe in the countrey of Babilon, where the Indians caule the ſea *Diguan*. They grow alſo in other partes of India. They are ſtones of fayre greene colour, and are lyght and tender. Of theſe ſtones, many are conterfecte. But lookeyng on them curiouly towarde the lyght, the conterfectes ſhewe certeyne burbuls, as dooth glaſſe. But in the trewe, there is no ſuch feene. But rather there appeareth to the eye a certeyne verdour ſhyngne lyke the beames of the ſoonne. And beinge rubbed vpon the touche ſtone, they leauē the coloure of copper. And the Smaragde of thiſ forte is the beſt and moſt trewe: And is in value in Calicut, as muche as a diamunde and ſumwhat more: And thiſ not by weyght, but by greateſteneſſe, bycause the diamunde quantitie for quantitie, is of greater weyght then the Smaragde. Ther is lykewyſe founde an other kynde of Smaragdes, whiche are greene ſtones, but not ſo much eſteemed. Neuertheleſſe, the Indians reſerue theſe to fet them forth with other preciuſ ſtones. They leauē not any greene coloure vpon the touche.

OF DYVERS KYNDES OF SPICES, WHERE THEY GROW,
WHAT THEY ARE WOORTH IN CALICUT, AND WHITHER
THEY ARE CARIED FROM THENSE.

C Of Pepper.

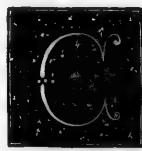


Yrste in all the kyngedom of Malabor and Calicut pepper groweth: and is fould in Calicut by euery. CC. [two hundred] Bahars, fine, for. CCxxx. [two hundred and thirty] fanans, euery fanan (as I haue sayde) beinge in value, one ryll of plate of Spayne: which is as muche as one marcell of syluer in Venice. Bahar, weith fourte cantares of the owld weight of Portugale, by the whiche they sell all spices in Lisbona. Cantar, is in Venece. Cxii. [one hundred and twelve] pounds weight of the grofe pounds (beinge. xviii. vnces) and of the subtile pounds. C. lxxviii. [one hundred and feuenty-eight] So that the sayde. 712. pounds of Venese subtile, wyl cost abowt. xx. frenche crownes of golde: which amount to abowt two *Marchetti* (whiche make one peny) the pounds. They pay also to the kyng of Calicut for custome. xii. fanans euery Bahar by the lode. They that bye them, are accustomed to bryngem them to Cambia, Persia, Aden, and Mecha, and from thense to Alcayre and Alexandria. Nowe they pay custome to the kyng of Portugale after the rate of. 656z. Maruedies the Bahar, whiche are. 193. fanans. Maruedies are Spanysh coynes wherof vi. go to a peny. This doo they partly bycause there arryuth no more so greate diuersitie of marchantes to bye them, and partly by the agreement which the sayde kyng of Portugale made with thosse kynges, and the Moores, and marchauntes of the countrey of Malabar.

237

Much pepper groweth lykewyfe in the Ilande of Sumatra nere vnto Malaca, which is fayrer and bygger then that of Malabar, but not so good and stronge. This is brought from Bengala to China, and summe parte to Mecha, priuileie and by stelth, vnewares to the Portugales whiche wolde not otherwyse suffer them to passe. It is woorth in Sumatra, from. iii. C. [four hundred] vnto. vii. C. [seuen hundred] marauedis the cantar of Portugale, of the newe weight. And frome the newe to the owld weight in Portugale, the difference is, twoo vnces in the pounds weight. For the owld pounds confisteth of. xiiii. vnces, and the newe pounds of. xvi. vnces.

C Of Cloues.



Loues growe in the Ilandes of Molucca, from whence they are brought to Malacha, and then to Calicut and the countrey of Malabar. They are woorth in Calicut euery bahar (which is. 712. pounds of the subtile pound of Venese) from. 500. to. 600. fanans (which are abowte fyftie frenche crownes,) which are in value abowte. xii. marchetti the pounds weight. And beinge cleane from falkes and huskes are in value 700 fanans. To carry them from thense into other regions, they paye for pasportre. xviii. fanans the bahar, which is woorth in Malaca from. x. to. xiii. ducades accordyng to the rate and custome of the marchauntes.

C Of Cinamome.



Inamome of the best sort, groweth in the Ilande of Zeilam: and in the countrey of Malabar, growethe the woort. That of the beste kynde, is of smaule price in Zeilam. But in Calicut (if it bee choife and freshe), it is woorth CCC. [three hundred] fanans the bahar, whiche are abowte fife marchetti the pounds.

Mirabolanes in conseru: of fuger, the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	xvi. to. xxv
Casla, frefhe and good, the farazuola.	Fanan.	one and a halfe
Redde Sanders, the farazuola	Fanan.	v. to. vi.
Whyte Sanders and citrine, whiche growe in the Ilande of Timor, the farazuola	Fanan.	xl. to. lx
Spikenarde, frefhe and good, the faraz[uola].	Fanan.	xxx. to. xl.
Nutte megges, whiche coome frome the Ilande of Bandan where the bahar is woorthe from viii. to. x. fanans, (which importe. vi. pounds weight to the marchetto) are woorthe in Calicut, the faraz[uola].	Fanan	x. to. xii.
Mace which is brought from the Ilande of Bandan where the Bahar is woorthe fistie fanans (which import abowt one marchetto the pounde) are woorthe in Calicut the farazuola.	Fanan	xxv. to. xxx.
Turbithes, are woorthe the farazuola	Fanan	xiii.
Woorme feede of the best kynde, cauled Semensima, is woorthe the farazuola.	Fanan	xv.
Zerumba, the farazuola	Fanan	ii.
Zedoaria, the farazuola	Fanan	i.
Gumme Serapine, the farazuola	Fanan	xx.
Aloe cicotrine, the farazuola	Fanan	xviii.
Cardamome in graynes, the farazuola	Fanan	xx.
Reubarbe growth abundantly in the countrey of Malabar: And that which commeth from China by Malacha, is worth the farazuola	Fanan	xl. to. l.
Mirabolani emblici, the farazuola	Fanan	ii.
Mirabolani belirici, the farazuola	Fanan	one and a halfe.
Mirabolani citrini and chebuli, which are al of one sort.	Fa[nan]	ii.
Mirabolani Indi, which are of the same citrine trees	Fa[nan]	iii.
Tutia, the farazuola	Fanan	xxx.
Cububes which growe in the Ilande of Iaua or Giaua, are there of smaule price, and ould by measure without weight.	Fanan.	cclxxx. to. ccxxx
Opium which is brought from the citie of Aden where it is made, is woorthe in Calicut the faraz[uola].	Fanan	cc. to. ccl.
Opium of an other sort which is made in Cambaia is woorthe the farazuola,		

Seedes that kyll
lyse.

¶ Of the weyghtes of Portugale and India: And howe they agree.



He pound of the owld weight, conteyneth. xiiii. vnces. The pound of the newe weight con-
teyneth. xvi. vnces. viii. cantares of the owld weight, make. vii. of the newe. And every
newe cantare, is of. C. xxviii. [one hundred and twenty-eight] pounds after. xvi. vnces to
the pounde

Euery owlde cantare, conteyneth three quarters and a halfe of the newe cantar: And is
of. C. xxviii. [one hundred and twenty-eight] pounds, after. xiiii. vnces the pounde.

One farazuola, is. xxii. pounds of. xiiii. vnces, and vi. vnces more, with two fiftie partes.

Twentie farazuoles, are one Bahar.

One bahar is. iiiii. cantares of the owld weight of Portugale. All the Spices and drugges, and all suche
other thinges as coome from India, are sould in Portugale by the owld weight and all the reste by the newe
weyght.

¶ Hereby may we well consider that as we ought to reioyse and gyue god thankes
for the abundance of al these thynges which he caufeth the earth so plentifuly to bryng
foorth to owe vse, so may we lament th[e]abuse of men whose couetousnesse caufeth
great dearth and scarsenesse in the myddeft of abundance: herein no lesse offendyng the
lawe of nature then doo such as by wychcrafte intermingle poyson with thynges created
for the health of man, or by inchaunment corrupt the seedes in the ground: ye rather as
the vnnatural mother who destroyeth the chylde whom she hath longe nuryshed.

[TWO NOTES ADDED BY EDEN, APPARENTLY TO FILL UP THE LEAF.]

¶ Of the Doones of the Ilande of Madera.

Adamustus wryteth, that before the Portugales came to this Ilande, it was ouergrown with trees and vnhabited. Yet were there many beastes, and great plentie of dooues which were vitterly without feare of men bycause they had never feene any men before, nor yet were accustomed to bee put in feare. In so much that they stode styl whyle snares were put abowte their neckes with longe rods and poles. The which thynge he sayth he hath also feene in other Ilandes. There are many ryche men in this Ilande, and great abundance of fleshe, bycause the hole Ilande is in maner one gardeyne.

¶ Of the Ilande of saynt Thomas under the Equinoctiall line

He chieffest occupacion and liuyng of th[e]jhabitauntes of this Ilande, is the makynge of fuder, which they sell yearly to the shypes that coomme for it owt of Spayne and Portugal laden with buttes of meale and floure, also wyne, oyle, cheese, lether, twoordes, cuppes of glasse, beades, certeyne scaruels of the fine whyte earthe cauled Porcellana, of the which are made the earthen dysfhes of the woorkes of Maiolica. And if it were not that such vytayles and prouissons were brought them owt of Spaine and Portugale, the whyte marchauntes which dwell in that Ilande (perteynyng to the dominion of the kinge of Portugale) shulde not bee able to lyue there, forasmuch as they are not accustomed to eate such meates as doo the Ethiopians or Negros. And therfore the Portugales whiche inhabite this Ilande, haue certeyne blacke flauers of Guinea, Benin, and Manicongo, which they set to tyll and laboure the grounde and make fuder. Amonge these whyte inhabitauntes, there are many ryche men which haue 150. or 200. and sum. 300. blacke flauers of men and women to tyll the grounde and doo other laborious woorkes. This Ilande was discouered foure score yeares fence by the nauigations of the Portugales and was vnknownen to the owlde wryters. It lyeth in the greate goulfe of Affrike in the 30. degree of longitude from the West to the East, and is in maner rounde. It is of largenesse from side to syde. ix. Italian myles, (that is to say) one degree. The horizontal line of the Iland, passeth by the two poles, Artike and Antartyke: and hath euer the day equall with the nyght without any sensible difference, whether the son bee in Cancer or in Capricorne. The starre of the pole Artike, is there inuisible: But the wardens are feene sumwhat to moue about: And the starres cauled the Crofse, are feene very hyghe. Of this Ilande with the other landes and Ilandes lyinge betwene Portugale and the same, a certeyne pylotte of Portugale hath wrytten a goodly vyage to Conte Rimondo.



LEAF.]

THE DEBATE AND STRYFE
BETWENE THE SPANYARDES AND PORTUGALES,

*for the diuision of the Indies and the trade of Spices: and
also for the Islands of Molucca, which sum caule
Malucas. Wrytten in the Spanyshe toonge by
FRANCISCO LOPEZ DE GOMARA.*



He[e]mperours maestie was verye gladde that the Malucas and Islands of the spicerie were discouered: and that he myght passe vnto them through his owne countreys without any preiudice or hurte to the Portugales: And bycause also that Almanzor, Lutz, and Corala which were the lordes of the spicerie, shewed them selues to bee his frendes and became tributaries to hym. He also gaue certeyne gystes and rewardes to Iohn Sebastian for his great paynes and good seruice, forasmuch as he craued a rewarde for the good newes that the Ilandes of the Malucas and other Ilandes rycher and greater then they, were found to bee in his part of those countreys which perteyned vnto hym accordyng to the popes bull. And hereby it came to passe that there was great contention and strife betwene the Spanyardes and the Portugales abowte the spicerie and the diuision of the Indies by reaon of the returne of Iohn Sebastian and th[e]information whiche he gaue therof. Who also affirmed that the Portugales had never any enterauance before that tyme

Iohn Sebastian.

The cause of
contencion.The trade of spice
perteyneth to
Th[e]emperoure.Iohn kynge
of
Portugale.The trade of
Spices.The contiouerse
determined by
Cosmographers
and Pylots.

into thosse Ilandes. Here vpon, the counsayle for the Indies, aduertised Th[e]emperoure to maynteine his flete for thosse partes, and to take the trade of splices into his owne hand, forasmuch as it was his owne of diewtie, awell for that thosse Ilandes fell on his parte, as also that he had nowe founde paſſage and waye through his west Indies into thosse regions. And finally to confyder that he shulde thereby obteyne and gette to him selfe greate reuenues besyde th[e]inrychynge of his subiectes and realmes, and that with snaule coaste and charge. Th[e]emperoure beinge thus aduertised of the truth, tooke it for good counsayle, and commannded all thynges hereunto apperteynyng to bee furnyſhed accordyngely. In this meane tyme, when kynge Iohn of Portugal had knowleage what th[e]emperour determinyd to doo, and the speedy haſt his counsayle made for the performance herof, and of the commyng home of Iohn Sebastian of Cane, with th[e]information he made, what of stoutnesſe of mynde and what for greefe, was puffed vp with anger as were also the reste of the Portugales, flormyng as though they wolde haue plucked downe the ſkye with their handes, not a lyttle fearyng leaſte that they ſhulde loſe the trade of splices, if the Spanyardes ſhulde once put in theiſr foote. Whervpon the kynge immediatly made ſupplication to Th[e]emperoure, not to ſet forwarde any ſhyppes vntyll it were determined to whether of theym thosse Ilandes ſhulde belonge: And that he wolde not ſo muche endomage hym as to caufe him to lieſe the trade of splices which was ſo commodious and profitabile to hym. And finally to auoyde th[e]occasion of murther and bludfhed whiche were lyke to enſue thereof, yf the Spanyardes and Portugales ſhyppes ſhulde meeſe togither. Th[e]emperoure althoughe he knewe that all this was but to make delays and prolongyng of tyme, yet was he gladie to haue it tryed by iuſtice for the better iuſtification of his caufe and ryght. In fine, both parties were agreed to appoynt lerned men, Cosmographers and Pylots which ſhulde determine the contiouerſe betwene them: promyngē on bothe parties to abyde and ſtande to the ſentence and determination made by thosse perſons appoynted and fworne to iudge indifferently.

¶ The reparticion and diuision of the Indies and newe worlde betwene
the Spanyardes and the Portugales.



The arbitrys on
the Emp[er]ours
syde.

241

Sebastian Cabote.

Instruments of
Cosmographie.
The Ilandes of
Malucas.

The arbitrys on
the Portugales
syde.

The place where
they mette.

The [e]order of
theyr proces.

The Portugales.
Contention for
drawyng the line
of the diuision.

Howe the
Portugales were
deceaued.

The Spanyardes
allegations.
Samatra.
Malacha.
China.
Magallanes.

Buena Vista.

The Ilandes of
Cabo Verde.

242

His matter concernyng the trade of splices and the newe worlde of the Indies, by reason of the greate ryches therof was of greate importaunce and very difficultie to bee limittid and drawnen foorth by lines. By reasoun wherof, it was necessarie and conuenient to seeke wyfe and woorthypful men expert in nauigations, in Cofnographicie, and the mathematicall sciencies. Th[e]emp[er]our for his syde, chose and named for iudges of the possession, the licentiate Acuna, one of the kynges confayle. Also the licentiate Barrientos of the counfayle of the orders: The licentiate Petro Manuel auditour of the courte of the Chauncerie in Valladolit. For judges of the propertie, he chose Don Fernando Colono the soonne of Christopher Colonus: Alfo doctor Sancho Salaya, Peter Ruiz of Villegas, fryre Thomas Duran, Simon of Alcazaaua, and Iohn Sebastian of Cano. His aduocate and atturney, he made the licentiate Iohn Rodriguez of Pifa: and for his sycfal doctor Ribera, and his secretarie, Barthalamo Ruiz of Castaneda. He also apoynted that Sebastian Cabote, Steuen Gomes, Nunnius Garcia, Diego Rilero, being al expert pilots and cunning in making cardes for the sea, shuld be present, and bryngge foorth theyr globes and mappes with other instrumentes necessarie to declare the situation of the Ilandes of the Malucas abowt the which was al the contention and stryfe. But order was taken that they shulde shewe theyr myndes on neyther syde, nor enter into the coompany of the other but when they were cauled. Al these and diuers other, wente toguther to a towne cauled Badaioz: and as many Portugales came to Elbes, or rather more. For they broughte with them two fiscals and two aduocates. The principall of theym, was the licentiate Antonie de Afseuedo, Diego Lopes of Sequeyra the clarke of the weightes and receptes, who had before byn gouernour in India. Also Peralfonso of Melo, clerke: Simon of Tauira, with dyuers other whose names I knowe not. Before they mette toguther, the one parte remaynyng at Badaioz and the other in Elbes, there was much a doo amone them beefore they couldle agree vppon the place where they shulde mete and who shuld speke fyrste. For the Portugales doo greatly weighe suche circumstaunes. At the last, they concluded to meeete toguther at Caya a lyttle ryuer which diuideth Caſtile from Portugale, standyng in the mydye way betwene Badaioz and Elbes. And when they were assembled toguther one day at Badaioz and an other daye at Elbes and saluted the one the other, bothe parties were sworne that they shulde proceade and speake accordyng to truthe, iuficie, and equitie. The Portugales refusid Simon de Alcazaaua because he was a Portugale: and fryer Thomas Duran bycause he had sumetyme byn preacher to theyr kyng: So that Simon was by consent put owte of the coompany, in whose roome was placed master Antonie of Alcaraz. Yet fell they not to reaſonyng the matter vntylly the fryer was put owt. They were manye dayes in beholdynge globes, mappes, and cardes of the sea, and hearynge what myght bee fayde, both fydes alleagynge for the right which they pretended. But the Portugales standyng in vayne contention, fayde very angrily the Ilandes of Malucas wheruppon theyr meetyng and reaſonyng was at that preſente, fell of theyr parte and was of theyr conquest. And that they both had byn there, and had them in theyr possession before Iohn Sebastian had euer feene them. Lykewyfe that the line shulde bee drawnen from the Ilande of Bonauifla, or the Iland cauled de la Sal, which are the most Easterly Ilandes from Cabouerde, and not from the Ilandes of Santanton or saynt Antonie, which lyeth towarde the West, and are. lxxxv. leagues the one from the other. Al this was no more but to contend: and the other of the Malucas, is vntrew. But they that haue a nawghtie matter must set it foorth with woordes and brabelynge. Herc they founde howe greatly they were deceaued in that they demaudned that the line shulde bee drawnen three hundredth. lxx. leagues more to the West from the Ilandes of Cabouerde (as appeareth hereafter) and not one hundredth accordingyng to th[e] assignemente of the popes bul. The Spanyardes on the contrary parte affirmed and made demonstration, that not only the Ilandes of Burney, Gilolo, Zubut, and Tidore, with the other Ilandes of the Malucas. But awell Samatra, Malacha, and a great parte of China, shuld belonqe to the Caſtilians: and that those countreys fell on theyr syde and on the parte of theyr conquest: Also that Magallanes and Iohn Sebastian were the fyrste Christian men that founde them and obteyned them for Th[e]emperour, as the letters and prefentes of Almanzor doo testifie. And although the Portugales had byn there fyrste, yet wente they thyther after the donatione of the pope: neyther got they any ryght or iuste tylte thereby. For althowgh they shulde drawe the line by Buena Vista, what inconuenience shulde folowe thereof, sith awell by the one way as the other, the Ilandes of the Malucas must perteyne to the Caſtilians: yea and moreouer, the Ilandes of Cabo verde shulde also perteyne to the Caſtilians, forfomuch as drawyng the line by Buena Vista, the Ilandes of the Malucas doo remayne within the line on the Emperours syde. They continued in theſe controueresies for the ſpace of two moonethes without anye reſolution or ende

made. For the Portugales prolonged and put of the matter, flying from the sentence with cauillations and could reacons to th[e]ende that they myght dissolute that assemble without any conclusion or determination: for to it stode them vpon. The Caſtilians which were the Judges of the propertie, drewe a line in the great globe three hundredth and. lxx. [feuenty] leagues from faynt Antonies Ilande, lyng by Weste Cabo Verde accordyng to the intreatie and determination whiche was agreed vpon betwene the Catholike princes and the kyng of Portugale. These judges gaue sentence vpon this matter, caulynge the contrary parte before them vpon the bridge of Caya in the yeare. 1524. The Portugales coulde neyther disturbe or deferre the sentence, nor yet wolde they alowe it to bee iust and accordyng to ryght: Sayinge that there was not sufficient proceſſe made that they shulde pasſe to the gynginge of sentence. And so departed threatening to fley the Caſtilians as many as they shulde fynde in the Ilandes of the Malucas. For they knewe ryght well that heyr contreymen the Portugales had alredy taken the fypphe cauled the Trinitie and had also taken the Caſtilians in Tidore. Then also departed owe men, takynge theyr iorney to the courte gyuyng vp to Th[e]emperour all theyr wrytynges and declaration what they had doone. And accordyng to this declaration must bee ſigned and marked all globes and mappes which good Cofmographers and maſters doo make. The line alſo of the reparticion and laſt diuiſion of the newe world of the Indies, ought to pasſe (lyttle more or leſſe) by the poynetes of Humos and Buen Abrigo, as I haue fayne in an other place. And thus ſhall it appear evidentely that the Ilandes of Spices, and alſo the greate Ilande of Zamotra, do perteyne to Caſtile. But the lande of Bratſile perteyneth to the kyng of Portugale where the cape of faynt Auguftine is, beinge. viii. degrees beneth the Equinoctiall. This lande reacheth from the poynete of Humos to the poynete of Buen Abrigo: and is in lengthe North and South. viii. hundredth leagues. Beinge alſo ſum way two hundredth leagues Eaſt and West.

And hereafter theſe ſerious matters, wee wyll rehearſe one mery thynge, which was this. It ſo chaunced that as Frances de Melo, Diego Lopes de Sequeyra, and other of thoſe Portugales of this aſſembly, walked by the ryuer fyde of Guadiana, a lyttle boy who ſtode keepynge his mothers clothes which he had waſhed, demaunded of theym whether they were thoſe men that parted the world with Th[e]emperour. And as they anſwered, yea: he tooke vp his fherf and ſhewed them his bare arfe, ſayinge: Coomme and drwe yowre line here through the mydſet. Which ſayinge was afterwarde in every mans mouth and laughed at in the towne of Badaioz: yea even amonſte the commissioners them ſelues, of whom ſum were angry, and ſumme maruayled at the ſayinge of the chylde.

¶ The caufe and autoritie wherby they diuided the Indies.



He Caſtilians and Portugales had longe debated and reaſoned abouſt the golde myne of Guinea which was found in the yeare of owe lord 1471, in the tyme of the reigne of Don Alonso Kyng of Portugale the firſte of that name. This was a matter of greate importaunce. For the negros or blacke Moores, for thynges of no value, gaue golde by hole handeful whyche was at that tyme when the fayne Kyng of Portugale pretended title and clayme to the kingedome of Caſtile in the right of his wyfe Queene John (cauled the excellent) ageynſte the Catholike princes Isabell and Don Fernando whose it was in deede. But that ſtryfe was ended as ſone as Don Fernando had vanquifhēd Don Alonso at a place cauled Temulos not farre from Toro, which place* Don Fernando chose rather to make warre ageinſt the Moores of Granada, then to bye and ſell with the blacke Moores of Guinea. And thus the Portugales remained with the conqueſt of Affryke from the ſtreightes forwarde: whiche began where the infante of Portugale Don Henrique (fonne to kyng Iohn the bastarde and master of Auis) dyd begynne to enlarge it. When pope Alexander the. vi. (beinge a valentimian borne) had knowleage hereof, he mynded to gyue the Indies to the kings of Caſtile withoutt any preuidice to the Portugales who had conquered the ſea coaſtes of Affryke. These Indies, the pope gaue of his owne mynde withoute the motion of anye other, with this burden and charge that they shulde conuert the Idolatours to the faythe of Chryſte: And comauandēd a line or meridian to bee drawn Northe and ſouth from one hundredth leagues Westwarde beyond one of the Ilandes of Cabo Verde towarde the Weſte, becauſe the Spaniardes shulde not meddle in Affryke perteynyng to the conqueſt of the Portugales, to th[e]auoydye of all ſtryfe betwene them. Kyng Iohn of Portugale, the ſeconde of that name, was greatly offendēd when he redde the bull and donation of the pope, althouſh his owne ambafadors had made the ſelfe fame request vnto his holynesse. He alſo found hym ſelue agreed with the Catholyke princes Isabell and Fernando, that they had ſhortened the course of the landes he had diſcouered, depryng hym of the rycheſſe which belonged to hym. And therfore refued to ſaue to the popes bull in thiſe caſe: defyryng the Catholyke princes Isabell and Fernando to graunt him three hundredth leagues more to the Weſte, beſyld the one hundredth which they had graunted before: and therwith ſent his fypphes to kepe the coaſtes of Affryke. The princes Catholyke were content to ſatifice his

EORH.

* There is a hiatus here.—E. A.

V

273

The Portugales cauillations.

The line of diuiſion.

The ſentence.

The Portugales threaten deth to the Caſtilians.

The line of the laſt diuiſion.

The great Iland of Samotra.
The lande of Bratſile, perteyneth to the Portugales.

A mery tale.

The golde myne of Guinea.
Alonso kyng of Portugale.

Gold for thynges of ſmaul value.
Contention for the kyngdomme of Caſtile.
Warre agenſt the Moores of Granada.

The conqueſtes of the Portugales in Afrike.

Pope Alexander.

243

The Pope maketh the diuiſion.

The kyng of Portugale refieth to ſtand to the Popes bull.

The agreement of
the last diuisioun

Wherein the
Portugales were
deceaued.

Sebastian Cabote.

The emperorour
and the kinge of
Portugale ioynd
in alliance by
marriage.

The Portugales
robbe the
Castilians

The coronation of
The[emperour].

244
The gaginge of the
lands of Malucas,
Zamatra and
Malaca.

mynde and to please hym accordyng to theyr gentle nature and for the aliance that was betwene theym: And in fine, with the consent and agreement of the pope, graunted twoo hundredth. lxx. [feuenty] leagues more then the bull made mention of: At Tordefillas the vii. day of Iune, in the yeare of owr lord 1494. And wheras owr kynge thought that they shulde haue lost grounde in grauntyng so many leagues that way, they woonne by that meanes the Ilandes of the Malucas with many other ryche Ilandes. The kynge of Portugale alfo, herein deceaued him selfe or was deceaued of his whom he put in trust, hauyng no certeyne knowleage of the sitution of the Ilandes of the riche Spicery in demaudyng that which the kynge dyd demaunde. For it hadde byn better for hym to haue requested the three hundredth and. lxx. leagues rather Eastwarde from the Ilandes of Cabo Verde then towarde the west. And yet for all that, I doubt whether the Malucas shulde haue faulen within his conquest accordyng to the ordinarie accoumpte and dimension which the pylotes and Cosmographers doo make. And after this maner they diuided the Indies betwene them by th[e]autoritie of the pope for the auoydyng of further stryf and contention.

**¶ Howe and by what occasion Th[e]emperoure layde the Ilandes of
the Malucas to pledge to the kynge of Portugale.**



Hen the kynge of Portugale Don Iuan the thyrdre of that name, had knowleage that the Cofmographers and pylotes of Castile hadde drawn the line from the place before named, and that he could not denye the truth, fearing alfo therby to liefe the trade of Spices, made sute and request to Th[e]emperoure that he shulde not send furth Loaifs nor Sebastian Cabote to the Malucas, and that the Castilians shulde not attempte the trade of splices nor see such euyls and miseries as his capitaynes had shewed in those Ilandes to them that aduentured that viage with Magalanies. Which thyng he greatly couered, although he payde all the charges of those two fleetes, and made other great bargens. In the meane tyme, Th[e]emperoure maried the Lady Isabell syster to kyng Iohn: and kyng Iohn maried the lady Catharine syster to Th[e]emperour: whereby this matter waxed coulde althoughe the kyng ceased not to speake hereof, euer mouyng the particion. Th[e]emperour by the meanes of a certeine Biscaine that was with Magalanies in the governours shyppe, had knowleage what the Portugales had doone to the Castilians in the Iland of Tidore, wherof he took great displeasure, and brought the sayde maryner face to face before th[e]ambassadours of Portugale, who denyed all that he sayde, one of them beinge the chiefe capitayne and governour of India when the Portugales tooke the Castilians in Tidore and robbed them of theyr Cloues and Cinamome and such other thynges as they had in the shyppe named the Trinitie. But as the kyng of Portugales trade was greate, and oware necessitie greater, in the meane tyme Th[e]emperoure (who was nowe goinge into Italie to bee crowned in the yeare. 1520) gagged the Malucas and the spicerie to the kyng of Portugale for three hundredth and fiftie thousande ducades without any tyme determinyd otherwyfe then the controuerſie was defined vppon the brydge of the ryuer of Caya: for the which thyng, kyng Iohn punyshed the licentiate Azeuedo bycause he payde the money without declaration of the time. The couenaunt of the pledge was blyndely made and greatly ageynt the myndes of the Caſtilians, as men that wel vnderſtoode the profit, commoditie, and rycheſſe of that trade: Affirmyng that the trade of splices myght haue byn rented for one yeare or for two, for fyxe tymes as much as the kyng ſauē for it. Peter Ruiz of Villegas who was twyſe cauled to the bargeyne, as once at Granada and an other tym at Madrid, fayde that it had byn muſche better to haue pledged Eſtremadura or Serena, or other greater landes and cities, rather then the Malucas, Zamatra, or Malaca, or other riche landes and ryuers in the Easte not yet well knownen: for aſfmuche as it maye ſo chaunce, that eyther by continuauance of tyme, or alliance, the pledge myght bee forgotten as though it per̄teyned to the ryght of Portugale. In fine, Th[e]emperour conſidered not the iewel that he pledged, nor the kyng what he receaued. Th[e]emperour was often tymes counſayled to releafe the pledge of those Ilandes in conſideration of the great vantage he myght haue therby in fewe years. Furthermore, in the yeare. 1548. the procuratoures of Cortes being in Valladolid, made peticon to Th[e]emperour to furrender the spicerie to the kyngedome of Caſtile for. vi. yeares, and that they wold repay to the kyng of Portugale his. 350. thouſand crownes, and after those yeares, reſtore the trade to the crowne, that his maieſtie myght inioye the fame as was agreed at the begynnynge. But Th[e]emperour beinge then in Flaunders, ſente woerde to the counſayle that they ſhulde not aſtent to Cortes his requel, nor ſpeakē any more hereof. Wherat, ſum marueyled, other were fory, and all held theyr peace.

theym: And in
more then the
eras owr kynges
by that meanes
caued him selfe
Ilandes of the
or hym to haue
e then towarde
est accordyng
And after this
of further stryf

ides of

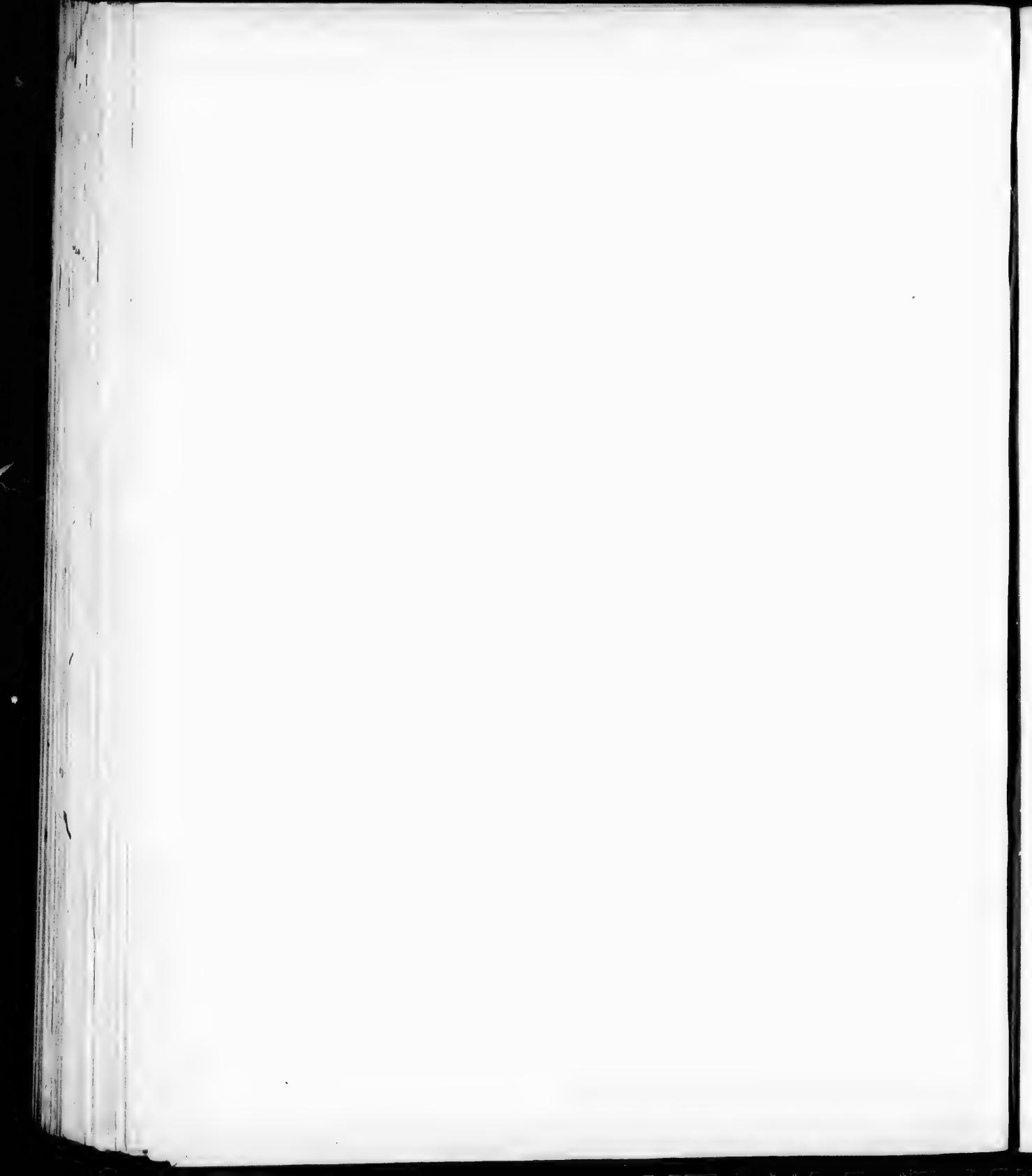
hat the Cofmo-
amed, and that
made fute and
Caboto to the
fee such euyls
duentured that
all the charges
ryed the Lady
: whereby this
on. Th[e]em-
had knowleage
lifpleasure, and
he fayde, one
lians in Tidore
ope named the
ne tyme Th[e]-
alucas and the
he determinyd
thyng, kynge
The couenant
vnderfloode the
rented for one
s twyse cauled
better to haue
ra, or Malaca,
e fo chaunce,
it perteyned
nor the kyng
oile Ilandes in
e yeare. 1548.
er the spicerie
his. 350. thou-
ye the fame as
the counfayle
rueyld, other

[Amerigo Vespucci,

and

Andreas de Corsali.

*Of the Pole Antarctic, and the stars
about the same.]*



¶ OF THE POLE ANTARTIKE AND THE
STARRES ABOWT THE SAME AND OF THE
QUALITIE OF THE REGIONS AND DISPOSITION OF
the Elementes abowt the Equinoctiall line.

Also certeyne secreates touchyng
the arte of faylynge.



Mericus Vesputius in the Summarie of his vyages,
wryteth in this maner as foloweth.

Departyng from Lisbone (commonly cauled Lusheburne) the. viii. day of May, in the yeare. 1501. we fayled syrft to the Ilandes of Canarie and from thense to Capouerde which the Ethiopians or blacke Moores caule *Bifineghe*, beinge. xiii. degrees on this syde the Equinoctiall line. From whence directyng owre course towarde the South pole by the Southwest, we fawe no more land for the space of three moonethes and three dayes. Of whiche tyme duryng. xl. [forty] dayes, we had cruell fortune. In so muche that for that space, the heauen in maner never ceased thundersyng, roryng, and lyghtenyng with terrible noyse, and searefull fyghtes of fyery exhalations flyinge abowt in the ayer, and in maner continuall showers of rayne with darke clowdes couryng the heauen in such forte that aswell in the day as in the nyght we coulde see none

otherwyse but as when the moone giueth no lyght by reaon of thicke and darke clouds. The fea was in lyke case vnquieted with surgies and monstres. After these greuous and cruel days, it plesed god to haue compassion on owr liues. For wee suddenly espied land wherby we recouered owr spirates and strength. This land which wee founde, is from Capo Verde. 700. leagues, although I suppose that we fayled more then. 800. by reaon of the cruel tempest and ignorauance of the Pylottes and mariners whereby wee were lyke to haue byn cast away. For wee were in fuche daungerous places wanderyng in vnknowen coastes, that if I had not byn skyfull in the science of Cosmographie we had fulerly periyshed, forasmuch as there was not one pylot that knewe where wee were by the space of fiftie leagues. In so much that if I had not in tyme prouyded for the safegarde of myne owne lyfe and them that were with me, with my quadrant and Astrolabie instrumentes of Astronomie, wee had stily wandered lyke blynde men. But when in fine I had perfuaded the pylots by demonstrations perteynyng to that arte, they gaue me great honour and confessed that the ordinarie pilotes and mariners ignorant in Cosmographi, are not to bee compared to men of speculatiue knowleage. etc.

Wee fayled by the coaste of the fayde lande. 600. leagues And went oftentimes alande where wee were frenedly and honorably interteyned of th[e]inhabitauntes : In so much that consideryng theyr innocent nature, we sumtymes remayned with them. xv. or. xx. dayes. This firme lande begynneth beyonde the Equinoctiall line. viii. degrees towarde the pole Antartike. Wee fayled so farre by the fayde coaste that wee passed the wynter Troyke towarde the pole Antartike by xvii. degrees and a halfe, where we had the Horizontal line eleuate fiftie degrees. Such thynghes as I fave there, are not yet knownen to men of owe tyme : as the people, theyr customes and maners, the fertilitie of the lande, the goodnes of the ayer, the fauourable influence of heauen and the planettes, and especially the order of the starres of the eyght sphere in the inferioure hemispherie or lower halfe circle of heauen towarde and abowt the South pole, wherof neyther the owld or newe wryters haue made any mention to this daye.

Cabouerde.
Bifernegha.

A tempest.

The ignorance of
Pylots and
mariners.
The use of
Cosmographie.
The use of the
quadrant and
Astrolabie.

245

The pole
Antartike.

The starres about
the south pole.

Most pleasant and
fruitful regions.

The earthlye
Paradyse.
Continual
temperatessen.

Moyst dewes

Starres vñknownen
to vs

The vse of
Geometri.
Notable stars in
the inferiour
hemispherie.

To wryte particularly of the commodities and felicities of these regions, it wolde requyre rather a hole volume then a booke: And that such, as if Plinie had had knowleage of these thynges, he myght greatly haue increased his bookes of natural histories. The trees gyue from them continually such sweete fauours as can scarcely bee imagined: And on every part put furth such gummes, liquours, and iusnes, that yf we knewe theyr vertues, I suppose we myght fynde in them marueylos medicins ageinst diseases and to mainteyne health. And furerly in my opinion, yf there bee any earthlye Paradysse in the worlde, it can not bee farre from these regions of the south, where the heauen is so beneficiall and the elementes to temperate that they are neyther bytten with coulde in wynter, nor molested with heate in summer. The ayer also and the heauen is feldome darkened with clowdes, so that the dayes and nyghtes are euer cleare. Yet haue they sumtymes moyst dewes in the mornynge and euening for the space of three houres, whereby the grounde is marueylously refreshed. Lyke wyse the firmament is marueylously adourned with certeyne starres which are not knownen to vs, wherof I noted abowt. xx. to bee of suche clearenesse as are the starres of Venus and Iupiter when they are nere vnto vs. And wheras hauyng the knowleage of Geometrie, I considerid theyr circuite and dyuers motions, and also measured their circumference and diameter, I am well assured that they are much greater then men thynke them to bee. Amonge other, I sawe three starres cauled Canopi, wherof two were excedyng cleare, and the thyrde sumwhat darke. The pole Antartike hath nother the greate beare nor the lytle as is seene abowte owre pole. But hath foure starres whiche compasse it abowt in forme of a quadrangle.



¶ When these are hydden, there is seene on the leste syde a bryght Canopus of three starres of notable greatenesse, whiche beinge in the myddest of heauen, representeth this figure.



Most bright and
shynynge starres.

Lactea via.

246

After these, succeade three other shynynge starres, wherof that which is in the myddest, is of measure. xii. degrees and a halfe in circumference. And in the myddest of these, is seene an other bryght Canopus. After this, folowe. vi. other shynynge starres which in bryghtnesse passe al other that are in the eyght sphere. Of these, that that is in the middest in the superficiall part of the sayde sphere, hath the measure of his circumference. xxxii. degrees. After these foloweth an other great Canopus, but sumwhat darke. All these are seene in the parte of heauen cauled *Via Lactea*, that is the mylke waye: And beinge ioyned to the meridiane line, shewe this fygure here folowyng.



The inferiour
hemispherie.

The raynebowe.

Aristotle his
opinion of the
raynebowe.

A strange opinion.



sawef also there manye other starres, the dyuers motions wherof diligently obserued, I made a particular booke of the same, wherin I made mention of al such notable thynges as I sawe and had knowleage of, in this nauigation. The whiche booke I deliuere to the kynges maestie, trustynghe that he wyll shortly restore it me ageyne. In this hemispherie or halfe coompaſſe of the heauen, I diligently considered many things which are contrarie to th[e]oppinions of philosophers. And amonge other thynges, I sawe a whyte raynebowe abowt mydnyght, wheras other affirme that it hath foure colours of the four elements, as redde of the fyre, greene of the earth, whyte of the ayer, and blewe of the water. But Aristotle in his booke intituled *Meteor*, is of an other opinion. For he sayth that the raynebowe is a reflection of the beames of the sunne in the vapoure of a clowde directly ageynste the sunne, as the shynynge of the same on the water, is reflected on a waule: And that the sayde clowde or vapoure tempereth the heate of the sunne: and beinge resolued into rayne, maketh the grounde fertyle, and pourgeth the ayer. Also that is a token of abundant moyiture. By reason wherof, sum are of opinion that it shall not appeare. xl. [forty] yeares before th[e]ende of the worlde, which shalbe a token of the drynnesse of the elementes approchynge to the tyme of theyr confiagration or consumyng by fyre. It is a pledge of peace betwene god and men, and is euer directly ouer ageynst the sunne. It is therfore neuer seene in the South, bycause the sunne is neuer [seene?] in the North. Neuertheleſſe, Plinie sayth,

ther a hole
greatly haue
ours as can
knewe theyr
leath. And
these regions
ther bytten
the darkened
lewes in
ched. Lyke-
erof I noted
to vs. And
so measured
them to bee.
erde sumwhat
le. But hath

es of notable

measure. xii.
opus. After
re. Of these,
circumference.
feene in the
e line, shewe

ed, I made a
as I fawe and
nges maestie,
lfie coompaſſe
joppinions of
wt mydnyght,
die of the fyre,
teled *Meteora*,
foonne in the
reflected on a
e resolued into
noysture. By
worlde, which
or consumyng
oonne. It is
, Plinie sayth,

that after the Equinoctial in Autumne, it is feene at al hours. And thus much haue I gathered owt of the commentaries of Landinus vpon the fourth boke of Virgyl his Eneades, bycause I wold defraude no man of his trauayle. I fawe the fayd raynebowe twoo or three tymes. And not I onely, but also many other which were in my coompany. Lykewyfe wee fawe the newe moone the selfe same day that thee ioynd with the foonne. Wee fawe furthermore vapours and burnyng flames flyinge abowt heauen ebery nyght. A lytle before, I cauled this countrey by the name of Hemispherium (that is) the halfe sphere. Which neuerelesse can not bee so named but by spekyng improprieſie in comparyfon of owres. Yet forasmuche as it seemeth to represent fuche a forme, I haue improprieſie ſo named it.

Departyng therfore from Lisbona (as I haue fayde) beinge from the Equinoctiall line towarde the North abowt. xl. [forty] degrees, wee fayled to this countrey whiche is beyonde the Equinoctiall. l. [fifty] degrees: All which summe, maketh the number of. lxxx. [ninety] beinge the fourth part of the greatest circle accordyngē to the trewe reaſon of the number tawght by the owlde autors. And by this demonstration it is manifest that wee meaſured the fourth part of the worlde: Forasmuch as we that dwell in Lifaona on this ſide the Equinoctiall line abowt. xl. [forty] degrees towarde the Northe, fayled from thenfe. lxxx. [ninety] degrees in lengthe meridionale angularly by an ouerthwart line, to th[e]ſinhabitantes. l. [fifty] degrees beyond the Equinoctiall. And that the thyng may bee more playnely vnderſtode, imagine a parpendicular line to faule from the poynetes of heauen which are Zenith (that is the pricke ouer the head) to vs both standyng vpright in the places of oure owne habitaçions: and another ryght line to bee drawne frome oure Zenith to theys: Then grauntynge vs to bee in the ryght line in comparyfon to them, it muſt of neceſſtie folowe that they are in the ouerthwart line as halfe Antipodes in comparyfon to vs: In ſiche forte that the figure of the fayde lines make a triangle which is the quarter or fourth parte of the hole circle, as appeareth more playnely by the fygure here folowynge.



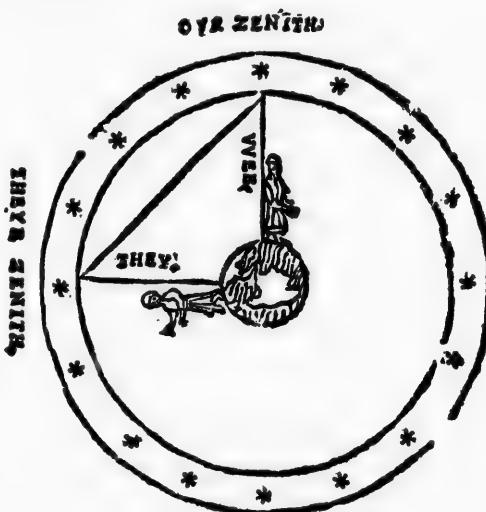
S touchyng the starres and reaſons of Cosmographie, I haue gathered thus much owt of the vyage of Americus Vesputius. And haue thought good to ioyne hereunto that whiche Andreas de Corfali writeth in his vyage to East India as concernyng the ſame matter.

After that we departed from Lisbona, wee fayled euer with prosperous wynde, not paſſyng owt of the Southeast and Southwest. And paſſyng beyonde the Equinoctial line, we were in the heyght of. 37. degrees of the other halfe circle of the earth. And trauerſyng the cape of Bona Speranza a coulde and wyndy clime bycause at that tyme the foonne was in the north fignes, wee founde the nyght of. xiii. hours. Here we fawe a marueyloſe order of starres, ſo that in the parte of heauen contrary to oure northe pole, to knowe in what place and degree the ſouth pole was, we tooke the day with the foonne, and obſerued the nyght with the Astrolabie, and fawe manifeſtly twoe clowdes of reaſonable bygneſſe mouyng abowt the place of the pole continually nowe ryſyng and nowe faulynge, ſo keeþyng theyr continuall courſe in circular mouyng, with a ſtarre euer in the myddle which is turned abowt with them abowte. xi. degrees frome the pole. Aboue theſe appeareth a marueyloſe croſſe in the myddle of fyue notable ſtarres which compaſſe it abowt (as doth charles wayne the northe pole) with other ſtarres whiche moue with them abowt. xxx. [thirty] degrees diſtant frome the pole, and make their courſe in. xxiiii. [twenty-four] hours. This croſſe is ſo fayre and bewtiful, that none other heuenly gne may be compared to it as may appearē by this fygure.

The newe mone.
Fyery exhalations.
Hemispherium.

Lisbona.
The fourth part of
the worlde.

247



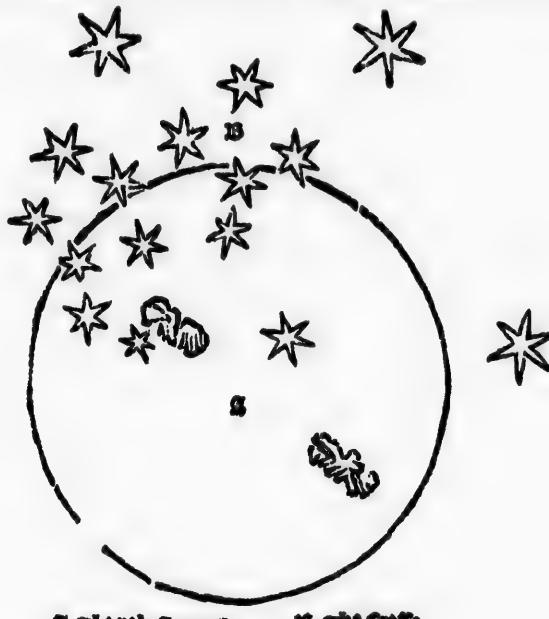
Zenith.

The vyage of
Andreas de
Corfali.
The Equinoctial
line.
Cap. de Speranza.
The starres of the
vader hemispherie.

Cloudes about the
south pole.

A croſſe of fyue
starres.

248



S. The pole Antartike. b. The Cross.

Bertho Andreas de Loifali.

The coastes of
Ethiopia.
Golde in Ethiopia.

The vyage of
Alouisius
Cadamustus.

The charioote of
the south pole.



The wynter about
the Equinoctiall.
Raines and clowdes.

Thunder and
lyghtnynges.

Hot showres of
rayne.
The day, and
rysynges of the
sonne.



F the lyke matters, and of the straunge rysynges of the soonne in the mornynge, and of the dyuers seasons of the yeare and motions of the Elementes in the coaste of Ethiopie abowt the ryuer of Senega, and the riche region of Gambia where plentie of golde is founde, sumewhate beyonde Capo Verde, Aloisius Cadamustus wryteth in this effecte.

Durynge the tyme that wee remayned vppon the mouth of the ryuer, we fawe the north flarre but once: which appered very lowe aboue the sea the height of a iaeluen. We saw also fyxe cleare, bryght, and great flarres verye lowe aboue the sea. And confiderynge theyr statious with owre coompaſſe, we founde them to stande ryght south, fygured in this maner.



E judged them to bee the charioote or wayne of the south: But we fawe not the principall flarre, as we coulde not by good reaſon, except we shuld first loſe the syght of the north pole. In this place wee founde the nyght of the length of a. xi. houres and a halfe: And the day of. xii. houres and a halfe at the begynnynge of Iuly. This countrey is euer hotte al times of the yeare. Yet is there a certeyne varietie which they caule wynter. For from the moneth of Iuly to October, it rayneth continually in maner dayly abowt none after this forte. There ryse continually certeyne clowdes aboue the lande betwene the northeast and the south east, or from the east and southeast with greate thunderynges and lyghtnynges and exceedyng great showres of raine. At this tyme the Ethiopians begynne to fowe theyr feedes. They lyue commonly with honi, herbes, rootes, flesſhe, and mylke. I had also intelligence that in this region by reaſon of the great heate of the ayer, the water that raineth is hotte: And that the soonne rysyng in the mornynge, makethe no cleare daylyght as it dooth with vs: But that halfe an houre after the rysyng, it appeareth troubled, dymme and smoky. The whiche thynge, I knowe not to proceade of any other caufe then of the lowenesse of the grounde in this contrey beinge without mountaynes.

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

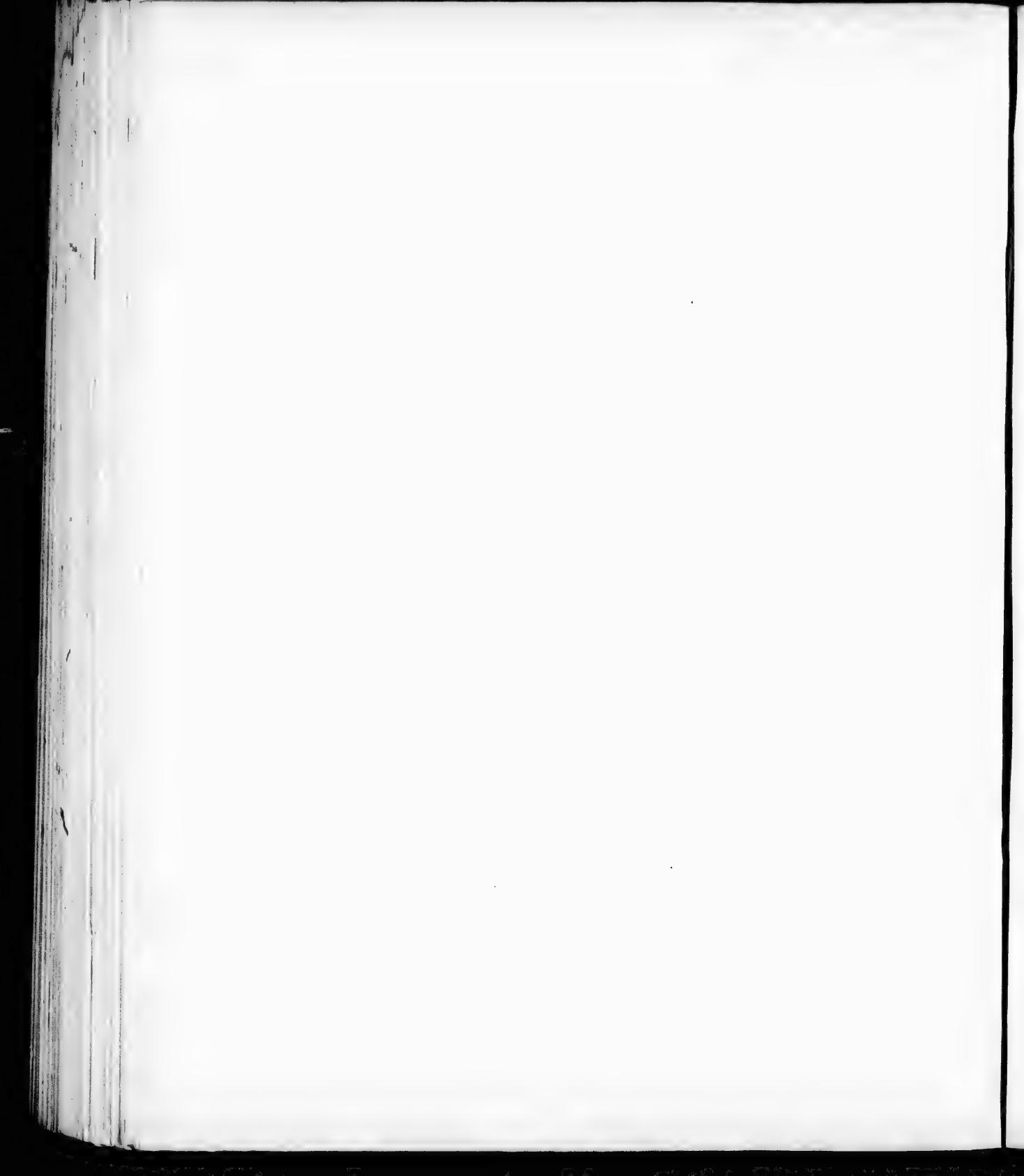
SECTION IV.

*Of Moscowy, Cathay, and
the North Regions.*

1500-1555.]

ne in the
ns of the
a, and the
sumewhat
te.
we fawe the
f a iauen.
heyr flations

ne principall
e north pole.
And the day
ette al times
or from the
er this forte.
east and the
and exceed-
e commonly
of the great
makethe no
ed, dynme
nesse of the



A DISCOVRSE OF DYVERS VYAGES AND WAYES BY THE WHICHE

SPICES, PRECIOUS STONES, AND GOLDE WERE BROUGHT IN OWLDE

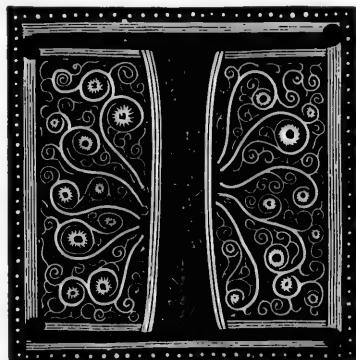
tyme from India into Europe and other partes of the world.

ALSO OF THE VYAGE TO CATHAY AND EAST INDIA

by the north sea: And of certeyne secretaes touchyng the same vyage,

declared by the duke of Moscouie his ambassadoure to an excellent
lerned gentelman of Italie, named Galeatius Butrigarius.

Lykewyse of the vyages of that worthy owlde man
Sebastian Cabote, yet liuynge in Englande, and at this
present the gouernour of the coompany of the
marchantes of Cathay in the citie of London.



T is doubtlesse a marueylous thynge to confyder what chaunges and alterations were caused in all the Romane Empire by the comynge of the Gothes and Vandales, and other Barbarians into Italy. For by theyr invasions were extinguished all artes and sciences, and all trades of Marchaundies that were vfed in dyuers partes of the worlde. The defolation and ignoraunce which infused hereof, continued as it were a clowde of perpetuall darkeenesse amone men for the space of fourte hundredth years and more, in so much that none durst aduenture to go any whyther owt of theyr owne native countreys: whereas before th[e] incursions of the sayde Barbarians when the Romane Empire floryshed, they might safly passe the seas to al partes of East India which was at that time as wel knownen and frequented as it is nowe by the nauigations of the Portugales. And that this is trewe, it is manifest by that which Strabo wryteth, who was in the tyme of Augustus and Tiberius. For speakyng of the greatnesse and ryches of the citie of Alexandria in Egypte (gouerned then as a prouince of the Romanes) he wryteth thus. This only place of Egypte, is apte to receave all thynges that coome by sea, by reaon of the commodities of the hauen: And lykewyse all such thynges as are brought by lande, by reaon of the ryuer of Nilus wherby they may bee easely conveyde to Alexandria, beinge by thefe commodities the rycheſt citie of marchauntes that is in the worlde.

The reuenues of Egypte are so great, that Marcus Tullius sayth in one of his orations, that kyng Tolomeus furnamed Auleta, the father of queene Cleopatra, had of reuenues twelue thousande and fyue hundredth talentes, which are feuen millions and a halfe in golde. If therfore this kyng had so great reuenues when Egypte was gouerned of so fewe and so negliglynt, what myght it then bee woorth to the Romanes by whom it was gouerned with great diligence, and theyr trade of marchandises greatly increased by the traffike of Trogloditica and India? wheras in tyme paste there could hardly bee founde. xx. shypes togyther that durste enter into the goulfe of

249

The romaine
empyre.

iii. hundredth
yeares of
ignoraunce.

Easte India well
knownen in owid
time.

Strabo.
The great rychesse
of Egypte.

The citie of
Alexandria.

Marueylous
rychesse.

The gouernance
and reuenues of
the Romans.

Trogloditica
and India.

The goule of
Arabie.

Ethiopi.

Kich customs

The rychesse
which were
brought in owld
tyme from India,
and the red
sea.

The commissioning
of Th[e]Emperours
Marcus and
Commodus.

250

The great riches
the kynges of
Egypte had by
customes.

The noble
enterprises of the
kynge of Egypte.
Arsinoe.
Damiata.
Pelusio.

Nilus.
Copto.
Berenice.

A nauigable
trenche made from
Egypte to the red
sea

Lacus Amari.

Kynge Sesostre
Kynge
Psammiticus
Kynge Darius

Kynge Ptolomeus.
The citie Heroum.
What Plynie
writeth of the
nauigable trenche

The largenesse
and lengthe of the
trenche.

251

Arabie, or shewe theyr proos without the mouth of the same. But at this present, great nauies fayle togither in to India and to the furthest partes of Ethiope from whence are brought many rych and precious marchandies into Egyp and are caryed from thense into other countreys. And by this meanes are the customes redoubled aswell by suche thynges as are brought thyther, as also by suche as are caryed frome thense, forasmuche as greate customes arryfe of thynges of great value. And that by this vyage, infinite and precious marchandies were brought from the redde sea and India, and those of dyuers other fortes then are knownen in owe tyme, it appeareth by the fourthe volume of the ciuile lawe wherin is described the commision of Th[e]Emperours Marcus and Commodus, with the reheatfall of all suche stoffe and marchandies wherof custome shuld bee payde in the redde sea by such as had the same in fee ferme, as were payde the customes of all other prouinces perteynyng to the Romane Empyre: and they are these folowynge.

Cinamome.	Mir.	Xilocinamome.	Jewels of Sardonica.	Dyed cloth and sylke
Longe pepper.	Amome.	Carpefio.	Ceraunia.	Carbasei.
Whyte pepper.	Ginger.	Sylkes of dyuers fortes.	Calamus Aromaticus.	Sylke thredes.
Cloues.	Malabatrum.	Linnen cloth.	Berille.	Gelded men.
Costus.	Ammoniac.	Skynnes and furres of Cilindro.		Popingaiyes.
Cancamo.	Galbane.	Parthia and Babilon.	Slaves.	Lions of India.
Spikenarde.	Laffer.	Iuery.	Cloth of Sarmatia.	Leopardes.
Cassia.	Agarike.	Wodde of Heben.	The sylke cauled	Panthers.
Sweete perfumes.	Gumme of Arabie.	Precious stones.	Metaxa.	Purple.
Xilocassia.	Cardamome.	Perles.	Vestures of sylke.	

Also that iuise or liour which is gathered of wolle and of the heare of the Indians.

By thes wordes it dooth appearre that in owld tyme the fayde nauigation by the way of the redde sea, was wel knownen and muche frequented, and perhaps more then it is at this present. In so much that the auncient kynges of Egypte confidering the great profyte of the customes they had by the viages of the red sea, and wyllyng to make the same more easy and commodious, attempted to make a fosse or chanel which shulde begynne in the laste parte of the fayde sea, where was a citie named Arsinoe (which perhaps is that that is nowe cauled Sues) and shulde haue reached to a branche of the ryuer of Nilus named Pelusio, which emptieth it selfe in owe sea towarde the East abowt the citie of Damiata. They determinyd also to make three caufcis or hyghe wayes by lande, which shulde passe from the fayde braunce to the citie of Arsinoe: but they founde this to be difficulte to brynge to passe. In fine, kyng Tolomeus farnamed Philadelphus, ordeyned an other way: as to fayle vpon Nilus agaynst the course of the ryuer vnto the citie of Copto, and from thense to passe by a deserte countrey vntyll they coome aboue the redde sea to a citie named Berenice or Miosormo, where they imbarcked all their marchandies and wares for India, Ethiope, and Arabie, as appeareth by the wrytyng fyrt of Strabo (who wryteth that he was in Egypte) and then by Plinie who was in the tyme of Domitian. Strabo also speaking of the sayd fosse or trench which was made toward the red sea, wryteth thus.

There is a trenche that goth towarde the red sea and the goule of Arabie, and to the citie of Arsinoe, which sum caul Cleopatra: and passeth by the lakes named Amari (that is) bitter, because in deede they were fyrt bytter. But after that this trenche was made and the ryuer entered in, they became sweete, and are at this present full of foules of the water by reason of theyr pleafauntesse. This trenche was fyrt begun by kynge Sesostre, before the battaille of Troy. Sum faye that it was begunne by kynge Psammiticus whyle he was a chylde: And that by reason of his death, it was lefte imperfect: Also that afterward, kynge Darius succeded in the same enterpryse, who wold haue finisched it, but yet brought it not to th[e]ende bycause he was informed that the redde sea was hygher then Egypt: And that if this lande diuydynge bothe the seas, were opened, all Egypte shulde bee drowned therby. Kynge Tolomeus wold in deede haue finyshed it: but yet left it shal at the hed that he myght when he wolde, fayle to the other sea and returnde without perell. Here is the citie of Arsinoe: And nere vnto that, the citie cauled Heroum in the vttermost part of the goule of Arabie toward Egyp with many portes and habitacions. Plinie likewyse speakyng of this trenche, sayth. In the furthest part of the goule of Arabie, is a porte cauled Daneo, from whence they determinyd to brynge a nauigable trenche vnto the ryuer of Nilus, where as is the fyrt Delta. Betwene the fayde sea and Nilus, there is a freight of lande of the length of. Ixi. [sixty-two] myles. The first that attempted this thyng, was Sefostre kynge of Egypte: and after hym Darius kynge of the Persians, whome Tolomeus folowed, who made a trenche a hundredth foote large, and. xxx. [thirty] foote diepe, beinge three hundredth myles in lengthe vnto the lakes named Amari, and durst proeade no further for feare of inundation, hauyng knowledge that the redde sea was hygher by three cubites then al the countrey of Egypte. Other say that this was not the caufe: but that he doubted that if he shulde haue let the sea coome any further, all the water of Nilus shulde haue by therby corrupted, which onely mynystreth drynke to all Egypte. But notwithstandinge all these thynges aforesayde, all this vyage is frequented by lande from Egypte to the redde sea, in which passage are three caufcis or hyghe wayes. The fyrt begynneth at the

le togher in
marchandies
es redoubled
ache as greate
marchandies were
owre tyme, it
erours Marcus
payde in the
perteynyng
oth and sylke

eede.
nen.
yes.
India.
es.

redded sea, was
t the auncient
a, and wylling
egynne in the
(cauled Sues)
fe in owre sea
ghe wayes by
to difficulte to
o sayle vppon
ferte countrey
arked all theyr
Strabo (who
so speaking of

Arfinoe, which
hey were fyrt
nd are at this
gun by kynge
was a chyde:
cced in the
informed that
ed, all Egypte
ut at the hed
e of Arfinoe:
ard Egipit with
of the goulfe
o the ryuer of
ength of. Ixii.
arius kynge of
] foote diepe,
er for feare of
the countrey
ue let the sea
th drynke to
ed by lande
nneth at the

mouth of Nilus named Pelusio. All which way is by the sandes: In so much that if there were not certeyne hyghe reedes fyx in the earth to shewe the ryght way, the caufei coulde not be founde by reason the wynde euer courereth it with lande. The second caufei is two myles from the mountayne Cassius. And this also in the ende of. lx. [sixty] myles, commeth vpon the way or caufey of Pelusius, inhabited with certeyne Arabians cauled Antei. The thyrde begynneth at Gerro, named Adipson: and passeth by the same Arabians, for the space of. lx. [sixty] myles sumwhat shorter, but full of rowgh mountaynes and great scurfenesse of water. All these caufeis, leade the way to the citie of Arsinoe, buylded by Tolomeus Philadelphus in the goulfe Carandra by the red sea. This Tolomeus was the fyrt that searched al that parte of the red sea which is cauled Trogloditica. Of this trenche described of Strabo and Plinie, there are feene certeyne tokens remaynyng at this present as they affirme which haue byn at Sues beyonde the citie of Alcayr otherwyse cauled Babylon in Egypte. But the marchantes that of later dayes trauyle this viage by lande, ryde through the dry and baren deserts on camels both by day and by nyght: directyng theyr way by the starres and compase as do maryners on the sea, and carynge with them water sufficient for many dayes iorneyes. The places of Arabic and India named of Strabo and Plinie, are the selfe same where the Portugales practise theyr trade at this daye, as the maners and customes of the Indians doo yet declare. For euen at this presente theyr women vse to burne them selues alyue with the deade bodies of theyr husbannes. Which thynge (as wryteth Strabo in his. xv. booke) they dyd in ownde tyme by a lawe, for this confideration that sumtyme being in loue with other theyr forsooke or poysoned theyr husbannes. And forasmuch as accordyng to this custome, the ownde poete Propertius (who lyued abowt a hundredth yeres before th[e]incarnation of Chryſt) hath in his boke made mention of the contention that was amone the Indian women which of them shuld bee burned alyue with theyr husbannes, I haue thought good to subscribe his verses, which are these.

*Felix Fois lex funeris vna maritis,
Quos aurora suis rubra colorat equis.
Mamque ubi mortifero iacula est fax ultima leto,
Vxorum suis lat pia turba comis,
Et certamen habent lethi, que via uagatur
Coniugium, pudor est non licuisse mori.
Ardent viuicias, et flammis pectora prabent,
Imponuntque suis ora persua viris.*

As touchyng these vyages both by sea and by lande to East India and Cathay, many thynge are wrytten very largely by dyuers autours which I omitt bycause they perteyne not so much vnto vs as doth the viage attempted to CATHAY by the north feas and the coastes of Moscouie discouered in owre tyme by the viage of that excellent yonge man Rychard Chaunceler no leſſe lerned in all mathematicall sciences then an expert pylote, in the yere of owre lorde. 1554.

As concernyng this vyage, I haue thought good to declare the communication which was betwene the sayde learned man Galeatus Butrigarius, and that great philosopher and noble gentleman of Italie named Hieronimus Fracastor as I fynde wrytten in the Italian histories of nauigations. As they were therfore conferryng in matters of lernynge, and reaſonyng of the science of Cosmographi, the sayde learned man hauyng in his hande an instrument of Astronomie, declared with a large oration howe muche the worlde was bounde to the kynges of Portugale, rehearſyng the noble factes doone by them in India, and what landes and Ilandes they had discouered, and how by theyr nauigations they made the whole worlde hange in the ayer. He further declared what parts of the baul of the earth remained yet vndiscouered. And sayde that of the landes of the inferior hemispherie or halfe compase of the baule towarde the pole Antartike, there was nothyng known but that lyttle of the coaste of Brasilia vnto the fleyght of Magellanus. Alſo a part of Peru: And a lyttle aboue Affrike towarde the cape of Bona Speranza. Alſo that he marueyled withoute measure that this thynge was no better confidered of Christian Princes to whom god had deputed this charge, hauyng euer on theyr counſail men of great lernynge which may informe them of this thing beſte to marueylos and noble whereby they maye obtayne glorie and fame by vertue, and bee imputed amone men as goddes, by better demerites then euer were Hercules and great Alexander who trauayled only into India: and that by makynge the men of this owre hemispherie knownen to theym of the other halfe compase of the baule beneth vs, they myght by the tyle of this enterpryse, withoute comparyſon farre excell all the noble factes that euer were doone by Julius Cesar or any other of the Romane Emperors. Which thynge they myght easly bryng to passe by affignyng colonies to inhabite dyuers places of that hemispherie, in lyke maner as dyd the Romanes in prouincies newly subdued. Whereby they myght not only obtayne great ryches, but alſo enlarge the Christian fayth and Empire to the glory of god and confusion of infidels. After this, he ſpake of the Ilande of faint Laurence, cauled in ownde

The viage bi lande
from Egypte to
the red sea.

What kynges
Ptolomeus
discouered.

Aleyna.
The viage to
Easte Indya
frequented in
ownde tyme.
The customs and
manners of the
Indians.

The vyage to
Cathay.

Rycharde
Chaunceler.

A lerned discourse
of dyuers vyages
The viggies of the
Portugales.
The worlde
hangyng on the
ayer.
What is known
of the lower
hemispherie.
The lande of
Brasile.
Peru.
The charge and
devicis of Christian
princes.
Note.

252
Hercules and
Alexander.

The colonies of
the Romans in
regions subdued.
The great Iland
of faint Laurence
or Madagascari.

The Ilandes of
Taprobana or
Giaua.
Plinie.
The hystorie of
Cornelius Nepos.

Shypes of India
driven into the sea
of Germanie.

An enterprise
wherby Princes
may obteyne trewe
fame and glory.
Cathay discouered
bi Marcus Paulus.

The citie of
Lubyke.
The kyng of
Polonie.
The duke of
Moscouia.

An ambassadic
from the duke of
Moscouia.

253
The woordes of
the ambassadour
of Moscouia.

The way from
Moscouia to the
north Ocean and
Cathay.
Volochda.
Vsting.
Succana.
Duina.
Colmogor.
The north Ocean.
Greates wooddes.

Gothlande.
The Moscouites
haue knowledge
of the greate cane
Cathay.
Permia.
Pescora.
Catena mundi.

tyme Madagascar, which is greater then the realme of Castile and Portugale, and reacheth from the. xiij. degree towarde the pole Antartike, vnto the. xxvi. degree and a halfe, lyinge Northeaste frome the cape of Bona Speranza and partly vnder the line of Tropicus Capricorni: beinge well inhabited and of temperate ayer, with abundaunce of all thynges necessarie for the lyfe of man, and one of the most excellent Ilandes that is founde this daye in the worlde: And that neuerthelesse there is nothyng knownen therof, except only a fewe simeaule hauens by the sea side, as the lyke ignorance remayneth of the greatest part of the Ilandes of Taprobana, Giaua the more and the lesse, and infinite other. Then beginninge to speake of the partes of owre pole, he caufed the bookees of plinie to bee brought him where diligently ponderynge the. lxvii. chapiture of the feconde booke, he founde where he reherseth the historie of Cornelius Nepos, by these woordes: That in his tyme, one Eudoxus escapyng the handes of kyng Lathyro, departed from the goule of Arabie and came by sea to the Ilande of Calefe. Declarynge further, that whereas this narration was many yeares reputed for a fable, was nowe in owre tyme by the vertue of the Portugales, knownen to bee trewe: And that lykewyse the fame Cornelius Nepos reciteth that at the tyme when Quintus Metellus Celer was proconsul or lieutenant for the Romans in Fraunce, the kyng of Suevia gaue hym certeyne Indians which saylings owt of India for marchandies, were by tempest dryuen to the coastes of Germanie. When he had redde these woordes, he proceaded, fayneinge that the fame thyng myght bee verified nowe in our tyme if the princes which confine vpon that sea woldende endeououre their industry and diligence to bryng it to passe. And that there coulde not any nauigation bee imagined so commodious and profitable to all Christendoome as this myght bee yf by this way the vyage shulde bee founde open to India to come to the rych contrey of CATHAY which was discouered now two hundredre yeares fence by Marcus Paulus. Then taking the globe in his hande, he made demonstration that this vyage shulde bee very shorte in respect of that whiche the Portugales nowe folowe, and also of that which the Spaniardes may attempte to the Ilandes of Moluca. He declared furthermore that the citie of Lubyke beinge rych and of great poure, and situate vpon the sea of Germanie, and also accustomed with continual nauigations to trauayle the sea of Norwaye and Gothlande, and lykewyse the ryght noble kyng of Polonie whose dominions with his realme of Lituania, extende to the sayde sea, shulde be apte to discouer this secrete: But that aboue all other, the duke of Moscouia, shulde perforne the same with greater commoditie and more faciliteit then any other Prince. And here steyninge a whyle, he began to speake ageyne and sayde. Nowe forasmuch as we are coome to this passe, mee thynde it shulde seeme a great discurteſie if I shuld not shewe yow all that I knowe as touchyng this vyage, wherof I greatly mused with my ſcife many yeares by occation of the woordes of Plinie. Whereas therefore beinge a younge man, I was in Germanie in the citie of Augusta, it fo chaunfed that in thone dayes there came thither an ambafadour of the duke of Moscouia, a man singularly learned both in the Greeke toonge and the Latine, and of good experiance in worldely thynges, hauying bynfent to dyuers places by the sayde Prince, and one of his counfayle. Of whos learmynge beinge aduertisfed, I fought his acquayntaunce. And talkyng with hym one day of theſe Indians dryuen by fortune to the coastes of Germanie, and of the vyage that myght bee discouered by the North ſea to the Ilandes of ſpices, I perceaued that at the fyfte he marueyled exceedingly, as at a thyng he that coulde neuer haue imagined. But reſtyng a whyle in maner aftonyſhed in his ſecrete phantacie, he tooke great pleaſure therin, and sayde. Forasmuch as the Portugales haue nowe compased abowt all the ſouth partes ſuppoſed in owide tyme to bee inacceſſible by reaſon of great heate, why ſhulde we not certeinely thynke that the lyke maye bee done abowt this parte of the north without feare of coulde, eſpecially to men borne and brought vp in that clime? Yet procedyng further, he ſaid, that if his Prince and maſter, had men that wolde animate hym to diſcouer this vyage, there was no Prince in Christendome that myght do it with more faciliteit. Then caulynge for a mappe in which was the deſcription of Moscouia and the prouincies ſubiecte to the fame, he declared that from the citie of Moscouia or Mofca going towarde the northeſt for the ſpace of. ix. [ixty] myles, they come to the ryuer of Volochda and afterwarde by that, and folowing the courſe therof, to the citie of Vſting, ſo cauled bycause the ryuer of Iug faultheit into the ryuer of Succana, where they loſe their owne names and make the great ryuer Duina: And by that, leauyng on the ryght hande the citie of Colmogor, they ſayle vnto the north Ocean. The which waye, althoſte it bee a longe tracte, as more then. 800. myles, neuertheleſſe he ſayde that in ſommer it myght commodiouly bee ſayled: And that wheras it faultheit into the ſea, there are infinite woods of goodly trees apte to make ſhippes. And the place fo conuenient for this purpoſe, that ſhipwryghtes and other ſkylful workemen for all thynges hereunto apperteynyng, may eaſily coome owt of Germanie. Also that the men which are vſed to trauayle the ſea of Germanie abouete the coaſtes of Gothlande, ſhulde bee beſt and moſt apte to atteympte this enterpryſe, bycause they are indurate to abyde coulde, hunger, and laboure. He ſayde furthermore, that in the court of his Prince, they haue much knowleage of the great cane of Cathay, by reaſon of the continual warres they haue with the Tartars, of whom the greatest part gyue obedience to the ſaid great Cane as to theyr chiefe Emperoure. He made alſo demonstration in the ſayde carde by the northeſt, that beinge paſte the prouince of Permia and the ryuer Pefcora (whiche faultheit into the north ſea) and certeyne mountaynes named Catena Mundū, there is

xii. degree
of Bona
ay, with
is founde
ewi smauke
ana, Giaua
he caufed
nde booke,
tyme, one
ea to the
fable, was
the same
ant for the
or marchan-
proceeded,
pon that fea
navigation
y the vyage
d now two
lration that
that which
of Lubyke
a continual
of Polonie
his secrete:
e and more
de. Nowe
not shewe
by occasion
of Augusta,
in singulari-
hayng byn
duertised, I
the coastes of
perceaved
restyng a
brafmuch as
cessable by
parte of the
ng further,
ere was no
ich was the
Moscouia or
la and after-
Iug fauleth
nd by that,
e, althoughe
mmodiouly
ke shypes.
all thynges
trauale the
enterprye,
court of his
s they haue
Emperoure.
Permia and
d, there is

th[e]enteraunce into the prouince of obdora, whereas is Vecchiadoro and the ryuer Obo, whiche also fauleth into the fayde sea, and is the furthest borther of Th[e]empire of the Prince of Moscouia. The fayde ryuer hath his originall in a great lake cauled Chethai, which is the fyfth habitation of the Tartars that paye tribute to the greate Cane. And from this lake for the space of two monethes vyage (as they were credably informed by certeine Tartares taken in the warres) is the most noble citie of Cambalu, beinge one of the chiefeſt in the dominion of the greate Cane, whom sum caule the great Cham. He also affirmed, that if shippes shulde bee made on the coastes of the fayde sea, and fayle on the backe halfe of the coast therof (which he knewe by many relations made to his Prince, to reach infinitely toward the northeast) they shulde doubleſt in folowinge the fame, easely discouer that countrey. Vnto these woordes he added, that although there were greate difficultie in Moscouia, by reaſon that the waye to the fayde sea is full of thicke wooddes and waters which in the sommer make great maryſhes and impossible to bee traualyed, aſwell for lacke of vytayles whiche can not there bee founde, not for certeyne dayes, but for the space of certeyne monethes, the place beinge desolate without inhabitauntes, neuertheleſſe he fayde that yf there were with his Prince, only two Spanyardes or Portugales to whom the charge of this vyage shulde bee commytyed, he no wayes doubted but that they woldē folowe it and fynde it, forasmuch as with great ingeniuſneſſe and inſtimble pacience, theſe nations haue ouercome much greater diſſiculties then are theſe which are but lytle in comparifon to thoſe that they haue ouerpaffed and doo ouerpaffe in all theyr viages to India. He proceadeſt declaraynge that not many yeaſes ſince, there came to the courte of his Prince, an ambafſadour frome pope Leo, named maſter Paulo Centurione a Genueſe vnder dyuers pretences. But the principall occaſion of his commyng, was, bycauſe he hadde conceaued greate indignation and hatred ageynſt the Portugales: And therfore intended to proue yf he coulde open anye vyage by lande whereby ſpices myght bee brought from India by the lande of Tartaria, or by the ſea Caspium (otherwyſe cauled Hircanum) to Moſcouia: And from thenſe to bee brought in ſhippes by the ryuer Riga, whiche runnyng by the countrey of Liuonia, fauleth into the ſea of Germanie. And that his Prince gaue eare vnto hym: and caufed the fayde viage to bee attempted by certeine noble men of Lordo, of the Tartars confininge nexte vnto hym. But the warres whiche were then betwene them, and the greate deferteſt which they fulde of neceſſitie ouerpaffe, made them leauue of theyr enterprye: which if it had bin purpoſed by the coaſtes of this owre north ſea, it myght haue Lyn eaſely fynyſhed. The fayde Ambafſadour continued his narration, fayinge that no man ought to doubt of that ſea but that it may bee fayled fyxe monethes in the yeare, forasmuch as the days are then very longe in that clime, and hot by reaſon of contynuall reuerberation of the 'leames of the ſoonne and ſhorte nyghtes. And that this thynge were as wel worthy to bee proued, as any other nauigation wherby many partes of the worlde heretofore vnknoƿen, haue byn diſcouered and brought to ciuitie. And here makyng an ende of this talke, he ſaid: Let vs nowe omytte this parte of Moſcouia with his coulde, and ſpeakē ſumwhat of that parte of the newe worlde in whiche is the lande of Brytons cauled *Terra Britonum*, and Baccalaos or *Terra Baccalaeum*, where in the yeare. 1534. and. 1535. Jaques Cartiar in two vyages made with three great French gallies, founded the great and large countreys named Canada, Ochelaga, and Sanguenai: which reach from the xlv. [forty-fifth] to the li. [fifty-first] degree, beinge well inhabited and pleauante countreys, and named by hym Noua Francia. And here ſteyng a while and lyftynge vppe his handes, he fayde: Oh what doo the Christian Princes meane that in ſuch landes diſcouered they do not affigne certeine colonies to inhabite the ſame to bringe those people (whom god hath ſo bleſſed with natural gyfes) to better ciuitie and to embraye owre religion, then the whiche, nothyng can bee more acceptable to god? The fayde regions alſo, beinge ſo faire and frutefull, with plentie of all fortes of corne, herbes, futes, woodde, fyfhes, beaſtes, metals, and ryuers of ſuche greatneſſe that ſhyppeſ maye fayle more then. 180. myles vppon one of theym, beinge on bothe fydes infinitely inhabited: And to caufe the gouernoures of the fayde colonies to ſearche whether that lande toward the northe named *Terra de Laborador*, doo ioyne as one firme lande with Norwaye: Or whether there bee any ſtreight or open place of ſea as is moſte lyke there ſhulde bee, forasmuch as it is to bee thought that the fayde Indians dryuen by fortune abowte the coaſtes of Norway, came by that ſtreight or ſea, to the coaſtes of Germanie: And by the fayde ſtreight to faille northwest to diſcouer the landes and countreys of CATHAY, and from thenſe to fayle to the Ilandes of Molucca. And theſe ſurely ſhulde be enterpryeſ able to make men immortal. The whiche thynge, that ryght worthy gentleman maſter Antony di Mendoza confiderynge by the ſingular vertue and magnanimitie that is in hym, attempted to put this thynge in practiſe. For beinge viceroy of the countrey of Mexico (ſo named of the great citie Mexico otherwiſe cauled Temiſitan, nowe cauled newe Spayne, being in the xx. [twentieth] degree aboue the Equinoctiall, and parte of the fayde firme lande), he ſent certeyne of his capitaynes by lande, and alſo a nauie of ſhyppeſ by ſea, to ſearch this ſecrete. And I remember that when I was in Flaunders in Th[e]emperours courte, I ſaw his letter wrytten in the yeare. 1541. and dated from Mexico: wherin was declared howe towarde the northwest, he had found the kyngdomē of *Sette Citta* (that is) Seuen Cities, whereas is that cauled Ciuola by the reuerend father Marco da Niza: and howe beyonde the fayde kyngdomē yet further towarde the Northwest, Capitayne Francesco Vafques of Coronado, hauyng ouerpaffed great deferteſ, came to the ſea fyde where

Obdora.
Vecchiadoro.
Obo.
The lake Chethay.
The Tartars.
The citie of Cambalu.
Note this ſecrete.

Difficult
trauaylyng in
Moſcouia.

Commeadiation
of the Spaniardes
and Portugales.

The hystorie of
Paulus Centurio.
Of thiſ reads more
at large in the
ooke of Paulus
Centurio.
Malice may do
more with ſun
then vertue.
The Caspian ſea.
Riga.
Liuonia.

254
The Tartars of
Lordo.
Deseretes.
The viage by the
north ſea.

The woorthynesse
of thiſ vyage.

The viages of the
Frenchmen to the
land of Baccalaos.

Pleasant
countreys.
New Fraunce.
Apoſtrophe to the
Christian princes.

Great ryuer.
A thynge worthy
to be ſearched.

The way to
Cathay and the
Ilandes of Maluca
by the northwest
A notable
enterprye.

The noble
enterprye of
Antonio di Mendoza,
Viceroy of Mexico.
The diſcoveruyng
of the northwest
partes.

Shysps saylyngs
from Cathay by
the north
hyperborian sea
to the coastes of
the northwest
part of the lande
of Baccaloes.
Cathay.

The sea from new
Fraunce or Terra
Britonum to
Cathay.
A notable booke.

255

A great and
glorious enterprise.

Sebastian Cabote,
the grand pylote
of the west Indies.

Commendation of
Sebastian Cabote.

Sebastian Cabote
tould me that he
was born at
Brystow, and that
at iii. yeare owld
he was caried
with his father to
Venice and so
returned agayne
with his father after
certeyne yeares :
wherby he was
thought to haue
bias born in Venice.

The fyrt vyage
of Sebastian Cabote.

The lands of
Florida.

The seconds vyage
of Cabote to the
land of Bratile,
and Rio della
Plata.

Cabote tould me
that in a region
within this ryuer
he sowed l. (fifty)
graynes of weate in
September, and
gathered
therof l. 256
(fifty) thousand in
December as
wryteth alio
Francisco Lopes.

he found certeyne shypes which fayled by that sea with marchaudies, and had in theyr baner vpon the proos of theyr shypes, certeyne foulles made of golde and syluer which they of Mexico caule Alcatrazzi: And that theyr mariniers shewed by signes that they were. xxx. [thirty] dayes saylyng in commynge to that hauen: wherby he vnderfode that these shypes could bee of none other countrey then of Cathay, forasmuch as it is situate on the contrary parte of the fayde lande discouered. The fayde master Antonie wrote furthermore, that by the opinion of men well practifed, there was discouered so greate a space of that countrey vnto the fayd sea, that it passed. 950. leagues, which make. 2850. myles. And doublefesse of the Frenche men in this theyr newe Fraunce, wolde haue passed by lande towarde the fayd northwest: and by north, they shuld also haue founde the sea wherby they myght haue fayled to Cathay. But aboue all thynges, this seemed vnto me moſte worthy of commendation, that the fayde master Antonie wrote in his letter that he had made a booke of al the natural and maruelous thynges whiche they founde in searchyng those countreys, with also the measures of landes and altitudes of degrees: A worke doublefesse which fneweth a princely and magnificall mynde, wherby wee may conceaue that of god had gyuen hym the charge of the other hemispherie, he wolde or nowe haue made it better knownen to vs. The which thyng, I suppose no man doth greatly esteeme at this time: beinge neuertheleſſe the greatest and most glorious enterprise that may bee imagined.

And here makyng a certeyne paufe, and turnyng hym ſelue towarde vs, he fayde: Doo yow not vnderſtande to this purpoſe howe to paſſe to India toward the northwest wind, as dyd of late a citizen of Venete, fo valiente a man, and fo well practyſed in all thynges perteynyng to nauigations and the ſcience of Coſmographie, that at this preſent he hath not his lyke in Spayne, in fo much that for his vertues he is preferred aboue all other pylotes that ayle to the west Indies, who may not paſſe thither without his licence, and is therfore cauled *Piloto Maggiore* (that is) the graunde pylote. And when wee fayde that wee knewe him not, he proceſſed, fayingne, that beinge certeyne yeares in the citie of Siuile, and desyrous to haue ſum knowleage of the nauigations of the Spaniardes, it was tolde hym that there was in the citie a valient man, a Venecian borne, named Sebastian Cabote, who had the charge of thoſe thynges, being an expert man in that ſcience, and one that coulde make cardes for the ſea with his owne hande. And that by this reporte, feekynge his acquaintance, he founde hym a very gentell perfon, who enterteyned hym frendry and ſhewed him many thynges, and amone other a large mappe of the worlde with certeine particular nauigations awfull of the Portugales as of the Spaniardes. And that he ſpake further vnto hym, in this effecte. When my fathe- departed from Venete many yeares ſince to dwell in Englande to folowe the trade of marchaudies, he tooke me with him to the citie of London whyle I was very yonge, yet hauyng neuertheleſſe ſum knowleage of letters of humanite and of the ſphere. And when my father dyed in that tyme when newes were brought that Don Christopher Colonus Genueſe, had diſcouered the coaſtes of India, whereof was great talke in all the courte of kyng Henry the feuenth who then reigned: In fo much that all men with great admiration affirmed it to bee a thyng more diuine then humane, to fayle by the Weste into the Eaſt where ſpices growe, by a way that was neuer knownen before. By which fame and reporte, there increased in my harde a greate flame of defyre to atteempte ſum notable thyng. And vnderſtandynge by reaſon of the ſphere, that if I ſhulde fayle by the way of the northwest wynde, I ſhulde by a shorter tracte coomme to India, I thereupon caufed the kyng to bee aduertiffed of my diuife, who immediatly comauanded two carauels to bee furnyſhed with all thynges apperteynyng to the vyage, which was as farre as I remember, in the year. 1496. in the begynnynge of sommer. Begynnynge therfore to faille towarde Northwest, not thykynge to fynde any other lande then that of CATHAY, and from thenſe to turne towarde India. But after certeine dayes, I founde that the lande ranne towarde the Northe, which was to me a great diſpleaſure. Neuertheleſſe, fayling alonge by the coaſt to fee if I could fynde any goule that turned, I founde the lande ſtill continent to the. 56. degree vnder owe pole. And feinge that there the coaſt turned toward the Eaſt, diſpairinge to fynd the paſſage, I turned backe agayne, and fayled downe by the coaſt of that lande toward the Equinoctiall (euer with intent to fynde the fayde paſſage to India) and came to that parte of this firme lande whiche is nowe cauled FLORIDA. Where, my vyttailes fayling, I departed from thenſe and returned into England, where I founde great tumultes amone the people, and prepaſſance for warres in Scotlande: by reaſon whereof, there was no more conſideration had to this vyage Wherupon I wente into Spayne to the Catholyke kyng, and queene Elizabeth: who beinge aduertiffed what I had doone, interteyned me, and at theyr charges furnyſhed certeyne shypes wherwith they caufed me to fayle to diſcouer the coaſtes of Bratile, where I founde an excedyng great and large ryuer, named at this preſent *Rio della Plata* (that is) the ryuer of ſyluer, into the which I fayled, and folowed it into the firme lande more then fyxe hundredthe leagues, fyndyng it every where verye fayre and inhabited with infinite people, which with admyratiyon came runnyng dayly to owe ſhypes. Into this ryuer, runne ſo many other riuers, that it is in manner incredible. After this, I made many other viages, which I nowe pretermittē. And wexyng owlde, I gyue my ſeife to rest from ſuch trauayles bycause there are nowe many younge and lusty pylotes and mariniers of good experience, by whose forwardeneſſe I doo reioyſe in the frutes of my labours, and rest with the charge of this office as yow ſee.

And this is as much as I haue vnderstoode of master Sebastian Cabote, as I haue gathered owte of dyuers nauigations wrytten in the Italian toonge.

And whereas I haue before made mention howe Moscouia was in owr tyme discouered by Richard Chanceler in his viage toward Cathai by the direction and information of the sayde master Sebastian who longe before had this secrete in his mynde, I shall not neede here to describe that viage, forasmuche as the same is largely and saythfully written in the Laten tonge by that lerned young man Clement Adams scole mayster to the Queens henshemmen, as he receaued it at the mouthe of the sayde Richard Chanceler. Neuerthelesse I haue thought good here to speake sumwhat of Moscouia as I haue redde in the booke of Iohn Faber written in the Latin toonge to the ryght noble Prynce Ferdinando Archeduke of Austria and Infant of Spaine, of the maners and religion of the Moscouites, as he was partly instructed by the ambasadours of the duke of Moscouie sent into Spayne to Th[e]emperours maiestie in the yeare. M.D.XX.V. He wryteth therfore as foloweth.

I thynke it syrle conueniente to speake sumwhat of the name of this region wherby it is cauled at this day, and how it was cauled in owlde tyme. Conferynge therfore the moste ancient of the Greeke and latine monumentes with the histories of later tyme, I perceave it to bee a thynge which requireth no smaule judgement of wytte and lernynge. For we fee in howe shorte tyme the names of thynges are chaunged, as are also the maners of men. I fynde therfore that thoſe people whom at this day wee commonly caule Moscouites, were in tyme past (as wytnefſt Plinie) cauled *Roxolani*, whom neuerthelesſe by chaungyng one letter, Ptolomie in his eyght table of Europe, caueth *Rosolano* as dooth alſo Strabo. They were also many yeares cauled *Rutheni*: And are that people which sumtyme fought manfullly ageynſt the Capitaynes of Methridates as Strabo wryteth. They were cauled Moscouites of the chiefe citie of al the prouince named Moscouia or Mosca: or (as Volaterane faith) of the riuere Moſco. They were sumtyme gouerned by duke Iohan, whose wyfe was Helena of the lynage of Th[e]emperours of Conſtantinople of the noble famelie of the Paleologi. Beyonde these Roxolanos, Strabo sayth there is no lande inhabited. These Ruthenians therfore or Moscouites, are people of the northeſte parte of the worlde from vs: And are determined with the limettes of the great ryuer Borithenes of Scithia, on the one syde with the Lituaniſts and Polonians, and on the other syde with the Tartars who ceafe not to vexe them with continual warres and incursions. Especially the great Emperour Chan of Cathay the chiefe Prince of the Tartars, residente by the ſea syde in Taurico Chersoneso, moleſteth them with fore warres. They are towarde the north ſyde incloſed with the froſen ſea, the lande of whose coaſtes beinge verye large, perteyneth in maner all to the dominion of the duke of Moscouie. This ſea is it which the owlde wryters caule *Lacus Cronicus*, ſo named of the Greeke word *Cronos*, which the Latines caule *Saturnus* whom they fayne to bee an owlde man, of complexion coulde and flowe, and thereby name all ſuch thynges as are coulde and flowe, *Cronica*, as by lyke reaſon they dyd this northe ſea which beinge in maner euer froſen, is flowe and coulde and in maner immouable. And for lyke conſideration (as faythe Plinie) Hethens nameth it in the Scythian toonge, *Amaltheum*, which woerde ſignifieth as muche as congeled or froſen. But that I wander not farre frome my purpoſe: Th[e]empire and dominion of the duke of Moscouie recheth ſo farre that it comprehendeth certeyne partes of Asia and alſo of Europe. The citie of Moscouia or Moſca, is counted twyſe as bygge as Colonia Agrippina as they faythfully reporte which knowe bothe. Vnto this they haue alſo an other not vnequal in byggenesse cauled Fladimer. Alſo Bleſcouia, Nouogradia, Smolne, and Otifer, al which, theyr ambasadours affirme to bee of princely and magnificall biuyldynges, and ſtrongely defended with waules bothe of brycke and ſquare ſtone. Of theſe, Bleſcouia is ſtrongeſt and enuironed with three waules. Other which they haue innumerable are not fo famous as are theſe wherof this duke of Moscouie and Emperour of Russia taketh th[e]inſcription of his title. For euē at this preſent, when ſo euer eyther by his ambasadours or his letters, he dooth ſignifie hym ſelfe to bee Emperour of Moscouie, he is accuſtomed to vſe this title. Basilius by the grace of God Emperour of all Russia and greate Duke of Fladamer, Moscouie, Nouigrade, Bleſcouia, Smolne, and Otifer, etc. And this is the tytle whereby the ſayde ambasadours ſaluted yourre maiestie in the name of great Basilius when they began their oration. This prince of Moscouie hath vnder hym princes of many prouinces and thoſe of great poure: Of the which, that owlde whyte bearded man whom this Emperour of the Ruthians ſente for his ambasadoure to Th[e]emperours maiestie into Spayne, is not one of the leaſt. For euē he when neceſſite of warre requyret, is accuſtomed to make for his Emperour a bande of xxx. [thirty] thouſande horfemen. But this is to theyr ſingular commendation that they are fo obedient to theyr prince in al thynges, that beinge ſommoned by hym by neuer fo meane an heaſald, they obey incontinent as if it were to god,

The vyage to
Moscouia.

The hystorye of
Moscouia.

The dyuers names
of Moscouia.

Roxolani.
Rosolano.
Rutheni.

The ryuer Mosco.

The ryuer
Borithenes.

The feſtemperour of
Cathay.

The froſen ſea.
Lacu Cronicus.
Saturnus.

Amaltheum.
The dominion of
the duke of
Moscouia.
The citie of
Moscouia.
The chiefe cities of
Moscouia.

257
The duke of
Moſcouia and
Emperour of
Russia.
The duke of
Moſcouia his tytle.

Duke Basilius.
Their poure.
Theyr obediencie
to their prince.

Theyr wars and
conquies.

Gunnes.
Only the
moscouites haue
not felte the
commodities of
peace.
Theyr language.

Dalmatia.
Pannonia.
Hungarie.
Theyr original.
The Sclauon
toonge reacheath
farre.

Great woods
white beares and
blacke woulues.

Abundance of
hony and waxe.

Rych furses.

Theyr maner of
bargenyng

Rude and wylde
people.
Tartarae.

258

Ciuile people in
cities.

Theyr money

They embrace the
Christian faith
whiche thei
receaved of the
Apostles.
The counsile of
Nicene.

Basilius Magnus.
Chrisostomus

Theyr constancie
in theyr religion.

The bysshoppes
define
controueries in
religion.
Theyr bysslops.

The
Archebyshoppe.
The patriarke of
Constantinopole.
A notable example
of a Christian
prynce.

thynkyng nothyng more glorious then to dye in the quarell of theyr prince. By reason of which obedience, they are able in short tyme, to assemble an army of two or three hundred thousand men agaynst theyr enemies ethyer the Tartars or the greate Cham: And haue hereby obteyned great victories and triumphes awell agaynst the Turkes as the Tartars by the exceeding multitude of theyr horsemen and continual experiance in warres. At such time as Th[e]Emperour Maximilian made a league with them, they kept warre agaynst the kyng of Polonie. They vse not only bowes and darpes after the maner of the Parthians, but haue also the vse of gunnes as we haue. And to bee briefe, only the Moscouites maye seeme that nation whiche hath not felte the commodities of peace: In so muche that yf theyr region were not strongly defended by the nature of the place beinge impregnable, it had or nowe byn often tymes conquered. Theyr language agreeth much with the toonge of the Bohemians, Croatians, and Sclauons: so that the Sclauon dooth playnly vnderstande the Moscouite, although the Moscouian toonge be a more rude and harde phrasfe of speach. The historiographers wryte that the Sclauons toonge the name of the confusion whiche was in Babell in the tyme of that flouyt hunter Nemroth of whomē mention is made in the Genefis. But I can not enowgh marueyle at this thing, that wheras betwene Dalmatia (now cauled Sclauonia) and Moscouia, both the Pannoniens are situate, yet this notwithstandinge, the Hungarians toonge nothyng agreeth with the Moscouites. Wherby wee maye conjecture that these nations were sumtymes diuided by legions, and that they came owt of Dalmatia thither: whiche thynge alio Volateranus affirmeth, sayinge that the language of the Ruthenians (whiche are the Moscouites) is *Semidualmatica* (that is) halfe Sclauone. Howe fo euer it bee, this is certeyne that the Bohemians, Croatians, Sclauons, and Moscouites, agree in language as wee perceave by th[e]interpretours which yowre maiestie had then in yowre courte. For whereas the sayde interpretours were borne amone the Croatians and Sclauons and none of them had euer byn in Moscouia, or beefore that tyme had any conuerterion with them, yet dyd they well vnderstande the ambassadours woordes.

There are in Moscouia, wooddes of exeadyng byggenesse, in the which blacke woolues and whyte beares are hunted. The caufe wherof may bee th[e]extreme cold of the north, which uooth greatly alter the complexions of beastes, and is the mother of whytenesse as the Philosophers affirme. They haue also great plentie of bees, wherby they haue such abundance of hony and waxe that it is with them of finaull price. When the commoditie of theyr countrey is neglected by reasoun of longe warres, theyr chiefe aduaantage whereby they haue all thynges necessarie towarde theyr lyuyng, is the gaines which they haue by theyr rych furses, as Sables, Marternes, Luzernes, molt whyte armys, and such other which they sell to marchauntes of dyuers countreys. They bye and sell with simple saythe of woordes exchaungyng ware for ware without any curios bonds or cautels. And albeit they haue the vse of both golde and sylver monyes, yet doo they for the most part exchaunge their furses for frutes and other thynges necessarie to mainteine theyr lyfe. There are also sum people vnder the dominion of this Emperour, which haue neither wyne nor wheate, but lyue only by fleshe and mylke as doo the wylde Tartars theyr brotherers which dwel in wods by the coastes of the frofren sea. These people are brutylle, and lyue in maner lyke wylde beastes. But they of the citie of Mosca and Nouigrade, and other cities, are ciuile people: and agree with vs in eatynge of fyshe and fleshe althowgh theyr maner of coquerie is in manye thynges differente frome oures. Volaterane wryteth that the Ruthenians vse money vncoyned. And inquiryng further, I was informed that the money of Hungary is much currant with them. But this is chieflye to bee confydered, that they imbrase the Christian faith which they affirme to haue byn preached to them syrly by saynt Andrewe th[e]apostle and broother to Simon Peter. Such doctrine also as vnder Constantine the greate, in the yeare CCC. xviii. [three hundred and eighteen] was concluded in the fyrt generall counfaile helden in the citie of Nicene in Bithynia, and there determined by CCC. xviii. [three hundred and eighteen] bysshoppes, and also such as hath byn wrytten and tawght by the Grecce doctoures Basilius Magnus and Chriostomus, they beleue to bee so holy, firme and sincere, that they thinke it no more lawfull one heare to transgresse or go backe from the same, then from the gofstell of Christ. For theyr constancie and modestie is such, that no man dare caule those thynges into question which haue once byn decyfed by holy fathers in theyr general counfailes. They doo therfore with a more constante mynde perseuer in theys syrly faith which they receaved of saynt Andrewe th[e]apostle and his successours and holy fathers, than doo manye of vs. beinge diuided into scismes and sectes whiche thynge never chaunceth amone them. But if any difficultie chaunce to rise as touchyng the faith or custome of religion, all is referred to the archbyshoppe and other byshoppes as to bee defined by theyr spirite: not permittinge any iudgemente to the inconstante and ignorant people. Theyr archebyshoppe is residente in the citie of Mosca, where also Th[e]Emperoure keepethe his courte. They haue lykewyfe dyuers other byshops: as one in Nouigradia, where also Isodorus was byshop vnder pope Eugenius. They haue an other in Rosciuia, an other in Sultali, an other in Otiferi: also in Smolne, in Refan, in Colmum, and in Volut, all which haue theyr dioces. They acknowleage theyr Archebyshoppe as the chiefe. Before the patriarche of Constantinopole was oppresst by the Tiranni of the Turkes, this Archebyshoppe recognisid hym as his superioure. In so much that this duke of Moscouia and Emperour of Russia, not vnymydefull hereof but a diligent obseruer of his accustomed religion, dooth at this daye yearly

ch obedience,
theyr enemies
awfull ageynst
yne in warres.
The kyng of
the vfe of gunnes
felte the com-
mune of the place
with the toonge
the Moscouite,
thers wryte that
Emperour Nemroth
heras betwene
standynghe, the
nations were
to Volateranus
natica (that is)
and Molcouites,
the courte. For
had euer byn
derstande the

whyte beares
alter the com-
so great plentie
re. When the
they haue all
es, Marternes,
They bye and
ls. And albeit
furses for frutes
on of this Em-
Tartars theyr
in maner lyke
and agree with
e frome owres.
formed that the
ey imbrake the
e and brother
e hundred and
nd there deter-
en and tawght
l sincere, that
pell of Christ.
ich haue once
ynde perfeuer
holy fathers,
e them. But
archbyshoppe
he inconstan
[e]mpemoure
Iodorus was
tifer: also in
Archebyshop
Turkes, this
Emperour of
daye yearlye

sende a certeyne stypende in maner of almes to the patriarche of Constantinople, that he may with more quiete
mynd looke for th[e]ende of this his Egypitian seruitude vntyll it shal pleafe almyghty god to restore hym to his
former churche and autoritie. For he iudgeth it much impietie, if he shulde nowe forlake hym whos predi-
cessoures haue ruled and gouerned so many churches, and of whom the fauth and religion of so many regions
and prouinces haue depended.

But to speake brieflye of theyr religion, they agree in many thynges with vs, and in sum thynges folow the
Greekes. They haue munkes and religious men. Not farre from the citie of Mosca, they haue a great monasterie
in the whiche are three hundredth munkes lyuyng vnder the rule of Basilius Magnus in the which is also the
sepulcher of S. Sergius the abbot. They obserue their vowe of chasfitie which none may breake that haue once
profesed. Yet such as haue maried virgins of good fame, may bee admitted to th[e]order of presthod, but may
neuer bee a munke. The prestes and bysshops whiche are admitted to orders vnmaried, may neuer after bee
maried: nor yet such as haue wiues, mary ageine when they are dead, but liue in perpetual chasfitie. Such as
committe adulterie or fornication, are greeuously punysshed by the bysshopes and deprived of the benefices.
They celebrate masse after the maner of the Greekes which differeth from owres in dyuers things, as in
fermented breade after the maner of the Greekes. They put in the chaleffe as much water as redde wine, which
water they vse to heate, bycause (not without a great mysterie) there is shewed furth of the fyde of owe lorde,
both blud and water, which wee ought by good reason to thynke was not without heate: for els shulde it
scarfely haue byn iudged for a miracle. In fine, they affirme that all theyr customes and rytes are accordyng
to th[e]institutions of the primatyue church and the doctrine of Bafilius Magnus, and Chrifostomus. In this
thynghe they differ greatlye from vs, that they minister the communion to younge children of three yeares
of age, which they doo with fermented breade dipte in a sponefull of wyne, and gyue it them for the bodye and
bludde of Chryste.

C A briefe description of Moscouia after the later wryters, as Sebastian Munster and Iacobus Gastaldus.

Theyr religion.
A monasterie of
ccc. [three
hundred] monkes

Preestes.

Masse.
A mysterie.

The primitive
church.
A straunge
custom.

259

Sarmatia asiatica.

The Scythian
Ocean.
The ryuer of
Volga.
Lacus albus.
The Caspian sea.

Theyr chief cities.

The wylde Tartars

Hordas.

The bygnes of the
cite of Moscouia.

Syluer.
The region of
Moscouia.
Beastes.



He prouince of Molcouia, is so named by the ryuer Mosco which passeth by the metropolitane
cittie of Molcouia cauled Mosca by the name of the ryuer Mosco. This prouince was cauled
of the owlde wryters, Sarmatia Asiatica. The bortherers or confines to the Molcouians on
the one syde towarde the Eaſt, are the Tartars cauled Nogai, and the Scianbanians, with the
Zagatians. Towarde the West, the prouinces of Liuonia and Lituania. Towarde the South,
the ryuer of Tanais and the people confyning with the ryuer Volga, cauled of the owlde
wryters Rha. And towarde the North, the Ocean ſea cauled the Scythian ſea, and the
region of Lapponia. Molcouia is in maner all playne and full of maryſhes, wooddes, and many very great
ryuers wherof the ryuer of Volga is the principal. Sum caul this Ledyl, as the owlde autours named it Rha.
It beginneth at the great lake cauled Lacus Albus (that is) the white lake and runneth into the ſea of Bachau,
named of the aunciente wryters, the ſea Cappium or Hircanum. Under the dominion of Molcouia, are certeyne
regions and dukedomes: as Alba Rusſia (that is) whyte Rusſia. Alſo Colmogora, Plescouia, Baſrida, Nouo-
gardia, with also manye places of the Tartars which are ſubiecte to the duke of Molcouia. The chife cities of
Molcouia, are Mofca, Plescouia, Nouogardia, Colmogora, Otogeria, Viatra, Smolenfer, Percaflavia, Cologna,
Volodemaria, Roſtauia, and Caſſam. The people of Molcouia are Christians, and haue greata abundance of
hony and waxe: alſo ryche furses, as Sabels, Marternes, Foynes, Calaber, and dyuers other. All the Tartars
which inhabite towarde the Eaſt beyonde the ryuer of Volga, haue no dwellynge places, nor yet cities or castels.
But carri awoþ with theym certeyne cartes or wagens couered with beaſtes hydes, vnder the whiche they reſte,
as wee do in owe houſes.

They remoue togither in great companies whiche they caule Hordas. They are warlike people and good
horſemen, and are all Macometiftes.

Sebastian Munſter in his booke of Vniuersall Cosmographie, wryteteth that the citie of Mosca
or Molcouia conteineth in circuite, xiiiij. [fourteen] myles, and that it is twyfe as bigge as the citie of Praga in Bo-
heme. Of the countrey of Molcouia, biſyde other prouinces ſubiecte to the fame, he wryteteth thus. It extendeth
in largenesſe four hundredth myles, and is rich in ſyluer. It is lawfull for no man to go owt of the realme or coome
in without the dukes letters. It is playne without mountaynes, and ful of wooddes and maryſhes. The beaſtes
there by reaſon of the coulde, are leſſe then in other countreis more ſouthwarde. In the myddleſt of the citie

A fyare and
stronge castel in
the citie of Mosca.
The dukes
pallaice.
Theyr drynke.
They are gyuen to
drunkennesse.

Corne and grayne.

Stoues.
The famous ryuer
of Tanais.

260
The marysashes of
Meotis.
Volga.
Ocha.
The sea Euxinum.
The forest of
hircania.
Vri.
Alces.

They trausyl in
wynter on sledges.

Causeys of tymber.

Trees and frutes.

Corne and grayne.

Hony in wode
and trees.

Lakes or pooles of
hony.

A man almost
drowned in hony.

A marueilous
chaunce.

Bearas feedes of
hony and bees.

Bearas inuade
bulles.
The bears byrth.

of Mosca beinge situate in a playne, there is a castell with. xvii. towres and three bulwarkeſ ſo ſtronge and fyare, that the lyke are ſcarfely feene in any other place. There are alſo in the caſtelle xvi. churches, and three very large courtes in the which the noble men of the courte haue theyr lodgynges. The dukes pallaice is buyldeſ after the maner of the Italian buyldynge, and very fayſe, but not great. Theyr drynke is mede and beere as is the maner of the moſte parts of the people that inhabite the North partes of the woordle. They are excedaingly gyuen to droonkenneſſe. Yet (as ſume faye) the princes of the lande are prohibite in peine of death to abſtaine from ſuch ſtronge drinkeſ as are of force to inebriate, except at certeyne tymeſ when licence is graunted heym, as twyſe or thryſe in the yeare. They plowe the grownde with horses and plowes of woodde. Theyr corne and other grayne by reaſon of longe coulde, doo ſeldome waxe ripe on the ground by reaſon wherof they are fulmiſe inforced to ripe and dry them in theſt flooues and hottes houſes, and then gryd them. They lacke wyne and oyle. Moſcouia is extended vnto Iurham and Corelia which are in Scythia. The famous ryuer of Tanais, the Moſcouites caule Don, hauyng his ſprynges and originnall in Moſcouia in the dukedom of Rezenfe. It ryfeth owt of a grownde that is playne, baren, muddy, full of maryſhes and wooddeſ. And where it proceadeth toward the Eaſt to the mountaynes of Scithia and Tartarie, it bendeth to the fouth: and commyng to the maryſhes of Meotis it fauleth into them. The ryuer of Volga (ſumetyme cauled Rha, and nowe cauled of the Tartars Edel) runneth toward the north certeyne myles, to whom is ioyned the ryuer Occa or Ocha, flowyng owt of Moſcouia, and then bendeſ into the South and increaſed with many other ryuers, fauleth into the ſea Euxinum, which diuideth Europe and Asia. The woodde or foreſt cauled Hircania ſylua, occupieth a ſmal portion of Moſcouia. Yet is it fulmewhere inhabited, and by the longe labour of men made thinner and barer of trees. In that parte that lyeth toward Pruffia, is a kynde of greate and fierce bulleſ cauled Vri or Bisomes, as wryteth Paulus Iouius. There are alſo Alces muche lyke vnto harteſ, with longe frenches of fleſſe and longe legges without any bowinge of theiſt houſe or paternes. Theſe beaſteſ, the Moſcouites caule Lozzi, and the Almaynes Heleneſ. The iornaye that is betwene Vlina of Lituanie by Smoleneſ to Moſca, is traуayled in wynter on fledgeſ by the ſnowe congealed by longe froſte, and made very flypperye and compacte lyke Iſe by reaſon of much wearyng and treadyng, by meaneſ wherof thiſe viage is performed with incrediblē celeritie. But in the ſommer, the playne countreyſ can not bee ouercome without difficulte labour. For when the ſnowe begynneth to bee diſſolued by continuall heate, it caufeth maryſhes and quamyres inextricable and daungerous both for horſe and man, were it not for certeyne caufeſ made of tymber with in maner infinite labour. The region of Moſcouia (as I haue ſaid) beareth neyther vynes nor olyve trees, nor yet any other trees that bere any apples or frutes of very pleſant or fwete fauour or taſte except chery trees, for as much as al tender frutes and trees are burnte of the coulde blaſteſ of the North wynde. Yet doo the fieldes bear all kyndes of corne, as wheate and the grayne cauled Siligo, wherof the fyneſt kynde of breaſe is made: alſo mylle and panyke, whiche the Italiens caule Melica: Likewyſe all kyndes of pulse, as beaneſ, peafon, tares, and ſuche other. But theyr chife haruest confiſteſ of hony and waxe, forasmuch as the hole region is replenifyng with frutefull beeſ which make moſt ſweete hony, not in the hufbande mens hyues, but euen in holowe trees. And hereby commeth it to paſſe that both in the wooddeſ and ſhalowed launes, are feene many ſwarms of beeſ hangyng on the boves of trees, fo that it ſhall not bee neceſſarie to caule them togither or charme them with the ſounde of baſens. There are oftentymeſ ſounde greate maſſeſ of hony combeſ, conſerued in treeſ of the owlde hony forſaken of beeſ, forasmuch as the hufband men can not ſeeke every tree in fo great and large wooddeſ: In fo much that in the flockes or bodies of excedaing great and holowe treeſ, are fulmytymeſ ſounde great pooleſ or lakes of hony. Demetrius the ambaffadour of the duke of Moſcouia whom he ſent to the byfhop of Rome not many yeareſ ſence, made relation that a hufband man of the contrey not fare from the place where he remayned, feykynge in the wooddeſ for hony, deſcended into a greate holowe tree full of hony into the which he flypte vp to the breſt, and lyued there only with hony for the ſpace of two dayeſ, caulynge in wayne for helpe in that deferte of wooddeſ. And that in fine diſplaynge of helpe, he escaped by a marueilous chaunce, beinge drawen owt by a great beare that deſcended into the tree, with her loyneſ downewarde after the maner of men. For when the man (as preſent neceſſitie and oportunitie ferude) perceaued the beare to bee within his reache, he ſuddenlie clafped her abouſt the loyneſ with his armeſ, and with a terrible crye prouoked the beaſt to inforce her ſtrength to leape owt of the tree, and therwith to drawe hym owt, as it chaunced in deede.

These regions abounde with beareſ whiche euer where ſeeke both hony and beeſ, not only herewith to ſyl their bellieſ, but alſo to helpe their fyght. For theyr eyeſ are oftentymeſ dulled, and theyr mouthes wounded of the beeſ: both which greeſes are eaſed by eatynge of hony. They haue weakeſt headeſ, as lions haue ſtrongeſt. In fo muche that when (beinge thereto inforced) they caſte theim felueſ downe headelonge from any rockeſ, they couer their headeſ with their fiete, and lie for a tyme aſtoonyſhed and halfe deade with knockeſ. They walke fulmytyme on two fiete, and ſpoyle treeſ backewarde. Sumtymeſ alſo they inuade bulleſ, and fo hange on them with al theyr fiete, that they wery them with weight. The beare (as ſayth Plinic)

nge and fayre,
and three very
ce is buylded
d beere as is
y are exceed-
e of death to
ce is graunted
odde. Theyr
n wherof they
them. They

The famous
dukedome of
boddles. And
the south: and
led Rha, and
ne ryuer Occa
y other ryuers,
Hircania sylua,
of men made
d fierce bulles
es, with longe
be beastes, the
ia by Smolenfe
very flisperye
e is performed
hout difficulte
marysshes and
eyes made of
her vynes nor
or tafte except
a wynde. Yet
nest kynde of
es of pulfe, as
asmuch as the
e mens hyues,
alowed launes,
to caule them
haftes of hony
can not seeke
nge great and
f the duke of
bande man of
cended into a
h hony for the
lispayryng of
into the tree,
nd oportunitie
with his armes,
nd therewith to
ly herewith to
heyr mouthes
ades, as lions
ne headelonge
fe deade with
inuade bulles,
sayth Plinie)

bryngeth furth her by th the. xxx. [thirtieth] day and oftentimes two. Theyr byrth is a certeyne whyte masse of fleshe without forme and little bigger then a mouse without eyes, and without heare, with onely the nayles or clawes commynge foorth. But the damme with continual lyckyng, by lytle and lytle figurethe the informe byrthe. When shee entereth into the denne whiche shee hath chofen, shee creepeth thyther with her belly vpwarde leste the place shulde bee founde by the steppes of her fiete. And being there deliuuered of her byrthe, remayneth in the same place for the space of. xiii. dayes immoueable as wryteth Aristoteles. They lyue without meatte fortie dayes, and for that tyme susteyne them selues only by lyckyng and sucking their ryght foote. At the lengthe chaunfyng to synde meatte, they fyll them selues so full, that they remyd that surfecte by vomynte whiche they prouoke by eatynge of antes. Theyr byrthe is oppresed with so heauy a fleape for the space of. xiii. dayes, that it can not bee rayfed eyther with prickinges or woundes, and in the meane tyme growe exceedingyng fat. After. xiii. dayes they wake from sleepe, and begyn to liske and sucke the soles of their fore fiete and lyue thereby for a space: Nor yet is it apparent that they lyue by any other meatte vntyll the spryng tyme of the year. At whiche tyme begynnynge to runne abrode, they feede of the tender buds and younge sprigges or braunches of trees, and other herbes correspondent to their lyppes.

Before fve hundredre yeares, the Moscouites honoured the goddes of the gentyles: And then fyrste receaued the Christian faith when the bysshoppes of Grecia began to dicent from the churche of the Latines: and therfore receaued the rites of the Greekes. They minister the sacrament with fermented breade vnder both kyndes: And thinkne that the soules of deade menne are not helped with the suffragies of preestes, nor yet by the devotion of their frendes or kinsfolkes: Also that the place of Purgatorie is a fable. In the tyme of the diuine seruice, the hystoriue of the miracles of Christe and the Epistels of saynt Paule are rehearsed owt of the pulpitte. Beyonde Moscouia, are manye people whiche they caule Scythians, and are partly subiecte to the Prince of Moscouia. These are they which duke Iuan subdied, as are the people of Perm, Baskird, Cziremissa, Iuhra, Corela, and Permska. These people were Idolatours before the duke compelled them to baptisme, and appoynted a byshop ouer them named Steuen, whom the Barbarians after the departure of the duke, fleyde alye and slew. But the duke returnyng shortly after, afflicted them sore and assigned them a newe bysshope.

It is here also to bee noted that the owlde Cosmographers fayned that in these regions towarde the Northe pole, there shuld bee certeyne great mountaynes which they cauled Ripheos and Hyperboreos, which neuerthelesse are not founde in nature. It is also a fable that the ryuers of Tanais and Volham doo spryng owt of hygh mountaynes, wheras it is apparent that both these ryuers and many other, haue their original in the playnes.

Nexete to Moscouia, is the frutefull region of Colmogora through the whiche runneth the ryuer of Diuidna beinge the greatest that is knownen in the north partes of the world. This ryuer increaseth at certeyne tymes of the yeare dooth the ryuer of Nilus in Egypte, overfloweth the fyldes round about, and with abundaunce of fette moysture, refiseth the couldenesse of the ayer. Wheate sowne in the grounde, groweth abundauntly without plowyng: and fearynge the newe iniurie of the proude ryuer, spryngeth, groweth, and ryppeth with woondershfull celerite of haftynge nature.

Into the ryuer of Diuidna runneth the ryuer of Iuga: And in the very angle or corner where they meeet, is a famous marke towne named Vsiuga, beinge a hundredth and sytis myles distant from the chiefe citie of Mofca. To this mart towne from the hygher countreys, are sent the precious furrers of marternes, sables, woolues and such other whiche are exchaunged for dyuers other kyndes of wares and marchaudies.

Hytherto Munsterus.

And forasmuche as many doo maruaile that suche plentie of hony shuld bee in so coole a contrey, I haue thought good to declare the reasoun and naturall cause hereof. It is therefore to be considered that lyke as splices, gums, and odoriferous frutes are engendered in hot regions by continual heate duryng al the hole yeare without imprefion of the mortifying qualite of could wherby al thynges are constrainyd as they are dilated by heate, even so in could and moyst regions (whose moysture is thinner and more waterys) are flowres engendered more abundantly as caused by imprefion of lessis and saynter heate woorkyng in thyinne matter of waterys the moisture lesse concocete then the matter of gummes and splices and other vncuous frutes and trees growing in hotte regions. For althoughe (as Munster saith here before) the region of Moscouia beareth nother vines or olives, or any other frutes of sweete fauoure by reason of the couldenesse therof, neuerthelesse forasmuch as flowres (wherof hony is chiefly gatne, &c) may in sommer seafon growe abundantly in the playnes, marysshes, and wooddes, not onely on the grownde but also on trees in coulde regions, it is agreeable to good reasoun that great plentie of hony shuld bee in suche regions as abounde with flowres, which are brought furthe with the fyrst degree of heate and fyrst approch of the sonne, as appeareth in the spryng tyme not onely by the springinges of flowres in fyldes and gardeynes, but also of blofomes of trees spryngyng before the leaues or frute, as the lyghter and thynner matter fyrste drawne owte with the loweste and leaste degree of heate, as the

261
The beares denne.

Beares lyne
without meatte. xl.
(forty) dayes.
The sleape of
beares.

The religion of the
Moscouites.

The Scythians
subiecte to the
duke of Moscouia.

It was then an
opinion that al
riuers spronge
owte of montaines

The frutefull
region of
Colmogora.
The great riuere
Diuidna.
Wheate without
plowing

The ryuer of Iuga.
Vsiuga.
Furres.

The natural cause
of such hony in
cold regions.
Gummes and
splices in hot
countreys.

Flowres in coulde
regions
262

Flowres of trees.

Blossomes of
trees.

An exemple of the degrees of heate.

The generation of floures by moderate heate.

Longe dayes and shorte nyghtes. Bramble and ferme. Spices.

The sauoure of floures.

What Plinie wryteth of hony.

Serius is otherwyse cauled Ciconia, this is the daye, of whom the canicular dayes haue their name.

What is hony

Howe hony is corrupted.

Hony of great quantite in North regions

263
Hot nyghtes in coulde regions.
A similitude.

Natural heat dooth subte and digest all thynges.

Subte vapours digested by heate.

Coulde regions

Ziglerus.

lyke is feene in the arte of styllinge wherby all thinne and lyght moystures are lyfted vp by the fyrste degree of the fyre: and the heuyest and thickest moystures are drawne owt with more vehement fyre. As we may therfore in this case compare the generation of floures to the heate of May, the generation of gummes to the heate of June and splices to the heate of July. Euen so in suche coulde regions whiche foummer agreeth rather with the temperate heate and moysture of May then with th[e]extreme heate of the other monethes, that heate is more apt to brynge foorth abundance of floures as thynges caused by moderate heate, as playnely appeareth by theyr tast and sauoure in which is no sharpe qualite of heate eyther bytyng the toonge or offendyng the head as is in splices, gummes, and frutes of hotte regions. And as in could and playne regions, moderate heate with abundance of moysture, are causes of the generation of floures (as I haue sayde) so lykewylle the length of the dayes and shortnesse and warmenesse of the nyghtes in sommer seafon in suche coulde regions, is a greate helpe herunto. Cardanus wryteth in his booke *De Plantis*, that bramble and ferme growe not but in could regions, as dooth wheate in temperate regions. And that splices and hotte seedes, can not growe in coulde regions, forasmuch as beinge of thinne substancialle, they shulde soone be mortified and extinct by excessiue could. For (as he sayth) nothing can concoete, ripe, and attenuate the substance of frutes without the helpe of ayer agreeable to the natures of such thynges as are brought foorth in the same, althowgh it may doo this in rootes. But in maner all floures are of sweete sauour, forasmuch as the moysture that is in them, being thinne and but lyttle, is by meane heate soone and easely concoete or made ripe. Such also as are soone ripe, are soone rotten according to the proverbe.

Plinie, althowgh in the. xi. booke of his naturall hystorie, Cap. viii. he wryteth that hony is gathered of the floures of all trees and sets of plantes, except forell and the herbe cauled *Chenopode* (which sume caule goose foote) yet he affirmeth that it descendeth from the ayer: for in the. xii. chapytur of the same booke, he wryteth thus.

This coommeth from the ayer at the ryfynge of certeyne starres, and especially at the ryfynge of *Sirius*, and not before the ryfynge of *Vergilius* (which are the feuen starres cauled *Pleiades*) in the spryng of the day. For then at the mornynge spryng, the leaues of trees are founde moist with a fat dewe: In so much that such as haue bynne abrode vnder the firmamente at that tyme, haue theyr apparell annoyned with lyuoire and the heare of theyr headde clammy. And whether this bee the swette of heauen, or as it were a certeyne spetyle of the starres, eyther the iuise of the ayer pourgyng it selfe, I wolde it were pure, liquide, and simple of his owne nature as it fyrste faultheit from aboue. But nowe decydeng so far, and infected not only with such vncleane vapours and exhalations, as it meteth with by the way, but afterward also corrupted by the leaues of trees, herbes, and floures of sundrye tastes and qualities, and lykewylle awel in stomackes of the bees (for they vomite it at theyr mouthes) as also by longe referuyng the same in hiues, it neuerthelesis reteyneth a great parte of the heauenly nature. &c. Ageyne in the. xiii. chapytur of the same booke, he wryteth that in certeyne regions toward the north, as in sum places of Germanie, hony is found in such quantite that there haue bynne feene hony combes of eyght foote longe, and blacke in the holowe parte. By the whiche woordes of Plinie, and by the principles of naturall philosopie, it dooth appere that abundance of hony shulde chiefly bee engendered in such regions where the heate of foummer is temperate and continuall awell by nyght as by day as it is not in hotter regions where the nyghtes be longe and coulde as is declared in the Decades. For lyke as suche thynges as are fyned by continuall heate, mouyng, and circulation, are hyndered by refrigeration or coulde (as appereith in the art of styllinge and hatchyng of egges) euen so by the action of temperate and continuall heate without interposition of contrarie and mortifying qualite, crude thynges are in shorte tyme made ripe, fower made sweete, thicke made thinne, heauie made lyght, grosse made subtile, harde made softe, deade made luyng, and in fine bodies made sptridges, as manifly appereath in the marueilous woroke of dygestion of luyng beastes, wherby the finest part of theyr nurisshement is turned into bludde, and the finest of that bludde conuerted into sptridges, as the like is also feene in the nurisshement of trees, plantes, and herbes, and all other thynges that growe on the grounde, all whiche are moued, digested, subtiliate, attenuate, ryped, and made sweete by the action of this continuall heate wherof I haue spoken. To conclude therfore, if hony bee eyther the swette of the starres, or the iuise of the ayer pourgyng it selfe (as plinie writeth) or other wyse engendered of subtile and fine vapours ryfynge frome the earth, and concoete or digested in the ayer by the fayd continuall and moderate heate, it may feeme by good reasoun that the same shulde bee engendered in foummer seafon more abundantly in coulde regions then in hot, for the causes aforesayde. And that it may by autorite and reasoun more manifly appear bothe that the heate of foummer in coulde regions is continual (as I haue sayd) and also that the coulde in wynter is not there so intollerable to th[e]inhabitauntes of those regions as other doo thynke, I haue thought good for the better declaration hereof to adde hereunto what I haue gathered owt of the booke of Ziglerus wrytten of the north regions.

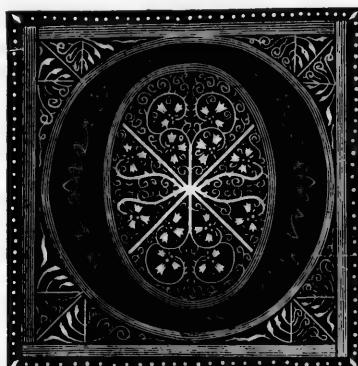
te degree of
may therfore
the heate of
her with the
cate is more
eth by theyr
e head as is
heate with
length of the
greate helpe
uld regions,
ldle regions,
ould. For
elpe of ayer
is in rootes.
anne and but
e, are foone

gathered of
fume caule
e booke, he

Sirius, and
e day. For
that such as
oure and the
pettyl of the
owne nature
ne vapoures
herbes, and
e it at theyr
heauenly
y combes of
ples of natu
ns where the
the nyghtes
mall heate,
lyng and
of contrarie
ade thinne,
ade spirites,
art of theyr
s also feene
all whiche
cate wherof
of the ayer
e frome the
ne by good
nen in hot,
ne that the
s not there
t the better
the north

¶ OF THE NORTH REGIONS AND OF THE MODERATE AND CONTINVALL HEATE

in coulde regions alwell in the nyght as in the day in
foommer season: Also howe those regions are
habitable to th[e]inhabitauntes of the
same, contrary to th[e]oppinion
of the owlde wryters.



F this matter, Ziglerus in his booke of the Northe
regions in the description of Scondia wryteth as
foloweth.

Wee wyll intreate of this matter, not as puttynge the same
in question as dyd the owlde wryters, nor gatheryng iudgement
deducted of reasons in way of argument, forasmuch as wee
are alredy more certeyne by hyfloris that these coulde regions
are inhabited. Wee wyll fyrst therfore shewe by naturall reasoun
and by consideration of the sphere, declare how by the helpe
of man and arte, coulde regions are inhabited without damage
or destruction of lyuyng beastes: And wyll fyrste speake of
the qualite of sommer, declarynge how it is there augmented.
Yet intende I not to comprehend all that maye bee sayde in
this matter, but only rehearse such reasons and similitudes as
are most apparent and easylie to bee vnderstoode.

In such regions therfore, as are extended from the burnte
line or Equinoctiall towarde the north, as much as the sonne rysethe hygher ouer them, so muche are they the
more burnte with heate, as Affrica, bycause it ryseth hyghest ouer them as they are nearest to the Equinoctiall:
and taryinge with them so mnch the shorter time caufeth shorter days, with longer and coulder nyghtes to
reflore the damage of the day past by reasoun of the moistire confumed by vapour. But in such regions ouer
the which the sonne ryseth lower (as in Sarmatia) it remayneth there the longer in the day, and caufeth so much
the shorter and warmer nyghtes, as reteynynge warme vapoures of the day past, which vapours helpe the
woorde of the day. I speake as I haue founde by experiance, saythe Vpsaliensis. For I haue felt the sommer
nyghtes scarfely tollerable for heate in Gothlande, wheras I felte them coulde in Rome. This benefite of th[e]-
increase of the day, doth augment so much in coulde regions as they are nearer the poles: and
ceacheth not vntyll it coome directly ouer the center or poynete of the axes or axeltree of the worlde, where the
sonne beinge at the hyghest in sommer, is elevate abowt. xxxiiii. degrees: In which regions, one continual day
consisteth of. vi. monethes from the spryne tyme by the standyng of the sonne (cauled Solstitium) in the
signe of Cancer to Autumnne. The sonne therfore, without any offence of the night, gyueth his influence
vpon those landes with heate that never ceaseth duryng that tyme which maketh to the great increase of
foommer by reason of continuance. We haue now therfore thought good to gather by a certeyne conjecture
howe greatly wee think the foommer to bee increased hereby.

Wee haue before declared how hyghe the sonne is elevate ouer the regions that are vnder the poles at
the flaye of the sonne: And so manye partes is it elevate in Rome at the flaye of the sonne in wynter (that is)
at the shortest day in the yeare. But here, in the myddle wynter, the sonne at noone tyde is beneficiall, and
bryngeth forth floures, roses, and ielefloures. I haue gathered sum in wynter in the moneth of December,
not procured at home by humane arte, but growinge in open gardenes in maner in eury bedle vnder the bare
heauen, browght forth only by the sonne. But this benignite of the sonne, continueth not past fve hours

Ziglerus.

The qualite of
sommer in coulde
regions.

The course of the
sunne.

Vapours.
Short and Warme
nyghtes.

Gothlande

264
One day of. vi
monethes.

Howe the sommer
is increased in
coulde regions.

Rome.

Could nightis in
hot regions.

The Romane
wynter.

One nyght of vi.
monethes
Obiectionis.

The twylightes.
The lyght of the
mone.

The nyght vnder
the pole.

A demonstration.

The Moone.

Remedies of
nature and art.

The owlde wryters
perswaded by
conjecture.

A brasen pot
broken with frost.

in the naturall day, forasmuch as th[e]operation therof is extinct by the couldenesse of the nyght folowynge. But if this benefite myght bee receaued without hinderaunce of the nyght, as it is vnder the poles, and so continue many monethes in hot regions vnto wynter, it shulde fuerlye bryngе foorth the manye woonderfull thynges, if moysture sayled not. And by this condition thus propounded, wee may well conceave that the Romane winter, althowgh it be not hotte, yet to be equal in heate to the full spryng tyme in the same citie durynge the tyme of the fayde fve hours. And thus by a similitude of the height of the soonne vnder bothe places, and of the knownen qualitie of the Romane heauen, and by th[e]accesse of the soonne to such places where the longest day continueth certeyne monethes, wee maye gather that sommer in places vnder the pole, is lyke vnto and equal with the full Romane spryng.

But the more difficulte question, is of the tyme of the vi. moonethes in the whiche the soonne leaueth those regions, and go[e]th by the contrarie or ouerthwarte circle towarde the south in wynter. For they lay that at that tyme, those regions are deformed with horrible darkenesse and nyghtes not increased, which may bee the caufe that beastes can not feke their foode. And that also the coulde shulde then bee intollerable: by which double euyls all thynges confrayned shulde dye, so that no beaste were able to abyde th[e]iniuris of wynter and famen insuinge therof: but that all beastes shulde peryshe before the sommer folowynge, when they shulde bringe furth theyr broode or succession: And that for these caufes, the fayde coulde clime shulde bee perpetually defoliate and vnhabitable. To al which obiectionis, we answere in this maner

As touchyng the nyghtes not increased, I saye, that it was not conuenient to assyume that for any reasoun. For not as the soonne faulthe, so suddeynly commeth the darke night but that the euenyng dooth substitute and prolonge the day longe after, as also the day spryng or dawnynge of the daye gyueth a certeyne lyght before the ryngfe of the soonne: After the whiche, the residue of the nyght that receaueth no light by the fayde euenyng and mornynge twylightes, is accomplayshed by the lyght of the moone, so that the nyghtes are seldome vnaugmented. Let this bee an exemple proued by owe temperate regions, wherby we may vnderlande the condition of the nyght vnder the pole. Therfore euen there also the twylightes helpe the nyght a longe tyme, as we wyl more prestly demonstrate. It is approued by the Astronomers, that the soonne descendynge from the highest halfe sphere by. xviii. paralels of the vnder horizon, makethe an ende of the twylight, so that at the lengthe the darke nyght succedeth: And that the soonne approchynge, and rysyng aboue the st. the hyghest halfe sphere by as many paralels, dooth diminyfhe the nyght and increase the twylight. Agyne, by the position or placeinge of the sphere vnder the pole, the same is the horizontall that is the Equinoctiall. Tho parallelles therefore that are paralels to the horizontal line, are also paralels to the Equinoctiall. So that the soonne descendynge there vnder the horizon, dooth not bryngē darke nyghtes to thoſe regions vntyll it coomme to the paralele distant. xviii. partes from the Equinoctiall.

Other demonstrations hereof are made by certeyne fygures of Astronomic, whiche I wolde haue added hereunto but that I could not gette the same grauen or cutte.

Durynge the tyme of these fayde fyxe moonethes of darkenesse vnder the pole, the nyght is destitute of the benefite of the soonne and the fayde twylightes, onely for the space of three moonethes, in the whiche the soonne goeth and returneth by the portion of the ouerthwart circle. But yet neyther this tyme of three moonethes is without remedy frome heauen. For the moone with her full globe increased in lyghte, hath accesse at that tyme, and illuminateth the moonethes lackynge lyght, every one by them felues, halfe the course of the moonethe: by whose benefite it commeth to passe that the night, named as vnaugmented, poffesteth thoſe regions no longer then one mooneth and a halfe, neyther that continually or al at one tyme: but this also diuided into three sorts of shorter nyghtes, of the whiche every one endureth for the space of two weekes, and are illuminate of the moone accordyngly. And this is the reaſon conceaved of the poure of the ſphere wherby we teſtifie that the fommers and nyghtes vnder the pole, are tollerable to lyuyng beaſtes.

But wee wyl nowe declare by other remedies of nature and arte, that this coulde fo greatly feared, is more remiffe and tollerable then oweſe opinion: fo that compared to the nature of ſuch beaſtes as liue there, it may bee abydden. And there is no doubt but there are autours of more antiquitie then that age in the which any thyngfe was exactly knownen or diſcouered of the north regions. The owlde wryters therfore perſuaded onely by naked conjecture, dydde gather what they myght determine of thoſe places: Or rather by the estimation of heauen, the which, bycaufe they felte it to bee hardly tollerable to them felues, and leſſe to men borne in the clyme of Egypte and Grecia, tooke therby an argument of the hole habitable earth. The hystorie of Strabo is knownen, that a potte of brasse which was broken in funder with froſen water, was brought from Pontus and fnewed in Delphis in token of a greevous wynter. Here therfore, they that fo greatly feared the winter (Iuch as chaunceth to the earth vnder the. xlviij. [forty-eighth] paralele) and therefore conſecrated that broken pot to the temple of Apollo, what coulde ſuch men trewly define vpon regions ſo fare without that paralele, whether they were inhabited or not? But ſuch as folowed theſe, being contented with th[e]inuentions of the owlde autours,

and borne in maner vnder the same qualite of heauen, perfisted wyllyngly in the same opinion, with more confidence then consideration of the thynges whereof wee nowe intrete: so lightly was that opinion receaved as touching the vnhabitable clime vnder the poles. But we with better confidence and faithe (forasmuch as we are not instructed with conjectures) intend to stande ageynst the sentence of the owld autours: Affirming the north regions within the coulde clime to bee inhabyted with hearynges, coddles, haddockes, and brettes, tunnyes, and other great fysshes, with th[is] infinite number wherof, tables are furnysshed through a great parte of Europe: Al whiche are taken in the north sea extended beyonde our knowleage. This sea at certeyne tymes of the year, poureth furth his plentifulnesse, or rather dryeth furth his increaſe to feke newe mansions, and are here taken in theyr passage. Furthermore also, euen the mouthes of the riuere of Tyber receave a fyſſhe as a newe geſt ſent from the north ſea. This ſwamme twyſe through Fraunce and twyſe through Spayne: Ouerpaſſed the Ligurian and Tuſcan ſea to communicate her ſelue to the citie of Rome. The lakes alſo and ryuers of thoſe regions are repleyſhedy with fyſſhe: In ſo much that no poure of coulde is able to extinguyſſe the jincreafe of the yeare folowinge, and the ſucceſſion reparaſable fo many hundredth yeares. And I playnely thinke, that yf it ſhulde of neceſſtie folowe, that one of theſe two elementes, the earthe and the water, ſhulde be deſtructiue to lyuynge creatures, the water ſhulde chiefly haue wrought this effeſte. But this is founde ſo tractable, that in the diepe wynter, both that increase is brought furth, and fyſſhyng is alſo exerciſed. The lande is lykewife inhabited with lyke plentifulneſſe. But that we wander not to farre: Let the faſth hereof rest in the expositiōn folowinge, wherin we intend to declare howe by the poure of nature and induſtry of man, this commoditiē may coome to paſſe. Therfore as touchyng nature, wee ſuþpoſe that the diuine prouidence hath made nothyng vnmcommeable, but to haue gyuen ſuch order to all thynges whereby every thyng maye bee tollerable to the nexte. The extremeties of the elementes conſent with theyr nexte. The ayer is groſſe abouſt the earth and water: But thiſſe and hotte abouſt the fyre. By this prouidence of nature, the vttermoſt ſea is very falte. And falte (as wytnefleſh Plinie) yeldeth the fatneſſe of oyle. But oyle, by a certeyne natu‐re heate, is of propertie agreeable to fyre. The ſea then, beinge all of ſuch qualitie, poureth furth it ſelfe far vppon the extremitie landes, whereby by reaſon of the faltenneſſe therof, it moueth and stereth vp generatiue heate, as by fatneſſe it noryſſheth the fecunditię of thynges generate. It gyueth this frutfulnes to the earth at certeyne fluds, althoſt the earth alſo it ſelfe, haue in his inner bowels the ſame liuely and nuryſſhyng heate, wherby not only the dennes, caues and holowe places, but alſo ſprynges of water are made warme: And this fo much the more, in howe muche the wynter is more vehement. This thyng dooth more appere by this exemplē, that the mountaynes of Norway and Suethlande are frutful of metals, in the which, fyluer and copper are concocte and molten into veynes, which can ſcarſely bee doonne in fornaces. By this reaſon alſo, the vapours and hotte exhalations perceiſſe the earthe and the waters, and throwghe both thoſe natures breathyng furth into the ayer, tempereth the qualite of heauen and maketh it tollerable to beaſtes, as wytnefleſh the huge byggeneſſe of the whales in thoſe ſeas, with the strength of bodye and longe lyfe of ſuche beaſtes as liue on the lande: whiche thyng coulde not bee, excepte all thynges were there commodityuously nuryſſhed by the benefite of the heauen and the ayer. For nothyng that in the tyme of increase is hyndred by any iniurie, or that is euyll fedde all the tyme it lyueth, can proſper well. Neyther are ſuch thynges as lyue there, offendid with theyr naturall wynter as though an Egiptian or Ethiopian were ſuddenyly conueyed into thoſe coulde regions. For they were in longe tyme by lytle and lytle brought fyſt acquainted with the nature of that heauen, as maye be proued both by the lyfe of man and by the hystorie of holy scripture. They that were led from Mefopotania, and that famous towre of Babilon towarde the north partes of the worlde in the fyſt diſpertion of nations, dyd not immediatly paſſe to the extremitie boundes, but planted theyr habitations fyſt vnder a myddle heauen betwene both, as in Thracia and Pontus, where theyr poſterie was accustomed the better to ſufteyne the rygoure of Scythia and Tanais, as he that commeth from winter to ſoommer, maye the better after abyde Ife and ſnowe beinge fyſt hardened thereto by the froſtes of Autumnne. In lyke maner mortall men, accustomed to beare the hardeneſſe of places nexte vnto them, were therby at the length more confirmed to ſufteyne the extremes. And here if any ſharpenesse remayne that maye ſeeme intollerable, nature hath prouyded for the fame with other remedies. For the lande and ſea, haþe gyuen vnto beaſtes, diepe and large caues, dennes, and other holowe places and ſecrete corners in mountaynes and rockes, bothe on the lande and by the ſea bankes, in the which are euer conteinyd warme vapoures fo much the more intent and vehement, in howe muſch they are the more conſtrayned by extreme coulde. Nature hath alſo gyuen valleys diuerted and defended frome the north wyndes. Shee hath lykewife couered beaſtes with heare fo much the thicker in howe muſch the vehemensie of coulde is greater: by reaſon wherof the beſt and rycheſt furres are brought frome thoſe regions, as Sables whose price is growne to great excede nexte vnto gold and precious ſtones, and are eſteemed princely ornamenteſ. The beaſtes that beare theſe furres, are hunted chiefly in wynter (which thyng is more ſtrange) bycaufe theyr heare is thenne thicker and cleaueth faster to the ſky. Howe greauous then ſhall we thiſſe the winter to bee there where this lytle beaſt lyueth fo well, and where the hunters maye ſearch

Fyſhes of the North ſea.

The North ſea.

The qualite of Water.

The lande.

The diuine prouidence in moderatiue the elements.

266

The nature of the ſea.
Sail.
Generatiue heate.

Outwardre coulde is cause of inwardre heate.

Metals.
Vapours and exhalations.
Whales.

Beaſtes.

Hereby maye bee conſidered the cause of the deaſte of our men that ſaile directly to Guineā.
No paſſage frome one extremitie to another but by a meane.

Caues and dennes.

Valleys.

The best furres.
Sables.

Beastes that lye
hyd in wynter.

All beastes have
the nature of the
place where they
are engendered.

267

What exercise
may doe.

Wee maketh
masteries.

Scondia.

Scone. is fayre in
the duch toonge.

The fertilitie of
Scondia.

He meaneth
Diidorus Siculus.

The jinuations of
the Gothes

Transiluania

268

the dennes and hauntes of such beastes throwghe the wooddes and snowe? But suche beastes the condition of whose bodies is so tender that they are not able to abyde th[e]jiniurie of coulde, eyther lye hydde in wynter, or chaunge theyr habitation, as do certeyne beastes also in owre clime. Nature hath furthermore gyuen remedie to man bothe by arte and industry to defende him selfe both abrode and at home. Abrode, with a thicke vesture, and the same well dowbeled. At home, with large fyrs on harthes, chymyneys, and in flooers for the day, with close chambers, and couches, foste and warme beddes for the nyght: by whiche remedies they mitigate the winters which seeme rigorous to straungers, althowgh they are to th[e]inhabitautes more tollerable then owre opinion, as in dede by the fyrt natural mixture or composition of theyr bodies, such things are agreeable to them as seeme very harde to other. The lion in Affrike and the beare in Sarmatia, are fierce as in theyr presente strength and vigoure: but translatd into a contrary heauen, are of lesse strength and courage. The foule cauled *Cionia* (which sum thinke to bee the storke) dooth not tary the winter: yet doo the cranes coomme at that tym. The Scythian wyll accuse the Romane heauen as induceinge feuers, wheras neuerthelesse there is none more holsoome. Such as haue byn tenderly browght vp, if they coomme suddeynly in to the campe, can not away with hunger, watchyng, heate, passages through ryuers, battayles, sieges, and assaultes. But the owdl soulid exercisid in the warres, vseth these as meditations of the fielde, as hardened thereto by longe experiance. He that hath byn accustomed to the shadowe of the citie, and wyll attempte the sayings of the poet Virgil, *Nudus ari, sere nudus*, that is naked and bare withoutt house and home, shall to his perell make an ende of the verse, *Habebis frigora sebrem* (that is) he shall haue the coulde ague. Suche thynge therfore as seeme harde vnto vs, beinge accustomed by lyttle and lyttle, become more tollerable: In so much that this exercise of susteinance by such degrees, dooth oftentimes grow to prodigious effectes farre beyonde owre expectation. And thus wee seeme to haue made sufficient demonstration, by heauen, nature, and arte, wherby it may appere that no part of the lande or sea is denied to lyuyng creatures. The reader may also perceave how large matter of reasons and exemplis may bee opened for the declaryng of owre opinion wherein wee rest. Let therfore th[e]autoritie of the ancient autours gyue place, and the consent of the newe wryters agree to this hystory, not as nowe at the length comprehended (whereas before many hundredth yearess Germanie and Scondia had entercourse of marchaundies not feuered by the large goulfe of Gothia) but as nowe by our commentaries brought to light. And hauyng sayde thus much in maner of a preface, we wyll nowe procede to wryte of the north regions.

SCHONDIA.



Chondia, Schondania, or Schondenmarchia, is as much to say as fayre Dania or fayre Denmarke. Plinie in one place, nameth it Scandia, and in an other, Scandinauia if there bee no faute in th[e]exemplers. It was named Schondia, by reasoun of the fayrenesse and frutfulnesse therof. And this awfull for that in beneficial heauen, fertilitie of grounde, commoditie of haunes and marte townes, abundaunce of ryuers of fyshe, plentie of beastes, great quantitie of metall, as golde, syluer, copper, and leade, diligent culturyng the grounde, with townes and cities wel inhabitated and gouerned by ciuile lawes, it gyueth place to none other fortunate region.

This was in maner vnknownen to the owdle Greekes and Latins as may appere by this argumete that with one confente they affirmed that in these north regions the could zone or clime, was condemned to perpetuall snowe intollerable to all lyuyng creatures. For few of them haue made mention hereof as to be inhabited. Amonge whom Plinie as one of the chiefe, sayth in his fourth booke, that Schondania is of vnknownen byggeneisse: and only that portion therof to be knownen which is inhabited with the nation of the Hilleuiones in fiftie vyllages. Neyther yet is Eningia lesse in opinion. Other more auncient then Plinie, haue placed most fortunate regions, with men of longe lyfe (whiche the Greekes caule *Macrobios*) and of moiste innocente behaviour vnder the traxe of those landes: and that there came from thence to Delphos, certeyne religious virginnes with vowed and gyftes consecrated to Apollo: And furthermore that that nation obserued this institution vntyll the fayde virgins were violated of them of whome they were receaved as straungers. These are most cleare testimonies of Antiquite, both of the greatnesse of Schondia, and the people that inhabite the same, althowgh they were fence vnknownen, as lykewyse the Gothes departyng from these north landes althowgh they obteyned Th[e]empire of the regions abowte the marishes of Meotia and the coastes of the sea Euxinus, with the realme of Denmarke (wherof that is thought to bee a portion which is nowe cauled Transiluania) and the bankes of the ryuer of Dan in fine inuaded the Romane Empire, yet were not the regions wel knownen from whence they tooke their originall. Therefore lyke as parte of the owdle wryters are vnsufficient wytnesses to testifie of owre nations as touchyng these landes vnknownen to them, Euen so the other parte which excluded the same as vnhabitable, are to bee conuincid leaste theyr autoritie beinge admitted, shuld engender opinions not agreeable or convenient to the nature of places. Sigismundus Liberus, in his commentaries of Moscouia, wryteth thus. Scandia or

Scondia, is no lland (as sume haue thought) but parte of the contineinte or firme lande of Suetia, which by a longe tracte reacheth to Gothlande: And that nowe the kyng of Denmarke posseseth a great parte therof. But wheras the wryters of these things haue made Scondia greater then Suetia, and that the Gothes and Lumbardes came frome thense, they feeme in my opinion to comprehend these three kyngedomes as it were in one body, only vnder the name of Scondia, forasmuch as then, that parte of lande that lyeth betwene the sea Baltheum (whiche floweth by the coastes of Finlandia) and the frozen sea, was vnknownen: And that by reasoun of so many marishses, innumerable ryuers, and intemperatnesse of heauen, it is yet rude vncultured, and lyttle knownen. Which thyng hath byn the caufe that summe judged all that was cauled by the name of Scondia, to bee one great llande.



Ronlande is interpreted greene lande: so cauled for the great increase and frutefulnesse of pasture. By reasoun wherof, what great plentie of cattayle there is, it may hereby appere that at such tyme as shypes may passe thyther they set furth great heapes of cheese and butter to bee sould, wherby wee coniecture that the lande is not rough with barren mountaynes. It hath two Cathedrall Churches vnder th[e]ordination of Nidrosia. To one of these, was of late yeares a bishopp appoynted only by the tytle of a suffragane in consideration that while the metropolitane dooth neglect the direction of religion for the distancke of the place and difficult navigation, the people is in maner faulne to gentilitie, beinge of them selfe of monable wyttes and gyuen to magical artes. For it is sayde that they (as also the people of Laponia) doo rayfe tempesches on the sea with magical inchauntements, and brynge such shippes into daungeour as they intende to spoile. They vse lytle shypes made of lether, and safte ageynste the brufynghe of the sea and rockes, and with them assayle other shippes. Peter Martyr of Angleria, writheth in his Decades of the Spanishe nauigations, that Sebastian Cabote sayling from Englannde continually towarde the north, folowed that course so farre that he chaunsed vpon greate flakes of Ise in the mooneth of Iuly: and that diuertyng from thense, he folowed the coaste by the shore bendyng towarde the South vntyl he came to the clime of the Ilande of Hispaniola aboue Cuba, an Iland of the Canibales. Which narratio[n] hath giuen me occasion to extende Gronlande beyonde the promontory or cape of Huitfarch to the contineinte or firme lande of Lapponia aboue the castell of Wardhus: which thyng I did the rather for that the reuerende Archebeyffhoppe of Nidrosia, conststantly affirmed that the sea bendeth there into the forme of a crooked elbowe. It agreeeth herewith also, that the Lapones content with them in the lyke magical practises and doo neyther imbraye the Christian religion nor refuse it: wherby I haue thought this lykenesse of customes to bee betwene them bycause they ioyne togither in one continent. The distancke lykewyse, seemeth not to disagree. For betwene both these people, the distancke is not full two hundredth Schoeni, every one being a space of grounde conteiningy. ix. [sixty] furlonges, which make. vii. [seven] myles and a halfe. It furthermore agreeith with this coniecture that Cabote chaunsed into such Ise. And albeit as touchyng the mooneth of Iuly, I wyll contend it is not well reherfed, no althowghe he had sayled vnder the pole, for such reasons as wee haue declared before to the contrary, neuerthelesse, that at sum tyme he sayled by Ise, this testifieth in that he sayled not by the mayne sea, but in places nere vnto the lande comprehending and imbraying the sea in forme o[] a goulfe, wheras for the same cause, the goulfe of Gothland is frozen bycause it is streight and narow, in the whiche also the lyttle quantitiue of salt water is ouercome by the abundance of fresshe water of many and greate ryuers that faule into the goulfe. But betwene Norwaye and Islande, the sea is not frozen for the contrary cause, forasmuch as the poure of fresshe water is there ouercome of th[e]abundance of the saltue water. There is a fame (but of vncerteyne autoritie) that the Spanyards sayle at this prefente to Gronlande, and to an other lande which they caule *Terra viridis*, that is, the greene lande, bringyng from thense suche wares as are founde in Gronlande. Towarde the north, it reacheth to the vnknownen lande vnder the pole, from whence also the theues and robbers of the Pigmey coomme into this lande. Whiche is an argument that the regions vnder the pole are inhabited and almost enuironed with the sea, as are they whiche the Cosmographers caule Cherfonnesi or Peninsulæ (that is) almost Ilandes:

The description of Gronlande.

The description of the East fyde whiche lyeth towarde Norway.

	[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]		[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]
*Wardhus castell.	54 [degrees] [o']	70. 30'	The seconde extention.	28. [o']	72. [o']
Towarde the North.	53. 30'	71. 30'	Huitfarch. promont.	22. [o']	67. [o']
The fyrt extention.	40. [o']	71. 40'	The extention.	5. [o']	61. 45'
It is continued from thense by the coastes of the lande of Baccalaos.				*356. [o']	60. [o']

Towarde the west and north, it is termined with an vnknownen ende of landes and seas.

[* Wardochus is the chief village of Wardoe, an island on the N.E. coast of Norway, beyond the North Cape and near Waranger Fiord. Its true N. Lat. is 70° 23', and E. Long. 31° 7'. Therefore Ziegler's meridian in all the following dates (being 54 degrees west of Wardoehus) is really 23 degrees W. Long., and that therefore places Baccalaos 4 degrees still further west—fixes it in 27° W. Long., which is, in high latitudes, the longitude of a part of Greenland.—E. A.]

The Gothes and
Lumbardes

Frutefull pasture.

Religion
neglected.

Inchaunters

The vyage of
Sebastian Cabote
to the frozen sea.

Gronlande.
Wardhus.

Laponnia and
Gronlande.

Schoeni.

Cabote tould me
that this Ise is of
fresshe water, and
not of the sea.

A commixtion of
salt water and
fresshe.

The sea betwene
Norway and
Islande.

Terra Viridis.

269

Pigmeli.

Baccalaos.

ISLANDE.



Island cauled
Thyle.
Schoeni is ix.
[sixty] furlonges.

Miracles of nature
in Islande.

Three maruelous
mountaynes.

Helgata.
Hecla.

Straunge visiones.

Ise.
Purgatory.

A straunge thyng.

Four springs of
contrary nature.

Abundance of
brymstone.

Dried fyshe.

Scarsenes of corne.

270

Haukes.

White rauens.

Houses of whales
bones.

The nauigation to
Island.

Whales.

One thyng
buryng for
contrary vise.
A shippmans
quadrant.

Slande is interpreted the land of Ise, and is cauled of the owld wryters Thyle. It is extended betwene the south and the north almost two hundredth schoenes in longitude. It is for the most part full of mountaynes and vncultured. But in the playnes it hath suche frutefull pastures, that they are fayne sumetymes to dryue the beatles from their feedyng least they shulde bee suffocate with so much fatnes. This Island is famous by the strange miracles of nature, of the which Saxo Grammaticus in his hystorie of Denmarke, and Olanus Gothus in his description of the north landes, doo make mention. There are in it three mountaynes of marueylous height, the toppes whereof are couered with perpetuall snowe. But the nether partes of them, are of lyke nature to the mountayne Etna in the Ilande of Sicilie boyling with continuall flames of fyre and easlyng furth brymstone. One of these is named Helga, and the other Mons Crucis (that is) the mounte of the croffe. The thyrde is named Hecla: whose flarnes neyther confume flaxe or tow, matters moste apte to take fyre, nor yet are quenched with water. And with lyke force as the shotte of great artillerie is driuen furth by violence of fyre, even so by the commixtion and repugnaunce of fyre, coulde, and brymstone, greate stones are here throwne into the ayer. Now vnt these mountaynes are three chynkes or open places in the earthe of houge byggynesse and suche dept' (especially at the mounte Hecla) that no fygth can attayne thereto. But to such as looke into them, there fyrt appeare men as though they were drowned and yet breathing furth theri fowles: who beinge exhorted by theyr frendes to reforte to theyr owne, they aunswere with moornynge voyce and greuous syghes, that they must departe frome thense to the mount Hecla, and therwith suddeynly vanyshe ewte of fygth. Ise floweth abowt the Ilande for the space of seuen or eyght moonethes, makynge by runnyng togither a certeyne miserable waylinge and gronyng noise not vnylike the voyce of man. Th[e] inhabitautes thynke, that in this Ise and the mounte Hecla, are the places where the euyll soules of theyr people are tormented. If any man take a greate portion of this Ise, and kepe it as diligently as may bee in a close vessell or cofer, the same dooth so vanyshe at the tyme when the other Ise abowt the Ilande dissolueth, that not so much as one droope of water or Ise can therof bee founde.

Not farre frome these mountaynes reachyng toward the sea coastes, are foure sprynges of water of moste diuers and contrary nature. The fyrist, by reasoun of his perpetuall and feruent heat, suddeynely turneth all bodies that are caste therin, into stones, referuyng neverthelesse theyr fyrt forme and shape. The seconde, is of intollerable couldenesse. The thyrde is sweeter then hony, and most pleasaunte to quench the thyrst. The fourth is playne poyson, pestilent, and deadly. There is furthermore in these sprynges suche abundance of brymstone, that a thousande pounde weight therof is bought for lytle, as for the tenth parte of a ducate. Theyr chiese wares, are dried fyshe, as soles, maydens, playces, salpas, flockefysshes, and such other which they exchange for wheat and such other thynges as are brought thither from Lubeck, Hamborow, and Amterdam. For they haue oftentimes such scarsenes of corne, that they vse dried fyshe in the steade of breade, althowgh in sommer the Ilande so florisheth with greene and frutefull medowes, that they are fayne sumetimes to dryue theyr beatles from pasture leaste they shulde suffocate for to much fattenesse, as I haue sayde before. They make very good butter, and apte to bee vsed in matters of phisicke. There are founde dyuers kindes of good haukes, as faulcons, gerfalcones, lanners, and sperhaukes. Also rauens, crows, beares, hares, and foxes, both whyte and blacke. They haue most swyft horfes: and such as runne. xxx. [thirty] myles continually without rest or bayte. They haue many churches: and houses bylded of the bones of whales and other greate fysshes. The nauigation is not open to this Ilande but in sommer seafon: and that only for the space of fourre moonethes, by reasoun of the coulde and Ise whereby the passage is flopped. If any frysse or debate aryse on the sea amoung the mariners for the commoditie of the hauen, the gouernour of the place althowgh he haue knowleage therof, yet dooth he not punyshe them, forasmuch as it apperteyneth not to his office to decerne such thynges as are doonne on the sea, but only on the lande. Shippes are there often tymes in great perell by reasoun of whales and such other monstres of the sea, excepte the mariners take good heede and kepe them farre frome the fysshes with the noyse of droommes, and empie barrels cast into the sea. There are many mynfreles and other that play on instrumentes, with the sweete noyse whereof, they vse to allure soules and fysshes to theyr nettes and snares. Many alfo, lye lurkyng in caues and dennes to auoyde the sharpenesse of coulde, as the Africane doo the lyke to defend them selues from the heate. On the toppe of a certeyne mountayne cauled Weyszarch, (lyinge betwene Ilande and Gruntland or Gronlande) is erected a shippmans quadrant of marueilous byggynesse, made by two pirates named Pinnigt and Pothorft in fauour of such as sayle by those coastes that they may therby auoyde the daungerous places lyinge towarde Gronland.

The myddest of the Ilande. $7^{\circ} 0'$ [Long.] $65^{\circ} 30'$ [Lat.] The citie Harfol. etc. $7^{\circ} 40'$ [Long.] $60^{\circ} 42'$ [Lat.]

LAPONIA.



The region of Laponia, was so named of the people that inhabite it. For the Germayns, caule all fuche Lapones, as are simple or vnapte to thynges. This people is of snaule flature, and of such agilitie of bodie, that hauyng their quyvers of arrowes gerte to them and their bowes in theyr handes, they can with a leape, caste theym felues through a circle or hope of the diameter of a cubit. They feyght on foote, armed with bowes and arrowes after the maner of the Tartars. They are exercised in hurlinge the darte and shooptyng from their youth: in so muche that they giae their chylldren no meate vntyll they hit the marke they shooote at, as dyd in owlde tyme th[e]inhabitauntes of the Ilandes cauled Balcares. They vse to make their apparel freight and clost to their boddies tht it hynder not theyr woorke. Their winter vultures are made of the hole skinnes of seales or beares artificially wrought and made supple. These they tie with a knotte aboue their heades, leauyng onely two holes open to looke through, and haue all the residue of their bodies couered as though they were sownd in fackes, but that this beinge adapted to all partes of their bodies, is so made for comoditie and not for a punishment as the Romans were accustomed to fowe paricidies in fackes of lether with a cocke, an ape, and a serpent, and so to hurle them aliyue all togither into the ryuer of Tyber. And hereby I thinke it came to passe that in owlde tyme it was rashly beleuened that in these regions there were men with rowgh and hery bodies, wilke beatles, as parte made relation throughe ignorauance, parte also takyng pleasure in rehersall of suche thynges as are straunge to the hearers. The Lapones defendyd by this arte and industry, go abrode and withilande the sharpenes of wynter and the north wyndes, with all the iniuries of heaven. They haue no hou ses, but certeyne tabernacles like tentes or hales wherwith they passe from place to place and change their mansions. Sum of them liue after the maner of the people of Sarmatia cauled in owlde tyme Amaxobii, which vfed waynes in the feade of hou ses. They are much gyuen to huntynge: and haue such plentie of wylde beatles that they kyll them in maner in every place. It is not lawfull for a woman to go furth of the tente at that doore by the whiche her husbund wente owte on huntynge the same daye: nor yet to touche with her hande any parte of the beatle that is taken vntyll her husbund reache her on the spitte fuche a portion of fleshe as he thinketh good. They tyll not the gronde. The region nurysheth no kynde of serpentes: yet are there great and noyfoome gnattes. They take fyshe in greate plentie: by the commoditie wherof, they lyue after the maner of the Ethiopians cauled Ichthiophagi. For as these drie their fyshe with feruent heate, so doo they drye them with coulde, and grynde or flampe them to pouder as snaule as meale or floure. They haue such abundance of these fyshes, that they haue great plentie therof in certeyne flore hou ses to carry them vnto other landes neare abowt them, as Northbothnia and Whyte Russia. Theyr fyppes are not made with nayles, but are tide togyther and made fast with cordes and wytthies. With these they fayle by the swifte ryuers betwene the mountaines of Laponia, beinge naked in sommer that they may the better swymme in the tyme of perell, and gather together such wares as are in daunger to bee lost by shipwracke. Part of them exercise handie craftes, as imbrotheryng and weauyng of cloth interlaced with golde and syluer. Such as haue diuided any necessary arte, or doo increase and amende th[e]inuentions of other, are openlye honoured, and rewarded with a vulture, in the which is imbrothered an argument or token of the thyng they deuided. And this remayneth to the politerie of their familie in token of theyr deserthes. They frame shippes, byuyde hou ses, and make diuers fortis of hou sholdre stuffe artificially, and transpor te them to other places neare abowte. They bye and sell bothe for exchaunge of wares and for money. And this only by consent of both parties withoutt communicacion: yet not for lacke of wytte or for rudenesse of maners, but bycause they haue a peculiar language vknownen to theyr bortherers. It is a valiant nation, and lyued longe free, and fusteyned the warres of Norwaye and Suecia vntyll at the length they submittid them felues, and payde ryche furres for theyr tribute. They chose them felues a governour whom they caule a kyng: But the kyng of Suecia gyueth hym autoritie and admiralitie. Neuertheleſſe, the people in theyr futes and doubtfull causes, reforte to Suecia to haue theyr matters decied.

In theyr iorneys, they go not to any Inne, nor yet enter into any houfe, but lye all nyght vnder the firmament. They haue no horses: but in the feade of them, they tanke certeyne wyld beatles which they caule Reen, beinge of the iuste lyggenesse of a mule, with rowgh heare lyke an Afie, cloun feete, and braunched hornes lyke a harte, but lower and with fewer antlettes. They wyl not abyde to bee rydden. But when theyr peitrels or drawynge collers are put on them, and they so ioyned to the chariotte or feade, they runne in the space of xxxiiii. [twenty-four] hours, a hundred and fiftie myles, or. xxx. [thirty] schenos: The whiche space they affirme to chaunge the horizon thrise: that is thrise to coome to the furthest ligne or marke that they see a farre of. Which doubleſſe is a token both of the marueylos swiftnesse and great strength of these beatles beinge able to con-

People of great agility.

A strange apparel.

The cause of a3
owlde errore.

So doo the
Tartars.

Plentie of wyld
beastes.

271
No serpents.
Great gnats.

Abundance of
fyshe.

Ships withoutt
nayles.

Science honoured.

Bargeynge
withoutt woodes.

No horses.
A beast of
marueylos
strength and
swiftnesse.

What Schoenus is.
Lake in Gronland.
The change of the
horizon.

It is extended
It is for the
sueche frutefull
unge leaſt they
e miracles of
Gothus in
mountayneſ of
ſ of them, are
ſ es of ſyre and
the mounte of
moſte apte to
is driuen furth
, greate ſtones
in the earthe
herto. But to
ng furth theyr
oronyng voyce
eynly vanyſſhe
e by runnyng
Th[e]inhabiti
ſ of theyr people
bee in a cloſe
plueth, that not

water of moſte
nely turneth all
The feconde, is
e thyrſt. The
abundance of
te of a ducate.
her which they
and Amſterdam.
eade, although
times to dryue
before. They
kindes of good
nd foxes, both
withoutt refl or
ſ fyſhes. The
moonethes, by
the ſea amon ge
owleage therof,
thynges as are
anfon of whales
arre frome the
mynſtreſ and
ſiſthes to theyr
coulde, as the
intayne cauled
ſ of marueylos
ſ e coaſtes that

The owlde autours
cauled all the
north people
Scythians.

Erasmus lamenteth
this in his fyre
booke de rature
concionandi,
where he speakest
of the people.
cauled pilapii

272

Idolatrie.

A mysterie of
marriage in fyre
and flint.

Experte
inchaunters.

Magical darteres.

The canker.

One nyght of
three moonethes.

Rich furres.

Plentie of sea
fyfhe.
Wardhus.

tinewe runnyng for so great a space, in the meane whyle also spendyng sumtyme in feedynge. I suppose that this thynge was sumwhat knownen to the owlde wryters, although receaued in manner by an obscure and doubtful fame. For they also wryte that certeyne Scythians doo ryde on hertes.

They neyther folowe the Christian religion, nor yet refuse it or are offended therwith as are the Iuves: but do sumtymes receaue it fauorably to gratifie the princes to whom they obey. And that no more of them imbrase the Christian fayth, the faute is sumwhat to bee imputed to the byshoppes and prelates that haue eyther reiectet this cure and charge of instructyng the nation, or suffered the fayth of Christ to be suffocate euen in the fyrt sprynge. For vnder the pretene of religion, they woulde haue aduaunced theyr owne reuenues and ouerburthened the people by an intollerable exemple, none otherwyls her then in all Christendome, which thynge is doubtlesse the caufe of moche greuous defections. I harde Iohn a byshoppe of Gothlande say thus: We that gouerne the churche of Vpfalia, and haue vnder owre dioceſſe a great parte of that nation, lyke as it is not conueniente to declare many thynges of owre vigilance and attendaunce ouer the flocke committed to owre charge, euen fo absteynyng frome myscheuous couetousnesse wherby religion is abused for luker, we doo in all places owre diligent endeouer that we minister none occasion whereby this nation as offended by owre finnes, maye bee the leſſe wylyng to embrase the Christian fayth. This is the ſtate of the religion amoung the Lapones: Althowgh of theyr owne iſtitution and custome receaued of theyr prediſcouers, they are Idolatourſ, honouryng that lyuyng thynge that they meeete fyrl in the mornynge, for the god of that daye, and diuinyng thereby their good lucke or euyll. They also erecte images of ſtones vpon the mountaines which they eſteeme as goddes, attributing to them diuine honour. They ſolemne marriages, and begynne the fame with fyre and fynty, as with a mysterie ſo aptely applied to the image of ſtone as if it had byn receaued frome the myddle of Grecia. For in that they adhibile a myſterie to fyre, as they doo not this alone (foraſmuſe as the Romanes obſerued the fame custome) euen ſo are they herein partly to be commended in that they vſe the ceremonies of ſo noble a people. The myſterie of the flinte is no leſſe to bee prayfed, both foraſmuſe as this is domeſtically philoſophie, and hath alſo a nere affinitie and ſignification to theſe ſolemnities. For as the fynt hath in it fyre lyng hyddie whiche appeareth not but by mouyng and force, ſo is there a ſecrete lyfe in both kyndes of man and woman whiche by mutuall coniunction commeth furth to a lyuyng byrth. They are furthermore experte inchaunters. They tie three knottes on a ſtryne hangyng at a whyppe. When they loſe one of theſe, they rayſe tollerable wyndes, When they loſe an other, the wynde is more vehement. But by loſyng the thyrde, they rayſe playne tempeſtes as in owlde tyme they were accuſtomed to rayſe thunder and lyghtnyng. This arte doo they vſe againſt ſuch as fayle by theyr coaſtes, and flaye or mōue the ryuers and feas more or leſſe as they lyft to ſhewe fauoure or diſpleaſure. They make alſo of leade certeyne ſhorte magiſtcal darteres of the quantitié and length of a fynger. Theſe they throwe ageynſte ſuche of whom they defyre to bee reuenged, to places neuer ſo farre diſtant. They are ſumtymes vexed with the canker on their armes or legges that in the ſpace of three dayes they dye thorough the vehemencie of the payne. The fonne fauileth very lowe in theſe regions: and prolongeth one continual nyghte for the ſpace of thre moonethes in wynter, duryng whiche tyme they haue none other lyght but lyke vnto the twylight of euenynges and mornyngeſ. This is very cleare, but continueth but fewe houres, and is lyke the bryght ſhyninge of the moone. Therfore that day that the fonne returneth to the hemiſphere, they keepe holy day and make great myrth wiſ ſolemne festiuitie. And theſe are the maners of this nation, not fo brutyſſe or ſaluage as worthy therfore to bee cauled Lapones for theyr vnaptneffe or ſimpliciteſ as when they lyued vnder theyr owne Empire and viſed no familiaritie or entercourſe with other nations and knewe not the commoditeſ of theyr owne thynges, neyther the priyce and estimation of theyr furres in owre regions, by reaſon whereof they ſouldē great plentie of them for ſum of owre wares of fauile value.

The boundes or limittes of Laponia (beinge th[e]extreme lande of Scondia knownen towarde the north pole) are extended towarde this parte of the North, to the worlde yet vnknownen to vs: And furthermore towarde the fame parte of the vittermoſt ſea, accordyng to this deſcription.

	[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]
The fyrl coaſte,	70 [°]	72. [°]
The coaſte folowynge,	80 [°]	7. [°]
That that yet foloweth,	90 [°]	70. [°]

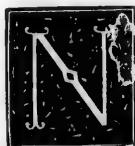
Frome the fyſſhyng places and ſtore houses of this ſea, they cary forth to Nordbothnia and whyte Rusſia, landes confynge to them, great plentie of fyſſhe. Wherby we maye coniecture that this ſea is extended on every fyde toward the North. Towarde the weſte, it is limittid with the moche inwarde gouleſe of at the Caſtell of Wardhus at the degree. 54 [°] [Long.] 70 30. [Lat.]

Towarde the Southe, it is limittid by a line drawnen fromenſe vnto the degree. 90 [°] Long.] 69. [°] Lat.]

I suppose
an obscure

Iuves: but
are of them
that haue
be suffocate
ne reuenues
ristdomme,
othlande fay
nation, lyke
e committed
or luker, we
aled by owre
amonge the
Idolatours,
d diuinynge
they esteeme
ith fyre and
the myddesse
the Romanes
monies of so
philosophie,
ynghe hydde
and woman
inchaunters.
se tollerable
rayfe playne
loo they vfe
lyst to shewe
l length of a
quer so farre
three dayes
prolongeth
none other
eth but fewe
rneth to the
e maners of
naptmestic or
with other
theyr furres
e value.
(north pole)
towards the

hyte Russia,
extended on
the Castell
g. [o' Lat.]



NORWEGIA OR NORWAY.

Ordway, is as muche to say as the Northwaye. This was sumtyme a florysshynge kyngedome, whose dominion comprehended Denmarke, Friselande and the Ilandes farre abowt, vntyll the domeftical Empire was governed by the succession of inheritaunce. In the meane tyme while this gouernaunce ceafed for lacke of dewe iſſue, it was infituted by conſent of the nobilitie that the kynges ſhuld be admitted by election: ſuppoſinge that they wolde with more equitie execute that office foramuche as they were placed in the fame by fuch autoritie, and not by obteynyng the kyngedome by fortune and newe aduaancement. But it came ſo to paſſe, that as every of them excelled in richesſie, ambition and fauour by confangintrie, fo were they in greater hope to obteyne the kyngedome: And were by this meanes diuided into factions, atteyming alio occasions to ſuinadre foraigne realmes wherby they might strengthen theyr parties. It is therefore at this preſent vnder the dominion of the Danes: who doo not only exact intollerable tributes, but also bryngē all theyr ryches and commodities into Denmarke, conſtituyng the continuance of theyr gouernaunce in th[e]infirmitie and pouertie of the ſubiectes: which exemplē, ſum other princes doo folowe at this day in the Christian Empire. For after that the princes had forſaken ſuche vertues as ſhulde haue ſhyned in them, as to bee *Patres patrie* (that is) the fathers of theyv countrys, and that in the place hereof, onely the proud countenaunce of dominion remayned, which opened contentiousſhip to th[e]niurie of the ſubiectes, this folowed therof, that wheras the Danes by this occation had no further truſt or ayde in the loue of the people, they prouided for th[e]indempnitie of theyr owne eſtate by forcible extenuatinge the gooddes and poure of them whom they deſired to kepe in ſubiection. This is the fortune of Norway, whose edefi[c]es, townes, and cities can not defende theyr auncient amplitude and dignitie: neyther is there any hope of repaſyng their ſtate. For there are no conſultations admitted for the redrefe of the commonwelth: No man dare ſhewe his aduice or attempte any thing, vncerteynie of the myndes and conſent of other. To this difficultie, is added the qualitie of the place. For the Danes haue in theyr poure all the nauigations of Norway, whereby it may exercife no trade by ſea, neyther cary furthe wares to other places. So that in fine it may ſeeme moſt vnfrotable, as lackyng the fauoure of heauen, the ſea, and the lande. From heneſe is brought into all Europe a ſyſhe of the kindes of them whiche we caule haddockes or hakes indurate and dried with coulde, and beaten with clubbes or flockes, by reaſon whereof the Germayns caule them ſtockefyſhe. The takinge of theſe, is moſt commended in Ianuarie that they may bee ſufficiently dried and hardened with coulde. For fuch as are taken in the more temperate monethes, doo corrupte and putrifie: And are not meete to be caried furth.

The deſcription of the weſt coaſte, with the parte thereof lyinge moſt towards the north.

Wardhus (that is) the watche houſe, or watche towre,
It is a ſtronge caſtell or fortrefſe appoynted to the Lapones.
The coaſte folowynge,
Matthikur. etc.

All the coaſt from heneſe, and the places neare abowt vnto the degree, being sumtyme leſte defolat by the ſeditions and deſtruotion of Norway, the Lapones chose for theyr habitation, as commynge to a more beneficiall heauen.

From the Caſtel of Wardhus, vnto the degree, all the coaſte in the ſpryng tyme is daungerous to paſſe, by reaſon of whales of ſuch huge byggeneſſe that ſum of them growe to a hundredth cubites. For theſe fyſhes at that tyme of the year ſeort togither for generation. Such ſhyppes as chaunce to faule cyther uppon theyr bodies, or into ſuche whyrlepooles as they make by theyr vehement motions, are in great perell. The remedie to auoyde this daungour, is to poure into the ſea Caſtoreum (that is) oyle made of the ſtones of the beaſte cauled the Beuer, mengeled with water. For with this, the hole hearde of whales vanyfiheth ſuddeynely to the bottome of the ſea: They make a terrible rorynge: and haue two breathyng places in the hyghſt parte of theyr forheads, flandyng furth right a cubite in length, and are as brode at the endes, beinge couered with a ſkynne, throughe the which they blow waters lyke showers or ſtormes of raine. The prickes of theyr backes, are founde conteynyng three els in circuite, and euerie knotte betwene them, of one elle: They are at the leaſt of ix. [ſixty] cubites in length: And are ſalted and kept in ſtore houſes. The greateſt are vnproufitable to bee eaten by reaſon of theyr ranke and vnaſuere taste which can not bee quaſified.

Nidroſia ſtanding vpon the fourth ſyde of the ſea banke, was the chiefe and metropolitan church through owt all Norway, Ifelande, Gronlande, and the Ilandes thereabowt. This citie was noble at the fyſt vnder the floryſhing Empire of Norway, conteynyng in circuite. xxiiii. paryſhes, but it is nowe brought in maner to a

273

Kyngdomes
defoured by
factiōn.

The Danes.

The deſault of
princes.

An example of
tyrannie.

The myſterious
ſtate of Norway.

Stockfyſh[je].

The Lapones

Shippeſ in
daungour by
reaſon of whales.

Caſtoreum.

The rorynge of
whales.

Whales ſalted and
reſerved.

The citie of
Nidroſia.

274

A magnificall
churche.

Noysome beastes
of vñknownen
generation.

Wardhus.
The vñknownen
lande of the
Lapones.
A serpent of
houge biggenesse.

God warneth vs
by signes of
thynges to coome.

The streights or
boylng sea.

Dangerous
places in the sea.

Fruitfull Ilandes
about Norway.

village and is cauled in the Germayne toonge Trutham, as the houseof the Dryides. There remayneth at this daye a Cathedrall churche in token of the ancient felicitié, beinge suche that in byggenesse and workmanship of wrought stóne, the lyke is not in all Christendome. The greefes or compasse abowt the altare, was destroyde by fire, and was repared at the fame tyme that wee write this historie. The charge of the reparacion, was esteemed to bee seuen thousande crownes: by which smaule portion, an estimate maye bee made of the excellencie of the hole Churche.

The tracte of all the sea coastes Norwye, is very quyete and mecke. The sea is not frosten. The snowes indure not longe. This lande hath also a peculiar pestilence which they caule Leem or Lemmer. This is a lytle foore footed beaste abowte the byggenesse of a ratte with a spottēd skynne. Theſe faule vppon the grounde at certeyne tempestes and fuddeyne showers, not yet knownen from whence they come, as whether they are brought by the wyndes from remote Ilandes, or otherwife engendered of thicke and feculent clowdes. But this is well knownen, that ſoone as they faule downe, greene graffe and herbes are founde in theyr bowels not yet digefed. They confune all greene thynges as doo locutes: And ſuch as they only bite, wyther and dye. This pestilence lyueth as longe as it dooth not taste of the graffe newelye ſproonge. They coome togither by flockes as do swallows: And at an ordinarie tyme, eyther dye by heapes with great infection of the lande (as by whose corruption the ayer is made peſiferous and moleſteſh the Noruegiants with ſwymmyng in the heade and the iaudies) or are confumed of other beastes named Lefrat. Towarde the Eaſt, it is included within the line that is drawnen by the mountaynes whiche endes or vttermoſt boundes they are that lye towarde the ſouth aboue the mouthes of the ryer Trolhetta. But that parte that lyeth towarde the north, paſſeth by the caſtel of Wardhus, and is extended to the vñknownen lande of the Lapones. [Longitude.] [Latitude.]

The lake cauled Mos, and the Ilande of Hoffuen in the myddefl thereof, is in the degree. 45° 30' 61. [o]

In this lake appeareth a ſtraunge monſter: which is, a ſerpent of houge byggeneffe. And as to all other places of the worlde, blaſyng flarres doo portende the[cl]alteration and chaunge of thynges, ſo dooth this to Norway. It was feene of late (in the yeare of Chriſt, M. D. xxii.) apperyng farre aboue the water rowlyng lyke a greate pyller: And was by coniecture farre of, eſteemed to bee of fiftie cubites in length. Shortely after folowed the reiectyng of Christiernus kyng of Denmarke. Suche other monſtrous thynges are fayde to bee feene in dyuers places of the worlde. And doubtleſſe excepte wee ſhulde thinke that the diuine prouidence hauyng mercie vpon mortall men, and hereby warnyng them of their offences, dooth ſende ſuche ſtraunge thynges (as alſo blaſyng flarres and armes feyghtyng in the ayer, with ſuche other portentous monſters wherof no cauſes can bee founde by natuſal thynges) we might els ſuſpecte that ſuch fyghtes were but imaginacions of the fence of man deceaſed.

On the Eaſt ſide, are exceeding rowgh mountaynes which admit no paſſage to Suecia. The ſea betwene Norway and the Ilandes, is cauled Tialleflund, Euripus, or the ſtreightes.

The Ilande of Lofoth, whiche myddefl,
Langanas, whiche myddefl,
Vaſtral, whiche myddefl.

[Longitude.]	[Latitude.]
42 [o]	67 10'
41 [o]	67 [o]
41 34'	67 30'

The ſea betwene theſe three Ilandes, is cauled Muſcoſtrom (that is) boylng. At the flowyng of the ſea, it is swaloweſt into the caues, and is blowne owt ageyne at the reflowyng, with no leſſe violence then the ſtreames of ryuers faule from mountaynes. This ſea is nauigable vntyll it bee lower then the mouthes of the rockes. Such as chaunce into it owt of dewe tyme, are caried headlonge into whyrlepooles. The fragmentes of the loſt ſhips, arefeldome caſt vp ageyne. But when they are caſte vp, they are ſo bruſed and freted ageynſte the rockes, that they ſeeme to bee ouergrownne with hore. This is the poure of nature, paſſyng the fabulouſe Simblegades and the fearefull Malea, with the daungerous places of Silla and Caribdis, and all other miracles that nature hath wrought in any other ſea hythero knownen to man.

The Ilandes abowt Norway, are of ſuch fruitfull paſture, that they brynge not theyr beaſtes into the ſables before the moneth of Nouember: And do many places winter them abrode.

at this daye
temanship of
was destroyde
parision, was
made of the

The snowes
This is a
e vpon the
as whyther
ent clowdes.
theyr bowels
wyther and
They coome
ection of the
swymmyng
the East, it is
y are that lye
de that lye
e. [Latitude.]
' 61. [°]
s to all other
looth this to
rowlynge lyke
Shortly after
e fayde to bee
e prouidence
unge thynges
erof no causes
s of the fence

e fea betwene

[Latitude.]
67 10'.
67 [°]
67 30'.
ge of the fea,

ence then the
puthes of the
the fragmentes
ed and fretted
e, passing the
and all other

to the flables



Othnia is so named of the precious furres of all sortes that are caried from thense into foraigne regions. For by these and theyr fyshyng, they haue greate commoditie. Salmons of the best sort are taken in these feas and are great ryches amonge these nations. Bothnia is diuided into two partes, as Nordbothnia, and South Bothnia, cauled Ostrobothnia. Nordbothnia, is termined with the south ende of the Lapones vnto the ende. 78 30' [Long.] 69. [°] [Lat.] Towarde the East, it is termined with this end and vnto the degree. 78 30' 68 20'. Towarde the Welt, with the line terminyng the East syde of Suecia: And towarde the Southe, with the residue of the goulfe of Suecia from th[e]ende that hath degrees. 63 [°] 69. [°]

Ostrobothnia, towarde the East is termined from the said ende of the most East coaste. And towarde the South, with a line extended by the mountaynes frome this ende vnto the degree. 71 [°] 66 [°]

Towarde the north and weste, with part of the goulfe of Suecia. etc.

EDEN.

2 A

305

SVECIA, OR SVETHLANDE.



Vecia, is a kyngedome ryche in golde, syluer, copper, leade, Iren, fruyte, cattayle, and excedyng increase of fyfhe of the ryuers, lakes, and the sea. And hath no leffe plentie of suche wylde beastes as are taken with huntinge. Towarde the West, it is ended with the mountaynes of Norway from the Castel of Wardhus vnto th[e]end, 51 [°] Long.] 63 40' [Lat.] Towarde the South, with the line from this ende vnto the degrees. 53. 30'. 61. [°] And from thense vnto the degrees. 61. [°] 60. 30'. Aboue the goulfe of Suecia, toward the north, with the south ende of Lapponia from the Castel of Wardhus vnto th[e]ende. 62. [°] 70. [°] Towarde the Easte, it is ended with the line frome this ende vnto the degree. 63. [°] 69. [°] etc. Stockholme the chiefe citie. 64. [°] 61. [°] This is the chiefe mart towne of Suecia, and is strongly defended by arte and nature. It is situate in marshes after the maner of Venecie: and was therefore cauled Stokholme, forasmuche as beinge placed in the water, the fundation is fortified with stockes or piles. The sea entreth into it with two armes or branches of such largenes and depth that shps of great burden and with mayne sayles may enter by the same with theyr full fraught. This suffered of late yeres greuous spoyle and destruction to the singulare exemple of cruel hostilitie: And such, as the like hath not bin lightly shewed to any other citie receaved by league and composition.

In al the tract from Stokholme to the lake aboue the riuier of Dalekarle, which is in the degree. 56. 30'. 63. 50' are mountaines frutful of good siluer, copper, and leade. They gette great ryches by the salmons and plentie of other fysshes whiche they take in certeyne greate lakes.

The dukedom of Agermannia, occupieth the north syde to the confines of Laponia. This tract is ful of wods in the whiche they hunt the beastes cauled Vros or Bifontes, which in theyr toonge they caule Elg, (that is) wilde asses. These are of such height, that the highest part of their backes are equal with the measure of a man holdynge vp his armes as hyghe as he may reach. etc. Vpfalia the chiefe citie. 62. 63'. 30. [°] here is buried the body of saynt Hericus kyng and martyr.

Copperdalia (that is) the copper valley, is a dukedom southwarde from the dukedom of Iemtia. Vnder this, is the valient nation of the people cauled Dalekarly.

Oplandia, is a dukedom and the nauil or middest of Scondia.

The citie of Pircho, on the north syde of the lake of Meler, was once a great citie and able to arme. xiii. thousand men to the warres: but is nowe brought to a vilage.

All the tracte of Oplandia, hath mynes of syluer, copper, and steele.

Of the Ilandes and rockes that lye abowte Suecia, the myndest is. 67 30' [Long.] 61 30'. [Lat.] These were cauled of the owlde wryters Oone, the reasoun of which name remayneth to this day. For there are in these innumerable multitudes of byrdes: In so muche that th[e]inhabitauntes of the nexte coaste, fayle thyther in the moneth of May whyle the byrdes syt on theyr egges: which they steale and referue them in falte for a longe tyme.

BOTHNIA.

275

Golde and syluer.

Wardhus castell.

The goulfe of
Suecia.

The citie of
Stockholme.

Gold in could
regions.
Fysahe.

The beaste cauled
Vros or Elg.

Vpsalia.

Copperdalia.

Oplandia.

Byrdes.
Egges reserved in
salt.

Precious furres.
Fysahe.

276
Th[e] incursions of
the Gothes.

The warres of the
gothes ageynst
the Romans.

The boundes of
Gothland.

The citie of Visba.

Danes and
Moscouites.

A librarie of two
thousand bookees.
The Gothes
inuaded Europe
and destroyd
Rome.

Pannonia falsely
taken for Finnonia.

Eningia.

Spanyasse wynes.



GOTHIA OR GOTHLANDE.

OTHIA, is by interpretacion good. For the holye name of God, is in the Germayne toonge Goth (that is) Good. At what tyme the Gothes vpon a general consent, sent furth theyr offspring or succeſſion to ſeeke newe ſeates or countreys to inhabite, and when they poſſeffed the coaſtes of Meotis and Afia, none of the owlde wryters haue made mention as farre as I knowe. But they haue byn knownen fence the tyme that the Romanes dilated their Empyre by Illirium (nowe cauled Slaouonie) vnto the ryuer of Danubius. And were alſo famouſ from the tyme of Cesar Dictator and Octauianus Auguftus by reaſon of theyr greate warres at Danubius beinge th[e]vthermoſt bounde of Th[e]empire. Neuertheleſſe, in that renoume, what Gothia was, vnder what parte of heauen it was ſituate, or of whom the Gothes tooke theyr original, it hath byn vñknownen almoſt to this age. This is termined towarde the north, with the ſouth ende of Suecia: And towarde the weſte, with the other mountaynes of Norway, which continewe from the boundes of Suecia to the mouthes of the ryuers of Trolheta, etc.

It hath many goodly townes, cities, caſtels, mines, etc. The citie of Visba, being in the degree. 61° 30' 54" 15.' was an ancient and famous marte towne as is Genua in Italie at this day. But afterwarde beinge afflieted by th[e]incursions of the pirates of the Danes and Muſcouites, it was left defolate. There remayne to this day certeyne ruines whiche teſtifie the ancient nobilitie. In this place were the fyſle ſtacions of the Gothes that poſſeffed Meotis. It is at this daye of frutfull ſoyle, and famous by many goodly and ſtronge caſtels and monaſteries. There is amoung other, a monaſterie of th[e]order of faynt Benedicte, in the which is a librarie of aboue two thouſande bookees of owlde autours.

Abouyt the yere of Christ fourſcore and viii. the Gothes, vnto whom reforted a great multitude of other people of theſe northe partes of the worlde, as from Liuonia, Prufia, Russia and Tartaria with diuers other countreys, makynge them dyuers Kynges and capitaynes, dyd depopulate and bryngē in ſubiection the more parte of Europe, inuaded Italie, deſtroyd Rome, inhabited that part of Italia now cauled Lombardie, and lykewyfe subdued the roialmes of Caſtile and Aragonie. Theyr warres contynewed aboue three hundreth yeares.

FINLAND, AND ENINGIA.



Inlandia, is as muſch to ſay as a fayre lande or fine land, ſo named for the fertilitie of the grownde. Plinie ſemeth to caule it Finnonia. For he faith that abouete the coaſtes of Finlande, are many Ilandes without names. Of the which there lyeth one before Scithia cauled Pannonia. The goule cauled *Sinus Finnonicus*, is ſo named at this day of the lande of Finnonia. Finnonia confineth with Scithia, and runneth without all Tanais (that is to ſay) without the limetes of Europe to the confines of Afia. But that the name of Finlande feemeth not to agree hereunto, the caufe is that this place of Plinie is corrupted as are many other in this autour: So that from the name of Finnonia, or Phinnonia, it was a likely errore to caule it Pannonia forasmuch as theſe woordes doo not greatly differ in wrytyng and ſounde: fo that the counterfecte name was ſoone put in the place of the truw name by hym that knewe Pannonia and redde that name before, beinge alſo ignorant of Phinnonia.

Eningia had in owlde tyme the tylte of a kingedome, it is of ſuch largenesſe. But hath nowe only the tylte of an inferiour gouernoure, beinge vnder the dominion of the Slaouons and vſyng the fame tonge. In religion, it obſerued the rites of the Greekes of late yeares, when it was vnder the gouernauice of the Moſcouites. But it is at this preſent vnder the kyng of Suecia and obſerueth th[e]inſtitucionſ of the Occidental church. Spanyaffe wynes are brought thyther in great plentie which the people vſe merely and cherefelly. It is termined on the north fyde, by the ſouthe line of Ostbothnia, and is extended by the mountaynes. Towarde the weſt, it is termined with the ſea of Finnonia accordyng to this deſcription: and hath degrees. 71. [o' Long.] 66. [o' Lat.] etc.

¶ OF THE DIFFERENCE OF REGIONS AND
CAUSES OF GREATE CITIES, AFTER THE DESCRI-
PTION OF HIERONIMUS CARDANUS,
LIBER. XI. *de Subtilitate.*



Here is an other difference of regions caused of coulde and heate. For fuche as are neare vnto the poles, are vexed with to much coulde: And such as are vnder the line where the soonne is of greateste force, are oppressed with heate. Such as are in the myndest betwene both, are nearest vnto temperatnesse. Vnder the pole, it is impossible that there shulde bee populous cities bycause the lande is baren, and the cariage or conueyance of frutes, vttayles, and other necessaries, is incommodious. By reasoun wherof, it is necessarie that th[e]inhabitauntes of fuche regions lyue euer in continual wanderynge from place to place, or els in smaule vylages. Such as inhabite temperate regions, haue meane cities, awell for that they haue more commodious conueyance for necessaries, as also that they may dwell better and more safely togither then in vylages by reasoun of fortifying theiur townes with walles, and exercysinge of artes and occupations whereby the one maye the better helpe the other. Yet that ownde Rome (beinge in a tem-

277

perate region) was of such incredible byggenesse, the caufe was that it obteyned Th[e]empire of the worlde, by reasoun wherof, all nations had confluence thryther, and not the greatnesse of the walles. But it is necessarie that the greatest cities bee in hotte regions: fyrslye, for that in such regions, parte of the foile is eyther barren yf it lacke water, or els most frutefull if it abounde with water. And for this inequalitie, when they fynde any place meete to susleyne a multitude, it foloweth of necessitie that greate cities bee buylded in such places by reasoun of great concourse of people resortyng to the same. An other greate cause is, that wheras in such regions, marchauntes come very farre to such commodious places, they passe through many deferte and perelous regions: So that it shalbe necessary for theiur better securitie, to coome in great companies as it were great armies. And therfore whereas such a societie is once knytte togither in a commodious place, it shulde bee great hinderance awell to th[e]inhabitantes as to marchauntes if they shulde wander in incommodious places. And by this confluence, both of fuche as dwell neare to fuche places, and also of straungers and such as dwell farre of, it is necessarie that in continuance of tyme, smaule townes becomme great cities, as are these: Quinsai, Singui, Cambalu, Memphis, Cairus, or Alcair, otherwife cauled Babilon in Egipte. But if here any wyll obiecte Constantinople (in ownde tyme cauled Bizantium) being in a temperate region, althowgh it bee not to bee compared to such cities as are more then. lx. [sixty] myles in circuite, yet doo we auwfere hereunto, that the Turkes Empire is the cause of the greatnesse hereof, as wee sayde before of Rome.

ayne toonge
at furth theyr
they possesst
as farre as I
heyr Empyre
the also famous
estate warres at
Gothia was,
byn vnknownen
nde the weste,
outhes of the

ee. 61 30'
wardre beinge
re remayne to
tacions of the
y and stronge
the which is

itude of other
h diuers other
tion the more
umbardie, and
ree hundredth

erilitie of the
the coastes of
before Scithia
is day of the
l Tanais (that
t the name of
s corrupted as
ely errore to
e: fo that the
nd redde that

owe only the
ne tongue. In
ce of the Mo-
the Occidental
herefully. It
mountaynes.
hath degrees.

THE HISTORIE WRITTEN IN THE LATIN
TOONGE BY PAVLVS IOVIVS BYSSHOPPE OF NVCKERIA
IN ITALIE, OF THE LEGATION OR AMBASSADE OF GREATE

Basilius Prince of Moscouia, to pope Clement the vii. of
that name: In which is conteyned the description
of Moscouia with the regions confininge abowte
the same euen vnto the great and ryche
Empire of Cathay.



Demetrius the
ambassadour of
Moscouia.

Paulus Centurio.

Spices brought
from India to
Moscouia.
The ryuer Indus.

278

Oxus or Horina a
ryuer of Asia
runneth through
the deserts of
Sythia.

The sea Hircanum,
is now cauled
mare Abacuk or
mare de Sala.

Citrachan or
Astrakan.

Sarmatia is that
great country
wherein is
conteyned Russia
Liounia and
Tartaria, and the
north and East
part of Polonia,
Agyenst the
Portugales.

Intende fyrtē briefly to describe the situation of the region
which we plainly see to haue bin little knownen to Strabo and
Ptolome, and then to procede in rehearinge the maners,
costumes and religion of the people. And this in maner in the
lyke simple style and phrase of speache as the same was declared
vnto vs by Demetrius the ambassadour, a man not ignorant in the
Latin toonge, as from his youth brought vp in Liounia, where
he learned the fyrtē rudimentes of letters. And beinge growne
to mans age, executed th[e] office of an ambassadour into dyuers
Christian prouinces. For wheras by reasoun of his approued
faithfulness and industrie, he had before byn sent as oratoure
to the kynges of Suecia and Denmarke, and the great
master of Prussia, he was at the last fente to Th[e]emperoure
Maximilian, in whose courte (beinge replenysshed with
all sortes of menne) whyle he was conuersant, yf any
thyng of barbarous maners yet remayned in so docible
and quiet a nature, the same was put away by framynge
hym selfe to better civilitie. The caufe of his legacie or ambassade, was gyuen by Paulus Centurio a Genueſe,
who when he had receaved letters commendatori of pope Leo the tenth, and came to Moscouia for the trade of
marchaudies, of his owne mynde conferred with the familiers of Duke Basilius as touchyng the conformatiōn
of the rites of both churches. He furthermore of great magnanimitie and in maner owtrogious defre, fowght
howe by a newe and incredible viage, splices myght bee brought from India. For whyle before he had exercised
the trade of marchaudies in Syria, Egypte, and Pontus, he knewe by fame that splices myght bee conueighed
from the further India vp the riuere Indus ageynſt the course of the same, and from thence by a ſmal viage by
lande paſſinge ouer the mountaynes of Parapanifus, to bee caried to the riuere Oxus in Bactria, which hauing his
original almoft from the ſame mountaynes frome whence Indus dooth ſpringe, and violently caryinge with it
manye other ryuers, faulthe into the ſea Hircanum or Caſpium at the porte cauled Straua. And he earnestly
affirmed that frome Straua, is an easy and ſafe nauigation vnto the marte towne of Citrachan or Afrachan and
the mouth of the ryuer Volga and from thense euer ageynſt the courfe of the ryuers, as Volga, Occha, and
Moscho, vnto the citie Moscha, and frome thence by lande to Riga and into the ſea of Sarmatia and all the
west regions. For he was vehemently and more then of equitie accenſed and prouoked by the iniuries of the
Portugales, who hauyng by force of armes subdued a great parte of India, and poſſeſſed all the marte townes,
takynge holy into theyr handes all the trade of splices to bryng the ſame into Spayne, and neuertheleſſe to fell
them at a more greuous and intollerable price to the people of Europe then euer was hard of before: And
furthermore kepte the coaſtes of the Indian ſea ſo ſtraightly with continuall nauies, that those trades are thereby
lefte of, which were before exercized by the goulfes of Persia and towarde the ryuer of Euphrates, and also by the

ATIN
ERIA
TE

of the region
to Strabo and
the maners,
manner in the
was declared
it ignorant in
uiunia, where
beinge growne
our into dyuers
his approued
as oratoure
and the great
[e]temperoure
mysshed with
ant, yf any
so docible
by framynge
rio a Genuefe,
or the trade of
conformation
desire, fowght
had exercized
conueighed
final vyage by
ich hauing his
arynges with it
d he ernestly
Astrachan and
a, Occha, and
ia and all the
injuries of the
marte townes,
theleffe to fell
before: And
es are thereby
and also by the

freights of the sea of Arabia and the ryuer Nilus, and in fine by owre sea: by which trade all Asia and Europe was abundantly satifisfed and better cheape then hathe byn fence the Portugales had the trade in theyr handes with so manye incommodities of such longe viages wherby the splices are so corrupted by th[e]infestation of the poompe and other sylthynesse of the shippes, that theyr naturall faouour, taste, and qualitie awfull hereby as by theyr longe referuyng in the shoppes, sellers, and warehoues in Luffsheburne, vanyssheth and refoluet, so that referuyng euer the freshest and neweste, they fel only the woorst and most corrupted. But Paulus, although in all places he ernestly and vehemently argued of these thinges, and styrred great malice and hatred agaynst the Portugales, affirmyng that not only therby the customes and reuenewes of princes shulde bee much greater if that vyage might bee discouered, but also that splices myght bee better cheape bowght at the handes of the Moscouites, yet coulde he nothinge auayle in this sute, forasmuche as Duke Basilius thought it not good to make open or disclose vnto a straunger and vnknowne man, those regions which giue enterance to the sea Caspium and the kyngedomes of Persia. Paulus therfore excluyng all hope of further trauayle, and become nowe of a marchaunte an Ambassadoure, brought Basilius letters (pope Leo beinge nowe departed) to Adriane his successeoure, in the whiche he declared with honorable and reuerende wordes his good wyll and favorable mynde towarde the byshop of Rome. For a fewe years before, Basilius (then keepynge warres agaynst the Polones at suche tyme as the generall counsayle was celebrate at Laterane) requyred by Iohn, kyng of Denmarke (the father of Christierne who was of late expulsed from his kyngedome) that safte passage myght bee graunted to th[e]ambassadours of Mofcouia to go to Rome. But wheras it so chaunced, that kyng Iohn and pope Julius dyed both in one day, wherby he lacked a conuenient feuerter or solicitorie, he omitted his confultation as touchyng that legacie. After this, the warre waxed hot betwene him and Sigismunde the kyng of Polonie: who obteinynge the victorie agaynst the Moscouites at Borishene, supplications were decreed in Rome for the ouerthrowe and vanquyslyng the enemies of the Christian faithe, whiche thinge greatly alienated both kyng Basilius him selfe and all that nation from the byshop of Rome. But when Adriane the vi. departed from this lyfe, and leste Paulus nowe redie to his seconde vyage, his successor Clemente the vii. perceauyng that Paulus styll furiously reuolued and tossed in his vnquiet mynde that vyage towarde the Easte, sent hym ageyne with letters to Mofcouia, by the which with propense and frendly persuasions, he exhorted Basilius to acknowleage the maiesie of the Romane churche, and to make a perpetuall leage and agreement in matters of religion, which thyng shuld be not only for the health of his soule, but also greatly to th[e]increase of his honour: And further promyfed, that by the holy autoritie of his office he wold make hym a kyng and gyue hym kyngely ornamente, if reiectyng the doctrine of the Grecches, he wold conforme hym selfe to th[e]autoritie of the Romane churche. For Basilius defyred the name and tytle of a kyng by th[e]asignation of the byshoppe of Rome, forasmuch as he judged that to apperteyne to the catholyke right and the byshoppes maiesie, of whome (as he knewe ryght well) euer Th[e]emperours them selues by an auncient custome haue receaued there insignes of honoure with the Diademe and scepter of the Romane Empire: althowghe it is sayde that he required the same of Th[e]emperour Maximiliane by many ambassades. Paulus therfore who with more prosperous iorneys then great vantage, had from his youth trauayled a greate parte of the world, althowgh he were nowe aged and sore vexed with the strangurie, came with a prosperous and spedye iorney to Mofcouia, where he was gentely receaued of Basilius, and remayned in his courte for the space of two monethees. But in fine, mislustyng his owne strength, and deterred by the difficultie of so greate a iorneye, when he had vitterly put away all his imaginations and hope of this trade to India, returned to Rome with Demetrius th[e]ambassadour of Basilius, before we yet thought that he had byn in Mofcouia. The byshoppe commauded that Demetrius shuld bee lodged in the most magnificent and princely part of the houses of Vaticane, the roufes of whose edif[c]es are gylded and embowed, and the chambers rychly furnysshed with sylken beddes and cloth of Arresse. Wylynghe furthermore that he shuld bee honorably receaued and vestured with filke. He also assignd Franciscus Cheregatus the byshoppe of Aprutium (a man that had often tymes byn ambassadoure to diuers reggons) to accompanie hym and shewe hym th[e]order and rites of owre religion with the monumentes and maners of the citie. Furthermore, when Demetrius had certeyne dayes refled and recreate him selfe, waffsyng away the sylth he had gathered by reaon of the longe vyage, then apparelled with a fayre vesture after the maner of his countrey, he was browght to the byshoppes presence, whom he honoured kneelyng with great humilitie and reverence (as is the maner) and therwith presented vnto his holynes certeyne furres of Sables in his owne name and in the name of his prince, and also delyuered the letters of Basilius, which they before, and then the Illyrian or Slauon interpreture Nicolaus Siccensis translated into the Latine toonge in this effecte as foloweth.

To pope Clemente sheparde and teacher of the Romane churche, greate Basilius by the grace of God, lorde, Emperour and dominatour of al Russie, and great duke of Volodemaria, Mofcouia, Nouogrodia, Plefcouia, Smolenia, Ifferia, Iugoria, Permnia, Vetcha, Bulgaria etc. Dominator and great prince of Nouogrodia in the lower contrei: Also of Cernigouia, Razauia, Volotchia, Rezenia, Belchia, Rostouia, Iaroslavia, Belozeria,

The trade of
spices in old
tyme.
Spices corrupted.

The Caspian sea.

Basilius wrot to
Pope Adriane.

Warre betwene
the Polones and
Moscouites.

The seconde vyage
of Paulus to
Mofcouia
The Pope
persuadeth
Basilius to
acknowleage the
Romane churche.

279
The Emperours
receauere there
diademe of the
byshoppes of
Rome.

Demetrius
intervenyment at
Rome.

Demetrius is
brought to the
popes presence.

Basilus letters to
Pope Clement.

Vdoria, Obdoria, and Conduia, etc. Yow sent vnto vs Paulus Centurio a citizen of Genua with letters wherby yowe do exhorte vs to ioine in poure and counfayle with yowe and other Princes of Christendome ageynst the enemies of the christian faith: and that a free paſſage and redy way may bee opened for bothe yourne ambaffadours and owres to coome and go to and fro, whereby by mutuall diewtie and indeuoure on both parties, we may haue knowlage of the ſtate of thinges perteynyng to the welth of vs both. Wee certes as we haue hetherto happily by the ayde and helpe of almyghty god conſtantly and ernestly refiſted the cruelle and wycked enemies of the Christian faſithe, ſo are we determined to doo hereafter. And are likewife redy to conſente with other Christian Princes, and to graunt free paſſage into oure dominions. In confideration wheroft, we haue fente vnto yowe oure faithfull feruaunt Demetrius Erasmus with these oure letters: and with hym haue remitted Paulus Centurio: defyringe yowe alſo shortly to diſmiff Demetrius with ſafegarde and indemnitiſe vnto the bortherſ of oure dominions. And we wyl likewyſe doe the ſame if yowe ſende yourne ambaffadour with Demetrius, wherby both by communication and letters, wee may bee better certified of th[e]order and administration of ſuch thyngeſ as yowe require: ſo that beinge aduertified of the mindes and intent of al other Christian princes, we may alſo conſult what is best to be done herein. Thus fare ye wel. Giuen in our dominion in our citie of Moscouia, in the yeare from the creation of the worlde, feuen thouſande and three hundredth, the thyrde day of Aprill.

280

Cardinall
Campagius.The ruines of
Roma.The deſcription
of Moscouia.The altars of
great alexander.Mariffhes in
summer.The forest of
Hercynia.Wyld beaſtes
The Scythian
Ocean.The beaſtes
cauled Vri or
Bifontes.
Helenes.
Of the Scythians
and Tartars.
Amaxouii.

Horda.

The large
dominion of the
Tartars.
Cathay.
The Tartars of
Europe.

But Demetrius, as he is experie in diuine and humane thyngeſ, and especially of holy scripture, feemeſ to haue ſecrete commandement of greater matters whiche we thiſke he wyll ſhortly declare to the ſenate in priuate conſultations. For he is nowe deliuereſ of the feuſ into the whiche he ſell by chaunge of ayer, and hath ſo recouereſ his ſtrengthe and natuie colour, that beinge a man of threescore yeares of age, he was not only preſente at the popes maſſe celebraſed with great ſolemniteſ in the honour of ſaint Coſmuis and Daſtian but came alſo into the ſenate at ſuch tyme as Cardinal Campagius comynge fyſt from the legacie of Pannonia, was receaued of the pope and all the nobilitie of the courte: And furthermore alſo vewed the temples of the holly citie with the ruineſ of the Romane magniſcence, and with woonderynge eyes behelde the lamentable decay of the auncient buildingeſ. So that we thiſke that ſhortly after he hath declared his meſſage, he ſhall returne to Moſcouia with the byſhop of Scarenſe the popes legate, not vnrcompenſed with iuft rewards at the handeſ of his holynesse.

The name of the Moſcouites is nowe newe, althowgh the poete Lucane maketh mention of the Moſchos conſinynge with the Sarmatiens, and Pliniſ also placeth the Moſchos at the ſprunges of the great ryuer of Phafis in the region of Colchos aboue the ſea Euxinus towarde the Eaſt. Theyr region hath very large boundes, and is extended from the altars of great Alexander aboue the ſprunges of Tanais, to the extreme landes and north Ocean in maner vnder the Northe ſtarres cauled charles wayne or the grete beare, beinge for the moſt parte playne and of frutfull paſture, but in ſommer in many places full of mariffhes. For whereaſ all that lande is repleynfyſhed with many and great ryuers which are greatly increased by the winter ſnow and iſe resolued by the heate of the ſoonne, the playnes and fyeldes are therby ouerflowen with mariffhes, and all iorneyes incumbered with continual waters and myrie flabbiyneſſe vnyl by the benefite of the new wynter the ryuers and mariffhes bee froſen ageyne, and giue ſafe paſſage to the fleadeſ that are accuſtomed to iorney by the fame. The woodde or forest of Hercynia (and not Hyrcania as is redde in ſum falſe copies) occupieth a great parte of Moſcouia, and is here and there inhabited, with houſeſ buyldeſ thereiñ and ſo made thinner by the longe laboure of men that it dooth not nowe ſhewe that horrour of thiſke and impenetrable woods and laundes as many thiſke it to haue. But beinge repleynfyſhed with many wyld beaſtes, is ſo farre extended through Moſcouia with a continual tracē betwene the Eaſt and the North towarde the Scythian Ocean, that by the infinite greatneſſe therof it hath deluded the hope of such as haue curiouſly ſearched th[e]ende of the fame. In that parte that reaſheth towarde Pruſſia, are founde the grete and fierce beaſtes cauled Vri, or Bifontes, of the kynde of bulles: Alſo Alces lyke vnto harteſ, whiche the Moſcouites caule Lozzi, and are cauled of the Germayneſ Heleneſ. On the Eaſt ſyde of Moſcouia, are the Scythianaſ which are at this day cauled Tartars, a wanderinge nation, and at all ages famous in warres. In the ſtede of houſeſ they vfe wagons couered with beaſtes hydes, wherby they were in owlde tyme cauled Amaxouii. For cities and towneſ, they vfe grete tentes and pavilions, not defended with trencheſ or wauleſ of tymbre or ſtone, but incloſed with an innumerable multitude of archerſ on horſebacke. The Tartareſ are diuided by companies which they caule Hordaſ, which word in theyr toonge ſignifieth a conſentynge companye of people gathered togither in forme of a citie. Euerie Horda is gouerned by an Emperour whom eyther his parentage or warlyke prowe hath promoted to that dignitie. For they oftentimes keepe warre with theyr bortherers and contende ambiiciously and fiercely for dominion. It dooth hereby appeare that they conſiſe of innumerable Hordaſ, in that the Tartareſ poſſeſſe the moſt large deſerteſ euen vnto the famous citie of Cathay in the furtheſt Ocean in the Eaſt. They alſo that are neareſte to the Moſcouites, are knownen by theyr trade of marchaundies and often incurſions. In Europe neare vnto the place cauled Dromon Achillis in Taurica Cherefoneſo, are the Tartars cauled Precopites, the doughter of whiche prince,

ters wherby
agaynst the
vre ambassa-
parties, we
as we have
and wycked
confente with
of, we haue
kym haue
emmiut vnto
fadoure with
and admini-
of al other
suen in our
le and three
e, seemed to
the senate in
of ayer, and
, he was not
and Damian
the legacie of
vewed the
s behelde the
l his message,
sed with iust
the Moschos
uer of Phafis
boundes, and
es and north
the most parte
that lande is
solued by the
s incumbered
and marshes
The woodde
of Moscouia,
boure of men
y thinke it to
a with a con-
nates therof
that reacheth
bulles: Also
telenes. On
ation, and at
wherby they
not defended
ers on horse-
nge signifieth
erned by an
y oftentimes
looth hereby
es euen vnto
Moscouites,
place cauled
whose prince,

Selymus Th[e]mperour of the Turkes tooke to wyfe. These are most infest to the Polones, and wast the regions on every syde betwene the ryuers of Boristhenes and Tanais. They that in the same Taurica posseſſe Caffam a colonie of the Ligurians (cauled in owld tyme Theodosia) doo bothe in religion and al other thynges agree with the Turkes. But the Tartars that inhabite reg[ns] of Asia betwene Tanais and Volga, are subiecte to Basilius the kyng of the Moscouites, and chafe them a gournour at his assigment. Amonge these, the Cremii afflicted with ciuile feditions, where as heretofore they were riche and of great poure, haue of late yeres loste theyr dominion and dignitie. The Tartars that are beyonde the ryuer of Volga, do religiuously obserue the frenſhip of the Moscouites and profesſe them ſelues to be their subiectes. Beyond the Caffanites towarde the Northe, are the Sciambani, rich in headeſ of cattaille and confiſting of a great multitude of men. After theſe, are Nogai, whiche obteyne at this daye the chiefe fame of ryches and warly affayres. Theyr Horda, althowgh it bee moft ample, yet hath it no emperoure, but is gouerned by the wyſlome and vertue of the moft ancient and valient men after the maner of the common wealth of Venece. Beyonde the Nogain ſumwhat towarde the ſouth and the Caspian ſea, the nobeleſt nation of the Tartars cauled Zagathai, inhabite townes buyldeſ of ſtone, and haue an excedayng great and fayne citie cauled Samarcanda, which Iaxartes the great ryuer of Sogdiana runneth through, and pallinge from thence about a hundredth myles, faulth into the Caspian ſea. With theſe people in oure dayes, Ifmael the Sophi and kyng of Persia haſte often tymes kepte war with doubtfull ſuccesse: In fo muche that fearyng the greatenesſe of theyr poure which he refyfthyd with all that he myght, he leſte Armenia and Tauriſium the chiefe citie of the kyngedom, for a pray to Selimus the vyctour of one wyng of the battayle. From the citie of Samarcanda, defended Tamburlanes the mighty Emperour of the Tartars whome ſum caule Tanberlanis. But Demetrius ſayth he ſhulde bee cauled Themircuthu. Thys is he that abowte the yeaſe of Chryſte. M. CCC. lxxxviii. [1398, A.D.] subdued moft all the Easte partes of the worlde: And laſtly with an innumerable multytude of men invaded the Turkes dominions, with whom Baiafetes Ottomanus their kyng, (and father to the grete grandefather of this Solyman that nowe lyueth) metinge at Ancyra in the confines or marches of Galatia and Bythinia, gaue hym a fore battaile, in the whiche felle on the Turkes parte, 20000. men, and Baiafetes hym ſelfe was taken priſoner, whom Tamburlanes caufed to bee locked in an iren cage and fo caried hym abowte with hym through all Asia which he alſo conquered with a terrible army. He conquered al the landes betwene Tanais and Nilus, and in fine vanquifhed in battaile the great Soltane of Egypte, whom he chafed beyonde Nilus, and tooke also the citie of Damascus.

Frome the region of theſe Tartars cauled Zagathei, is brought great plentie of ſilken apparel to the Moscouites. But the Tartars that inhabite the midland or inner regions, bringe none other wares then truckes or droues of fyfte runnyng horſes and clokes made of whyte feltes: alio hales or tentes to withſtonde th[e] iuriuſes of coule and rayne. Theſe they make very artificially and apte for the purpoſe. They receaue agayne of the Moscouites, coates of cloth, and ſyluer monye, conteynynge all other bodey ornamenteſ, and the furnyture of ſuperfluouſe houſolde ſluſſe. For beyng defended ageynd the violence of wether and tempeſtes only with ſuche apparell and couerture whereof wee haue ſpoken, they truft only to theyr arrowes which they ſhoote awell backwarde flyngie as when they affayle theyr enemies face to face: Albeit, when they determined to inuade Europ, theyr princes and capitaynes had helmeſ, coates of fenſe, and hooked woordeſ which they bought of the Perlians. Towarde the ſouthe, the boundes of Moscouia are termined by the ſame Tartars which poſſeſſe the playn regyons nere vnto the Caspian ſea aboue the maryſhes of Meotis in Asia, and aboue the ryuers of Borylhenes and Tanais in parte of Europe. The people cauled Roxolani, Gete, and Baſtarne, inhabited theſe regions in ould tyme, of whom I thynke the name of Russia tooke original. For they caule parte of Lithuania, Rusſia the lower, wheras Moscouia it ſelfe, is cauled whyte Ruffia. Lithuania therfore, lyeth on the Northwest ſyde of Moscouia. But towarde the full west the mayne landes of Prussia and Liuonia are ioyned to the confines or marches of Moscouia, where the Sarmatiā ſea breakyng furth of the ſtreigtes of Cimbrica Cherefoneſus (nowe cauled Denmarke) is bended with a crooked gouſle towarde the northe. But in the furtheſt bankeſ of that Ocean where the large kyngedomes of Norwaye and Suecia are ioyned to the continent and almoſte enironed with the ſea, are the people cauled Lapones, A nation excedayng rude, ſuspicioſus, and fearefull, flyngie and aſtonyſhed at the fyght of al ſtrangiers and fyppes. They knowe neyther frutes nor apples, nor yet any benignitie eyther of heauen or earth. They prouide them meate onely with ſhootyng, and are appareled with the ſkynnes of wild beaſtes. They dwell in caues ſylded with drye leaues, and in holow trees conſumed within eyther by fyre or rotten for age. Suche as dwell neare the ſea ſyde, fyſſe more luckyly then cunnyngly, and in the flead of frutes, reſerue in ſtore fyſſes dryed with fmoke. They are of ſmaule ſtature of body, with flatte viſages, pale and wanneye coloure, and very fyſyte of foote. Their wittes or diſpoſitions, are not knownen to the Moscouites theyr bortherers, who thynke it therfore a madneſſe to affayle them with a ſmaule poure, and iudge it neyther profitabile nor glorious, with greate armes to inuade a poore and beggerly nation. They exchange the moft whyte furres which wee caule Armeſlines for other wares of dyuers forteſ: Yet ſo, that they flie the fyght and coompanie of all marchaunteſ. For com-

The Tartars of
Asia are ſubiecte
to the Duke of
Moscouia.

281
The Tartars
beyonde the ryuer
of Volga.
Nogai.
Sugimundus
caueth them
Nagayar.
The nobeleſt
nation of the
Tartars.
The ryuer of
Iaxartes.
Iſmael the Sophi,
kyng of Persia.

The citie of
Samarcanda.
Tamburlanes,
the mythic
Emperour of the
Tartars.
The conqueſtes of
Tamburlanes.

Baiafetes.

This apparel they
haue of the
Persians.

The Tartars
traffiche with the
Moscouites.

The tartars of the
South ſyde of
Moscouia.
Gete and Roxolan.

Russia.
Moscouia cauled
white Russia.
Lithuania.
Prussia.
Liuonia.
Denmarke.
Norway.
Suecia.
The people of
Laponia.

282

Armeſline furres.

Bargeninges
without wordes.
The darke region
by the dñe
region and the
Pigmei, is the way
to Cathay by the
Northe sea.

The scythian
Ocean.

The region of
colmogora.
The ryuer of
diuidna.

The ryuer of Iuga
or Iug.
Vsiuga.

The ryuer of
Diuidna or Dwina.

The ryuer
Suchana.
The frozen sea.

Dwina and
Suchana.

Gronland or
Engronland.

Understand myles
of Germany, that
is leagues.

Rych furses.
Lupi Ceruaril.

Sables.

parynge and layinge theyr wares together, and leauyng theyr furses in a mydde place, they bargeyne with simple sayth, with absente and vnknownen men. Sum men of great credite and autoritie, doo telsife that in a region beyond the Lappones, betwene the west and the north opprefſe: with perpetuall darkenes, is the nation of the people cauled Pigmei, who beinge growen to theyr ful grough, doo scarſely excede the stature of owre chyldren of ten yeares of age. It is a fearefull kynde of menne, and exprefſe theyr wordes in ſuch chatteringy for that they feeme to be ſo much the more lyke apes, in howe muche they dyſter in fence and stature from men of iuft heyt.

Towarde the North, innumerable people are ſubiecte to th[e]empire of the Moſcouites. Theyr regions extende to the Scythian Ocean for the ſpace of almoſte three moonethes iorney.

Next vnto Moſcouia, is the region of Colmogora, abounding with frutes. Through this runneth the ryuer of Diuidna beinge one of the greateſte that is knownen in the Northe partes, and gaue the name to an other leſſe ryuer which breaketh furthe into the ſea Baltheum. This increaſyng at certeyne tymes of the yeare as dooth the ryuer Nilus, overfloweth the fyeldes and playnes, and with his fat and nurifhing moyſture, dooth maruelouſly refiſt the iniuries of heauen and the ſharpe blaſtes of the North wynde. When it ryfeth by reaſon of molten ſnowe and greate ſhoures of rayne, it fauleth into the Ocean by vnknownen nations, and with ſo large a trenche lyke vnto a greate ſea, that it can not bee ſayled ouer in one day with a proſperous wynde. But when the waters are faulen, they leaue here and there large and fruitful Illandes. For corne there caſt on the grounde, growth without any helpe of the plowe, and with maruelous celerite of haſtinge nature fearyng the newe iniurie of the proude ryuer, dooth both ſpryngē and rype in ſhort ſpace.

Into the ryuer Diuidna, runneth the ryuer Iuga: And in the corner where they ioyne togither, is the famous marte towne cauled Vſiuga diſtant from the chiefe citie Moſca. vi. hundredth myles.

Note that wheras Paulus Iouius wryteth here that the ryuer of Diuidna, otherwyſe cauled Dwina, runneth through the region of Colmogor, it is to bee underſtode that there are two ryuers of that name, the one on the Northeast lyde of Moſcouia towards the ſrozen ſea, and the other on the ſouthewſt ſide faulnyng into the ſea Baltheum, or the goule of Finnonia by the citie of Riga in Liuonia. And forasmuch as the trewe knowledge of theſe and certeine other is very neceſſary for all ſuch as shall trade into Moſcouia or other regions in thofe coaſtes by the northe ſea, I haue thought good to make further declaration hereof as I haue founde in the hyflorie of Moſcouia, moft faythfully and largely wrytten by Sigifmundus Liberus who was twylfe ſent ambaffadour into Moſcouia, as fyrt by Maximilian Th[e]emperour, and then aȝeyne by Ferdinand kyng of Hungary and Boheme. This haue I doone the rather, for that in all the mappes that I haue ſeenе of Moſcouia, there is no mention made of the ryuer of Dwina that runneth through the region of Colmogor and by the citie of the fame name, although the prouncey of Dwina bee in all cardes placed Northewarde frome the ryuer of Vſiug or Succana, whiche is the fame Dwina whereof we nowe ſpeakē, and wheroſ Paulus Iouius wryteth, although it bee not ſo named but from the angle or corner where ioyninge with the ryuer of Iug and Suchana, it runneth Northewarde towards the citie of Colmogor, and from thence faulneth into the north or ſrozen ſea, as ſhall hereafter more playnly appeare by the wordes of Sigifmundus, that the one of theſe bee not taken for the other being to faire diſtant that great error myght enue by miſtakynge the fame, eſpecially bicaufe this wheroſ Paulus Iouius wryteth is not by name exprefſed in the cardes, but only the other, whereby the error myght bee the greater. Of that therfore that runneth betweene the confines of Liuonia and the citie of Riga, Sigifmundus wryteth in this maner.

The lake of Dwina, is diſtant from the ſprynges of Borifthenes, almoſte tane myles, and as many from the maryſſe of Fronowō. From it, a ryuer of the fame name towarde the weſt, diſtant from Vuilna. xx. [twenty] myles, runneth from thence towarde the Northe, where by Riga the chiefe citie of Liuonia, it faulneth into the Germanye ſea which the Moſcouites caule Vuareczkote morie. It runneth by Vuitepko, Polotzko, and Dunenburg, and not by Pieſcouia as one hath wrytten. This ryuer beinge for the moſte part nauigable, the Lyuons caule Duna.

Of the other Dwina wheroſ Paulus Iouius ſpeaketh, he wryteth as foloweth.

The prouince of Dwina and the ryuer of the fame name, is ſo named from the place where the ryuers of Suchana and Iug meetyng togither, make one ryuer ſo cauled. For Dwina in the Moſcouites tongue, ſignifieth two. This ryuer by the course of a hundred myles, entereth into the North Ocean on that part where the ſayne ſea runneth by the coaſtes of Swedia and Norwaye, and diuideth Engronlande from the vnknownen lande. This prouince ſituate in the ful north, pertained in tyme paſt to the regnorie of Nougorode. From Moſcouia to the mouthes of Dwina, are numbered. CCC. [three hundred] myles: Albeit as I haue ſayde, in the regions that are beyond Volga, the accompte of the lorney can not bee well obſerued by reaſon of many maryſſes, ryuers, and very greate wooddes that lie in the way. Yet are we led by coniecture to thiñke it to bee Scarſely two hundredth myles: forasmuch as from Moſcouia to Vuolochda, from Vuolochda to Vſiug ſumwhat into the Easte: and late of all frome Vſiug by the ryuer Dwina, is the right paſſage to the northe ſea. This region, befyde the caſtel of Colmogor and citie of Dwina, ſituate almoſt in the mydde way betwene the ſprynges and mouthes of the ryuer, and the caſtell of Pienega ſtandynge in the very mouthes of Dwina, is viterby without townes and caſtels: yet hath it many villyages whiche are farre in funde by reaſon of the barennesse of the foyle. etc.

In an other place he wryteth, that Suchana and Iug, after they are ioyned togither in one, loſe theyr ſyrte names and make the ryuer Dwina. etc. But lette vs nowe retorne to the hystorie of Paulus Iouius.

Vnto Vſiuga, from the Permians, Pecerrians, Inugrians, Vgolicans, and Pinnegians, people inhabytyng the north and northewſt prouinces, are brought the precious furses of Marterns and Sables: Alſo the caſes of woulfes and foxes both whyte and blacke: And lykewyſe the ſkynnes of the beaſtes cauled Ceruarii Lupi (that is) harte woulfes, beinge engendered eyther of a woulfe and a hynde, or a harte and a bytch woulfe. Theſe furses and ſkyns, they exchange for dyuers other wares. The beſt kynde of fables and of the fineſt heare wherwith nowe the veſtures of priuies are lyned, and the tender neckes of delicate dames are couered with the

expresse similitude of the lyuyng beast, are brought by the Permians and Pecerrians, whiche they them selues also receaue at the handes of other that inhabite the regions neare vnto the north Ocean. The Permians and Pecerrians, a lytle before owe tyme, dyd sacrifice to Idols after the maner of the Gentyles: but doo nowe acknowleage Chryste their God. The passage to the Inugrians, and Vgolicans, is by certeyne rowgh mountaynes, which perhapses are they that in owlde tyme were cauled Hyperborei. In the topes of these, are founde the bestes kyndes of Falcons: whereof one kynde (cauled Herodiun) is whyte with spotted fethers. There are also iersfalecons, fakers, and peregrines, whiche were vnknownen to the ancient princes in theyr excesse and nise pleasures.

Beyonde those people whom I last named (beinge all tributaries to the kings of Moseouia) are other nations the last of men, not known by any viages of the Moscouites, forasmuche as none of them haue passed to the Ocean, and are therefore knowne only by the fabulos narrations of marchautes. Yet is it apparente that the ryuer of Diuina or Dwina, drawyng with it innumerable other ryuers, runneth with a vehement course towarde the northe: and that the sea is there exceedingly large: so that saylyng by the coast of the ryght hande, shippes may haue passage from thense to Cathay as is thought by most lykely conjecture, excepte there lye sum lande in the waye. For the region of Cathay perteyneth to th[e]extreme and furthest parts of the East, situate almost in the parallell of Thracia, and known to the Portugales in India when they sayled neare thereunto by the regions of Sinara and Malacha to Aurea Chersonesus, and brought from thense certeyne vestures made of Sables skynnes, by which only argument it is apparente that the citie of Cathay is not farre from the coastes of Scythia.

But when Demetrius was demauded whether eyther by the monumentes of letters or by fame leste theym of theyre predecysours, they hadde any knowlage of the gothes who nowe more then a thousand yeares fence subuerted Th[e]empire of the Romane Emperours, and defaced the citie of Rome, he answered, that both the nation of the Gothes of the name of kyng Totilas their chiefe capitayne, was of famous memorie amonge them: And that dyuers nations of the north regions conspired to that expedition, and especiallye the Moscouites: Also that armie increased of the confluence of the Barbarous Liuons and wanderyng Tartars: But that they were all cauled Gothes forasmuch as the Gothes that inhabited Scondania and Ifelande, were the auctoures of that inuacion.

And with these boundes are the Moscouites inclofed on every side, whom we thinke to be thoſe people that Ptolome cauled Modocas: but haue doubtelſe at this day their name of the riuſer Mosco whiche runneth through the chiefe citie Mosca named also after the fame. This is the moſt famous citie in Moscouia, awell for the ſituation thereof beinge in maner in the myddle of the region, as alſo for the commodious oportunitie of ryuers, multitude of houſes, and ſtronge ſene of fo fayre and goodly a caſtell. For the citie is extended with a longe tracie of buyldynges by the bankeſ of the ryuer for the ſpace of fyue myles. The houſes are made all of tymber, and are diuided into parlers, chambers, and kichins of large roomes: yet neyther of vnfemely height or to lowe, but of decent meaſure and proportion. For they haue greate trees apte for the purpoſe brought from the foreſte of Hercinia? of the which, made perfectly rounde like the maſtes of shippes, and fo layde one vpon another that they ioyne at the endes in right angles, where being made very ſafe and ſure, they frame theiſr houſes thereof of maruelous strength with ſmaule charges and in verye ſhort tyme. In maner all the houſes haue priuate gardens awell for pleauere as commoditye of herbes, wherby the circuite of the diſperſed citie appeareth very greate. All the wardes or quarters of the citie, haue theiſr peculiar chappells. But in the chiefest and highest place therof, is the Church of owe ladi of ample and goodly workemanſhippe, whiche Aristoteles of Bononie, a man of singular knowlage and experience in architecture, buyldeſ more then. lx. [ſixty] yeares fence. At the very head of the citie, a little ryuer cauled Neglina which dryueth many corne myles, entereth into the ryuer Moscus, and maketh almoſt an Iland, in whose end is the caſtell with many ſtrong towrs and bulwarkes, buyldeſ very fayre by the diuine of Italien architecturſ that are the maſters of the kynges workeſ. In the fieldes abowt the citie, is an incrediblē multitud of hares and roe buckes, the which it is lawefull for no man to chafe or perfue with dogges or nettes excepte only certeyne of the kynges familiars and ſtroung embaffadourſ to whom he giueth licence by ſpeciall commaundement. Almost three partes of the citie is inuironed with two ryuers, and the refydue with a large mote that receaueth plentie of water frome the ſayde ryuers. The citie is alſo defended on the other ſyde with an other ryuer named Iausa, whiche faultheſ alſo into Moscus a little beneath the citie. Furthermore Moſcus runnyng towarde the South, faultheſ into the ryuer Ocha or Occa muſche greater then it ſelfe at the towne Columna, and not very farre from thene Ocha it ſelfe increased with other riuers, vnladeth his ſtreames in the famous ryuer Volgo, wher at the place where they ioyne, is ſituate the citie of Nouogrodia the leſſe, fo named in reſpecte of the greater citie of that name from whence was brought the firſt colonie of the leſſe citie. Volga cauled in owlde tyme Rha, hath his originnal of the greate maryſſes named the white lakes. These are aboue Moscouia betweene the North and the West, and ſende furthe from them almoſt all the ryuers that are diſperſed

The mountaines cauled Hiperborei Haunes of diuers kyndes.

The paſſage from Moſcouia to Cathay.

Cathay.
Maſter Eliot cauled Cathay the region of ſinarum.

The Gothes ſubuerted the Romane Empire.
The north regions conſpired againſt the Romaneſ.

Moscouia

284
The citie of Moſca.

Richard chaunceler tolde me that the maſtes are ſumwhat holowe on the outside, and that the hole ſyde of the next ſtreeth into the ſame wherby they lie very cloſe.

The caſtel of Moſca.

White hares and roe buckes.

The ryuer Ocha.

Volga.
Nouogrodia.

Rha.
The whyte lakes.

The Ryphean and
hyperborean
mountaynes.

Tanais and
Boristhenes.
The sea Euxinus.

The Caspian sea.

Astrachan.

Media.

Armenia.

Perse.

Casan.

285

Sura.
Surcium.

Nouogrodia.

The temple of
Sancta Sophia.

The elevation of
the pole at
Nouogrodia and
Moscouia.

Heate by reason
of short nyghtes.

The citie of
Volodemaria.

The citie of
Moscha.

Ottoferia.

Volga.

Riga.

The citie of
Plescouia.

The citie of
Lubeka.

From Rome to
Moscouia.

Watter trauayle
by ice and snowe.

Maryshes in
summer.

into dyuers regions on every sy.le, as wee see of the Alpes from whose toppes and sprynges descend the waters of whose concourse the ryuers of Rhene, Po, and Rodanum, haue theyr increase. For these maryshes in the fleade of mountaynes ful of sprynges, minister abundant moyture, forasmuch as no mountaynes are yet founde in that region by the longe trauayles of men, in so much that manye that haue byn studious of the ownde Cofmographie, suppose the Ryphean and Hyperborean mountaynes so often mentioned of the ancient writers, to bee fabulous. From these maryshes therfore, the ryuers of Dwina, Ocha, Motchus, Volga, Tanais, and Borysthenes, haue theyr originall. The Tartars caule Volga Edel: Tanais they caule Don: And Borysthenes is at this day cauled Neper. This, a lytle beneathe Taurica, runneth into the sea Euxinus. Tanais is receaved of the maryshes of Meotis at the noble marte towne Azoum. But Volga leauynge the citie of Moscha towarde the south, and runnyng with a large circuite and greate wyndynge and creekes first towarde the Easte, then to the West, and lastly to the south, faulthe with a full streame into the Caspian or Hyrcan sea. Aboue the mouth of this, is a citie of the Tartars cauled Cytrachan, which sum caule Astrachan, where martes are kepte by the marchantes of Media, Armenia, and Perse. On the further banke of Volga, there is a towne of the Tartars cauled Cafan, of the whiche the Horda of the Cafanite Tartars tooke theyr name. It is distante from the mouth of Volga and the Caspian sea fyue hundredth myles. Aboue Cafan. C.I. [one hundred and fifty] myles at the enteruarce of the ryuer Sura, Basilius that now reigneth, buylde a towne cauled Surcum, to th[e] intente that in thosse desertes, the marchantes and trauailers which certifie the gouernours of the marches of the doinges of the Tartars and the maners of that vnquiet nation, may have a fale mansion amone thyre customers.

Th[e] Emperours of Moscouia at dyuers tymes, eyther moued thereto by occasion of thynges presente, or for the defyre they had to nobilitate newe and obfcurse places, haue kepte the seate of theyr courte and Empire in dyuers cities. For Nouogrodia whiche lyeth towarde the Weste and the Lyoun sea, not many yeares past, was the headde citie of Moseouia, and obteyned euer the chiese dignitie by reasoun of the incredible number of houses and edif[i]c[es], with the oportunitie of the large lake replenysched with fyffe, and also for the fame of the moste auncient and venerable temple whiche more then fourte hundredth yeres fence was dedicated to Sancta Sophia Chryste the sonne of God, accordyng to the custome of the Emperours of Bizantium nowe cauled Constantinople. Nouogrodia is oppressed in maner with continuall wynter and darkenesse of longe nyghtes. For it hath the pole Artike elevate above the Horizon threescore and foure degrees: and is further from the Equinoctiall then Moscouia by almoste. vi. degrees. By whiche dyffERENCE of heauen, it is fayne that at the sommer steyne of the sonne, it is burnte with continuall heate by reasoun of the shorte nyghtes.

The citie also of Volodemaria, beinge more then two hundredth myles distant from Mosea towarde the Easte, had the name of the chiese citie and kynges towne, whither the seate of Th[e] Empire was translatid by the valant Emperours for necessarie considerations, that such ayde, furniture, and requisites as apperteyne to the warres myght bee neare at hande at suche tyme as they kepte continuall warre agayngle the Tartars theyr bortherers. For it is situate without Volga, on the bankes of the ryuer Clefma, whiche faulthe into Volga. But Moscha, awell for thosse gyftes and commodities whereof we haue spoken, as also that it is situate in the myddest of the most frequented place of all the region and Empire, and defended with the ryuer and Castel, hath in comparyson to other cities byn thought moche worthy to bee esteemed for the chiese. Moscha is distant from Nouogrodia fife hundredth myles: and almost in the mydde way is the citie of Ottoferia (otherwyse cauled Otwer or Tuwer) vppon the ryuer of Volga. This ryuer neare vnto the fountaynes and springes of the same, not yet increased by receauyng so many other ryuers, runneth but flowly and gentelly: And passeth from thense to Nouogrodia through many wooddes and defolate playnes. Furthermore frome Nouogrodia to Riga the nexte porte of the Sarmatian sea, is the iormay of a thousand myles lytle more or leiss. This tracte is thought to bee more commodious then the other, bycause it hath manye townes and the citie of Plescouia in the waye, beinge imbrafed with two ryuers. From Riga (perteynyng to the dominion of the greate master of the warres of the Liuons) to the citie of Lubeka a porte of Germanie in the goufe of Cymbria Cherfoneus (nowe cauled Denmarke) are numbered aboue a thoufande myles of daungerous faylynge.

From Rome to the citie of Moscha, the distalnce is knownen to bee two thoufande and fyxe hundredth miles by the nearest way paſſyng by Rauenna, Taruſium, the Alpes of Carnica: Also Villacum, Noricum, and Vienna of Pannonie: and from thense (paſſyng ouer the ryuer of Danubius) to Olmutium of the Marouians and to Cracouia the chiese citie of Polonie, are countyd. xi. hundredth myles. From Cracouia to Vilna the headde citie of Lithuania, are countyd fife hundredth myles: and as many from that citie to Smolenzko situate beyonde Borysthenes, from whense to Moscha are countyd fyxe hundredth myles. The iorney frome Vilna by Smolenzko to Moscha, is trauayled in wynter with expedite fleades and incredible celerite vppon the snowes hardened with longe froſte and compacte lyke Iſe by reasoun of muche wearyng. But in sommer, the playnes can not bee ouerpased but by difficulte and laborios trauayle. For when the snowes by the continuall heate of the sonne begyn to melte and dissolute, they caufe great maryshes and quamyes able to intangle bothe horſe

end the waters
ryffles in
are yet founde
of the wold
ancient writers,
a, Tanais, and
Borysthenes
us. Tanais is
tie of Moscha
ft towarde the
or Hyrcan sea.
where martes
here is a towne
It is distante
hundred and
ed Surcium, to
of the marches
amonge theyr

presente, or for
and Empire in
ares past, was
umber of hou ses
one of the mosle
Sancta Sophia
Constantinople.
t hath the pole
quinociaill then
her fleye of the

ica towarde the
s translatid by
perteyne to the
Tartars theyr
to Volga. But
in the mydlest
Castel, hath in
is distant from
e cauled Otwer
e fame, not yet
from thense to
Riga the nexte
thought to bee
e waye, beinge
e warres of the
(nowe cauled

undred miles
m, and Vienna
Marouians and
to Vilna the
olenzko situate
romne Vilna by
on the snowes
er, the playnes
continall heate
gle bothe horse

and man, were it not that wayes are made through the same with brydges and causeys of wood, and almost infinite laboure.

In all the region of Mosconia, there is no vayne or mine of golde or syluer, or any other common metall excepte iron: neyther yet is there any token of precious stones. And therefore they bye all those thynges of straungers. Neuerthelesse, this iniurie of nature is recompensed with abundaunce of rich furres, whose price by the wanton niceenesse of men is growne to such excesse that the furres perteynyng to one forte of apparell, are nowe fowle for a thoufande crownes. But the tyme hath byn that these haue byn bought better chepe when the furthele nations of the north being ignorant of owr nyfe finenesse and breathing defyre toward effeminate and superfluous pleasures, exchanged the same with muche simplicitie often tymes for tryffles and thynges of fmaule value: In so muche that commonly the Permians and Pecerrians, were accustomed to gyue so many skynnes of Sables for an Iren axe or hatchet as beinge tyed harde toghether, the marchaunts of Mosconia coulde drawe through the hole where the hafte or handyll entereth into the same. But the Moscouites fende into all partes of Europe the bell kynde of flaxe to make lynnen clothe, and hempe for ropes: Also many oxe hydes, and exeadyngre great mafles of waxe.

They proudly denye that the Romane churche obteyneth the principale and preeminent autorite of all other.

They fo abhorre the nation of the Iewes, that they detest the memorie of them, and wyll in no condition admite them to dwell within theyr dominions: esteeming them as wycked and mischeuous people that haue of late taught the Turkes to make gunnes. Befyde the booke that they haue of the ancient Greeke doctours, they haue also the commentaries and homelies of faynt Ambrose, Augustine, Jerome, and Gregorie, translated into the Illirian or Slauon tonge which agreeith with theires. For they vse bothe the Slauon tonge and letters, as doo also the Selauons, Dalmates, Bohemes, Pollones, and Lithuanes. This tonge is spredde further then any other at this day. For it is familar at Conflantinopole in the courte of the Emperours of the Turkes: and was of late harde in Egypce amonge the Mamalukes in the courte of the Soltane of Alecyre otherwyfe cauled Memphis or Babilon in Egypce. A greate number of booke of holy scripture are translated into this tonge by th[e]industrie of faynte Jerome and Cyrilus. Furthermore, befyde the hytories of their owne countreys, they haue also bookees conteynyng the factes of great Alexander and the Romane Emperours, and lykewyfe of Marcus Antonius and Cleopatra. They haue no maner of knowlage of philosopie, Altronomic, or fpeculatiue phisike with other liberal sciences: But such are taken for phisitians as professe that they haue often times obserued the vertue and qualite of iun vnknownen herbe.

They number the yeres, not from the iyrth of Chryste, but from the begynnynge of the worlde. And this they begin to accompte, not frome the monethe of Ianyary, but from September.

They haue fewe and simple lawes thorwghoe oute all the kyngedome, made by the equite and confisience of theyr princes, and approued by the consent of wyfe and good men: and are therfore greatly for the welthe and quyetteneesse of the people, forasmuch as it is not lawfull to pervert them with any interpretations or cautiellons of lawyers or attornneys. They punythe theues, rousers, priuie pyckers, and murtherers. When they examine malefactours, they poure a great quantite of coulde water vppon fuche as they suspeete, whiche they say to bee an intollerable kynde of tormente. But sumtymes they manacle fuche as are floborne, and wyll not confesse apparent crymes.

Their youth is exercized in dyuers kyndes of games and plays refemblyng the warres, wherby they both practifie pollicie and increase theyr strength. They vse runnyng both on horsebacke and afoote. Also runnyng at the tylte, wrestlyng, and especially shooptyng. For they gyue rewards to fuche as excell therin.

The Moscouites are vniuersally of meane stature, yet very square set and myghtly brawned. They haue al grey eyes, longe beardes, thorte legges, and bygge bellyes. They ryde very thorte, and shoote backewarde very cunnyngly even as they fye. At home in theyr hou ses, theyr fare is rather plentifull then deuyte. For theyr tables are furnyshed for a fmaule price with all fuche kyndes of meates as may bee defydred of fuch as are gyuen to most excelline glutony. Hennes and duckes are bought for lyttle iyluer penfe the piece. There is incredible plentie of beatles and cattayle bothe greater and fmaule. The flettle of bife that is kyllid in the mydlest of wynter, is so congeled and frosen, that it putrifiethe not for the space of two monethees. Theyr bife and mooste delicate dysfhes, are gotten by hantyng and haukyng as with vs. For they take all sortes of wyld beatles with houndes and dyuers kyndes of nettes. And with falcons and erens or eagles of a marueylos kynde whiche the region of Pecerra bryngeth furth vnto them, they take not onely fefantes and wyld duckes, but also cranes and wyld swannes. They take also a foule of darke colour abowte the byggenes of a goode with redde overbrowes, whose fleshe in taste paileth the pleasaunteesse of Pheafauntes. These in the Moscouites tonge are cauled *Tzrau*, whiche I suppose to bee the fume that Plini caulleth *Erythrato*, known to the people of the Alpes, and especially to the *Rhemians* whiche inhabit the lounches abowte the sprynges of the ryuer Abdua. The ryuer of Volga ministreth vnto them great syffles and of pleasaunte taste: especially flurgions or

Other wryters
deny this.

286

Riche furres.

The price of furres.

How many tables
skynnes for an axe.

Flax.
Oxe hydes.
Waxe.

They abhorre the
Iewes.

Their bokes and
religion.

The Selauon
tonge speake
further then any
other.

Sainte Jerome
was borne in
Dalmata nowe
cauled Selauonia.

Howe they
number the
yeares.
Fewe and simple
lawes

The exercise of
youth

Shooptyng.

The corporatyon
of the Moscouites.

Their fare.

287
Plente he preserued
longe by reason of
condile.
Hantyng and
haukyng.

Plente of fyses.

Fyshe longe
reverened in Ise.

Wyne.

Malauies.

All the north
parte of the firme
lande was cauled
Scythia and the
people Scythians.
Drynke cooled
with Ise.

Wyne of cherries.

Their women.

Thomas
Paleologus.
The conquest of
the turkes in
Grecia.

How the princes
chuse their wyues.

238

Duke Basilius.

War betwene the
Polones and
Muschuches.

War between the
Moscouites and
Tartars.

The Moscouites
first banner.

Their horses and
horsemen.

rather a kynde of fyshe lyke vnto sturgions: whiche in the wynter season beinge inclosed in Ise, are longe referued fresshe and vncorrupte. Of other kindes of fyshes, they take in maner an incredible multitude in the whyte lakes whereof wee haue spoken before. And wheras they vterly lacke natvie wynes, they vse such as are brought from other places. And this only in certeine feastes and holy misteries. Especially the pleasaunte Malauies of the Iland of Creta nowe cauled Candy, are had in moche honoure: and vfed eyther as medicens or for a shewe of excessiue abounding, forasmuche as it is in maner a miracle that wynes brought from Candy by the freyghetes of Hercules pillers and the Ilandes of Gades, and tossed with such fludles of the inclosed Ocean, shulde be droonke amonthe the Scythian knowes in theyr natvie purite and pleasauntesse.

The common people drinke mede made of hony and hoppes sodden together, whiche they keepe longe in pytched barrels where the goodnes increafeth with age. They vse also beere and ale as doo the Germanes and Polones. They are accustomed for delicatenes in sommer to coole their beere and mede with puttyng Ise therin, whiche the noble men refue in theyr sellars in great quantitie for the same purpose. Summe there are that delyte greatly in the iuse that is preffed owte of cherries before they bee full ripe: whiche they affirme to haue the colour of cleare and ruddy wyne with a verye pleasaunte taste.

Their wyues and women, are not with them in suche honoure as they are in other nations. For they vse them in maner in the place of seruantes. The noble men and gentelmen, doo diligently obserue their walkes and haue an eye to their chasteitie. They are seldom bydden furth to any feastes: nether are permittted to referte to churches farre of, or to walke abrode without sum greate confederacion. But the common forte of women, are easely and for a fmaule price allured to lecherye euen of straungres: by reasoun wherof, the gentelmen doo lytle or nothynge esteeme them.

John the father of kyng Basilius dyed more then xx. [twenty] yeares fence. He maryed Sophia the daughter of Thomas Paleologus who reigned farre in Peloponnesus (now cauled Morea) and was brother to Th[e]emperour of constantinople. Shee was then at Rome when Thomas her father was dryuen owte of Grecia by the Turkes. Of her were syue chyldren borne, as Basilius hym selfe, George, Demetrius, Symeon, and Andreas. Basilius tooke to wyfe Salomonia the daughter of George Soborouius a man of synguler fidelite and wyfdom and one of hys counfayle. The excellent vertues of which woman, only barennesse obfured.

When the prynces of Moscouia delyberat to marie, theyr custome is to haue choyse of all the vyrgynes in the realme, and to cause suche as are of moft faire and bewtyfull vyfage and perfonage with maners and vertues accordyng, to bee brought before them. Which afterwarde they committē to certayne fauthful men and graue matrones to bee furder vewed, in so muche that they leaue no parte of them vnferched. Of these, free whome the prynce moft lyketh, is pronounced worthy to bee hys wyfe, not without greate and carefull expectation of theyr parentes, lyuyng for that tyme betwene hope and feare. The other vyrgyns also which stooode in election and contended in bewty and integritie of maners, are often times the same day to gratyfy the prynce, maryed to hys noble men, gentelmen, and capytaynes: wherby it sumtymes commeth to passe that whyle the princes contemne the lynage of roiall descente, suche as are borne of humble parentage, are exalted to the degree of princely estate. In lyke maner as Th[e]emperours of the turkes were accustomed to bee chosen by cumlynesse of perfonage and warly prouess.

Basilius was vnder th[e]age of forty and seuen yeares, of cumly perfonage, singuler vertue, and princely qualities, by all meanes fudyous for the prosperite and commodities of hys subiectes. Furthermore in beneuolence, lybertye and good successe in hys doynges, to bee preferred before his progenitours. For when he hadde. vi. years kepte warre with the Lyuons that moued, lxxii. [feuenty-two] confederate cities to the caufe of that warre, he obteyned the victorie and departed with fewe conditions of peace rather gyuen then accepted. Also at the begynnynge of his reigne, he put the Polones to flight and took prisoner Constantine the capitayne of the Ruthens whom he brought to Moscouia tyed in chaynes. But shortly after at the ryuer Borilthenes aboue the citie of Orfa, he hym selfe was ouercomme in a great battayle by the same Constantine whom he hadde dismissed: Yet fo, that the towne of Smolenzko whiche the Moscouites possessed before and was now woonne by the Polone, shulde styll perteyne to the dominions of Basilius. But ageynste the Tartars, and especially the Tartars of Europe cauled the Precopies, the Moscouites haue often tymes kepte warre with good successe, in feuenge of th[e]iniuries doone to them by theyr incurssions.

Basilius is accustomed to bryngē to the fieldes more then a hundred and fiftie thousande horfemen deuided into three bandes and folowynge the banners or enseignes of theyr capitaynes in order of battayle. On the banner of the kynges wyngē, is figured the image of Iosue the capitaine of the Hebrewes at whose prayer the loue prolonged the daye and steyde his courfe as wytnesse the hystories of holye scripture. Armies of foote-men are in maner to no vse in those great wyldernesses, awel for theyr apparel beinge loofe and longe, as also for the custome of theyr enemies, who in theyr warres trusste rather to the fwystenesse of theyr lyght horfes then to trye the matter in a pyght fyelde.

Their horfes are of leſſe then meane stature: but verye stronge and swyfte. Theyr horfemen are armed

are longe
titude in the
vfe suche as
the pleauntes
medicens or
frome Candy
of the inclofed

eepe longe in
ermaines and
puttyngfe Ife
ame there are
ey affyrmē to

For they vfe
theyr walkes
permyttē to
mon forte of
the gentelmen

and Sophia the
as brother to
wte of Grecia
Symeon, and
r fidelitie and
ured.

the vyrgynes in
s and vertues
en and graue
, free whome
xpectation of
n election and
te, maryed to
the princes
the degree of
by cumlyneffē

and princely
re in beneuo-
For when he
s to the caufe
men accepted.
the capitayne
thenes aboue
he hadde dif-
woonne by
especially the
fucceſſe, in

men deuided
le. On the
fe prayer the
nies of foot-
onge, as also
t horses then

n are armed

with pykes, ryuettes, mafes of Iren and arrowes. Fewe haue hooked swoordes. Theyr bodies are defended with rounde Targets after the maner of the Turkes of Asia: or with bendyng and cornarde targettes after the maner of the Greeks: Also with coates of mayle, brygantynes, and sharpe helmettes. Basilius dyd furthermore inflytute a band of hargabuſiers on horſebacke: and caufed many greate braſen pieces to bee made by the woorkemanshype of certeyne Italyans: and the fame with theyr flockes and wheeles to bee placed in the castell of Moſca.

The kyng hym ſelfe with pryncely magnyfycence and ſinguler familiaritie (wherwith neuerdeleſſe no parte of the maieftie of a kyng is yvolate) is accuſtomed to dyne openly with hys noble men and ſtrangle ambaffadours in hys owne chamber of prefence where is feene A meruelous quantytie of ſyluer and gylde plate ſtandynge vppon two great and high cubbardes in the ſame chamber. He hath not abowte hym any other garde for the cuſtody of hys perſon ſauyng only hys accuſtomed famylye. For watche and warde is diſtinctly kepte of the faſthfull multytude of the ciſiens: In ſo muche that every warde or quarter of the ciſie is incloſed with gates rayles, and barres: neyther is it lawfull for any man rafhely to walke in the ciſie in the nyght, or without lyght. All the courte conſyleth of noble men, gentelmen, and choyſe fouldyers which are cauſed oute of euerie regyon by theyre townes and vyllages, and commaunded to wayte courte by courte at certeyne moonethes appoynted. Furthermore when warre is proclaimed, all the armye is collected bothe of the owlde fouldyers and by muſterynge of newe in all prouynces. For the lieuetenautes and capytaynes of the armye, are accuſtomed in all ciſies to muſter the youth, and to admittē to th[e]order of fouldyers ſuch as they thynke able to ſerue the turne. Theyre wages is payde them of the common treaſurye of euerie prouynce which is gathered and partly payde alſo in the tyme of peace although it bee but lytle. But ſuch as are affiſoned to the warres, are free frome all tributes, and inioye certein other priuilegiſ wherby they may the more gladly and cherfully ſerue theyr kyng and defend theyr contrey. For in the tyme of warre, occacyon is mynyſtred to ſhewe trewe vertue and manhood, where in ſo greate and neceſſarie an iſtitution, euer man accordyngē to hys approued actuitie and ingenuous forwardneſſe, may obtayne the fortune eyther of perpetuall honoure or ignominie.

*Vix olim villa fides referentibus horrida regna
Moschorum, et Ponti, res glacialis erat.
Nunc Iouio autore, illa oculis hystramus, et vrbel.
Et nemora, et montes cernimus et fluvios.
Moschouiam, monumenta Ioui, tua culta reuoluens.
Capi alios mundos credere Democriti.*

Theire armure.

Hargabuſiers.
Gunes.

The Princes dyneth
openly.

Sigismundus sayth
that much of this
is golde.

The custodis of
the ciſie.

The dukes courte.

Soulidyers wages
of the common
treasury.

280



**I OTHER NOTABLE THYNGES
AS CONCERNYNGE MOSCOVIA: GATHERED OWT OF
THE BOOKES OF SIGISMUNDVS LIBERVS.**

Note that when he sayth myles, he meaneth leagues.

Russia.

The browne colour
of the Russes.

Roscia.

The Slaoun tongue
spreadeth farre.

Vandales.

The Princes of
Russia.

The duke of
Moscouie.



Rom whense Russia had the name, there are dyuers opinions. Some thynke that it was so named of one Ruffus the soonne or nevie of Lech the kynge of the Polons. Other affirme that it was so cauled of a certeyne owlde towne named Russus not farre frome Nouogoroda or Nouogardia the more. Sum alio thynke that it was so cauled of the browne coloure of the nation. But the Moscouians confute al these opinions as vntrewe: Affirmyng that this nation was in owdly tyme cauled Rossia as a nation dispersed, as the name it selfe dooth declare. For Rossia in the Ruthens tongue, dooth signify dispersed or scattered. The which thyng to be trew, dyuers other people commyxt with thej inhabitauntes, and dyuers prouinces lyng here and there betwene dyuers partes of Russia doo playnely declare. But whense so euer they tooke their name, doubtlesse all the people that vse the Slaoun tongue, and professe the fayth of Chryſt after the maner of the Greekes, (cauled in theyr common language Ruffi, and in the Latin tongue Rutheni) are increased to suche

a multytlude that they haue eyther expulsed all the nations that lye betwene them, or drawne them to their maner of lyuyng, insomuche that they are nowe cauled all Rutheni by one common name.

Furthermore the Slaoun tongue (whiche at this daye is sumwhat corruptly cauled Sclauon) runneth exceeding far, as vfed of the Dalmates, Bosſuenfer, Croatians, Iſtrians, and by a longe tracie of the sea Adriatike vnto Forum Iulii: Of the Caruians alio whome the Venetians caule Charfos: and lykewyfe of the Carniolans and Carinthians vnto the ryuer Draus: Furthermore of the Stirians within Gretzium and by Mueru vnto Danubius and from thense of the Myſians, Seruians, Bulgarians, and other inhabitynge euen vnto Constantinople: Furthermore of the Bohemians, Lufacians, Silefians, Morauians, and thej inhabitauntes neare vnto the ryuer Vagus in the kyngedom of Hungarie: The Polons also and the Ruthenians whose Empire reacheth very farre: lykewyfe the Circafians and Quinquemontanians vnto Pontus: and is from thense vfed in the north partes of Germanie amonoge the remanent of the Vandales inhabiting here and there. All whiche nations althowgh they acknowleage them felues to bee Sclauons, yet the Germayns taking the denomination only of the Vandales, caule al them that vſe the Slaoun tongue, Vuenden, Vuinden, or Vuindylsh.

Of the Princes that nowe reigne in Russia, the chiefe is the great Duke of Moscouia who posiesieth the greatest part therof. The feconde is the great duke of Lithuania: and the thyrde the kynge of Polonie, who nowe obteyneth the dominion of Polonie and Lithuania.

In autoritie and dominion ouer his subiectes, the prince of Moscouie passeth all the monarkes of the worlde. For he depriueth all his noble men and gentelmen of al theyr holdes and munitions at his pleasure. He truslēth not his owne brotherne, but opprefseth all with lyke feruitude. It so muche that whome so euer he commaundeth eyther to remayne with hym in the courte, or to goo to the warres, or fendeth on an ambassage, they are compelled to bee at theyr owne charges, excepte the younge gentelmen the soonne of the Boiarons, that is, the noble men of the lowest degree. He viurpeth this autoritie awfull ouer the spiritualtie as the temporaltie: constitutyng what him lyfeth of the goods and lyfe of al men. Of his counſilers there is not one that dare difſente from hym in any thyng. They openly confesse that the wyl of the prince is the wyl of god: and therfore caule hym the key bearer and chamberlen of god, and beleue him to bee the executor of gods wyl.

By reasoun wherof, the prince hym selfe when any peticion is made to hym for the deliuerie of any captiue, is accustomed to aunswere: When god commaundeth he shalbe deliuered. Lykewyse when any asketh a question of an vncerteyne or doubtfull thynge, theyr custome is to answere thus: God knoweth and the greate prince. It is vncerteyne whether the crueltie and fiercenes of the nation doo requyre so tyrannous a prince, or whether by the tyranny of the prince, the nation is made so fierce and cruel.

Basilius the foonne of Iohn, was the fyrt that tooke vppon hym the name and title of a kynge in this maner: The great lorde Basilius, by the grace of god kynge and lorde of all Russia and the greate duke of Vuolodimeria, Moscouia, Nouogardia, etc.

Furthermore, wheras nowe this prince is cauled an Emperour, I haue thought good to shewe the tylde and caufe of this errore. Note therfore that Czar in the Ruthens tongue signifieth a kynge, wheras in the language of the Slauons, Pollons, Bohemes, and other, the same woordre Czar, signifieth Cesar by whiche name Th[e]Emperours haue byn commonly cauled. For bothe they and the Slauons that are vnder the kyngdome of Hungarie, caule a kynge by an other name: as sum Crall, other Kyrrall, and sum Koroll: but thinke that only an Emperoure is cauled Czar. Whereby it came to passe that the Ruthene or Moscouite interpretors hearynge theyr prince to bee so cauled of straunge nations, began them selues also to name hym an Emperour, and thinke the name of Czar to bee more worthy then the name of a kynge, althowgh they signifie all one thynge. But who so wyl reade all theyr histories and bookees of holy scripture, shall fynde that a kynge is cauled Czar, and an Emperour Kesar. By the lyke errore Th[e]Emperour of the Turkes is cauled Czar, who neuerthelesse of antiquite vſed no hygher tylde then the name of a kynge, exprefed by this woordre Czar. And hereof the Turkes of Europe that vſe the Slauon tongue, caule the citie of Constantinople Czgrad, (that is) the kynges citie.

Sum caule the prince of Moscouie the whyte kynge, whiche I thinke to proeade of the whyte cappes, or other tyrementes they weare on their heads, lyke as they caule the kynge of Percia Kifilassa (that is) redde headde. He vſeth the tylde of a kynge when he writeth or sendeth to Rome, the Emperour, the pope, the kynge of Suctia and Denmarke, the greate master of Prussia and Liuonia, and also to the greate Turke as I haue byn credably informed: but he is not cauled kyng of any of them, excepte perhaſpnes of the Liuons. Yet by reasoun of his later conqueſtes, sum haue thought hym worthy the name of a kynge or rather of an Emperour bycause he hath kynges vnder his Empire.

To the kyng of Polone he vſeth this tylde: The great lorde Basilius by the grace of god, lorde of all Russia, and greate duke of Vuolodimeria, Moscouia, Nouogardia, etc. leauyng owt the tylde of a kyng. For none of them vouchefafeth to receaue the letters of the other augmented with any newe tylde, as I knewe by experiance at my being in Moscouia, at which tyme Sigismundus the kyng of Polone fente hym his letters augmented with the tylde of the Duke of Masouia, wherwith he was not a lytle offended.

They glorie in theyr hyflories that before Vuolodimeria and Olha, the lande of Russia was baptisid and blessed of faynt Andrewe th[e]apostle of Chryſt, affirmynge that he came from Grecia to the mouthes of the ryuer Boryſthenes: and that he fayled vppe the ryuer to the mountaynes where as is nowe Chiouia: and that there he blessed all the lande and placed his croffe, prophesyng also that the grace of god shulde bee greate there, and that there shulde bee many churches of Chryſtian men: Lykewyſe that he afterwarde came to the ſprynges of Boryſthenes vnto the great lake Vuolok, and by the ryuer Louat defended into the lake Ilmer: from whence by the riuer Vuolcon whiche runneth owte of the fame lake, he came to Nouogardia: and paſſed frome thense by the fame ryuer to the lake Ladoga and the ryuer Heua, and ſo vnto the ſea whiche they caule Vuaretzvicia, beinge the fame that we caule the Germayne ſea, betwene Vuinlandia or Finlandia and Liuonia, by the whiche he fayled to Rome, and was at the laſte crucified for Chryſt his goſpell in Peloponnesus by the tyranny of Agus Antipater, as theyr crownacles make mention.

The pryncie every feconde or thyrde yeare, caufeth a muſter to bee taken of the foonneſſe of the Boiarons, and takethe an accoumpte bothe of theyr number and howe many horſes and men euerie of them is able to make: and then appoynteth a certeyne ſtypende to ſuche as are able further to beare theyr owne charges in the warres. They haue ſeldome any ref or quyetteneſſe. For they eyther keepe warre with the Lithuanians, Liuonians, Suctians, or Tartars of Cafan. Or yf it ſo chaunce that the pryncie keepe no warre, yet dooth he yearly appoynt garryfons of. xx. [twenty] thouſande menne in places abouſt Tanais and Occa to repreſe the incursions and robberyes of the European Tartars cauled Precopites.

As in other matters, even ſo in th[e]order of warrefare ther is great diuerſitie amounge men. For the Moſcouian as foone as he begynneth to flye, thinketh of none other ſuccoure but putteth all his confidence therein. Beinge purſued or taken of his enemie, he neyther defendeth himſelfe nor defireth the perdon.

The Tartar caſt of from his horſe, ſpoyleſſ of al his armure and weapons, and alſo fore wounded, defendeth hym ſelfe with handes, feete, and teethe, and by all meaneſ he may, vnyll his ſtrength and ſpirite fayle hym.

The Turke, when he feeth hym ſelfe deſtitute of all helpe and hope to eſcape, doth humbly defyre pardon,

290

Why the duke of
Moscouia was
cauled an
Emperour

The greate Turke

The whyte kyng.

The duke of
Moscouia his tylde.

Russia baptysid
by fayne
Andrewe the
Apostle.

The Moſcouites
warres

291

Dyvers maners of
dyvers people in
the world.

The Moscouites army.

casting away his weapons and armure, and reching furth to the victourer his hands ioyned together to be bounde, hopynge by captiuitie to saue his lyfe.

Howe he maynteyneth his army.

The Moscouites in placeinge theyr armye chuse them a large playne where the best of them pytch theyr tentes and the other make them certen arbours of bouwes fyxt in the grounde, bendyng together the toppes therof, whiche they couer with theyr clokes to defende themselues, theyr bowes, arrowes, faddyles, and other theyr necessaries from rayne. They put furth theyr horfes to pasture, and for that cause haue theyr tentes so farre in funder, which they fortifye neyther with cartes or trenches or any other impediment, excepte perhaps the place bee defended by nature as with wooddes, ryuers and maryffhes.

Instruments of warre.

It may perhapsse seeme straunge howe he maynteyneth hym and hys so longe with so fmaule an army as I haue sayde. I wyll nowe therfore brefly declare theyre sparynghe and frugalitie. He that hath fyxe or sumtymes more horfes, vseth one of them as A packe horfe to beare all theyr necessaries. He hath also in bagge of two or three spanes longe, the floore or meale of the grayne cauled mylle: and. viii. or x. poundes weyghe of swynes fleshe poudered. He hath lykewyfe A bagge of falte, myxte with pepper if he bee ryche. Furthermore every man caryeth with hym A hatchet, A fyre boxe, and a braisen potte: so that if they chaunce to coomme to any place where they can synde no frutes, garlyke, onyons or fleshe, they kyndle a fyre and sylle theyr portes with water wherunto they put a spoonfull of meale with a quantitiue of falte, and make pottage therof, wherwith the master and all hys seruauntes lyue contented. But if the master bee very hungry he eateth all alone, and the seruantes are sumtymes inforfed to faste for the space of two or three dayes. And yf the master intende to fare sumwhat more delicately, then he addeth thereto a lyttle portion of swynes fleshe. I speake not thyss of the best of them, but of fuche as are of the meane forte. The gouernours and capytaynes of th[e] armye, doo sum tymes bydde the poorer sorte to thyre tables: where theye feede them selues so wel, that they faste two or three dayes after. When they haue frutes, garlyke, and onyons, theye can well forbeare all other meates. Procedyng forwarde to the battayle, they put more confydence in theyr multitude, and with what great armyes they assayle their enemyes, then eyther in the strengthe and valyantenesse of theyr fouldyers, or in well instructyng their armye: and fygth better afarre of, then at hande: and therfore study howe to circumuent or inclose their enemyes and to assayle them on the backe halfe.

The Moscouites and Tartars apparel.

They haue many trumpiters: The which whyle they blow all at once after theyr maner, make A meruelous straunge noyse. They haue also an other kynde of instrumentes which they caule Szurna. These they blowe withowte seasynghe for the space of an hourre togither, so temperyng the same and holdyng in the wynd whyle they drawe more, that the noyse seemeth continuall withoute intermyssyon.

292

They vie all one maner of appareyle: as longe coates withowte pleyghtes and with narrowe sleaves after the maner of the Hungarians. Thele the Christians vse to button on the right syde: and the Tartars (vflinge the lyke) button them on the leste syde. They weare redde and shorte buskyns that reache not to theyr knees: and haue the foules therof defended with plates of Iren. In maner all theyr shyrtes are wroughte with dyuers colours aboue the necke: and haue the collars and ruffes byfette with lytle rounde baules lyke beades, of syluer or gylded copper, and sumtyme perles also. They gyrdre them selues beneath the bellye euen as lowe as theyr priuy members, that they may feme more boorely which they greatly esteeme, as doo at thys day the Spanyardes, Italiyans, and Almaynes.

The prouince of Moscouia.
Extreme coulde.

The prouince of Mofcouia is neyther very lurge nor frutfull, forasmuche as the fertyltye is hyndered with fawyne grounde which eyther with to muche drynesse or moyster kylleth the corne. Furthermore the inmoderate and sharpe vntemperatenesse of the ayre while the coulde of the wynter ouercommeth the heate of the foonne, sumtymes dothe not suffer the corne to ripe. For the coulde is there sumtyme so extreame, that lyke as with vs in sommer by reasoun of heate, euen so there by extreame coulde the yeare hath many great chynkes or breaches. Water also cast into the ayre, and spettle faulyng from on[e]s mouthe, are frozen before they touche the grounde. I my selfe, when I came thether in the yere 1526. fawne the braunches of frutfull trees wythyred by the coulde of the wynter before, which was so extreame that many of theyr wagoners or caries (whom they caule Goncz) were founde frozen to deathe in theyr sleades. There were sum that at the same tyme leadyng and dryuyng theyr cattayle from the nexte villagies to Mofcouia, dyed by the way with theyr beastes through th[e]extremyte of the coulde. Furthermore, the same yere many players that were accustomed to wander aboute the contrey with daunfyng beanes, were founde dead in the high wayes. Wylde beares also inforced thereto by famyn, leste the wooddes and vanne here and there into dyuers villagies and houfes: At whiche commyng while the men of the contrey forsooke theyr houses and feld into the fieldes, manye of them periysshid throughte the vehemensie of the coulde. Agayne, it sumtymes so chaunceth that in sommer the heate is as extreame: as in the yere. 1525. in the which almost all kynds of pulse and grayne were scorched and burnte: and such a dirth of corne folowed that drought, that that which before was bowght for three dengas, was afterwarde soulde for. xx. [twenty.] or. xxx. [thirty.] Furthermore also, manye villagies, wooddes, and slackes of corne, were sette on fyre by th[e]extremyte: The smoke wherof so fylled the regyon, that the eyes of many were sore hurte therby.

Extreme heats in cold regions.

There arose also as it were a darke and thycke myst without smoke which so maledict the ey[e]s, that many loste theyr sight therby.

They sowe and maryfle the feades of melons with greate diligence in certeyne rayled beddes myxt with doonge : wherby they fynde a remedy both ageynst extreme cold and heat. For if the heate excede, they make certeyne ryfes in the beddes as it were breathing places leasf the feades shulde be suffocate with to muche heate. And if the coulde bee extreme it is tempered with the heate of the mucke or dung.

Tieyr beatles are muche leſſe then owres: yet not all without horns as one hath written. For I haue there fene oxen, kyne, goates, and rammes all with horns.

Not farre from the citie of Moscha, are certeyne monasteries which a farre of, seeme lyke vnto a citie. They faye that in thyss citie is an incredible number of houſes: And that the fyxe yeare before my commynge thither, the prince caufed them to bee numbered, and founde them to bee more then one and fortye thouſande and fyue hundred houſes. The citie is very large and wyde: and also very slabby and myrie. By reaſon wherof it hath many brydges and caufeys.

The ayre of the regyon is ſo hofolme, that beyond the ſprynges of Tanais, eſpecially towarde the north and a great parte also towarde the Eafe, the peſtylence hath not byne harde of fence the memorie of man. Yet haue they ſumtymeſ a diſeaſe in their bowells and headles not much vnylike the peſtylence. This diſeaſe they caule a heate: wherwith ſuche as are taken, dye within fewe dayes.

Sun wryte that Iohn the duke of Moſcouia and ſonne of Basilius, vnder the pretence of religion facked and ſpoyleſ, the citie of Nouogardia: and caried with hym from thence to Moſcouia three hundred houſes laden with golde, fyluer, and precious ſtones of the gooddes of the Archebyffhoppe, the marchaunteſ, ciuitiſ, and ſtraungiers.

Solowki is an Ilande ſituate in the north ſea. viii. leaqueſ from the continent betwene Dwina and the province of Corela. Howe farre it is dyſtant from Moſcouia, can not bee well knowne by reaſon of manye fenneſ, maryfleſ, wooddeſ, and defolat places lyinge in the way. Albeit, ſum ſay that it is not three hundred houſeſ from Moſcouia, and two hundred frome Bieloiefero. In thyſ Ilande is made greate plenty of falte: and it hath in it a monaſterie into the which it is not lawfull for any woman or virgyn to enter. There is alſo great fyſhyng for hearyng. They ſay that here the ſoonne at the ſommer Equinoctiall, fȳneth continually excepte two hours.

Demetriowe, is a citie with a caſtel, diſtante from Moſcouia xiij. leaqueſ declining from the weſt ſumwhat toward the north. By this runneth the ryuer Lachroma that runneth in to the ryuer of Seſt. Seſt alſo receaueth the ryuer Dubna whiche vnladeth it ſelfe in Volga. And by the commoditye of thus many ryuerſ, many riche marchaunteſ are brought without great laboure or difficultie from the caſpian ſea by the ryuer Volga to Moſcouia and dyuerſ other prouynceſ and cities abowte the ſame.

Bieloiefero, a citie with a caſtel, is ſituate at a lake of the fame name. For Bieloiefero in the Moſcouites young, ſignifieth a white lake. The citie ſtandeth not in the lake as ſum haue ſayd. Yet is it ſo enironed with maryfleſ that it may ſeeme to bee inexpugnable: In conſideration wherof, the princes of Moſcouia are accuſed to keepe their treaſure there. Bieloiefero is from Moſcouia, a hundred houſeſ, and as muche from Nouogardia the great. The lake it ſelfe, is. xii. leaqueſ in length and as much in breadth: and hath (as they ſay) three hundred ryuerſ faulynge into it. Th[e]jnhabitanteſ of this place, haue a peculiare language, although nowe in maner all ſpeak the Moſcouites tongue. The longeſt day here in the ſommer Equinoctiall, is ſayde to conſyſte of xix. [nineteeñ] hours. A man of greate name and credite tolde me, that at the begynnyng of the ſpryng when the treen began nowe to bee greene, he went in poſte from Moſcouia to Bieloiefero: And paſſyng ouer the ryuer Volga, founde the region there ſo couered with Ife and know, that he was fayne to diſpatch the reſidue of his iorney on ſteades. And althoſh the wynter bee longer there, yet doo the frutes waxe ripe and are gathered even at the fame tyme that they are in Moſcouia. Within an arroue ſhotte of the lake, there is an other lake that bryngeth furth brymſtone: which a certen ryuer running owt of the fame, carrieth with it in great quanitie flotyng aboue the water lyke a ſeommie. Yet through the ignorance of the people, they haue no commoditye therby.

The people that inhabite the regions lyinge farre northe and eaſt from Moſcouia, exchaunge theyr furres for apparel, knyues, needles, ſpooneſ, hatchetſ, and ſuche other neceſſarie wares. For they haue not the vſe of golde and fyluer.

Lytte beaſtes.

The citie of Moſcouia or Moſca.

Holſome ayer.

A ryche ſpoyle.

The Illand of Solowki.

293
Bieloiefero.

The lengthe of the day.

The trade from Moſcouia to the Caſpian ſea.

Bieloiefero or the white lake.

Diuersiteſ of temperament in annual dyſtance.

A lake of brymſtone.

Exchaunge of furres for other wares.

**C The description of the regions, people, and ryuers, lyinge North and Easte
from Moscouia: As the way from Moscouia to the ryuer Petzora,
and the prouince of Iugaria, or Iuhra: And frome thense
to the ryuer Obi. Lykewyse the discription of
other countreys and regions, euen vnto
Th[e]empire of the greate
Cham of Cathay.**

The dominion of
the duke of
Moscouia.

Vuolochda.
Werste.
Vstieg.



He dominion of the Prince of Moscouia reacheth farre towarde the Easte and north vnto the places which we wyll nowe descrewy. As concernynge whiche thynge, I translated a booke that was presented vnto me in the Moscouites tounge, and haue heare made a bryefe re-hearall of the fame. I wyll syrly therfore descreibe the iorney from Molcouia to Petzora, and so to Iugaria and Obi.

From Moscouia to the citie of Vuolochda, are numbered fytle Werfles, one Werft conteynyng almoiste the space of an Italian myle. From Vuolochda to Vstieg towarde the right hande descendinge with the courfe of the ryuer of Vuolochda and Suchana with whom it ioyneth, are counted fyue hundredth Werfles: where within two Werfles of the towne cauled Strelze and hard by the citie of Vstieg Suchana ioyneth. Iug which runneth from the south: from whose mouth vnto the sprynges of the fame, are numbered fyue hundredreth Werfles.

Note that whens here before the autour numbereth but fytle werfles from Moscouia to Vuolochda, it semeth that the place is corrupted by the Printers mylakynge one worde for an other, as Quinquaginta, which is fytle, for Quingenta, whiche is fyue hundredth. For the distane is no lesse from Moscouia to Vuolochda, then is from Vuolochda to Vstieg, which is fyue hundredth werfles.

But Suchana and Iug after they ioyne togyther, lose theyr syrly names and make bothe one ryuer named Dwina, by the whiche the paſſage to the citie of Colmogor conteyneth fyue hundredth Werfles: from whense in the space of fyxe dayes iorney, Dwina entereth into the north Ocean at vi. mouthes, And the greateſte parte of this iorney conſiſteth by nauigation. For by lande, from Vuolochda vnto Colmogor, paſſing ouer the ryuer Vuaga, are a thouſande Werfles. Not farre from Colmogor, the ryuer Pienega runnynge frome the Easte on the ryght hande for the space of ſeven hundredth Werfles faulthe into Dwina. From Dwina by the ryuer Pienega by the space of two hundredth Werfles, they coome to a place cauled Nicolai: from whense within halfe a werft, shypes haue paſſage into the ryuer Kuluo, which hath his original from a lake of the fame name towarde the north, from whose ſprings is viii. dayes vyage to the mouth of the fame where it entereth into the Ocean.

Saylyng by the coaſtes of the ryght hande the ſea, they paſſe by the regions of Stanuwiche, Calunczcho, and Apnu. And faylyng abowt the promontorie or cape of Chorogofski Nofz, Stanuwiche, Camenckh, and Tolſtichh, they come at the length into the ryuer Mezen, and frome thenſe in the ſpace of fyxe dayes to a vylage of the fame name, ſtandyng in the mouth of the ryuer Pieza: by the whiche ageine aſcendyng towarde the leſte hande and foummer Eal, they come to the ryuer Piecoya. From whense faylyng for the ſpace of fyue Werfles, they coome into two lakes in the whiche are ſene two wayes: wheroſ one on the ryght fyde, goeth to the ryuer Rubicho, by the whiche they paſſe to the ryuer Czircho. Other by an other and ſhorter way, bryngē theyr shypes frome the lake directly into Czircho: From whense, except they be hyndered by tempeſt, they coome in the ſpace of three weekes to the ryuer and mouth of Czilma, flowynge into the great ryuer Petzora, which in that place is two Werfles in breadthe. Saylyng from hemſe, they coome in the ſpace of fyxe dayes to the towne and caſtell of Pustoſero, neare vnto the which, Petzora entereth into the north Ocean at fyxe mouthes. The inhabitauntes of this place, are men of ſimple wytte. They receaued the fayth of Chryste, and were baptiſted in the yeaſe M. D. xviii.

From the mouth of Czilma vnto the mouth of the ryuer Vſia, goinge by Petzora, is one monethes vyage. Vſia hath his ſprynges in the mountayne Poyas Semnoi, being on the leſte hande towarde the foummer Eal, and ſpringeth owte of a greate ſtone of the fame mountayne, cauled Camen Bolſchoi. From the ſprynges of Vſia to the mouthes of the fame, are numbered more then a thouſande Werfles. Furthermore Petzora runneth from this ſouth wynter parte, from whense aſcendyng from the mouthes of Vſia vnto the mouthes of the ryuer

294

Suchana.
Iug.
Colmogor.
Dwina.

Pienega.

Nicolai.
Kuluo.

The regions by
the North ſea.

Pieza.
Piecoya.

Rubicho.
Czircho.
Czilma.
Petzora.

Pustoſero.

Vſia.
Cingulus n undl.

Stzuchogora, is three weekes vyage. They that described this vyage, sayde that they rested betwene the mouthes of the ryuers of Stzuchogora and Potscheriema: and leste their vyttayles there whiche they brought with them from Russia. Beyonde the ryuers of Petzora and Stzuchogora towarde the mountayne Camenipoias and the sea with the Ilandes there abowte and the castell of Puffoofero, are dyuers and innumerable nations whiche by one common name are cauled Samoged (that is) such as eat them selues. They haue great increase of foules, byrdes, and dyuers kyndes of beastes: as Sables, Marternes, Beuers, Otters, Hermelines, Squyrels: and in the Ocean the beaste cauled Mors: Also Ves, whyte beares, wolfes, hares, Equiwoduanis, great whales, and a fyssh cauled Semfi, with dyuers other. The people of these nations, come not to Moscouia. For they are wyld, and fyle the company and societie of other men.

From the mouthes of Stzuchogora saylyng vp the ryuer vnto Poiaffa, Artawischa, Cameni, and Poiaffa the greater, is three weekes vyage. Furthermore the ascendynge to the mounte Camen, is three dayes iorney: from the whiche, descendynge, they come to the ryuer Artawischa, and from thense to the ryuer Sibut, from whence they passe to the castell of Lepin, and from Lepin to the ryuer Sofia. The people that inhabite the region by this ryuer, are cauled Vuogolici. Leauyng Sofis on the ryght hande, they come to the greate ryuer Oby, that spryngeth owt of the lake Kitaisko, the whiche with all the haste they coulde make, they coulde scarsely passe ouer in one day, the ryuer beinge of such breadth that it reacheth fourrefore Werstes. The people also that dwell abowt this ryuer, are cauled Vuogolici and Vgritzchi. From the castell of Obis ascendynge by the ryuer of Oby, vnto the ryuer Irifche into the which Sofis entereth, is three monethes iorney. In these places are two castels named Ieron and Tumen, kepte by certeyne lordes cauled Knesi Iuhorki, beinge tributaries to the greate duke of Moscouia as they say. Here are dyuers kyndes of beastes and furres.

Frome the mouth of the ryuer Irifche to the Castell of Grufina, is two monethes iorney: from whence to the lake Kitai by the ryuer Oby (whiche I sayde to haue his sprynges in this lake) is more then three monethes iorney. From this lake come many blacke men, lackyng the lufe of common spech. They bryng with them dyuers wares, and especially pearles and precious stones, whiche they sell to the people cauled Grufintzi and Serponowitzi. These haue theyr name of the castell Serponow, situate in the mountaynes of Lucomorya beyonde the ryuer Obi. They say that to the men of Lucomorya, chaunceth a marueylous thyng and incredible. For they affirme, that they dye yearly at the. xxvii. [twenty-seventh] daye of Nouember, beinge the feast of saynt George amone the Molcouites: and that at the nexte spryng abowte the. xxiii. [twenty-fourth] daye of Apryll, they reuyue ageyne as doo frogges.

With these also, the people of Grufintzi and Serponowitzi, exercise a newe and straunge kynde of trade. For when the accustomed tyme of theyr dyinge, or rather of sleapynge, aprocheth, they leauue their wares in certeyne places appoynted, which the Grufintzi and Serponowitzi carie away leauyng other wares of equall valem in theyr places: whiche if the deade men at the tyme of theyr reuyuys[gl]e perceave to bee of vnequalle prycye, they requyre their owne ageyne: by reson wherof muche stryfe and fighting is betwene them.

From the ryuer of Obi descending toward the left hand, are the people cauled Calami, which came thereth from Obiowa and Pogofa. Beneth Obi, abowte Aurea Anus (that is the golden owlde wye) are the ryuers Sofia, Beres, Vua, and Danadim, al which spryng owt of the mountayne Camen, Bolcchega, Potaffa, and the rockes ioyninge to the same. All the nations that inhabite from these ryuers to Aurea Anus, are subiecte to the pryncipe of Moscouia.

Aurea Anus cauled in the Moscouites toonge Slata Baba, is an Idole at the mouthes of Obi in the prouince of Obdora, standynge on the furthest banke toward the sea. Alonge by the bankes of Obi and the ryuers neare there about, are here and there many castells and fortresses, all the lordes wherof are subiecte to the pryncipe of Moscouia, as they say. They say also, or rather fable, that the Idole cauled Aurea Anus, is an Image lyke an owlde wye hauyng a chyld in her lappe: and that there is nowe feene an other infante which they say to bee her neuie: Also that there are certeyne instrumentes that make a continuall sounde lyke the noyse of trumpettes. The which if it to bee, I thynke it to bee by reson of the wynde blowyng continually into the holowe places of those instrumentes.

The ryuer Cossin, faulthe owt of the mountaynes into Lucomoria. In the mouth of thys, is a castell. Whyther from the sprynges of the great ryuer Cossin, is two monethes vyage. Furthermore from the sprynges of the same ryuer, the ryuer Cassima hath hys original: which runnyng through Lucomoria, faulthe into the great ryuer Tachnin, beyonde the which (as is sayde) dwell men of prodigious shape, of whom sum are ouergrownne with heare lyke wylde beastes: other haue heades lyke dogges, and other theyr faces in theyr breastes without neckes, and with longe handes also and withoute feete. There is lykewylde in the ryuer Tachnin, a certeyne fyssh with headde, eys, nose, mouthe, handes, fete, and other members vterly of humane shape, and yet without any voyce, and pleafante to bee eaten as are other fysshes.

All that I haue hethertho rehearsed, I haue translated out of the sayde iorney whiche was delyuering me in the Moscouites toonge. In the which perhappes sum thynges maye seeme fabulos and in maner incredible, as

Stzuchogora.
Potscheriema.
Camenipoias.

Samoged.
Foules and
beastes.

Wyld people.

Poiaffa.
Camen.
Artawischa.
Sibut.
Lepin.
Sossa.
Obi.
Kitaisko.

Vuogolici
295

Iritischa.
Ieron.
Tumem.

Grustina.

Kitai.

Blake men
without speche.
Serpenow.
Lucomoria.
Men that yearly
dye and reuyue.

A strange trade
of marchandises.

Obi.
Calami.
Ryuers.

Aurea Anus.
Obdora.

Cossin.

Cassima.
Tachnin.
People of
monstrous shape
A fyssh lyke a
man
Plinic wryteth of
the lyke fyssh.

298

Mountaynes.

The greate Chan
of Cathay.

Lucomoria.

Tumen.

Petzora.
Papini.Hygh mountaynes,
supposed to bee
Hyperborei, and
Rhipheas

Engroneland.

Stolp.

Cathay.

The frutfull
prouince of Rezan.
Iaroslaw.

Honny.

Donco.
Asoph.
Capha.
Constantinople.

297

Tanais diuideth
Europe from Asia.

of the doommie men and the deade reuyuynge, the Aurea Anus also, and the monstros shapes of men, with the tyfthe of human forme : wherof althowgh I haue made dygent inquisition, yet could I knowe nothyng certeyne of any that had feene the same with theyr eys, neuerthelesse to gyue further occasion to other to searche the truth of these thynges, I haue thought good to make mention hereof.

Noss in the Moscouites tongue signifieth a nose : and therfore they caule all capes or poyntes of lande that reache into the sea, by the same name.

The mountaynes about the ryuer of Petzora, are cauled Semnoi Poyas, or Cingulus mundi : (that is) the gyrdle of the worlde, or of the earth.

Kithay, is a lake of whome the greate Chan of C A T H A Y whom the Moscouians caule Czar Kythaikki, hath hys name. For Chan in the Tartars language signifieth a kyng.

The places of Lucomorya nere vnto the sea, are saluage, full of wooddes, and inhabited withoutt any houses. And albeit that the autour of thyss iorney, sayd that many nations of Lucomorya are subiecte to the pryncie of Moscouia, yet forasmuch as the kyngdome of Tumen is neare therunto, whose prince is a Tartar and named in theys young Tumenfki Czar (that is) a kyng in Tumen, and hath of late doone great damage to the pryncie of Moscouia, it is moste lyke that these nations shulde rather bee subiecte vnto hym.

Neare vnto the ryuer Petzora, (wherof mention is made in thyss iorney) is the citie and castell of Papin or Papinowgorod, whose inhabitautes are named Papini, and haue a priuate language differyng from the Moscouites. Beyond thyss ryuer, are excedyngly hygh mountaynes, reachyng even vnto the bankes : whose ridgies or topes by reason of continual wyndes, are in maner vitterly barrayne without graff or frutes. And although in dyuers places they haue dyuers names, yet are they commonly cauled Cingulus Mundi, that is the gerdle of the worlde, otherwyse cauled Catena Mundi, (that is), the chayne of the worlde. In these mountaynes doo iersfalcons breed, wherof I haue spoken before. There grow also Cedar trees, amonge the which are founde the best and blackest kynde of fables. And only these mountaynes are feene in all the domynyons of the pryncie of Moscouia, which perhappes are the same that the owlde writers caule Rhipheos or Hyperboreos, so named of the Greeke worde *Hiper*, (that is) vnder : and *Boreas* (that is) the north. For by reason they are couered with continual snow and froste, they can not withoutt great difficultie bee traauayled : and reache so farre into the north, that they make the vnknowne land of Engroneland. The duke of Moscouia Basilius the soonne of Iohn, sent on a tyme two of hys capitaynes named Simeon Pheodorowicz Kurbiski, and Knes Peter Vschatoy, to search the places beyonde these mountaynes and to subdewe the nations therabowte. Kurbiski was yet alye at my being in Moscouia : and declared vnto me that he spent xvii. [seventeen] days in ascencyng the mountayn, and yet could not coome to the toppe therof, which in theyr tongue is cauled Stolp (that is) a pyller. Thys mountayne is extended into the Ocean vnto the mouthes of the ryuers of Dwina and Petzora. But nowe haning spoken thus muche of the fayde iorney, I wyll retorne to the domynyons of Moscouia, with other regyons lyinge eastwarde and southe frome the same towarde the myghtye Empyre of C A T H A Y. But I wyll syrly speake sumwhat brelyfely of the prouynce of Rezan and the famous ryuer of Tanais.

The prouynce of Rezan situate betwene the ryuers of Occa and Tanais, hath a citie buylded of woodd not farre from the banke of Occa. There was in it a castell named Iaroflaw, wherof there now remayneth nothyng but tokenes of the owld ruine. Not farre from that citie, the ryuer Occa maketh an Ilande named Strub : which was sumtym a great dukedom, whose prince was subiect to none other. Thys prouynce of Rezan is more frutfull then any other of the prouynces of Moscouia : In so muche that in thyss (as they faye) every grayne of wheate bryngethe furthe two and sumtymes more eares : whose stalkes or strawes growe so thycke that horses can fearely go through them, or quayles flye owt of them. There is greate plenty of honnye, fyfhes, foules, byrdes, and wylde beastes. The frutes also do farre excede the frutes of Moscouia. The people are bould and warlyk men.

¶ Of the famous ryuer of Tanais.



Rome Moscouia vnto the castell of Iaroflaw, and beyonde for the space of almoste. xxiiii. [twenty-four] leagues, runneth the ryuer of Tanais, at a place called Donco, where the marchauntes that trade to Asoph, Capha, and Constantinople, fraught theyr shypes : and thys for the moste parte in autumnne beyng a rayney tyme of the yeare. For Tanais here at other tymes of the yeare doth not abounde with water as to beare shypes of any burden. Thys famous ryuer of Tanais, dyuydeth Europe from Asia : and hath hys orygynal or springes almost. viii. leagues from the citie of Tulla toward the south inclynyng sumwhat towarde the Easte : and not owt of the Riphean mountaynes as some haue wryten : But owt of a great lake

men, with the
nothyng cer-
to other to
of lande that
: (that is) the
ear Kythaifki,
wt any houfes.
the pryncie of
nd named in
the pryncie of

ll of Papin or
m the Mosco-
ofo ridges or
d although in
the gerde of
untaynes doo
h are founde
nyons of the
uperboreos, fo
ason they are
nd reache so
ia Basilius the
I Knes Peter
Kurbksi was
in ascendyn
lop (that is) a
and Petzora.
Ioscouia, with
H A Y. But

of woodd not
eth nothyng
Strub : which
is more frut-
try grayne of
tate that horses
ysshes, foules,
ple are bould

imoste. xxiiii.
here the mar-
es : and thys
nais here at
any burden.
orygynal or
ng sumwhat
a great lake

named Iwanowofero (that is) the lake of Iohn : being in length and breadth abowt, 1500. Werfles in a wood
whiche sum caule Okonzkilies, and other name it Iepiphanowlies. And owt of this lake, spryng the two greate
ryuers of Schat and Tanais. Schat towarde the West receauyng into it the ryuer of Vppa, runneth into the
ryuer of Ocea betwene the West and the north. But Tanais at the syrte runneth directly East : and continueth
his course betwene the kyngdomes of Casan and Astrachan within syxe or seuen leagues of Volga : And frome
thense bendyngre towarde the south, maketh the fennes or marysshes of Meotis. Furthermore, nexte vnto his
sprynges, is the citie of Tulla : and vpon the banke of the ryuer almost three leagues aboue the mouthes of
the same, is the citie of Afoph, which was syrte cauled Tanas. Four dayes iorney aboue this, is a towne
cauled Achas, situate hardye by the same ryuer: whiche the Mosconites caule Don. I can not suffitiently prayse
this ryuer for the excedyng abundance of good fysshes, and fairenesse of the regions on bothe sydes the
bankes, with plentie of holfoome herbes and sweete rootes, besyde dyuers and many frutfull trees growyng in
suche coomly order as though they had hym set of purpose in gardens or archardes. There is also in maner
every where suche plentie of wylde beatles, that they may easely be flaine with arrowes : In so much that suche
as trauayle by those regions, shal stand in needle of none other thyng to mayntayne their lyfe but only
fyre and falte. In these partes, is no obseruation of myles, but of dayes iorneys. But as farre as I coulde con-
iecture, from the fountaynes or sprynges of Tanais vnto the mouthes of the same iorneyng by lande, are almost
fourscore leagues. And saylyng from Donco (from whence I sayde that Tanais was syrte nauigable) in
scarcely. xx. [twenty] dayes vyage, they come to the citie of Afoph tributarie to the Turkes: which is (as they
say) fyue dayes iorney frome the freight of Taurica, otherwyse cauled Precep. In this citie is a famous mart
towne vnto the which resort many marchauntes of dyuers nations, and from dyuers partes of the worlde. For,
that all nations may the gladlyer haue recourse thyther, free lybertie of byng and sellinge is graunted vnto all :
and that without the citie every man may freely vse his owne and accustomed maner of lyuyng without
punyshement.

Of the altares of great Alexander and Iulius Cesar whiche many wryters make mention of in this place, or
of theyru ruines, I coulde haue no certeyne knowlage of th[e] cinhabantes or any other that had oftentimes
trauayled these places. Furthermore the souldyres whiche the prince of Moscouia maynteyneth there yearly
to oppresse th[e] incursions of the Tartars, beinge of me demaunded hereof, answere that they never sawe or
harde of any such thyng. Neuerthelesse, they sayde that abowt the mouthes of Tanais the leffe, four dayes
iorney from Afoph nere vnto a place cauled Scwerski, by the holy mountaynes, they fawte certeyne images of
stone and marble. Tanais the leffe, hath his sprynges in the dukedom of Scwerski: whereof it is cauled
Donetz Scwerski: and faulthe into Tanais three dayes iorney aboue Afoph. But suche as iorney from Mos-
couia to Afoph by lande, they, pasyng ouer Tanais abowt the owlde and ruinate towne of Donco, doo sum-
what turne from the south to the East: In the which place, if a ryght line bee drawnen from the mouthes of
Tanais to the springes of the same, Moscouia shalbe found to bee in Asia and not in Europe.



More directly from Mosconia to Cathay.

He great and large prouince of Permia, is distante from Moscouia two hundredth and sytis or
(as sum say) three hundredth leagues directly betwene the East and North : And hath a citie
of the same name by the ryuer Vichora which runneth. x. leagues beneth Kamam. The
iorney by lande can scarcely bee trauayled thyther but in wynter by reason of many ryuers,
marysshes, and fenes. But in sommer, this iorney is dispached with more facilite in boates
or snaule shippes by Vuolochda, Vtliug, and the ryuer Vitzechda which runneth into Dwina.
xii. leagues from Vtliug. But they that go from Permia to Vtliug, muste fayle vp the ryuer
Vichora agenst the course of the streame : and passing ouer certeyne ryuers, sumtymes also conueyng their
boates into other ryuers by lande, they come at the length to Vtliug three hundredth leagues distant frome the
cittie of Permia. There is snaule vse of breade in this prouince. For theyr yearly tribute, they pay to the
pryncie fures and horses. They haue a priuate language, and letters of theyr owne, whiche one Steuen a
bysshop (who confirmed them yet waueryng in the fayth) dyd inuente. For before beinge yet infantes in the
fayth of Chrysle, they flewe and fleyde an other bysshop that was appoynted to instructe them. This Steuen
afterwarde when Demetrius the sonne of Iohn reigned, was taken for a fayne amonge the Ruthens. Of these
people there yet remayne many Idolatours here and there in the woods, whom the moonkes and heremites that
go thyther, doo not cease to conuert from theyr wayne error. In the wynter they iorney in Artach as they doo
in many places of Russlie. Artach, are certeyne longe patentes of woodde of almost syxe handfuls in length,

The springes of
Tanus.
A great lake.
The ryuer Schat.
Casan.
Astrachan.
Meotis.
Tulla.

Achas.
Frutfull regions
abowt Tanas.

Plentye of wylde
beastes.

Fire and salt.
Where Tanas is
firste nauigable.
Afoph.
The marte of
Asoph.
Liberic allureth
strangers

The altars of
Alexander and
Cesar.

The holy
mountaynes.
Tanas the leffe.
From Moscouia to
Asoph.

Moscouia in Asia
and not in Europe.

The prouince of
Permia.

Marysshes in
sommer.
298
Dwina.
Vtliug.

Tribute.
Fures and horses.

Monkes and
heremites.

Patentes.

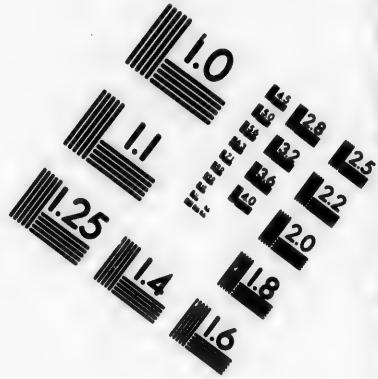
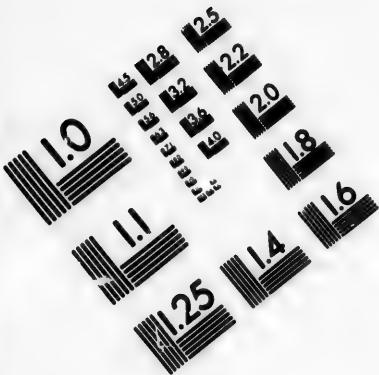
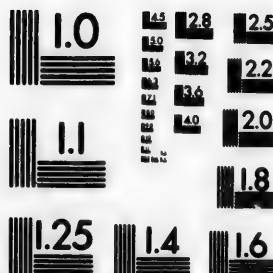
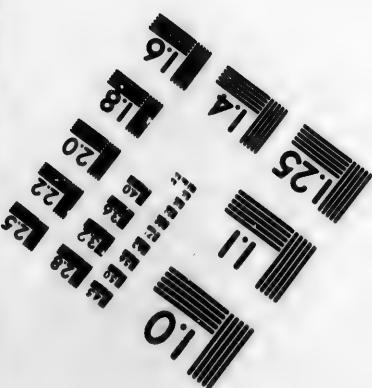


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



6"



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

0
F E E E E E
F E E E E E
3.2 3.2 3.2
2.2 2.2 2.2
2.0 2.0 2.0
1.8 1.8 1.8

IT
Oil

Marcus Paulus wryteth that these dogges are alioost to the Ascas, and that they vie syxe to one aleade.

Iugaria.

Hungaria.

Pannonia.

Attila.

The hygher or superyor Hungarie, is called Austria, Polonie, Buda.

Furres, Pearles and precious stones.

Sibier.

Astrakhan, I thinke to be martens: yet sum think them to be squerels
Generus wryteth that the kyngs of the Russes haue thyre tentes courred withoutt wyt the skynnes of Lyons: and within, with the skynnes of sables and Ermynes.

299
Czermisse.

Habitation without houses.

Sals.

whiche they make feste to theyr fiete with lachettes, and therwith performe theyr iorneys with great celerite. They vfe for this purpote greate dogges in the feade of other beastes, with the which they cary theyr farthells on stedes, as other doo with hertes in other places, as we wyll further declare hereafter. They say that that prouince toward the East confineth with the prouince cauled Tumen, perteynyng to the Tartars.

The situation of the prouince of Iugaria, is apparette by that which we haue fayne before. The Moscovites caule it Iuhra with an aspiration: and caule the people Iuhrici. This is that Iugaria from whence the Hungarians came in tyme past, possessed Pannonia, and vnder the conduct of Attila, subdued many prouinces of Europe: wherin the Moscouites doo greatly glory, that a nation subiecte to them, inuaded and wasted a great parte of Europe. Georgius Paruus a greeke borne, and a man of reputation with the Prince of Mofcouia, wyllynge to ascribe to the ryght of his prince the great dukedom of Lithuania, and the kyngedome of Polonie with certeyne other dominions, toulde me that the Iuharici or Iuhgary, beinge subiectes to the great duke of Mofcouia, came furth of theyr owne countrey, and fyrsle inhabited the regions abowt the fennes of Meotis, and then Pannonic which was afterwarde cauled Hungarie, by the ryuer of Danubius: Also that in fine they possessed the region of Moraia so named of the ryuer: and lykewyse Pollonie, so cauled of Polle, which signifieth a playne. Furthermore that Buda was so cauled after the name of the brother of Attila. They say also that the Iuhgari vfe the same tonge that doo the Hungarians. The which whether it be trew or not, I do not knowe. For althowgh I haue made diligent inquisition to knowe the truth hereof, yet coulde I fynde no man of that region with whom my seruaunt beinge expert in the Hungarian tonge myght speake. They also pay furres for theyr tributes to the prince of Mofcouia. And albeit that pearles and precious stones are brought frome thenfe to Mofcouia, yet are they not gathered in theyr Ocean, but in other places: especially about the coast of the Ocean nere vnto the mouthes of Dwina.

The prouince of Sibier, confineth with Permia and Vuiathka: The whiche, whether it haue any castels or cities, I doo not yet certeynly knowe. In this the ryuer Iaick hath his originall, and faulthe into the Caspian sea. They faye that this region is deferte bycause it lyeth so neare the Tartars: Or that yf it bee in any parte inhabited, the same to be possessed of the Tartar Schichmamai. Th[e]inhabitantes haue a peculiar language: and haue theyr chiefe gaynes by the furres of martens, which in fayrenes and greatness, excell all the furres of that kynde that are founde in any other prouinces. Yet coulde I haue no great plentie of them in Mofcouia at my beinge there.

Note that longe after the wryting of this hystorie, at Rycharde Chaunceles his fyrt being in Mofcouia, Duke John Vasilivich that nowe rayngett, subdued all the Tartars with theyr regions and prouinces even vnto the great citie and mart towne of Astrachan and the Caspian sea. At the same tyme also, there was in the dukes court an ambassadour that came frome this prouince of Sibier: who declared that his father had byn sent ambassadour to the great Chan of Cathay. And that the great citie of Cambalu where the great Chan keþeth his course in winter, was in maner destroyed by Necromancie and magickal artes wherin the Cathaynes are very expert as wryteth Marcus Paulus Venetus. Ther was also at the same tyme th[e]ambassaþour of the kyng of Persia cauled the great Sophie. This ambassadour was appareled all in scarlet, and spake much to the duke in the behalfe of oure men, of whose kyngdome and trade he was not ignorant.

The people cauled Czeremisse, dwell in the wooddes beneth Nouogardia the lower. They haue a peculiar language and are of the feete of Machumet. They were sumtyme subiecte to the kyng of Cafan: but the greater part of them are nowe subiecte to the prince of Mofcouia. Many of them at my beinge there, were brought to Mofcouia, as suspected of rebellion. This nation doth inhabite a large region withoutt houfes from Vuiathka and Vuolochda, to the ryuer of Kama. All the nation awell women as men, are very swyft of foote, and expert archers: wherein they so delite, that theyr bowes are in maner never owt of theyr handes: and gyue theyr children no meate vntyl they hyt the markes they shooote at.

Two leagues distante from Nouogardia the lower, were many houfes to the similitude of a citie or towne where they were accustomed to make feste. These a fewe yeaeres fence beinge burnt of the Tartars, were restored by the commaundement of the prince.

Mordwa, are people inhabytyng by the ryuer of Volga on the south banke beneth Nouogardia the lower: And are in al thynges like vnto the Czeremisses but that they haue more houses. And here endeth Th[e]mpire of the Mofcouites.

Note here that Matthias of Michou, in his booke of Sarmatia Asiatica, writeth that the dominion of the duke of Mofcouia recheth from the northweſt to the southeſt fyue hundred myles of Germanie, which are more then leagues. For they affirme that a Germane myle is more then three Englyſh myles.

eat celerite,
heyr farthels
ay that that

The Mosco-
whene the
ny prouinces
and wafted a
of Moscouia,
e of Polonie
reat duke of
Meotis, and
ine they po-
ich signifieth
say also that
not, I do not
nde no man
hey also pay
are brought
ly about the

ny castels or
the Cappian
in any parte
ar language :
the furses of
in Moscouia

John Vasilivich
ne of Astrachan
ince of Siberia :
ibalu where the
haynes are very
cauled the great
hose kyngdoms

ue a peculiar
fan : but the
there, were
houses from
wyft of foote,
es : and gyue

tie or towne
Tartars, were

ia the lower :
n Th[e]mpire

ke of Moscouia
y affirme that a



Ee wyll nowe adde hereunto sumwhat of the people confynge with the Moscouites towards the East : of the which the Tartars of Casan are the first. But before wee speake of them particularly, wee wyl fyrst reherfe sumwhat of theyr maners and customes in general.

The Tartars are diuided into companies which they caul Hordas, of the which the Horda of the Sawolhenes is the chiefe in fame and multitude. For it is sayde that the other Hordas had theyr osiprynge and original of this. And albeit that every Horda hath his peculiar name, as the Sawolhenes, Precropenes, and Nahays with dyuers other being all Machumetans, yet doo they take it eyyll and count it reproch to bee cauled Turkes : but wyll them felues to bee cauled Besermani, by the which name also the Turkes defyre to bee cauled.

And as the Tartars inhabyte many prouynces reachyng far on evry syde, euen so in maners and order of lyuyng doo they not agree in all thynges. They are men of meane stature, with broade and fat faces, holowe eyde, with rougue and thyc beards, and poulde heads. Only the noble men haue longe heare, and that exceeding black, which they wreath on both fydes theyr eares. They are strunge of body and stoute of mynde : prone to leacherye, and that vnnaturall. They eate the fleasfhe of horses, camells, and oþer beastles excepte hogges, from which they absteyne by a lawe. They can so abyde fasting and hunger, that they sumtime forbeare meat and sleepe for the space of fourre dayes, occupied neverthelesse aboue theyr necessary affayres. Ageyne when they gette any thyng to deuoure, they ingorge them felues beyond measure : and with that surfecte in maner recompenste theyr former abifynence. And beyng thus oppressed with laboure and meate, they sleepe contynually for the space of three or fourre days without doyng any maner of worke or labour : duryng which tyme the Lyuons and Moscouites into whose domynyons they are accustomed to make theyr incursions, assayle them vnwares thus oppressed with meat and sleepe, lyng scattered here and there owt of order withoute watch or warde. Also if when they ryde, they bee molested with hunger and thyrste, they vfe to lette theyr horses blud, and with drynyng the same, satysfie. They present necessytie, and affyrm theyr horses to bee the better therby. And bicaufe they all wander in vnknownen places, they vfe to dyrect theyr iorneys by th[e]-aspects of the starres, and especially of the pole starre, which in theyr tonge they caule Sele[n]ikoll, (that is) an iren mayle. They greatly delite in mares mylke, and beleue that it maketh men strong and fatte. They eate herbes very much : and especially such as growe abowt Tanais. Fewe of them vfe falte. When theyr kynges dytrybute any vtyailes among them, they are accustomed to gyue one horfe or cowe to fortys men. Of the flayne beaste, the bowells and trypes are referued for the chiefe men and capaynes. These they heate at the fyre vntyll they may shake owt the doonge, and then deuoure them gredely. They fucke and lycke, not only theyr syngers imbrued with fatte, but also theyr knyues and stycches wherwith they scrape the doong from the guttes. The heades of horses are counted delyciate dishes with them as are bores heades with vs : and are referued only for the chyfe men. Theyr horses (wherof they haue great abounding) are but finaile, and with short neckes : but very strong and such as can wel away with labour and hunger. These they fede with the branches and barkes or ryndes of trees and the rotes of hearbes and weedes, wherby they accustome them to hard feedyng, and exercyse them to contynuall laboure : by reason wherof (as say the Moscouutes) theyr horses are swyster and more durable then any other. These kynde of horses, they caule Pachmat. They haue none other faddells and steroppes then of woodd, except suche as they eyther bye of the Chrystylans, or take from them by vyolence. Least theyr horse backes shulde bee herte with theyr faddells, they vnderlaye them with grasse and leaues of trees. They also passe ouer ryuers on horsback. But if when they flye, they feare the purfynge of theyr enemies, then castyng away theyr faddells, apparelle, and all other impedimentes, referuyng only theyr armoure and weapons they flye amayne and with greate celerite.

Theyr women vfe the same kynde of apparel that doo the men without any diffERENCE except that they couer theyr heades with lynnem vayles, and vfe lynnen hofe muche lyke vnto maryners floppes. When theyr queenes coome abrod, they are accustomed to couer theyr faces. The other multytude of the common sorte that lyueth here and ther in the feeldes, haue theyr apparel made of sheepe skynnes, which they chaunge[e] not vntyll they bee worse and torn to fytters. They tarye not longe in one place, iudgyng it a great myserie so to doo : In so muche that when they are angrie with theyr chyldren, the greatest curse that they can gyue them, is that they maye remayne perpetually in one place, and drawe the stynfe of theyr owne fylthyneffe as doo the Chrystylans. When they haue confunmed the pasture in one place, they go to an other with theyr droves of cattayle and theyr wyues and chyldren whom they euer cary about with them in Wagons : albeit the Tartars that dwell in cities and townes, vfe an other order of lyuyng. If they be inclofed with any daungerous warre,

The Tartars of
Casan.

Horda.

Besermani.

The stature of
the Tartars.

They abstaine
from hogges
flesshie.
Abstinence.

Voracitie.

So doo the Turkes

Iorneying by the
pole star.

Mares mylke

Horse fleshe
eaten.
Clenly.

300
Hors[e] heads,
deincte meat
The Tartars
horses.

Saddells and
styrops of wodde.

The Tartars
women.

The Tartars burst.

No iustice amone
the Tartars.

The Tartars are
theeuers and poore.

They reioyce in
spoylyngē.

The feelde
Tartars.
A very tale.

301
Casan.

The kyng of
Casan.
Archers.
Maryners.

The towne
Tartars.

Moscouia inuaded
by the Tartars.

The prince of
Moscouia tributary
to the Tartars.

Duke Basilius
army ageynst the
Tartars.

The kyng of Casan
submitted hym
selfe.

they place theyr wyues, chylđren, and owdl folkes, in the fauest places. There is no iustice amone them. For if any mar flande in neade of any thyngē, he may withoutt punnyſſhemēte take it awaie from an other. If any complayne to the Judge of the vyolence and wronge doonne vnto hym, the offender denyeth not the cryme, but sayth that he coulde not lacke that thyngē. Then the Judge is wōnte to gyue thys sentence: If thōwe alſo ſhalte haue neede of any thyngē doo the lyke to other. Sum ſay they do not ſteale: But whether they ſteale or not, lette other judge. They are ſurely a theeuysſhe kynd of men and very poore, lyuyngē only by robbing of other, and ſtealyng away other mens cattayle, and volentli alſo caryyng away the men them felues whom eyther they ſelle to the Turkes or proffer them to bee redemeed by ranſome, referuyng only the younge wenches. They ſeldome affauſſ cities or caſtells, but burne and waste townes and vyllagies: In ſo muche that they fo pleafe them felues herin, that they thynke they haue ſo muche the more inlarged their empire, in howe muche they haue wasted and made defolatſe manye prouynces. And althowgh they bee moſte impacynet of reſte and quyetneſſe, yet doo they not kyll or deſtroye one an other, excepte theyr kynges bee at deſtination betweene them felues. If any man bee flaine in any fraye or quarrel, and the autours of the myſchefe bee taken, only theyr horſe, harneſſe, weapons, and apparell, are taken from them, and they diſmiffed. So that the murtherer by the loſſe of a vyle horſe or a bowe, is diſcharged of the Judge with theſe woordes: gette the henſe and goo abowte thy buſyneſſe. They haue no vſe of golde and tyluer, excepte only a fewe marchauntes: But exerſyſe exchaunge of ware for ware. And if it fo chaunte that by ſellingy of ſuch thynges as they haue ſtolen, they gette any monye of theyr bortherers, they bye therwith certeyne apparel and other neceſſaryes of the Moſcouites. The regyons of theyr habytations (the feelde Tartars I meane) are not lymytted with any boundes or borthers. There was on a tyme a certeyne fatte Tartar taken pryfoner of the Moſcouites: to whom when the prynce ſayd, How art thou ſo fatte thoue dogge, fythe thoue haſte not to eate, the Tartar anſwered, Why ſhulde not I haue to eate fythe I poſſeſſe ſo large a land from the Eaſt to the weſt, wherby I may bee abundauntaſtely nuryſſed? But thoue mayſte rather ſeeme to lacke, fythe thoue inhabyteſt fo fmaule a portion of the worlde, and dufte daylye ſtryue for the fame.

Cafan, is a kyngedome, alſo a citie, and a caſtell of the ſame name, ſituate by the ryuer Volga on the further banke, almoſt threfcore and tenne leagues beneath Nouogardia the lower. Alonge by the course of Volga towarde the Eaſt and South, it is termined with deſerte fyeldes. Towarde the ſommer Eaſt, it confineth with the Tartars cauled Schibanski, and Kofatzki. The kyng of this prouince, is able to make an army of xxx. [thirty] thouſande men, eſpecially foote men, of the which the Czeremiffe and Czubaschi are moſt expert archers. The Czubaschi are alſo cunnyng maryners. The citie of Cafan, is threfcore leagues diſtant from the principal caſtel Vuiathka. Furthermore, Cafan in the Tartars language, ſignifieth a braſen potte boylynge. Theſe Tartars are more ciuile then the other. For they dwell in houſes, tylly the grownde, and exerſyſe the trade of marchaundies. They were of late subdued by Baſilius the greata duke of Moſcouia, and had theyr kynges affiſſed them at his arbitriement. But ſhortely after, they rebelleſt agayne: and affiſſe with other Tartars, inuaded the region of Moſcouia, ſpoyled and waſted many cities and townes, and ledde away innumerablie captiues, even from the citie Moſcouia which they poſſeſſed for a tyme, and had vterly deſtroyed the fame if it had not byn for the valyantneſſe of the Almayne gunners which kept the caſtell with great ordinaunce. They also putte dñe Baſilius to flight, and cauſed him to make a letter of his owne hande to Machmetgirei theyr kyng to acknowledgē hym ſelfe for a perpetuall tributarie to them, wherupon they diſſolued the ſiege, and gaue the Moſcouites free libertie to redeeme theyr captiues and gooddes, and ſo departed. But Baſilius not longe able to abyde this contumelie and diſhonour, after that he had putte to death ſuche as by flyinge the fyſl encouterenyng were the caufe of this ouerthrowe, aſſembled an armee of a hundredth and fourſcore thouſande men shortly after in the yearre 1523. And ſent forwarde his army vnder the conduete of his Lieuetenaunte: and therewith an heralde at armes to bydide battayle to Machmetgirei the kyng of Cafan, with woordes in this effeſt: The laſt yere lyke a theefe and robber withoutt bydding of battayle, thou dyddiſte pryuilie opprefſe me. Wherefore I nowe chalenge the, once agayne to proue the fortune of warre if thou myſtruſte not thyne owne poure. To this the kyng anſwered, that there were manye wayes open for hym to inuade Moſcouia: And that the warres haue no leſſe refect to the commoditie of tyme and place then of armure or strength: And that he wold take th[e] aduantage therof when and where it ſhulde feeme beſt to him and not to other. With which woordes Baſilius beinge greatly accenſed and burnyng with defyre of reuenge, inuaded the kyngdome of Cafan: whoſe kyng beinge ſtryken with ſuddeyne feare at th[e] approche of ſo terrible an army, affiſſed the gouernance of his kyngdome to the younge kyng of Taurica his neuie, whyle he hym ſelfe went to requyre ayde of the Emperour of the Turkes. But in fine the kyng of Cafan ſubmytted hym ſelfe vpon certeyne conditions of peace whiche the Moſcouites dyd the gladlyer excepte for that time because theyr vittayles ſayled them to maynteyne to great a multitude. But wheras duke Baſilius hym ſelfe was not preſent at this laſt expedition, he greatly ſuſpected Palitzki the Lieuetenaunte of th[e] army to bee corrupted with brybes to proceade no further. In this meane tyme, the kyng of Cafan ſent ambaffadours to Baſilius to

them. For
ther. If any
t the cryme,
f thowe also
r they steale
by robbing
felues whom
nge wenchess.
that they fo
hewe muche
of reste and
on betweene
taken, only
the murtherer
ense and goo
But exerfyse
flosine, they
Mofcouites.
or brotheris.
prynce sayd,
e not I haue
y nuryfshed?
e, and dulte

olga on the
he course of
it confineth
an army of
most expert
ant from the
te boylunge.
exercice the
nd had theyr
e with other
ay innumera
ed the fame
ordinaunce.
achmetgirei
ed the siege,
But Basilius
by flyng at
d sourecore
of his Lieue
Cafan, with
ou dyddeste
arre if thou
for hym to
lace then of
best to him
of reuenge,
roche of so
e, whyle he
mytted hym
ime because
ife was not
e corrupted
o Basilius to

intreate of peace : whome I fawe in the dukes courte at my beyng there : but I coulde perceave no hope of peace to bee betwene them. For euen then, Baſilius to endomage the Cafans, tranſlated the marte to Nouogardia, which before was accustomed to bee kept in the Ilande of marchauntes nere vnto the citie of Cafan : Commaundyng also vnder peyne of greuous punyfhemēte that none of his ſubiectes ſhulde reforte to the Ilande of marchauntes : thynkyngte that this tranſlation of the marte ſhulde greatly haue endomaged the Cafans : and that only by takyng away their trade of falte (which they were accustomed to bye of the Moscouites at that marte) they ſhulde haue byn compelled to submyſſion. But the Moscouites them ſelues felte no leſſe inconuenience hereby then dyd the Cafans, by reaſon of the dearth and ſcarfeneſſe that followed hereof of al ſuch thynges as the Tartars were accustomed to bryng thyrther by the ryuer of Volga from the Caſpian ſea, the kyngedomes of Perſia and Armenia, and the marte towne of Aſtrachan : eſpecially the great number of moſt excellent fyſhes that are taken in Volga both on the hyther and further fyde of Cafan.

But hauyng fayde thus muſh of the warres betwene the Prince of Moscouia and the Tartars of Cafan, we wyll now proceede to ſpeake ſumwhat of the other Tartars inhabityng the regions towarde the ſoutheast and the Caſpian ſea.

Next beyond the Tartars of Cafan, are the Tartars cauled Nagai or Nogai, which inhabite the regions beyond Volga abowt the Caſpian ſea at the ryuer Iaick, runnyng owt of the prouince of Sibier. Theſe haue no kynges but dukes. In owre tyme, three bretherne diuydynge the prouinces equally betwene them, poſſeffed thoſe dukedomes. The fyfth of them named Schidack, poſſeffeth the citie of Scharaitzick, beyond the ryuer of Rha or Volga towarde the Easte, with the region confinynge with the ryuer Iaick. The ſeconde cauled Cofſum, enioyeth all the lande that lyethe betwene the ryuers of Kaman Iaick and Volga. The thyrde brother named Schichmamai, poſſeffeth parts of the prouince of Sibier and all the region abowt the fame. Schichmamai, is as muſh to ſay by interpretation, as holy or myghty. And in maner al theſe regions are full of wooddes, excepte that that lyeth towarde Scharaitz, which conſyfleth of playnes and fyeldes.

Betwene the ryuers of Volga and Iaick, abowt the Caſpian ſea, there ſumtymes inhabyted the kynges cauled Sawolhenſes. Demetrius Danielis (a man among theſe barbarians, of ſinguler fayth and grauitie) tolde vs of a maruelous and in maner incredible thyng that is ſene among theſe Tartars. And that his father beinge fente by the prynce of Moscouia to the kyng of Sawolhenſe, fawه while he was in that legacie, a certeyne feede in that Ilande ſumwhat leſſe and rounder then the feedes of Melones : Of the whiche beinge hydde in the grounde, there groweth a frute or plante very lyke a lambe, of the heyt of fyue ſpannes : And is therfore cauled in theſy toung Boranetz, which ſignifyeth a lytle lamb. For it hath the heade, eyes, eares, and all other partes like vnto a lambe newly eyned : with al a very thynne ſkynne wherwith dyuers of th[e]cjhabitantes of thoſe regions are accustomed to line theiſr cappes and hattes and other tyrementes for theiſr headeſ. Many alſo confirmed in owre preſence that they had ſene theſe ſkynnes. He ſayde furthermore that that plant (if it may bee cauled a plant) hath bludde, and no fleſſhe : but hath in the ſteade of fleſſhe a certeyne ſubſtance like vnto the fleſſhe of creuyfhes. The hooſes alſo are not of horne as are the lambes, but covered with heare in the fame forme. The roote cleaueth to the nauell or myldet of the belly. The plante or frute lyueth vnyll all the grafe and herbes growyng abowte it beinge eaten, and the roote wythereth for lacke of nuryfhemēte. They ſay that it is very ſweete to bee eaten, and is therefore greatly defyred and fought for of the woolues and other rauenynge beaſtes. And albeit I exſteme all that is ſayde of this plant to be fabulouſ, yet for aſmuch as it hath byn tolde me of credible perſons, I haue thought good to make mention hereof.

Of this ſtrauge frute, Mandeuill maketh mention, where in the lxxxiij. [eighty-fourth] chapitre of his booke he wryteth thus : Nowe þhal I ſay of ſum landes, countreys, and Iles that are beyonde the lande of Cathay. Therfore who ſo goeth from Cathay to India the hygh and the lowe, he ſhall go through a kyngedome that men caule Cadifen, and is a great lande. There groweth a maner of frute as it were gourdes. And when it is ripe, men cut it a funder : and fynd therine a beaſt as it were of fleſſhe, bone, and bludde, as it were a lytle lambe withoute wolle. And men eat that beaſt and the frute alſo, which is a great maruayle. Neuertheleſſe, I ſayde vnto them that I helde that for no maruayle. For I ſayde that in my countrey are tres that beare frute that become byrdes flying which are good to bee eaten. And that that faulth into the water lyueth : And that that faulth on the earth dyeth. And they had greate maruayle of this. etc.

From the prince of Schidack, proceadyng. xx. [twenty] dayes iorney towarde the Eaſt, are the people which the Moscouites caule Iurgenci, whos prince is Barack Soltan, brother to the greate Chan of Cathay. In tenne dayes iorney from Barack Soltan, they coomme to Bebeid Chan. And this is that great Chan of Cathay.

Names of dignities amoung the Tartars, are theſe, Chan, ſignifieth a kyng, Soltan, the foonne of a kyng. Bi, a Duke. Murfa, the foonne of a duke. Olboud, a noble man or counſiler. Olboadulu, the foonne of a noble man. Seid, the hygh preſte. Ki, a priuate perfon.

The names of offiſes are theſe : Vlan, the ſeconde digniti to the kyng. For the kynges of the Tartars haue foure principall men whos counſyle they vſe in al theiſr weyghty affayres. Of theſe the fyfth is cauled Schirni : the ſeconde Barni : the thyrde, Gargni : The fourth, Tziptzan. And to haue ſayde thus muſh of the Tartars, it ſhall ſuffice.

The Ilande of
marchauntes

The Caſpian ſea.
Perſia.
Armenia.
Aſtrachan.

302

The Tartars neare
to the Caſpian ſea.
Nogai.
The poſſeſſion of
three brutherne.

The kynges cauled
Sawolhenſes.

A maruelous frute
lyke a lambe.

Mandeuill.

Barnacles of the
Orkeneyſ.

Barack Soltan.
Cathay.

Names of dignities
amoung the
Tartars.

Names of offiſes.

303
Chan Cublai.

Marcus Paulus wryteth that the greate Chan, is cauled Chan Cublai that is, the great kyng of kynges: as the greate turcke wryteth hym selfe in lyke maner, as I fawe in a letter wrytten by hym of late to the citie of Ragula, in the which he vseth this subscription: Soltan Soliman de felim Cham Signore de Signori in sempiterno. As concernynge Moscouia and Cathay, I was mynded to haue added hereunto dyuers other thynges, but that for certeyne consideracions I was perhuased to procede no further. Vnto whose reueste, h[er]ein satifyinge rather other then my selfe, wyllyngne otherwyse to haue accomplished this booke to further perfection, I was content to agree for two caufes especilly mouyng me: wherof the one is, that as touchyng these trades and vyages, as in maner in all other sciences, there are certeyne creecetes not to bee publyfied and made common to all men. The other caufe is, that the parteners at whose charge this booke is pryntyd, although the copy wherof they haue wrought a longe space haue cost them nought doo neuerthelesse caafe dayly to caule vppon me to make an end and procede no further: affirmynge that the booke wyll bee of to great a prycce and not every mans money: fearyng rather theyr owne losse and hynderaunce, then carefull to bee beneficial to other, as is nowe in maner the trade of all men, which ordinarie respecte of priuate commodite hath at this tyme so lytle moued me, I take god to wytnesse, that for my paynes and trauayles taken herein such as they bee, I may vppon iust occasion thynke my selfe a loofer manye wayes, except such men of good inclination as shall take pleasure and feele sum commodityn in the knowleage of these thynges, shall thynke me worthy theyr good woerde, wherwth I shal repete my selfe and my trauayles so abundantly satified, that I shal repete other mens gaynes a recompence for my losses, as they may bee in dede, yf men bee not vñthankefull, which only vice of ingratitude hath hyndered the worlde of many benefites.

 *The navigation by the froſen ſea.*



T my beinge in Moscouia when I was fent thither by kyng Ferdinand my lorde and master, it so chaunsed that Georgius Istoma the duke of Moscouia his interpretour, a man of great experiance who hadde before lerned the latin toungue in the court of Iohn kyng of Denmarke, was there present at the same tyme. He in the yeare of Chryſt, 1496, beinge fente of his prince with master Dauid a scotte borne and then ambassadour for the kyng of Denmarke, (whom alſo I knewe there at my fyſt legacie) made me a breefe information of all th[e]order of his iorney. The which, forasmuch as it may feeme difficult and labouorous awel for the diſtaunce as daungerous places, I haue thought good to deſcribe the ſame as I receaued it at his mouth.

Nouogardia.
Suecia vnder the
kyng of
Denmarke.

Dwina.
Potiwo.

Hygh mountaynes
neare the north
Ocean.

Finlappia.

The wylde
Lappians.
The region of
Nortpoden

The cape cauled
the holy nose.
A whyrlepoole or
swallowing goufle.

304
Such whyrlepooles,
are cauled vipers

The ſtone cauled
Semes.
Superstitution.

Fyrſt he fayde that beinge fent of his prince with the ſayd Dauid, they came fyrlt to Nouogardia the great. And wher as at that tyme the kyngedom of Suecia revolted frome the kyng of Denmarke, and alſo the duke of Moscouia was at diſcention with the Suecians, by reaſon wherof they could not paſſe by the moſt accuſtomed way for the tumultes of war they attempted their iorney by an other way longer but faſer. And came fyrlt from Nouogardia to the mouthes of the ryuer of Dwina and Potiwo, by a very difficult and painefull iorney. For he fayd that this iorney which can not bee to muche deteſted for iuche laboures and trauayles, continueth for the ſpace of three hundredth leagues. In fine, takyng foure ſmaul ſhippes or barkes at the mouthes of Dwina, they fayled by the coaſte on the ryght hande of the Ocean, where they fawne certeyne hyghe and rowgh mountaynes: and at the lengthe faylynge. xvi. [ſixteen] leagues, and paſſyng a great gouſle, folowed the coaſte on the lefte hande: And leauyng on the ryght hand the large ſea which the name of the ryuer Petzora (as haue alſo the mountaynes adiaacent to the ſame) they came to the people of Finlappia: who, althouȝ they diuell here and there in lowe cottages by the ſea fyde, and leade in maner a beaſtly lyfe, yet are they more meeke and tractable then the wylde Lappians. He fayde that theſe alſo are tributaries to the prince of Moſcouia. Then leauyng the lande of the Lappians, and faylynge ouerfore leagues, they came to the region of Nortpoden vnder the dominion of the kyng of Suecia. This the Moſcouites caule Kainka Semla, and the people Kayeni. Departyng frome henfe, and faylyng alonge by the coaſte of a wyndyng and bendyng ſhore reachyng towarde the ryght hand, they came to a promontorie or cape cauled the Holy noſe, beinge a greate ſtone reachyng farre into the ſea to the ſimilitude of a noſe: vnder the whiche is feene a caue with a whyrlepoole which ſwalloweth the ſea every fyxe hours: and caſtyng furth the fame ageyne with terriblie rorynge and violence, caufeth the fyde whyrlepoole. Sum caule this the nauell of the ſea: and other name it Charybdis. He affirmeth that the violence of this ſwallowyng gouſle is ſuch, that it draweth into it, inuoluſt, and ſwalloweth vp ſhippes and al other thynges that come neare it: and that they were neuer in greater d[ev]aſtation. For the whyrlepoole ſo ſuddeynly and violently drewe vnto it the ſhippe or barke wherin they were caryed, that with the helpe of ores and great labour they hardly escaped. When they had thus ouerpasted the holy noſe, they came to a certeyne ſtonyng mountayne which they ſhulde needes compasse abowte. But beinge therſe ſlayed with contrary wyndes for the ſpace of certeyne dayes, the pylote of the ſhippe ſpake vnto them in this effecte: This ſtone (ſayth he) that yowe ſee, is cauled Semes: The which excepte we pleafe with ſumme gyſte, wee ſhall not paſſe by without great daungour. But the pylote beinge reproved of Istoma for his wayne ſuperſtitio[n], helde his peace. And when they had byn deteined ther by tempeſt for the ſpace of foure days, at the length

e greate turke
vethis this sub-
I was mynded
further. Vnto
further perfec-
and vyages, as
other caufe is,
haue cost them
the booke wyl-
bee beneficiale
so litle moued
son thynde my
knowlegage of
lantly satifified,
full, which only

the tempest ceased and they went forwarde on theyr vyage with a prosperous wynd. Then the pilote spake vnto them ageyne, sayinge: You despised my admonicion of pleasyng the Semes, and scorned the same as wayne and superflitious. But if I had not priuileie in the nyght ascended a rocke and pleated the Semes, wee shulde surely haue had no passage. Beinge demaunded what he offered to the Semes, he sayde that he poured butter myxt with otemele vpon the stome which wee fawe reache furth into the sea. As they sayled further, they came to an other cape named Motka, which was almost enironed with the sea lyke an Ilande: in whose extreme poynete, is situate the castell of Barthus, which sum caule Wardhus, (that is) a hause of defence or fortresse. For the kynges of Norway haue there a garyfyon of men to defende their marches. He sayde furthermore that that cape reacheth so farre into the sea, that they couldle scarcefely compasse it in eyght dayes. By which taryng leaste they shulde bee hyndered, they caryed on theyr shulders with greate laboure, theyr barkes and fardelles ouer a streyght of lande conteyning halfe a league in breadth. From hense they sayled to the region of the wylde Lappones, cauled Dikilappones to a place named Dront, beinge. CC. [two hundred] leagues distal from Dwina towarde the North. And thus farre as he sayth, doth the prince of Moscouia exacte tribute. Furthermore leauyng their barkes here, they synfyshed the residue of their iorney on flaedes. He further declared that there were heardees of hartes as are with vs of oxen, whiche in the Noruegians tonge are cauled Rhen, beinge sumwhat bigger then owe hartes. These the Lappones vse in this maner. They ioyne them to flaedes made lyke syffre botes, as wee put horses to the carte. The man in the flaede, is tyed fast by the feete least he fall owte by the swyfte course of the hartes. In his leste hande, he holdeth a collar or rayne wherwith he moderateth the course of the hartes: and in the ryght hand, a pyked stafe wherwith he may fusstine the flaede from faulyng if it chaunce to decline to much on any part. And he tould me that by this meanes he trauayled twentie leagues in one daye, and then dismyshed the harte, who by hym selfe returned to his owne maister and accustomed stable. This iorney thus synfyshed, they came to Berges a citie of Norduegia or Norway, situate directly towarde the northe betwene the mountaynes: and wente from thense to Denmarke on horsebacke. At Dront and Berges, the day is sayde to bee. xxii. [twenty-two] hours longe in the sommer Equinoctiall. Blasius an other of the pryncipe of Moscouia his interpretors, who a fewe yeaeres before, was sent of his pryncipe into Spayne to Th[e]emperour, declared vnto vs an other and shorther way of his iorney. For he sayde that when he was sent from Moscouia to Iohn the kyng of Denmarke, he came fyrfle on foote vnto Rostow: And takyng shyppe there, came to Pereafaw: and from Pereafaw by the ryuer Volga to Castrumow: and that frome thense goyng feuen Werfles by lande, he came to a lyttle ryuer: faylyng by the which, when fyrt he came to Vuolochda, then to Suchana, and Dwina, and in fine to the citie of Berges in Norway, ouerpassyng in this vyage all the perelles and laboures that Istoma rehearsed before, he came at the length to Hafnia the chiefe citie of Denmarke, whiche the Germaynes caule Koppenhagen. But in theyr returnyng home, they both confesse that they came to Moscouia by Liuonia: and that they were a yare in this vyage: Albeit Georgius Istoma, sayde that halfe the parte of that tyme, he was hyndered by tempestes, and inforced to tary longe in many places by the waye. Yet they both lykewytle constanly affirme that in this iorney eyther of them trauayled a thousand threefore and ten Werfles (that is) three hundred and fortie leagues. Furthermore also Demetrius who of late was sent ambassadour from the pryncipe of Moscouia to the bysshoppes of Rome, (by whose relation alfo Paulus Iouius wrote his descriptioun of Moscouia) confirmed all these thynge to bee trewe. All beinge demaunded of me of the congeled or frozen sea, made none other answere but that in places nere vnto that sea, they saw many and great riuers by whose vehemente course and abundaunt flowyng, the feas are dryuen farre from the shore: and that the sayde water of the ryuers is frozen with the sea a good space from the lande, as in Liuonia and other partes of Suecia. For althowgh by the vehemensie of the wyndes, the Ise is broken in the sea, yet dooth this chaunce feldome or neuer in ryuers, excepte by sum inundation or flud the Ise gathered togither bee lyftyd vp and broken. For the flakes or piefes of Ise caryed into the sea by force of the ryuers, doo floate aboue the water in maner all the hole yeaere, and are ageyne so vehemently frozen togither, that a man maye there sumtymes see great heapes of the Ise of manye yeaeres, as dooth appere by such piefes as are dryuen to the shore by the wynde. I haue also byn credibely informed by saythfull men that the sea Baltheum (otherwyse cauled the goulfe of Liuonia) is often tymes frozen in many places. They say furthermore, that in that region whiche is inhabyted of the wylde Lappones, the foonne in the sommer Equinoctiall dooth not faule for the space of. xl. [forty] dayes: yet that that the body therof is so hydden with a darke mystre or cloude three hours, that the beames doo not appere: Neurthelesse to gyue such lyght duryng that tyme, that the darkenesse hyndereth not theys woorke. The Moscouites make theyr bofle that these wylde Lappones are tributaries to theyr pryncipe. Wherat I do not greatly marauyle, forasmuch as they haue none other neare vnto them, that may demaunde tribute of them. Theyr trybute is onely furrers and fyshe, hauyng in maner none other thyngre greatly commodious. And albeit they lacke breade, salt, and other intyfements of glutteny, and lyue onely with fyshe and wylde beastes, yet are they exceedingly prone to lechery. They are such expert archers, that if in theyr hunteyng they espie any beastes whose skynnes they dyfre to saue vnperfysched, they

Sacrifice to the
stone Semes

The cape Motka.
The castel of
Wardhus

The region of the
wylde Lappones.
Drout.

Iorneyng on
sleades.

Howe the hartes
drawe sleades.

xx. [twenty]
leagues in one day
The citie of
Berges in Norway

A shorter iorney.

Rostow.
Pereafaw.
Castrumow.
Vuolochda.
Suchana.
Dwina.
Hafnia.
Koppenhagen
Liuonia.
Werste, is almost
an Italian myle.

305

Paulus Iouius.

Ryuers faulyng
into the frozen sea.

Wynie.
Ise.

Ise of many
yeares.

The sea Baltheum
Where the sun
fauldest not in. xl.
[forty] days

The wylde
Lappones are
tributaries to the
Moscouites
Furrers and fyshe

Expert archers.

Good felowshyp.

Necessary warres.

No vse of money.

Theyr cotages.

Mountaynes
continually
burnyng.

Purgatory.

The ryuer
Petzora.306
The beaste cauled
Mors.The prouidence
of nature.The frozen sea.
Engronland or
Groneland

wyll not lyghtly mysse to hytte them in the nosethrylles. When they go furth on huntyng, they are accustomed to leave at home with theyr wyues suche marchautes or straungers as they haue receaued into theyr houses. So that if at theyr returme, they perceave theyr wyues through the company of the strangers to be myrier and more iocunde then they were wonte to bee, they gyue the straungers sum present. But yf they fynd it otherwys, they thrust them furth of the doores with woordes of reproche. But nowe by the company they haue with straungers that reforte thyther for gaynes, they begyn to leave theyr natvie barbarousnesse. They gladly admittē marchautes, bycause they bryngē them apparel of grose cloth: also hatchettes, needels, spones, knyues, drynkyng cuppes, earthen and brasen pottes, with such other necessarie wares: So that they vſe now to eate foddēn and roſted meate, and doo embrāſe more ciuile maners. Theyr owne apparel is made of the skynnes of dyuers beastes fowed togither. And in this apparel they sumtymes come to Moscouia. Yet fewe of them haue cappes or hosen, which they vſe to make of harter skynnes. They haue not the vſe of golde or syluer money: but vſe only barteryng of ware for ware. And beinge ignorant of other languages besyde theyr owne, they ſeeme amonge straungers to bee in maner domme. Theyr cotages are couered only with the barkes of trees. They haue no certeyne reſtyng habitacion. But when they haue confūmed the fyſhes and wylde beastes in one place, they remoue to an other. Furthermore also the payde ambassadours of the prince of Moscouia, declared that in the fame partes they fawē certeyne hygh mountaynes continually caſtlyng furth flames of fyre as doth the mountayne of Etna in the Ilande of Sicilia: and that euen in Norway, many mountaynes are faulen downe and burnte in maner to aſhes with ſuch continuall flames. Which thynge ſum conſideryng, fayne the fyre of Purgatorie to bee there. And as concerninge theſe mountaynes of Norway, when I was ſent ambassadour to Christiern kyng of Denmarke, I was informed the lyke by the gouernours of Norwae who chaunced at that tyme to bee preſent there.

Abowt the mouthes of the ryuer Petzora that are toward the ryght hande from the mouthes of Dwina, are ſayd to bee dyuers and great beastes in the Ocean: and amonge other, a certeyne great beast as bygge as an oxe, which theſe inhabitautes caule Mors. This beast hath ſhorte feete lyke a beuer or an Otter, with a breſt ſumwhat hygh and brode for the proportion of the residue of his body: and two longe and greate teeth growyng ewte of the vpper iawc. Theſe beastes for reſt and increafe, doo ſumtymes leauē the Ocean, and by great heardes ascende the mountaynes: where before they gyue themſelues to profounde ſleepe (wherunto they are naturally inclined) they appoynt one of theyr number as it were a watcheman as doo cranes for the ſecuritie of the reſte. Whiche if he chaunce to ſleepe, or to bee flayne of the hunters, the residue may eaſely bee taken. But if the watchman gyue warnyng with rorynge (as the maner is) immediately the hole hearde awakened thereby, ſuddeynly put theyr hynder feete to theyr teeth: And ſo faulyng from the mountayne with great celeritie as it were on a fleade, they caſt them ſelues headlong into the Ocean: where alſo they reſt and ſleepe for a whyle vpon the heapes of Iſe. The hunters purſue theſe beastes only for theyr teethe: Of the which the Moscouites, Tartars, and eſpecially the Turkes, make haſtes for ſwoordes and daggeſ[r]s very artificially: And vſe theſe rather for ornamente, then to gyue the greater ſtroke for the weyght or heauineſſe thereof as ſummefable. Alſo amonge the Turkes, Moscouites, and Tartars, theſe teethe are foulde by weight, and are cauled the teethe of fyſhes.

The frozen ſea reacheth farre and wyde beyonde Dwina to Petzora and vnto the mouthes of the great riuier Obi: beyonde the which they ſay to bee the region of Engroneland, vnknownen and feperate from the trade and conuerſation of oure men, by reaſon of hygh mountaynes couered and coulde with perpetuall ſnowe, and the ſea no leſſe incumbered with contynually Iſe whiche hyndereth nauigations and maketh them daungerous, as they faye.

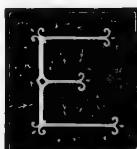


accustomed to
fes. So that
more iocunde
y thrust them
s that reforte
entes, bycause
spes, earthen
roasted meate,
eastes fowed
es or hosen,
ut vse only
eme amone
They haue no
e place, they
d that in the
th the mounta
downe and
re of Purga
bassador to
anced at that

f Dwina, are
bygge as an
with a brest
teeth grow
and by great
ento they are
e securite of
y bee taken.
le awakened
e with great
st and sleape
Of the which
y artificially:
of as summe
e cauled the

of the great
ite from the
etuall snowe,
them daun-

**EXEMPLAR EPISTOLAE SEV
LITERARVM MISSIVARVM
QVAS ILLVSTRISSIMVS PRINCEPS**
Edvvardus eius nominis Sextus, An
gliae, Franciae, et Hiberniae Rex,
misit ad Principes Septemtrion
alem ac Orientalem mundi
plagam inhabitantes iuxta
mare glaciale, nec non In
diam Orientalem. Anno
Dominii. 1553. Regni
sui Anno septimo
et ultimo.



Dwardus sextus, Angliae, Franciae, and
Hiberniae Rex. etc. Omnibus,
Regibus et Principibus ac Dominis,
et cunctis Iudicibus terrae, et Ducibus
eius quibuscunque est ex
cellens aliqua dignitas in ea
cunctis in locis que sunt sub vniuerso celo: Pax,
tranquillitas, et honor vobis, terris, et regionibus vestris
que imperio vestro subiacent, cuique vestrum quemad
modum conuenit ei. Propterea quod indidit Deus
Opt. Max. omnibus prae cunctis alijs viuentibus cor
et desiderium tale, vt appetat quisque cum alijs socie
tatem mire, amare, et vicissim amari, beneficijs afficere,
et mutua accipere beneficia studeat, ideo cuique pro
307 facultate sua hoc desiderium in omnibus quidem
hominibus beneficijs fouere et conferuare conuenit, in
illis autem maxime, qui hoc desiderio adducti, a rem
otis etiam regionibus ad eos veniunt. Quo enim
longius iter, eius rei gratia ingressi sunt, eo ardenter
in eis hoc desiderium fuisse declararunt. Insuper etiam
ad hoc, nos patrum maiorumque nostrorum exempla
inuitant, qui semper humanissime suscepserunt et benign
issime tractauerunt illos qui tum a locis propinquis
tum a remotis, eos amice adibant, eorum se protectioni
commendantes. Quod si omnibus id praestare aequum
est, certe mercatoribus imprimis praestari debet, qui
per vniuersum orbem discurrunt, mare circumstantes
et aridam, vt res bonas et viles quae Dei beneficio in

**THE COPY OF THE LETTERS
MISSIVE WHICH THE RIGHT
NOBLE PRINCE EDWARDE THE. VI.**
sent to the Kynges, Princes, and other
potentates inhabutyng the Northeast
partes of the worlde towarde the
myghtye Empire of Cathay, at suche
tyme as syr Hugh Willowyknyght
and Rychard Chaunceler with
theyr company attempted theyr
vyage thither in the yeare of
Chryst. 1553. and the. vii. and
laste yeare of his reigne.



Dwarde the fyxt by the grace of God,
kyng of Englande, Fraunce, and
Ierlande, etc. To all Kynges,
Princes, Rulers, Judges, and gouern
ours of the earthe, and all other
hauyng any excellent dignite on
the same in all places vnder the
vniuerall heauen: Peace, tranqui
litie, and honoure, bee vnto yowe, and your landes
and regions which are vnder yowr dominions, and to
euer of yowe as is conuenient.

Forasmuche as the grete and almyghty god hath
gyuen vnto mankynd aboue al other liuing creatours,
such a hart and defyre, that every man defyret to
ioyne frendeshyppe with other, to loue and bee loued,
also to gyue and receave mutuall benefits, it is ther
fore the dewtie of all men, accordyng to theyr poure
to maintayne and increase this defyre in every man
with well deferuynge to all men, and especiall to
shewe this good affection to such as beinge moued with
this defyre, coome vnto them from farre countreys.
For in howe much the longer viage they haue attempted
for this intent, so much the more doo they therby de
clare that this defyre hath byn ardent in them. Fur
thermore also th[e] exemplies of owe fathers and predi
cessours doo invite vs hereto, forasmuch as they haue
euer gentelly and louyngly intreated such as of frendely
mynde came to them awel from countreis nere hand
as farre remote, commendyng them felues to theyr pro
tection. And if it bee ryght and equitie to shewe such
humanitie toward all men, doublefie the fame ought
chiefly to bee shewed to marchauntes, who wander
yng abowt the worlde, searche both the lande and sea
to cary such good and profitable thinges as are founde
in theyr countreys, to remote regions and kyngedomes:
and ageyne to brynge from the same, suche thynges as

regione eorum inueniuntur, ad remotissimas regiones et regna adserant, atque inde viuissim referant quod suæ regioni vtile ibi repererint: vt et populi ad quos eunt, non desituantur commodis que non profert illis terra eorum, et ipsi sint participes rerum quibus illi abundant. Nam Deus coeli et terre, humano generi maxime consulens, noluit vt omnia in quauis regione inuenientur, quo regio ope alterius regionis indigeret, et gens ab alia gente commodum aliquod expectaret, ac ita stabiliaret amicitia inter omnes, singulique omnibus benefacere quererent. Hoc itaque ineundæ ac stabiliendæ amicitias desiderio moti viri quidam regni nostri, iter in remotas maritimæ regiones insituerunt, vt inter nos et illos populos viam mercibus inferendis et esferendis aperirent: Nosque rogauerunt vt id illis concederemus. Qui petitioni illorum annuentes, concessimus viro honorabili et forti Hugoni Wilibeo et alijs qui cum eo sunt seruis nostris fidis et charis, vt pro sua voluntate, in regiones eis prius incognitas eant, quæstutri ex quibus nos caremus, et adducant illis ex nostris terris, id quo illi carent. Atque iu illis et nobis commodum inde accedat, sitque amicitia perpetua et fœdus indisolubile inter illos et nos, dum permittant illi nos accipere de rebus quibus superabundant in regnis suis, et nos concedemus illis ex regnis nostris res, quibus destiuntur. Rogamus itaque vos Reges et Principes et omnes quibus aliqua est potestas in terra, vt viris istis nostris transfitum permittatis per regiones vestras. Non enim tangent quicquam ex rebus vestris iniuris vobis. Cogitate quod homines et ipsi sunt. Et si quare caruerint, oramus pro vestra beneficentia, eam vos illis tribuatis, accipientes vicissim ab eis quod poterunt rependere vobis. Ita vos gerite erga eos quemadmodum cuperetis vt nos et subditii nostri nos gereremus erga seruos vestros si quando transferierit per regiones nostras. Atque promittimus vobis per Deum omnium que celo, terra et mari continentur, perque vitam nostram et tranquillitatem regnum nostrorum, nos pari beniginitate seruos vestros accepturos si ad regna nostra aliquando venerint. Atque a nobis et subditis nostris, ac si nati fuissent in regnis nostris, ita benigne tractabuntur vt repandamus vobis benignitatem quam nostris exhibueritis. Postquam vos Reges, Principes, etc. rogauiimus vt humanitate et beneficentia omni prosequamini seruos nostros nobis charos, oramus omnipotentem Deum nostrum, vt vobis diuturnam vitam largiatur, et pacem que nullam habeat finem. Scriptum Londini, que ciuitas est regni nostri. Anno. 5515. a creato mundo, mense Iiar. xiii. die mensis, anno septimo regni nostri.

308

they fynde there commodius for theyr own countreys: Bothe, awell that the people to whom they go, may not bee destitute of such commodities as theyr countreys prynge not furth to them, as that also they may bee partetakers of fuche thynge wherof they abunde. For god of heauen and earth, greatly prouydynge for mankynde, wolde not that al thinges shulde bee founde in one region, to th[e]ende that one shuld haue neede of an other, that by this means frendshippe myght bee estableshed amonc all men, and every one seeke to gratifie all. For th[e]establisshyng and furtherance of which vnuerfall amicitie, certeyne men of owe realme moued hereunto by the sayde desyre, haue institute and 309 taken vypon them a vyage by fea into farre countreys to th[e]intent that betwene owe people and them, a way bee opened to bryng in and cary owt marchaundies, desyryng vs to further their enterpryse. Who assentyng to theyr petition, haue licenced the ryght valiant and worthy syr Hughe Wyllaby knyght, and other owe truely and faulthful seruauntes which are with hym according to theyr desyre to go to countreys to them heretofore vnknownen, awell to seeke fuche thynge as we lacke, as also to cary vnto them from owe regions, fuche thynge as they lacke. So that hereby not only commoditie may ensewe both to them and to vs, but also an indissoluble and perpetual league of frendshippe be estableshed betwene vs bothe, whyle they permitte vs to take of theyr thynge fuche whereof they haue abundance in theyr regions, and we ageine graunt them fuche thynge of ivers wherof they are destitute. Wee therfore desyre yow kynges and princes, and all other to whom there is any poure on the earth, to permitte vnto these owe seruauntes, free passage by your regions and dominions. For they shall not touche any thynge of yowres vnwylling vnto yow. Consyder yow that they also are men. If therfore they shal stand in neede of any thynge, we desyre yowe of all humanite, and for the nobilitie whiche is in yowe, to ayde and helpe them with fuch thynge as they lacke, receauyng ageyne of them fuch thynge as they shalbe able to gyue yowe in recompenfe. Shewe yowre felues so towarde them, as yowe wolde that wee and ivers subiectes shulde shewe our felues toward your seruauntes, if at any tyme they shall passe by owe regions. Thus doinge, wee promise yowe by the God of all thynge that are conteyned in heauen, earth, and the sea, and by the lyfe and tranquillite of owe kyngedomes, that we wyl with lyke humanite accepte yowre seruauntes if at any tyme they shal coomme to owe kyngdomes, where they shal as frendly and gentelly bee intertayned as if they were borne in our dominions, that we may hereby recompenfe the fauour and beniginitie which yow haue shewed to owe men. Thus after we haue defyred yow kynges and princes, etc. With all humanite and fauour to interteyne our welbeloued seruauntes, wee pray owe almyghty god to graunt yowe longe lyfe and peace which neuer shall haue ende. Wryten in London whiche is the chiese citie of owe kyngedome: In the yeare frome the creation of the worlde. 5515. in the moneth of Iiar, the xiii. day of the moneth, and seuenthe yeare of owe reigne.

 This letter was wrytten also in Greeke and dyuers other languages.

[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

SECTION V.

Other notable things as touching the Indies,

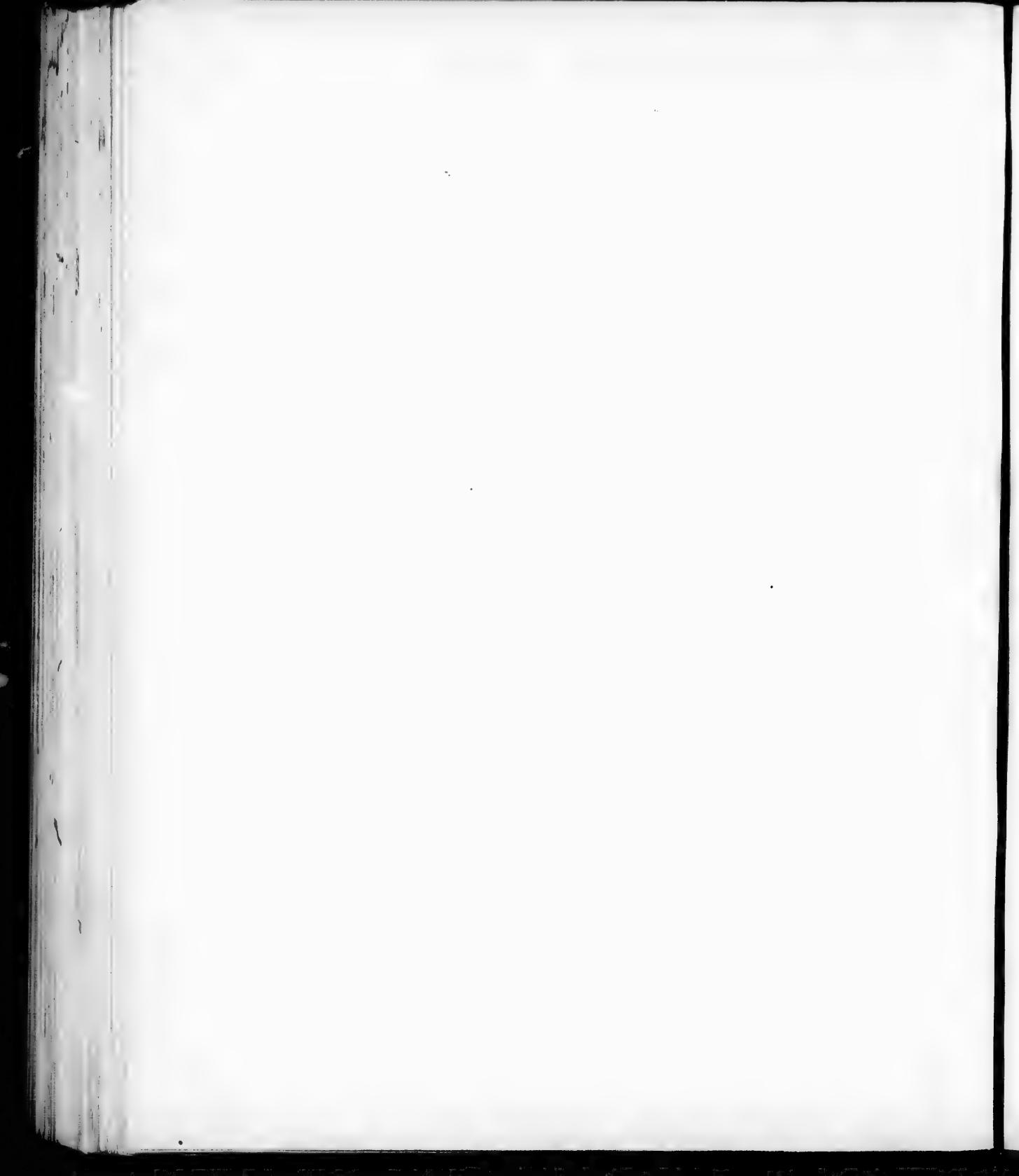
out of the Writings and Maps of

Francisco Lopez de Gómara,

and

Sebastian Cabot.

1552-1555.]



C OTHER NOTABLE THYNGES AS TOVCHYNGE THE INDIES:

AND FYRST OF THE FOREKNOWLEAGE THAT THE POET SENECA HAD
of the fyndyng this newe worlde and other regions not then knownen.

FRANCISCO LOPES.



O speke of thynges that shalbe, longe before they are, is a kynde
of diuination if the truth thereof folowe effectually. Neuer-
thelesse althowgh such thynges as are spoken eyther by con-
jecture, or by th[e]instincte of nature, or by naturall reasoun, doo
ostentymen take place and succede accordyngely, yet are not
such conjectures to bee accoumpted as certeyne as prophesies
reueled by the sprite of god, which wee ought entierly to be-
leue: but not so the other gathered only by certeine apparaences,
similitudes, reasoun, and demonstrations: althowgh it bee greatly
to bee maruailed to confyder howe they hytte the truthe sum-
tyme: which perhaps they doe accordingy to the prouerbe
that sayth: He that speaketh much shall sumtimes stumble on
the truth. All this I speake confyderynge the sayinge of the
poet Seneca in his tragedie of Medea, where his woordes
feeme in all pointes to agree with the discouerynge of the Indies
founde of late by Christofer Colon and the Spanyardes. The
woordes of Seneca, are these,

*Venient annis
Secula feris, quibus Oceanus
Vincula rerum laxet, et ingens
Patet tellus, Tiphisque nouos
Delegat orbes,
Nec sit terris ultima Thyle.*

That is to saye: There shall coomme worldes in late years, in the whiche the Ocean shall vnloose the
bondes of thynges, and a great lande shall appeare. Also Typhis (that is nauigation) shall discouer newe
worldes: and Thyle shall not bee the furthest lande.

Diuination.

Coniecture.

Prophesie.

So do the
Egyptians.

The woordes of
Seneca.

Islande was in
owld time cauled
Thyle as summe
thynke.

310



He Philosopher Plato wrytethe in his Dialoges of Timeus and Cricia, that in the owld time
there was in the sea Atlantike ouer agenst Affrica, an Ilande cauled Atlantide greater then
Affrica and Afia: affirmyng that those landes are from thense continent and greate: And
that the kynges of that Ilande gouerned a greate parte of Affrica and Europe. But that in
a certeyne greate earthequake and tempest of rayne, this Ilande foonke and the people were
drowned: Also that there remayned somuch mudde of the drownyng or synkyng of that Ilande,
that that sea Atlantike coulde not bee sayled. Sum take this for a fable: and many for a trewe

EDEN.

20

337

Plato sayth that
these kynges were
the names of
Neptunus.
An earthquake.

**Marcilius Ficinus.
Proclus.**

**Mexico or new
Spaine.**

Hesperides.

Capo Verde

Ophir.

Tharsis.

Gorgonas.

Solinus.

**Lands found by the
Carthaginenses.**

Aristotell.

Theophrast.

**Ionas fledde to
Tharsis.**

**The navigations
of Salomon.**

**Bermeio is the
Arabian sea.**

hystryorie, as doothe Marcilius Ficinus inducinge Proclus alleagynge certeyne hystories of the Ethiopians wrytten by one Marcellus, who confirmeth the fame to bee trewe. But there is nowe no caufe why wee shulde any longer doubte or dispute of the Iland Atlantide, forasmuch as the discouerynge and conquest of the west Indies do plainly declare what Plato hath wrytten of the fyde landes. In Mexico also at this day they caul that water Atl. by the halfe name of Atlant, as by a woord remaynyng of the name of the Ilande that is not. Wee may lykewyse say that the Indies are eyther the Ilande and firme lande of Plato or the remanent of the fame: and not the Ilandes of Hesperides or Ophir, or Tharsis, as sum haue thought of late dayes. For the Hesperides, are the Ilandes of Cabo Verde and the Gorgonas from whence Hanon browght apes: Albeit in conferryng it with Solinus, there is sum doubt by reason of the nauigation of fortie dayes wherof he speakeith. Awell maye it bee, that Cuba or Hayti, or any other Ilande of the Indies, shulde bee thos which the Carthaginenses founde and forbodde their citizens to make any vyages thyther or to inhabite the fame as Arifloth and Theophraste doo rehearse where they wryte of the marueylous and vnknownen workes of nature. As concernyng Ophir and Tharsis, it is not knownen what or where they bee, althowgh many lerned men as faynt Augusline and other haue searched what citie or lande Tharsis myght bee. Saynt Jerome who was experte in the Hebrewe toungue, sayth in many places vpon the prophetes that Tharsis is as much to say as the fea: and that whereas it is wrytten that Ionas fledde to Tharsis, he wente to the fea by a longe iorney. Furthermore as concernyng the nauigations of Salomon, it is not to bee thought that his nauies fayled to the west Indies, forasmuch as to passe thyther, it was requisite for them to sayle Westwarde departyng frome the sea of Bermeio: and not Eastward as they fayled. Ageine, the west Indies haue no unicorns, elephanthes, diamondes, and such other thynges as they browght in the trade of their nauigations.

¶ Of the colour of the Indians.



**How colours dyffer
by degrees.**

**The colour of the
west Indians.**

**Dyng[er]s sortes of
whyte and blacke.**

**311
Difference of
colour in the
same clime.
Rio de la Plata.**

**Peru.
Blacke men in
the west Indies.**

**From whence
procedeth the
varietie of colours.**

**Gods wisedome
and poure is seene
in his worke.**

**Curld heare and
baldes.**

Ne of the marueylous thynges that god vseth in the composition of man, is colour: whiche doubleesse can not bee confydered withoute great admiration in beholding one to be white and an other blacke, beinge coloures vterly contrary. Sum lykewyfe to be yelowe whiche is betwene blacke and white: and other of other colours as it were of dyuers liuers. And as these colours are to be marueyled at, euen so is it to be considered howe they dyffer one from an other as it were by degrees, forasmuche as sum men are whyte after dyuers sortes of whytenesse: yelowe after dyuers maners of yelowe: and blacke after dyuers sortes of blackenesse: and howe from whyte they go to yelowe by discouerynge to browne and redde: and to blacke by affle colour, and murrey sumwhat lyghter then blacke: and tawnye lyke vnto the west Indians which are all togyther in general eyther purple, or tawnye lyke vnto fodde quynses, or of the colour of cheslnuttes or olyves: whiche colour is to them natural and not by theyr goyng naked as many haue thought: albeit theyr nakednesse haue sumwhat helped therunto. Therfore in lyke maner and with suche diuerſitie as men are commonly whyte in Europe and blacke in Affrike, euen with like varietie are they tawny in these Indies, with dyuers degrees diuerſily inclynyng more or leſſe to blacke or whyte. No leſſe maruayle is it to conſider that men are whyte in Siuite and blacke at the cape of Buena Speranza, and of cheslnutte colour at the ryuer of Plata, beinge all in equall degrees frome the Equinoctiall line. Lykewyfe that the men of Affryke and Asia that lyue vnder the burnte line (cauled *Zona Torrida*) are blacke: and not they that lyue beneathe or on this fyde the fame line as in Mexico, Yucatan, Quauhema, Lian, Nicaragua, Panama, Santo Domingo, Paria, Cape faynt Augusline, Lima, Quito, and other landes of Peru which touch in the fame Equinoctiall. For in al the tracte of these coales certeyne blacke men were found only in Quarequa when Vaschus Nunnez of Balboa discouered the ſea of Sur. By reaſon wherof it may ſeeme that ſuche varietie of colours procedeth of man, and not of the earth: whiche maye well bee althowgh wee bee all borne of Adam and Eve, and knowe not the caufe why god hath fo ordeneid it, otherwyſe then to conſider that his diuine maiestie hath doone this as infinite other to declare his omnipotencie and wisedome in ſuche diuerſities of colours as appere not only in the nature of man, but the lyke alſo in beaſtles, byrdes, and floures, where dyuers and contrary coloures are ſeene in one lytle fetter, or the leaues growyng owt of one lytle ſtalke. An other thyng is alſo greatly to bee noted as touchyng theſe Indians. And this is, that theyr heare is not curld as is the Moores and Ethiopians that inhabite the fame clime: neyther are they balde excepte very ſeldome, and that but lytle. All whiche thynges may giue further occation to phyloſophers to ſearch the ſecretes of nature and complexions of men with the nouelties of the newe worlde.

 *¶ Why they were cauled Indians.*

Vm thynke that the people of the newe world were cauled Indians bycause they are of the colour of the Easte Indians. And althowgh (as it semeth to me) they dyffer much in colour and fashions, yet is it trewe that of India they were cauled Indians.

The colour of the East Indians.

India is properlie cauled that great prouince of Asia in the which great Alexander kepte his warres: and was so named of the ryuer Indus: and is diuyded into many kyngedomes confynynge with the same. From this greate India (cauled the East India) came great companies of men as wryteth Herodotus: and inhabited that part of Ethiopia that lyeth betwene the sea Bermeia (otherwyse cauled the redde sea or the goulfe of Arabia) and the ryuer of Nilus: al which regions that great Chriflian prince Prester Iohn dooth now poſſeſſie. The fayde Indians preuayled fo much, that they vtterly changed the customes and name of that lande, and cauled it India: by reaſon wherof, Ethiopia alſo hath of longe tyme byn cauled India. And hereupon came it that Aryſtotell, Seneca, and certeyne other oulde autours sayd that India was not farre from Spayne. After this alſo, of later dayes owe West India was ſo cauled of the fayde India of Preſter Iohn where the Portugales had their trade. For the pylot of the caruell that was fyrlie dryuen by forceble wynde to an vñknownen lande in the West Ocean, cauled the fame India bycause the Portugales ſo cauled ſuch landes as they had lately diſcovered Eaſtwarde. Chryſtopher Colon alſo after the fayde pylot, cauled the weſt landes by the fame name. Albeit, ſum that take Colonuſ for an expert Coſmographer, thynke that he ſo named them of the Eaſt India, as to be the furtheſt and vñknownen ende therof reachyng into the Weſte vnder the other hemiſpherie or halfe globe of the earthe beneathe vs: affirmyng that when he fyrlie attempted to diſcover the Indies, he went chiefly to ſeeke the ryche Iland of Cipango, which faulth on the parte of great China or Cathay as wryteth Marcus Paulus Venetus and other: And that he ſhulde ſooner come thither by folowing the courſe of the ſoonne Westwarde then ageynſt the fame: Albeit manye thynke that there is no ſuche Ilande, or at the leaſt not yet knownen by that name: wheras alſo Marcus Paulus obſerued no exakte deſcription of the place eyther of this Ilande or of Cathay.

East India.

Preſter Iohn came out of India to Ethiopia.

Ethiopia cauled India.

India not far from Spayne.

Preſter Iohn known to the Portugales.

At the furtheſt Eaſte, begynneth the weſt.

The Iland of Cipango.

Cathay.

To the Eaſt by the weſt.

Marcus Paulus Venetus.

 *¶ The fyrfte diſcoverynge of the Weſte Indies.*

Certeyne caruell faylyng in the weſte Ocean abowt the coaſtes of Spayne, had a foreyble and continuall wynde from the Eaſt wherby it was dryuen to a land vñknownen and not defcryed in any mappe or carde of the ſea: and was dryuen ſtyl alonge by the coaſte of the fame for the ſpace of many dayes vntyl it came to a hauen: where in a floorte tyme the moſt parte of the martyners beinge longe before verye weake and feeble by reaſon of hunger and trauayle, dyed: So that only the pylot with thre or foure other remayned aliue. And not only they that dyed dyd not inioy the Indies which they fyrlie diſcovered to theyr myſſfortune, but the reſidue alſo that lyued had in maner as lyttle fruitiōne of the fame: not leauyng or at the leaſt not openly publyſhyng any memorie therof, neyther of the place, or what it was cauled, or in what yeaſe it was founde. Albeit, the faute was not theirs, but rather the malice of other, or the envie of that whiche wee caule fortune. I doo not therefore marueyle that the auncient hiſtories affirme that great thynges proceade and increafe of ſmaul and obſcure begynnyngeſ, fyth wee haue ſene the fame vereyſed in this fyndyng of the Indies being ſo notable and newe a thyng. Wee neede not bee curiuſ to ſeeke the name of the pylot fyth death made a ſhorte ende of his doinges. Sum wyl that he came from Andaluzia, and traded to the Ilandes of Canaria and the Ilande of Madera when this large and mortal nauigation chaunced vnto hym. Other ſay that he was a Bifcayne, and traded into Englaude and Fraunce. Other alſo, that he was a Portugale: and that eyther he wente or came from Mina or India: which agreeith well with the name of theſe newe landes as I haue fyſde before. Ageyne, ſum there bee that ſay that he broughte the carauel to Portugale: or to the Ilande of Madera, or to ſum other of the Ilandes cauled *de los Azores*. Yet doo none of them affirme any thyng, althowgh they all affirme that the pylote dyed in the houſe of Chryſtopher Colon, with whome remayned al ſuch wrytynges and annotacions as he hadde made of his vyage in the fayde carauel, aſwell of ſuch thynges as he obſerued both by lande and ſea, as alſo of the eleuation of the pole in thoſe landes whiche he had diſcovered.

A harde begynnynge.

312

Great thynges proceade of ſmaul and obſcure begynnyngeſ.

The pylote that fyrlie founde the Indies.

Mina.

oure: whiche
me to be white
elowē whiche
diueres. And
ey dyffer one
yours fortes of
partes of blacke-
lacke by affe
are all togother
polyues: which
kednesſe haue
only whyte in
yours degrees
men are whyte
beinge all in
ue vnder the
ſame line as
at Augustine,
tracte of theſe
a diſcovered
and not of the
ufe why god
uite other to
ture of man,
ſtlytle fether,
chynge theſe
uite the ſame
givē further
ſ of the newe

**C What maner of man Chrystopher Colon was: and howe he Came
fyrst to the knowleage of the Indies.**

Thus also began
Rychard
chaunceler.

Colon was not
much lerned.

The Ilande
Atlantide.
The Ilande
found by the
Carthaginenses.

313
Colon conferred
with lerned men.

Chaunce and arte.
A Christian
opinion.

The caruel
compared to the
ship of Noye.

The kyng
of
Portugale.
The kyng
of
Castile.

Kynghe Henry
the seuenthe.



Hristopher Colon was borne in Cugureo, or (as sum say) in Nerui, a vylage in the territorie of Genua in Italie. He descended as sum thynke, of the house of the Pelestres of Placentia in Lumbardie. He beganne of a chylde to bee a maryner: of whose arte they haue great exercise on the ryuer of Genua. He traded many yeares into Suria and other partes of the East. After this, he became a master in makyng cardes for the sea, whereby he had great vantage. He came to Portugale to knowe the reasoun and decription of the south coastes of Affrica and the nauigations of the Portugales, thereby to make his cardes more perfecte to bee folde. He maryed in Portugale as sum say: or as many say, in the Ilande of Madera, where he dwelt at suche tyme as the sayde caruell arryued there, whose pylot swiorned in his houfe, and dyed alfo there, bequethynge to Colon his carde of the description of suche newe landes as he hadde founde, wherby Colon had the fyrst knowleage of the Indyes. Sum haue thought that Colon was well lerned in the Latine tounge and the science of Cosmographie: and that he was therby fyrst moued to seeke the landes of the Antipodes and the ryche Ilande of Cipango whereof Marcus Paulus wryteth. Also that he had redde what Plato in his dialoges of Timeus and Cricias, wryteth of the greate Ilande Atlantide, and of a great lande in the West Ocean vndiscouered beinge bygger then Asia and Affrica. Furthermore that he had knowleage what Aristotell and Theophrastus saye in their bookes of maruayles, where they wryte that certeyne marchauntes of Carthage saylyng from the streyghtes of Gibraltar towarde the west and south, founde after many dayes a greate Ilande not inhabited: yet replenyshed with al thynges requisite, and hauyng many nauigable ryuers. In deede Colon was not greatly lerned: yet of good vnderstandyng. And when he had knowleage of the sayde newe landes by the information of the dead pylot, made relation thereof to certeyne lerned men with whom he conferred as touchyng the lyke thynges mentioned of owlde autours. He communicated this secreete and conferred chiefly with a fryer, named John Perez of Marchena that dwelt in the monastery of Rabida. So that I verely beleue, that in maner all that he declared, and many thynges more that he lefte vnspoken, were wrytten by the sayde Spanyfhe pylot that dyed in his house. For I am perfuaded, that if Colon by science atteyned to the knowleage of the Indyes, he wolde longe before haue communicate this secreete to his owne contrey men the Genuefes, that trauayle all the worlde for gaynes, and not haue come into Spayne for this purpouse. But doubtleſſe he never thought of any such thyng before he chaunced to bee acquainted with the sayd pylot who founde those landes by fortune, accordyng to the sayng of Plinie: *Quod ars docere non potuit, casus inuenit.* That is: That arte could not teache, chaunce founde. Albeit, the more Chryſtian opinion is, to thinke that god of his singuler prouidence and infinite goodnesse, at the length with eyes of compassion as it were lookeynge downe from heauen vpon the fonnes of Adam so longe kepte vnder Sathanis captiuitie, intended euen then (for caufes to hym only knownen) to rayse thoſe wyndes of mercy whereby that caruell (herein moſt lyke vnto the shyppe of Noe whereby the remanent of the hole world was fauored as by this caruel this newe worlde receaued the fyrſt hope of theyr ſaluation) was dryuen to theſe landes. But wee wyll nowe declare what great thynges folowed of this ſmaule begynnyng, and how Colon folowed this matter reueled vnto hym not withowte goddes prouidence.

**C What labour and trauayle Colon tooke in attempting his fyrſt vyage
to the Indies.**



After the death of the pilot and mariners of the Spanyfhe caruell that discouered the Indyes, Chryſtopher Colon purposed to feke the fame. But in howe muche more he defyred this, the leſſe was his poure to accompliſhe his deſire. For, befide that of him ſelfe he was not able to furnyſſhe one shyppe, he lacked alſo the fauour of a kyng vnder whose protection he might ſo enioy the riches he hoped to fynde, that none other myght take the fame from hym or defeate hym therof. And ſeinge the kyng of Portugale occupied in the conqueſt of Affrica and the nauigations of the East which were then fyrſt attempted, the kyng of Caſtyle lykewyſe no leſſe buſyed in the warres of Granada, he ſent to his brother Bartholomewe Colon (who was alſo priuie to this ſecrete) to practiſe with the kyng of Englaunde Henry the ſeuenthe beinge very ryche

Came

the territorie of
s of Placentia
they haue great
partes of the
he had great
uth coastes of
perfecte to bee
dwelt at fuche
bequethynge
had the syrl
and the science
ryche Ilande
of Timeus and
uerred beinge
rastus faye in
the streyghtes
: yet replen
ately lerned :
information
uchyng the
tiefely with a
eleue, that in
yde Spanysh
leage of the
eneses, that
oubtelesse he
founde thole
it. That is :
at god of his
kyng downe
en (for causes
the shyppe of
aued the syrl
es folowed of
s prouidence.

vyage

the Indies,
desyred this,
he was not
e protection
e fame from
the conquest
the kyng of
Colon (who
e very ryche

and without warres: promysyng to bryng hym great ryches in short time if he wolde shew him fauour and furnyssh he hyr with shippes to discouer the newe Indies wherof he had certeyne knowlage. But neyther here beinge able to bryng his sute to passe, he caused the matter to bee moued to the kyng of Portugale Don Alonso the fyste of that name: at whose handes he founde neither fauour nor money, forasmuch as the licenciate Calzadilla the byshop of Viseo, and one master Rodrigo men of credit in the science of Cosmographie, withflood him and contended that there neither was nor could be any goide or other ryches bee founde in the west as Colon affirmed. By reason whereof he was very fadde and pensiue: but yet was not discouraged or despaired of the hope of his good aduenture which he afterward found. This done, he tooke shippinges at Lifburne, and came to Palos of Moguer where he communed with Martin Alonso Pinzon an expert pylot, who offered hym selfe vnto hym. After this disclofyng the hole frecreates of his mynde to Iohn Perez of Marchena (a fryer of th[e] order of saynt Frances in Rabida, and wel lerned in Cosmographie) and declaryng vnto hym how by folowing the course of the son by a temperate vyage, rich and great landes myght be founde, the fryer greatly commended his enterpryse, and gaue him counsayle to breake the matter to the duke of Medina Sidonia Don Euriue of Guzman a great lord and very ryche: And also to Don Luys of Cerdas the duke of Medina Celi, who at that tyme had great prouision of shippes well furnyshed in his hauen of Santa Maria. But wheras both these dukes tooke the matter for a dreame and as a thyng diuised of an Italian deceauer who (as they thought) had before with lyke pretence deluded the kynges of Englande and Portugale, the fryer gaue hym courage to go to the courte of the Catholyke princes Don Ferdinand and lady Isabell princes of Castile: affirmyng that they wold bee ioyfull of such newes. And for his better furtherance herin, wrote letters by hym to fryer Ferdinand of Talauera the queenes confessor. Chrysþopher Colon therfore, repayed to the court of the Catholike princes, in the yeare. M. CCCC. lxxvi. [1486 A.D.] and delyuered vnto theyr handes the peticon of his request as concerninge the discoueryng of the newe Indies. But they beinge more carefull, and applyinge all theyr mynde howe they myght dryue the Moores out of the kyngdome of Granade, which great enterpryse they had alredy taken in hande, dyd lytle or nothyng esteme the matter. But Colon not thus disengaged, found the meanes to declare his sute to such as had sumtymes priuate communication with the kyng. Yet because he was a stranger and went but in simple apparell, nor otherwyse credited then by the letter of a gray fryer, they beleued hym not, neyther gaue eare to his woordes: wherby he was greatly tormented in his imagination. Only Alonso of Quintanilia the kynges chiefe auditour gaue hym meat and drynke at his owne charges, and hard gladly such thynges as he declared of the landes not then founde: defryng hym in the meane tyme to bee contente with that poore enterteynemente, and not to despayre of his enterpryse: puttynge hym also in good conforte that he shulde at one tyme or other, coome to the speache of the Catholyke princes. And thus shortly after by the meanes of Alonso of Quintanilia, Colon was brought to the prefence and audience of the Cardinall Don Pero Gonzales of Mendoza, archbyshop of Toledo, a man of great reuenues and autorite with the kyng and queene, who brought hym before them after that he well perceaved and examyned his intent. And by this meanes was his sute harde of the Catholyke princes, who also redde the booke of his memorials which he presented vnto them. And although at the syrl they tooke it for vayne and false that he promyfed, neuerthelesse they put hym in good hope that he shulde bee well dispached when they had synfyshed the warres of Granada which they had now in hand. With which answere, Colon beganne to reuyue his spirites, with hope to bee better estemed and more fauourably to bee h[er]ald amonoge the gentlemen and noble men of the court, who before tooke hym only for a craftie felowe and deceauer: and was nothyng dismayde or disengaged when so euer he debated the matter with them, althowgh many iudged hym phantasicall, as is the maner of ignorant menne to caule all such as attempte any thyng beyonde theyr reach and the compasse of theyr knowlage: thinking the worlde to bee no bigger then the cagies wherin they are brought vp and lyue. But to retorne to Colon: So hotte and vrgente was the siege of Granada, that they presentely graunted hym his demaunde to seeke the newe landes, and to bryng from thense golde, syluer, perles, precious stones, splices, and fuche other rych thynges. They gaue hym also the tenth parte of all the reuenues and customes dewe vnto the kyng of al such landes as he shulde discouer, not doyng preuidice in any thyng to the kyng of Portugale. The particulars of this agrement were made in the towne cauled Sancta Fe: and the priuilege of the rewarde, in Granada the xxx. [thirtieth] daye of Aprell the same yeare that the citie was woonne. And wheras the fayde Catholyke princes had not mony presentely to dispatch Colon, Luys of S. Angell the kynges secretarye of accomptes, lente them fyxe quentes of marauedes, whiche in a groffe summe make. xvi. [sixteen] thoufande ducades. Two thynges are herein chiefly to be noted: wherof the one is, that for so fmaule charges they haue increased the reuenues of the crowne of Castyle as much as the Indies are in value. The other is, that endyng the conquest of the Moores who possesst the kyngedome of Granada eyght hundredth yeres, they immediatly beganne the conquest of the Indies, as though the nation of the Spanyardes were euer appoynted to feyght ageynst infidels and enemies of the fayth of Iesu Chrysþ.

Barnarde knewe
not all thynges.The duke of
Medina Sidonia.
The duke of
Medina Celi.

314

The conquest
of Granada.What men knowe
not they count
fantasticall.
Colon his
interteynemente.The archbyshop
of Toledo.
Colon is brought
to the kynges
presenceThe iudgement
of ignorant folkes.Colon is
disengaged.
Colon his rewardeOne quente is. x
[ten] hundredth
thousande.

By this trauayle of Colonus in so noble an enterpryse and so harde succeſſe, dooth the fayninge of Plinie appere to be moft trew, wher in the prefage of his natural hiftry wryten to th[e]emp[er]or Vefpasian he writh in this maner. *Kes artua v[e]nigis nouitatem dare: Nouis, auſcitoritatem: absoluti, niuorem; obſcuris, lucem: ſyſtitudinis, gratiam: dubiti, fidem: omnibus vero naturam, et nature ſua omnia. Itaque etiam non affecutis, voluſe abunde pulchrum atque magnificum eſt.* That is to ſay: It is a diſſiculte thyng to gyue newenes to owld thynges, autorite to newe thynges: bewtie to thynges owt of vſe: fame to the obſcure: fauoure to the batefull: credite to the doubtful: nature to all, and all to nature. To ſuch neuertheleſſe as can not attayne to all theſe, it is greately commendable and magnificall to haue attempted the fame.

In the ſcu[t]chen of armes gyuen to Colon by Don Ferdinand and queene Elizabeth Catholike princes (ſo cauſed for theyr warres ageynt the infidels) theſe verſes were wryten.

*Por Caſtilla y por Leon,
Nueuo mundo hallo Colon.*

That is: For Caſtile and for Leon,
The newe worlde founde Colon.

¶ Of newe Spayne cauled Noua Hispania, or Mexico.

The citie of
Mexico or
Temixtitlan.

Golde and ſyluer.
Sylke.
Cotton.
Alame.
Woade.
Sugar.

Shelles for money.
Corne.
Beaſtes.
Haukyng and
huntyng.

Paintyngs.
Women
ſumptuously
appareled.
A warlike nation.

Captives ſacrificed
to Idoles.



Ewe Spayne is that parte of the continent or firme lande that lyeth West and South frome the lande of Floryda. This was subdued to th[e]emp[er]or of Caſtile by the ryght noble gentleman Ferdinand Cortefe the marquesse of the vale of Quaxaca. In this lande are many prouinces conteynynge in them in maner innumerable cities, amonge which is the chiefe which the Indians caule Mexico or Temixtitlan, conſyſting of more then five hundred thousand inhabitaunteſ. It standeth in the myddest of a lake of falte water as doth Venece in the ſea. The lake conteyneth fortie Persian myles cauled Parafange, every one conſyſtynge of. xxx. [thirty] furlon[g]s, and more as ſum ſay. In theſe regions is founde great plentie of golde, ſyluer, and precious ſtones, with innumerable other thynges both neceſſary for the lyfe of man and pleauant: as fylke, bombafine cotton, alame, Saſferne, Woade, with dyuers other thynges wherwith clothe and fylke is dyed. There is also ſuch abundaunce of ſuger, that certeyne Spanyſhe ſhippes are yearlye fraughted therewith and bryngē the fame into Siuile from whence it is caryed in maner to all partes of Chryſtendome. Th[e]inhabitantes of Mexico are ſubtle people, and vſe much craft in theyr bargening. They haue not the vſe of golde and ſyluer monye: but vſe in the ſteade therof the halfe ſhelles of almonds, whiche kynde of Barbarous monye they caule Cacao and Cacanguate. In maner al kyndes of corne are there very good [and] cheape: especially barley and wheate. They haue great plentie of hartes, wylde bores, Lyons, Leopardes, and Tygers, which beaſtes wander in maner in every place. The region is moſte commodious for haukyng and huntyng for the great abundaunce it hath of beaſtes and foulſ. But the people exercife all theyr cunnyng in makynge the images of theyr Idolatry, and in paintyng. Theyr woman are valiant: and ſumptuous in theyr apparell and other tymementes. For they ſo rychely frynge and byſet the fame with perles, precious ſtones, and golde, that nothyng can be more excellent. They haue a kynde of paper greatly diſſerfyng from otrs. In thiſ they exprefſe theyr mindes by certeyn figures. For they haue not otherwife th[e]ufe of letters. The nation is defyrous of warre: and dooth not longe keepe the condicions of peace vniuolated: But delyteth rather in ciuile and moſt cruell battayle amonſte them ſelues then to lyue in peace and quietneſſe. Such as in the warres faule by any meanes into the handes of theyrs enemies, eyther by ſubmission or otherwyfe, are partly ſacrificed to the Idoles, and the rydule gyuen to the ſouldiers to bee eaten, in lyke maner as wee rewarde dogges and hauken with parte of theyrs pray. They haue innumerable Idoles which every one maketh for his particular god after the phantacie of his own brayne, and gyueth thereto diuine honour. Albeit at thiſ day they doo by lytle and lytle leaue of theyr barbarous fiercenſſe: and with oure religion embraſe better maners. For they nowe profeſſe the faſth of Chryſt, and in hiſ name pray vnto God the father.

Vnderſtande here that as touchyng theſe regions cauled new Spayne, yow may reade at large in the booke here before entitiled of the landes and Ilandes lately founde. This booke foloweth immediately after the Decades, althoſh the printer haue alſo wryten the thyrde decade* ouer the head of that booke which intreateth principally of the regions nowe cauled newe Spayne. Of the conqueſt of thiſ Mexico, Franciſco Lopez hath written a large booke in the Spanyſhe toungue.

* See p. 187.—E. A.

be most trew,
et vetylis noui-
o naturam, et
fficulite thyngie
faouore to the
all thefe, it is

le princes (so

th frome the
oble gentel-
le are many
is the chiefe
ue hundredth
deth Venece
e confylyng
, syluer, and
nt: as fylke,
lke is dyed.
therwith and
Th[e]inhabiti-
vfe of golde
arous money
peciallly barly
chich beastes
or the great
e the images
ll and other
golde, that
In this they
the nation is
her in ciuile
n the warres
dly sacrificed
dogges and
rticular god
oo by lyttle
For they

efore entituled
e also wryten
yne. Of the



He prouince cauled Peru, was also named noua Castilia by them that fyfte founde it. This region is the west parte of America: and is situate in the longitude of. 290. degrees, proceedinge from the West to the East. And southwarde begynneth ffe degrees beyonde the Equinoctial line, and is extended very farre into the south. This is taken to bee the rycheſt lande in golde, syluer, perles, precious ſtones, and ſpices, that euer was founde yet to this day. For golde is there in ſuch plentie that they make pypots therof, and other veſſels applied to fythy vſes. But this is more to bee marueyled at, that in a citie cauled

Collao was founde a houſe all couered with maſſie plates of golde. In theyr warres alſo theyr harneſſe was of golde and syluer. Theyr weapons are bowes, arrowes, flynges, darteſ, and pikes. Th[e]inhabitantes are warlyke people and of great agilitie. They haue cities defended with lawes and armes. The region is exceedingy frutefull, and yeldeth corne twyſe in the yeare. It is ſo florifhyng with many fayre wooddes, mountaynes, ryuers, and other both pleauant and neceſſary commodities, that it feemeth in maner an earthly Paradyſe. It hath dyuers kyndes of beaſtes, and yet none hurtfull or of rauenynge kynde. There are ſheepe of ſuch heighe that they vſe them in the ſteade of horſes. Some write that they are as bygg as the younge foles of camels: and that theyr woolle is very ſoſte and fine. Alſo that the ewes bryng forth lambes twyſe a yeare. The people are wyty and of gentyl behauoure. Cunnynghe alſo in artes, faſthul of promes, and of maners not greatly to bee diſcommeſſed, ſauē that they are ignorant of Chryſt: who neuertheleſſe is nowe knownen vnto them in many places, as our hope is he ſhalbe dayly more and more if all princes wyll herein putte theyr helpynghe handes to the plowe of oure lorde, and fende labourers into his vyneyarde.

316
Peru is the
rycheſt lande
that is knownen.

A house couered
with gold.
Harnes of golde.
A frutefull region.

Great ſheepe.

The dewtie of
Chryſtian princes.

Paraua.
John Dias Solis.
The Ilande
Martinus Gratias.

The viage of
Sebastian Cabote
to the ryuer of
Plata.

Tharsia.
Ophir.
Cipango.
Cathay.

The ryuer of Plata.



C Of the great ryuer cauled Rio de la Plata (that is) the ryuer of syluer. His ryuer reacheth very farre in length and breth: and is cauled Vruai in the Indian toungue. Into this fauleth an other ryuer named Paraua. The fyfte that fayled into the ryuer of Plata, was Iohn Dias Solis, whom the ryght noble kyng of Spayne Ferdinandus made Admyral of theſe feas. In the ryuer lyeth an Ilande whiche Iohn Dias named Martinus Gratias bycaufe a pylot of his ſo cauled, was buried there. This Ilande is ſituate in the myddel of the ryuer: and is dyſtant from the mouth of the ſame aboue fortie leagues. As the fayde Admirall attempted to expugne the Iland, he was ſuddeynly opprefſed and flayne of the Indians that priuileie affayled hym. Wherwith neuertheleſſe theyr barbarous crueltie was not ſatifyed vnyll they had torne him in pieſes and deuoured hym. But many years after, Th[e]emperoures maiestie and kyng of Spayne Charles the fyfte, fente forth Sebaſtian Cabot (a man of great courage and ſkylfull in Cosmographie, and of no leſſe experience as concerninge the ſtarres and the ſea) with commandement to diſcouer and ſubdue the Ilandes of Tharsis, Ophir, Cipango, and Coi Cathay. Receuaynge therfore his commission and proceydinge forwarde on his vyage, he arryued by chaunce at this Ilande: The cauſe wherof was that the principall veſſell was loſt by ſhipwracke, and the men that fauored theyr lyues by fwymmyng were receaued into other ſhippes. Perceauyng therfore that by reaſon of this chaunce he could by no meaneſ performe his vyage attempted, he intended to expugne the fayde Ilande, and therupon to conueygh his vyttayles to land, to prepare his foldiers to th[e]inuation, to plant colonyes, and to erect forteſſes by the ryuers fyde wherby the Spanyarde myght bee defended from the violence of the barbarians. But before he attempted this, he was aduertified that the Ilande was riche in golde and syluer. Which thynge dyd ſo encorage him, that without effecte of perel he thought best to expugne it by one meaneſ or other, wherein his bouldenes tooke good effecte as often tymes chaunceth in great affayres. Furthermore as touchyng the ryuer, Sebaſtian Cabote made relation that he neuer ſawe any comparable vnto this in breth and depth. For whereas it faulthe into the ſea, it conteyneth xxv. [twenty-five] leagues in breadth. From the mouth of the ryuer, Cabot fayled vp the ſame into the lande for the ſpace of three hundredth and fiftie leagues as he wryteth in his owne carde. That it is of great depth, may hereby bee conyfidered that manye greate ryuers faule into it: ſo that the chanell can not bee ſhalowe that conteyneth ſuch abundance of water, and ſuche plentie of good and great fyſhes. For there is in maner no fyſhe in the ſea, that is not founde in this ryuer. As foone as the Spanyards were ſet alande, they made a proofe if the fyde were frutfull to beare corne. Takyng therefore fiftie graynes of wheate and commytyng the ſame to the earth in the moneth of September, they gathered therof

317

Marelous
frutulines.
Mountaynes
conteynyng golde
and syluer.

Great sheep.

Theyr colour.
Men with
deformed legs.

Malacha.
Tachola.
The Ilandes of
Malucha.

The Iland of
Samotra.

Spyces.
Calicut.
Celand.
Cathey.
China.
Precious stones.
Sylke.

Cautan.

The way to the
Ilandes of Maluca
by the north sea.

The Spanyardes.

Gasper
Cortefreales.

Insuile
Cortefreales.

Snowe and Ise.

Furres.

two thousande and fiftie at December nexte folowyng: wherin sume beinge deceaved and mistakyng the thyng, haue wrytten in the steade of two thousande and fiftie, fiftie thousande and two. The like fertilitie is there of all other grayne and pulse. Furthermore th[e]inhabitauntes declared that not farre from that place, ther are great and hygh mountaynes in the which is founde great plentie of golde. And no great distance from the same, to bee other mountaynes no lesse frutfull of syluer, and many other thynges longe to rehearse. Th[e]inhabitauntes are paynfull men, and tyll the grounde diligently, wherin they take great pleasure: and haue therfore great plentie of breading of Maizium. There are sheepe of suche byggenesse that they compare them to younge camels or asses as sum fay. Theyr woolle is very fine: and nearest vnto the synenesse of sylke. There are also beastes of dyuers kyndes. Amonge men there is this dyffERENCE, that such as lyue in the mountaynes, are whyte, and for the most parte lyke vnto the men of owe regions. But they that dwell about the ryuer (as though they tooke their colour therof) are blackysfhe or purple of the colore of fine Iren or steele. This also chaunceth to many of them, that theyr fiete and legges are lyke the legs and fiete of the foule cauled the oystreche.

¶ Of the hygher East India cauled India Tercera or Terciera.



In this India whiche the Portugales caule Tercera, are very great kyngedomes: as the kyngdomes of Bengala, Pegu, Berma, Erancangui, Dauian, Capelam, and the greate kyngdome of Malacha, cauled of the owlde wryters Aurea Cherfonfus: whose chiefe citie is also cauled Malacha, and was in owlde tyme named Tachola. Vnder this kyngedome are infinite Ilandes cauled Maluche, whereof the principall are thefe: Iaua the greater, Iaua the leffe, Polagua, Mendana, Cubu, Cailon, Huban, Bur, Tenado, Anbon, and Gilolo, with infinite other. On the Southwest parte from Malacha, is the greate Ilande of Samotra cauled in owlde tyme Taprobania, in the which are the kyngedomes of Pedir, Biraen, Pazer, Ardagni, and Ham. This Iland and al the other cauled Maluche, bryng furth great quantitie of cloues, cinamome, nutmegges, maces, and all other kyndes of spycses excepte pepper, which groweth in the prouince of Calecut and the Ilande of Ceilam. All these sortes of spicies are carayed to Malacha to bee soulde. But the greatest parte of them is carayed to Cathay and China: and from thense to the north partes of Tartarie. This kyngdome of China, is very great: and was in owlde tyme cauled Sina. Here is founde great plentie of precious stones. The people are very subtile and ryche. They are all appareled eyther in sylke or cloth, or vestures of other woorkemanschipe: and are of good ciuilite. They do not gladly permitte the Portugales or other straungers to trafike in theyr kyngedome: whose mooste famous place vpon the sea syde, is named Cautan, and the sea Machiam, cauled of the owlde wryters the sea of Sina.

¶ Of the landes of Laborador and Baccalaos, lyinge west and northwest from Englannde, and beinge parte of the firme lande of the West Indies.



Any haue trauayled to search the coast of the lande of Laborador, awell to th[e]intente to knowe howe farre or whether it reacheth, as also whether there bee any paassage by sea through the same into the sea of Sur and the Ilandes of Maluca which are vnder the Equinoctiall line: thinkynge that the waye thryther shulde greatly bee shortened by this vyage. The Spanyardes as to whose ryght the sayde Ilandes of spicies perteyne, dyd fyrt feike to fynde the same by this way. The Portugales also hauyng the trade of spicies in theyr handes, dyd trauayle to fynde the same: although hetherto neyther anye such paassage is founde or the ende of that lande. In the yeare a thousande and fiftie hundredre, Gasper Cortefreales, made a vyage thryther with two caruelles: but founde not the streight or paassage he fought. At his beinge there, he named the Ilandes that lie in the mouth of the goulfe Quadrado, after his name Cortefreales, lyinge in the I. [fiftie] degrees and more: and brought from that lande abowt three score men for slaves. He greatly maruayled to beholde the houge quantitie of snowe and Ise. For the sea is there frozen exedyngly. Th[e]inhabitauntes are men of good corporature, although tawny lyke the Indies, and laborious. They paynte theyr bodyes, and weare brafelettes and hoopis of syluer and copper. Theyr apparel is made of the skynnes of marternes and

istakynge the
ike fertilitie is
om that place,
great distalnce
e to rehearse.
leasure: and
they compare
neffie of sylke.
as lyue in the
t dwell about
f fine Iren or
d fiete of the

as the kyng-
te kyngdomme
is also cauled
infinite Ilandes
ffe, Polugua,
e other. On
owld tyme
Iland and al
and all other
Ceilam. All
ed to Cathay
eat: and was
y subtile and
: and are of
kyngedomme:
of the owld

thwest

elintente to
assage by sea
e vnder the
ned by this
ne, dyd syrl
of spices in
such assage
reales, made
ge there, he
ge in the. L
y maruyled
habitauntes
bodyes, and
rternes and

dyuers other beastes, whiche they weare with the heare inwardre in wynter, and owtwardre in soommer. This apparell they gyrdre to theyr bodyes with gyrdels made of cotton or the synewes of syfhes and beastes. They eate syfhe more then any other thyng, and especially falmons, althoughe they haue foules and frute. They make theyr houfes of timber wherof they haue great plentie: and in the feade of tyles, couer them with the skynnes of syfhes and beastes. It is sayde also that there are gries in this lande: and that the beares and many other beastes and foules are white. To this and the Ilandes abowt the same, the Britons are accustomed to resorte: as men of nature agreeable vnto them and borne vnder the same altitude and temperature. The Norwayer also sayled thyther with the pylot cauled John Scolou: And the Englysshe men with Sebastian Cabot.

The coaste of the lande of Baccalaos, is a greate trakte: and the greatest altitude therof, is. xlviii. [forty-eight] degrees and a halfe. Sebastian Cabot was the syrl that brought any knowleage of this lande. For beinge in Englannde in the dayes of kyng Henry the seuenth, he furnyssheda two shippes at his owne charges (or (as sum say) at the kynges, whome he perfuaded that a paissage might bee founde to Cathay by the north feas, and that spices myght bee brought from thense soner by that way, then by the vyage of Portugales vse by the sea of Sur. He went also to knowe what maner of landes thoſe Indies were to inhabite. He had with hym three hundredth men, and directed his course by the trakte of Ilande vpon the cape of Laborador at. lviii. [fifty-eight] degrees: affirmyng that in the monethe of Iuly there was such could and heapes of Iſe that he durſt pasſe no further: also that the dayes were very longe and in maner withoutt nyght, and the nyghtes very cleare. Certeyne it is, that at the. lx. [sixty] degrees, the longest day is of xviii. [eighteen] hours. But confyderynge the coulde and the straungenes of the vnknownen lande, he turned his course from thense to the West, folowinge the coast of the lande of Baccalaos vnto the. xxxviii. [thirty-eight] degrees, from whence he returned to Englannde. To conclude, the Brytons and Danes haue sayled to the Baccalaos: and Iaques Cartier a frenche man was there twyſe with three galeons: as one in the yeare. xxxiiii. [thirty-four] and the other in the. xxxv. [thirty-five] and chose the lande to inhabite frome the. xlvi. [forty-fifth] degrees to the. li. [fifty-first] beinge as good a lande as Fraunce, and al thynges therein commune to ſuch as syrl poſſeſſe the fame.

Of theſe landes, Iacobus Gaſtaldus wryteth thus: The newe lande of Baccalaos, is a coulde region, whose inhabitauntes are Idolatours and praye to the ſoonne and moone and dyuers Idoles. They are whyte people and very rufical. For they eate fleſſhe and fyſhe and all other thynges rawe. Sumtymes alſo they eate mans fleſſhe priuilye ſo that they Caciqui haue no knowleage therof. The apparell of both the men and woman, is made of beares ſkynnes, althoughe they haue ſables and marternes, not greatly eſtemed bycaufe they are lyttle. Sum of them go naked in foommer, and weare apparell only in wynter. The Brytons and Frenche men are accustomed to take fyſhe in the coaſte of theſe landes where is founded great plentie of Tunnyes which theſe jnhabitauntes caul Baccalaos wherof the lande was ſo named. Northwarde from the region of Baccalaos, is the lande of Laborador, all full of mountaynes and great wooddes in whiche are manye beares and wylde bores. Th[er]e jnhabitauntes are Idolatours and warlike people, appareled as are they of Baccalaos. In all this newe lande, is neyther citie or caſtell: but they lyue in companies lyke heardeſ of beaſtes.

¶ The diſcouerynge of the lande of Floryda.



He gouernour of the Ilande of Boriquena Iohn Ponce of Leon beinge diſcharged of his office and very ryche, furnyſſhed and ſente forth two caruels to ſeeke the Ilandes of Boyuca in the which the Indians affirmed to be a fontayne or ſpringe whiche water is of vertue to make owld men younge. Whyle he trauyled fyxe monethes with owtragious defyre amonſte many Ilandes to fynde that he fought, and coulde fynde no token of any ſuch fountaine, he entered into Bimini and diſcouered the lande of Florida in the yeare. 1512. on Eaſter day which the Spaniardes caule the floryſhyng day of Pascha, wherby they named that lande Florida. And ſuppoſyng that great ryches myght be brought from theneſe, he returned into Spayne and conuenanted with kyng Ferdinand as touchyng the trade: and by the interceſſion of Nicolas de Quondo and Peter Nunez de Guſman, the kyng dyd not only make hym gouernour of Bemini and Florida, but alſo ſente furthe with hym three ſhippes from Siuile toward his ſecond vyage in the yeare. 1515. He touched in the Ilande of Guacana otherwyfe cauled Guadalupe, and ſent to lande certeyne of his men with the landrefſes of the ſhippes: whom the Canibales lyinge in ambuſſhe, affayled with theyr inuenemed arrowes: and ſlaying the moft parte, carayed away the women. With thiſ euyll begynnynge, Iohn Ponce departed frome henfe to Boriquena and from theneſe to Florida wher he went alande with his ſouldyers to eſpiae a place moſte commodious to inhabit and plant a colonie. But the Indians commynge furth ageynſt hym to defende the entrance,

Fyſhe.

Gryfe.
Beares.
The britons.

Sebastian Cabot.

The land of
Baccalaos.
The vyage of
Cabot in the dayes
of kyng Henry
the seventh.

Iſe in Iuly.

Baccalaos.
Brytons.
Danes.
Iaques Cartier.

The people of
Baccalaos

Fyſhyng for
tunnyes.
Laborador.

John Ponce.
Water of great
vertue, of this
reade in the
Decades.
319

Bimini.

Guacana.
The Canibales.

Boriquena.

The death of John Ponce.

The land of Floryda.

Ferdinando de Soto.

*The valiant myndes of the Spaniardes.
The thyrd attempte of the conqueste of Florida.*

Certeine fryers attempte the conquest only with woordes, but with euyll successe.

The fryers are slayne and eaten.

A new kynde of disgrading

assayled the Spanyardes fiercely and flewe and wounded many of them. At which conflicte alfo he hym selfe beinge wounded with an arrowe, dyed shortely after in the Ilande of Cuba: and fo endyng his lyfe, consumed a great parte of the rychesse he had before begotten at saynt Iohannes of Boriquen. This Iohn Ponce had before sayled with Chrystopher Colon to the Ilande of Hispaniola in the yere. 1493. He was a gentel fouldier in the warres of this Ilande, and capitayne of the prouince of Higuel for Nycolas de Ouando that conquered the same. The region of Floryda is a poynt or cape of lande reachyng into the sea lyke vnto a tongue: beinge a famous and notorious place amoung the Indians by reason of many Spanyardes that haue bin flayne there. But wheras by fame this Floryda was esteemed a ryche lande, many valient and noble men defyred the conquest therof, amoung whom Ferdinando de Soto (who had before byn a capitayne in Peru and greatly inryched by the [im]prisonment of kyng Atahaliba) attempted a vyage thryther with a good bande of men, and spente syue yeaire in seekyng of golde mynes, supposyng that this lande hadde byn lyke vnto Peru.

In fine, he dyed there and was the destruction and vndoinge of all that went with hym without inhabitynge that lande, in the which the conquestours had hytthero never good succeſſe, forasmuche as these Indians are valiant archers and stronge and hardy men. But the valiant myndes of the Spanyardes not discouraged by theſe myfadturures, after the death of Ferdinando Soto, many worthygentlemen defyred this conquest in the yere. 1544. amoung whom was Iulyan Samano, and Peter de Ahumada beinge brotherne and men of ſufficient abilitie for ſuch an enterprife. But neyther th[e]empour beinge then in Germanie, neyther the prince Don Phylippe his ſonne who gouerned all the kyngedomes of Castile and Aragonie, neyther yet the counſayle of the Indies woldie in any caſe agree to the conqueſte. Neuertheleſſe not vterly contemnyng the matter which they were partly perſuaded myght otherwyſe bee broughte to paſſe, they ſent thryther fryer Luys Cancell of Baluaſtro with other fryers of the order of ſaint Dominike who offered them ſelues to conuerte the nations of that lande from theiρ gentilitie to the faſth of Chryſt and obedience to Th[e]empoure, onely with woordes. The fryer therfore goinge forwarde on his vyage at the kynges charges in the yere. 1549. went aland with fourre other fryers which he tooke with hym and certeyne martyners without harnesse or weapons: vnto whom as he began his preachinge, many of the Indians of the ſayd Florida reſorted to the ſea fyde, where without gyuyng audience to his woordes, they carued hym away with three other of his companyons and dyd eate them, whereby they ſuffered martyrdome for the faſth of Chryſt. The refydue that eſcapēd, made haſt to the ſhippe and kept them ſelues for confeſſours as ſum fay. Many that fauoure th[e]intente of the fryers, doo nowe conſider by that meaneſ the Indians coulde not be brought to oure frenchedhippe and religion. Neuertheleſſe, that if it coulde ſo haue byn broughte to paſſe, it had byn better. There came of late from that ſhippe, one that had byn the page of Ferdinando de Soto, who declared that the Indians hanged vp the ſkynnes with the headeſ and crowneſ of the ſayd fryers in one of theiρ temples.

¶ *An opinion that Europa, Africa, and Asia, are Ilandes: and of certeyne nauigations abowt the ſame.*



Noe gaue names to Africa, Asia, and Europa.

Asia.
Europe.

The hole earthe
is an Ilande.

The Caspian ſea,
Caliz is a ry[er].
Nauigations from
the red ſea to
East India.

He anciente wryters diuidid this oure worlde into Asia, Africa, and Europa, by the ryuer Tanais as Isocrates declareth in his Panegyrico. Afterwarde they diuidid Asia and Africa by the turnynges and course of the ryuer Nilus, thowgh he fame had byn better by the ſea Bermeio (that is) the redde ſea, which almoſte trauerfeth and paſſeth through the lande from the Ocean to the ſea Mediterraneum which diuideth Europa and Asia. But Berofus the Caldean, ſayth that Noe gaue names to Africa, Asia, and Europa: and gaue them to his ſonnes, Cham, Sem, and Iafet: alſo that he ſayled by the ſea Mediterraneum ten yeres. In

fine we nowe conclude that the three ſayde prouinces occupy this mydlande of the worlde. All in general fay that Afia is greater then any of the other, and in maner as bigge as they both. Albeit Herodotus in his Melpomeme, ſcorneth them that make Europe and Afia equall: affirmyng that Europe in longitude is equal to Afia and Afrike: and that it paſſeth them in latitude, wherin he ſpeaketh not greatly owt of ſquare. But to ſpeake more of this elſwhere, not perteynyng to the matter wee haue in hande, I fay that Homerus one o' the moſt ancient wryters, ſayth that the world which is diuidid into Asia, Africa, and Europa, is an Ilande as reherfeth Pomponius Mela in his thyrde booke. Strabo in the fyſt booke of his Geographie, ſayth that the earth which is inhabited, is an Ilande enuironed with the Ocean. Higinius alſo, and Solinus, confirme this ſentencē, Althowgh Solinus doo erre in miſtakeinge the names of the feas, supposyng that the Caspian ſea was partē of the Ocean, beinge rather lyke vnto the ſea Mediterraneum ſo named bycaufe it is in the mydlande as is the Caspian ſea without participacion of the great Ocean. Strabo wryteth that in the tyme of Tolomeus Euergetes, one Eudoxus ſayled three or fourre tymes from Caliz to India: And that the guides of the redde

sea (cauled the goulfe of Arabie or Bermeio) prefenteth to the fame kynge Tolomeus, an Indian whome he brought frome thense. Kynge Iuba also prooued this nauigation from Caliz to India as wryteth Solinus. Whereby it appeareth that the nauigation to India by the Ocean was then wel knownen and frequented, althowgh not so much as at this present, the fame beinge neyther then or nowe a thyng of great difficultie or trauayle by the coastes of hott regions. But to fayle from India to Caliz by the other parte of the north by a clyme and regions of extreme coulde, shulde bee doublefie a difficult and daungerous thyng, wherof is no memory amounghe the owlde autours fauyng only of one shyppe as Plinius and Mela doo wryte, rehersyng the testimony of Cornelius Neps who affirmed that the kyng of Suevia presented to Quintus Metellus Celer Lieutenaut of Fraunce, certeyne Indians dryuen by tempest into the sea of Germanie: if the same were not of the lande of Laborador or Bacallaos, and they deceaved in theyr colour. For sum say that lykewyfe in the dayes of the Emperoure Fredericus Barbarossa, certeyne Indians were brougthe in a Canoa from the citie of Lubec in Germanie. Furthermore pope Eneas Sylvius wryteth that the Sarmatian sea, is as certeyne as the Scythian, Germanian, or Indian sea. Nowe also there is great knowlage and experience how the nauigations and pafage may be attempted by Norwaje and other north regions vnder the same north, and to folow that coaste to the south sea of Sur and keepe that course by the tracte of China. Olanus Gothus the archbysshop of Upfalia and borne in Gothlande, hath wrytten muche of these north regions and nauigations by the north sea. In the tract of this vyage by the north sea, are the Ilandes of Islands and Gruntlande, althowgh there is doubt whether Gruntlande be an Ilande or parte of the firme lande. It is xl. [forty] leagues, from Lapponia, and sumwhat more frome Finnarchia a lande of Scandinavia in Europe. The people of Gruntlande are stonge men and of coomly stature. They fayle with smal shippes or barkes couered close aboue with lether or beastes hydes for feare of the coulde and fyshes. Gruntlande as sum say, is syftie leagues from the north parte of the firme lande of the West Indies by the lande of Laborador. But it is not yet knownen whether this land be continent or adherent with Gruntlande, or if there bee any streyght of sea betwene them. If all bee one firme lande adiomyng by any parte, then the two great partes of the world feeme to ioyne togidher abowt the north pole or vnder it, or beneath it, forasmuch as it is not past fortie or fiftie leagues from Finnmarche to Gruntlande: wherby it may appere that althowgh there be any such straight diuidyng them, yet are they neyghbours and not farre in funder. Furthermore from the lande of Laborador by th[e]accomp of the pilottes, is abowte four hundredth leagues to Faial, one of the Ilandes of Azores, otherwyfe cauled the Ilandes of Soria lyng in the Welt Ocean ouer ageynst Spayne. Also by their accompte the lande of Laborador is abowte fife hundredth leagues from Irland, and fise hundredth from Spayne.

The vyage to
India by the north
sea.

The hystorye of
Cornelius Neps.

Note this.
Indians in Lubec
The Sarmatian
sea.

Ilande.
Gruntlande.
Lapponia.
Finnarchia.
Gruntlande.

The distance
from Gruntlande
to the lande of
Laborador.

321
(Narrowness)
of the straights if
it be.

The Ilandes of
Soria, or Azores.
From laborador
to Irland.

*That the Spaniardes haue sayled to the Antipodes (that is) suche as go
fiete to fiete ageynst vs, and inhabite the inferiour hemispherie
or halfe globe of the earthe, contrarie to th[e]oppinion
of the owlde writers.*



By the ryuer
a and Africa
etter by the
gh the lande
But Berofus
them to his
yeres. In
in generall
otus in his
is equal to
e. But to
one o' the
Ilande as
h that the
nirme this
an sea was
ylande as
Tolomeus
the redde

L the ancient philosophers of the gentiles do deny that there may be any passage from owre hemisphere or halfe compasse of the earth to the Antipodes by reasoun of the burnt line (cauled *Zona Torrida*) and the Ocean sea lyng in the mydde way, wherby this vyage shulde be hindered and impossible, as Macrobius wryteth at large in his commentaries vpon the dreame of Scipio. Of the Chryfyan philofophers, Clemente wryteth that it is not possible for any man to passe the Ocean: and other wryters of later tyme, feeme to confirme the same. In deede I verely beleue that this way was never knownen to them, awell for that euer prefuppofyng the thyng to bee impossible they never attempted it, as also that the Indians (whom we caule Antipodes) haue no shippes sufficient for so longe and difficulte a nauigation to brynge them knowledge herof, as haue the Spaniardes to passe the Ocean vnto them: In so much that at this present this vyage is by dayly experiance so well knownen vnto the Spaniardes and Portugales, that they can in maner go thryther blyndefilde, contrarie to th[e]oppinion of thosse philofophers. I wyll here omyte to speake of many shippes that haue sayled ordynarly frome Spayne to India, and speake onely of the shyppe Victoria which compasid about the hole globe of the worlde and touched in the landes of two or three Antipodes, and in fine returned to Spayne by a contrary way, wherby is declared the ignorance of the sage antiquite. In this nauigation, they founde many fecreates, amounghe the which this is strange and woorthy memorie, that al such deade Christians as were cast into the sea, lay on theyr backes and turned theyr faces vpwarde: but the gentyles lay all groouelyn

Macrobius.
Clement.

The Indians are
Antipodes.

The shyppe
Victoria.
A straunge tylage.

Shadowes
towards the south.

The sonne rynginge
on the ryght hande.

The vyage of
Magellanus.

Antipodes.
Guinea.
The north starre.
The needle and
compass.

322

Septentriones, are
the viii. starres,
that are sene by
Charles wayne or
the great beare.
Argo of Iason.

Vlysses.
John Sebastian.

The chieft parts
of the shyppe.

Magnes.
The Spanyardes
and Portugales.
Why the needle
turneth to the
north.

The Iland of
Tercera.

The Iland of
Magnete.

on theyr bellyes. They also perceaued the foonne and moone to keepe a contrary course from that they doo here, and euer to cast the shadowes of all thynges towarde the south: whiche thyng also was knownen to sum of the owlde wryters. For this is manifeste that the sonne ryseth on the ryght hande to them that lyue in the thyrtie degrees on th[e] other syde the Equinoctiall: so that lookyng towarde the sonne, they turne theyr faces to the north: wherby it appeareth to bee trew that they affirme. They confumed three yeares lackynge. xiii. [fourteen] dayes in goyng and commynge, and loste a daye in theyr accompte, whereby they dyd eat fleshe on frydayes, and celebrated the feaste of Easter on Mundayes: so that they ouerleaped a day (not saylyng in the calender) and kept no iust reckynge of the bisextile. The caufe wherof whylome haue searched by phyllopholie, they haue erred more then the maryners. They sayled. x. [ten] thoufande leagues and. xiii. [fourteen] myles by theyr accompte, albeit they shulde haue gonne leffe, if theyr way hadde lie right forth. But as they were enforced partly of necessitie, and partly to fynde that they sowght, they made many wyndynges and turnynges. They traufered the Equinoctiall line fyxe tymes without burnyng, contrary to th[e] oppinion of the owlde autours. They remayned syue monethes in the Iland of Tidore, whose inhabitauntes are Antipodes to them of Guinea, wherby it is apperante that wee maye communicate with them. And althowgh they lost the syght of the northe starre, yet dyd they euer direcute their course therby. For beinge in the. xl. [forty] degrees of the south, they sawe the needle of the compasse stande as directly towarde the north as it dooth in the sea Mediterraneum: althowgh sum say that it loofeth his force sumwhat. Abowt the poynct of the Southe or pole Antartike, they sawe a litle whyte cloude and fourre starres lyke vnto a crossis with three other ioynyng therunto, which refelme owre Septentriion, and are iudged to bee the signes or tokens of the south exelte of heauen. Great was the nauigation of the fleete of Salomon, but greater was this of Th[e] emprours maiestie Don Charles kyng of Spayne. The Argos of Iafon whiche the antiquite placed amone the starres, sayled but a litle way and a shorte vyage in comparason of the shippe Victoria whiche owght woorthely to bee kepte in the Arsenall of Siuile in perpetuall memory of so famous an enterpryse. The daungious, paynes, trauayles and laboures of Vlysses were nothyng in respecte of suche as Iohn Sebastian fusteyned: whereby in the scu[t]chion of his armes in the stede of a monstrous or iuincible beast, he woorthely gaue the woordle with this circumfcription: PRIMVS CIRCVMD DEDISTI ME. (that is) Thou art the fyrt that hath compassed me abowt.

As touchyng the needle of the compasse, I haue redde in the Portugales nauigations that saylyng as farre south as Cap. de Bona Speranza, the poynct of the needle styll reflexed the northe as it dyd on this syde the Equinoctiall, sayng that it sumwhat trembled and declyned a litle, wherby the force seemed sumwhat to be diminished, so that they were sayne to helpe it with the lode stone.

C Who fyrt founde the needle of the compasse, and the vse therof.



Peakyng much of nauigations, it myght feme a thyng vndecent to omyt to say sumwhat of the needle of the compasse: without the which as all nauigations are but blynde and wanderynge conjectures, even so shulde the Indies never haue bynne founde but by helpe of the same, forasmuche as the shippes shulde haue byn lost in the Ocean, were it not that theyr courses were directed by the needle and compasse, which owght therfore to be compted the chiefe partes of the shyppe and principlall instrumentes of saylyng. The fyrt that founde the needle and the vse therof (as Blondus and Mapheus Girardus doo wryte) was one Flauius of Malpha a citie in the kyngdome of Naples, of whome the Neopolitanis glory to this day: and that by good reason, forasmuch as a citisen and neyghboures chylde of theyrs, was the fyrt synder of so commodious and profitabile a thyng, to the fecrete wherof so many excellente wyttes as were before hym couldе not attayne, althowgh they hadde both iren and the lode stone (cauled *Magnes*) whiche are the materials of the needle. Next vnto Flauius, the chiefe commendation is dew to the Spanyardes and Portugales by whose daylye experiance, the fame is brought to further perfection, and the vse therof better knownen: althowgh hythero no man knoweth the caufe why the iren touched with the lode stone, turneth euer towarde the north starre, as playnely appeareth in every common dyall. In maner all wryters attribute this to a fecrete and hyd properte, sum of the north, and other of the mixture or naturall temperature of elementes that is betwene iren and the sayde stone. If it bee the properte of the north or north starre, then (as the pylots make theyr reckynge) neyther shulde the needle make anye chaunge or dyfer in northesleng, (as in saylyng northeaste without the Ilande of Tercera beinge one of the Ilandes of Azores or Soria and two hundred leagues from Spayne towarde the West East-west) neyther yet shulde it lose his office (as sayth Olanus) in passyng from the Ilande of Magnete, that is, the Iland of the lode stone, which is vnder or neare abowte the northe pole. But howe so euer it bee, or what so ever bee the cause, trewhit it is that the needle turneth euer to the north although wee sayle abowt the south.

that they doo knownen to sum that lyue in theerne theyr faces lackynge. xiiiij. Iyd eate fleshe not faylyngne in the searched by cues and. xiiiij. he ryght forth. They made manye, contrary to whose inhabitanç them. And . For beinge arde the north owt the poynfe of three tokens of the is Th[e]Jem- d amone the ght woorthele daungours, fusteyned: shely gau the fyrst that

south as Cap. de that it sumwhat helpe it with the

erof.

mewhat of the d wanderyng e of the fame, theyr courses the chiefe the needle us of Malpha od reaon, for- profitabla althowgh they . Next vnto perience, the man knoweth ely appeareth of the north, stone. If it r shulde the e of Tercera e West Eastr, that is, or what fo wt the south.

We owght therefore to vnderstante that the lode stome (whiche wee falsely caule the adamant) hath heade, fiete, and also armes as sum say. The iren that is rubbed with the heade, neuer ceafeth to turne dycrately towarde the north, as is to see in the dyals that are made to the sonne. The rubbyng of the fiete serueth for the south: as doo lykewyfe the other partes, for other quarters and poyntes of heauen.

Note here that of a piece of this stome, of the byggenesse of an egge or a walnutte, or more or leſſe, bee broken into manye tmaule pieces as bygge as dyce or leſſe, yet every of those smaule pieſes, hath heade, foote, and armes, as is sayde here before.

Note the quarters of the lode stone.



Tmay to sume seeme a vainc thyng to feke the situacion and byggenes of the earth, although it bee easy to knowe, forasmuche as it is situate in the myddleſte of the worlde as the center of the fame, beinge enironed and as it were borne vp of the ſea which compaſſeth it abowt. Mela ſayth that the pylers that ſuſtayne it, are Eaſte, Weſt, North, and South: which ſayinge Dauid confirmeth in the C. vi. [106th] paſſage. Theſe fourre are the moſt notable pylers or ſuſtentacions that the earth hath in heauen, accordanç to the motions wheroſe, all vyages are ruled on the earthe, frome whence they haue theyr original, as engendered of the dyuers qualitieſ of vapoures and exhalations rayfed by the ſonne and otherwyſe. Eriothenes put none other ſuſtentacions then the north and ſouth poles, and parteth the earth by the courſe of the ſonne: which particion Marcus Varro dooth greatly commende as agreeable to reaſon. The poles are firme and immouable as an exelte abowt the which the heauen moueth and is therby ſuſtayneſ. They furthermore declare vnto vs vnder what parte of heauen wee bee, howe farre, and which way wee go, with alſo the largenes of heauen and commenſuration of the earth. As for exemplē: the ſtreight of Gibraltar, (acomptynge from Spayne) is from the north, or to ſpeake more playnely from the poynfe of the earthe that is or may be direclty vnder the north pole, abowt. liii. [fifty-four] degrees which make. ix. hundredre and. lxxx. [88] leaqueſ according to the common computacion of the Coſmographers and Astronomers: And is from the Equinoctiall line. xxxvi. [thirty-six] degrees: which added to the other. liii. [fifty-four] make. [ix]xxx. [ninety] degrees, beinge the hole diſtance from the north poynfe to the Equinoctiall line diuylyng the earthe by the myddleſte, and the quarter or fourthe parte of the hole circumference of the earth: the whiche how great it is in compaſſe and how many leaqueſ or myles it conteyneth, is eaſy to perceave accomptynge every degree. lx. [sixty] myles. But that yowe may the better perceave what degrees are, I haue thought good to ſpeake ſumwhat more hereof.

323

The ſea.
The wyndes

The polos.

The meaſuryngē
the circumference
of the earth

¶ What degrees are.



N the owide tyme theyr maner was to meaſure the earth and the woorld by furlonges, pafes, and fiete, as is to reade in Plinie, Strabo, and other wryters. But after that Ptolomie founde degrees a hundredre and fiftie yeareſ after the death of Chryſt, that maner of accompte was receaued as the beſt. Ptolomie diuided all the hole body and face of the land and ſea into three hundredre and fiftie degrees of length or longitude: and other as many degrees of bredth or latitude: ſo that the hole globe of the baule beinge rounde, conteyneth as much in latitude as longitude. He assigned lykewyfe to every degree three ſcore myles, whiche make. xvii. [ſeventeen] Spanysſe leaqueſ and a halfe: In ſuch forte that the globe or baule of the earth meaſured direclty by any of the fourre partes of the fame, conteyneth in circuite fyxe thouſand and two hundredre leaqueſ. This computacion and meaſuryngē, is ſo certeyne, that as it is approued of all men and founde trewe by experiance, ſo much the more is it to bee commended and had in admiration for that th[e]inuentiōn hereof was iudged ſo diſſicult by Job and the preacher, that no man had founde the meaſure of limites of the fame. They name thoſe degrees of longitude, that they accompte from ſonne to ſonne by the Equinoctiall line which reacheth from the Eaſt to the Weſt by the myddle of the globe or baule of the earth. These can not well be obſerued, forammuch as in this tract of heauen, there is no fyxt or permanent ſigne whereunto the pylots maye direcute theyr eyes or iſtrumentes. For the ſonne, althowgh it be a moſte cleare ſigne, yet dooth it dayely chaunge the place of ryſyng and faulyng, and keepethe not the fame courſe the day folowinge as the Astronomers affirme. And althowgh there is no number of them that in trauylyng ſtrange landes and feas haue ſpent theyr gooddes and almoſte theyr wyttes to fynde the degrees of longitude without errore as are found the degrees of latitude and heyght, yet is there none that hythero hath any trewe knowleage therof. The degrees of latitude or altitude, are they that are accompted from the north poynfe to the ſouth, the commenſuration or meaſuring

Ptolomie founde
degrees.

Longitude and
Latitude.

A degree.

Degrees of
Longitude.
The degrees of
Longitude are not
knownen.

The degrees of
latitude.

324

The north starre.

The circuite of
the earth.The inferior
hemispherie.Hyperbore,
Hypernoci.The eye is
deceaued.

A ryng.

A circle.

wherby, is most certeine by reason that the north starre is permane[n]t and remayneth styll in one place, or at least mouth abowt the pole which is theyr firme and stedfast signe wherby they accompte theyr degrees and direcute theyr vyages. By the degrees therfore accompted by these most certeine signes, is vnfaylably measured the hole circumference of the lande and sea, diuydye the same into four equall partes in this maner. From the north poynte to the Equinoctiall, are. lxxx. [ninety] degrees: and from the Equinoctiall to the south poynt, other. lxxx. [ninety.] Ageyne on the contrary side, from the south poynt to the Equinoctiall, are other. lxxx. [ninety] degrees: and from the Equinoctiall ageyne to the north poynte, are as many. This may we conjecture by good reason awfull of th[e]inferioure hemispherie wherof a great parte is knowne vnto vs by the nauigations of such as haue passed the streyghtes of Magellanu[m] and the cape of Bona Speranza, althowgh we haue noo such cleare and manifift relation as we ought to haue of the lande vnder the southe pole beinge the other exeltrie of the worlde whose syght we lacke. For (as Herodotus sayth) yf there bee any lande of the Hyperboreans (that is suche as are vnder the north) ther is also of the hypernotios, that is such as are vnder the south: which perhapses are they that lyue in the lande of the streyghtes of Magellanu[m] as nere vnto the other pole. But what thefe landes are, or of what greatness we can haue no certeyne knowleage vntyl sum man shal haue compassed abowt the lands vnder the south pole as did Iohn Sebastian the circumference of the Equinoctiall line.

These last annotacions of the Indies, haue I tranlated owt of the booke[s] of Franciscus Lopes, wrytten in the Spanysshe toungue to Th[e]emperours maiestie: and partly also owt of the carde made by Sebastian Cabot.

C A demonstration of the roundenesse of the Earth.



Any ignorant men thynke that the earthe is not rounde onely by iudgemente of the eye which is deceaued in manye thynges not only of the woorkes of nature, but also of suche as are doonne by the slight and arte of man. For they say: Howe can it bee rounde forasmuche as thowgh a man trauayle never so farre eyther by land or sea, he seemeth euer to passe as it were by a ryght line without any such circuite or compassynge, ascendynge or discendynge, as perteyneth to all the partes of a rounde forme. The which obiection, as it is grofe and simple, proceadynge of the narownesse of the vnderstandingyng of such as can not conceaue the large circumference of the lande and sea, euen so may it be answered with this simple demonstration. In a rynge that serueth for the synger of a mans hande, the space of halfe an ynce or lyttle more, is halfe a cyrcle. But in a rynge or cyrcle of bygger circumference, as in the hoope of a tubbe, halfe an ynce appeareth in maner a ryght line, althowghe it bee not so in deede, forasmuch as it is not possible for any parte of a circle to consist of a ryght line, neyther any parte of a line to consist of a cyrcle, sith the partes must needs bee conformable to the hole, consyflynge of such vniforme partes as are in mathematicals. But not to wander to farre in these subtylties, the greater that yow can imagen the circle to bee, so shall a greater parte therof seeme a ryght line or playne orme: As for exemple, imaginynge a circle whose diameter (that is measure from syde to syde) consyfisteth of a myle: in this circle a pole length or more, may seeme a rygl line, as yowe may otherwyse multiply of the like infinitely: wherby it shal appere that the large circumference of the earth well consydered, a muche greater parte of the circle than the eye of man conceaueth, may seeme to bee a ryght line, and he contynually walke vpon a playne forme forasmuch as every part of a circle is lyke vnto other as I haue sayde. This may suffice for a simple and briefe demonstration and induction for suche as are desyrous to seeke furth to knowe the truth herof.

one place, or at
ney degrees and
aylably measured
s maner. From
iall to the south
oociall, are other
. This may we
n vnto vs by the
za, althowgh we
pole beinge the
ny lande of the
uch as are vnder
as nere vnto the
e vntyl sum man
nce of the Equi-

of Franciscus
artly also owt

ly by iudge-
c only of the
ight and arte
ne as though
meth euer to
ompaffynge,
orme. The
f the vnder-
sea, euen so
r the fynger
e. But in a
se an ynche
as it is not
of a line to
consyfynge
are in these
reater parte
circle whose
circle a pole
y of the like
consydered,
ay feeme to
ch as euery
simple and
knowe the



¶ What credit owght to bee gynen to wryters as touchyng the woorkes
of nature.

He mooste auncient wryter Diodorus, Siculus, in the fourth booke of his Biblioteca, wryteth in this maner. If any man for the maruelous straungenes and noueltie of suche thinges as are defcrybed in owe booke, wyl not perhappes gyue credyt to owe hystorie, let hym with ryght judgement consider the difference that is betwene the ayer of the Scythians and the Troglodytes compared to owres, and he shall the easelyer perceave the woorkes of nature and approue owe wrytynges. For owe ayer dyffreth so much from theyrs, that it myght seeme incredible if experiance were not more certeyne then doubtfull reasoun.

In fume regions the coulde is so extreme that greate ryuers are so frozen, that laden cartes and armies of men passe ouer the immouable isle. Wine also and other moist thynges are so conieled that they may bee cutte with knyues. But this is more marueylous, that th[e]extreme partes of suche apparell as menne weare, are so bytten with coulde that they faule of. Mens eyes are also dymmed: the fyre gryeth not his natural brightnesse: and brafen vesselles and images are broken. Sumtime by reason of thicke cloudes, thunders and lyghtnynges are neyther seene or harde in such regions. Many other thynges more marueylous then these hath nature wrought, which may seeme incredible to the ignorant: but easy to such as haue experiance. In the furthest partes of Egypt and Trogloditica, the heate of the soonne is so extreme abowt noone, that noo man can se hym that standeth by hym, by reason of the thicke ayer caufed by the vapours and exhalations rayfed by the heate. None can go without shooes but haue theyr fete suddeynly blystered and exulcerate. Such as are a thyrst, dye immediatly except they haue drynke at hande, the heate so faste consumeth the moystre of their bodies. Meate put in brafen vesselles, is fodde in short space by the heate of the soonne without other fyre. Yet they that are borne and brought vp in such regions, had rather wyllyngely susteyne these incommodities then bee inforced to liue otherwyse: such a loue of their natvie countrey hath nature gyuen to all men: custome of continuance from youngye yeaeres being also of force to ouercomme the maliciousnesse of the ayer. Neuerthlesse, these places of such contrary natures wherby suche strange effectes are caused, are not farre in funder or diuided by any great distance. For, from the maryshes of Meotis or Meoides where certeyne Scythians dwell in extreme coulde, many haue sayled with shyps of burden to Rodes in the space of ten dayes: and from thense to Alexandria in foure dayes. From whence paffynge thorugh Egypce by the ryuer of Nilus, they haue arryued in Ethiopia in other tenne dayes: So that the nauigation from the couldeft partes of the worlde to the hottel regions, is no more then. xxiiiij. [twenty-four] continual dayes. Where as therefore the varietie of the ayer is such in places of so smaule distance, it is no marueyle that the customes and maners of lyuyng of the people of those regions, with the complexions of theyr bodies and such thynges as are engendered there, do greatly dyffer from owres.

325
The diversite of
ayer in dyuers
regions.

Extreme colde.

Extreme heate.

The force of
education.

Extreme heate
and colde in A
smale distance.
From Scythia
to Ethiopia.





[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

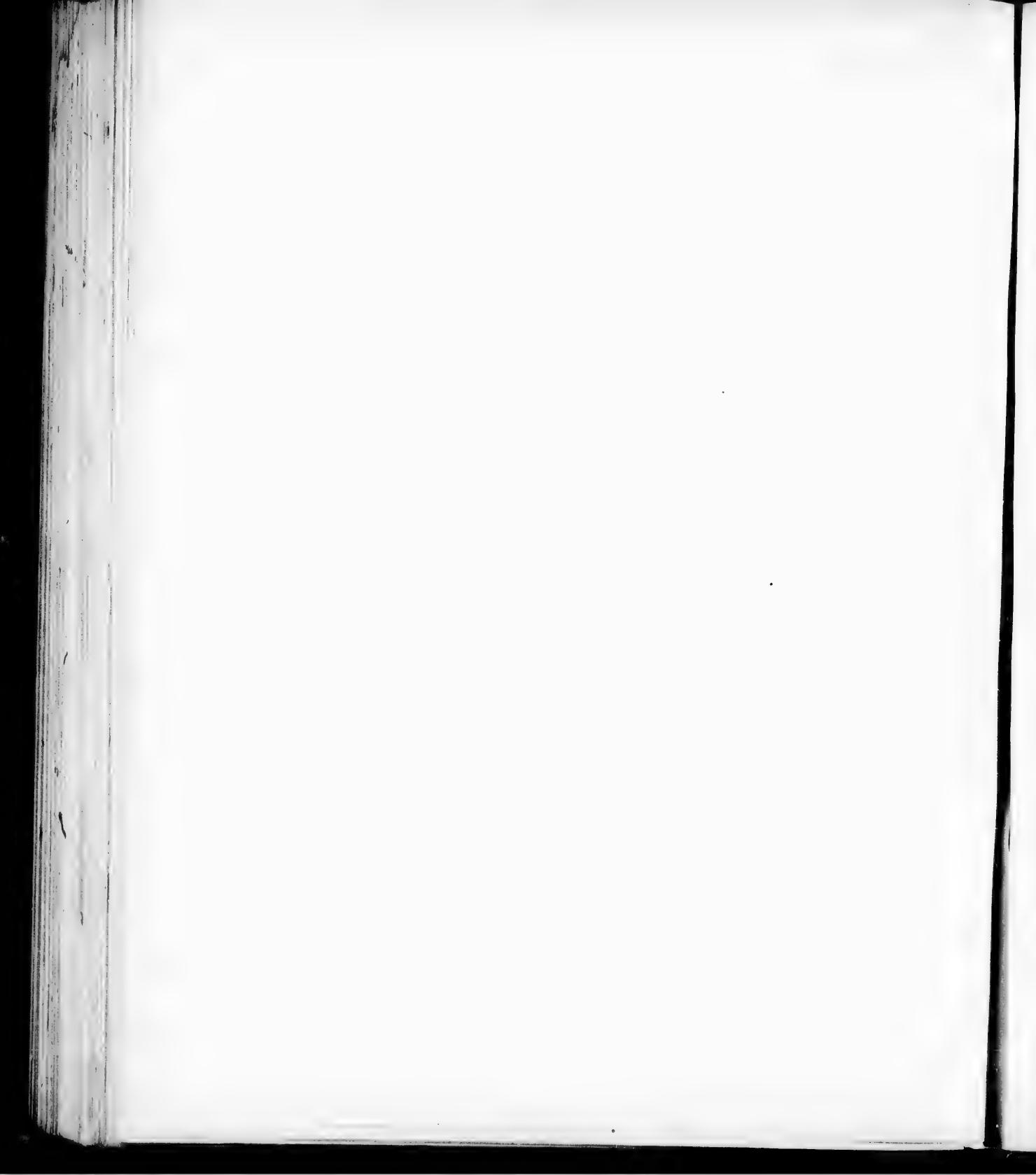
The Decades of the newe worlde or West India, etc.

SECTION VI.

Vannuccio Biringuccio.

Pyrotechnia.

First printed in 1540.]



THE PREFACE TO THE BOOKE OF METALS.

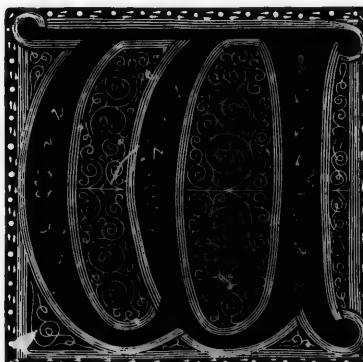


O this booke of the Indies and nauigations I haue thought good to adde the booke of metals, for three causes especially me mouyng: whereof the fyrt is, that it seemeth to me a thyng vndescent to reade so much of golde and syluer, and to knowe lyttle or nothyng of the naturall generation thereof, beinge neuerthelesse thynges not onely most defyred, but also such without the which at this age the lyfe of man can not bee passed ouer without many aduersities, forasmuch as pouertie is hatefull to all men, and vertue no further esteemed then it is supported byrches, syth nowe that lady that reigned in Saturns dayes, is becommethe flae to hym that was then her bondeman in that golden worlde, so named, not for the defyre that men had to golde, but for th[e]innocencie of lyuynge in those dayes, when Mars was of no poure, and men thought itcrueltie by breakinge the bones of owre mothertheearth, to open a way to the courte of infernal Pluto from thence to get golde and syluer the feedes of al mischieses and angelis of such a god, whom the antiquite (not without good confyderation) paynted blynde, affirmynge also that of hym golde and syluer haue receaved the properte to blynde the eyes of men. But syth it is nowe so that we shalbe inforced to feke ayde by that which was sumtymes a mychefe, it restleth to vfe the matter as doo cunnynge phisitians that can mynister poyson in proportion with other thynges in such forte qualfyng the maliciousnesse therof, that none shall therby bee intoxicate. Forasmuch therfore as golde and syluer haue obteyned this prerogatiue that they are suche necessarie euyls which the lyfe of man can not lacke without detriment, not only they but other metals also perhaps more necessarie althowgh not so precious, are thynges woorthy to bee better knownen then only by name, syth they are th[e]instrumentes of all artes, the prices of all thynges, the ornamenteis of al dignitieis, and not the leaft portion of nature, wherby the contemplation of them is no lesse pleaſante then necessary. But forasmuch as it is not here my intent to intreate much of metals, I wyll speake of the feconde cause: which is, that if in trauyalyng strang[e] and vnknownen countreys any mans chalbe to arrye in such regions where he may knowe by th[e]information of th[e]inhabitautes or otherwyse, that suche regions are frutefull of riche metals, he may not bee without sum judgement to make further searche for the same. The thyrdre cause is, that althowgh this owre realme of Englannde be ful of metals not to bee contemned and much rycher then men suppose, yet is there fewe or none in Englannde that haue any greate skyll thereof, or any thyng wrytten in our toungue, whereby men maye bee well instructed of the generation and syndyng of the same: as the lyke ignorance hath byn amonge vs as touchyng Cofmographie and nauigations vnytl I attempted accordinge to the portion of my talent and simple lernyng to open the fyrt dore to the enteraunce of this knowleage into owre language, wherin I wolde wyfhe that other of greater lernyng wolde take sume peynes to accomplaysh and bringe to further perfection that I haue rudely begunne, not as an autour but a translatoure, leaste I bee iniurious to any man in ascrybyng to my felse the traayles of other. And wheras as concernyng the knowleage of metals, I was once mynded to haue translated into Englyshe the hole worke of Pyrotechnia wherof I fynysched. xxii. [twenty-two] chapitres nowe more then three yeares fence, and leste the copie therof in the handes of one of whome I coulde never get it ageyne (omytyng to speake of other ingratitudes) I was therby discuraged to proceade any further in that woorke. Neuerthelesse, sythe this hystory of the Indies hath ministred occasion to intreate sumwhat of metals, I haue ageyne tranlated three of the fyrt chapitres of that booke, which feeme most necessary to bee knownen in this case. And hereof to haue sayde thus much in maner of a preface it may suffice.

OF THE GENERATION OF METALLES AND
THEIR MYNES WITH THE MANER OF FYNDINGE THE SAME:

WRITTEN IN THE ITALIEN TOVNGE BY *VANNVCCIVS BIRINGVCZIVS*
IN HIS BOOKE CAVLED *PYROTECHNIA*.

To his louyngre frende Master Bernardino Moncellese, greeting.



The mineral tre.

The mynes doo
growe.

Marchasites.

Signes of metalles.

Signes and tokens
of metalles.

Hereas I promyfed yow to wrytte of the natures of metalles in particular, I am nowe inforced to declare every thinge in generale, and especially of the places of their generation and their order, with the forme and maner of woorkynge in the same, and the instrumentes thereto perteyninge. Yowe shall therefore vnderstande, that mynes of metalles are founde in the moste partes of the worlde, more or lesse according to the diligence of witti searchers: and shew them selues standinge in the grunde in maner in suche forte as the veynes of bludde are dispersed in the bodies of lyuing beastes, or like vnto the braunches of trees spredde foorth diuers wayes. Wherfor, the diligent searchers of mines, willing by a certeyne similitude declare howe the mynes are placed in the mountaynes, haue figured a greate tree full of branches planted in the myndeste of the base of a mountayne, frome the whyche are diriued dyuers and many bouwes and branches, sum greate and sum smaule, muche like vnto verye trees that are in owlde woddes. They will also that in growynge, they euer ingrofe them selues and reache towarde the heauen, conuertyng into theyr nature the moste disipofed and neare matter, vntil the toppes of theyr braunches extend to the highest parte of the mountayne, and there shewe furthe theyr selues with manifeste apperaunce, puttinge furthe in the steade of bouwes and floures, certeyne fumosites of blewe or greene coloure, or marchasites with smaule veynes of ponderous matter, or suche other compostions of tinctures. And when by this means they shewe them selues vnto us, we may make firme conjecture that suche mountaynes are minerall, and that accordinge to the demonstrations they shewe more or lesse, they are richer or porer of myne. Therefore the searchers, according to th[ese] apperaunces which they fynde, take good courage vnto them: and with hope and securitie of profete, apply al their possible diligence with wite and expenses to digge or gette owte suche thynges as the signes and owtewarde apperaunces declare vnto them. And by this maner of fyndinge of mynes, it hath often tymes chaunced that many haue byn exalted to the highest degree of riches. Wheras therfore by this meanes men enter into the mountaynes with the ey[e]s of consideration and right Judgemente, and see the places where the mineralles are engendered and comprehendē in maner theire quantitie, they adapte theyr caues or fosses accordyng therenvnto, wheras they shulde otherwyse wander by chaunce, becaufe no man can by any other meanes knowe where the mines are in the mountaynes, although he were of neuer so good judgement, and shulde make searche for the same neuer so curiously by litle and litle. It shal therfore in this case be necessary to folow the certificat and aperaunces of signes, and to encounter the same as nere as may be, with ey[e]s and eares euer attentiuē where they maye hope to fynde any tokens of metalles, especially by enquyringe of sheperdes and other anciente inhabitauntes of such regions in the which mineralls are engendered. And this I speake the rather for that I am perwaded that at

the first sight of a mountaine, by reason of the greate barrenesse and roughnes therof, and also by reason of the great abundance of waters that are engendered in the same, a right good judgemente shall not suffice to coomme to certayne knowleage that metall is contayned in such mountaynes, vntill the searchers haue with charges and traual caused miners in fundry places to discouer the same. And therfore I also beleue that one man althowgh be bee never so stonge, wytte, and farre castinge, shall not be able in a newe and straunge contreye, to searche by smaule portions not onlye all the mountaynes of one or moo prouinces which may bringe furth minerals, but shall with muche difficultie scarcely suffice to searche the secretes of only one mountayne: In so muche that sum confyderinge the difficultie hereof, are of opinion that in this effecte, it shuld be requisite to worke by the arte of Negromancie, which I thynke to be a fable without further knowleage. But I wolde that these necromancers shulde tell me why this theire arte helpeth them no further in the woorke after that they haue once founde the myne, if it be trewe that they say. Why (I say) doth it not helpe them furthe as at the begynnyng to fynde the myne, so consequently in the myddest and the ende to bryng the same to further perfection, as to gette it owt, to bryng it to fusion or meltynge, and to purifie or pourge it from droffe, which doublefesse it shulde haue poure to doo if it may bee beleaued that it can doo the other. But forasmuch as such effectes are so fearefull and terrible, that they ought not or can not be practised of al men, and also perhapses bycause such maner of woorkyng is not knownen, I thinke it not good to be vied: but thinke rather by good reason that this arte is so much the more to be omittyd and contemned, in howe much we are accustomed in the begynnyng of dyggyng of mynes, especially to caule for the grace of god that it may please hym to be prefente with his ayde to owe roubtfull and traualous woorke. Lettyng pase therefore this deuylysshе diuise of such beastly and fearefull men, I exhorte yow to folowe the practise by the foresayde signes minystryed vnto yow by the benigintie of nature, bothe grounded vpon the foundation of truth and approued by th[e]xperience of many practicionars, not confyslyng in woordes or promyses of thynges wayne and incomprehensible. With these signes therfore shall yow searche the bankes and sides of the valleys, with the clyffes and ryfes of the stones, and the backes, topes, or ridges of the Montaynes: Also the beddes, chanelles, and courses of ryuers, lookinge diligently amone their sandes, and the ruines of their fosse, amone the whiche yow shall often tymes espie marchasites or smaule sparkes of mynes, or other dyuers tinctures of metals, whereby yow may be certified that certeyne mynes are in such places, which yow shall exactly fynd by diligent and curious searchinge the clyffes of their ryfes and dry places. After these aduertisementes, take this for a generall signe, that all suche places and mountaynes are mineral, owt of the which many springes and great abundance of crude water dooth iffshewe, haungi with their clearenes a certeyne minerall taste, and such as at variable seasons of the yeare chaunge their qualite, beinge warme in the spryng tyme and coulde in sommer. And this thyng yow ought yow to beleue the more when yow shall see the aspecte of such mountaynes to be rough, sharpe, and saluage without earth or trees. Or so that yf there bee a lyttle earth found vpon the same with a smaule veyne of herbes or grasse yow shall perceave the grenenes therof to be faynt and in maner wythered and dried. And albeit that sumtyme also, mines are founde in mountaynes hauyng earth and frutefull trees in the topes therof, yet are they for the most part found in such wherof we haue spoken. Of these other, there maye fewe signes be gyuen, except to go by lyttle and lyttle to feke the bankes of their sydes. But amonge all these, the best and most certeyne signe that may bee gyuen, is wheras on the superficial part of the earth eyther on hyghe or belowe, the myne dooth shewe it selfe apparente to fygght. Sum there are that for a good signe do greatlye commende the refidencies which certeyne waters make wher they haue rested for a time and beinge dried vp of the heate of the sonne, do often times shewe in certeyne partes of their refidencies dyuers tinctures of mynerall substaunce. Summe other are accustomed to take such waters, and in a vessell of earth or glasse or other matter, caufe them to boyle and vapoure away vntyll the dreges or refidencie remayne in the bottome well dried in the likenes of a grose earth, of the which they make an assaye eyther by the ordinarie tryall of fyer, or after sume other maner as lyketh them best. And by this meanes (althowgh they attayne not to th[e]xacte knowleage of the truth) yet do they approche to a certeyne knowleage of the thyng wherby they haue sum intelligence of what sufficiencie and goodnesse the myne is which they seeke, before they be at any great charges in folowynge the same: Proudyng alway that with all diligent aduertisement the places neare vnto the rootes of the confine mountaynes be curiouly searched, with also the bankes and sydes of the selfe fame mountayne, and all such superficiall partes therof, where any stones are founde discouered eyther of their owne proper nature or by the course of water: presupposyng euer that it is in maner impossible but that yf suche mountaynes contayne any mynes, they muste needs shewe furth sum floures, tinctures, or colours of their exhalations. Yet yf it shulde so chaunce that they do not this, the goodnes of the mine may be the cause hereof forasmuche as eyther it is not of vaporable nature, or to be of smaule quantitie, or els perhapses bycause the mountayne is greate and the myne very low or so farre with in, that it is not sufficient to put furth any signes of fumositie. The cause also hereof maye bee that sum stonye lyke vnto that cauled *Albafano* (which I thynke to be of that kynde which we caule the greeete stone) or blacke and whyte marble of

Mountaynes in
the which metals
are engendered.

Agynst seekyng
metals with the
rod which they
caule Virgula
divina.
Negromancie.

The maner of
searchyng for
mynes.

A generall signe.

Rowgh and barres
mountaynes.

328

The best signe.

The residence
of waters.

Marchasites are
the tinctures
of mynerall
exhalations.

Metals in frutful mountaynes.

thycke and refylyng nature, may be found to lye betwene and so to stoppe the passages, that the sayde fumosities may therby be hyndered to arryue to the vppermoste parte of the earth: by reasoun wherof, it is possible that fuche mountaynes may bryng furth trees and herbes forasmuche as the earth therof dooth reteyne his vertue and may nuryshe theyr rootes not beinge incinerate or burnte with hotte and venomous vapours of the mynes: so that the shoures of rayne or fluds with their courses can not cary away the earth as in such places wher the same is found fore dried. And therfore vpon such mountaynes I haue feene great wooddes of cheffnutte trees, beeches also and okes, with well cultured and frutfull fieldes. So that to conclude, by the signes of the rowghnesse or barennesse of the mountayne, is not taken away but that other places may also haue plentie of mines whiche ought to be searched and folowed. But forasmuch as these signes are of the natures of minerals, I wyll speake more determinately of theym in the places where I entreat of theyr proper mynes: Not intendyng here to faye muche of these thinges in generall, but only to induce yow to sum clearnesse of the fyrt lyght. And therfore that yow may gyue the more diligent aduertisement, I faye vnto yowe that all the mynes which yow shall fynde by fuch signes, by what meanes so euer they shall coome to yowre handes, whether they be found in stones, earthe, or sande, after that at the fyrtle syght they haue shewed them selues to bee mynes of metals, yow ought to consyder of what ponderositie of weyght they are: The which the greater that it is, so much the more dooth it shewe both the perfection and goodnesse of the substaunce, and also the more quantitie of the mine. And thus presupposyng that by the signes or other meanes yow haue founde the mine, not yet fully perceauynge of what kynde of metall it myght be, to certifie yowe hereof and also of what quantitie it is, or howe it is accompanied or myxt with other, or lykewyfe of what puriteit it is of it selfe, or of what euyll disposition or malice it is founde to bee, it shall herein be necessary before yow be at any further charges therwith, to proue the same by twoo or three assyses or mo, as I wyll further declare in the particular place of assyses. Beinge therfore certyfied of the myne, and of what metall it is, and also what quantitie it conteyneth, fyndyng it by accompte to bee so profitable as to beare the charges, I exhorte yowe bouldely to gyue the fyrtle attempte to faule to mynyng, and with all possible diligence to folowe yowre enterpryse: affurynge yowre selfe, that of what so euer mynerall matter yow shall take assay according to the proportion of that pi[e]ce which yow tooke of the vppermost or owtmost parte of the mine for that purpose, yow shall fynde that to bee muche better and rycher whiche is further within the mountayne. And thus being certyfied by the assay of what quantitie the thynge is that appered by the signes, and of all other reasonable conseyderacions apperteynyng to the worke, yow shall with all celeriteit dispise yowre selfe to faule to dyggynge. ^{th[e] intent} that yowe may shortly eyther here enioye the frute of yowre trauell, or els where with better successe proue yowre good fortune. But in th[e]attempte of this enterpryse, yow ought principallv to haue respecte to the situation of the place where yowe intende to make the begynnynge of your caue or fosse: Takyng good aduertisement that it be commodious for the labourers that shal worke therein: prouydynge aboue all thynges that it haue an easye enteraunce into the mountayne, with lesse charges and in shorter tyme to arryue vnder the signes which yowe haue taken: encouterynge the same as muche as is possible as it were by a ryght line, fyrt with iudgements and then with workemanshypp, vntyll yow stryke on the grose masse or bodye of the myne, breakyng in the course of the caue al matters of hard compositions, as quarres and stones ouerhwartyng the same: hauyng euer respecte to the owtwarde signes whiche yow folowe, forecastlyng in yowre mynde how yowe may directly arryue to the same, even as the maryners directe theyr course by theyr coaste and fylght of the north flarre. Alfo byfyde that place where yow haue determined to make the enteraunce and begynnynge of the caue, yow muste take choyse of an other place, eyther on the front of the mountayne or on the syde that it may bee neare and commodious to make one or two or mo cotages for the commoditiie and necessitie of the woorkemen. One of these must bee appoynted for theyr dormitorie where sum may rest and sleepe whyle other worke, and that yow may the more commodiously be prefente and abyflaunte to theyr doynges, diligently to beholde all thynges and to conforte them in theyr laboures: also to dífence and beslowe theyr vytayles as shall bee nedefull, and to referue the same in safe custodie, with dayly prouision of al thynges apperteynyng. The other must bee as it were a fmythes forge wherin theyr worne and broken tooles must bee renewed, and other newe made, to th[e] intent that the woorke be not hyndred for lacke of store of necessarie instrumentes. When these thynges are thus fynysshed, with good prouision of vytayles and a sufficient number of expert myners, then in the name of God and good aduenture, caufyng a prelate to bleffe the mountayne with all the shoppes, and to baptise the caue, dedicatyng it (as the maner is) to the holy Trinitie or to owr Lady or to the name of sum other faint which yowe haue in deuotion, with invocation to theym to proper yowre attempts, yow shall with good courage and hope begynne to dygge the caue, with intente to folowe the same withoutte ceasyng as farre as yowre abilitie shall reache, or vntyll yow haue passed ouer the lymettes signified by the signes before named: Takynge ever diligent heade that yowe begynn yowre caue as lowe as yow may at the foote of the mountayne, in such order that yowr myners so continue and folow the same by a right line, that they encounter the veyne of the myne by the shorlest and safest way that may bee deuised. For it often times chaunceth, that althowgh

Howe the signes
are to bee
consydered.

The assay of the
mines.

329

The richer myne
further within the
mountayne.

Conseyderacions
how the caue
ought to bee made.

The bodie of the
myne.

Houses of office
for the myners.

Baptising and
dedicating of the
caue.

The making
of the caue.

that the sayde on wherof, it is dooth reteyne vapours of in such places eat wooddes of conclude, by the places may also sines are of the of theys proper w to sum clear vnto yow that yowre handes, them selues to which the greater e, and also the caue founde the d also of what of it selfe, or of at any further in the particular at quantitie it ve bouldely to terpryse: assur portion of that l fynde that to by the assay of apperteynyng that yowe may good fortune. of the place ent that it be haue an easye s which yowe th judgemente alkyng in the me: hauynge may directly north starre. the caue, yow may bee neare kemen. One arke, and that all thynges medefull, and must bee as ade, to th[e] thynges are the name of baptise the other saynt l with good as farre as fore named: mountayne, the veyne of at althowgh

the caue haue byn wel begunne, yet hath it not byn well folowed, for that the myners beinge withdrawn from the ryght course by the hope of suche braunches of mynes as haue appered vnto them in the waye, doo often times decline from theyr attempted course, and from the signes which they ought to haue folowed. And bysyde other preceptes, see that yow beare in memory to procure that in dyggyng, yow eschewe as muche as yowe maye, the cuttyng of softe or brykell stones, awell for that it may bee daungerous for ruine of the caue, as also that it feldome chaunceth that any mynes are founde in such stones. But yf yow shal chaunce so to fynde them that yow can by no meanes ayoyde them, I confort yow that where suche cause of feare sheweth it selfe, both that yow losse not the charges of the caue and for the better safegarde of yowre woorkemen, it shalbe necessary that yowe vse all possible diligence in well vpholdynge and fortyfyng the caue with arches of waules trauerfed with stonge postes of tymber after the maner of framed beames, susteyned with grose and stonge pyles made of goode and stonge tymber of oke or other great trees. And in this maner ought yow to proceade in dyggyng yowre myne that yow may with more securitey enjoy the frute of yowr trauayle. But in the owlde tyme they that dygged mynes (as is yet to see in the caues leste of them) followed an other maner: so that in the steade of begynnyng the caue belowe at the foote of the mountayne (as doo the later myners) they begunne to dygge theyr caue in the vpper or hyghest parte where the daye discouered the myne, dyggyng downewarde after the maner of a pytte or a well, folowyng the same suntyme on the one syde, and suntyme on the other even vnto the depth, as the veyne shewed it selfe to theyr fygth: whereof I haue thought good to make mention, for that in the opinion of many men, this way dooth seeme much better and of more securitey to fynde that they feeke, then to dygge by the fydes: bycause that by this meanes they haue euer the mine before theyr eyes eyther more or lesse as a line to leade them to the grosse masse. Yet who so confydereth the thynge well, shall understande that the later myners haue better conceaued the reasoun of this woork, in respecte (as is to see) of many more commodities and securities which insue rather of this maner of woorkyng then of the other: as the difficultie to defende and ascende the caue, and the daungour left it bee stopped vp by many ruines, bysyde the trauaylous labour to draw owt the mine with the rockes and fragmentes of stones: And aboue al thynghes, that they shal not bee able to drawe owt the waters whiche are often tymes so abundaunt that they greatly increase the charges and trauayles of the patrons of the mynes by reason of the greate ayde and helpe which shalbe requisite to haue in that case and also for the makyng of wheeles, troughe, pypes, and pumpe, with such other instrumentes seruyng for the purpose to drawe owt the waters. And yet with all this, it often tymes chaunceth that although they labour hereat continually, yet shal they be inforced to forsake their profitable and laudable enterpryse. So that to conclude, I faye (as yowe maye well vnder stond) that it is a much better way and of more securitey to begynne the digging of the caue rather at the roote or fote of the mountayne and to enter into the same by litle and lytle a slope vpwarde, then to begynne at the toppe or the highest backe therof. And this both for the more commodious pausing furthe of the water, and also for the easier trauaile of the labourers. Obseruyng euer diligently the chaunge of the signes whiche appere vnto yow outwardly, vsyng the rudder and compasse as do they that sayle on the sea. For hereby the myners shalbe instructed euer to folowe the right way in the caue vntill by the conductinges of wyttē and arte, they bee brought to the place of the grosse masse or bodie of the tree, whyche is the caufe, fontayne, and original from whence the sayd tinctures, fumofites, and mineral signes, are diriuē and sente furth to the superficiale partes. And as concernyng this purposē, I thincke it good to declare vnto yow howe in the Dukedom of *Austria*, betweene *I[n]gruc* and *Alla* where I contynued manye yeares, I fawe a large vale enuironed with a greate number of mountaynes, by the mydelf wherof a ryuer passed through of greate abundaunce of water: and in maner in all the montaynes that are there abowt, is digged great plentie of mine, wherof the moste parte are of copper or leade, althoughe also in maner euer of them is founde to holde sum portion of siluer. Amonge these mountaynes, I fawe one in the whyche th[e]inhabitautes of the countrey dwellying there abowt allured by the sight of many signes, beganne to digge a caue after the maner wherof we haue spoken: In so muche that (as it appered vnto me) from the place where they begane the caue, they had digged little lesse then two myles before they fawe any sparke or shadowe of any myne. And beinge arryued with the caue in maner perpendicularly vnder the signes they folowed, they were encountered with a veyne of the harde stone cauled *Albazano*, of a yarde and a halfe thick, which they passed through with greate trauayle and longe tyme, and with the helpe of commodious instrumentes of iren hardened to woork in suche stones. And when they had thus passed through this quarry of stome, they chaunced vpon a verye great veyne of the myne of copper of such forte that when I was there, lookinge betweene the one and the other, I fawe on every syde as it were a waule of the hard stome of *Albazano*, and therin a voyde place of suche largenes from the one syde to the other that more then two hundred men al at one time, had sufficienct roome to flande labouringe frome the hyghete parte to the lowel, hauyng non other lyght then of candells, and makinge certeyne markes in every place where they saw the vre or myne shewe it selfe: and thus ceased not to woorke continually both day and nyght, course by course, a thyngre swerelous to be holde. Without the mouth of the caue, I fawe great abundaunce of mine partly

Causes of hinderance.

Soft stones.

330
The forteling of the caue.

Howe the caues were made in olde tyme.

Abundaunce of water in the mynes.

The beste maner of makinge the caue.

The change of the signes.
The rudder and compasse.

Austria.

Mynes of copper and leade holding siluer.

A caue of two myles.

A large caue of the myne of copper holding siluer.

331
Candle light

A grete masse
of pure myne.

Abundance of
water in the
myne.

Water is the
nearest principle
of minerals.

A general rule.

Great riches
obtayned by
searching of
mynes.

Magnanimitie
and pacience.

The mountaynes
are the matrices
of riches.

The grace of god
is receaved by
owre endeououre.

Myne begetteth
ryches.

332

Necessarie
advertismentes.

Plentye of woode.

Cottages and
edificies.
The situation of
the place.

The vse of water.

mixt with the stone of the vre, and partly chosen and seperated. Amonge these pieces, there was one consistyng of a hole masse of pure mine of such biggnes and weyght, that two good horses with a light carre coulde scarcely drawe it away. This myne was of copper as I haue sayde. But to magnifie it they cauled it syluer, bycause it helde suche plentie thereof that it furmounted the charges, whereas they had also the copper for aduantage. Yowe shall further understand that in the myddest of the caue, there was a chanell or gutter whyche gathered togither the waters that fell into it continually on every syde from the ruptures or broken places and clifffes. These waters ranne through the chanel with so vehemente a streme, that I suler beleue that it might well suffice to dryue any greate mylle. In so muche that in goyng in and comming owt of the caue, I remember that by the contynual faule and sprinkelng of the waters from aboue and beneth, I was as wet as though I had passid through a greate shoure of rayne. Wherat I maruel the lesse when I confyder that water is the fyrlst and nearest principle of the whiche the substancialle of minerals is engendered. By reasoun wherof, such men of vnderstandinge as haue searched the natures of these thynge, argue hereby and take it for a generall rule, that all thoſe mountaynes owe of the whiche spryngeth great abundance of water, doo also abounde with myne. The which thynge well confyderynge, and weyng the greatness hereof, I faule into this accompte with myfelfe, that if to the patrones of the fayne caue, the charges of the fame hadde byn a hyndraunce or greefe, eyther for the length therof, or for despaire that they shuld not haue found that they fought, they wolde surely haue forsaken it. And beinge nowe come to this harde stone after they had susteyned so great charges byfyde the traualys both of mynde and body, if they fulde then haue lefte of their enterpryse, they shulde not haue come to ſuch ryches whereby they haue obtayned many commodities awfull profitable for them felues & alſo for their lordes and princes, their country, their kinſfolkes and famelie. Neyther yet ſhulde they haue byn ſo wel able to helpe their poore neyghbours as they haue doone by the meanes of the valientneſſe of their conſtant myndes and perſiflyngē in ſo good and commendable an enterpryſe. Wherfore to conclude, yow that wyll begynne to attempt any ſuch thynge, muſt be of good courage and much pacience to folowe that yow haue begunne, at the leaſt vntill yow knowe by the fignes what the thynge is: hopinge euer that in goyng forwarde, the day folowinge (as it is poſſible) ſhal diſcouer the thynge that yow ſeeke and content your defyre: Wherof yow may bee the better affiſed, iſ you well confyder that the mootheres and matrices of moft esteemed ryches, and the myntes of al treasures, are the mountaynes: To the whiche (with the helpe of fortune and yourr ingenious indeuoure) yow ſhall open the way, not only to fynde the myne and arryue to the belly of the mountaynes where ſuche thyngeſ lyd, but ſhall alſo bee exalted by ryches to hyghe honoure and digniteſ as they of whomme we haue made mention before: foramuch as moft benigne and liberall nature, doothe open her lappe and promeffe good ſuccesse to ſuche as ſeeke ryches by ſuch honest meaneſ. The whiche way ſurely is muſe rather to be folowed, then eyther the warre full of troublis and miserie, or the carefull trade of marchaundies with wanderinge abowt the worlde, or ſuche other faſidious cares perhaſpes vnlawfull for a good man. And albeit (as ſome men vſe to ſpeakē) the fyndyngē of mynes bee an eſpeciall grace of God, neuertheleſſe, foramuch as we are borne to laboure, it ſhalbe neceſſary that we ſeeke the fame in ſuche places where they are brought furth by the woorke of nature, and by feachynge to fynde them, and beinge founde to dygge for them, and by this meaneſ to receave the grace of God with applyinge oware owne diligencē thereto, with helpe of the diſpoſition of fortune and naturall iudgemente. And yet ſhal not this only ſuffice without ſufficiencē of money able to ſusteyne the charges and continue the woorke: to th[e]lende that iſ yow can not fynylle it with your owne expenſes, yow maye ſupplye the fame by the ayde of other, eyther patrones or parteners. But let vs nowe ceafe to reaſon any further of theſe thinges. Prefuppoyng therfore that yow haue alredy paſſed the charges, and haue not only founde the myne yow fought, but alſo haue brought furth to lyght a great quantitie therof, it ſhal then bee needful (as a thyngh chiefly to be confydered before yow begin to dygge) wel to ponder and examen both the commodities of ſuche thyngeſ as ſhall occurrē, and alſo of ſuche wherof yow haue neede: as tymbre and woodde of all forteſ, with water and vtytayles: of all the whiche, yow muſte haue great plentie: and eſpecially of woodde, whereof yow muſte haue great quantitie, awfull to ferue to the proportion of the myne, as alſo to make coles to the vſe of meltynge, fynynge, dryyng, garboylng, and ſuch other broylynges, byfyde that which muſt ferue to fortifie the caue and to buyld ſhoppes and cotages with ſuch other edifiſ[ci]es. Diligent conſideration muſt lykewyſe be had to the ſituacion of the place where the buyldyngeſ ſhalbe erected: as that the plotte therof bee commodious with abundance of water hauyng a good faule. Alſo not onely of plentie of woodde and cole nere vnto the myne, but of ſuch as may ferue the turne. And of all other incommodities, yow muſte chiefly auoyde the lacke of water, as a thynge of greatest importaunce and moft neceſſarie in this effecte. For by the force and weyght of the courſe herof, wheeles and dyuers other ingenious iſtrumentes are adapted with eaſe to lyfte vppe greate bellowes to make fyres of great poure, to beat with hammers of great weyght, and to turne myghtie and ſtronge engens, by the force whereof the traualys of men are ſo much furthered, that without ſuch helpe, it were in maner impoſſible to ouercome ſuche tedious traualys or to arryue to the ende of the woorke, foramuch as the force of one wheele may lyfte more, and that more ſafely then the

was one con-
t carre coulde
auld it syluer,
the copper for
gutter whyche
ten places and
e that it might
eue, I remem-
wet as though
at water is the
eros, such men
general rule,
de with myne.
with my selfe,
ese, eyther for
irely haue for-
es byfyde the
ot haue come
also for theyr
yn so wel able
inflant myndes
ll begynne to
egunne, at the
the day folow-
yow may bee
d the myntes
us indeouere)
where suche
ome we haue
and promesse
rather to be
with wander-
and albeit (as
afmuch as we
ught furth by
, and by this
disposition of
oney able to
h yowr owne
t let vs nowe
the charges,
tie therof, it
ponder and
haue neede :
reat plentie :
of the myne,
nges, byfyde
s. Diligent
ed : as that
y of plentie
modities,
arie in this
umentes are
mers of great
re so much
or to arrye
ely then the

paynefull labour of a hundredth men. It shal therfore be needfull to haue great confyderation hereof, not only to make these edifi[es] or houfes of office, but also to make them commodious for the purpofe, as for the cariage of myne and cole with other necessaries. For if any of these effectes shulde be wantyng, the coſte, tyme and trauayle, shulde bee cast away : forasmuch as these thynges doo ſo much the more relieuē the one the other as they are ioyned togither, and hinder the worke not a lytle of any be ſeparate. But bycaufe theſe commodities can not euer be hadde all togither, yowe ought to wey with your ſelfe which of the twoſerueth for mo neceſſarie vies, as eyther to haue the cole or the mine moſt commodious to the houfes, and accordyngē there vnto to place the houfes nere vnto the fame if the commoditye of water wyll ſo permittē. Albeit, if it were poſſible, it ſhulde be muſt better if al theſe neceſſarie commodities were ioyned togither, whereas otherwyſe yowe muſte contente your ſelfe as occaſion ferueth.

Nowe therefore to conclude, byfyde that whiche I haue declared vnto yow of the findinge of the myne and the digging thereof with other considerations, I exhortē yowe further to faule to praſtyfe with ſum myne of your owne, that yow may therby take occaſion to ryse to the degree of ryches whyche yow deſire. And therfore I aduertife yow that after yow haue founde the mountayne and begun to digge, yow ſhal euer go forwarde with a bouldre mynde and floute corage, woorkyng with witt and Iudgement, forasmuche as in this effecte the one ferueth the other in the ſteede of ey[e]s to enter where they can not. Gyue no credit to that whiche many ignorantē folkes doo fay and beleue, affirmyng that in digging for metals, they are founde rather by chaunce then by arte. The which although it were trewe, yet ought we to truſt more to art and praſtyfe them to chaunce. And when yow are nowe entered into the mountayne, beare well in memory that yow haue prefently with yow the tallie or ruler of the caue, wheby yowe may trauerſe the veyne of the myne when yow are coomme to it. For if yow ſhulde folowe it by the courſe as it lyeth, it is poſſible that yow might folowe it a greate way not paſte the biggnesse of a mans finger and perhaſpe leſſe : By reaſon wheroſ, it might happen that yow ſhulde loſe it and neuer find it ageyne. The like ſhuld chaunce vnto yow if after that yow haue begun to digge a caue, it ſhulde repente yow of the charges, and that for the baſenes therof yow ſhulde forſake it, as many haue doone who bycaufe they coulde not fynde the mine at the firſt ſtroke, despayringe that they ſhulde neuer fynde it, haue forſaken it as a thynge vnpoffitable, thynking that they haue woonne enough in that they were not at further charges with that which they accompt loſe and damage : And thus furiously leauē of their enterpriſe, not regardingē that they may leauē the frute of theyr expenſes and traualle to an other that may folowe their begynnnges, and perhaſpes fynde the myne within the diſtance of a cubet, a ſpanne, or a finger. We may ſay therfore that ſuſe men doo willingly forſake their good fortune as many haue doone. He therfore that hath begune to digge a caue, let hym determine to folowe it, puttinge away th[e]ſtimation of the baſenes therof, and not to feare the ſtreygynnesſe of the way, but rather to applye all his poſſible diligēnce without remorſe, hopyng thereby no leſſe to obteyn honour and ryches, then to ayoyde shame and infamie for omyttinge ſo poſſitable an enterpriſe. And that yow may the more circumſpectly behaue your ſelfe in all thynges, befyde the former iſtructions, I further aduertife yow to ſet euer freſſhe men a worke by courſe in ſuſh order, that in every ſixte or eighi hours (accordyngē to the number of the myners) yow appoynſt ſuſh to the worke as haue reproſed or taken theyr reſt, that yow may by this meaſes the ſooner come to th[e]ende yow deſire, whereunto (after yow haue layde ſo ſure a fundation) I exhortē yow to runne without a bryde. And wheras to theſe effectes it ſhalbe neceſſarie to haue many iſtrumentes adapted for the purpofe, I can none otherwyſe ſpeakē of them then in generall, conſyderyng that according to the nature of the place and the myne, it ſhalbe neceſſary to vſe iſtrumentes and iren tooles of dyuers formes, as there ought to be diſference in ſuſh wherewith yow shall dygge in mynes engendered in marble, greete ſtone, and harde freeſe ſtone, or ſuſh other. For the dyggynge of ſuſh as are found in deade and tender ſtones, as Alabaster and marle, it is requiſite to haue apte and ſtronge iſtrumentes, as great beetels, mattockes and ſpades of iren, alſo great and longe crowes of iren to lyfte great burdens : lykewyſe greate and fmaule picke axes ſum of iren and ſum of Steele : furthermore greate maules with handels and without handels, and ſuſh other bothe of iren and fine Steele hardened, if the hardenes of ſtone ſhall ſo requyre. But as for ſuſh that ſhall ferue to dygge the mynes which are engendered in tender and ſoſte ſtones, I neede make no mention of them, forasmuch as the tooles of the common ſorte may ſuffice, and neceſſitie ſhall dayly furthe[r] iſtructe yow to diuiſe ſuſh as ſhal ferue for yourre purpofe. Albeit, for the moſte parte, they are beetels, maules, mattockes, pikes, ſhouels, ſpades, and ſuſh lyke. But as well for the ſoſte ſtones as for the harde, it ſhalbe neceſſary to haue great plentie of al fortes, to th[e]ende that the myners may loſe no tyme, and that the worke may go the better forwarde to the comfort of the patrones of the mine. Byfyde theſe before named, it ſhall alſo be requiſite to haue plentie of greate baskettes, ſpades, ſhouels, fleades, and handbarrowes, bothe with wheeles and without wheeles : alſo fackes made of raw or vntande hydes to carye the fragmentes owt of the caue. It ſhall furthermore be requiſite to haue greate quantitie of vntuous liquours to maintayne fire : as are the oiles of oliues, of nuttes, of lime ſeede and hempe ſeede : Lykewyſe the roots of putrifid trees, or talowe of beaſtes, or fatte and oyles of fyſhes. For without the lyght of fyre, it is not poſſible for the laboures

Necessarie
Considerations.

A false opinion

The trauerſinge
of the veyne.

Continuance in
the worke.

333

Frefſhe men.

Instrumentes.

Fyre in the caue.

The conueyance
of eyer.

to woorke : Nor yet can any syre be mayntayned in the caue except it receave the ayer by sum respiracle or breathyng place by the meanes of a funell or trunke of woodde or such other open instrument wherby the ayer maye be conueyed into the caue.

The excellencie
of golde.



The originall and
substaunce of
golde.

334

Mineral heate.

The temperature
and purenesse of
golde.
Golde is
incorruptible.

The bewtie of
golde.

Golde is
medicinalle.
Golde is
comfortable.

The attractive
qualitie of golde.

¶ Of the myne of golde and the qualitie therof in particular.

Orafmuche as golde is a compounde mynerall which of the philosophs and all men of vnderstandinge, is founde to be of greatest perfection amoung all other myxt minerals, it is iudged by the vniuerial opinion of such men, that for the bewtie and excellent qualite thereof, it shulde be of excelleunce vertue to helpe and confort men. And therfore amoung all thynges that are in this worlde (excepte lyuyng creatures) it is chiefly esteemed. By reasoun wherof, I also the more to honour it, wyll syrft speake of this before I entreate of any other metall, and declare in particular the conception with the most apparent qualities therof.

The which although it be a metal most knownen, desyred also and sought for of all kyndes of men, yet are there not many that do care to knowe of what substaunce or natural mixtion it consisteth. But that yow shulde not be one of theim that knowe it onely by name or superficiall app[er]elance, I certifie yow that the originall and proper matter therof, is none other then elementall substaunces with equall quantitie and qualitie proportionate the one with the other, most perfectly purified by the subtile woorke of nature. For of these beinge thus ioyned togidher (and of equall force) is engendered an amiable and most perfect mixtion by the helpe of fermentacion and decoction of the minerall heate, wherby is caused such a permanent vnion betwene the sayde elementes, that they are in maner inseperable: So that by the vertue of heavenly influence or of tyme, or by th[e]order of n[on]ost prudent nature, or by all these causes concurrant, such substaunce is conuerted into this metalline body that we caule golde. The which (as I haue sayd) by his much temperatenes, purenes, and perfect mixtion, is condensate and made thicke, in such forte that the elementes therof can not be vnbounde or loosed, so that it remayneth in maner incorruptible: The cause wherof is, that it ethyer conteyneth in it no maner of superfluitie, or the farme to be but very lytle. And herof commeth it, that althothe it lye many yeares in the earth or in the water, it is not infected with rust or canker for that neyther of them are able to corrupte it, nor yet the syre whiche for a dooth incinerate or bryngē to ashēs and resolute in maner all creatures: And yet is the poure hereof so farre vnable to defroy or corrupte this metall, that it is thereby the more purified and made better. Lykewyse the fayde perfecte vnion or mixtion, caufeth it to be a body withoutt fleame, and withoutt vnciuos or fat superfluitie: which is the caufe that it euer remayneth in the natvie bryghtnes and fayrenes of colour, in so much that when it is rubbed vpon any thyng, it leaueth not behynde it the tincture of any blacke or yelowe colour, as doe in maner all other metals: Nor yet hath it any taste or fauour that may be perceaued to the fence. Furthermore, if it be eaten ethyer wyllyngly or by chause, it is not venemous to the lyfe of man, as are sum of the oþer metals: but is rather a medicinе curyng dyuers diseases. In so much that nature hath gyuen vnto it of peculiare propertie, a vertue and priuileage to conforte the weakenes of the harte, and to gyue ioyfulness and myrrh to the spirites, dispoynge thereby the mynde to magnanimitie and attemptes of great enterpryses. Which singular qualities, sum wyse men affirme that it hath receaved by th[e]influence of the sonne, and that it is therfore of such grace and poure to helpe men: especiallie such as haue many great bagges and cheftes full therof. To conclude therfore, this metall is a body tractable and bryght, of colour lyke vnto the soonne: And hath in it inwardly such a naturall attractive or alluryng vertue, that beinge feene, it greatly disposseth the myndes of men to desyre it and esteeme it as a thyng most precious: although many there are whiche crye owt ageynst it and accuse it as the roote and seide of most pestiferous and monstrosus couetousnesse, and the caufe of many other myscueus. But whether it bee the caufe of more good or euyll, we entend to lette passe this disputation as a thyng vnonprofitable. To proceade therfore as I haue begun I say (as before) that the woorthynesse which is founde in it, hath caused me to intreate of it before any other metall. And this the rather for that th[e]orde of this prefente worke [fee]meth so to requyre, that I may the better defende to the degrees of other metals, to th[e]ende that in these owre partes of Italy, yow may haue sum instruction of practise, whiche may redounde from yow to other, whereby the myndes of all men may receave sum lyght: beinge well assured that newe informations, wilbe the seedes of other newe witties diuines in the vnderstandinges of suche men as with these keys shall open thei wyttes to arryue to suche places wherther they can not els coomme or by any meanes approche. And nowe therfore, byfyde that which I haue fayde vnto yow in generall, I wyl further in particular declare the nature hereof and the generation of the same, with also the signes whiche it sheweth furth, that I do not omyte any thyng. Last of all, I wyll shewe yow howe it ought to bee pourged from superfluou-

in respiracle or
herby the ayer

and all men of
minerals, it is
excellent qualite
re amoneg all
steemed. By
treatise of any
qualities therof,
yet are t're
shulds not be
ll and proper
nate the one
urned tog her
entacion and
ementes, that
order of n.ost
body that we
n, is condense
it remayne th
or the same
the water, it is
whose for e
reef so farre
lykwyse the
superfluite:
h that when
ar, as doo in
urthermore,
of the oth
t of peculi
nryth to the
ich singular
s therfore
f. To con
d hath in it
des of men
eynst it and
many other
itation as a
e which is
[e]jorde of
metals, to
redounde
that newe
with these
ny meanes
particular
arth, that I
uperfluou

earthynes of the mine, after that I shal haue expressed the maner howe it is founde. But forasmuch as I haue not with mine eyes seene the mountaines which conteyne the mynes of golde, or the places where this thyng is put in practise, I wyll only shewe yow (hauyng made diligent inquisition for the same) what hath beene toulde me of credible persons, or what I haue gathered in readyng of dyuers autoures, by whom I am certified for a truth that the greatest plentie of this metall, is founde in *Scithia*, in those prouinces which we commonly caule the East partes, where the sonne extendeth his chies force and vigour. Of these places India is thought to be the chiefe, and especially those Ilandes which the ships of Th[e]emperours maistrie and the kyng of Portugale haue founde of late: as the Ilandes about *Peru* and *Paria* with the firme lande of the same which extendeth it selues very farre on both sydes the Equinoctiall. In Europe also, golde is founde in many places: as in *Aflesia*, and in many places in Boheme. Also in Hungarie, in Rhene, and in Apsa. Plinie sayth that it is lykewyse founde in *Austria* and in Portugale: and that the Romans had from thense yearly. xxiiii. [twenty-four] pounds weyght. And thus speakeynge of this precious metall, I beleue certeynly, that it is and may be engendered in all such places wher the influence of the heuens dispofeth the elementall causes to bryng forth an apte substanciall for this purpose. But nowe intendyng more particularly to speake of the places of the conception hereof, yowe shall vnderstande that it is engendered in dyuers kyndes of stones in great and rowgh mountaynes, and such as are vterly bare of earth, trees, grasse, or herbes. And amoneg all the stones of this myne, that is best which is of a blewe or asurine colour lyke vnto a saphire, and is commonly cauled *Lapis Lazuli*. But it is not bryght and harde as is the saphire. It is also founde in orpemente cauled *Auripigmentum*: but more often in the mynes of other metals. It is lykewyse founde in many prouinces in the fandes of ryuers. That which is founde in the mountaines lyeth in order of veynes betwene quarrey and quarry ioyned with the fayde Azurine stone and myxte therwith. They saye that this myne is so much the better in howe much it is the heuyer and of hyghe colour, shewyng in it many sparkes of gold. They say furthermore that it is engendered in an other stonye lyke vnto faulce marble: but it is of a deade colour. And also in an other whose colour is yellowe with certeyne redde spots within it. They affirme lykewyse that it is founde in certeyne blacke stones, whose veynes sprede dyuers wayes much like the courses of ryuers. They further declare that it is founde in a certeyne bituminous earth, of colour lyke vnto cley and very heauy, hauyng in it a great fauour of brymstone: And that the golde which is founde in this, is very good, and in maner all togyther fyne, yet very harde to bee gottēn owt, bycause it confyfleth of so fmaule sparkes lyke vnto inuisible atomes of such lytelneſſe that they can hardly bee perceaued with the eye. And herein may yow not do as in *Lapis Lazuli*, or other stones, or as the maner is to do with that which is found in the fands of ryuers: the which the more it is waffled, the more it faulthe to the bottome: and in meltynge with the mother of his earthines, doth incorporat it felfe therwith in a brickle substance. But in fine, with much pacience and by one meanes or an other, or by the helpe of quickeſtyuer, it is drawnen owt. Agygne (as I haue fayde before) it is found in the fandes of dyuers ryuers, as in Spayne in the ryuer *Tago*: in *Tracia*, in *Ebro*: in *Asia*, in *Patolo* and *Ganges*. In Hungarie and Boheme, it is founde in *Lafesia* in dyuers ryuers: And in Italie, in the fands of *Tesino*, *Adda*, and *Po*. But not every where in the beddes of theyr chanelles, but in certeyne particular places wher in certeyne cloddies the fande is discouered in the tym of the ouerflowyng of the ryuers when the water leaueth behynd it a fine fande wherwith the fayde golde is myxte in the forme of certeyne fmaule scales, and shwynge graynes. Then in the sommer seafon, with pacience and ingenious practise, the searchers to pourge it from the grofe earthiness of the myne, and wafshe it diligently: preparynge for that effecte, certeyne tables made eyther of the tymber of plane trees, or elme, or whyte nuttes, or such other woodde apte to be fawen, hauing theyr playnes made ful of hackes, and notches, with the helpe of the fawe or such other instrumentes of iren. Vpon these tables standyng sumwhat a slope or declynyng, with a holowe shouel they cast a great quantitiue of water myxt with the fayde fande, which they cast fo, that the water runne downe directly alonge with the tables. And by this meanes the gold, as a matter most heuy, faulthe to the bottome of the fawne hackes, and there restyng and cleauyng fast, is so diuided from the fande. When therfore they perceau a sufficient quantitiue of golde thus remaynyng on the tables, they gather it with diligence and put it in a trey or great shallowle dysſhe of wod lyke vnto thosse which the golde finers vſe: And in these they wafshe it more exactly agyne and agyne from al fylth or vncleynesse. This done, they beate or mixte (or amalgame it as they caule it) with Mercurie or quickefyuer, whiche afterward they seperat agyne from the same eyther by straynyng and pressyng it through a bagge of lether, or by styllynge or evaportatyng the quickefyuer from it in a stylatory of glaſie and so fynde they the golde remaynyng in the bottome of the vessell in the lykenes of fine fande, which they bryng into a metalline body by meltynge it with a litle borage, or salt petre or blacke ſope, and so cast it eyther in the forme of a wedge or a rodde, or otherwyſe a lyketh them bell. And this is the exakte maner of drawyng golde owt of the fandes of riuers, which many haue vſed to theyr great commoditie: And that the rather bycause that in folowing this order of worke in the pourgyng and diuydynge of golde, it shall not bee requisite as in other maner of practisies, to bee at greate charges by reaſon of many men which shall be needfull, with manye murals, fornaces, fiers, and dyuers artificers:

Where moste
plente of golde is
found.
Cathay.
335

Golde in the
Ilandes of the
weste indies.
Golde in Europe.

The influenc(e) of
heauen.

The mountaynes
and stones in the
whiche golde is
engendered.

Lapis Lazuli.

Orpemente.

Golde in other
metals.

Golde in the
fandes of ryuers.

Gold in earth.

Golden duste.

Ryuers in the
which gold is
founde.

The washing
and pourgeinge
of golde.

Howe golde is
deuided frome
sand.

The Spanyardes
make these
dishes with
handes.

The drawyng
out of golde with
quicke ſilver.

336

From whence
golde is derived
into the sandes
of ryuers.

That golde is not
engendered in the
sandes of ryuers.

This mater is
apparent in the
golde founde in
the ryuers in the
Indies.

The fale of
waters from
mountaynes.

337

Springes of water
in mountaynes.

Vegetable golde
growinge owt of
the earthe.

*Of this, reads
Alexander ab
Alexandro. lib.
4 Genitium
diuum. Cap. 9.*

Golde founde in
A deade mans
beade.

wheras in woorkyng after this forte, one man may suffice with one table and one holowe shouell, with a lytle quickefyluer and sufficient abundaunce of water. But lettyng passe to speake any furt^h - of these thynges : perhappes summe man wolde here demaunde from whence this golde is deryued into the sandes of the fayde ryuers, and whether it be brought thither by the water, or engendered there. As touchyng which question, I haue often tymes deliberated with my selfe not without great marueyle : and especially of that which is founde in the sandes of the ryuers of *Tesino, Adda, and Po*, bicause (wheras I haue sayde before that it is brought thither by the course of the water) I can not perceave from whence it shuld be brought, forasmuch as there is no myne of golde, or of any other metal that is knownen, nere to any of those places. By reasoun wherof, my iudgemente is in maner confounded, seinge also that it is the opinion of certeyne wryters, that it is engendered even where it is founde : The which, if it so be, it is not trewe that it is brought thither by the water. Agygne, if it be engendered there, it seemeth to me a difficult thyng to comprehend whether it be brought furthe there by the vertue of the water or the earth, or the heauen. If furthermore any of these shuld be the caufe of the generation hereof, it seemeth agreeable to reasoun that it shulde bee both founde and engendered throughout all the beddes of such ryuers, and at al tymes. And if the influence of heauen be the most prepotent cause of this effecte, then it seemeth to me that it shuld worke immediatly, bicause it can not otherwyse obserue the order whiche nature vseth in the generation of metals : fyrlt brynginge it furth to the open shewe, in the place where aboundeth the continuall isschewe of water, which ought also to be of such force as to remoue the earthly substaunce thereof from place to place, and not to intermixte such great inequalities of coldenesse and moistnes. And albeit that this composition begunne in this order, shuld not be disperced or broken by the waters of the ryuers, yet it appeareth to me that the flowers of rayne and increafe of fluddes, shulde be of sufficient poure to distemper, breake, and vterly destroy all such compositions as shulde be engendered in such places, forasmuch al thynges are conceaued by rest and quietnesse after the commixtion of the fyrlt elementes. And therfore if this golde of the ryuers, bee there engendered where it is founde, I wolde it were declared vnto me why it is engendered only in these places and not in other : and why in lyke maner, syluer, copper, leade, or any other metals are not also engendered there as well as golde, beinge matters of an easyer composition of nature then it is, by reasoun of the perfecte vnitie and concordance with purite of substaunce and perfecte concoction which is in golde aboue all other metals : whereas also in many places in the territories of Rome, there are founde many sparkes of the mine of iren of blacke colour amoung the sandes of certeyne smaule ryuers : And yet these only in certeyne particular places of the fayde ryuers : whereby it appeareth that these also, shulde not bee engendered where they are founde. By all which reasouns and apparent effectes, it seemeth most agreeable to truth that the golde which is found in such sandes, is rather brought thither by the water, then engendered there. And therefore to declare my mynde more playnely herein, I suppose that this chaunceth only in great ryuers which receave abundaunce of waters of dyuers springes, foles, and other ryuers, engendered partly of the meltynge of snowe and partly of great showers of rayne, whiche faulynge in certeyne chanelles from the toppes and fydes of [the] mineral mountaynes, wasshe away parte of the earth of theyr bankes and the ouerhanginge and holowe rockes which may conteyne the substaunce of golde : Or otherwyse, that in such places, there are ordinarie mines in the hyghe mountaynes or other superficiall owt places, perhappes incessable and eyther such whither men can not come for extreme heate or cold or other hynderaunes, or els such as they haue contempned to searche : And yet the fame to bee so confimed by the force of water as we haue sayde, and by the courfe therof to bee caried into the ryuers. It may also chaunce that suche mynerall earthes bee farre within the mountaynes neare vnto such ryuers : And that in the space of many years, the sprynges isschewynge owt of the same, may eyther bee dried vp (whiche thyng hath byn feene) or els turne theyr courfe an other way So that it is no maruayle if in such a multitude of yeres, the trewe originall of these thynges bee vnknownen even vnto them that dwell nere such places. But in fine, how so euer it bee, trewe it is that golde is founde in the sandes of many ryuers : And particularly (as I haue noted) in the forenamed ryuers. And if therefore I haue marayled at this thyng, I ought worthely to bee excused, forasmuch as where iudgement can not bee certified by reasoun or effectuall app[er]eance, there arise many doubtfull conjectures and newe causes of admiration. But yet do I maruel much more of an other thyng the which I am informed to bee most trewe by the report of many credible perfons : That is, that in sume places of Hungarie at certeyne tymes of the yeare, pure golde spryngeth owt of the earthe in the lykeneſſe of smaule herbes, wretched and twyned lyke smaule stalkes of hoppes, about the byggenesse of a pack thred, and fourre fyngers in length or fume a handful. As concernyng whiche thyng, Plinie also in the. xxxiii. [thirty-third] booke of his naturall historie, wryteth the lyke to haue chaunced in *Dalmatia* in his tym. The which (if it bee trewe) fulerly the husbande men of these fieldes shall reape heauenly and not earthly frutes, sent them of god from heauen, and brought furth of nature withoutt theyr traualye or arte. A grace doubleſſe most espcial, syth that in ſo great a quantite of earth graunted to the poffession of men, in maner onely this is thought worthy ſo hygh a priuileage. But what ſhall I fay of that wherof *Albertus Magnus* wryteth in his booke of minerals, affirmyng he that hath feene golde engendered in a

deade mans heade : And that the same beinge founde by chaunce in dyggyng, and perceaued by the weyght and coloure to conteyne sum minerall substaunce, was proued by experiance to holde a portion of fine golde mixte with smaule sande. And in deede his woordes seeme to founde to none other fence but only that this precious metall was engendered there by the great disposition of the place and stonge influence of heauen : The which fuerlie is a thynge hardely to be beleued. Yet confyderynge th[e] autorite of so greate a clerke, with the force of the superior causes and the maruelous poure of nature, I had rather gyue sayth hereto then rafhely to contemne the iudgement of so greate a clarke. And forasmuche as I haue begun to tell yow of these effectes, I wyll not omytte to shewe yowe of a straunge thynge which chaunced also in a part of Hungarie, where a myne of gold was so found by chaunce and vnfought for, that it may neverthelesse be an aduertisement to other to seache diligently. So it is therefore, that a woman of the contrey beinge accustomed to reforte with her bucke of clothes to wasshe them in a certeyne fosse or dike where ranne a lytle water, and vlyng to beate and rubbe them vpon a stone which seemed commodious for her purpoe, chaunced at the length by her good fortune to espie on the stone, a veyne of golde traufryng or ouerwhartinge the same abowte the byggynesse of a grofe packe threede, fnewyng fayre and bright by reasoun of her much rubbynge. Wherat marueylyng dayly more and more, at the length opened the matter to her familiers : who conferryng with such as hadde better skyll of the thynge, founde it in fine to bee a veyne of pure golde : And that the quarrie of that stone, traufred the course of the water of the fosse. Remouyng therfore the water, and turning the course thereof an other waye, they beganne to dygge and folow the mine which hath now continued certeine. C. [hundred] yeares fence it was fyrt found : And hath not only greatly enriched that contrey, But also all Christendome hath had great commodite by the same. This haue I rehearsed vnto yow the rather that yow shulde not bee negligent in any poyn特 or omitte any signe or token whereby yowe may bee certified of greate thynges : not contemnyng the shadowe of any smaule tokens : but awel to gyue attente care and eye vnto them, as to feare and forefee all such thynges as may hynder. For (as yow may hereby well perceave) if credit had not fyrt byn gyuen to the woordes of the simple wooman, and the thynge afterwarde well folowed, perhapses they shulde neyther nor euer hereafter haue enjoyed the frute of so great a commoditie. Men therfore of good courage folowyng fuch ryche signes, dyd nother feare the smaulenesse of the veyne or hardnesse of the stone : presupposyng by good reasoun that golde and syluer can not lightly bee founde in so smaule quantitie, but that the same that be able to furmounte the charges. And this the more, in howe much the further yow shall enter into the stone, as chaunceth commonly in all other mynes. Albeit, the practised searchers, faye that the myne of golde is not founde in such great quantitie as are the mynes of other metals. Wherin although perhapses they fay trewly, yet dooth it not folowe but that golde also maye be founde in greate quantitie. And furerly it feemeth to me, that the benignite of nature hath graunted large quantities thereof to the worlde, and that much hath euer byn and is founde amoung men, confyderyng in how many places it is dayly gathered awel in mountaynes as in fandes of ryuers, by syde that whiche is founde accompanied and ioyned with other metals. A further profe hereof may that bee, which is confummed and hydde by the dyuers inuentions of men : As that whiche the paynters beslowe in adournynge their woorkes : And goldefmythes both in glytynge other metals and also in makyng dyuers woorkes of mafie golde : by syde that which the woorker of clothe of golde and arras doo consume : with such as imbrotherers and sylke woomen spende abowt the vanities of men and wemens apparell and tyrementes. Alfo such as is consumed vpon trappers and furnimentes for horses, with gylted harnestes and such other sumptuousnes as perteyneth to the warres and magnifical buydinges of noble mens houses and temples : By syde that also whiche the couetousnesse of men hath hydde in stonge waules, and buried in the grounde, inclosed in chayned cofers locked with triple keyes : And that which ferueth to the dayly vyses of men and wandereth about the worlde through the handes of marchauntes. The whiche thynges well confydred, who so thinketh that nature bringeth furth but lyttle golde, shall perceave that there is greate quantitie therof in the worlde, although there bee but fewe that haue so much as may satisfie the thirfl of theyr couetousnesse. And to speake particularly of Italie, althoough there bee no myne of golde knownen in it, yet by the vertue and diligence of good wyttes, it hath euer and at all ages byn more ryche then many other prouinces : Notwithstandinge it hath often tymes byn spoyled and ouerrunne of dyuers nations, as nowe of late in owe tyme by the cruell handes of the Barbarians which entered into it abowt. xl. [forty] yeares past. But who knoweth (as hath chaunced in the dayes of owe valient prediceffors) whether Godde wyll ageyne gyue vs occasion to chastife them and so to inuade theyr regions that wee maye woonne owe owne ageyne with increase of dowlle vfurie. Or if he wyll not permittie this, perhapses he wyll graunte vs to fynde sum ryche myne of golde. For, confyderynge and fayne that this owe region of Italie is replenyfshed with as many excellent thynges as in maner heauen can gyue to any habitable place, it is not to bee thought that this benefite of golde shulde bee wantyng, wheras it bryngeth furth such plentie of al other mines except this of golde and tynne. And yet doo I verely beleue that it is not withoutt the mynes of these also, although they be not yet discouered to the knowleage of men : As I am perswaded bothe by the golde that is founde in the sayd ryuers, and also by the dyuers and sundry

A myne of golde
founde by chaunce

A wayne of golde
in a stone.

No signes to be
omitted.

338

golde is not
in like
quantitie as are
other metals.
entes of
plentye of
golde.

Howe diuers
waynes golde
is consumed.

Many haue to
muche, but fewe
have enough:
Italie wasted by
the barbarians.

Commendacion
of Italie

Golde and tynne

Meane minerals.

The golde of
Italie.

Golde contayned
in other metalls.

The maner of
pourgynge of golde.

339

Lapis Lazuli.

Azure.

Hewe golde is
drawnen from
Lapis Lazuli with
quickefyluer.

The baine or
test of leade.

The maner of
pourgynge golde
with leade.

Whether syluer
have A mine by
hit selfe or no.

Georgius Agricola.
A table of mineral
syluer.

The workes of
nature.

Mixte metalls.

meane minerals which are founde in many places and adiudged of the practicionars to bee certeyne cleare tokens of theyr proper and natural agentes. But for that they are not found, fele, or seene, we ought not therby to affirme that they are not. To conclude therfore, I thinke that in owr partes of Italie, pure golde is none other wayes founde (excepte that which is currant amoung the marchauntes) then after two fortis, wherof the one is that which is founde in the fandes of ryuers : And the other, that whiche is gotten by the industrious and subtile art of partyng gold from new syluer, or from giltyng syluer, or other metals which hold gold, as there are in maner but fewe which hold not sum small portion therof, more or lesse according to the mixtion and permanencie of theyr substances, or accordyng to the qualitie and force of the planettes which expresse theyr influence in the generation of them. And in fine, this is the golde that which is founde in owe partes of Italie. Nowe therfore to retorne to the matter whereof is owe chiefe intente to intreate, hauyng before spoken suffici-ently of the generation and inuention of the myne of golde, I wyll further declare vnto yow howe it ought to be pourgued from earthly superfluite, and especially that whiche is founde lyng in the forme of veynes, and although I haue not seene the edifi[ces] and engens wherwith the myners are accustomed to get it owt, yet wyll I shewe yow howe by other practises I haue learned to pourge it, that yow may not bee without sum knowleage yf your fortune shalbe so good as to fynde any in Italy. When yow haue therfore dygged owt the myne and placed it in order, yow ought to consider in what kynde of stonye it is engendered. And if it bee in that which is cauled *Lapis Lazuli*, then muste yow so drawe owt the golde that yow also faue the stonye, bycause perfecte Azur is made therof, and such as the paynters caule *Azurro Ultramarino*, that is, Azur of beyonde the sea, which they greatly esteeme and bye it deare. And to do this, it is necessary that yow fynt beat it into fine pouder, and then put it in a trey or brode treene dyshe, and wasshe it fayre and cleane with water. This done amalgame or rubbe it well with quickefyluer vntyll it haue lycked vppe and drawne al the golde into it and left the stonye pure of it selfe. Then strayne the quickefyluer from the golde through a bagge of lether, or vapour it away in a stylatorie of glase : And thus shal yow fynde the golde in the bottome of the vessell in maner pure without quickefyluer, as I haue sayde before. And if yow haue no respecte to faue the stonye, it shall suffice to vse the commone experience, melyng it in a fornace in a bayne or teste of leade. But in my opinion, the best maner to bryngye it to purenesse, is fyrl to burne the mine with a gentell fyre in an open fornace, and to suffer it to euaporate well if it bee not in such stonye as yow desyre to faue. Then grynde it in a mylle or beat it with pestel's adapted with a wheele vntyll it be brought to fine pouder. And when yow haue wel wasshed it and so much wasted the superfluous earthynesse therof, then put it in a teste made accordyng to the quantite of the same, and melt it therin with leade whiche yow shall confume partly by vapoure and partly with drawynge it owt by the syde of the teste (as is the maner) vntyll yow come to the pure golde whiche yow shall in fine bryngye to perfecte purenesse in vterly consumyng the remanent of the leade with vehement fire increased by the helpe of stronge bellowes. And this is the vniuersal maner which yow may vse not only in pourgynge the myne of golde, but also the mynes of all other metals.

Of the myne of siluer and the qualitie therof.



Here are (as I vnderstande) diuers opinions emonge the practicionars of the mynes, whether syluer haue a proper myne by it selfe or no. The reasons of suche as write of the natures of mineralles, and th[e]autoritie of the most, persuade me to assent to the affirmative : Not only to see the naturall matter distincke, as is to perceave in the mynes of golde, copper, leade and other metals whiche in theyr mynes are found pure by them selues without mixtion, but also that I understand that there hath bin found likewyse certeyne pieces awfull of this metall of syluer, as of gold and copper, brought to his laste fynesse by th[e]only worke of nature. And this dooth *Georgius Agricola* a lerned man of Germany confirme in his booke of minerals where he writheth that in Saxonie there was found in a caue a piece of mineral syluer of such bignes, that the duke the prince and patronne of that place, caused a chayre and square dyninge table after the maner of Almanye to be made therof withoute any further woorke of mans hande : Glorynge often tymes that in this thyng he furmounted the greatnesse and magnificence of the Emperoure. But in deede (excepte copper) I haue seene no metall taken owt of the caue pure without his vre. Yet doo I beleue it a thyng possible, confyderinge the greate force and poure of nature, th[e]ende of whose woorkynge euer intendeth to bringe all thynges to perfection as farre as it is not otherwyse hyndred. Yet (as I haue sayde) of the mooste parte of those mynes whiche I haue seene, none of them haue byn without mixture, not only of the earthe of their owne proper myne, but haue byn also myxte with other metals : And especially this of syluer more then any other, excepte onylie that which was digged in *Schio*, in *Vicentina*. And therefore not without sum shadow of apparent reason, haue suche doubtes risin

certeyne cleare
we owght not
pure golde is
fortes, wherof
the industrious
gold, as there
e mixtion and
expreffe theyr
partes of Italie,
spoken suffici-
ewe it owght to
of veynes, and
t owt, yet wyll
um knoleage
the myne and
in that which
cause perfecte
yonde the sea,
te it into fine
water. This
e golde into it
e of lether, or
n the vessell in
the stome, it
e. But in my
re in an open
gnydre it in
nd when yow
a teste made
ne partly by
e come to the
enant of the
manner which

nes, whether
he natures of
e: Not only
er, lead and
ion, but also
is mettall of
ature. And
e writeth
e prince and
made therof
ounted the
ettall taken
te force and
e as it is not
ne, none of
also myxte
s digged in
ubtes risin

amonge the practicionars of the mynes. And yet (as I haue sayd) I beleue that siluer may haue and hath his proper mine, forasmuche as eury substauence that maye be conuerted into metall, may awell stande by it selfe pure in his owne kynde, as ethyer seperate or mixte with other, as is often times feene in one masse in the whiche diuers metals are conteyned and engendered by nature. And by this meanes it often chaunceth that he that speakeith of the mine of siluer, may with the same brethe and without distinction, speake also of all other metales, forasmuche as there are but fewe mynes which are not mixte with other. But bycause the mooste noble and ryche metals haue obteyned the prerogative to be esteemed aboue other, therfore the name of the myne is gyuen to them wher they are mixte with other: as the mynes which holde copper, leade, or iren, (as doo the mooste parte) yet if they holde also golde or syluer, they are cauled gold mynes or syluer mynes, according vnto that which is founde in them to bee of most value. But to lette passe this matter, yowe shall further vnderstande that when suche mynes are mixte of dyuers metals, they shew furth so much the more diuers and variable fumosites of tinctures and marchasites, as signes where they bee and of what purenesse: forasmuch as eury of them according to their natures, exalte their colours which they shewe furthe to the eye, sum in the similitude of asurine or blewe stones, sum greene, sum yellowe, and sum of vndistinct colours accordyng to the compositions and mixtures of the fyrt matters of metals, which is also the cause that they are founde more or lesse in quantitie. Nowe to speake more particularly of this metall of syluer, the philosophers speculatours of naturall thynges, saye that it is engendered of substauence more watery then fyerie, of complexion feminine and flegmatike in comparision to gold: receauyng more of the influence of the moone then of the son, and therfore engendered more in coulde regions nerer vnto the moone, then in hotte regions vnder the sonne: consisting also of pure elementes, although sumwhat crude and vndygested in respecte of the elementes of golde as may bee plainlye perceaued by their colours, weyght, and fixation. The practicionars affirme that it is engendered in a stone lyke vnto *Albazano*, and also in an other stome of a russet, deade, and darke colour: And is often tymes founde in an other stome lyke vnto *Trevertino* or in *Trevertino* it selfe. The myne hereof, is very ponderous, and hathe in it often tymes certeyne shynynge graynes: The which howe much the lesse they are like to the poynte of a needle so muche is the myne founde to bee the perfecter, bycause this is a token of purenesse and fixion. And when it is founde in a whyte stome, or leade stome, it is so muche the better, bycause it maye be the easyer pourged from the stome and earthynesse. When also it is founde lyinge as it were loose amoge certaine scales or cloddies of earth, they saye that it is perfecte, although it haue not to the eye suche resplendence as other are wonte to haue. They say also that it is engendered in an earth of darke russet colour: And that when it is founde in this, it is of great quantitie and perfection, and that there is great plentie therof within the mountayne: This also to be so much the better in howe much more it is shynynge of the coloure of iren or redde. And that yowe may the better comprehend the signes of the myne of the foresayde metall, yowe shall vnderstand that even togither with the myne, ethyer where it is fyrsle founde, or nere vnto the sam, yowe shall see certeyne marchasites of yellowe colour lyke vnto golde. The which, the more they holde of suche hyghe colour, so much the more do they shewe adust or burnt matter and heate, as thynges contrary to the nature of theyr metals. And therfore accordyng to the degrees of suche colours, yow may in maner judge of what fatnes or leanenesse the myne is lyke to bee. Such marchasites therfore as shewe the best signes of the goodnesse of theyr mynes, owght in colour to approche to whytenesse as much as may bee, and to confyst of fmaule graynes, and not in greate quantitie. And this is a generall rule of all marchasites, that howe much the narrower and lesse they are, the more do they shewe the goodnesse of theyr myne. This myne of syluer is also often times founde in a veyne of great quantitie, and yet so leane in qualitie that it wyll not beare the charge of the dyggynge, bicause it is founde in a harde stome lyke vnto *Abazano*, beinge verye harde to bee dygged or broken. Sum tymes also, it is found in the company of copper or leade: The which lykewyse if it do not surmounte the value of the charges, it is not to bee folowed. Otherwhyles also, it fo chaunceth that these thre metals are founde accompanied togither in one myne: In whiche case it shalbe necessarie to vfe aduertisement of arte. And presupposyng that yowe desyre to separate the syluer frome the other metall, it is necessarie that yowe increase the leade. But if yow passe not to faue neyther the syluer nor the leade, but only the copper, it shalbe requisite to proceade with longe and great fyers vnyl the weakest matters bee consumed. But this owght to be doone especially in such mines as hold iren. Yet neyther for this or thofe, can there any general rule be gyuen, but that accordyng vnto theyr qualitie and nature, so owght they to be diuided: And this so much the more in that they are often tymes mixte with sum drye earthe, or with a quantitie of antimonie or arsenike, which are matters allogther evaporable and burnte, or of harde substauence to bee reduced to fusion or meltyng: In so much that the artificers sumtymes beinge ouercumme of them, leaue them as thynges vnprofitable. Wherof there can none other cause often times be gyuen, then theyr owne ignorauance by reason of extraordinarie and longe fyers whiche they gyue them. And therefore they woorke inordinately in such kynd of mynes, except they accompane them in the fusion or meltyng with such thinges as may defende them from the fyre. For wheras is suche abund-

340
Diuers metals in
one mase.

In the Indies
golde founde in
greate quantitie,
pure and vanmixte.

The coulours of
mineral fumosites.

The generacion
and qualite of
silver.

The influences
of the myne.

Stones in the
which syluer is
engendered.

The myne of
syluer.

The mountayne.

Marchasites of
syluer.

What marchasites
are the beste
signes.

Syluer mynfe)s
in harde stones.

Syluer with
copper or leade.

The deuyng of
silver from other
mettals.

341
Iren.

Metals mixte with
Antimonie or
Arsenike

Howe metals are
preservid in
fusion.

Sulphur and
mercury.

Grinding and
washinge of
mynes.

The amalgamynge
of mines with
Mercury.

Mines holdyng
the fforthe part
of siluer.

Copper holdinge
syluer.

Thre vnces vi. of
siluer in every
hundredth of mine
War betwene
Maximilian
Th[emperour]
and the Venetians.

The mynes of
Almanye.

The marchasite
mixte with the
myne.

342

daunce eyther of burnte matter, or of superfluous waterynesse, wherof the one is cauled *Sulphur* or brymstone, and the other Mercurie or quicksyluer not fixed, or arsenike, it is necessarie that the one burne the syluer, and the other cary it a way, so that of the myne there resteth none other then an earthye substancialle insuffisant and not able to bee molten. To sauе the fayde myne therefore it shalbe requisite to vse discretion with much pacience and conueniente meanes, fyrlie after the common maner of woorkynge to euaporate the myne (as wee haue fayde) or without euaporation to grinde it fmaule: then to wasshe it often, and in fine, if not by great fyres, at the leaste by great baynes or testes of leade to pourge it. And to bryng this effect the more easely to passe as much as may be, after that it is grounde yow owght to proue in the same grindyng or in an other, if it may be amalgamed with Mercurie which is the best maner of profe, if the myne bee of a drye nature: And I knowe that it hath bynne vfed of many to theyr greate profyte: And especially in thosse forte of mynes which I fayde before to bee dygged in *Vigentina* in *Schio*, beinge very ryche and good. Proue it therfore. For all kyndes of mines do not receave it. And of this wherof I haue frenken, I haue intelligence that there hath bynne pieces founde holdyng a fourtie part of syluer, and sum more then halfe. And this was founde lyng in maner in the superficiall part. of the earth: and sum tymes in pathes and high wayes. It hath also bin founde vnder the rootes of fuche trees as haue byn ouerthrown by tempeste: and this very perfecte. So that emonge all the mynes whiche I haue feene in the dominions of Venice, as in Carnia and in many other places, I can not saye that I haue feene any better: Although there bee many caues wherof the most parte are of copper holdinge syluer: and emonge other, that in the mountayne of *Auanzo*, where I in the company of certeyn other gentlemen caused a caue to bee digged. And bycause the hole charge was committed to mee, I wente by occafion twyfe into high Almanye to see the mynes of that countrey, wherby I might haue the better experiance to faule to practyse at my retурne. In so much that I founde the mine which we had taken in hande to folowe, to bee very good and ryche: holdyng more then three vnces and a halfe of syluer in every hundredth of the myne. And doublefesse we shuld haue obteyned great commoditie hereby if fortune at that tyme had not rayfed warre betwene Maximilian Th[e]Emperoure and the signorie of Venece: which was the cause that thosse places of *Priuli* and *Carnia*, coulde not be quietly inhabited: whereby we were enforced to forfake ourre enterpryse, and to rafe and destroy th[e]order which we had begunne. And by reasoun that the warres continued longe, we were constrainyd to diuide our company, where I also departed an other way, hauyng euer in mynde to folowe ourre attempted enterpryse when better oportunitie shulde serue. In the meane tymе returninge into hygh Almanie, I made more diligent searche to knowe the mynes then before: and went to *Shozzo*, *Plaizer*, *I[n]spruch*, *Alla*, and *Arottinbergh*: from whence I wente into dyuers places of Italy. So that to conclude, the most and best mynes whiche I haue feene to holde most of syluer, are thosse that are founde in *Vicentina* in certeyne stones of a dark grey, or russet colour, as I haue fayde before. And nowe for a generall aduertisement, I wyll not omyt to tell yow, that when yow haue attempted to dygge any mynes, and haue founde the marchasite and the myne myxt togither, yow shall leauue of yourre woorke, bycause it signifieth that the myne is neare to the superficiall part of the earth, and that it is of but lyttle quantitie. And thus as touchyng this myne of syluer, I can say no more fayngne that I haue not yet shewed yow the maner of pourgyng it from earthly grofenes and to bryng it to perfect metall. But bycause I haue determined to speake largely hereof in the proper place of the fusick or meltynge of all metals, I haue thought good to speake no further of this matter at this prefente.

THE MANER OF WORKYNGE IN GOLDE
MYNES IN EGIpte IN OWLD TYME, AFTER THE
DESCRIPTION OF DIODORVS SICVLVS, WHO WROTT HIS HISTORIE
cauled Bibliotheca, sumwhat before the dayes of th[e]emperoure
Octauianus Augustus, and before th[e]incarnation of
Christ abowt. xl. [forty] yeares.

He wryteth therefore in his fourthe booke as foloweth.



E haue not thought good to pretermis howe golde is founde, digged, and wrought amonthe the Egyprians. In the confines therefore of Egyp where it borthereth with Ethiopia and Arabia, there are certeyne places frutfull of metalles, owt of the whiche, golde is digged with great laboure and expenses. For a blacke earthe of minerale nature, hath certeyne vaynes of moste white marble exceedinge bright and shyninge. The furveyours of this woorke, haue assignd them a great company of men to wolke and coyne golde. For the kinges of Egyp are accustomed to appoynte to these payneluff traualles, all fuche as haue byn convicte for certeyne crimes and condemned by lawes, or taken prisoners in the warres, or fuche as haue byn committed to prisone through the indignation of princes who by this meanes haue bothe great vantage by their laboure, and punyfche them sufficently for their offens. For barbarous and strange fouldiers of diuers langaugies, bare rule ouer them and keepe them to theyr worke, in fuche forte that th[e]lufe of speache beinge taken from them, they can not bee corrupted by loue or intreacie. They drawe golde owt of the hardest earth decocte with much fyre. The softest stome which is broken with meane labour, is digged with instruments of iren by the trauayle of many thousands of men. The scrier which decerneth the veines of the myne, go[es]t before the workemen, appoynting them the places where they shall digge. The marble stome whiche he sheweth them, they breake and cleave with wedgies of iren by the mere strength of their bodies withoute arte. They make their fosse or caue, not right furthe, but as the bright nature of the golden marble leadeth them, beinge otherwyse darke and obscure by reason of their sundry turnes and bendinges diuers wayes. The labourers caryng light before theyr for[e]-heads, digge great stones owt of the myne, whyche they let faule on the ground. From this labour they never rest, inforced to contynual woorke with strokcs and contumelious wordes. Children of th[e]age of. xii. [twelue] or. xiii. [thirteen] yeares or vppewarde, are diuided into two companyes, whereof the one breake the stomes into smaule pieces, and the other cary furth that which is broken. They that are past th[e]age of. xxx. [thirty] yeares, receave the sayd broken stomes at theyr hands and beate them in vessells of stome with maules of iren, to the quantiti of tares or fytches: which afterward they cast into many milles, whereby the laboure of two or three women or owlde men to every mylle, they are grounde as smaule as meale. The sythiness of the bodies of these labourers, is apparent to all men. For not so muche as their priuie members are couered with any thinge: And theyr bodies bysyde so fylthy, that no man can beholde them without compassion of their miserie. But no pitie, no reſte, no remifion is graunted them, whether they bee men or women, younge or owlde, fycke or feeble: But are all with strokcs inforced to continual labour vntyl the poore wretches faint and often tymes dye for extreme debilitie: In so much that many of them for feare of their lyfe to coomme (which they thynke woorfe then the present Payne) preferre death before lyfe. When they haue thus grounde the stomes very smaule, they cast that subfaunce vpon brode tables inclynyng sumwhat flipe or flandyng a slope, and cast water thereon, steryng continually the sayde pouder of marble: by the meanes wherof the earth and vre of the myne is waffled away, and the golde as the heauer matter remayneith on the tables. When they haue doone thus often tymes, they ouerturne the golde continually with their handes and rub it with thynne sponges, owt of the which they presse a fofte earth, and thus continewe vntyll the pure metall remayne lyke vnto golden fande. After that this preparation is fynysched, other woorkemen receavynge it at theyr handes by measure and weyght, cast it into earthen pottes, puttynge thereto a certeyne portion of leade, with branne of barly, and weedes of the sea cauled reites or ouse. These thynges proportioned accordingly, they close the pottes diligently with cley, and so let them stand in a furnesse with fyre for the space of fyue continuall dayes and nyghtes. In which space, al other thinges of contrary mixture beinge consumed, only the golde is found in the vessels, sumwhat dimynyshed of the fyrt weight. And by this labour and diligence is golde possessed in the furthest parte of Egypt. Wherby, euene nature her selfe teacheth vs howe laborious it is in syndyng, tedious in pursyng, daungerous in keepyng, and in vse constitute betwene pleasure and forowe.

Golde in a black
earthe, and white
marble

Then damned to
the metales as
nowe to the
gallies.

The scrier of the
myne.

Golden marble.

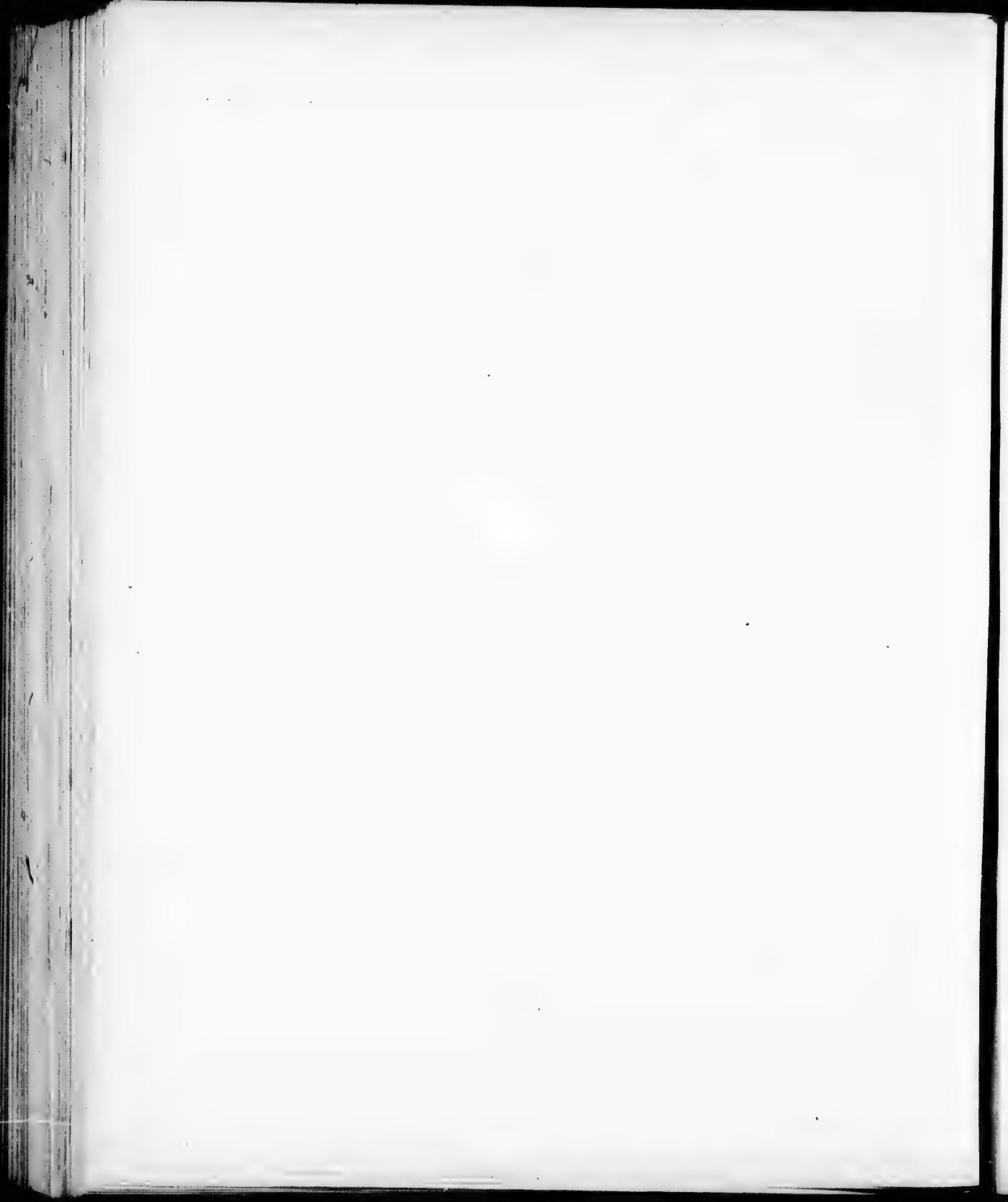
The woorke of
chydren.

Mylles.
The misery of
the maners

The pouringe of
the metall frome
the vre.

The melting of
golde.
343

Alge.



[The Third English book on America,

Which is also

THE FIRST ENGLISH COLLECTION OF VOYAGES, TRAFFICS, & DISCOVERIES.

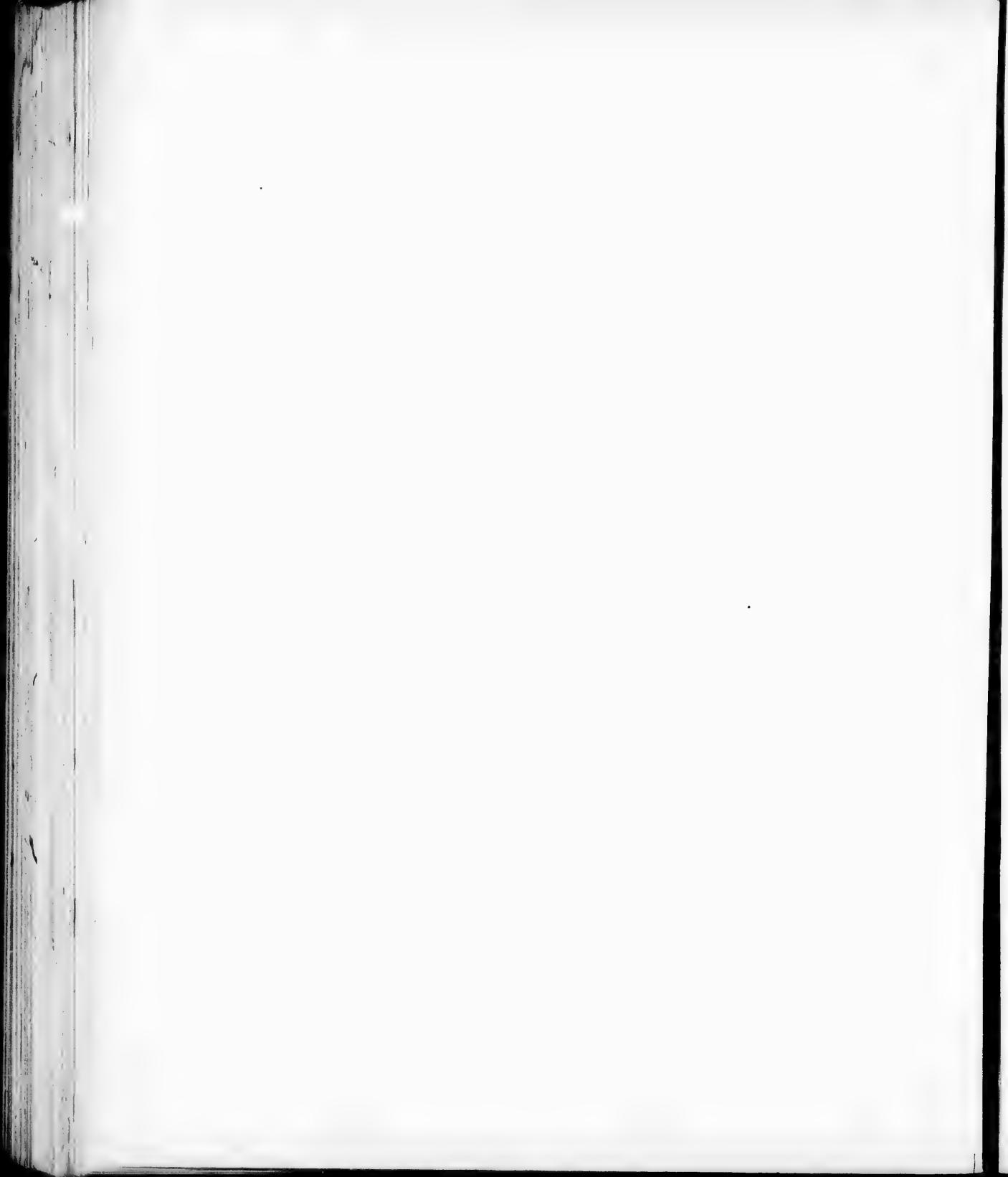
The Decades of the newe worlde or west India, etc.

—o—

SECTION VII.

*The first two Voyages out of
England into Guinea.*

1553-1554 A.D.]



THE DISCRIPTION OF THE TWO VIAGES
MADE OWT OF ENGLAND INTO GVINEA IN AFFRIKE
AT THE CHARGES OF CERTEYNE MARCHAVNTES ADVENTVRERS
of the citie of London, in the yeare of owre Lorde.

M. D. LIII.



Hat these vyages to Guinea are placed after the booke of Metals as separate frome other vyages, the cause hereof is, that after I had delyuered the sayde booke of metalles to the handes of the printers, I was defyred by certeyne my frendes to make summe mention of these viages, that sum memorie myght thereof remayne to our posteriteit if ethyer iniquite of tyme consumyng all thinges, or ignorauance creepynge in by barbaroufnesse and contempte of knowleage, shulde hereafter bury in obliuion so woorthy attempts, so much the greatlyer to bee esteemed as before neuer enterprysed by Englyssh men, or at the leaste so frequented as at this prent they are and may bee to the grete commodite of owe marchauntes, if the fame be not hyndered by th[e] ambition of such as for the conqueslynge of fortie or fyftie myles here and there, and erectyng of certeyne fortresses or rather blockhouses amoneg naſt people, thinken them selues woorthy to bee lordes of haſe the worlde, enuyng that other shulde enioy the commodities which they them selues can not holy poſſeſſe. And although ſuch

Ambition.

as haue byn at charges in the diſcouerynge and conqueslynge of ſuch landes, owt by good reaſon to haue certeyne priuilegies, preeminenties, and tributes for the fame, yet (to ſpeake vnder correction) it may feeme ſumwhat rigorous and ageynt good reaſon and conſcience, or rather ageynt the charitié that owt to bee amoneg Chryſtian men, that ſuch as violently iuade the dominions of other, ſhuld not permit other frendeli to vfe the trade of marchandies in places neuer or ſeldome frequented of them, wherby their trade is not hindered in ſuch places where they them ſelues haue at theyr owne election appoynted the martes of their traſike. But forasmuche as at this preſente it is not my intent to accufe or defend, approue or improue, I wil ceafe to ſpeake any further hereof, and proceade to the deſcription of the fyrti viage as briefely and fauthfully as I was aduertified of the fame by th[e] information of ſuch credible perſons as made diligent inquiftion to knowe the truthe hereof as much as ſhalbe requisite, omyttynge to ſpeak of many particular thynges not greatly neceſſarie to be knownen: whiche neuertheleſſe with alſo th[e] exacte courſe of the nauigation, ſhal be more fully declared in the ſecond vyage. And if herein fauoure or frendſhippe ſhall perhaſpſe cauſe ſum to thiſke that ſum haue byn ſharpli touched, let them laye a parte fauoure and frendſhippe and gyue place to truthe, that honest men may receaue prayſe for well doinge, and lewde perſons reproche as the iuft ſtipende of theyr euyll defertes, whereby other may bee deterred to do the lyke, and vertuous men encouraged to proceade in honest attempts.

But that theſe vyages may bee more playnely underſtode of al men, I haue thought good for this purpoſe before I intreat hereof, to make a breſe deſcription of Afriка beinge that greate parte of the worlde, on whose Weste fyde begynneth the coaſt of Guineā at Cabo Verde abowt the. xiij. [twelve] degrees in latitude on this fyde the Equinoctiall line, and two degrees in longitude from the meafuryng line, fo runnyng from the north to the ſouth and by eaſt in ſum places within v. iiiij. and. iii. degrees and a halfe within the Equinoctiall, and ſo furth in maner directly eaſt and by north for the ſpace of. xxxvi. [thirty-six] degrees or there abowt in longitude from the West to the Eaſt, as ſhall more playnely appere in the deſcription of the ſeconde vyage.

Africa.
The coaſt of
Guinea.

344

Tunes.
Bugia.
Tripoli.
Numidia.

Ilandes of Tunes.
Malta.
The deserts of Libia.

Barbarie.
Mauritania.
The kingdoms of Fes and marrock.
Tremesin.
Oram.
Nassaquier
Salla.
Azamor.

The Ilandes of Canarie.
Guinea.
Ethiopians.

Marrocko.
Fes.
Tremesin.
Guinea.

Afrike the great.

Afrike the lesse.

Carthage.

Prester Iohn.

Cape de Buona Speranza.
The sea of sande.
Alcair.

345

From whence the queene of Saba came.
Manicongni.
The earthly Paradise.
The trees of the sunne and moone.



A BREEFE DESCRIPTION OF AFFRIKE.

NAfrica the lesse are these kyngedomes : The kyngedome of Tunes, and Conflantina which is at this day vnder Tunes, and also the region of Bugia, Tripoli, and Ezzab. This part of Afrike is very baren by reason of the greate desertes, as the desertes of Numidia and Barcha. The principall portes of the kyngedome of Tunes are these : Goletta, Bizerta, Portofurnia, Boua, and Stora. The chiefe cities of Tunes, are Conflantia and Boua with dyuers other. Vnder this kyngedome are many Ilandes, as Zerbi, Lampadola, Pantalarea, Limofo, Beit, Gamelaro, and Malta where at this presentis is the greate master of the Rodes. Vnder the southe of this kyngedome, are the great desertes of Libia. Al the nations [of] this Africa the less, are of the fecture of Machomet and a rustical people lyuyng scattered in vylages. The bestis of this parte of Afrike, is Barbarie lyng on the coaste of the sea Mediterraneum.

Mauritania (nowe cauled Barbarie) is diuided in two partes, as Mauritania Tingitania, and Cefariensis. Mauritania Tingitania, is nowe cauled the kyngdome of Fes and the kyngedome of Marrocko. The principall citie of Fes, is cauled Feffa : and the chiefe citie of Marrocko, is named Marrocko. Mauritania Cefariensis is at this day cauled the kyngedome of Tremisen, with also the citie cauled Temisen or Trelenfin. This region is full of desertes, and reacheth to the sea Mediterraneum to the citie of Oram with the porte of Maffaquber. The kyngedome of Fes reacheth unto the Ocean sea from the West to the citie of Argilla : and the porte of the fayde kyngedome is cauled Salla.

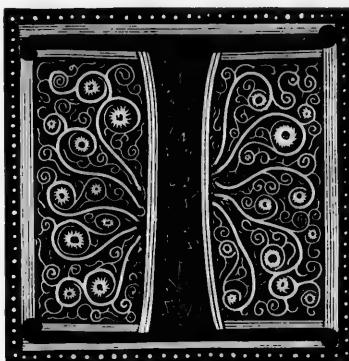
The kyngedome of Marrocko is also extended aboue the Ocean sea vnto the citie of Azamor and Azafi whiche are aboue the Ocean sea towarde the West of the fayde kyngdome. In Mauritania Tingitanee (that is to say in the two kyngedomes of Fes and Marrocko) are in the sea, the Ilandes of Canarie cauled in owlde tyme the fortunate Ilandes. Toward the south of this region, is the kyngedome of Guinea, with Senega, Iaiofo, Gambia, and manye other regions of the blacke Moores cauled Ethiopians or Negros, all whiche are watered with the ryuer Negro cauled in owlde tyme Niger. In the fayde regions are no cities : but only certeyne lowe cotages made of bowes of trees plastered with chauke and couered with strawe : In these regions are also very greate desertes.

The kyngedome of Marrocko hath vnder it these feuen kyngedomes : Hea, Sus, Guzula, the territorie of Marrocko, Duchala, Hazchora, and Telde. The kyngedome of Fes hath as many : as Fes, Temefne, Azgar, Elabath, Errif, Garet, and Elcauz. The kyngedome of Tremisen hath these regions : Tremisen, Tenez, and Elgazaet, all which are Machometistes. But all the regions of Guinea are pure Gentyles and Idolatours without profession of any religion or other knowlage of god then by the lawe of nature.

Africa the great, is one of the three partes of the worlde knownen in owlde tyme and feuered from Asia, on the East by the ryuer Nilus : On the West, from Europe by the pillers of Hercules. The hyther part is nowe cauled Barbarie, and the people Moores. The inner parte is cauled Libia and Ethiopia. Afrike the lesse is in this wyse bounded : On the west it hath Numidie : On the east Cyrenaica : On the north, the sea cauled Mediterranean. In this countrey was the noble citie of Carthage.

In the East fyde of Afrike beneath the redde sea, dwelleth the greate and myghtye Emperour and Chrystian kyng Prester Iohan, well knownen to the Portugales in theyn vyages to Calicut. His dominions reache very farre on every fyde : and hath vnder hym many other kynges both Chrystian and hethen that pay hym trybute. This myghty pryncipe is cauled Dauid Th[e]emperour of Ethiopia. Sum wryte that the kyng of Portugale fendeth hym yearly. viii. [eight] shypes laden with marchaundies. His kyngedome confineth with the redde sea, and reacheth farre into Afrike towarde Egypte and Barbarie. Southwarde it confineth with the sea towarde the cape *de Buona Speranza* : and on the other fyde with the sea of sande cauled *Mare de Sabione*, a very daungerous sea, lyng betwene the great citie of Alcaer or Cairo in Egypte and the countrey of Ethiopia : In the whiche way are many vnha[bita]ble desertes continuinge for the space of fyue dayes iorney. And they affirme that if the fayde Chrystian Emperour were not hydered by those desertes (in the which is great lacke of vittayles and especially of water) he wolde or nowe haue invaded the kyngedome of Egypte and the citie of Alcayer. The chiefe citie of Ethiopia where this great Emperour is refydent, is cauled Amacaz beinge a fayne citie, whose inhabitauntes are of the colore of an olyue. There are also many other cities, as the citie of Sua vpon the ryuer of Nilus where Th[e]emperour is accustomed to remayne in the foommer seafon. There is lykewylle a great citie named Barbaregaf : And Ascon from whence it is fayde that the queene of Saba came to Ierusalem to heare the wyfdom of Salomon. This citie is but litle, yet very fayne and one of the chiefe cities in Ethiopia. In the fayde kyngdome is a prouince cauled Manicongni, whose kyng is a Moore and tributarie to Th[e]emperour of Ethiopia. In this prouince are many excedyng hyghe mountaynes vpon the which is fayde to be the earthly Paradise : And sum say that there are the trees of the fonne and moone whereof the antiquitie maketh mention : yet that none can passe thyther by reason of greate desiertes of a hundredth dayes iorney. Also beyonde these mountaynes, is the cape of Buona Speranza. And to haue fayde thus much of Afrike it may suffice.

THE FYRST VYAGE TO GVINEA.



N the yeare of owre Lorde. M. D. LIII. the. xii. [twelfth] day of August, fayled from Porchemouth two goodly shypes, the Primrose and the Lyon, with a pynnesse cauled the moone: beinge all well furnyſhed awell with men of the lustiest forte to the number of feuen score, as also with ordinaunce and vytayles requisite to ſuch a vyage: Hauyng alſo two capitaynes, the one a ſtranger cauled Antoniaides Pintead o Portugal, borne in a towne named the porte of Portugal, a wyfe, diſcrete, and sober man, who for his cunnyng in faylynge beinge awell an expert pylot as polytyke capitayne, was ſumtyme in greate fauoure with the kyng of Portugale, and to whom the coaſtes of Braille and Guinea were commytted to bee kepte from the Frenchemen to whom he was a terroure on the ſea in thofe partes: and was furthermore a gentleman of the kyng his maſters houſe. But as fortune in maner neuer fauoureth but flattereth, neuer promifeth but deceaueth, neuer rayfeth but caſteth downe ageyne, and as great wealth and fauour hath alwayes compaſſions emulacion and enuie,

he was after many aduersites and quarels made ageynſt hym, inforced to come into Englande: where in this golden vyage he was euyll matched with an vnequall coompanion and vnylike matche of moſt fundry qualities and conditions with vertues few or none adourned, with vices dyuers and many fowly ſpotted, knownen of many without profyte, and defyred of fewe or none for his wyckednes: whosſe ſmaule acquayntaunce was profitable to all men, and his familiar conuerſation an vndoinge, that happye was the man or woman that knewe hym not, he for his gooddes and the for her name. In fine, vnfroture was the coompany that had ought to cloo with hym: in ſo much that it was no maruayle that ſo goodly an enterpryſe with ſo noble a furniture of men, shypes, and ordinaunce of all forteſ, with all kynde of vytayles and that of ſo great abundance, had ſo ſmaul ſuccesse: which could be none otherwyſe wher ſo foule a ſpotte dyd blemyſſe, ye rather deſace the reſt. Thus departed theſe noble shypes vnder fayle on theyr vyage. But firſt this capitayne Wyndam, putting furth of his ſhyp at Porchemouth, a kyngeman of one of the headeſ marchauntes, and ſhewyng herein a muſter of the tragical partes he had conceaued in his brayne, and with ſuſh ſmaule begynninges nuryſhed ſo monſtros a byrth, that more happy, yea and bleſſed was that younge man beinge leſte behynd then if he had byn taken with them, as ſum doo wyſſe he had doonne the lyke by theirs. Thus fayled they on theyr vyage vntyl they came to the Ilandes of Madera where they toke in certeyne wynes for the ſtore of theyr shypes, and payde for them as they agreed of the price. At theſe Ilandes they met with a great galion of the kyng of Portugale full of men and ordinaunce: yet ſuche as coulde not haue preuyaled if it had attempted to withstande or refylt owre shypes, for the which caufe it was fet furth, not only to lette and interrupte theſe owre shypes of theyr purpoſed vyage, but all other that ſhulde atteympe the lyke: Yet chiefely to fruſtrate owre vyage. For the kyng of Portugale was finiſterly informed that owre shypes were armed to his caſtel of Mina in theſe parties, wheras nothing leſſe was ment.

After that our shypes departed from the Ilandes of Madera forwarde on theyr vyage, began this woorthy capitaine Pinteados forowe as a man tormented with the company of a terrible hydra who hythero flattered with hym and made hym a faire countenance and ſhewe of loue. Then dyd he take uppon hym to comandaune all alone, fettyng nowght bothe by capitayne Pinteado with the reſte of the marchaunte factours: ſumtymes with opprobrious woordes and ſumtymes with threatenynges moſt shamefully abuſyng them, takinge from Pinteado the ſeruice of the boys and certeyne mariners that were aſigned hym by th[e] order and direccon of the woſhypsfull marchauntes, and leauyng hym as a common maryn[e], which is the greatest deſpite and greſſe that can be to a Portugal or Spanyarde to be diminyſhed theyr honoure which they eſteeme aboue all rycheſſe. Thus fayling forward on theyr vyage, they came to the Ilandes of Canarie, continuynge theyr courſe from thenſe vntyll they arryued at the Ilande of faynt Nicolas where they vyttayled them ſelues with freſſe meate of the

The Prymrose
The Lyon.
The Moone

Pintead.

Brasila.
Guinea.

The flattering of
fortune.

The euil
conditions of
Wyndam.

The Ilandes of
Madera.

A galeon of
the kyng of
Portugale.

The caſtel of
Mina.

346
Howe Wyndam
abused Pintead.

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
The Ilande of
S. Nicolas.

Guinea.

The ryuer of
Sesto.
Graynes.

The thrist of golde.

The castel of
mena.
The quantiti[e] of
golde.Benin.
Pepper.Furie admitteth
no counsaye.The Rossia.
Rottinge heate.
Scorchinge heate.
Benin.Francisco.
Nicolas Lambert.
The kyng of
Benin his court.

347

Reuerence
towarde the kyng.The
communication
beween the kyng
of Benin and ovr
men.

Pepper.

The kynges
gentilenesse
towarde ovr men.

fleshe of wylde goates whereof is great plentic in that Ilande and in maner of nothing else. From hense folowynge on theyr course, and taryinge here and there at the deserte Ilandes in the waye, bycause they wolde not coome to tymely to the countrey of Guinea for the heate, and taryinge sumwhat to longe (for what can bee wel mynystryd in a common wealth where inequalitie with tyrannie wyl rule alone) they came at the length to the fyrst lande of the countrey of Guinea where they fell with the great ryuer of Sesto where they myght for theyr marchaundies haue laden theyr shypes with the graynes of that countrey, which is a very hotte frute, and much lyke vnto a fygge as it groweth on the tree. For as the fygges are full of smaule feedes, so is the fayde frute ful of graynes which are lose within the codde, hauyng in the myndest thereof a hole on every syde. This kynde of spise is much vfed in coulde countreys, and may therbe folde for great aduantage for the exchaunge of other wares. But ovr men by the perfusion or rather inforcement of this tragical capitayne, not regardynge and settyngh lyght by that commodite in comparason to the fine gold they thrifte, sayled an hundredth leagues further vntyl they came to the golden lande: where not attemptinge to come nere the castell perteynyng to the kyng of Portugale, whiche was within the ryuer of Mina, made sale of theyr ware onely on this syde and beyonde it for the golde of that countrey to the quantite of an hundredth and fiftie pounds weyght, there beinge in case that they myght haue dispatched al theyr ware for golde, if the vntame brayne of Wyndam had or could haue gyuen eare to the counsayle and experiance of Pinteado. For when that Wyndam not satified with the golde whiche he had (and more myght haue had if he had taried abowt the Mina) commaudyng the fayde Pinteado (for so he toke vpon hym) to leade the shypes to Benin beinge vnder the Equinoctial line and a hundredth and fiftie leagues beyonde the Mina where he lokid to haue theyr shypes laden with pepper: And beinge coundayled of the fayde Pinteado confyderynge the late tyme of the yere for that tyme to go no further but to make sale of theyr wares such as they had for golde wherby they myght haue byn great gayners. But Wyndam not astenyng hereunto, fell into a suddeyn rage, reuilyng the fayde Pinteado, caulyng hym Iewe with other opprobrious wordes, fayinge. This horfon Iewe hath promised to bryng vs to such places as are not, or as he can not bring vs vnto. But if he doo not, I wyl cut of his eares and naile them to the mast. Pinteado gaue the forsayde counsayle to goo no further for the safeguard of the men and theyr lyues, which they shulde put in daungioure if they came to late for the rossia which is theyr wynter, not for coulde but for smotheryng heate with cloe and cloudy ayer and strominge wether of fuche putrifyinge qualite that it rotted the cotes of theyr backes: Or els for coommyngne to foonne for the forchynge heate of the sonne which caused them to lyngre in the way. But of force and not of wyl, brought he the shypes before the ryuer of Benin: where rydyng at an anker, fente theyr pinnesse vp into the ryuer fiftie or threfore leagues, from whence certeyne of the marchauntes with capitayne Pinteado, Francisco Portugale, Nicolas Lambert gentleman, and other marchauntes were conducted to the courte where the kyng remayned. x. [ten] leagues from the ryuer syde: whyther when they came, they were brought with a greate company to the prefence of the kyng who beinge a blacke moore (althougle not so blacke as the rest) sat in a great houge haule longe and wyde, the walles made of earthe withoute wyndowes, the roofe of thynne boordes open in fundry places lyke vnto lourers to lette in the ayer.

And here to speke of the great reuerence they gyue to their kyng, beinge such that if wee wolde gyue as much to ovr fauour Chryſt, we shuld remoue from ovr heades many plages which wee dayly deserue for ower contempnite and impietie.

So it is therfore, that when his noble men are in his prefence, they neuer looke hym in the face, but sylcouryng, as wee vpon ovr knees so they vpon theyr buttockes with theyr elbowes vpon theyr knees and theyr handes beefore theyr faces, not lookyng vp vntyl the kyng commaunde them. And when they are commynge towarde the kyng as farre as they do see hym, do they shewe such reuerence sytting on the grounde with theyr faces couered as before. Lykewise when they depart from hym they turne not theyr backes towarde hym, but go creepynge backewarde with lyke reuerence.

And nowe to speake sumwhat of the communication that was beween the kyng and ovr men, yowe shall syryst vnderstande that he hym selfe coulde speake the Portugale tounge which he had lerned of a chylde. Therfore after that he had commaunded ovr men to flande vp, and demaunded of them the cause of theyr commynge into that countrey, they answered by Pinteado that they were marchauntes traauaylyng into those parties for the commodities of his countrey for exchaunge of wares which they had brought from their countreys, beinge such as shulde bee no lesse commodious for him and his people. The kyng then hauyng of ovlde lyng in a certeyne flore houſe thirtie or fortie kyntals of pepper (eueri kyntall beinge an hundredth weyght) wyllynge them to looke vpon the same, and ageyne to bryng hym a fyght of fuche marchaundies as they had brought with them. And thervpson fente with the capitayne and the marchauntes certeyne of his men to conduce them to the waters syde, with other to bryng the ware from the pinnesse to the courte. Who when they were returned and the wares seene, the kyng grewe to this ende with the marchauntes, to prouide in thirtie dayes the ladynge of all theyr shypes with pepper. And in case theyr marchaundies wolde not extende to the value of so muche pepper, he promyfed to credite them to theyr nexte retурne: and thervpson fente the countrey rounde abowt

to gather pepper, causyng the same to be brought to the courte : So that within the space of. xxx. [thirty] days they had gathered four score tonne of pepper.

In the meane seafon owe men partly hauynge no rule of them felues, but eatyng without measure of the frutes of the country, and drynkyng the wyne of the palme trees that droppeth in the nyght from the cutte branches of the same, and in such extreme heate runnyng continually into the water, not vsed before to such suddeynesse and vehement alterations (then the which nothyng is more daungerous) were therby browght into swellynges and agues. In so much that the later tyme of the yeare commyng on, caused them to dye sumtymes. iii. [three] and sumtymes. iii. [four] or. v. [five] in a day. Then Wyndam perceauyng the tyme of the. xxx. [thirty] dayes to be expyred, and his men dying so fast, sente to the courte in poste to capitayne Pinteado and the rest to come away and to tary no longer. But Pinteado with the rest, wrote backe to hym ageyne, certifysinge hym of the grete quantite of pepper they had alredy gathered and loked dayly for much more : Defryng furthermore to remember the great prayse and name they shulde wynne if they came home prosperously, and what shame of the contrary. With which answere Wyndam not satified, and many of theyr men dyng dayly, wylled and commauded them ageyne eyther to coome away furthwith, or els thretened to leaue them behynde. When Pinteado harde this answere, thynkyng to persuade hym with reson, tooke his way from the court towarde the shypes beinge conducted thyther with men by the kynges commaundement.

In the meane seafon Windam all rageinge, brake vppe Pinteados Caben, broke open his chestes, spoyled suche prouyon of coulde stilled waters and suckettes as he hadde prouided for his health, and lefte hym nothyng neyther of his instrumentes to fayle by, nor yet of his apparell. And in the meane tyme faulng fycke hym selfe, dyed also. Whose death Pinteado comming aborde, lamented as muche as if he had byn the dereft frend he had in the worlde. But certeyne of the maryners and other officers dyd spette in his face, sum caulyng hym Iewe, saying that he had brought them thether to kylle them : And sum drawyng their swordes at hym makyng A shewe to fley hym. Then he perceauyng that they wolde nedes away, defyred them to tary that he might fetch the refe of the marchauntes that were lefte at the court. But they wolde not graunte his request. Then defyred he them to gyue hym the shipp boate with as muche of an owlde fayle as myght serue for the same, promysyng them therewith to bringe Nicolas Lamberte and the rest into England : But all was in wayne. Then wrotte he a letter to the courte to the marchauntes informyng them of all the matter, and promysyng them if god wold leade hym life to retorne with al haſt[e] to fetche them. And thus was Pinteado kepte a bordeſhippe ageynſte his wyl, thrust amoung the boyes of the shipp, not vsed like a man, nor yet like an honest boy : But glad to find fauour at the cokes hande. Then departed they, leauing one of theyr shippes behynde them, whiche they foone for lacke of men to cary her. After this within fixe or feuen dayes faylinge, dyed also Pinteado for very penſiuenesse and thought that strooke hym to the harte : A man worthy to serue any prince and most viley vſed. And of feuen score men came home to Plymmouth ſcarſely fortye, and of them many dyed. And that no man shulde ſuspecte theſe wordes which I haue ſayd in commendation of Pinteado, to be ſpoken vpon fauour otherwyſe then truthe, I haue thought good to adde herevnto the coppie of the letters which the kyng of Portugale and the infant his brother wrotte vnto hym to reconcyle hym at ſuche tyme as vppon the kyng his masters diſpleaſure (and not for any other cryme or offence as may appere by the ſayde letters) he was onely for pouertie inforced to coome into Englande where he fyrſt perſuaded owe marchauntes to attempte the fayle vyages to Guinea. But as the kyng of Portugale to late repented hym that he had ſo punyſhed Pinteado vpon malicious informations of ſuch as enued the mans good fortune, euen ſo may it hereby appere, that in ſum cafes, euen Lyons them felues, may eyther bee hyndered by the contempt or ayded by the helpe of the pore myſe accordyngē vnto the fable of Eſope.

C The coppie of Antonianes Pinteado his letters patentes wherby the kyng of Portugale made hym knyght of his house after all his troublis and imprifonment, which by wronge information made to the kyng, he had ſyſteyned of longe tyme, beinge at the laſte deli[n]ered, his caufe knownen and manifested to the kyng by a grey fryer the kynges conſeffour.



The kyng do gyue yow to vnderſtande lord Francis Delfeoſa one of my counſayle and ouerſeeſ of my houſe, that in conſideration of the good ſeruice which Antonie Anes Pinteado, the ſonne of Iohn Anes, dwellynge in the towne cauled the porte, hath doone vnto me, my wyl and pleaſure is, to make hym knyght of my houſe, alowynge to hym in pension ſeven hundreth reys monethly, and every daye one alcayr of barly as longe as he keþeth a horſe, and to bee payde accordyngē to the ordinaunce of my houſe. Proudyngē alwayes that he ſhal receaue but one mariage gyfte : And this alſo in ſuch condition that the tyme which is excepted in owe

The disorder and
death of owe men.

The furie of
Wyndam.

The death of
Wyndam.

Pinteado euil vſed
of the maryners.

348

The death of
Pinteado.

Seuen hundred
reys are. x. s. [ten
ſhillings].
Alcayr. is halfe
a bushel.

ordinance forbyddynge such men to mary for gettynge such chyldren as myght succede them in this allowanc, which is fyxe yeares after the makyng of this patente, shalbe fyrste expired before he do mary. I therfore commaunde yowe to caufe this to bee entered in the booke cauled the Matricola of owre houholde vnder the tylle of knyghtes. And when it is so entered, let the clerke of the Matricola for the certentie therof, wryte on the backe syde of this Aluala or patente, the number of the leafe wherein this owre graunt is entered. Which doone, let hym retorne this wrytyng vnto the sayd Antonie Anes Pinteado for his warrant.

I Diego Henriques haue wrytten this in Almarin the xxii. [twenty-second] day of September, in the yere of owre lorde, 1551. And this beneuolence the kynge gaue vnto Antonie Anes Pinteado the, xxv. [twen^th] day of Iuly this present yere.

Rey.

349

¶ *The secretaries declaration wrytten vnder the kynges graunt.*



Owre maiestie hath vouchsafed in respect and confyderation of the good seruice of Antonie Anes Pinteado dwellynge in the porte, and foonne of Iohn Anes to make hym knyght of yowre house with ordinarie allowanc of feuen hundred reys pension byt he moneth and one Alcayr of barley by the day as longe as he keeþeth a horse: And to bee payde accordyng to the ordinance of your houſe with condition that he shall haue but one mariage gyfe: And that not within the space of. vi. [six] yeares after the makyng of these letters patentes.

The secretaries note. Entered in the booke of the Matricola. Fol. 683.

Francisco de Sigura.

¶ *The coppie of the letter of Don Lewes th[e] infant and brother to the kyng
of Portugale: sent into Englannde to Antonianes Pinteado.*



Ntonie Anes Pinteado, I the infant brother to the kyng, haue me hartely commended vnto yow. Peter Gonfaluſes is gone to ſeeke yow, defryng to bryng yow home ageyne into yowr country. And for that purpoſe, hath with hym a ſafe conduct for yow, graunted by the kyng, that thereby yow may freely and without all feare come home. An though the wether be foule and ſtormy, yet fayle not to come. For in the tyme that maieſtie hath gyuen yow, yow maye doo many thynges to yowre contentacion and gratifyng, wherof I wolde bee ryght gladd: and to bryng the fame to paſſe wyll doo all that lyeth in me for yowre profyte. But forasmuch as Peter Gonfaluſes wyll make further declaration hereof vnto yow, I ſay no more at this preſent. Wrytten in Luxburne the. viii. [eighth] day of December. Anno. M. D. LII.

¶ *The Infant don Lew[e].*



L theſe forayd wrytynges I fawde vnder feſſe in the houſe of my frende Nicolas Lyef with whom Pinteado left them at his vnfourtunatē departyng to Guineā. But notwithstanding all theſe frendy letters and fayre promyſes, Pinteado durſte not attempte to go home, neyther to keepe company with the Portugales his country men without the preſene of other, forasmuch as he had ſecrete admonition that they intended to fley hym, if tyme and place myght haue ſerued theyr wycked intent.



his allowance,
I therfore
ide vnder the
rof, wryte on
red. Which

in the year:
[twen th]

nt.

e of Antonie
m knyght of
eth and one
e according
riage gyfte:
ers patentes.

he kyng

ended vnto
gynge into
raunted by
'though
aestie
nge,
hat lyeth in
yow, I say
. LII.

Lyefe with
anding all
e, neyther
ther, foraf-
ace myght



S in the fyrt vyage I haue declared rather the order of the hystory then the course of the nauigation, whereof at that tyme I coulde haue no perfecte information, so in the discription of this seconde vyage my chiese intent hath byn to shew the course of the fame accordyng to the obseruation and ordinarie custome of the maryners, and as I receaued it at the handes of an experte pylot beinge one of the chiese in this viage, who also with his owne handes wrote a briefe declaration of the fame as he founde and tryed all thynges not by conjecture, but by the arte of saylyng and instrumentes perteynyng to the mariners facultie. Not therfore assuminge to my selfe the commendations dewe to other, neyther so boulde as in anye parte to chaunge or otherwise

dispose the order of this vyage so wel obserued by arte and experience, I haue thought good to set furth the same in such forte and phrase of speache as is commonly vsed amonge them, and as I receaued it of the said pylot as I haue sayde. Take it therfore as followeth.

In the yeare of oure lorde. M. D. LIII. the. xi. [eleventh] day of October, wee departed the ryuer of Temmes with three goodly shypes, th[e]one cauled the Trinitie, a shyppe of the burden of feuen score toonne: Th[e]other cauled the Barthelmewe a shyppe of the burden of lxxx. [ninety tons]. The thyrde was the Iohn Euangelist a shyppe of feuen score toonne. With the fayde shypes and two pynnes (wherof the one was drowned in the coast of Englannde) we went forward on our vyage, and steyde at Douer. xiii. [fourteen] dayes. We steyde also at Rye three or four dayes. More ouer last of all we touched at Dartmouth.

The fyrt day of Nouember at. ix. [nine] of the cloke at nyght departyng from the coaste of Englannde, we sette of the stert bearynge southwest all that nyght in the sea, and the nexte day all day, and the next nyght after vntyll the thyrde daye of the fayde mooneth abowt noone, makyng owr way good, dyd runne. 6o. leagues.

Item from. xii. [twelve] of the cloke the thyrde daye tyl. xii. [twelve] of the cloke the. iii. [fourth] day of the fayde mooneth, makyng owr way good southeast, dyd runne euery three houres twoo leagues, which amounteth to. xvi. [sixteen] leagues the hole.

Item from. xii. [twelve] of the cloke the. iii. [fourth] day to. xii. [twelve] of the cloke the. v. [fifth] day, runnyng southwest in the sea, dydde runne. xii. [twelve] leagues.

Item runnyng from. xii. [twelve] of the cloke the. v. [fifth] day vntyll. xii. [twelve] of the cloke the. vi. [sixth] day runnyng southeast, dyd runne. xviii. [eighteen] leagues.

And so from. xii. [twelve] of the cloke the vi. [sixth] daye vntyll. xii. [twelve] of the cloke the. vii. [seventh] day, runnyng southsouthwest, dyd runne euery houre. ii. [two] leagues which amount to. xlviii. [forty-eight] leagues the hole.

Item from. xii. [twelve] of the cloke the. vii. [seventh] day tyl. iii. [three] of the cloke the. viii. [eighth] day, fouthsouthwest, runnyng in the sea, dyd runne. xxx. [thirty] leagues.

Item from three of the cloke the. viii. [eighth] day, vntyll. iii. of the cloke the. ix. [ninth] day, runnyng southsouthwest, dyd runne. xxx. [thirty] leagues.

Item from. iii. [three] of the cloke the. ix. [ninth] day tyl. iii. [three] of the cloke the. x. [tenth] day, dyd fouthsoutheast in runnyng in the sea the sum of. xxiiii. [twenty-four] leagues.

Alo from. iii. [three] of the cloke the. x. [tenth] day vntyll. xii. [twelve] of the cloke the. xi. [eleventh] day,

dyd run southsouthwest the sum of. xii. [twelve] leagues, and from. xii. [twelve] of the clocke tyll. vi. [six] of the fayde day, dyd run. vi. [six] leagues.

Runnyng south and by west in the sea from. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xi. [eleuen] day tyll. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xii. [twelfth] day, dyd run. xxxvi. [thirty-six] leagues.

Fro. vi. [six] of the clocke at after none the. xii. [twelfth] daye tyll. vi. [six] of the clocke the xiii. [thirtenth] day at after none, dyd runne. xiii. [thirteen] leagues.

Item from. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xiii. [thirteenth] day, tyl. vi. [six] of the clocke the. xiv. [fourteenth] day at after none that we were becalmed that wee couldie ly fouthwest with a fayle. And the xv. [fifteenth] daye in the mornynge, the wynde came to the East and easte northeast. The. xvii. [seventeenth] day in the mornynge, we had fygth of the Ile of Madera which doth ryfe to hym that commeth in the north northeast parte vpryght lande in the west part of it, and very hyghe: and to the south southeaste a lowe longe lande and a longe poynt with a fudgle through the myddesete of it, standeth in the xxii. [thirty-two] degrees: and in the weste parte, many springes of water runnyng downe from the mountayne, and manywhyle fyldes lyke vnto corne fieldes, and sumwhyte houes to the southeaste parte of it: and the toppe of the mountayne sheweth very ragged if yow may se it, and in the northeast parte there is a byght or bay as though it were a harborowe. Also in the fayde part, there is a rocke a lytle distance from the shore: and ouer the fayde byght, yow shall fe a great gappe in the mountayne.

The. xix. [nineteenth] day at. xii. [twelve] of the clocke, we had fygth of the Ile of Palmes and Teneriffa and the Canaries. The Ile of Palme ryseth rounde and lyeth southeaste and northweste, and the northwest parte is lowest. In the south, is a rounde hyll ouer the hedge lande, and an other rounde hyll aboue that in the lande.

There is betwene the southeast parte of the Ile of Madera and the northwest parte of the Ile of Palme. lvii. [fifty-seven] leagues. This Ile of Palme lyeth in the. xxix. [twenty-nine] degrees. And our course from Madera to the Ile of Palme was south and south and by west, so that we had fygth of Teneriffa and of the Canaries. The southeaste parte of the Ile of Palme, and the north northeast of Teneriffa, lyeth southeast and northweste. And betwene them is. xx. [twenty] leagues. Teneriffa and the greate Canarie cauled Granccanaria, and the west part of Fortisuentura standeth in. xxvii. [twenty-seven] degrees and a halfe. Gomera is a fayre Ilande and very ragged and lyeth west fouthwest of Teneriffa. And who so euer wyll come betwene them two Ilandes, must come south and by east, and in the south parte of Gomera, is a towne and a good rode in the fayde parte of the Ilande: and it standeth in. xxvii. [twenty-seven] degrees and three terces. Teneriffa is a hygh lande and a greate hyghe picke lyke a fager lofe. And vpon the fayde picke is fnowe throughout all the hole yere. And by reaon of that picke, it maye bee knownen aboue all other Ilandes, and there we were becalmed the. xx. [twentieth] day of Nouember from. vi. [six] of the clocke in the mornynge vntyll four of the clocke at after none.

¶ Betwene Gomera and Capo de las Barbas.

He. xxii. [twenty-second] day of Nouember vnder the Tropike of Cancer, the soonne goeth downe west and by south.

Vpon the coast of Barberie. xxv. [twenty-five] leagues by north cape blanke at. iii. [three] leagues of the mayne, there is. xv. [fifteen] fadome and good shelly grounde and sande amone, and no stremes, and two smaule Ilandes standyng in the. xxii. [twenty-two] degrees and a terce.

From Gomera to cape de las Barbas is a hundredth leagues and our course was south and by east. The fayde cape standeth in. xxii. [twenty-two] and a halfe: and all that coast is flatte. xvi. [sixteen] or. xvii. [seventeen] fadome deepe, vii. [seven] or. viii. [eight] leagues of frome the ryuer de Oro to cape de las Barbas, there vse miche Spaniardes and Portugales to trade for sysshynge duryng the mooneth of Nouember: and all that coast is verye lowe landes. Also wee went from cape de las Barbas southsouthwest and fouthwest and by south: tyll we brought our felues in. xx. [twenty] degrees and a halfe, reckenyng our felues vii. [seven] leagues of: and that was the least sholes of cape Blanke.

Then we wen south vntyll we brought our felues in. xiii. [thirteen] degrees, reckenyng our felues. xxv. [twenty-five] leagues of. And in. xv. [fifteen] degrees, we dyde reere the crossiers: and we myght haue rered them sooner if we had loked for them. They are not ryghte a crosse in the moonethe of Nouember by reaon the nyghtes are shorte there. Neuerthelesse we had the fygth of them the. xxix. [twenty-ninth] day of the fayde mooneth at nyght.

The syrle of December owte. xiii. [thirteen] degrees, we sette our course south and by East vntyll the fourth daye of December at. xii. [twelve] of the clocke the same day. Then we were in. ix. [nine] degrees and a terce, reckenyng our felues. xxx. [thirty] leagues of the sholes of the ryuer cauled Rio Grande beinge west fouthweste of them: The which sholes be. xxx. [thirty] leages longe.

The Ile of
Madera.

The Ile of palmes.
Teneriffa.
The Canaries.

Frome madera to
the Ile of Palmes.

Grancanaria.
Forte Ventura.
The Iland of
Gomera.

351

Teneriffa.
Snowe.

The coast of
Barbary.
Cape blanke.

The ryuer of
de Oro.

The crossiers of
CROSSIERE SALTIERE

Rio Grande



vi. [six] of the
y^{ll}. vi. [six] of
iii. [thirtenth]
teenth] day at
e in the morn-
e, we had fught
de in the west
tudle through
nges of water
houses to the
in the north-
is a rocke a
yne.
Teneriffa and
hwest parte is
in the lande,
of Palme. lvii.
om Madera to
naries. The
hwest. And
the west part
nde and very
landes, must
e parte of the
and a greate
are. And by
x [twentieth]
one.

bonne goeth
at. iii. [three]
e and fande
two] degrees

fe was south
is flatte. xvi.
der de Oro to
moonth of
outhwest and
e our felues

felues. xxv.
haue rered
er by reasou
of the fayde

ll the fourth
and a terce,
t southweste

The fourth of December, we beganne to fette our course southeaste, we beinge in. vi. [six] degrees and a halfe. The ninth day of December we set our course east southeast.

The. xiii. [fourteenth] day of the fayde mooneth, we fette our course east, we beinge in. v. [five] degrees and a halfe, rekenyng our felues. xxxvi. [thirty-six] leagues from the coast of Guinea.

The. xix. [nineteenth] day of the fayde mooneth, we fette our course east and by north, rekenyng our felues. xvii. [seventeen] leagues distant from cape Mensurado, the fayde cape beinge east northeast of vs, and the ryuer of Seflo being east.

The. xxi. [twenty-first] day of the fayde mooneth we fel with cape Me[n]furado to the southeast abowt two leagues of. This cape may be easely knownen, by reasoun the ryfynge of it is lyke a porpoise heddle. Also towarde the southeast there are three trees, wherof the eastermost tree is the hyghest, and the myddlemost is lyke a heye flacke, and the southermost lyke vnto a iebet: and vpon the mayne, are fourre or fyue hygh hylles ryfynge one after an other lyke round hoommockes or hyllockes. And the southeast of the three trees, is thre trees lyke a brandierwyse: and all the coaste alonge is whyte fande. The fayde cape standeth within a litle in. vi. [six] degrees.

The. xxii. [twenty-second] of December, we came to the ryuer of Seflo, and remayned there vntyll the. xxix. [twenty-ninth] day of the fayde moneth. Here we thought it best to fende before vs the pynnesse to the ryuer of Dulce cauled Rio Dulce, that they myght haue the begynnyng of the market before the commyng of the Iohn.

At the ryuer of Seflo, we had a toonne of graynes. This ryuer standeth in. vi. [six] degrees lackynge a terce. From the ryuer of Seflo to Rio Dulce, is. xxv. [twenty-five] leagues. Rio Dulce standeth in. v. [five] degrees and a halfe. The ryuer of Seflo is easie to bee knownen by reasoun there is a ledge of roches on the southeast parte of the rode. And at the enterynge into the hauen, are fyue or syxe trees that beare no leauers. This is a good harborowe: but very narrowe at the enteruance into the ryuer. There is also a rocke in the hauen mouth right as yow enter. And all that coalf betwene cape de Monte and cape de las Palmas, lyeth southeast and by east, northwest and by weste, beinge three leagues of the shore. And yow shall haue in sum places roches two leagues of: and that betwene the ryuer of Seflo and cape de las Palmas.

Betwene the ryuer of Seflo and the riuere Dulce, is. xxv. [twenty-five] leagues. And the hygh lande that is betwene them bothe, is cauled Cakeado, beinge. viii. [eight] leagues from the ryuer of Seflo. And to the southeastwarde of hym, is a place cauled Shawgro and an other cauled Shyawe or Shauo, where yow may get fresshe water. Of this Shyawe, lyeth a ledge of roches: and to the Southeastwarde, lyeth a hed lande cauled Croke. Betwene Cakeado and Croke, is. ix. [nine] or. x. [ten] leagues. To the Southeastwarde of, is a harborowe cauled fayne Vincent. Ryght ouer ageynst fayne Vincent, is a rocke vnder the water, two leagues and a halfe of the shore. To the southeastwarde of that rocke, yow shall see an Ilande abowt three or fourre leagues of. This Ilande is not past a league of the shore. To the east southeast of the Ilande, is a rocke that lyeth aboue the water: and by that rocke goeth in the ryuer of Dulce, which yow shall knowe by the fayde ryuer and rocke. The northwest syde of the hauen, is flat fande: and the southeast syde therof, is lyke an Ilande and a bare plotte without any trees, and so is it not in any other place.

In the rode, yow shall ryde in. xiii. [thirteen] or. xiiii. [fourteen] fadomes, good owes and fande, beinge the markes of the rode to bring the Ilande and the northwest lande togither. And here wee ankered the last of December.

The thyrde day of Janury, we came from the ryuer of Dulce.

Note that cape de las Palmas is a fayre high lande. But fumme lowe places therof by the water syde, looke like redle clifffes with white strakes like wayes a cable length a piece. And this is to the East parte of the cape. This cape is the southermost lande in all the coast of Guinea: And standeth in fourre degrees and a terce.

The coalf from cape de las Palmas to cape Trepoyntes or de tres Puntas, is fayre and cleare without rocke or other daungour.

xv. [twenty-five] leagues from cape de las Palmas, the lande is higher then in any place vntyll we came to cape Trepoyntes. And abowt. x. [ten] leagues before yow come to cape Trepoyntes, the lande ryfeth fyll hygher and hygher vntyll yow come to cape Trepoyntes. Also before yow come to the fayde cape after other fwe leagues to the northwest parte of it, there is certeyne broken grounde with twoo greate roches: and within them in the byght of a bay, is a castel cauled Arra, perteyning to the kyng of Portugale. Yow shall knowe it by the fayde roches that lye of it: For there is none such from cape de las Palmas to cape Trepoyntes. This castel lyeth east and by north, west and by south. From cape de las Palmas to the fayde castel, is fourre score and. xv. [fifteen] leagues. And the castel lyeth from the fayde castell to the Westermost poynete of the Trepoyntes, southeast and by south, northwest and by north. Also the Westermost poynete of the Trepoyntes, is a lowe lande lyinge halfe a myle owt in the sea: and vpon the innermoste necke to the landewarde, is a tute of trees, and there we arryued the. xi. [eleventh] day of Janury.

The. xii. [twelfth] day of Janury, we came to a towne cauled Samma or Samua, beinge. viii. [eight] leagues

Cape Mensurado.
The riuere of Sesto.

The riuere of Sesto.
Rio Dulce.

Cape de Monte.
Cape de las
Palmas.

352
The lande of
Cakeado.
Shauo.
Croke.

Saint Vincents
harborowe.

The riuere Dulce.

Cape de las
Palmas.

The coast of
Guinea.
Cape de
tres puntas.

The castell of
Arra.

The towne of
Samma.

The pledgynge was
sir Iohn Yorke
his nevise.

Cape Corea.
The castel of mina
perteyninge to
the kyngc of
Portugale.

Perecowe.
Perecowe grande.
Monte Rodondo.

353
The currants

Frome mina
homewarde.

Rio de los Potos.
Iverye.

Cape de las
Palmas,

Currautes.

The Ile de Flore.

The Ile of Corvo.

Where they lost
the sight of the
northe starn.
Howe the
compass dooth
varie.

The prymrose.

from cape Trepoynes toward east northeast. Betwene cape Trepointes and the towne of Samua, is a great ledge of rockes a great way owt in the sea. Wee continued foure dayes at that towne : and the capitayne therof wolde needs haue a pledge a shore. But when they receaued the pledge, they kepte hym syl and wolde traffike no more, but shot of theyr ordinaunce at vs. They haue two or three pieces of ordinaunce and no more.

The. xvi. [sixteenth] day of the sayde mooneth, we made rekenyng to come to a place cauled cape Corea where capitayne Don Iohn dwelleth, whose men interteyned vs frendly. This cape Corea is four leagues eastwarde of the castell of Mina, otherwyse cauled *La Mina*, or *Castello de Mina*, where we arriuued the. xviii. [eighteenth] day of the mooneth. Here we made fale of al our cloth sauyng two or three packes.

The. xxvi. [twenty-sixth] day of the same mooneth, we weyd anker and departed from thense to the Trinitie which was. vii. [seven] leagues eastwarde of vs where the solde her wares. Then they of the Trinitie wylled vs to go eastwarde of that. viii. [eight] or. ix. [nine] leagues to fel part of their wares in place cauled Perecowe, and an other named Perecowe grande, beinge the eastermost place of both thefe, which yow shal knowe by a great rounde hyl nere vnto it named Monte Rodondo lyng westwarde from it. And by the water syde are many hyghe palme trees. From hense dyd we set furth homewarde the. xiii. [thirteenth] day of February and plied vppe alongest tyll we came within. vii. [seven] or. viii. [eight] leagues to cape Trepointes. Abowt. viii. [eight] of the clocke the. xv. [fifteenth] day at after noone, we dyd cast abowt to seawarde. And beware of the currantes, for they wyll deceaue yow sore.

Who so euer shal coomme from the coast of Mina homewarde, let hym be fuer to make his way good west vntyll he reken hym selfe as farre as cape de las Palmas where the currant setteh alwayes to the eastwarde. And within. xx. [twenty] leagues eastwarde of cape de las Palmas, is a ryuer cauled Rio de los Potos where yow may haue frefsh water and balassie enowgh, and plentie of Iuery or Elephantes teethe. This ryuer standeth in foure degrees and almost two terces.

And when yow reken yowre selfe as farre shotte as cape de las Palmas, beinge in a degree or a degree and a halfe, yow may go west or west and by north vntyll yow come in three degrees : and then yow maye go west northwest, and northwest and by west vntyll yow comme in fife degrees and then northwest. And in the. vi. [six] degrees, wee mette northerly wyndes and greate rooflyng of tydes. And as wee coulde judge, the currantes went to the north northwest. Furthermore betwene cape de Monte and cape Verde, go great currantes which deceaue many men.

The. xxii. [twenty-second] daye of Apryll, wee were in. viii. [eig ht] degrees and two terces : and so we ranne to the northwest, hauyng the wynde at northeast and eastnortheast, and sumtymes at este untyll we were at. xviii. [eighteen] degrees and a terce, which was on May day. And so from. xviii. [eighteen] and two terces, we hadde the wynde at east and east northeast, and sumtymes at east southeast : and then wee reckoned the Ilandes of cape Verde este southeast of vs, wee iudgyngre owre felues to be. xlvi. [forty-eight] leagues of. And in. xx. [twenty] and. xxi. [twenty-one] degrees, wee had the wynde more easterly to the southwarde then before. And so we ran to the northwest and northnorthwest, and sumtymes north and by west and north vntyll wee came into. xxxi. [thirty-one] degrees, where we reckened owre felues a hundredth and foure score leagues southwest and by south of the Ilande de Flore or de los Flores. And there we met with the wynde at southsoutheast, and set owre course northeast.

In. xxxii. [thirty-three] degrees, we had the wynde at the south and southwest : and then we set our course north northeast, and so we ranne to xl. [forty] degrees : and then we set our course northeast the wynde beinge at the southwest and hauyng the Ile de Flore east of vs, and. xvii. [seventeen] leagues of.

In. xli. [forty-one] degrees, we met with the wynd at northeast, and so we ranne northwestwarde. Then we met with the wynde at the west northwest and at the west within. vi. [fix] leagues runnyng towards the northwest : And then wee cast abowt and ley northeast vntyll we came in. xlvi. [forty-two] degrees, where we sette our course east northeast, iudgyng the Ile of Coruo south and by west of vs and. xxxvi. [thirty-six] leagues distant from vs.

A remembraunce that the. xxi. [twenty-first] day of Maye, we communed with Iohn Rafe, and he thought it best to go northeaste, and iudged hym selfe. xxv. [twenty-five] leagues eastwarde to the Ile de Flore, and in. xxxix. [thirty-nine] degrees and a halfe.

Note that in the fourth day of September [December?] vnder nine degrees, we lost the syght of the north starre.

Note also, that in the. xiv. [forty-five] degrees, the compasse is varied. viii. [eight] degrees to the west.

Item, in. xl. [forty] degrees, the compasse dyd vary. xv. [fifteen] degrees in the hole.

Item, in. xxx. [thirty] degrees and a halfe, the compasse is varied. v. [fife] degrees to the west.

Be it also in memorie, that two or three dayes before we came to cape Trepointes, the pyynesse went alongest the shore thinkyng to sell sum of our wares. And so we came to anker three or four leagues west and by south of the cape Trepoynes where we lefte the Trinitie.

Then owre pyynesse came a boorde with all our men. The pyynesse also tooke in more wares. They tould me more ouer that they wolde go to a place where the Primrose was and had receaued much golde at

a great ledge therof woldē
de traffike no
lore.
I cape Corea
leagues east-
ed the. xviii.

to the Trinitie
tie wylled vs
Perecow, and
we by a great
de are many
try and plied
viii. [eight]
the currantes,

y good west
e eastwarde,
s where yow
standeth in

degree and
we maye go
And in the.
judge, the
at currantes

we ranne to
ere at. xviii.
s, we hadde
des of cape
xx. [twenty]
d fo we ran
xxi. [thirty-
the Ilande
northeast.
our course
nde beinge

de. Then
owardre the
where we
x] leagues

ne thought
e, and in.

orth flarre.
west.

esse went
ques west

. They
golde at

the fyfste vyage to theſe parties. And tolde me furthermore that it was a good place. But I fearynge a brigantie that was then vpon the coaſt, dydde wey and folowe theym, and leſte the Trinitie aboue four leagues from vs. And there we rode ageynſte that towne four dayes: ſo that Martine by his owne deſyre and aſſente of ſum of the commissioners that were in the pinnefie, wente a ſhore to the towne. And there Iohn Beryn went to traſke from vs beinge three myles of traſekyng at an other towne. The towne is cauled Samma or Samua. For Samma and Sammaterra, are the names of the two fyfſte townes where wee did traſkicke for gold, to the northeast of cape Trepoints:

Hetherto continueth the courſe of the vyage as it was deſcribed by the fayde pylot. Nowe therfore to ſpeake ſumwhat of the contrey and people, and of ſuche thynges as are brought from thenſe.

They brought from thenſe at the laſt vyage, four hundred pounds weight and odd of golde of. xxii. [twenty-two] carraſtes and one grayne in finenesſe. Alſo. xxxvi. [thirty-six] buttes of graynes: and aboue two hundred and fiftie elephante teeth of all quantities. Of theſe, I ſaw and measured ſum of. ix. [nine] ſpannes in length as they were crooked. Sum of them were as bigge as a mans thigh aboue the knee: and weyed aboue four ſcore and ten pounds weight a piece. They ſay that ſum one had byn ſene of a hundred and. xxv. [twenty-five] pounds weight. Other there were which they caule the teeth of calues of one or two or three yeares, wherof ſum were a foote and a halfe, ſumme two foote, and ſum three or more accordyng to the cage of the beaſte. Theſe great teeth or tuſkes, growe in the upper iaw downewarde, and not in the nether iawe upwarde, wherein the paynters and arras workeſſors are deceaued. At this laſt vyage was brought from Guinea the heade of an elephante of ſuch huge byggenesse, that only the bones or crauew therof beſide the nether iawe and greate tuſkes, wayed aboue two hundred weight, and was as muche as I coulde well lyſte from the grounde. In ſo muche that confideryng alio herewith the weight of ii. [two] ſuch great teeth, the nether iawes with the leſte teeth, the tounge, the greate hangyng eares, the bigge and longe ſnowte or troonke, with all the fleſſe, braynes, and ſkyne, with all other par(es) belongyng to the hole heade, in my iudgemente it coulde wey lytle leſte then fyue hundred weight. This heade dyuers haue ſene in the houſe of the worthy marchaunt fyr Andrewe Iudde, where alio I ſaw it, and behelde it not onely with my bodey eyes, but much more with the eyes of my mynde and ſpirite conſidered by the woorke, the cunnyng and wyscdomme of the woorke master: without which conſideration, the ſight of ſuch ſtraunge and woondershull thynges may rather ſeeme curioſities then profitable contemplations.

The elephante (which ſum caule an oliphant) is the biggest of all four footed beaſtes. His forelegges are longer then his hynder. He hath ankles in the lower parte of his hynder legges, and fyue toes on his fiete vndiuided. His ſnowte or troonke is ſo longe and in ſuch forme that it is to hym in the ſteede of a hande. For he neyther eateth nor drinketh but by bryngyng his troonke to his mouth. Therwith he helþeþ vp his master or keeper: therwith he ouerthroweth trees. Byfyde his two greate tuſkes, he hath on every ſyde of his mouth four teeth wherwith he eateth and grydeth his meate. Eyer of theſe teeth, are almoſt a ſpan in length as they growe alonge in the iawe: and are aboue two inches in height and almoſt as much in thickenesſe. The tuſkes of the male are greater then of the female. His tounge is verye lytle, and ſo farre in his mouth that it can not bee ſene. Of all beaſtes they are moſte gentyll and tractable. For by many ſundry ways they are taught and do vnderſtand: In ſo much that they leare to do due honour to a king, and are of quicke fence and ſharpenes of wyt. When the male hath once ſeaſoned the female, he neuer after toucheth her. The male Elephante lyueth two hundredthrees, or at the leaſte one hundredth and twentie. The female almoſt as longe: but the floore of theyr age, is but. ix. [fiſty] yeares as ſum wryte. They can not ſuffer wynter or coulde. They loue ryuers and wyll often go into them vp to the ſnowte wherwith they blowe and ſnuffe, and play in the water: but ſwymme they canne not for the weight of theyr bodies. Plinie and Soline wryte that they vſe none adulterie. If they happen to meeete with a manne in wyldernesſe beinge owt of the way, gentlyly they wyl go before hym and bryng hym into the playne waye. Ioyned in battayle, they haue no ſmaule reſpecte unto them that be wounded. For they bryng them that are hurt or wery into the middle of the army to be defended. They are made tame by drynkyng the iuſe of barley. They haue continuall warre ageynſt dragons which deſyre theyr bludde bycaufe it is very coulde. And therfore the dragon lyng awayte as the Elephant paſſeth by, wyndeth his taile (beinge of excedyng length) aboue the hynder legges of the elephant: and ſo ſteyng hym, thruſteth his heade into his troonke and exhausteth his breth, or els byteth hym in the eare wherunto he can not reach with his troonke. And when the elephant waxeth faynt, he faultheſt downe on the ſerpente beinge nowe full of bludde: and with the poyle of his body breaketh hym: ſo that his owne bludde with the bludde of the elephant, runneth owt of hym mengeled togither: whiche beinge coulde, is congeled into that ſublaſtance which the apothecaries caule *Sanguis Draconis*, (that is) dragons blud, other-

The towne of
Samma.
354
Golde.

Golde four
hundred weight
Graynes.
Iury.
Elephante teeth.

The head of
an Elephant.

The
contemplations
of gods workeſſors

The description
and properties of
the Elephant.

Debate betwene
the Elephant and
the dragon.

Cinnabaris.

Thre kyndes of
elephantes.

wyse cauled *Cinnabaris*, although there be an other kynde of *Cinnabaris*, commonly cauled cinoper or vermillion which the paynters vse in certeyne coloures.

They are also of three kyndes, as of the marysshes, the playnes, and the mountaynes, no leſſe differynge in condicions. Philoſtratus wryteth, that as much as the elephant of Lybia in byggenesse passeth the horse of Nysea, so much doth the elephantes of India excede them of Lybia. For of the elephantes of India, sum haue byn feene of the heught of ix. [nine] cubites. The other do ſo greatly feare theſe that they dare not abyde the fyght of them. Of the Indian elephantes, only the males haue tuſkes. But of them of Ethiope and Lybia, both kyndes are tuſked. They are of dyuers heughtes, as of xii. [twelue] xiii. [thirteen] and. xiii. [fourteen] dodrantes, euerie dodrant beinge a meaſure of ix. [nine] ynches. Sum wryte that an elephant is bygger then three wyld oxen or buffes. They of India are blacke or of the colour of a mouse. But they of Ethiope or Guine, are browne. The hyde or fkyne of them all, is very harde and withoute heare or bryiles. Their eares are two dodrantes brode, and theyr eyes very lyttle. Owr men ſaw one drynyng at a tyuer in Guine as they ſayled into the lande.

Of other properties and conditions of the elephant, as of theyr maruelous docilitie, of theyr feight and vfe in the warres, of theyr generation and chaſtitie, when they were fyrfte ſene in the theatres and tryumphes of the Romans, howe they are taken and tamed, and when they caſt theyr tuſkes, with th[e]ufe of the fame in medicine, who ſo defyreteth to know, let hym rede Plinie in the viii. [eighth] booke of his natural hystorie. He alſo wryteth in his. xii. [twelfth] booke, that in owlde tyme they made many goodly woorkes of Iuery or elephantes teeth: as tables, treffels, poſtes of houses, rayles, latteſſes for wyndowes, Images of theyr goddes, and dyuers other thynges of Iuery both coloured and vncoloured and intermyxte with fundry kyndes of precious wooddes, as at this day are made certeyne chayres, lutes, and virginalles.

They had ſuch plentie therof in owlde tyme, that (as farre as I remember) Iofephus wryteth that one of the gates of Hierufalem was cauled *Porta Eburnea*, (that is) the Iuery gate. The whytenesse thereof was ſo muche eſteemed that it was thought to repreſent the naturall fayrenesse of mans fkyne: In ſo much that ſuch as went abowt to ſet furth (or rather corrupte) naturall bewtie with colours and payntyng, were reproyd by this prouerbe: *Ebur atramento candefacere*. That is: To make Iuery whyte with ynke. The poetteſ alſo defcribyng the fayne neckes of bewtiful virginis, caule them *Eburnea colla*: That is: Iuery neckes.

And to haue fayne thus much of elephantes and Iuery, it may ſuffice.

Nowe therfore to ſpeke ſumwhat of the people and their maners and maner of lyuyng, with alſo an other briefe deſcription of Africa.

It is to vnderſtande that the people whiche nowe inhabite the regions of the coaſt of Guine and the myddle partes of Africa, as Lybia the inner, and Nubia with dyuers other great and large regions abowt the fame, were in oulde tyme cauled Ethiopes and Nigrite, which we nowe caule Moores, Moorens, or Negros, a people of beaſtly lyuyng, without a god, lawe, religion, or common welth, and ſo ſcorched and vexed with the heate of the ſonne, that in many places they curse it when it ryfeth. Of the regions and people abowt the inner Lybia (cauled *Lybia Interior*) Gemma Phrynius wryteth thus.

Lybia Interior, is very large and defolat, in the whiche are many horrible wylderneſſes and mountaynes replenifhed with dyuers kyndes of wylde and monſtrous beaſtes and ſerpentes. Fyrſt from Mauritania or Barberie toward the ſouth is Getulia, a rowgh and ſaluaſe region whose inhabitantes are wylde and wanderyng people. After theſe folowe the people cauled Melanogetuli and Pharufi whiche wander in the wylderneſſe carryinge with them greate gourdes of water. The Ethiopians cauled Nigrite, occupie a great parte of Aphrica, and are extended to the West Ocean. Southwarde alſo they reache to the ryuer Nigritis whose nature agreeþ with the ryuer of Nilus forasmuch as it is increased and diminyſhed at the fame tyme, and biyngeth furth the like beaſtes as the Crocodile. By reaſon wherof, I thinke this to be the fame ryuer which the Portugales caule Senega. For this ryuer is alſo of the fame nature. It is furthermore maruelous and very ſtrange that is fayne of this ryuer. And this is, that on the one syde therof, th[e]e inabitantes are of hyghe ſtature and blacke: and on the other ſide of browne or tawny colour and lowe ſtature, which thyngē alſo owre men conſirme to be trewe.

There are alſo other people of Lybia cauled Garamantes, whose women are common. For they contracte no matrimonie, neyther haue respect to chaſtitie. After theſe are the nations of the people cauled Pyrei, Sathiodaphnite, Odrangi, Mimaces, Lynxamate, Dolopes, Agangine, Leuce Ethiopes, Xilicei Ethiopes, Calcei Ethiopes, and Nubi. Theſe haue the fame ſituation in Ptolomie that they nowe giue to the kyngdome of Nubia. Here are certeyne Chriftians vnder the dominion of the greate Emperoure of Ethiope cauled Preſter Iohn. From theſe towarde the weſt, is a great nation of people cauled Aphricones: whose region (as farre as maye bee gathered by coniecture) is the fame that is nowe cauled Regnum Orguene, confinynge vpon the eaſt partes of Guine. From henſe weſtwarde and ſumwhat towarde the north, are the kyngdomes of Gamba and Budomel not farre from the ryuer of Senega. And from henſe towarde the inlaude regions and alonge by the ſea coaſt,

Worfes of Iuery.

The people of
Africa.*Lybia Interior.*

Getulia.

Ethiopeſ.
Nigrite.
The ryuer Nigritis
or Senega.

356
A ſtrange thyngē.

Garamanteſ.
People of Lybia.

Preſter Iohn.

Regnum Orguene.
Gambis.

or vermillion
differynge in
the horfe of
lia, sum haue
ot abyde the
a and Lybia,
iii. [fourteen]
bygger then
Ethiopia or
tels. Theyr
er in Guinea

eight and vse
tryumphes of
the fame in
ystorie. He
of Iuery or
neyr goddes,
s of precious

that one of
ereof was so
uch that such
reproyed by
poetties also

manner of

nea and the
ns abowt the
or Negros, a
xed with the
le abowt the

mountaynes
fauritanis or
wanderynge
wyldernes of
Aphrica,
ture agreeith
th furth the
ugales caule
that is sayde
cke: and on
be trewe.

ey contracte
cauled Pyrei,
opes, Calci
ne of Nubia.
Prester John.
are as maye
the east partes
and Budomel
the sea coft,

are the regions of Ginoia or Guinea which wee commonly caule Gynne. On the west side of these regions towarde the Ocean, is the cape or poyn特 cauled Cabouerde or *Caput viride* (that is) the greene cape, to the whiche the Portugales fyft directe theyr courfe when they fayle to America or the lande of Braile. Then departyng frome henfe, they turne to the ryght hande towarde the quarter of the wynde cauled Garbino which is betwene the west and the south. But to speake sumwhat more of Ethiopia. Althought there are many nations of people so named, yet is Ethiopia chiefly diuyded into two partes: wherof the one is cauled Ethiopia vnder Egypce, a great and ryche region. To this perteyneth the Ilande of Meroe, imbrafed rounde abowte with the stremes of the ryuer Nilus. In this Ilande women reygnd in oulde tyme. Iosephus wryteth that it was sumtyme cauled Sabea: and that the queene of Saba came from thense to Hierusalem to heare the wyfdom of Salomon. From henfe towarde the East, reyngheth the fayde Christian Emperoure Prester John whom sum caule Papa Iohannes, and other say that he is cauled Pean Iuan (that is) greate Iohn, whose empyre reacheth farre beyonde Nilus, and is extended to the coastes of the redde sea and Indian sea. The myddle of the region is almost in the 66. degrees of longitude, and xii. [twelve] degrees of latitude. Abowte this region inhabite the people cauled Clodii, Risophagi, Babilonii, Axiunite, Mosyli, and Molybe. After these is the region cauled Trogloditica, whose inhabitautes dwell in caues and dennes. For these are they houses, and the fleshe of serpentes theyr meate, as wryteth Pline and Diodorus Siculus. They haue no speache, but rather a grynnynge and chatteringne. There are also people without heades cauled Blemimes, hauyng their eyes and mouth in their breste. Lyke-wyle Strucophagi and naked Ganphasantes. Satyrs also which haue no thyng of men but only shape. More ouer Orpei great hunters. Mennones also, and the region of Smyrnophora which bryngeth furth myrre. After these is the region of Azania in the whiche manye elephanthes are founde. A great parte of the other regions of Afrike that are beyonde the Equinoctiall line, are nowe acrybed to the kingedome of Melinde, whose inhabitautes are accustomed to traffike with the nations of Arabie, and theyr kyng is ioyned in frendship with the kyng of Portugale, and payeth tribute to Prester John.

The other Ethiopia cauled *Ethiopia Interior* (that is) the inner Ethiopia, is not yet knownen for the greatness therof but only by the sea coastes. Yet is it described in this maner. Fyrste from the Equinoctiall towarde the south, is a greate region of Ethiopians which bryngeth furth whyte elephanthes, tygers, and the beastes cauled Rhinocerontes. Also a region that bryngeth furth plentie of Cinamome, lyinge betwene the braunches of Nilus. Also the kingdome of Habech or Habassia, a region of Christien men, lying both on this fyde and beyonde Nilus. Here are also the Ethiopians cauled Ichthiophagi (that is) such as lyue only by fishe: and were sumtyme subdued by the warres of great Alexander. Furthermore the Ethiopians cauled Rhapsi, and Anthropophagi that are accustomed to eat mans fleshe, inhabite the regions nere vnto the mountaynes cauled *Montes Lunae*, (that is) the mountaynes of the moone. Gazatia is vnder the tropike of Capricorne. After this, followeth the fronte of afrike, the cape of Buena Speranza or *Caput Bonae Spei*, (that is) the cape of good hope, by the which they passe that fayle from Spayne to Calicut. But by what names the capes and goulies are cauled, forasmuche as the same are in every globe and carde, it were here superfluous to rehearse them.

Sum wryte that Aphrica was so named by the Grecians bycause it is without coulde. For the Greeke letter Alpha or, A, signifieth pryuation, voyde, or without: and phrice, signifieth coulde. For in deede althought in the sleede of wynter they haue a clodye and tempestious season, yet is it not coulde, but rather smoothening hot with alto hot houres of raine and sumwhere suche forchynge wyndes, that what by one meanes and other they feeme at certeyne tymes to liue as it were in fornaces, and in maner alredy halfe way in Purgatorie or hel. Gemma Phrisius writeth that in certeyne partes of Aphrica, (as in Atlas the greater) the ayer in the night seafon is seene flyninge with many straunge fyres and flames rysing in maner as high as the moone: And that in the element are sumtyme harde as it were the sounde of pipes, trumpettes, and droommes. Whiche noyses may perhappes be caufed by the vehement and sundry motions of such fyry exhalations in the ayer, as we fe the lyke in many experiances wrought by fyre, ayer, and wynd. The holownesse also and diuers reflexions and breaking of the cloudes may be greate causes hereof, byfyde the vehement cold of the myddle region of the ayer wherby the sayd fyry exhalations ascending thereth are suddenly ftryken backe with greate force. For euen common and dayly experiance teacheth vs by the whyssinge of a burninge forge what noyse fyre maketh in the ayer, and much more where it striueth when it is incloſed with ayer as apereth in gonnys, and as the lyke is fene in only ayer incloſed, as in organ pipes and such other instrumetnes that go by winde. For wynde as say the philosophores is none other then ayer vehemently moued, as we see in a payer of beloues and suche other.

Sum of owre men of good credit that were in this last vyage to Guinea, affirme ernestly that in the nyght seafon they fel a sensibl heate to coomme from the beames of the moone. The which thynge althought it be straunge and insenible to vs that inhabite coulde regions, yet dootho it stande with good reaſon that it may so be, forasmuch as the nature of the flares and planets (as wryteth Plinie) confysheth of fyre, and conteyneth in it a spirite of lyfe, whiche can not be without heate.

And that the moone gyueth heate vpon the earth, the prophete Davyd feemeth to confirme in his. Cxx.

EDEN.

2 F

385

Guinea or Ginoia.
Cap. Verde.
The Portugales
navigations to
Brasile.

Ethiopia.

The Ilande of
Meroe.

The queene of
Saba.
Prester John
emperour of
Ethiopia.

People of the east
fyde of Africa.

Ophiophagi.

People without
heades.

Myrre.

Azania.
Regnum Melinde.

Ethiopia Interior

Whyte elephanthes

Habassia.

Ichthiophagi.
Anthropophagi.
Montes Luna.
Gazatia.

357

Cap. Bonae Spei.

Aphrica without
coulde.
The winter of
Africa.

Flames of fire
and noyse in
the ayer.

The myddle
region of the
ayer is coulde.
The strife of
clementes.

Wynde.

The hente of
the moone.

The nature of
the stars.

[120th] Psalme, where speakynge of such men as are defended from euyls by goddes protection, he sayth thus : *Per diem sol non exuret te, nec luna per noctem.* That is to say. In the day the foonne shall not burne the nor the moone by nyght.

**Spoutes of water
faulning out of
the ayer.**

**Cataracts of
heauen.**

**Vehement motion
of the sea.**

**A straunge
thyng.**

**The poure of
nature.**

358

They say furthermore that in certeyne places of the sea, they sawe certeyne stremes of water which they caule spoutes faulnyng owt of the ayer into the sea : And that sum of these are as bygge as the greate pyllers of church : In so muche that sumtymes they faule into shypes and put them in greate daungour of drownyng. Sum phantasie that thefe shulde bee the cat[ractes] of heauen whiche were all opened at Noes fludde. But I thynke them rather to be fuche fluxions and eruptions as Aristotle in his boke de Mundo, saith to chaunfe in the sea. For speakynge of fuche thynges as are feene often tymes in the sea, he wryteth thus : Osten tymes also euen in the sea are feene evaporacons of fyre, and fuche eruptions and breakyng furth of sprynges, that the mouthes of ryuers are opened, whylepools, and fluxions are caused of such other vehement motions not only in the middest of the sea, but also in creekes and streyghtes. At certeyne tymes also, a great quantite of water is suddeynly lyfted vp and caryed abowt with the moone. etc. By which woordes of Arystotle it dooth appere that such waters maye bee lyfted vp in one place at one tyme, and suddeynly faule downe in an other place at an other tyme. And hereunto perhappes perteyneth it that Rycharde Chaunceler tolde me that he harde Sebastian Cabot reporte, that (as farre as I remember) eyther abowt the coastes of Brasile or Rio de Plata, his shyppe or pinnes was suddeynly lyfted from the sea and cast vpon the lande I wotte not howe farre. The which thyng and fuche other lyke wonderfull and straunge woorke of nature whyle I confyder and caule to remembraunce the narownes of mans vnderstandinge and knowleage in comparyson of her mighty poure, I can but cease to maruayle and confesse with Plinie that nothyng is to her impossible, the leaste parte of whose poure is not yet knownen to men.

Many thynges more owre men sawe and confydered in this vyage worthy to bee noted, wherof I haue thought good to put sum in memory that the reader maye awfull take pleasure in the varietie of thynges as knowleage of the hystryorie.

**They rase their
skinnes.**

Fine iewells.

A braslet.

Shackell'es.

Ringes.

**Dogs chains of
golde.**

A muske cat.

Their houses

Their feding

Flying fishes

A straunge thyng

Amonge other thynges therefore touchyng the maners and nature of the people, this may feeme straunge that theyr princes and noble men vse to pounfe and rase theyr skynnes with pretty knottes in diuers formes as it were branched dasakte, thynkyng that to be a decent ornament. And albeit they go in maner all naked, yet are many of them and especially their women in maner laden with collars, braslettes, hoopes, and chaynes eyther of golde, copper, or Iuery. I my selfe haue one of theyr braflettes of Iuery wayinge twoo pounds and vi. [six] ounces of Troye weyght, whiche make. xxxviii. [thirty-eight] ounces. This, one of theyr women dyd ware vpon her arme. It is made of one hole piece of the byggest parte of the toothe turned and sumwhat carued, with a hole in the myndest wherin they put theyr handes to ware it on their arme. Sum haue of euerie arme one and as many on theyr legges, wherewith sum of themy are so galde that althouge they are in maner made lame therby, yet wyl they by no meanes leaue them of. Sum ware also on theyr legges great shackels of bryght copper which they thynk to bee no lesse cumly. They ware also collars, braslets, garlandes and gyrdels of certeyne blewe stones lyke beades. Lykewyse sum of theyr women ware on theyr bare armes certeyne foresleeves made of the plates of beaten golde. On theyr fyngers also they ware rynges made of golden wyres with a knotte or wrethe lyke vnto that whiche chyldren make in a ryng of a rushe. Amonge other thinges of golde that our men bowght of them for exchaunge of theyr wares, were certeyne dogges chaynes and collers.

They are very ware people in theyr bargenyng, and wyl not lose one sparke of golde of any value. They vse weyghtes and measures, and are very circumspecte in occupyinge the same. They that shall haue to do with them must vse them gentelly for they wyl not trafike or bryng in any wares if they be euyl vfed. At the fyrt viage that our men had into these parties, it so chaunsed that at theyr departure from the fyrt place where they dyd trafike, one of them eyther stole a muske catte or tooke her a way by force, not mystruslyng that that shulde haue hyndered theyr bargenyng in an other place whither they intended to go. But for al the hast they could make with full sayles, the fame of theyr mysfage so preuented them that the people of that place also offended therby, wold bring in no wares : In so muche that they were inforsed eyther to reflore the catte or pay for her at theyr price before they could trafike there.

Theyr houses are made of foure postes or trees, and couered with bouwes.

Theyr common feedynge is of rootes and such fysshes as they take, wherof they haue great plentie. There are also such flyinge fysshes as are feene in the sea of the Weste Indies. Owre men falten of theyr fysshes hopynge to prouyde flore therof. But they wold take no salte : And mule therefore be eaten furthwith as sum say. Howe be it, other affirme that if they be falten immediately after they be taken, they wyl last vncorrupted. x. [ten] or. xii. [twelue] dayes. But this is more straunge, that parte of such fleshe as they caryed with them owte of Englannde and putrifysyd there, became sweete ageyne at theyr retурne to the clime of temperate regions.

he sayth thus :
burne the nor

er which they
create pylers of
drownyng.
ludde. But I
to chaunse in

Often tymes
yngnes, that the
tions not only
uttie of water
dooth appere
other place at
hat he harde
de Plata, his
e. The which
ule to remem
re, I can but
whose poure is

thy to bee
ayne awfull

eme straunge
ers formes as
her all naked,
and chaynes
o pounde and
r women dyd
and sumwhat
haue of every
are in maner
great shackels
urlandes and
re armes cer
de of golden
monge other
chaynes and

alue. They
hauie to do
ill vied. At
syrfe place
mystrulyng
But for al
ople of that
o restore the

tie. There
hes hopynge
as sum say
orrupt. x.
them owte
egions.

They vse also a straunge makynge of breade in this maner. They grynde betwene two stones with they handes as much corne as they thynke maye suffice theyr famelie. And when they haue thus brought it to floure, they put thereto a certeyne quantitiue of water and make therof very thin dowgh which they flycke vpon sum post of theyr houes, where it is baked by the heate of the sonne : So that when the master of the houe or any of his familie wyl eate thereof, they take it downe and eate it.

They haue very faire wheate, the ere whereof is two handfulls in length and as bygge as a great bulrush, and almost four yncches abowt where it is byggest. The steme or strawe, femeth to be almoech as bygge as the lytle fynger of a mans hande, or lytle leſſe. The graynes of this wheate are as bygge as owr peafon : rounde also, and verye whyte and sumwhat shynynge lyke perles that haue lost theyr colour. Almost all the substance of them turneth into floure, and maketh lytle branne or none. I toulde in one ere two hundredth and three score graynes. The ere is incloſed in thre blades longer then it ſelfe, and of two inches brode a piece. And by this frutefulnesſe the ſoonne ſeemeth partly to recompence ſuch greefes and moleſtacions as they otherwyſe receaue by the feruent heate thereoſ. It is doubtleſſe a worthy contemplation to conſider the contrary effectes of the ſoonne : or rather the contrary paſſions of ſuche thynges as receaue the influence of his beameſ ethir to theyr herte or beneſite.

Theyr drynke is eyther water or the iufe that droppeth from the cut braunches of the barren date trees cauled Palmites. For eyther they hange greate gourdes at the fayde braunches every euenyng and let them ſo hange all nyght, or els they ſet them on the ground vnder the trees that the droppes may faule therin. They ſay that this kynde of drynke is in taſt much lyke vnto whey, but ſumwhat ſweeter and more pleauant. They cutte the braunches every euenyng bycaufe they are ſered vp in the day by the heate of the ſoonne. They haue alſo great beaneſ as bygge as cheſtenuttes, and verye harde with a ſhell in the flede of a huſke.

Many thynges more myght be ſayd of the maners of the people and of the wonders and monſtrous thynges that are engendered in Afrike. But it ſhall ſuffice to haue ſayde thus muche of ſuch thynges as owr men partly ſawe and partly broughth with them.

And wheras before ſpeakynge of the frute of graynes, I diſcrybed the fame to haue holes by the fyde (as in deede it is as it is broughth hether) yet was I afterwarde informed that thoſe holes were made to put ſtrynges or twygges through the frute therby to hange them vp to drye at the ſonne. They growe not paſte a foote and a halfe or twoo foote frome the grownde: and are as red as bludde when they are gathered. The graynes halfe ſelues, are cauled of the phyſitians, Grana Paradyſi.

At theyr comminge home, the keles of theyr ſhyppes were maruelouſly ouergrownen with certen ſhells of ii. [two] yncches length and more as thycce as they coulde flande, and of ſuch byggenes that a man may put his thom in the mouthes of them. They certeynly affirme that in theſe therre growtheth a certeyne flymy ſubtaunce which at the length fypping owt of the ſhel and faulng in the ſea, becometh thoſe foulſe which we cal barnacles. The lyke ſhelles haue by ſeene in ſhyppes returning from Iſlande. But theſe ſhelles were not paſt halfe an inch in length. Of the other that came from Guine, I ſawe the Prymroſe lyinge in the docke, and in maner couered with the fayd ſhelles, which in my iudgemente ſhulde greatly hynder her faylyng. Theyr ſhyppes were alſo in many places eaten with the woormen cauled Bromas or Biſſas whereof mention is made in the Decades. Theſe creepe betwene the plankes whiche they eate through in many places.

Amonge other thynges that chaunced to them in thiſ vyage, thiſ is worthy to be noted, that whereas they ſayled theſer in ſeven weekes, they coulde returne in no leſſe ſpace then. xx. [twenty] weeks. The caufe wheroft they ſay to be thiſ: That abowt the coaſt of Cabo Verde, the wynde is euer at the Eaſt by reaſon whereof they were inforced to fayle farre owt of theyr courſe into the mayne Ocean to fyndre the wynde at the weſt to bryngē them home. There dyed of owr men at thiſ laſt vyage abowt. xxiiii. [twenty-four] whereof many dyed at theyr returne into the clime of the coulde regions, as betwene the Iſlans of Soria and Englaude. They broughth with them certeyne blacke flaues, wheroft ſum were taule and ſtronge men, and coulde well agree with owr meates and drynkes. The coulde and moyst ayer dooth ſumwhat offendeth them. Yet doubtleſſe men that are borne in hotte regions may better abyde coulde, then men that are borne in coulde regions may abyde heate, forasmuch as vehement heate refelcth the radicall moiſture of mens bodies, as could conſtreyneth and preferueth the fame.

Thiſ is alſo to bee conſidered as a feareate woork of nature, that throughout all Afryke vnder the Equinoctiall line and neare abowt the fame on bothe ſydes, the regions are extreme hotte and the people very blacke. Whereas contrarly ſuch regions of the West Indies as are vnder the fame line, are very temperate and the people neyther blacke nor with curle and ſhort woolle on theyr headeſ as haue they of Afryke, but of the

Their bread.

Their wheate.

359

The ſoonne.

Their drinke.

Graynes.

Shelles that cleue
to ſhyppes.

Barnacles.

Bromas.

A ſecrate.

The death of
owr men.

Could may be
better abiden
then heate.

The West Indies.

coloure of an olyue with longe and blacke heare on theyr heades: the cause of which varietie is declared in dyuers places in the Decades.

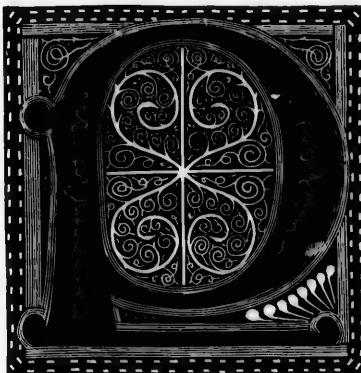
360 It is also woorthy to bee noted that summe of them that were at this vyage toulde me. That is, that they ouertooke the course of the foyne, so that they had it north from them at noone the. xiiiij. [fourteenth] day of Marche.

And to haue sayde thus much of these vyages it may suffice. For (as I haue sayd before) Wheras the parteners at whose charges this booke is pryned, wolde longe fence haue me proceaded no further, I had not thought to haue wrytten any thyng of these vyages but that the liberalitie of master Toy encouraged me to attempt the fame. Whiche I speake not to the reproche of other in whome I thynke there lacked no good wyll, but that they thought the booke wolde be to chargeable.

s declared in .
ne. That is,
e. xiii. [four-

haue sayd
onge fence
ge of these
the same.
ed no good

¶ THE MANER OF FYNDYNGE THE LONGITVDE OF
REGIONS BY DYVERS WAYES AFTER THE DESCRIPTION OF
GEMMA PHRYSIUS.



were dryuen owt of the way a thousande myles into places vnto hym vtterlye vnknownen
and of vnknownen distance. He wryteth therfore as foloweth.

When yow haue founde the place of the mone, yow ought to confyder the houre when she occupied that place. Then eyther by the Ephimerides or by the tables of Alphonsus yow ought to knowe in what houre the moone entreth into the same signe of the Zodiacke in an other region or towne whose longitude is well knownen. Then reducynge the houres to. xxiiii. [twenty-four] the leſſe number of houres is to be deducted out of the greater number. Then the remanent of the houres and mynutes is to be brought to degrees in this maner. Multiplie the hours by. xv. [fifteen] and diuide the minutes of the hours by foure: so shall appere the degrees of the Equinoctiall conteyned betwene two meridians. And if after this diuision there remayne any minutes, multiplie them also by. xv. [fifteen] and therby shalbe knownen the minutes of degrees. Adde this difference of longitude founde to the longitude of the region knownen if the houres of that place bee more in number: or take awaye from the same longitude if they be leſſe: So shall yow in fine gather the longitude of the place vnknownen from the Ilandes of Canarie. But the same is more easely and redely found geometrically by the globes by this meanes. Set directly vnder the meridian, the place whose longitude is knownen in the globe. Then directe the poynte or stile that moueth abowt the pole, to the houre in the whiche the moone occupeth the place assignd in that region. Then turne the globe vntyll the stile that sheweth the houre, be coomme to the houre in the whiche yowc sowght the vnknownen place of the moone. And so shall the degrees of the Equinoctiall diaunta or diuyded frome the mouable meridian, declare the longitude of the region which yow seeke. Neuerthelesse, the more certeine way wherby the differences of longitudes may bee founde, is by sum one thynge that in one moment appeareth in all regions, as by the eclipces of the moone. For the dyuers houres beinge knownen in the whiche the sayd eclipces chaunce in dyuers regions, the longitude maye thus awfull be knownen by geometric and arithmetike, as it is founde by the rule here before. But forasmuch as this doth neyther appere at al tymes nor to all men, and the other way is sumwhat difficult, neyther at al tymes redy by reasoun of the coniunctions of the mone and furthermore also sumtymes vncerteyne and varying sumwhat from the truth for the dyuers

By the mone.

The Ilandes of
Canarie.
How to fynd
the longitude by
the globe

The Eclipses of
the moone.

aspects and latitudes of the mone, it so chaunceth hereby that wee haue eyther no longitudes or the same very vncerteyn of many regions, and especially of thos which the Spanyardes haue of late discouered. For no certentie doubletisfe can be knownen by such commenfurations as are made in the wanderynge turnynges and wyndynges of such vyages, as Ptolome affirmeth in the first booke of his Cosmographie. I wyll therfore adde herevnto sum thynge of myne owne inuention whereby by an easi way and at all tymes the longitudes of regions may bee founde in all vyages and nauigations.

A newe maner of fyndyng the Longitudes of regions.

Little clockes



By the Astrolabic
and globe.
Horoscopus or
the Ascendent.

The latitude.

Ee see that in these owre dayes certeyne lyttle clockes are very artificially made the whiche for theyr fmaule quantitie are not comberous to be carayd abowt in all vyages. These often tymes moue continually for the space. of. xxiii [twenty-four] hours: and may with helpe contineus theyr mouyng in maner perpetually. By the helpe therfore of thei the longitude may bee founde after this maner. Before wee enter into any vyage, wee muste syrste forefee that the fayne clocke exactly obserue the houres of the place from whence we departe: And ageyne that in the way it neuer cease. Accomplisshyng therefore. xv. [fifteen] or. xx. [twenty] myles of the vyage, if wee defyre to knowe howe much in longitude we are dystant frome the place of owre departure, we must tary vnyll the poynyt or stile of the clocke do exactly come to the poynyt of sum houre: and at the same moment by our Astrolabie or globe, ought wee to seeke the houre of the place where we bee: The which yf it agree in minute with the houres which the Horoscopum or ascendent dooth shewe, then is it certeyne that wee are yet vnder the same Meridian or the same Longitude: and that owre course hath byn towarde the south or north. But if it dyffere one hour or any mynute, then are the same to bee reduced to degrees or minutes as we haue taught in the chapiture here before. And so shall the longitude bee founde. And by this arte can I fynde the longitude of regions althoogh I were a thoufand myles owt of my attempted course and in an vnknownen distanse, but the latitude must syrste bee perfectly knownen.

F I N I S.

the same very
ed. For no
mrynges and
nerefore addes
es of regions

**C A bryeſe rehersal of the contentes of the bookeſ of the fyſt Decade, and ſo
folowynge of all the other Decades.** Folio. i. [p. 65.]

e whiche for
These often
y with helpe
le the longi-
mufe fyſte
we deparde:
[een] or. xx.
the place of
oynt of
he



N the fyſt booke is declared howe Christopherus Colonus otherwyſe cauled Columbus, perſuaded Fernando and Elizabeth, prynces of Spayne, to foorthier his attempte in fearching newe and vnuſtōne landes in the Weſt Ocean. Alſo of the vii. Ilandes of Canarie, by whom they were founde and conqueſted.

Howe Colonus founde the Ilandes of Hispaniola, and Cuba: And of the fierce people cauled Canibales or Caribes, which are accustomed to eate mans fleſſe.

Of the rootes cauled Ages, Iucca, and the grayne Maizium, wherof the people of the Ilandes make theyr breade.

Of the gold found in the fandes of ryuers, and of the ferpentēs which are without herte. Alſo of turtle doves, duckes, and popynigayes.

Of Mastix, and Aloë, with dyuers frutes and trees vnuſtōne to vs: and of the frutefulnes of the Iland of Hispaniola which the Spaniardes caule Spagnuola.

Of the feconde vyage of Colonus into theſe regions, and howe he was furnyſhed with. xvii. fyppes and a thouſande and two hundred thofoldiers, with all kynde of artillarie, artificers, and grayne to fowe. And of the tree frome the which water droppeth continually into a trench made by mans hande.

C The contentes of the ſeconda: booke. Fol. 4. [p. 68.]

¶ Howe Colonus departyng from the Ilandes of Canarie, fayled. viii. hundredth and. xx. leagues in. xxi. dayes, and came to Dominica an Ilande of the Canibales: And of the fragrant fauour of ſpices which proceeded from the Ilandes.

Of the Ilandes of Galanta or Galana and Guadalupea, and of the trees which bearre that kynde of cotton whiche the Italiens caule Bombafine, and the Spaniardes Algodon.

Of dyuers kyndes of popingayes: And of the Iland of Matinino or Madinino, being inhabited only with women: Alſo of dyuers other frutefull Ilandes: And of a confiſte which the Spaniardes had with the Canibales.

Of certeyne Ilandes in the which are feene the mynes of metals and precious ſtones: and of the frutefull and peopulous Ilande cauled Burichenia or Boriquen. or *Insula S. Iohannis*.

Howe all the Admirals men whiche at his fyſt vyage he lefts in Hispaniola, were fayne in his abſence by the rebellion of Guacanarillus, kyngē of the Region of Xamara: and of the free kynde of lyfe which they e that haue not the vfe of money.

Of the vii. maydens which fwammē. iii. myles in the ſea: And of the maner of gathering of gold in the fandes of ryuers.

C The Contentes of the thyrde booke. Fol. 10. [p. 73.]

¶ A particular deſcription of the Ilande of Hispaniola, whiche Colonus thynketh to be Ophir, from whence kyngē Salomon had his great ryches of golde.

Of the maruelous frutefulnes of Hispaniola, and of the ſuger canes growynge there.

Of the golden regions of Cipanga or Cibaua, and of the ryuers in whose fandes is founde great plentie of golde.

Of certeyne graines of gold of exceeding great quantitie.

Of wyld vines of pleauant taste, and of graſſe which in four dayes growth as hygh as wheate.

Of the Ilande of Iohanna or Cuba, beinge the ende of the East and the West: And of the frutefull and peopulous Ilande of Jamaica.

Howe the Admirall thought that he had fayled abouthe the loweft hemiſphere or halfe circle of the earth, and of a ſecret of Astronomic touchinge the fame matter.

Howe the Admirall gaue names to. vii. hundredth Ilandes, and paſted by three thouſande vnnamed.

Of certeyne ſerpentes lyke vnto Crocodiles of. viii. foote longe, whose fleſſe is delicate to be eaten: and of certeyne trees which beare gourdes.

Of the ryuer whose water is very hotte: and of the huntinge fyſhe which taketh other fyſhes.

Of great aboundinge of Tortoyſes as bygges as targets, and of a frutefull mountayne well inhabited.

Of dogges of deformed ſhape and dum: And of whyte and thicke water. Of wooddes of date trees and pyneapple trees, and of certeyne people appareled like white friers.

Of certeyne trees whiche beare ſpices, and of cranes of exceedinge bignes.

Of ſtocke doves of more pleauante taste then partriches.

An oration of a barbarous gouernour as touchinge the immortalitie of the fowle: Alſo of the rewarde of vertue and punyfhemēt of vice.

A ſimilitude of the golden worlde, and of prouifion withoute care.

Howe the admirall fell ſickē by reaſon of to much watchyng: And of a fedition which rose among the Spaniardes in the Ilande of Hispaniola.

C The Contentes of the fourth booke. Fol. 18. [p. 79.]

Howe the Kynges of the Ilande of Hispaniola, were by the Spaniardes myfbehauoure prouoked to Rebellion: And howe the admirall ſent for them.

Howe kinge Caunboa the Lordē of the houſe of golde, that is, of the mountaynes of Cibaua, conpired the Admirals death, and how he with his familie were taken priſoners.

Of a greate famine that chaunced in the Iland of Hispaniola: and howe the Admirall builid certeyne fortrefces.

Of a piece of rude golde waighinge. xx. vnces: and of the myne of the riche metall cauled Electrum.

Of the mountayne in the whyche is founde great plentie of Amber and orpemeſt: And of the wooddes oī braille trees.

Howe th[e]inhabitauntes are put to theyre tribute: And howe the nature of the Region diſpotethe the maners of the people.

Howe the brother of kinge Caunboa came ageynſte the Admiral with an army of ſue thowſand naked men: and how he was taken and his army put to flyght.

Of the frutfull vale Magona, in the fandes of whose ryuers is founde great plentie of golde: and of certeyne whirlewynedes and tempestes.

Howe the Admirall fente foorth his brother Bartholomeus Colonus with an army of men to fearch the gold mines and of the fottes which he found to haue bin digged in old tyme

¶ The Contentes of the. v. booke. Fol. 22. [p. 82.]

Howe the Lieutenaunt buldled a fortresse in the golde mynes: And prepared instrumentes for the pourginge and lynesing of the golde.

Howe certeyne shypes laden with vytayles, came frome Spayne: And howe the Lieutenaunt sent the kynges which rebelled, with three hundred captives into Spayne.

Howe the Liefetenaunte remoued his habytacion: And buylded a fortresse which he cauled saynt Dominickes towre Alſp howe he paffed ouer the ryuer Naiba, and entered into the wooddes of brayfle trees.

Howe the great kyng Beuchius Anacauchoa, frenedly enterteyned the Lieutenaunt, and brought hym to his pallaye, where the kynges wyues and concubines receaved him honorably with pomps and triumphes.

Of the fortresses which were erected in Hispaniola: And howe the Lieutenaunt exacted tribute of the kynges which rebelled agayne.

Howe the Lieutenaunt sette vpon the kynges vnewars in the nyght feaston, and tooke. xiii. of them pryfones.

Howe kyng Guarionexius, capitayne of the conspiracie was pardoned, and howe he perfused the people to obediencie.

Howe kyng Beuchius Anacauchoa, fente messengers to the Lieutenaunt to repaire to his pallaye where he founde xxxii. kynges redy with their tributes: And howe the queene Anacaona esyfied hym to eate of the serpentes fleshe.

Howe the serpentes fleshe is prepared to be eaten: And how delicate meat theyr eggs are of they be foddien.

Howe queene Anacaona, syster to kyng Beuchius Anacauchoa, enterteyned the Liefetenaunt, and gaue hym muche houſholde fluffe and many vessells of Hebrew woodde artificially wrought and carued.

Howe kyng Anacauchoa and the queene his syfter went aboord the Liefetenaunt his shyppe, and howe greatlye they were amased to beholde the furniture therof.

Howe Roldanus Xeminus a Spaniarde, rebelled in the Lieutenauntes absence: by whose nyfideavour also kyng Guarionexius was prouoked to a newe conspiracie, and with hym Maiobanexius the kyng of the mountaynes.

¶ The contentes of the syxte booke. Fol. 28. [p. 87.]

¶ The thyrde vyage of Colonus, and howe he diuerted from his accustomed rate by the Ilandes of Canarie to the Ilande of Madera for feare of certayne frenche pirates and rourers.

Of the xiii. Ilandes which in olde tyme were cauled Hesperides, and are nowe cauled the Ilandes of Caput Viride or Cabouero. Also of the Tortoyes of the Ilande of Bonauifa, wherwih the leaper is healed.

Howe the Admirall founde contagious ayre and extreme heate nere the Equinoctiall where the north pole was elevete onely iuyne degrees: And howe sailyng from thence westward, he founde the starres placed in other order, and the sea ryfinge as it were the backe of a mountayne.

Howe the Admirall sailynge westwarde, and neuer paſſyng owt of the clyme or paraleles of Ethiope, founde a temperate Region and people of goodly corporature: And what difference is betwene the natures of Regions beyng vnder one paralele and one elevation of the pole.

Of the Ilandes of Puta and Margarita: and of the swifte courfe or faule of the Ocean from the Eaſt to the weſte.

Of the goufes cauled Os Draconis: And of the conflicte betwene the freſhe water and the ſalte.

Of a ſea of ſrefhe water: And a mountayne inhabited onely with monkeys and marmafettes.

Of the fayre, riche, and large region of Paria: And howe frenedly theſinhabitantes entreated the Admirall and his men. Also of pleasaunte wyne made of dyuerſe fruities: And of greate abundaunce of perles and golde.

Of the regions of Cumana, Manacapana, and Curiana, beyng regions of the large prouynce of Paria: And of the ſea of herbes or weedes.

A certeyn fecrete as touchyng the pole starre and the eluation of the fame: Also of the roundnesse of the earthe.

Of the mountaynes of Paria in the topes wherof Colonus earnestly affirmeth the earthly Paradise to be ſituate: And whether Paria be part of the firme land or continent of India.

¶ The contentes of the. vii. booke. Fol. 33. [p. 90.]

¶ Howe Roldanus Xeminus with his conſetherates, accused the Admirall to the kyng: And howe he poured hym ſelue and accused them

Howe kyng Guarionexius rebelled agayne: And with him kyng Maiobanexius: Also howe they with other kynges came agaynst the Lieutenaunte with an armee of. viii. thouſande naked and paynted Ciguanians. Also two rare examples of frendfhippe and faythfulnes in barbarous princes.

Howe Colonus the Admirall and the Lieutenaunte hys brother, were ſent bounde into Spayne: And newe officers appoynted in theyr places.

The contentes of the. viii. booke. Fol. 37. [p. 94.]

¶ The nauigation of Petrus Alphonſus frome Spayne to Paria, where in the region of Curiana, he had in ſhorte ſpace. xv. vnces of perles and greate plenty of vytayles for hawkes belles, pynnes, lokinge glaſſes, and ſuche other tryfelles.

Of certeyn conjectures wherby Paria is thought to bee part of the firme lande: And of the golden region of Cauchieta, where in the moneth of Nouember the ayre is temperate and not coulde.

Howe Alphonſus had a conflict with the Canibals: and howe they are acuſomed to inuade other contreyes.

Of greate abundaunce of falte in the region of Harala: and howe the dead bodies of theyr prynces are dryed, referued, and religiouſly honoured.

Howe Alphonſus at his retурne to Spayne frome Curiana, brought with hym threſcore and. xl. pounde weight of perles which he bought for owe tryfels amounting only to the value of five ſhillings.

The contentes of the. ix. booke. Fol. 40. [p. 96.]

¶ The Nauigation of Vincentius Pinzonius and Aries Pinzonius, and howe they ſayled beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne, loſte the lyght of the northe ſtarre, and ſounde the ſtarres in other order.

Howe Vincentius paſſyng the equinoctiall towarde the ſouth pole, founde ſierce and warlike people of great ſtature: And of the ſea of freshe water.

Howe Vincentius directing his courfe towarde the north weſte from the equinoctiall, recouered the lyght of the northe pole, and by the regions of Mariatambal, Camomorus, and Pericora, came to the fayre and ryche prouynce of Paria, and to the regyons of Os Draconis, Cumana, Manacapana, Curiana, &c.

A coniecture that Paria (wherby is meant that mayne land now cauled Amerika) ſhulde be part of the fyrmeland or continent of Indi, beyonde the ryuer of Ganges and no ilande: And of the excedyng great riuer Magnumon replenished with Ilandes.

Of Boristonea and Spriſtomea, the mouthes of the famous ryuer of Danubius, cauled in olde tyme Iſter: And of the commodities of the regions and Ilandes about Paria. Also of the woodes of brasile trees.

Of many trutfull Ilandes waſhed and leſte defoliate by reſon of the Canibales crueltie: And of the trees of Cassia Fitula. Also of other trees of exceeding bygneeſſe.

The deſcription of a certayne monſtrous beaſte, and how Vincentius loſte two of his ſhyppes by tempeſtes.

Howe Vincentius at his retурne to Spayne ſet forth with hym cinamome, gynger, and certayne precious ſtoones and copaies. And of the auſtagions of certayne other inhabitants of the towne of Palos.

Of the precious medicine cauled Anime Album. And of the diuerſe ſuperſtitio[n]s of the inhabitautes of Hispaniola. Also of their Idolatry, and howe they honour the ymages of deuyls, whiche they caule Zemes.

¶ The Contentes of the x. booke. Fol. 48. [p. 103.]

Of great plentie of golde, perles, and frankenfence found in the regions of Paria. And of innumerable beastes in shape dyfferyng from owres.

Howe the Spaniardes profered them selues to conquer the newe founde landes, beyng in largenesse thryfe as great as Europe befyde the southe landes parteyng to the Portugales. And howe the nature of the place altereth the formes and qualities of thynges.

Of the Ilande of Cuba, and of the golde mynes of the Ilande of Sancti

Iohannis, otherwise cauled Burichena, or Buchena. Alfo of the ryche golde mynes of Hispaniola, and of the order of workynge in the same.

Of the two chiese golde mynes of Hispaniola. And of a pece of golde weyngis thre thousande thre hundredth and tennne pounds weyght.

Howe the golde is fyned and distributed: And howe that only in the meltyng shops of the two golden mynes of Hispaniola, is molten yearly about three hundred thousande pounds weyght of golde.

Howe thef[er]enterpryses of the Spanyardes are not inferior to th[e]actes of Saturnus or Hercules: And howe the Admyrall discouered the lande ouer agaynst the west corner of Cuba and the Ilande of Guanassa.

¶ The Contentes of the bookes of the seconde Decade.

¶ The contentes of the fyfth booke. Fol. 51. [p. 106.]

¶ Howe after the death of Colonus the Admirall, the kyng gave free licence to all suche as woldes attempete any vyages: And of the nauigations of Diego Nicuefa, and Alphonsum Fogeda.

Of the Ilande Codego and the region of Caramairi: And of certeyne sweete apples whiche turne into wormes when they are eaten, whose trees are also contagious.

Howe Alfonsum Fogeda, the Lieutenant of Vraba, encoutering with the bartarians had the ouerthrowe. And howe in this confiste, syfisie of his men v. ~ slayne with Iohannes de la Coffin their capytayne.

Howe Fogeda, and Nicuefa the Lieutenants of Beragua, reuenged the death of theyr compaynions: And howe Fogeda came to the Ilande Fortis and the region of Caribana where he was repulised from the golde mynes by the fiercenesse of the barbarians vfyng arrows infected with poyon.

Howe Fogeda was wounded in the thygh with a venemous arrowe, and his men almoft confummed with famyn.

Howe a brigantine was drowned with the stroke of a syfle: And of the nauigation of Ancifus from Hispaniola to Vraba.

Of the Lamentable thyppewracke of Ancifus: And of the date trees and wylde bores which he founde.

Of the frutes or apples of the trees cauled Ceders of Libane which beare owldre frutes and newe all the year.

Howe onely three of the Canibals with theyr bowes and inuenemend arroves assayled Ancifus with a hundredth of his men: In which confiste theyr wounded and flewe many. Alfo of theyr swyftnesse of foote.

Of the great ryuer of Dariena: And how Ancifus encountered with syue hundredth of th[e]inhabitauntes of the goulfe of Vraba and put them to flight. Alfo howe he founde greate plentie of wrought golde and houyhode stufte in a thycket of reedes.

¶ The contentes of the seconde booke. Fol. 58. [p. 111.]

¶ Howe Nicuefa loste his felowes in the darke nyght and went past the mouth of the ryuer Beragua which he fought: And howe the capitaynes of the other thyppes consulted how to synde hym. Alfo of the ryuer Lagartos in the which great Lysartes are founde much lyke vnto the Crocodiles of Nilus.

Howe the capitaynes forsooke theyr thyppes that the fouldyngs myght bee without hope of departure: And of the miserable chaunce of Petrus de Vmbria and his felowes.

By what chaunce Nicuefa was founde, and of the calamities which he and his company fusteyned. Alfo of the region of Gracia Dei or Cerbaro, and of the ryuer of Sancti Matthel.

Howe Nicuefa caufed them to remoue theyr habitation from Beragua to poynete Marmor where he bylded a fortresse. And howe his men by warre and famyn, were confummed from feuen hundred and odde, to scarcely one hundred.

Howe one Vaschus Nunnez vsurped th[e]autoritie of the Lieutenantshippe of Vraba in th[e]abſence of Fogeda: And of the nauigation of Rodericus Colmenaris from Hispaniola to Vraba.

Of the ryuer Gaira defendyng from the toppe of a hygh mountayne covered with snowe: And howe Rodericus Colmenaris in a confiste agaynst the barbarians, loste. xlvi. of his men by reaſon of theyr inuenemend arrowes.

Of the force of the poyon wherewith the barbarians infecte theyr arrowes, and a remedie for the fame. Alfo howe Colmenaris by gunneſhot and kyndelynge fyres on the hyghe toppes of the rockes, came to the Spanyardes leſte defoliate in Dariena.

¶ The contentes of the thyrde booke. Fol. 61. [p. 114.]

¶ Howe Nicuefa was fought forth to acq[ui]ete the contentions of Vraba: And howe he was ageyne rejected.

Howe Vaschus Nunnez invaded, tooke prysners, and spoyled the kynges bortheryng abowt the region of Vraba: And howe Ancifus Lieutenant of Fogeda was cast in pryson, and afterward ſet at libertie.

Howe Ancifus tooke his vyage from Vraba to Spayne to acciue Vaschus: who alſo at the fame tym feit Valdiuia awell to ſpeak in his defence, as alſo to certifie the kyng of theyr doynges.

Howe kyng Careta conſpirid with the Spanyardes ageyn a kyng Poncha whom they rat to flighe and ſpoyle his vyllage.

Howe kyng Comogrus frendry enterteyned the Spanyardes and brought them to his pallacie where he ſhewed them the dried Carkafes of his auncetours referred and sumptuously apparellid: And howe the kynges elder ſonne gaue Vaschus and Colmenaris foure thouſand vnces of wrought gold and fiftie ſlaves. Alfo a wytte oration which he made to the Spanyardes, wherein he certified theym of a country excedyng ryche in golde, &c.

¶ The contentes of the fourth booke. Fol. 66. [p. 118.]

¶ Of horryble thunder and lyghtnyng in the mooneth of Nouember, and of grayne which waxeth ripe thryfe a year. Alfo how digestion is ſtrengthened by owtwarde coulde.

Howe Valdiuia is ſent ageyne into Hispaniola to moue the gouernour and counſayle there to ſende into Spayne to the kyng for a ſupplie of a thouſand ſouldyers to make way to the golden mountaynes: And howe

he caried with hym the kynges portion, (that is) the fyfe parte of golde and other thynges.

Howe Vaschus invaded the kynges inhabytyng the regions about the goule of Vraba, and howe he put kyng Dabaiba to flight, in whose vylinge he founde wrought golde amountyng to the weyght of feuen thousande Cestellans.

Of bates as bygge as turtle dooves which sumtyme byte men in the nyght in their sleepe, whos bytyng is also venemous: but is healed with water of the sea or by auerization as are also the wounds of venemous arrowes.

Of the Ilande of Cannafistula, and a towne of fyue hundredth houses, whos kyng Abenamachel was taken and his armee coute of in the fight.

Of trees of excedyng bygnesse and heught: And howe kyng Abibeiba had his pallacie in the toppe of a tree frome the which he was inforced to defende and entreat of peace.

¶ The contentes of the fyfth booke. Fol. 69. [A. 120.]

¶ Howe kyng Alraiba flewe a capitayne of the Spanyards and caufed the kynges to rebel. Also howe they were put to flight and many of theyr men flayne.

Of fyue kynges which attempted a newe confiracie with a hundredth great Canoa and fift thousand men: And howe theyr intent was bewrayed by a woman, and preuented. Also howe Rodericus Colmenaris fackid the vylage of Tichiri and honge the kyng therof with fourre of his chieftayres, and comandaund them to be shotte through with arrowes.

¶ The contentes of the syxte booke. Fol. 72. [A. 122.]

¶ Howe Vaschus with his confetherates, fente Iohannes Quicedus and Colmenaris from Dariena to Hispaniola and from thense to Spayne to the kyng for a thousand men to passe ouer the mountaynes to the golden regions: And what miseries theyr suffeyden in that vyage. Also of the death of Valdijuia, Zamudius, and Fogeda.

Of the prosperous vyage of Ancifus. And howe godle wrought miracles by the simple sayth of a mariner. Also how god respecteth th[e]infancie of fyath for zeles sake: And howe one religion turned into another, holdeth stilly many thinges of the fyfthe.

Howe many of the barbarians were baptysyd by reasoun of the miracles: And howe they rewarded the prestes by whome they were baptysyd.

Howe Ancifus shortly after his arryall in Spayne, reforted to the courte and made his complaunt to the kyng of th[e]infolencie of Vaschus, wherupon the kyng gaue sentence agaynt hym: And howe apte the barbarous nations are to embrase the Chrifitian sayth.

¶ The contentes of the seuenth booke. Fol. 79. [A. 126.]

¶ Howe Quicedus and Colmenaris the procuratours of Dariena, were honorably enterteyned at the courte and brought to the kynges prefence: And howe theyr complexion was chaungyd by alteration of the ayer.

Howe Petrus Arias a noble man, was elected governour and Lieutenant of Dariena: And howe other of the court laboured for the same office. Also howe the byshop of Burgo spake to the kyng in his behalfe.

Howe Petrus Arias had a thousande and two hundredthe fouldyrs appoynted hym at the kynges charges: And of the kynges custome house in the citie of Ciuite, cauled the house of the contractes of India.

Howe a great number of Spanyards profered themselues to go at theyr owne charges: And of a restraint made that no straunger myght passe without the kynges licence. Also howe the autour reproacheth Aloisius Cadamustus a wryter of the Portugales vyages.

Howe Petrus Arias shortly after his departure frome Ciuite, lost wo of his shippes and was dryuen backe agayne by tempest: And howe beinge newly furnysshid, hee paffed the Ocean with more prosperous wyndes.

The thyrde vyage of Vincentius Pinzonius, and howe he came to the

regions of Paria where encouterynge with th[e]inhabitauntes he put them fyrt to flight: but after faulyng to entreatie of peace, they gaue hym great plentie of golde and abundaunce of masculine frankenfence with dyuers other princely presentes.

Of the grete multitude of popingayes which are in the region of Paria, and howe th[e]inhabitours are appareld. Also of the fyue kynges that made a league of frendelhypphe with Viventius.

Howe Vincentius syaled Eastwarde by the tracte of the regions of Paria vnyll he came to the poynete [Cap. S. Anguillini] of that longe lande which the autour supposeth to be the grete Ilande Atlantike wherof the owlike wryters make mention.

¶ The contentes of the viii. booke. Fol. 80. [A. 129.]

¶ A contention betwene the Castiliens and Portugales as concerninge the diuision of the newe founde landes: And howe the controuerse was synfyshed by the byshop of Rome.

Howe Don Chrysophore the gouernoure of the Ilande of Sancti Iohannis, was flayny by the Canibales and the byshop put to flight. Also of the other byshops of the Ilandes.

Howe the Canibales of the Iland of Sancta Crux, flew and eate a kyng with certeyne of his men beinge frendes to the Chryslians and made faggottes of theyr bones: And how querelyng with owe men, they put them to silence.

¶ The contentes of the ix. booke. Fol. 81. [A. 130.]

¶ Of the maruelous frutefulnes of the regions of Beraguia, Vraba, and Dariena: And of the dyuers kyndes of trees and frutes. Also of the pleasant taste of swynes fleshe beinge fedde with the frutes of Mirobalane trees.

Of Lions and Tygers and other wynde beastes: And of a beaste of strange forme.

Of the ryers of the goule of Vraba, as the ryuer of Dariena and Rio Grandia: And howe the great serpentes cauled Crocodiles, are founde in other ryuers byfyde Nilus in Egypte. Also howe th[e]autour of this booke was sent Ambafadour to the Soltane of Alcayr in Egypte.

Of the Portugales nauigations, and of the ryuer Senega founde by them to bee a chanel of Nilus. Also of the multitude of byrdes and foules beinge in the maryshes of Dariena.

A phyllophilicall discouerie of th[e]orignall and generation of sprynges and ryuers: And of the breadth of the lande diuydynge the north and south Ocean.

Of the great ryuer Maragnonus and of the earthly Paradys: And howe sprynges are engendered by conuercion of ayer into water.

Of the often faule of rayne under the Equinoctiall line, and of the pores of the sea opened by the South wyndes.

Of the great ryuers of Tanais, Ganges, Danubius, and Eridanus, famous to the owlike wryters: And howe certaine ryuers runnyng through the causes of the earthe, breake furth into sprynges afarre of.

¶ The contentes of the x. booke. Fol. 86. [A. 134.]

¶ Howe the newe founde landes discouered by the Spanyardes in the West Ocean, are eyght tymes bigger then Italie befyde that which the Portugales possesse: And of the cardes of the sea drawnen by Colonas and Americus Vesputius.

The order of meafuryng the lande: And howe a league conteyneth fourre myles by sea but three by lande.

The Nauigation of Iohannes Dias, and of the fundrye elevations of the pole starre.

Of the Ilande of Boiuca or Agnaneo, and of the springe whose water beinge dronne, caufeth owd men to loke yonge.

Howe Nicuefa and his fouldyrs were to opprest with famin, that they were dryuen to eate mangie dogges, toades, and deade men: And howe a brothe made of a dogges skinne, was foulde for many pieces of golde.

entes he put them
they gae hym
ankensence with

region of Paria,
yue kynges that

regions of Paria
nge lande which
wherof the owlde

[A. 129.]

as concernynge
controvercie was

Saneti Iohannis,
ht. Alfo of the
and eate a kyng
s and made fag-
n, they put them

A. 130.]

gun, Vraba, and
Also of the plean-
liorbalane trees,

Dariena and Rio
es, are founde in
our of this booke

founde by them
and foulles beinge

tion of sprynges
the north and

lyfe : And howe
and of the pores

Cridlanus, famous
nge throughe the

A. 134.]

panyards in the
that which the
by Colonas and

gue conteyneth

leuations of the
nge whose water

famin, that they
n : And howe a
es of golde.

¶ The contentes of the fyfth booke. Fol. 88. [A. 137.]

¶ Of the desperat adventure and good fortune of Vafchus : And how with a hundredth fourfore and ten men, he brought that to passe for the which Petrus Arias was fente with a thousande and two hundredth frethle loundyers.

Howe iren ferueth for more necessary vses then gold, and howe superfluitie hynder libertie.

Howe Vafchus in one confilte, flewe fyxe hundredth barbaryans with their kynges : And howe he founde the house of kyng Quarequa infected with unnatural lechery, commaundyng that the kyng and fortie fuche as he kepte for that purpose, shulde be guyen for a pray to his dogges whiche he vfel to serue in the warres ageynft these naked people.

Of a region of blacke Moores : And howe Vafchus came to the toppes of the mountaynes, where geuyng thankes to god, he behelde the newe south Ocean never before fene nor known to men of owre worlde.

Howe Vafchus put kyng Chiapes to flyght, and after made a league of frenchedyppre with hym : And howe the king gaue hym. iiiii. hundredth poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Howe kyng Coquena was putte to flyght, who also beinge receaued to frenchedyppre, gaue Vafchus fyxe hundredth and fifti poundes weyght of wrought golde.

Of the goulfis cauled Sinus. S. Michaelis beinge full of inhabited Ilandes : And of the manly corage and godly zeale of Vafchus. Also of the ryfyng and fulyng of the south fea.

Howe kyng Tumacca beinge dryuen to flyght and afterwarde reconciled, gaue Vafchus. vi. hundredth and xiii. pesos of golde, and two hundredth and fortie of the greatest and fayrest perles : And howe the kyng caufed his men to sytle for perles.

Of the Ilande cauled Margaritea Dives : And of the abundaunce of sayre and great perles founde therin.

Of habitable regions under the Equinoctiall line : And of the Portugales navigations to the Antipodes inhabitynge the fyue and sixtie degree of the south pole. Also a declaration of Antipodes, and of the staires about the south pole.

¶ The contentes of the seconde booke. Fol. 95. [A. 142.]

¶ Of the maner of syfhyng for perles and of the three kyndes therof. Also dyuers other queftions concerningye perles.

Of the multitude of the shell syffhes wherin perles are engendered and founde in maner in all places in the south fea : And of abundaunce of golde founde almoste in every house. Also howe the treasurie of nature is in those coaftes : And of the golde mynes of Dariena.

Howe kyng Tenochi gaue Vafchus. xx. poundes weight of wrought golde and two hundredth perles. Also of defertes full of wylde beaftes, and howe Vafchus was troubled with grete heate in the moneth of November.

Howe a dogge Tyger was taken, and his whelpes tyd in cheynen and torn in pieces : Also howe Vafchus gaue. iiiii. kynges to his dogges to be deuoured.

Of the vfe of dogges in theyr warres, and of the fiercenesse of the Canibales.

Howe kyng Bononiana fauoured the Chryſtians and gaue Vafchus. xx. pounde weyght of wrought golde. Also his oration to Vafchus.

A similitude pronyng greate plentie of golde in the regions of the south fea, and of the trauayles which owlde loundyers are able to fulseyne.

¶ The contentes of the thyrde booke. Fol. 99. [A. 146.]

¶ Howe kyng Buchibien submytted hym felfe to Vafchus, and sent hym certeyne veſſeles of golde. Also howe kyng Chiorifus fente hym. xxx. dyſthes of pure golde.

Howe iren ferueth for more necessary vses then gold. Also an exemple of the lyfe of our fyfte parentes.

Howe kyng Pocchorrofa submytted hym felfe, and gaue Vafchus. xv. pounde weyght of wrought golde. Also howe Tumanama the great kyng of the golden regions toward the south fea, is taken prisoner. Lykewylde howe he gaue Vafchus. xxx. pounde weyght of pure and wrought golde, and his noble men. ix. poundes weyght of golde.

Of the caufe of vehement wyndes here vnto the Equinoctiall line, and of the colour of the earth of the golden mines.

Of the large and frutefull playne of Zanana, and of the ryuer Comogrus. Also howe kyng Comogrus baptysed by the name of Charles gaue Vafchus. xx. pounde weyght of wrought golde.

Of the good fortune of Vafchus, and howe he was turned from Goliath to Eliefus, and from Autens to Hercules : And with what facilitie the Spanyarde : shall hereafter obteyre greate plentie of golde and perles.

Of the Spanyardes conqueſtes, and fiercenesse of the Canibales. Also an exhortacion to Chryſtian princes to fette forwarde Chryſtites religion.

¶ The contentes of the fourth booke. Fol. 104. [A. 150.]

¶ The fourth vyage of Colonus the Admirall frome Spayne to Hispaniola, and to the other Ilandes and coaftes of the firme lande : Also of the florifynghe Ilande Guanalfa.

Of feuen kyndes of date trees, wylde vynes, and Myrobalanes : Also of byrdes and foulles.

Of people of goodly stature which vfe to paynt theyr bodyes : And of the swyfte courfe of the fea from the east to the west. Also of frefhе water in the fea.

Of the large regions of Paria, Os Draconis, and Quiriquetana : And of greate Tortoyſes and reedes. Also of the fourte frutefull Ilandes cauled Quatuor Tempora, and. xii. Iander cauled Limonares.

Of sweete fauours and holosome ayer : And of the region Quicuri, and the hauen Cariai or Myrobalanis : Also of certeyne ciyle people.

Of trees groynge in the fea after a strange forte, and of a strange kynde of Moonkeyes which inuade men and feight with wylde bores.

Of the greate goulfis of Cerabaro replenifhed with many frutefull Ilandes, and of the people which ware cheyne of golde made of ouches wrought to the similitude of dyuers wylde beaftes and foulles.

Of fyue vyllages whose inhabitauntes gyue them felues onely to gather yngre of golde, and are paynted, vlynge to weare garlandes of Lyons and Tygers clawes. Alfo of seuen ryuers in all the which is founde grete plentie of golde : And where the plentie of golde ceaſeth.

Of certeyne people which paynt their bodyes, and couer theyr priuie members with shelles, hauyng alfo plates of golde hangyng at theyr noſethrylles.

Of certeyne woormes which beinge engendered in the feas nere abowt the Equinoctiall, eate holes in shypes : And how the Admirals shypes were defroyed by them.

Howe the kyng of Beragua enterteyned the Lieuetenant and of the great plentie of gold in the ryuer of Durba and in al the regions there aboue : Alfo in rootes of trees and stones and in maner in all the ryuers.

Howe the Lieuetenant and his company wold haue erected a colonicie before the ryuer of Beragua, and was repulſed by th[e]clinhauitaunes.

Howe the Admirall fel into the handes of the barbarians of the Iland of Iamaica where he lyued miserably the space of tenne monetheſ : And by what chaunce he was fauſed and came to the Ilande of Hispaniola.

Of holſome regions, temperate ayer, and continual ſpring al the hole yeare : Alfo of certeyne people which honour golde religiouly duryng theyr golden haueſt.

Of the mountaynes of Beragua beinge fiftie myles in heighe and hygher then the clowdes : Alfo the diſcription of other mountaynes and regions there about, comparyng the fame to Italy.

Colonis his opinion as touchyng the ſuppoſed continent, and ioynynge of the north and ſouth Ocean. Alfo of the breadth of the ſayne continent or firme lande.

Of the regions of Vraba and Beragua and the great ryuer Maragnonus and the ryuer of Dabaiba or Sancti Iohannis. Alfo of certeyne maryſhes and defoliate wayes, and of dragons and Crocodiles engendered in the fame.

Of xx. golden ryuers abowt Dariena and of certeyne precious ſtones, eſpecially a diamunde of marueilous byggenesse bought in the prouince of Paria.

Of the heroical factes of the Spaniardes and howe they contemne effeminate pleaſures. Alfo a ſimilitude prouyng greate plentie of golde and precious ſtones.

Howe Petrus Arias waſted certeyne Ilandes of the Canibales : And howe by the fyſte courfe of the ſea, his ſhippes were caried in one nyght fortie leagues beyond th[e]eftimation of the beſte pylotes.

¶ The contentes of the fyxe booke. Fol. 118. [p. 161.]

¶ Of fundry opinions why the ſea runneth with ſo fyſte a courfe from the Eaſte to the weſt : and of the grete goule of the north parte of the firme lande.

The vyage of Sebastian Cabote from Englande to the froſen ſea, and howe being repulſed with Iſe in the moonethe of Iuly, he fayled farre weſtwarde.

Of people apparellled with beaſtes ſkynnes : And howe beares take ſyfhes in the ſea and eate them.

Howe Sebastian Cabote after that he had diſcouered the lande of Baccalaor or Baccallearum, was cauiled out of Englande into Spayne, where he was made one of th[e]aſtaunce of the counſayle of th[e]aſſayres of India, and of his ſecond viage

Of the Ilande Fortis : And howe a great foule ar bygge as a florke lyghted in the gouernours ſhypp. Alfo howe he arryued at Dariena with the kynges naue.

Howe Vaſchus receaued the newe gouernour : And of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall.

Howe Petrus Arias the newe gouernour diſtributed his army to conqueſt the ſouth regions ryche in golde, and to erecte newe colonies in the fame.

Of the ryche golde mynes of Dabaiba, and of th[e]expedition ageynſt the kynges of that region.

Of the Violent courfe of the ſea from the eaſt to the weſt : And of the diſtice ſaylyng ageynſt the fame.

Of the peliterous and vnholome ayer of Sancta Maria Antiqua in Dariena : and howe the Spaniardes were of neceſſitie inforced to plant theyr firſt colonie and habitation there.

The caufe of the varietie of regions lyingne all vnder one degree or parallèle, and by what meaneſ the fonne beames are caufe of feruent heate.

Of toades and fleſs engendered of droppes of water, and of a house fet on fyre with lyghtnyng.

Of a dogge devoured of a Crocodile [*Tanquam canis e Nilo*], and of the venemus bytynge of great batteſ. Alfo of Lions and Tygers and other wyde beaſtes.

Howe in theſe regions all fourre footed beaſtes growe to a bigger quantite then they whiche were of the fyſte broode. Alfo of certeyne trees of whiche planckes if ſhipe be made, they are ſafe frome the woormes cauiled Brom or Byſſas.

Of a tre whose wod is preſent poſyon of it be only borne about : And of an herbe that is a preferutius againſt the fame.

Of the ryche Ilandes of the ſouth ſea, and of certeyne expeditions ageynſt the Canibales.

¶ The contentes of the vii. booke. Fol. 124. [p. 165.]

¶ The particular diſcription of the Ilande of Hispaniola, and of the ryche Ilande cauiled Margaritea Diues lyinge in the South ſea. Alfo of the grete abundance of bigge pearls founde in the fame.

Howe the autore compareth Hispaniola to the earthely Paradys : And howe it fare exelleth Italy in fertilitie and temperate ayra.

Of the fyſte inhabitauntes of Hispaniola and of the Ilandes of Canarie.

Howe the inhabitauntes of Hispaniola in theyr fonges and rhymes had certeyne propheſies that appareld men ſhulde coome to theyr contrey and bryngē them into ſeruitude : And of theyr familiarite with ſpirites. Alfo howe thofe ſpirites haue no more appered to them ſence they were baptiſtized.

Of theyr experteneſſe in fwymmyng : And of theyr delicate ferpentes, byndes, oules, and popingalias.

anibales : And
d in one nyght

p. 161.]

a course from
n parte of the
rofren sea, and
lled farre west
res take syffhes

nde of Baccal-
yne, where he
yres of India,
ge as a storke
t Dariena with
bitable regions
ny to conquere
in the fame.
on agaynst the
: And of the
ria Antigua in
forced to plant
egree or paral-
ent heate.
ot a house set
lo], and of the
ers and other
gger quanttie
trees of whose
cauled Broma
bout : And of
litions agaynst
165.]

, and of the
fea. Also of
radys : And
of Canarie.
rymes had
r contrey and
pirites. Also
ce they were
ate serpentes,

Of the forme and situation of Hispaniola nere the Equinoctiall : And howe coulde is in sum place thereof accidentall and not by the situation of the region.

Of oxen and swyne of exceedinge bygnesse : And of eares of wheate as bygge as a mans arme in the braun. Also howe the swyne are fedde with mybalanes. &c.

Of plenty of golde, brayle, mastix, gossampyne, Electrum &c. : And of the inconmodities of intemperate regions.

Of dyuers languages in the Ilande : And howe the prouynces are deuided into regions.

Howe Andrew Moralis fayled into a daungerous and darke caue within the rocke of a mountayne : And of hole ryuers deuoured of such caues. Also of the conflycte of the waters.

Of a standyng pole in the toppe of an hygh mountayne : And howe ferne and bramble bushes growe only in coulde regyons.

¶ *The contentes of the. viii. booke. Fol. 130. [p. 170.]*

¶ Of a greate lake or standyng poole of fowre and falte water, and of the fea syffhes in the fame in the myddelande of the Ilande. Also of deuourynge syffhes cauled Tiburon.

Of the ryuers faulng into the lakes, and of CC. [200] springes in the space of a furlonge.

A meruelous hystory of a kynge stryken dumme and lame by a miracle : And of the Indian language.

Howe fuches as are drowned in the lake, are never caste vp ageyne : And of the Ilande Guarizacca in the myddelte of the standyng lake. Also of a lake of freffhe water, and an other of falte and freffhe water.

Of a large playne of two hundredth myles in length : And an other of a hundredthe and twentie.

Of the meruelous syffhe or monster of the fea, cauled Maniti or Matum, fedde with mans hande : and howe the careyth men over the lake.

Of the mountaynes, vales, hilles, playnes, and ryuers of Hispaniola : And howe golde is founde in all mountaines and golde and syffhes in all ryuers.

Of falte bayes, and howe the ryuers haue theyr increafe from the caues of the mountaynes. Also howe ther is no hurtfull beaste in the Ilande.

Of the pleasures of Hispaniola : And of the region of Cotohi well inhabited and situate in a playne in the toppes of mountaynes reachyng to the clowdes.

Of moderate coulde in the mountaynes, and of ferne of merueylous bygnesse.

Howe pure and massie golde is founde in the region of Cotoy or Cotohy : And that the veyne of golde is a lyuyng tree. Also of the rootes, brancheys, and floures of the fame, and howe certeyne caues are fusteyned with pylers of golde.

What golde is broughte yearlye from Hispaniola into Spayne : And of the falte of the mountaynes, beinge as hard as stones and cleare as crystall. Also sprynges of falte, freff and fower water.

Of certeyne wylde men lyuyng in caues and dennes without any certeyne language : And of theyr meruylous swiftnesse a foote.

Of pytche of the rocke and two kyndes of trees : And of the leafe of a tree vied in the steede of paper. Also howe th[er]e[in]habitantes thinkē that the Christians can make thosē leaves speake and disclosē all secretes.

Of a stronge colour made of the iuse of a certeyn apple : And of the herbe whose smokyng is poyson.

The contentes of the. ix. booke. Fol. 136. [p. 175.]

Of the kyndes of frutes wherwith th[er]e[in]habitauntes of Hispaniola lyued fyfle, and howe they came to the knowlege of Iucca. Also howe Ceres fyrt found wheat and barley in Egypte.

Why their kinges are cauled by dyuers names, and by what names they fature the kynges chylldren when they are borne.

Howe they make theyr teflamente, and howe certeyne of the kynges wyues and concubines are buried with them.

Of the variable motions of the elementes in Hispaniola : And where it rayneth but lyttle, and where much.

Of the colonies and vilages that the Spaniardes haue buylde in Hispaniola : and of the other Ilands about the same

Of a spryng which runnyng vnder the fea from Hispaniola, breaketh furth in the Iland of Arethusa : Also of habitable regions vnder the Equinoctiall, and of the ryche golde mynes of the Ilande of Cuba.

Of the gumme cauled *Anime Album* : And of the Canibale[s]. Also whereby it was thought that there were Ilandes of women.

Of hony founde in trees and rockes : And of the generation of greate Tortoyes and of theyr egges.

¶ *The contentes of the. x. booke. Fol. 140. [p. 178.]*

¶ Of the expedition ageynste the kyng of the Ilande Dites in the south fea : And howe after fourte conffictes, fulmytynge hym selfe, he gaue our men a hundredth and ten pounde weyght of greate perles. Also howe he agreed to pay yearlye a hundredth pounde weyght of perles for a tribute.

Howe axes and hatchettes are more esteemed then golde, or perles : And of greate plentie of hartes and cunnynges. Also howe the kyng of Dites and his famelie were baptisid.

Of perles of greatt pycce : And howe Paule the bishopp of Rome bowght a perle for four and fortie thousand ducades.

Dyuers opinions of the generation of perles : And of a hundredth perles founde in one shel syffhe. Also of the byrth of perles.

Of the regions of the Easte syde of the goule of Vraba : And of the originall of the Canibales.

Of certeyne circumcised people which haue the knowledge of letters and vfe bookes : And what chauncyd of the capitaynes which Petrus Arias fente furth dyuers wayes. Also howe Iohn Solymus was slayne of the Canibales, and of theyr fiercenesse.

Howe Iohn Pontius was repulſed of the Canibales, and of the lewde behavour of Iohn Aiora.

Of the variablie fortune of Gonfalus Badaicius : And howe after he hadde gathered greate ryches of golde, he had the ouerthrowe, and was spoyled of all. Of the golden region of Coiba Dites : And howe theyr flaues are marked in the face.

Of the Ilandes of the south fea : And of the regions frome whence the Portugales fetche their spices.

Of a fraunge kynde of fowlwyng : and of the trees that beare gourdes.

Of the later opinions at touchyng the swyfste course of the Ocean towarde the weste : and of the continents or firme lande. Also of the vyage from the newe landes to Spayne.

Of the golde mynes of Dariena : and the maner of gatheryng of golde in the fame : Also of the dropfie of couetoufnes which is not satifysid with ryches.

¶ *For the contentes of the booke of the Islands lately founde reade the margente notes of the same.*

C T H [E] I N T E R P R E T O V R S E X C V S E.

I haue not in wrytyng byn very curios
 To auoyde the scornes of Rhinoceros moſe,
 Or the fyled iudgement of feuere Aristarchus
 Not fearynge thereby any thyngē to loſe,
 But haue thought it ſufficient to be open and playne
 Not lookyng for other commoditie or gayne.

I am not eloquent I knowe it ryght well.
 If I be not barbarous I defyre no more,
 I haue not for every woordē aftred counfell
 Of eloquent Eliot or syr Thomas Moore.
 Take it therfore as I haue intended,
 The fautes with fauour may loone be amended.

The poet Homere for all his eloquence,
 Lacked not Zoilus to be his fo[e] :
 Wherfore I conclude this for a trewe ſentence.
 That no man lacketh ſuo bargello :
 For as no beafe lyueth without woorme or flye,
 So no man lacketh his priuie enemie.

Rumpatur Zoilus.

C Fautes escaped in the pryntyng. F. the leafe. L. the line. B. the backe fyde of the leafe.

[These corrections have all been embodied in the Text.]

**C Imprynted at London in Paules Church-
 yarde at the ſigne of the Byble
 by Rycharde Aug.**

[In other copies.]

**yarde at the ſigne of the Bell by
 Roberte Toy.**

Anno. Domini. M. D. LV.

Index

of

Personal names, and names of places, chiefly outside Europe.

∴ The Contents Pages at vii.-x., 12, 45, and 391-398 have not been indexed.

- Abarien island, 255
 Abdua river, 315
 Abenamachic, King, 119, 120, 121
 Abibeiba, King, 120, 121
 Abiles incountaynes, 236
 Abraham, 51, 52
 Abraiba, 120, 121
 Abrayne Prouince, 226
 Aburema river, 135, 152
 Acatan, 34
 Acateiba, 153
 Achais, 176
 Achas town, 325
 Achemenides, 135, 154
 Achilles, 5
 Achor, Vale of, 50
 Acla village, 231
 Acuna, The Licentate, 272
 Adam, 229, 338, 340
 Adams, Clement, xxxviii., 289
 Adda river, 363, 364
 Aden, 13, 24, 267, 269
 Aden, King of, 13
 Adialbenicus, Emperor, 176
 Adipson, 285
 Adriane, Pope, 309
 Adriatike sea, 133, 155, 318
Aeneas Silvius, 8, 41, 50, 347
 Africa, xix., xxi., xxix., 9, 13, 35,
 52, 56, 120, 129, 139, 236, 245,
 248, 250, 261, 262, 273, 285,
 295, 298, 337, 338, 340, 346,
 373, 384, 385, 387.
 Africa, Gulf of, 270, 374
 Afriken, xxxi.
 Agathyrai, 91
 Agermannia, Dukedom of, 305
 Agisimba, Region of, 41
 Agnaneo island, 135
 Agnes, Vincentius, 105, 128, 129
 Agricola, Georgius, xli., xliv., 7,
 366
 Agrippa, Cornelius, xliv.
 Agus, Antipater, 319
 Ahumada, Peter de, 346
 Alaguitin river, 153
 Ajora, Gonsalus, 181
 Ajora, Johannes, 162, 181
 Alaminio Antonie, 187, 188
 Alaminus, 192, 193, 194, 195
 Alba Russia, 291
 Albertus, Magnus, 7, 9, 10, 41, 364
 Alcala, 63
 Alcantara, 165
 Alcaraz, Antonie of, 272
 Alcayr [Cairo], City of, 13, 14, 63,
 131, 153, 172, 186, 267, 285, 327,
 315, 374
 Alcazaua, Simon of, 272
 Alday, James, xix., xx.
 Alexander, xxix., xxxii., xliv., 5,
 32, 50, 74, 129, 176, 201, 241,
 248, 273, 274, 285, 310, 315, 325,
 339, 385
 Alexandria, City of, 110, 153, 217,
 267, 283, 351
 Alexandryne, Patriarch of, xxx.
 Alfonsus de Ponte, 157
 Alla, 359, 368
 Allago, xxviii.
 Allen, Richard, xiii.
 Almanzor, 271, 272
 Almayne [Germany], Emperour of
 xxx.
 Almynayes, 56, 97, 116, 292, 320,
 328
 Alonso, 341
 Alonso, Don, 273, 341
 Alonso, Petrus, 36
 Alpha, Poynt, 75, 76
 Alpheus river, 134, 176
 Alphonsum, 40, 389
 Alphonus, Petrus, 94, 96
 Alvarado, Peter, 187
 Alverrado, Spatenus, 192
 Amacaiz, City of, 374
 Amalauna, Cave of, 99
 Amaltheum sea, 289
 Amaquei, Region of, 169
 Amari, Lake of, 284
 Amaxobili, 301
 Ambalao island, 266
 Ambon island, 260
 America, xl., xiii., xviii., xxi.,
 xxii., xxv., xxvi., xxviii., xxx.,
 xxxii., xxxiv., xl., 3, 8, 32, 35,
 43, 61, 205, 243, 281, 335, 343,
 353, 371, 385
 Americus, xxi.
 Amerigo Vespucci, xxv., 37, 38, 39,
 127, 134, 157, 275, 277, 279
 Anacaona, Queen, 85, 176
 Anacauchoa Beuchius, 83, 84, 85,
 86, 176
 Anala, King, 182, 183
 Anbon island, 344
 Ancisus, 108, 109, 110, 113, 114,
 115, 116, 118, 119, 123, 124,
 125, 126, 137
 Ancyra, 311
 Andalusia, xiii., 130, 220, 225,
 339
 Andalusia, Noun, 130
 Andreas, Morales, 134
 Andrewe, Lawrence, xxvi.
 Andronicus, xlviii.
 Anes, John, 372, 378
 Angleria, 43, 63, 65, 185, 237,
 246, 299
 Anghiera, xxxvii.
 Annez, Vincentius, 126, 128, 129,
 130
 Annuiuci, Region of, 169
 Antei, 285
 Anteus, 149
 Anthiochyen, xxxi.
 Anthiocus, 8
 Anthropophagi, 23, 29, 41, 65,
 385
 Antigilia island, 38
 Antillia island, 66
 Antiqua, Island of, 177
 Antonie, Master, 288
 Antony di Mendoza, 287
 Anunctus, 191
 Apianus, 10
 Apollo, 10, 102, 172, 296, 298
 Apnu, Region of, 322
 Apua, 363
 Aprutium, Bishop of, 309
 Aquanil, Province of, 187
 Aquilarius, Hieronimus, 192, 193
 Arabia, xxviii., xxxi., 8, 9, 13, 14,
 20, 56, 129, 133, 156, 161, 183,
 235, 284, 285, 286, 309, 385
 Arabia, Gulf of, 284, 286, 339, 347
 Arabia, Sea of, 309
 Arabo, 168
 Aragon, King of, xxx., 51
 Aragonie, Cardinal of, 64, 73, 79,
 82, 87, 92, 94, 96, 103, 133
 Aramanna, Region of, 168
 Arambec, xiv.
 Arborantius, 141
 Archimedes, xlvi., xlvi.
 Arcimboldus, 127
 Ardagni, Kingdom of, 314
 Arethusa, 134, 176
 Arenalis, 88
 Areundo, 232
 Argilla, City of, 374
 Ariane, 245
 Arias, Helizabeth Boadilla, 127
 Arias, Petrus, 61, 126, 127, 135,
 137, 142, 150, 157, 158, 164,
 165, 178, 179, 181, 193, 195,
 214
 Arimathia, Joseph of, 56
 Arion, 171
 Aristarchus, 398
 Aristocleon, 41
 Aristotle, xliii., xliv., 9, 10, 67,
 142, 179, 278, 293, 313, 334,
 339, 340, 386
 Arkey, Laurence, xii.
 Armenes, xxx.
 Armeneten, xxxi.
 Armenia, xxvii., xxviii., xxx., xxxii.,
 xxxiv., 176, 311, 314, 329
 Armenicus, Emperour, 176
 Armennyten, xxxi.
 Arnold, R., xxv., xxvi.
 Arnheim, xxv.
 Arrotinbergh, 368
 Arna, Castle, 381
 Arsina, xxix.
 Arsinice, City of, 224, 285
 Artawische river, 323
 Artawische, 323
 Artemisia, 49, 128
 Arucetto island, 260
 Arzina Ford, xxxix.
 Asasi, xx.
 Ascanius, 63, 64
 Ascanius Sphoria [*i.e.*, Sforza], 65,
 68, 103, 127
 Ascham, Roger, xl.
 Ascon City, 374
 Asia, the less, 7
 Asoph, 324, 325
 Asopus, 142
 Asseuelo, Antonie de, 272
 Assyryen, xxxi.
 Astesia, 363
 Astrachan, 308, 314, 325, 326, 329
 Astur, Ovetense, 135
 Asturin, 54, 116
 Asyen, xxx.
 Atahaliba, King, 345
 Atamei village, 152
 Ath, xliii.
 Atiel, Region of, 169

Atlantike island, 129, 337, 338, 340
 Atlas mountains, 129
 Atlas, the greater, 385
 Attabeira, 99
 Attibuni, Region of, 169
 Attibunicus river, 73, 168, 171
 Attila, 326
 Auano mountains, 368
 Augusta, City of, 286
 Augustinus de Ceratta, 54
 Augustus, Emperour, 8, 283, 306, 369
 Aunia Alphons[o], 187, 192
 Aus, 273
 Auleta, King, 283
 Aurea Anus, 323, 324
 Aurea Chersonesos, 32, 40, 75, 247,
 313, 344
 Ausonia, 167
 Austria, Archduke of, 289
 Auxendia, xviii.
 Auxerre, xliv.
 Ay Ay islands, 69, 130
 Ayqueroa, Region of, 169
 Azamor, City of, 374
 Azania, Region of, 385
 Azaf, 374
 Azeuedo, 274
 Azgar, 374
 Azion Gaber, 7
 Azores, Islands of, 203, 204, 219,
 339, 347, 348
 Azotus, 57
 Azoum river, 314
 Azuan village, 176
 Azzuci, Region of, 169
 Babbareo lake, 170
 Babell, Tower of, xxxii.
 Babell, 390
 Babilon, 14, 56, 57, 63, 172, 187,
 241, 266, 284, 285, 297, 307, 315
 Babilon, Soltane of, 153, 172
 Babiloni, The, 385
 Babilonyon, xxxii.
 Bacanor, 265
 Bacallao, Land of, xix., 55, 161,
 162, 195, 242, 287, 288, 299, 344,
 345, 347
 Baccian island, 259, 260
 Baccia, 126
 Bachau sea, 291
 Bacon, Lord, xxii.
 Bacon, Roger, xliv., xlvii., xlvi.
 Bactria, 308
 Badaiocius, Gasper, 165
 Badaiocius, Gonzalus, 181, 182, 183
 Badinoz, 272, 273
 Badajos, xiii.
 Bafrida, 291
 Bagunimahio, Region of, 168
 Bahaboni, 166
 Bahuan river, 172
 Baiam, 171
 Baia Natuitatis, 129
 Baiae, 168, 169, 170, 172, 173, 176
 Baiohaqua, Region of, 169
 Bajascet, Ottomanus, 6, 311
 Balassia, Region of, 264
 Balboa, Vaschus, 149, 162, 178,
 338
 Baleares islands, 301
 Ballard, William, xiii.
 Balticum sea, 299, 312, 331
 Baluastro, 346
 Banda island, 22
 Bandan, xxix., 260, 269
 Banderana, xxix.
 Bangalla, King, 21
 Bangella, City of, 21
 Baptiste, Elius, 85, 99
 Baptiste, Master, xliii.

Barrack, Soltan, 329
 Barbai island, 256
 Barbaricus, City of, 374
 Barbarossa, Emperour, 347
 Barbata island, 177
 Barbary, xix., xx., xxviii., xxxviii.,
 237, 374, 380, 384
 Barbessa, Adordo, 258
 Barcha, 374
 Barnarde of Mea, 130
 Barramedabas, 87
 Barrientos, 272
 Barthema [i.e., *Varthema*], Ludl-
 vico, xliii.
 Bartholomeus Colonus, 31, 82, 134,
 153, 154, 340
 Barthus castle, 331
 Barutti, xlii.
 Basiliades, 41
 Basilius, 289, 308, 309, 311, 314,
 316, 317, 319, 321, 324, 328, 329
 Basilius, Andreas, 316
 Basilius, Demetrius, 316
 Basilius, George, 316
 Basilius, John, 316, 319
 Basilius, Magnus, 290, 291
 Basilius, Symeon, 316
 Basing, xxxix.
 Baskird, 293
 Basle, xxxvii.
 Bastard, Count L. de, xliv.
 Bastarne, 311
 Bastimento island, 235
 Bath, Earl of, xix.
 Bauruco, Region of, 169
 Bazantium, Emperours of, 314
 Beata port, 107, 113, 177, 213
 Beaton, Cardinal, xxxviii.
 Bebeit, Chan, 329
 Beta island, 35
 Beti island, 374
 Belchia, 309
 Belozeria, 309
 Benaiia island, 260
 Beneu island, 260
 Bengal, Province of, 261, 264, 267,
 268, 344
 Benin, 270, 376
 Bergaua, Region of, 107, 108, 111,
 112, 113, 114, 115, 128, 130, 132,
 134, 135, 136, 149, 150, 151, 153,
 154, 155, 163, 165, 211, 214, 218,
 219, 233, 234
 Berenice, City of, 284
 Beres river, 323
 Berges, City of, 331
 Beringocius, Vannucius, xlii.
 Berma, 344
 Bermelo, Sea of, 338, 339, 346, 347
 Bermuda island, 233
 Berous, xlvi., 346
 Beryn, John, 383
 Beselchel, 49
 Besermani, The, 327
 Bermon, xvii.
 Betanchor, 65, 166
 Betis river, 127, 157
 Beuchius Anacaucha, King, 83, 84,
 85, 86, 176
 Beyrout, xli.
 Bezerra, Franciscus, 165, 181, 183
 Bian, Sancti, Johannis gulf, 194
 Biddle, Mr., xv.
 Bielofesero, 321
 Bimini, 345
 Binthaitel, 100
 Bion, 41
 Birraen, 344
 Birringuccio Vannucio, xxxvii., 353,
 356
 Biron, Master, xviii.

Biscaine, 274
 Bisinagar, City of, 15
 Bisinhege, 277
 Bithynia, 290, 311
 Bitsagitch, xviii.
 Bizantium, 307
 Bizantium, Emperour of, 314
 Bizert port, 374
 Blasius, 331
 Blemies, The, 385
 Blesconia, City of, 289
 Blondus, 348
 Boadilla, Gouvernor of, 105, 127
 Boadilla, Helisabeta, 127
 Bodenham, Roger, xviii.
 Boheme, King of, xxx., 312
 Bohol island, 256, 258
 Boilus, 79
 Boiuca island, 135
 Boium, gatti river, 109, 132
 Bolgaria, 309
 Bolschega mountains, 323
 Bombassa, xxviii.
 Bonauentura, 105
 Bonauista island, 87, 272
 Bonanum, City of, 84
 Boneface, 56
 Bonham, W., xxxvii.
 Bononiam, King, 145
 Bononie, Aristotes of, 313
 Bononie, Galatius Butrigarius of,
 106, 127, 283, 285
 Boristostomea river, 98
 Boriquena island, 45, 345, 346
 Borishene river, 289, 309, 311,
 312, 314, 316, 319
 Bornei islands, 22, 23
 Bosphorus, The, 59
 Boua port, 374
 Bourigie, xlv.
 Bourne, Mr H. R. Fox, xvi.
 Bowyer, Sir William, xiii.
 Boyuca island, 345
 Brailan island, 260
 Brabant, xliii.
 Brasil, xv., xvi., xvii., 250, 251,
 253, 273, 285, 288, 375, 385,
 386
 Brewer, Rev. J. S., M.A., xiii.
 Bridger, Mr C., xlvi.
 Brocardus, xvi.
 Brooke, John, xviii.
 Bryaces, 49
 Buchebua, King, 146
 Bucema island, 30
 Buda, 326
 Budia island, 260
 Budomel, 384
 Buen Abrigo Point, 273
 Buena Vista, 272
 Bugia, Region of, 374
 Buiaci, Region of, 169
 Bullen, 9
 Buona Speranza, 261, 262, 338,
 374, 385
 Bur island, 344
 Burges, Bishop of, 126, 127, 134
 Burgone, Duke of, 208
 Burichena island, 45, 70, 104, 130,
 159, 173, 176
 Burleigh, Lord, xxxvii.
 Burnei island, 258
 Burney island, 272
 Burrough, Stephen, xxxviii.
 Buru island, 260
 Buthuan island, 255, 259
 Buthuan, King, 255
 Butler, John, xlvi.
 Butricarius Galeatus, 106, 127,
 283, 285
 Butt, Sir William, xviii., xix.

Butts, Thomas, xviii., xix.
 Byzantium, xi.
 Cabedus, Johannes, 130, 157
 Cabot, Loaisa, 274
 Cabot, Sebastian, xiii., xv., xix.,
 xxviii., xxxix., xl., xli., xlii.,
 6, 55, 61, 161, 162, 195, 272,
 274, 283, 288, 289, 299, 335,
 343, 345, 348, 350, 386
 Cabouerde [i.e., *Cape Verde*], 74,
 87, 97, 129, 134, 272, 277, 385
 Cacabubana, Region of, 169
 Cacausu, City of, 24
 Cacedus, John, 198
 Caccius, 72, 89, 128, 223
 Caccius Caunaboa, 72, 79, 80, 81,
 83
 Cacique Chiman, 225
 Cadamustus, Aloisius, 127, 270, 280
 Cades, 86
 Cadissen, 329
 Cadona, Duke of, 173
 Caghainan island, 258
 Cahaymi, Region of, 169
 Cahini island, 168
 Cahonas island, 166, 173
 Caabi, Province of, 168, 172, 173,
 176
 Caicaco, Province of, 168, 173
 Caiguam mountain, 171
 Caigui, City of, 26, 171
 Cahabo, Province of, 168, 169, 170
 Caion island, 344
 Caionuana, Valley of, 170
 Cairo, 374
 Cairu, 307
 Caizimiu, Province of, 168, 169,
 170, 173
 Cakeado, 381
 Calaghan island, 255, 256, 259
 Calantan, 260
 Calauera, Barnardino de, 108
 Cales, 86, 87, 93, 94, 97, 181
 Calese island, 286
 Calcium, 38
 Calicut, 7, 8, 13, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20,
 21, 24, 32, 39, 256, 261, 263,
 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 344,
 374, 385
 Calicut, King of, 14, 17, 18, 19, 21
 Calidonia, 143, 177
 Caliz, 346, 347
 Callientes, xxix.
 Calligula, 59
 Calpe mountains, 236
 Cals, 68, 73
 Caluacam, Region of, 188, 189
 Calunerscho, Region of, 322
 Calzadilla, 341
 Camale, Region of, 169
 Cambaia, 8, 13, 14, 20, 261, 267,
 269
 Cambaia, King of, 40
 Cambalu [i.e., *Pekin*], City of, 24,
 25, 287, 307, 326
 Cambie, 259
 Camemorus, Region of, 183
 Camem mountains, 323
 Camen Bolschoi mountains, 322,
 323
 Camenckh, 322
 Cameni, 323
 Camenipois mountains, 323
 Camigna, Don Christopher of, 130
 Camomorus, Region of, 98, 132
 Camoteia island, 166
 Campaa, Region of, 260
 Campbell, Dr M. F. A. G., xxv.,
 xxvi.
 Campechium, Province of, 187, 188

xix.
30, 157
1, xv., xix.,
xlii., xlvii.,
2, 195, 272,
9, 299, 335,
386
—Verde, 74,
2, 277, 385
f., 109

223
2, 79, 80, 81,
127, 270, 280

169

172
68, 172, 173,

168, 173

168, 169, 170

70

of, 168, 169,

256, 259

de, 108
97, 181

17, 18, 19, 20,
56, 261, 263,
268, 269, 344,

17, 18, 19, 21

188, 189

of, 322

59

20, 261, 267,

, City of, 24,

of, 183

3

mountains, 322,

ns, 323

opher, of, 130

of, 98, 132

60

A. G., xxv.,

ce of, 187, 188

Campegius, Cardinal, 310
Campion, Gasper, xvii., xviii.
Camul, Province of, 27
Canabocoa, Region of, 169, 172
Canada, 287
Canary islands, xiii., xxviii., 28,
30, 32, 36, 38, 40, 41, 65, 66,
68, 87, 97, 150, 157, 166, 177,
181, 199, 210, 245, 250, 277,
339, 374, 375, 380, 389
Cananor, xxviii.
Cananor, King of, 15
Cancelu, Luys, 346
Canchietans, The, 95
Canchietes, Region of, 36, 95
Cane, 271
Cangu island, 256
Canglu, City of, 24
Canibals, Islands of the, 30, 66, 68,
78, 160, 162, 177, 180
Cannafistula Island, 119
Cano, 272
Canonor, Kingdom of, 14, 15, 20,
261, 268
Canthan, City of, 260
Cape Blanke, 380
Cape Bona Speranza, 129, 279, 285,
286, 348, 350
Cape Bretón, xiv., xviii.
Cape Cattigara, 253
Cape Corea, 382
Cape Bas, xiv.
Cape de Buona Speranza, 374
Cape de Monte, 381
Cape de las Palmas, 381, 382
Cape de tres Puntas, 381
Cape Sper, xiv.
Cape Trepoynes, 381, 382, 383
Cape of Good Hope, 129, 385
Capelan, City of, 21, 344
Capha, 324
Caphi island, 260
Capira, Region of, 234
Capling, William, xii.
Capo Desiderato, 252
Capo Verde Islands, 32, 35, 36, 65,
74, 87, 129, 203, 204, 250, 261,
262, 272, 273, 274, 277, 280,
338, 373, 382, 385, 387
Capronus, 86, 91, 92
Capucar, 265
Caput Bonae Sperantiae, 129, 385
Caput Sancti Augustini, 129, 134,
181, 183
Caput Veride islands, 32, 35, 36,
74, 87, 129, 385
Caracaraocales, 100
Caramairi, Region of, 106, 107,
109, 134, 144, 157, 158, 159,
160, 162
Caramatexius, King, 171
Carandu, Gulf of, 285
Carqueira island, 177
Carchan, Province of, 26
Cardano, Girolamo, xxxviii., 158,
161, 207, 217, 250, 294, 307
Carenas, 191
Careta, 108, 115, 116, 117, 121,
137, 164, 182
Caria, King of, 49, 128
Caria, Queen of, 49, 128
Cariel, Region of, 151, 152, 156
Caribana, 107, 119, 180, 183
Caribolis, 304
Caribes islands, 68
Carles, Captain, xviii.
Carnica, 314, 368
Caromoram, 25
Carter, Master, xviii.
Carthage, 176, 340, 374
Carthage, Hannibal of, 139

Carthagena, 134, 157, 160, 214,
215, 226
Carthaginis Portus, 106
Carthago, 106, 107, 108, 109, 113,
134, 157, 162, 165
Cartier, Jaques, 287, 345
Caruceria, 69, 157, 159
Case, Franciscus, xlii.
Casas, King of, 326, 328
Casapia, 8, 169, 170, 173
Caspian sea, 170, 287, 291, 308,
309, 311, 314, 321, 326, 329,
340
Cassam, City of, 291, 311, 314, 319,
325, 326, 327, 328, 329
Cassina river, 323
Cassius mountain, 285
Castaglione, Baltasar, 9
Castaneda, 272
Castella, Aurea, 130
Castella de Mina, 382
Castella Vetus, 68
Castile, King of, xxx., 37, 201, 203,
340
Castile, Queen of, 201
Castile, Isobel of, 273, 274, 341
Castile, Ferdinand of, 51, 52, 65,
73, 127, 131, 201, 208, 209, 211,
229, 236, 273, 341, 342, 343,
345
Castlen, Edward, xli.
Castor, 250
Castoreum sea, 303
Castromow, 331
Catalonia, 173
Catatarpa, 237
Catena Mundi mountains, 286, 324
Cathay [i.e., China], xiii., xxxviii.,
xxxix., xl., xli., 8, 22, 24, 25, 26,
59, 98, 261, 283, 284, 285, 286,
287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292,
293, 294, 308, 310, 312, 313,
321, 322, 324, 325, 326, 327,
328, 329, 330, 331, 333, 339,
344, 345, 363
Cathay Chan [i.e., Khar], of, xxi.,
21, 24, 25, 26, 27, 60, 286, 287,
289, 322, 324, 326, 329, 330
Cathay, Emperor of, 25, 60
Catighan island, 256
Catherine, Queen, 51, 71, 274
Catherine, Saint, 84
Cato, 122
Cattigara, 262
Cattigara, Cape, 253
Caucasus mountains, 18
Cauchietta, 95, 98
Caunahoa, Cacus, 72, 79, 80, 81,
85
Caunana, 99
Caunoa, Region of, 169
Cauta, 99
Cautan, City of, 344
Caya river, 272, 273, 274
Caya bridge, 273, 274
Cayrus [i.e., Cairo], City of, 14, 186
Cazacubana mountains, 173
Cazibaxagua, 99
Cecil, Sir W., xxii., xxxviii., xlii.
Ceden, xxx.
Celaem island, 344
Celoruri island, 260
Celer, Quintus Metellus, 347
Cemaccus, King, 110, 119, 121,
122, 198
Cemobal, 196
Cenalo island, 255
Cenegales, 155
Central America, xi.
Centurione, Paulo, 287, 308, 309,
310

Cerabaro, Region of, 112, 135, 152,
154, 155, 156, 163, 182
Ceratta [i.e., Zaralte] Augustinus
de, 54
Cerdla, 341
Ceres, 175
Cernigonia, 309
Cesar, 59, 305
Cesaricensis, 374
Chabot, C., xlv.
Chacouca island, 260
Chagre river, 234, 235
Cham, 346
Chamailaba, Prince, 129
Chan Cublai, 330
Charles, x., xli.
Charles, King, 63
Charles IX., xlv., xvii.
Charles, King, 63
Charybdis, 163, 330
Chaucer, xxxvii.
Chaunceler, Richard, xvii., xxxviii.,
xxxix., xl., 59, 285, 289, 326,
333, 386
Chedsey, Dr., xxxix.
Cheke, Sir John, xliii., xlii.
Cheregatus, Francis, 191, 309
Chethai lake, 287
Cheru, King, 182
Chiacaones, King, 128
Chiapenes, King, 139, 140, 141, 142,
143, 145, 178
Chiauaccha, Prince, 129
Chiman, Cacique, 225
China, 20, 260, 261, 267, 269, 272,
339, 344, 347
China, Gulf of, 260
Chionsus, King, 146
Chionua mountain, 319
Chirara, 152
Chippit island, 258
Chitaza, 152
Chorogoski Nosz, 322
Christolomus, 290, 291
Christiernus, 304, 309
Christophori Sancti, 105
Ciambala, 130, 150
Cibana, Region of, 73, 74, 79, 80,
81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 105, 168, 171,
172
Cicer, Marcus Tullus, xlii., 49,
132, 283, 284
Ciclopies, 154
Cicylian, King, xxx.
Ciguaoas, 86, 91
Ciguana, 91
Cilapulapu, Prince, 285
Cilicia, 7, 8
Cimbria Chersones, 311, 314
Cimbulon, King, 258
Cinchital, 27
Cingapora, 260
Cingulus Mundi mountain, 324
Ciniana, Region of, 36
Cipanga, Region of, 73, 80, 81, 82,
167, 253, 339, 340, 343
Citrachan, 308, 314
Ciula, 287
Claudius, 54
Clement VI., Pope, 308, 309,
347
Cleodii, The, 385
Cleopatra, 141, 142, 166, 283, 315
Cleopatrida, City of, 284
Clesma river, 314
Cloelia, 71
Cochin, King of, xxix.
Cochinus, 183
Cockerm, Martin, xvii.
Codego island, 106, 215
Có-Cathey island, 343
Coiba Dites, 182

Coiba, Gulf of, 108, 115, 116, 164,
182
Coiba, King of, 108, 115, 116, 117,
121, 137, 164, 182
Colchis, Region of, 51, 135, 262,
310
Cole, Master, xix.
Colen, xxi.
Coligny, Admiral, xlv.
Collao, City of, 343
Collocutea, Region of, 183
Coluacana island, 189, 191, 195,
196
Colmenaris, Rodericus, 113, 114,
115, 116, 119, 120, 122, 123, 126,
157, 183
Colmogora, Region of, 291, 293, 312
Colmogor, City of, 286, 322
Colmum, City of, 290
Cologna, 291
Colonia Agrippina, City of, 289
Colum, xxix.
Columbus (or Colonus), Bartholo-
meus, 31, 82, 134, 153, 154, 349
Columbus (or Columbus), Christo-
phorus, 28, 29, 35, 38, 41, 65, 66,
67, 69, 79, 80, 87, 94, 96, 98, 99,
103, 105, 106, 108, 111, 112, 113,
115, 118, 127, 128, 129, 132, 134, 134,
135, 150, 151, 153, 154, 155, 157,
163, 177, 184, 191, 192, 202, 209,
236, 272, 288, 337, 339, 340, 341,
342, 346
Columbus (or Colonus), Diegus,
115, 118, 122, 127, 177, 184, 240
Columbus (or Columbus), Fernando,
272
Columna, 313
Commandator, King, 123, 124, 125
Comi, 187
Comogra, 116, 162, 179
Comogrus, King, 116, 117, 118,
120, 122, 137, 146, 147, 148, 162
Commodus, Emperour, 284
Comoiayxa, 172
Compostele, 100
Conception, Tower of, 80, 82, 84,
86, 92, 93, 105, 130
Condé, Prince de, xlii., xlii.
Conduia, 310
Conigaua, 26
Connulaha, City of, 260
Constantina, 374
Constantine, 290, 316
Constantinople, Bishop of, xxxi.
Constantinople, Emperour of, 316
Constantinople, Patriarche of, xxx.,
290, 291
Conte Rimento, 270
Cooper, xxxvii.
Copelandia, 305
Copto, 284
Coquera, King, 140
Corala, 271
Corales, 180
Corduba, 162, 181, 186, 192
Corea, 382
Corelia, 292, 321
Corichotum, 102
Corimucol, 20
Corinthus, City of, 80, 100
Coro island, 215
Coronado, 287
Coronati, 238
Cortes, xii., xi., xli., xlii., xlii., 274
Cortesreales, Gasper, 344
Cortesreales islands, 344
Cortesreales islands, 344
Cortesius Fernando, 191, 192, 195,
198, 238, 342
Corsali, Andreas de, 275, 279
Corus, 382

Corytho, 166
 Cossa, Johannes De la, 126, 134, 156
 Cossa, 107
 Cossin river, 323
 Cossum, 329
 Cotam, 26
 Cotochus, King, 146.
 Cotohi, 172, 173
 Coyot, 169
 Cozumel island, 40, 187, 188, 189, 191, 192, 193
 Cozumellanus, King, 188
 Cracouia, 314
 Crawford, 7
 Crete, 166, 172, 316
 Cretenses, xlviij., 172
 Cresus, 42, 146
 Croke, 381
 Crystente, xxxiv.
 Cuadalchiber, 210.
 Cuba island, 6, 31, 40, 66, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 79, 90, 104, 105, 123, 125, 128, 130, 150, 154, 161, 163, 167, 173, 176, 177, 184, 186, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 195, 198, 210, 231, 233, 239, 241, 262, 299, 338, 344, 346
 Cuba, Governor of, 191
 Cubagua island, 213, 214
 Cuban, 169
 Cubigar river, 153
 Cuchibachoa, Region of, 98, 108, 113, 128, 134
 Cuella de Segovia, xv.
 Cueua, 219, 237
 Cugubiacao, 165
 Cugureo, 340
 Cuhabo, 168, 169
 Cuiriza, 146
 Culchas, 141
 Culata point, 119, 121, 122
 Cumana, 89, 94, 96, 98, 128, 156, 165, 213, 214
 Cupoton King, 187
 Curiana, 89, 94, 95, 96, 98, 128
 Cursius Quintus, 241
 Curtana, 36, 95
 Cuti river, 226
 Cuzibet island, 23
 Cyahbo, 169
 Cyrenaica, 374
 Cyrha, 100
 Czar Kythaiki, 324
 Czilma river, 322
 Czircho river, 322
 Cziremissa, 293
 Dabaiba, King, 119, 121, 122, 163
 Dabaiba river, 132, 155, 183, 199
 Dabique, 169
 Dacicus, 176
 Dahabon, 169
 Dahabonici, Region of, 169
 Dahati, 168
 Daiguo mountains, 173
 Daiguani mountains, 171
 Dalekarle river, 305
 Dalion, 41
 Dalmacyen King, xxx.
 Dalmatia, 290, 364
 Damascus, 56, 311
 Damian, 310
 Damianus a Goes, 51, 58
 Damiate, City of, 284
 Danadim river, 323
 Danowice river, 131
 Danaus, xviii.
 Danoe port, 284
 Dardanus, 166

Dariena, 114, 115, 116, 118, 119, 121, 123, 125, 126, 130, 131, 134, 135, 136, 137, 143, 145, 148, 149, 150, 157, 158, 162, 163, 164, 165, 178, 179, 180, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 192, 198, 199, 207, 218, 220, 226, 236, 238, 262
 Darien river, 119, 121, 191
 Darius, King, 59, 284
 Darnaseri, 20
 Dartmouth, 379
 Daubeny, Oliver, xviii.
 Daud, xlviij., 51, 349, 385
 Daud, Master, 330
 Dausian, 344
 Davis, xlvi.
 Decan, 264
 Decian, 14
 Dedalus, 55
 Deerforth, Cornelius, xxxviii.
 De las Perlas island, 54
 De la Sal island, 272
 De la Flore island, 382
 Delagartos river, 132
 Delapuente, Franciscus, 183
 Deli mountains, 268
 De los Azores, 203, 204, 339
 Delphis, 296, 298
 Demahus river, 168
 Demetriou, City of, 321
 Demetrios, 59, 292, 308, 309, 310, 311, 313, 325, 329, 331
 Demogorgon, xlvi., 161
 Denham, Henry, xii
 Denmark, King of, xxx., 299, 304, 308, 309, 319, 331, 332
 Deptford, xxxviii.
 Desborch, John of, xxv., xxvi.
 Desiderata island, 177, 210
 Desideratus, Portus, 188.
 Destam island, 192
 Dessoosa, Francis, 377
 Desea, 130
 Diaguo, Region of, 169
 Diaz, Johanna, 105, 135, 165
 Didacus, 75, 77, 78, 79
 Dido, 166
 Diego, Henrique, 378
 Diego, Nicuesa, 106, 107, 108, 109, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 126, 128, 135, 137, 145, 150, 151, 153, 156
 Dieguan sea, 266
 Diegas Marques, 157
 Diegas Mendez, 154
 Diegu Ordasius, 192
 Diegu Valasquen, 186
 Dilakapones, Region of, 331
 Diodorus, xlviij., 351
 Diodorus Siculus, 55, 369
 Dites, 165, 178, 183
 Dium, City of, 13
 Doesborch or Doesburg, xxv.
 Doesburgh, Jan Van, xxv., xxvi.
 Dolateranus, 10
 Dominica island, 30, 68, 70, 105, 130, 150, 157, 163, 174, 210
 Dominikes, Tower, Seynt, 82, 84
 Domitian, 284
 Don Alonso, 341
 Don Eurique, 341
 Don, John Captain, 382
 Don, John of Austria, xii.
 Don Lewys, 378
 Don Luya, 341
 Don Pascval de Gayangos, xiv.
 Don Phylippe, 346
 Donco, 324, 325
 Doneitz Scwerski, 325
 Doria, Juannette, xvii.
 Doria, Pedro, xvii.
 Dorpe, Roeland van der, xxv., xxvi.

Douer, 379
 Dragonis, Os, 88, 95, 96, 98, 108
 Dranus river, 318
 Drauer, Master, xviii.
 Dromon, Achillies, 310
 Dront, 331
 Dryades, 83, 101
 Duas Arbores, 176
 Dubna River, 321
 Duchala, 374
 Dudley, John, xxxix.
 Duna River, 312
 Dunenburg, 312
 Duraba, 135, 153
 Duran, Thomas, 272
 Durriba, 153
 Dionisius, King, xliv.
 East India, xii., 8, 9, 32, 79, 103, 133, 234, 235, 247, 262, 279, 283, 285, 339, 344
 East Indian Sea, 8
 East Sea, 8, 9, 24, 161
 Elbro river, 363
 Ebetere, 153
 Eccampi island, 186
 Edel river, 292, 314
 Eden, Alban, xviii.
 Eden, Richard, xii., xii., xiii., xiv., xv., xx., xxii., xxvii., xxviii., xxix., xi., xii., xliii., xliii., xliiv., xli., xlii., xviii., i, 3, 6, 7, 13, 43, 49, 270
 Edward VI., xii., xii., xxxviii., 1, 333
 Egypt, xi., xxx., xviii., 8, 41, 51, 75, 110, 131, 132, 141, 153, 155, 172, 175, 193, 217, 283, 284, 293, 296, 307, 308, 315, 351, 369, 374
 Egypt, King of, 284
 Egypt, Pyramids of, 49
 Egypt, Soltane of, 311, 369
 Egyptian sea, 199
 Elabath, 374
 Elbes, 272
 Elcauz, 374
 Elder, John, xxxix.
 Egazaret, Region of, 374
 Elnas, xviii.
 Elide, City of, 176
 Eliot, 308
 Eliot, Hugh, xvi., xxi.
 Eliot, Master, xiv.
 Elias, City of, 134
 Elizabeth, Queen, xii., xvii., xi., xli., xlv., xlii., 65, 201, 209, 288, 342
 Elzaba, 8
 Emanuel, King, xxiii., xxvi., xxvii., 37, 39, 40
 Embigar, 153
 Enca, 135, 166
 England, King of, xxx., xxxvi.
 Engronlande, Region of, 312, 324, 332
 Eningia, 298, 306
 Ephesyn, xxxi.
 Epilegianita, 102
 Erancanqui, 344
 Erasmus, 57, 58
 Eratosthenes, 41, 349
 Eridanus, 133
 Errif, 374
 Erythra, King, xviii.
 Esaras, 49
 Eson, Colchis of, 135
 Esope, 377
 Esquega, 23c, 234
 Estremadura, 274
 Ethiopia, xxx., 8, 13, 14, 39, 41, 51, 88, 132, 139, 160, 175, 248, 250, 284, 339, 351, 369, 374, 384, 385

Ethiopia, King of, 374
 Euangelista island, 77
 Eude island, 260
 Eudoxus, 286, 346
 Eue, 229, 338
 Euergetes, Tomoleus, 346
 Eugenius, Pope, 290
 Euphrates river, 41, 51, 308
 Eurique, Don, 341
 Euripus sea, 304
 Eusebius, xlviij.
 Euxinus sea, 155, 292, 298, 310, 314
 Exer, 266
 Ezrab, 374
 Faber, Jacobus, 246
 Faber, John, 289
 Facies, Combusta King, 135
 Faial island, 347
 Faro, Strait of, 208
 Fartalio, xvi.
 Faubourg, xv.
 Feminie the Great, xxxiii.
 Ferdinand Cortese, 238, 342
 Ferdinand de Soto, 346
 Fernandina islands, 186, 187, 190, 191, 195
 Fernando de Vega, 96
 Fernandes Francicu, 186, 187, 192
 Fernandus, Gonzalus, 50, 158, 160, 184, 185, 207, 208, 241
 Fernelius, Johannes, xviii.
 Ferraria, xvi.
 Ferrea island, 65, 66, 68, 157, 181
 Ferrieres, Francois de, xlii.
 Ferrieres, Jean de, xlii.
 Ferrum island, 41
 Fes, 374
 Fessa, City of, 374
 Fetti, 180
 Ficinus, Marcilius, xlii., 338
 Fin, Jean de la, xlv.
 Finland, 229, 306, 312, 319
 Finlappia, 330
 Finmarchia, 8, 347
 Fioravanti, Leonardo, xviii.
 Fladimer, City of, 289
 Flavius, 348
 Flauders, Earl of, 208
 Fletcher, John, xix.
 Florida, 32, 55, 191, 288, 342, 345, 346
 Floures [i.e., Flores] island, 214
 Flumen Amazonum, 160
 Flumen, S. Johannis, 155
 Fogeda, Alphonsus, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 113, 114, 115, 123, 126, 128, 134, 145, 165, 180, 183
 Fonseca, Johannes, 126
 Forrest, George, xvii.
 Fortis island, 107, 108, 109, 134, 162
 Fortisentura, xx., 65, 157, 380
 Fortunate islands, 28, 37, 40, 166, 374
 Forum Julii, 318
 Foxe, John, xxxix.
 Fracta Iucaea island, 41
 France, King of, xxx., xxxii., xxxvi.
 France, Lieutenant of, 347
 Francis, St., 130
 Francisco, 376
 Francisco de Siquera, 378
 Francisco, Lopez de Gomara, xxxviii, 271, 337
 Frederike, King, 73, 102, 103
 Fretum Herculeum sea, 161
 Fretum trium fratrum, 9
 Friseland, 303
 Friole, 368
 Frobisher, Sir Martin, xiii.

- Fronowo, 312
 Fryer, Ferdinando, 341
 Fugui, 26
 Fulvia, 122
 Furatado, Captain, 121
 Futeraca, 180
 Gades islands, 28, 30, 34, 65, 68, 73, 75, 94, 97, 150, 181, 316
 Gaira river, 113, 132, 157, 158, 159
 Galana island, 68, 157
 Galanta island, 68, 157, 177, 210
 Galeatus, Butrigarius, 106, 127, 285
 Galian island, 260
 Galitia, 10, 96, 311
 Gambra, 280, 374, 384
 Gamelaro island, 374
 Ganges river, 9, 32, 75, 98, 133, 155, 363
 Gangeticus, Gulf of, 39
 Ganphasantes, 385
 Garcia Nuncio, 272
 Gardiner, Bishop, xl, xlv.
 Garet, 374
 Garsia de Padilla, 130
 Gasper, Cortescales, 344
 Gastaldus, Jacobus, 291, 345
 Gates, Sir T., xxxix.
 Gaza, 57
 Gazatia, 385
 Gedion, 51
 Gelders, Land of, xxvi.
 Geminus, Thomas, xxxvii., xxxviii., xl.
 Gemma Phrysius, 55, 384, 385, 389
 Geneen, xviii.
 Genua, City of, 28, 65, 155, 206, 310, 340
 Genoa, xvii., xxx.
 Georgianes, xxx., xxxi.
 Germanicus, Emperour, 176
 Ger[r]ard, Sir William, xix., xi., xli.
 Gessnerus, 326
 Getulia, 384
 Giau island, 23, 260, 269, 286
 Gianteus island, 38
 Gilbeth island, 34
 Gililterra, 233, 236, 262
 Gilolo island, 250, 272, 344
 Gilona island, 34
 Gineris island, 41
 Gines Navarro, xv.
 Gioghi island, 260
 Giouan Dulsaraz, 250
 Girardus Mapheus, 348
 Giunti, L. A., xiv.
 Goa, City of, 40, 261
 Godfrey, John, xvii.
 Golden Castle, 211, 214, 218, 219, 233, 236
 Goletta, Port, 374
 Goliath, xviii., 149
 Gomera, Francisco Lopez de, xxxvii., xxxix., 271, 335, 337, 342, 350
 Gomera island, xiii., 65, 66, 157, 210, 380
 Gomes, Steuen, 242, 272
 Gonsalues, Peter, 378
 Gonson, Richard, xvii.
 Gonson, William, xvii.
 Gonzales, Don Pero, 341
 Gonzalo Fernandez de Oviedo y Valdes, xiv., xv., 158, 205, 241, 242
 Gonzalus Baduocius, 181, 182, 183
 Gorecius, Leonhardius, xxix.
 Gorgodes, Medicias island, 97
 Gorgonas island, 338
 Gorualanus, 72
 Gothia, 298, 306
 Gothicus, Emperour, 176
 Gothland, 9, 286, 295, 299, 306, 347
 Gothland, Bishop of, 302
 Gothus Olanus, 347
 Graesse, xlii.
 Grafton, xii.
 Grafton, Richard, xiii.
 Granada, 36, 52, 63, 67, 73, 103, 110, 133, 191, 201, 202, 273, 274, 340, 341
 Grancanaria island [the Canaries], 41, 65, 157, 210, 380
 Grandia river, 131, 132, 199
 Gratia Dei, 112, 182
 Gray, Richard, xvii.
 Great John, 385
 Great Khan, xv.
 Great Sophie, 326
 Grecia, 54, 56, 155, 262, 296, 302, 319
 Greenland, 299
 Gregorie, 112
 Gregorie I., 56
 Gresham, John, xiii.
 Gresham, William, xii.
 Gretzium, 318
 Grisalva, John, 187, 188, 189, 190, 192, 194
 Gronland, 299, 300, 303
 Grosapha, King of, 40
 Groeland, 8
 Grounzywki, xxxii.
 Grubus, Master, xiv.
 Grustinta, 323
 Grutland, 245, 300, 317
 Guacana island, 345
 Guacarapita, 99
 Guacca lake, 170
 Guaccariaria, 168, 169, 173, 176
 Guadacanillus, King, 66, 70, 71, 72, 168
 Guadalupea island, 68, 69, 157, 159, 177, 181, 210, 345
 Guadaleque river, 127, 157, 210, 220, 238, 250
 Guadiana river, 273
 Guhabba, 169
 Guahague, Region of, 169
 Guangua, Region of, 168
 Guamaonoco, 99
 Guamaretus, King, 102
 Guanabba island, 85
 Guanahaini island, 75
 Guanahattabenechima, 176
 Guanama, Region of, 168
 Guanapan island, 190
 Guanassa island, 165, 150, 163
 Guunguan island, 190
 Guaniba, Region of, 170
 Guaninicabo river, 170
 Guannabo, Region of, 170
 Guarajagua, Region of, 173
 Guarico, Region of, 169
 Guarinexius, King, 79, 80, 82, 84, 86, 87, 91, 92, 93, 102, 168, 171
 Guarinexius, Vale of, 171
 Guarizaca island, 170
 Guituro, 216, 226
 Guituro, King, 226
 Guurabro, Lake, 171
 Guinea, xii., xvi., xix., xxviii., xxxix., xi., 250, 270, 273, 297, 348, 371, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388
 Guise, Duke of, xliii., xlv.
 Gunson, William, xii.
 Guserath, 266
 Gutachyn, King of, xxix.
 Guzerat, Gulf of, 14
 Guzman, Enrique of, 341
 Guzman, Peter Nunez de, 345
 Guzula, 374
 Habacon, 169
 Habacucke, 57
 Habissia, Region of, 385
 Habech, Region of, 385
 Hafnia, City of, 331
 Hagueigabon sea, 170
 Haiba river, 168
 Haina, 223
 Haitio, 24, 60
 Haiti island, 166, 167, 168, 338
 Hakluyt, Richard, xii., xiii., xiv., xv., xvi., xvii., xviii., xix., xx., xxviii., xl., xviii.
 Halicarnasse, 128
 Halle, R., xii., xiii.
 Ham, Kingdom of, 344
 Hamadriades, 74, 101
 Hamburg, 300
 Hannibal, 139
 Hanon, 338
 Hararia, Region of, 96
 Hardie, Master, xviii.
 Harsol, City of, 300
 Hathathio, 171
 Hawkins, Sir John, xvi., xvii., xviii.
 Hawkins, William, xvi., xvii.
 Hayhay island, 159
 Hazchora, 374
 Hazlitt, W. C., xxvi.
 Hazona, Region of, 168
 Hazu mountains, 169, 176
 Hea, Kingdom of, 374
 Heben, 284
 Hebrewes, Captain of the, 316
 Helge mountain, 300
 Helisabeth, 73, 127, 129, 167
 Helisabeth a Bordilla, 127
 Helisens, 149
 Hellespontus sea, xlvi., 59, 155
 Hely, John, xii.
 Henrique, Don, 273
 Henriques, Diego, 378
 Henry, King, 127, 162, 340, 345
 Henry IV., xxxix.
 Henry V., xxix.
 Henry VII., xli., 288
 Henry VIII., xli., xii., xiii., xiv., xvi., xvii., xviii., xix., xx., xxi., xxvii., xl., 6
 Henry, King of France, xvii.
 Herbert, W., xxxvii., xxxix.
 Hercinia, 313
 Hercules, 50, 105, 138, 149, 156, 236, 285
 Hercules Pillars, 86, 135, 236, 316, 374
 Hercyjua, 310
 Herodotus, 248, 330, 346, 350
 Heroum, City of, 284
 Hestiod, xxxvii., xli.
 Hesperides islands, 32, 74, 87, 97, 167, 338
 Heua river, 319
 Hibusson island, 255
 Hiebra, 135, 153, 154
 Hieron, King, xliii.
 Hieronimus Aquilarius, 192, 193
 Hieronimus Cardanus, 307
 Hieronimus Francastor, 285
 Hierusalem, 7, 8, 49, 51, 56, 57, 82, 100, 384, 385
 Hierusalem, King of, 82, 208
 Hierusalem, Temple of, xliii.
 Hignius, 346
 Higuej, 168
 Higuell, 346
 Hirceania Sylua, 292
 Hiranean sea, 169, 170, 287, 291, 308, 310, 314
 Hispana island, 6, 28, 29, 30, 31, 35, 36, 40
 Hispaniola island, xv., 6, 35, 40, 45, 54, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 73, 74, 75, 78, 79, 80, 82, 84, 85, 87, 89, 90, 96, 98, 99, 100, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 113, 186, 115, 116, 118, 119, 122, 123, 125, 126, 127, 128, 130, 131, 135, 137, 138, 140, 144, 145, 149, 150, 153, 154, 159, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 172, 173, 176, 177, 178, 184, 186, 191, 192, 193, 199, 209, 210, 215, 219, 228, 230, 233, 235, 238, 239, 241, 262, 299, 346
 Hojedus, 72, 79, 81
 Holstroek, William, xvii.
 Holtrop, Mr., xxv.
 Holy Nose, 330
 Homer, 5, 41, 346, 398
 Honorucco, 169
 Horace, 58
 Hore, Master, xviii.
 Hossuen island, 304
 Hozama, 168, 170
 Huban island, 344
 Hungary, King of, 208, 312
 Huhabo, 168, 169, 172
 Huinaghan island, 255
 Huitsarch, 299
 Humos point, 273
 Humphrey, Laurence, xl.
 Hyperborean sea, 288
 Hyperborean mountains, xli., 293, 313, 314, 324
 Hyperbories, 142, 155, 350
 Hyram, 49
 Iberia, 53, 54
 Iethiophagi, 301, 385
 Ida mountains, 172
 Igamu, 171
 Iguanama, 173
 Illirium, 306
 Ilmer Lake, 319
 Inacus, Joper Mendocius, 103
 India, xxii., xxix., xxx., xxxii., 9, 10, 13, 14, 15, 16, 18, 19, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 32, 40, 52, 55, 67, 75, 79, 90, 98, 103, 120, 127, 155, 180, 198, 203, 204, 209, 216, 219, 227, 233, 239, 261, 263, 264, 266, 269, 272, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 308, 309, 313, 329, 339, 346, 347, 363, 384
 India, Governor of, 274
 India major, xxii., xxviii., xxxii., xxxii., 261
 India minor, xxii.
 Indian sea, 9, 39, 308, 347, 385
 Indies, 52, 53, 54, 162, 213, 220, 221, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 232, 235, 238, 246, 271, 272, 273, 274, 337, 338, 340, 341, 345, 348, 350, 355
 Indus river, 13, 308, 309
 Infortunate islands, 28, 33, 37, 41, 253
 Innocentus, Pope, xxxi.
 Inspruck, 359, 368
 Insul crasis, 30, 69
 Insula, S. Johannis, 70
 Insula Latronum, 254
 Insule verides, 39
 Insulas Sancti Barnardi, 162
 Inuagana island, 34
 Ionicum sea, 191
 Ionium, 163
 Ipsicratea, 128

- Irtische river, 323
 Irus, 42
 Isabella, City of, 74, 79, 80, 82, 84, 85, 86
 Isabella island, 73, 167
 Isabella, Lady, 341
 Isaias, 52, 56, 57
 Ismael the Sophi, 311
 Isocrates, 346
 Isodorus, Bishop, 290
 Isopes, 53
 Israel, 51, 52, 56
 Israel, King of, xxxiv.
 Isseria, 309
 Ister river, 98, 131
 Istoma Georgius, 330, 331
 Ity island, 38
- Jaccha, 168
 Jacchi, Region of, 169
 Jache river, 168
 Jachem river, 73
 Jaciga river, 168
 Jacob, xxx.
 Jacobi, Sancti, 97
 Jacobus Gastaldus, 345
 Jafet, 346
 Jagohaucho, Region of, 169
 Jain, 100, 163
 Jaick river, 326, 329
 Jainaguia, Lake, 170
 Jaiso, Region of, 374
 Jamaica island, 31, 75, 78, 150, 154, 177, 193, 210, 241
 Jamaizi, Region of, 169
 James St., Island of, 97
 James St., Tower of, 84
 James the elder, 10
 Jamgoma, Region of, 260
 Janua, 155
 Janus, 155
 Japhet, 155
 Jaques Cartier, 345
 Jaroslavia, 309
 Jaroslav, Castle of, 324
 Jason, 51, 262
 Jausa river, 313
 Java island, 23, 269, 344
 Jaxartes river, 311
 Jean de Ferrieres, xlii.
 Jempitia, 305
 Jenkenson, Anthony, xviii.
 Jenkyndon, Master, xliii.
 Jenuen, xxx.
 Jericho, Priests of, xvii.
 Jerom, Castle of, 323
 Jerusalem, xxi., xxxi., 7, 8, 40, 51, 56-7, 82, 100, 166, 374, 384-5
 Jerusalem, Patriarch of, xxxv.
 Job, 11, 349
 Joga, 14
 Johan, Duke, 289, 293
 Johanna island, 28, 29, 66, 70, 74, 75, 104, 241
 Johannes, Cursius, 106
 Johannes, Diaz, 105
 John, King, 65, 129, 273, 274
 John, Lake of, 325
 John of Desborough, xxv., xxxvi.
 John, Pope, xxiii., xxvi., xxvii., xxx., xxxii., xxxvi.
 John, Queen, 273
 John the Evangelist, 10
 Jonas, xxx., 338
 Joppa, 181
 Joseph of Arimathea, 56
 Josephus, xlvi., 8, 384, 385
 Josuah, 316
 Jouanalboina, 100
 Joubert, Françoise, xlv.
 Joviu, Paulus, 292, 331
- Joy, Master, xviii.
 Juan, 182
 Juanaga, Region of, 234
 Juba, King, 347
 Juentanna island [i.e., the peninsula of Yucatan], 40, 186, 188, 189, 191, 192, 193, 238
 Juda, Princes of, 56
 Judle, Sir Andrew, 383
 Judea, 7, 18, 57
 Jug river, 286, 312, 322
 Juga river, 293, 312
 Jugaria, 322, 326
 Judge, John, xlvi.
 Judge, Richard, xxxix., xlvi., 398
 Jugoria, 309
 Juherici, 326
 Juhgary, The, 326
 Juhn, 293, 322, 326
 Julius, Pope, 309
 Julian Samano, 346
 Junna river, 73, 168, 172
 Jura, 116
 Jureche, 152
 Jurham, 292
 Jwanowosero, Lake of, 325
- Kaiensi Semla, Region of, 330
 Kama, Region of, 326
 Kamaa river, 325, 329
 Katharine, Queen, 65
 Kele river, xxxvii.
 Kerr, John, xix.
 Khan, Great, xv.
 Kingsley, Rev. Canon, xvi.
 Kitai, Lake, 323
 Kitaisko, Lake, 323
 Kitay, Lake, 324
 Kohl, Mr J. G., xv.
 Kuhuo river, 322
 Kurbki, Simeon Pheodorowice, 324
 Kyui, 20
- La Desseada island, 210
 La Ferté, xlv.
 La Mina, 382
 La Spagnola, 210
 Labrador, xlii., xv., 287, 344, 345, 347
 Lachroma river, 321
 Lacossa, Johannes de, 107
 Lactantius, 10, 11, 142
 Lacus, Albus, 291
 Lacus, Cronicus, 289
 Ladoga, Lake, 319
 Lagartos river, 111
 Lagoma island, 260
 Laletan, 173
 Lamas, 155
 Lambert, Francis, xviii., xix.
 Lambert, Nicolas, 376, 377
 Lamer, xlv.
 Lampalodi island, 374
 Lancelotus island, 65, 157
 Lancerota, xx.
 Landinus, 279
 Landman, Dau'd, xix.
 Langanas, 304
 Lanchidol sea, 261
 Laon, xliiv.
 Lapponia, Region of, 8, 291, 299, 301, 302, 305, 347
 Lares, 176
 Lasesia, 363
 Laterane, 309
 Latium, 66, 166, 167
 Lathyro King, 286
 Laurence, xlvi., xlviij.
 Lazar, Archipelago di San, 251
 Lazarus, King, 187, 188
 Lech, King of the Polons, 318
- Ledisma, Johannes, 144
 Ledy river, 291
 Legion, 201
 Legion, King of, 203
 Leigh, Doctor, xvi.
 Lemures, 85
 Leo, Bishop of Rome, 64, 106, 137, 287, 308, 309
 Leochares, 49
 Leon, 342
 Leon, John Ponce of, 345, 346
 Leonhardus Corecius, xxxix.
 Lepanto, 72
 Lepin Castle, 323
 Lesbos, 69
 Levante, The, xii., xiii., xvii., xviii., xix., 233
 Leviathan sea, 50
 Lewes, Don, 378
 Libane, 110
 Liberis, Sigismundus, 298, 312, 318
 Libia, 8, 54, 56, 70, 81, 166, 177, 374, 384
 Libicum, 163
 Libra, xlii.
 Ligurian sea, 297
 Limn, 338
 Limonares island, 151
 Limoso island, 374
 Lincoln, Bl'op of, xl., xiv.
 Lisbon, City of, 16, 39, 267, 277, 279, 341
 Lithuania, Duke of, 318
 Lithuania, Realme of, 286, 291, 292, 311, 314, 318, 346
 Litie, 132
 Liuonia, 287, 291, 306, 308, 311, 312, 319, 331
 Lock, Sir William, xlii.
 Locke, Michael, xix.
 Lodge, Thomas, xi.
 Lodovike, 73, 79, 82, 90, 94, 96, 103, 133
 Longon, 260
 Lop, City of, 26
 Lopes, Diego, 272, 273
 Lopez Francisco, 288, 335, 342, 350
 Lordo, 289
 Losoth island, 304
 Louat river, 319
 Lozon island, 260
 Lucane, 310
 Lucomory mountains, 323, 324
 Ludovic Bartheme (i.e., Varthema), xviii.
 Luft, Hans, xxv.
 Lugo, Alphonsus, 66
 Lungo, 252
 Lumatolo island, 260
 Lombardie, 306, 340
 Lupus Sosa, 199
 Lusheburne [i.e., Lisbon], xxvii., xxviii., xxix., 277, 309
 Luther, xxvi.
 Luttrell, Sir John, xix.
 Luxanus, 74
 Luys of S. Angell, 341
 Luys, Don, 341
 Lyebien, xxxi.
 Lyese Nicolas, 378
 Lyuon sea, 314
- Maccazzina, Region of, 169
 Macchian island, 259, 260
 Macedonia, xxxii., 14
 Machiam sea, 344
 Machinnech, King, 100
- Machmetgirei, King, 328
 Machochael, 99
 Macorix, Region of, 168
 Macrobius, 41, 298, 347
 Madagascar, 7, 23, 285, 286
 Madanino, 69, 157
 Madera Islands, 35, 40, 41, 87, 260, 270, 339, 340, 375, 380
 Magellanu Ferdinand [i.e., Fernan de Magelhaens], 9, 32, 33, 34, 35, 243, 249, 250, 252, 253, 272, 274
 Magellanu, Straits of, 8, 33, 35, 161, 183, 252, 285, 350
 Magna Canaria, 157
 Magna fors island, 41
 Magnet island, 348
 Magnus, Albertus, 7, 9, 10, 41, 304
 Magona, 81
 Magua, Region of, 169
 Maguacochios, 167
 Maguana, Region of, 169, 171, 172, 176
 Mahaitin mountain, 169
 Mahumel, 14, 23, 25, 27, 40, 57, 346, 374
 Maia, Region of, 150, 163
 Maiaguariti, Region of, 169
 Maiam, 187
 Maiobanevius, King, 86, 91, 92, 93
 Maiolicia, 270
 Malabar, 263, 266, 267, 268, 269
 Malacca, 21, 32, 34, 40, 75, 247, 255, 256, 260, 261, 267, 269, 271, 274, 313, 344
 Malea, 155, 304
 Maligny, Seigneur de, xlii.
 Malhu island, 260
 Malpha, Flauuis of, 348
 Manbrane, xxx.
 Manbahio, Region of, 169
 Manabaxao, Region of, 169
 Manacapania, Region of, 89, 94, 96, 98, 128
 Manache, Sibill, xx.
 Manati, Lake, 171
 Mandeuell, 329
 Mangalor, 265
 Mangaldo, City of, 259
 Mangi, 25, 26
 Manicautiux, King, 82
 Manicheus, 10
 Manicongo, 270, 374
 Manilius, Marcus, xlii.
 Mans, xlii.
 Mansus, Alfonso, 130
 Manuel, Petro, 272
 Maragonnum river, 98, 132, 134, 155, 160
 Marburg, xxv.
 Marchantes island, 329
 Marchena, 340, 341
 Marcilius Ficinus, 338
 Marco da Niza, 287
 Marcus Antonius, 315
 Marcus, Emperour, 284
 Marcus Paulus, 55, 286
 Marcus Paulus Venetus, 25, 27, 326, 330, 339, 340
 Mare island, 35, 259, 260
 Mare Congelatum, 8
 Mare de Sabione, 374
 Mare del Sur [i.e., the Pacific Ocean], 54, 211, 214, 223, 225, 230, 233, 234, 235, 252, 262, 338, 344, 345, 347
 Mare Pacificum, 252, 253
 Margarita island, 54, 88, 96, 141, 165, 178, 214, 233

Index.

Margarita

328
68
47
5, 286
6, 41, 87, 360,
380
lo [i.e., Fer-
n], 9, 32, 33,
350, 252, 258,
6, 8, 33, 35,
350
9, 10, 41,
169, 171, 172,
59
27, 40, 57,
163
169
86, 91, 92,
7, 268, 269
40, 75, 247,
1, 267, 269,
xlv.
8
169
169
of, 89, 94,
59
2
59
2
8, 132, 134,
9
us, 25, 27,
acific Ocean],
5, 230, 233,
338, 344,
88, 96, 141,

Margarita, Peter, 79
Mariatambal, Region of, 98,
132
Marien, Region of, 160, 172
Mary, Virgin, xxvi, 69, 124, 192,
198
Marmarica, 8
Marmor, 112, 114, 135
Marobu, 100
Marocco, xix, xx.
Marques, Diegoz, 157
Marris, 122
Marrocko, 374
Marrok, 161
Martabani, 268
Martine, 383
Martinus Gratias island, 343
Martire, Pietro, or Martyr, Peter,
xiii, xxxvii, 43, 61, 63, 64, 65,
102, 186, 207, 241, 246, 299
Mary, Queen, xii, xxxviii, xxxix,
xlv, 1.
Mary of Nemegen, xxvi.
Massana island, 34
Massaquier port, 374
Mathan island, 258
Mathien island, 35
Matinino island, 100
Matinino island, 30, 69, 157, 166,
210
Matritis, 123, 184
Matthikur, 303
Maucarao, 169
Maurevert, xl.
Mauritania, 8, 374, 384
Mauritania Cesariensis, 374
Mauritania Tingitana, 374
Mausolus, King, 49, 128
Maximilian, Emperour, 290, 308,
309, 312, 368
Mecca, 166, 267
Medecis, Catherine de, xiv.
Media, 314
Medina Celi, Duke of, 341
Medina Sidonia, Duke of, 250,
341
Medina de Campo, xxxix, 232
Mefion, xxxi.
Meersch, P. C. van der, xxv.
Megha, xxviii.
Meia, Pomponius, 346, 347
Melina, City of, xxix, 21
Melcha island, 39
Melchoir, 71, 72
Meler, Lake, 305
Melinda, xxviii, 132, 385
Melo, Frances de, 273
Meluza, 20
Memi, City of, 241
Memphis, City of, 307, 315
Mendala, 344
Mendez, Diegoz, 154
Mendoicus, Inacus Jopex, 103
Mendoza, Anthony di, 287
Mendoza, Cardinal Pero Gonzales
of, 341
Mendoza, Luigo of, 252
Mendoza, Mentia of, 214
Mennones, 385
Mense, 56
Mensurado, Cape, 381
Meotis, 155, 292, 298, 306, 311,
314, 325, 326, 351
Mercado, Lodouicu, 165, 182
Mercedis, Saynte Mary of, 77
Mericke, William, xli.
Meroe island, 8, 385
Meroe, 41
Mesa, Barnarde of, 130
Messana island, xvii, 256
Messana, King of, 256, 257, 258

Mesopotamia, 297
Meta Incognita, xlii.
Metellus Celer, 9
Methymna Campi, City of, 68, 70,
72, 80
Methy, Duke of, 96
Mexico, Viceroy of, 287
Mexico, City of, xiii, 55, 61, 287,
288, 328, 342
Mezen river, 322
Mezentium, 66
Michael Passamonte, 213
Midall, Thomas, xiii.
Mien, 24, 261
Milan, City of, 63, 67, 103, 131,
141
Milenoes, 65
Mina, 339, 375, 382
Mina, Castle of, 382
Mina river, 376
Minera, xviii.
Minos, xviii.
Mitoformo, City of, 284
Mirobalanus, Region of, 151
Mitaini, 167
Mithridates, 128, 129
Moguer, 341
Mogunce, Bishop of, 56
Moluca islands, 8, 9, 20, 32, 33,
34, 35, 54, 183, 234, 235, 247,
249, 256, 258, 259, 260, 271, 272,
273, 274, 286, 287, 344
Molybe, 385
Monsabbath, xxviii.
Moncellesse, Master Bernardino, 356
Monoch island, 22
Mona Crucis, 300
Mona Farratus island, 30
Mons Serratu island, 69, 177
Monte Rodondo, 382
Montegio Francis, 187, 190, 191,
192, 195
Monte Luna, 41, 132, 217, 385
Montes Niuales, 157, 160
Monyue, 240
Moore, Sir Thomas, 398
Morales, Andreas, 134, 156, 165,
167, 169, 184, 185
Morales, Gasper, 178, 199, 214
Morantes, Christopherus, 186
Moravia, Region of, 326
Morea, The, 316
Moren, xxxi.
Morgan, Sylvanus, xlii.
Morley, Professor H., xxxviii.
Moronites, xxx., xxxi.
Morraboras, xxx., xxxi.
Mos, Lake, 304
Moscow, 187, 286, 289, 290, 291,
292, 293, 308, 312, 313, 314, 317,
321
Moscovia, xxix, 285, 286, 287,
289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 298,
308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314,
315, 316, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322,
323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329,
330, 331, 332
Moscovia, Andreas of, 316
Moscovia, George of, 316
Moscovia, Helena of, 289
Moscovia, John of, 289, 316, 319,
321, 324, 325, 326
Moscovia, Sophie of, 326
Moscovia, Simeon of, 316
Moscovia, Demetrius Ambassador
of, 292, 308, 309, 310, 311, 313,
316, 325, 329, 331
Moscovia, Dukes of, 283, 286, 287,
289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 298,
322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 328, 329,
330, 331, 332

Moscovites, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293,
306, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 315,
316, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323,
324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 331,
332
Moxes, xxi, xviii., 11, 49, 50, 51,
57, 110
Moyli, The, 385
Motka, Cape, 331
Mouy, Count de, xlvi.
Moxica, Michael of, 65
Moxum river, 313, 314
Mozambique, 261
Muera, 318
Muller, Mr Frederick, xxv., xxvi.
Multoxuman, King, 195
Mumu, 112
Münster, Sebastian, 3, 13, 42, 249,
291, 293
Murcien, 176
Muscostrom sea, 304
Muthil island, 34
Mutir island, 259, 260
Myians, xviii., 318
Naeldwyck, Jan van, xxvi.
Nagai, 349
Nagaria, xxix.
Nalba, 83
Naiba river, 73, 83, 168, 172
Nansao, Earl of, 214
Naples, King of, xxx.
Narmaria, xxix.
Narsinga, 14, 15, 20, 263, 264, 265
Narsinga, King of, 14, 40, 264
Nativitatis, Bain, 129
Nauaray, King of, xxx., xlvi.
Nauchin, City of, 260
Navare, King of, xxx., xlvi.
Nebrissa, 135, 165
Neglina river, 313
Negro river, 374
Nehemiah, 56
Neibaymo, Region of, 169
Neibaymos mountain, 169
Nemea, 143
Nemroth, 53, 290
Neper river, 314
Nepos, Cornelius, 9, 286, 347
Neptunus, xviii., 55, 163, 165, 176
Nereiades, 74, 101, 127, 165, 176
Nero, 41
Nerui, 340
Nestorius, xxx., 27
New Andalusia, 130
New France, 287, 288
New India, 3, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18,
19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27,
28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36,
37, 38, 39, 40, 41
New Spayne, 236, 238, 241, 287, 342
New World, 68, 127, 137, 150, 174,
245, 247, 272, 273, 337, 338, 339,
343
Newfoundland, xiii., xiv., xv., xviii.,
xxi.
Nicaragua, 338
Nicene, 29
Nicolai, 322
Niquesa, Diego, 106, 107, 108, 109,
111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 126,
128, 135, 137, 145, 150, 151, 153,
156
Nidrosia, 299, 303
Nidrosia, Archibishop of, 299
Nigus, 94, 126
Nigratia, 132, 384
Nile river, 8, 41, 110, 111, 131, 132,
153, 155, 169, 175, 193, 199, 217,
283, 284, 285, 293, 309, 311, 312,
339, 346, 351, 374, 384, 385
Nimaca, 169
Nizaus, 169
Noah, xlvi., 51, 155, 340, 346, 386
Noceuamor island, 260
Nogais, 311, 349
Nomen Dei, 113, 234, 235
Norduegia, 331
Norican, 314
Northumberland, Duke of, xxxviii.,
xxxix., 5
Nortpoden, 330
Norumbega, xiv.
Norway, Governors of, 332
Norway, King of, 331
Norwegia, King of, xxx.
Nova Castilla, 343
Nova Hispania, 55, 213, 238, 241,
257, 342
Novogradia [i.e., Novgorod], City of,
289, 290, 291, 300, 312, 313, 314,
318, 319, 321, 320, 328, 329, 330
Nova Scotia, xv.
Nubia, 384
Nuceria, Paulus Jouius, Bishop of,
308, 312, 331
Numidia, 374
Nunnez, Alphonsus, 123
Nunnez de Gusman, Peter, 345
Nycolas, Saynt, 75, 78
Nyra, 100
Nysea, 384
O [i.e., Omega] point, 75, 76
Obdoloria, 287, 310, 323
Oba, Castle of, 323
Obi river, xli., 287, 322, 323, 333
Obiowa, 323.
Ocoa river, 170, 292
Ocha river, 292, 308, 313, 314, 319,
324, 325
Ochelaga, 287
Ocho Lopus, 186
Odia, 260
Odoardo Barbessa, 258
Ogni Sancti Marigalante island, 210
Olanus, Gothus, 300, 347, 348
Olanus, Lupus, 111, 112
Olha, 319
Olmutium, 314
Oloan, 188, 191
Ooliah, 49
Oone, 305
Ophir, 7, 51, 66, 73, 82, 338, 343
Oplandia, 305
Oram, City of, 374
Ordassus, Diegus, 192
Oripei, The, 385
Ormuz island, 13, 20, 261, 266
Orø river, 380
Orsa, 316
Oryenten, xxx., xxxi.
Os Draconis, Straits of, 88, 95, 96,
98, 108, 128, 132, 134, 151, 178
180
Ostrich, Henry, xix.
Ostrobothnia, 305, 306
Osep, Gregorevitch Neapea, xi.
Otho, 9
Otifer, 289, 290
Otogeria, City of, 291
Otoque island, 233
Otto Brumfelsius, xliii.
Ottomanus, Bajazetus, 60, 311
Cittoseria, City of, 314
Otwer, City of, 314
Ouandus, King, 190
Ouandus, Nicolaus, 165
Ouetenses, Astur, 135
Ouedlus, Goncalus Fernandus, 50,
158, 160, 184, 185, 207, 208, 241,
Oxford, Earl of, xxxvii.

- Oxus river, 308
 Ozama, 240
 Paera, King, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147
 Padilla, Garsia de, 130
 Padus, 133
 Pahan, 260
 Paleacate, 263
 Paleologus, Sophia, 316
 Paleologus, Thomas, 316
 Palitzki, Lieutenante, 328
 Palma island, 41, 66, 157, 177, 380
 Palmaria, Region of, 189
 Palmas, Capo de las, 381, 382
 Palmer, Sir T., xxxix.
 Palos, 96, 97, 99, 341
 Pan, 166
 Panama, City of, 214, 223, 233, 234, 235, 338
 Panchi, City of, 26
 Panes, 101
 Pannonie, 133, 155, 290, 306, 310, 314
 Panomone, King, 182
 Pantalarea island, 374
 Panuco, 241
 Papa, Johannes, 385
 Papin, City of, 324
 Papinowgorod, City of, 324
 Paracelsus, xvi.
 Parau river, 343
 Paria, 36, 38, 89, 90, 94, 95, 96, 98, 99, 103, 105, 113, 128, 129, 130, 132, 135, 151, 156, 165, 178, 180, 181, 184, 338, 363
 Paria, Gulf of, 130
 Paricora, 98, 132
 Pariza, 183
 Paropanis mountain, 308
 Parthenopea, Queen, 103
 Parthia, 284
 Parthicus, Emperour, 176
 Paruaim, 7
 Parus, Georgius, 326
 Passamonte, Mychel, 213, 240
 Patani, 260
 Patagoni, 252
 Patalo river, 363
 Paulogho island, 258
 Paul, 51, 58
 Paulus, 179, 309
 Paulus, Jovius, 60, 287, 308, 312
 Pazer, 344
 Pean, John, 385
 Peccera, Region of, 315
 Pedernales mountains, 219
 Pedir, 344
 Pedrarias da Villa, 229
 Pedro Doria, xvii.
 Pegu, 20, 21, 261, 263, 264, 344
 Peim, 26
 Pellegrine de Maricourt, xlivi.
 Peloponese, 134, 316, 319
 Pelusius river, 284, 285
 Pelusius, 285
 Penguin island, xviii.
 Peralfonso de Melo, 272
 Peraria, F., 65
 Percasavia, City of, 291, 331
 Percow, 382
 Perez, John, 340, 341
 Perillus, 49
 Periquete, King, 182
 Pern, 293
 Permin, 286, 309, 325, 326
 Permska, 293
 Persia, xxviii., 15, 26, 267, 309, 314
 Persia, Gulf of, 82, 308
 Persia, King of, 284, 311, 319, 326
 Persides, 75
 Pert, Sir Thomas, xiii., 6
 Peru, xiii., xxxix., 6, 54, 130, 285, 338, 343, 346, 363
 Pescora River, 286
 Peter, 125
 Petit, F., xxxviii.
 Petrus Alphonsus, 94, 96
 Petrus Arias, 126, 127, 142, 214, 229
 Pettislego, xl.
 Petzona River, 322, 323, 324, 330, 332
 Phaeton, 73
 Pharis River, 262, 310
 Phenice, xxxi.
 Phidias, 74
 Philadelphus, King, 284, 285
 Philip, King, xvii., xxxviii., xxxix., xlv., 52
 Philistines, xvii., 51
 Philo, xlii.
 Philostratus, 384
 Phoenicia, xi.
 Phrysus, Gemma, 384
 Phylipe, the Apostle, 57
 Pichet, John, xvii.
 Piedmont, xliiv.
 Pienega, 312, 322
 Piescoya River, 322
 Pieza River, 322
 Pigafetta, Antonio, 243, 246, 247, 249, 255, 258
 Pigninem, 153
 Pinnig, 300
 Pinsteado, Antoniades, 375, 376, 377
 Pinsteado, Antonie Anes, 378
 Pinsteado, John Anes, 377, 378
 Pintiguanus, Chinconus, 129
 Pinzon, Martin Alonso, 341
 Pinzonus, Arius, 96, 98
 Pinzonus, Vincentius Annez, 36, 96, 98, 105, 126, 128, 129, 130
 Pircho, City of, 305
 Pisa, John Rodriguez of, 272
 Pius Secundus, 8, 9, 41
 Pizarro, Francisco, xiii., 108, 110
 Placentia, 340
 Plate river, 338, 343
 Plate, xl., xlii., xliii., xliv., 10, 337, 338, 340
 Plaiper, 368
 Plescoua, 291, 309, 312, 314
 Pliny, xliii., xlvi., 8, 9, 10, 14, 16, 18, 41, 53, 67, 75, 120, 133, 142, 152, 175, 179, 208, 221, 225, 227, 231, 236, 245, 248, 278, 284, 285, 286, 289, 292, 294, 297, 298, 306, 310, 315, 340, 342, 347, 349, 363, 364, 383, 384, 385, 386
 Plummer, Thomas, xvii.
 Pluto, xlvi., 149, 355
 Po river, 133, 314, 363, 364
 Pocchorosa, King, 147, 148, 162, 163, 178
 Pocchorosa, Region of, 162, 163
 Pogosa, 323
 Pollass river, 323
 Polagua island, 344
 Polen, King of, xxx., 318
 Politianus, Angelus, xliv., xvii., xlvi.
 Polo island, 256
 Polonus Chiacomus, 129
 Polonie, 314, 318, 326
 Polonie, King, 286, 290, 318, 319
 Polonie, Russus of, 318
 Polonie, Sigismunde of, 309, 319
 Polotzko, 312
 Polybius, 41
 Pomponius Mela, 346, 347, 349
 Ponce, John, 165, 181, 345, 346
 Poncha, King, 115, 116, 121, 137, 138, 139, 140, 149, 178
 Poncetus Johannes, 165, 181, 345, 350
 Tonet, John, xxxvii.
 Ponte, Alfonsum de, 157
 Pontike sea, 131, 262, 296
 Pontus, 297, 308, 318
 Porcena, 71
 Porne, King of, 34
 Porne island, 22, 34, 258
 Porte Joppa, 181
 Portofarnia, 374
 Porto Rigo, xv.
 Portucarueri Alsons, 191, 192, 195
 Portugal, Alonzo of, 273, 341
 Portugal, Emanuel of, 16, 37, 39, 40
 Portugal, Henrique of, 273
 Portugal, Johan of, 129, 271, 273, 274
 Portugal, Lewes of, 378
 Portugal, Kings of, xvi., xxiii., xxv., xxvi., xxvii., xxix., xxx., 13, 40, 41, 54, 74, 136, 256, 261, 267, 270, 271, 273, 274, 340, 341, 363, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 381, 382, 385
 Portus Bellus, 112, 135, 153, 177
 Portus Cataginoris, 106
 Portus Desideratus, 188
 Portus Plate, 176
 Portus Regalis, 71, 105, 176
 Potanchanus, King, 189, 194
 Potassa, 323
 Potiwo, 330
 Potto, Chiaconus, 129
 Potzheremba river, 323
 Powell, William, xxxix., 43
 Poynas Semnoi mountauns, 322, 323
 Poynings, Sir Adiran, xiv.
 Pozon island, 256
 Praga, City of, 291
 Prato, Albertus de, xiv.
 Preciosus, Johannus, 51
 Precep, 325
 Prester, John, xxi., xxxii., xxxiii., xxxv., 51, 339, 374, 384, 385
 Proclus, 338
 Prometheus, 57
 Propertius, 285
 Prussia, Master of, 308, 319
 Psammiticus, King, 284
 Ptolemy, 8, 41, 210, 236, 262, 284, 285, 289, 308, 313, 349, 384, 390
 Pulaoan island, 258
 Pullisachnites river, 25
 Purchas, Samuel, xii., xiv.
 Puren, 152
 Pustofero, 322, 323
 Puta, 88
 Pycone river, xxxiii.
 Pyne, H., xv.
 Pynson, Richard, xxv.
 Pyrine mountain, 53
 Pythagoras, xlvi., 215
 Pythis, 49
 Quadrado Gulf, 344
 Quando, Nicolas de, 345, 346
 Quareba, 153
 Quarequa, King, 138, 178
 Quarequa, Region of, 138, 139, 338
 Quatou Tempora island, 151
 Quauhutema, 338
 Quaxaca, 342
 Quenquinas, City of, 24, 25
 Quenquinas island, 69, 157, 159
 Quicedus, John, 123, 126
 Quicuri Region of, 151
 Quinsai, 26, 55, 307
 Quiola, xviii.
 Quintanilla, 341
 Quintilian, xlvi.
 Quiriquetana, 150, 151
 Quito, 338
 Quizqueia island, 166, 167
 Rabida, 340, 341
 Ragusa, City of, 330
 Raja, Caluar, King, 258
 Raja, Capitayne, 120
 Raja Colambu, King, 255
 Raja Humabuon, King, 257
 Raja Santon, King, 260
 Raja Siagu, Prince, 255
 Raja Siripada, King, 258
 Raja Sultan Manzor, 259
 Ramonus, 99
 Ramusio, J., 'i., xiv., xv., xxxviii
 Rase, John, 382
 Rastall, John, xx.
 Rastall, Master, xviii., xix.
 Rastall Sarciant, xviii.
 Ratcliff, xxxviii.
 Ravenna, 314
 Razauia, 309
 Red sea, xxix., xlvi., 7, 13, 51, 143, 180, 284, 285, 339, 340, 374, 385
 Regio Baccalaeum, 32, 55
 Regnum Orguenc, 384
 Resan, City of, 290
 Reyre, Region of, 168
 Rezan, 324
 Rezense, 292, 309
 Rha river, 291, 292, 313, 329
 Rhapsi, 385
 Rhene river, 56, 314, 363
 Rhodes, xii.
 Ribera, Doctor, 272
 Richard I., King, xxvi.
 Richard II., King, xxxix.
 Rico Porto, xv.
 Ridley, Master, xviii.
 Riga river, 287, 308, 312, 314
 Rio Dulce river, 381
 Rio Grande river, 380
 Rio de Chicora river, xv.
 Rio de los Perdidos river, 151, 156
 Rio de la Plata river, xxxix., 54, 288, 338, 343, 386
 Rio de los Potos river, 382
 Riphena, 155
 Ripeho mountains, 293, 324
 Risophagi, The, 385
 Riyo Negro, 120, 121
 Riuum Nigrum, 191
 Rivero Diego, 272
 Robbyn Hood, 53
 Rocundulfe, Earl of, xvii.
 Rodanum, 314
 Rodericus Colmenaris, 113, 114, 115, 116, 119, 120, 122, 123
 Rodes, 351
 Rodes, Grand Master of the, 374
 Rodrigo, 341
 Rodriguez, John, 272
 Rogers, John, xxxix.
 Roldanus, Ximenus, 86, 87, 90
 Rome, Adrian, Pope of, 309
 Rome, Pope Alexander VI. of, 37, 74, 129, 201, 273, 274, 315
 Roine, Pope Clement VII., 308, 309, 347
 Rome, Cloelia of, 71
 Rome, Consul of, xlii.
 Rome, Emperour of, xxxii.
 Rome, Gregory, Bishop of, 56

- Rome, Julius of, 309
 Rome, Leo X of, 64, 106, 109, 177,
 113, 114, 123, 125, 126, 127, 130,
 131, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137,
 145, 149, 150, 154, 156, 157, 159,
 162, 163, 164, 166, 167, 170, 172,
 174, 175, 178, 181, 184, 185, 187,
 308, 309
- Rome, Paul III of, 51, 58, 179
 Rome, Pius II of, 8, 9, 41
 Rosciuia, City of, 290, 291, 309
 Rosolano, 289
 Rostow, 331
 Rotunda, Sancta Maria, 69
 Rubicho river, 322
 Ruiz, Bartholome, 272
 Ruiz, Peter, 272, 274
 Rummie, James, xvii.
 Russia, Basilius of, 289, 290, 308,
 309, 311, 314, 316, 317, 319, 321,
 324, 328, 329
 Russia, Emperour of, 290
 Russus, Town of, 318
 Rut, John, xiv., xv., xvi.
 Ruthens; Constantine, Captain of
 the, 316
 Ruthens, Czar of the, 319
- Saba, 8, 385
 Saba, Queen of, 8, 374, 385
 Sabea, 129, 385
 Sachion, City of, 27
 Sacrificios; Sacrifice, Island of, 189,
 192
 Safale, xxviii., 36
 St Ambrose, 10, 315
 St Andrew, 290, 319
 St Angell, Luyis of, 341
 St Antonie islands, 272, 273
 St Aubin, Sieurde, xliv.
 St Augustine, 10, 142, 165, 218, 238,
 315, 318, 338
 St Augustine, Cape of, 129, 155, 165,
 181, 183, 218, 250, 273, 338
 St Benedict, 306
 St Bernardi islands, 161
 St Catharine, Castle of, 84
 St Christopher, Gold mine of, 105
 St Christoval, Island of, 210
 St Clare [electrical fire on masts],
 251
 St Cosmus, 310
 St Cruz Islands, 30, 130, 159, 188
 St Cyrilus, 315
 St Domingo, xv., 45, 82, 84, 130,
 154, 168, 169, 170, 176, 209, 210,
 213, 240, 338, 346
 St Dunstan's parish, xviii.
 St Francis, 130, 176, 198, 240, 341
 St George, xxxi., 39, 323
 St German, Town of, xlv.
 St German, Bay of, xv.
 St Gregory, 315
 St Helen [electrical fire on masts],
 251
 St Hericus, 305
 St James, xxviii., 10, 186
 St James island, xxviii., 97, 186,
 261, 262
 St James, Castle of, 36, 84
 St Jerome, 195, 338
 St John, Gulf of, 194
 St John, Port, 192
 St John's island, xv., 45, 104, 130,
 155, 159, 173, 176, 210, 213,
 241
 St John's harbour, xlii., xiv., xv.,
 192
 St John of Jerusalem, Knights of,
 xii.
 St Julian, Port, 252
- St Lazaro, Archeipelago di, 254
 St Lazarus, 187
 St Laurence [*i.e.*, Madagascar], Is-
 land of, 285
 St Leger, xlv.
 St Luca, or Lucas de Barrameda,
 157, 210, 262
 St Lucas Guild at Antwer, xxv.
 St Maria Antigua, Island of, 30,
 69, 110, 134, 163, 198, 207, 218,
 226, 229, 236, 238
 St Maria Rotund, Island of, 30, 69
 St Maria de Gratia, Island of, 238
 St Marina, 190
 St Martha, 156, 157
 St Martinus, Island of, 30, 69
 St Marye of Mercedis, 77, 240
 St Matthei, Region of, 112, 132,
 135
 St Michael's Gulf, 54, 140, 162,
 165, 182, 183, 214
 St Nicolas [electrical fire on masts],
 250
 St Nicolas island, 375, 376
 St Nicolas Port of, 75, 78
 St Paul, 7, 11, 55, 56, 204, 293
 St Peter, 130, 203, 204, 250, 290
 St Romayne, Tower of, 226
 St Sergius, 291
 St Sophia, 314
 St Steven, 148
 St Thomas, xxix., xxx., xxxiv.-vi.,
 74, 79, 80, 250
 St Thomas, Island of, 250, 270
 St Thomas Tower, 31, 74, 79, 80
 St Vincent, Cape, 250
 St Vincent, Harbour of, 381
 Salaye, Dr Sancho, 272
 Saleno, Monsieur de, xlvi.
 Salla, Port, 374
 Salzburg, Cardinal of, 24, 247, 248
 Salvaterra, 176
 Samano, Julian, 346
 Samarcandia, 311
 Samson, xviii.
 Samma, Town of, 381, 383
 Sammaterra, Town of, 383
 Samogeds, The, 323
 Samotor, 20
 Samotra [i.e., Sumatra], 7, 21, 22,
 32, 344
 Samua, Town of, 381, 383
 Samanton island, 272
 Sancta Cruce, xlii., xx., 30, 40, 130,
 188
 Sancta Fee, 341
 Sanders, Blaise, xli.
 Sanguenal, 287
 San Juan island, xv.
 Saragossa, xxxviii.-ix., 247
 Sardinia, 56
 Sardonica, 284
 Sardius, 163
 Sarmatia, 170, 284, 291, 295, 298,
 308, 311, 314, 326, 347
 Sarmatiens, 155, 301, 310
 Saturma, Region of, 157, 158, 160,
 163
 Saunders, Laurence, xxxix.
 Sava, City of, 374
 Savoy, The Master of the, xliii.
 Sawolhenses, The, 327, 329
 Saxogrammaticus, 300
 Saxony, Duke of, 366
 Sbozzo, 368
 Scandia, 298
 Scandinavia, 298, 347
 Scarense, Bishop of, 313
 Scharatzick, City of, 329
 Scharaitz, 329
 Schat river, 325
- Schavo, 381
 Schichmamai, 329
 Schidack, 329
 Schio, 366, 368
 Schondania, Region of, 298
 Schondenmarchia, Region, 298
 Selavonia, 290, 306
 Selavons, 290, 306, 315, 318, 319
 Scolus, John, 345
 Scombia Islands, 106, 107
 Scodia, Region of, 293, 298, 299,
 302, 305, 313
 Scopa, 51
 Scoria, King, 183
 Seuton Cetuba island, 135
 Scwerski, 325
 Scythia, 155, 280, 291, 292, 297,
 306, 310, 312, 313, 316, 347, 393
 Sea, Admiral of the great Ocean, 29,
 35, 67, 79, 94
 Sebastian, John, 271, 272
 Segovia, 126, 127
 Seina, Capreensis de, 137
 Selani Island, 34
 Seleucus Nicanor, 8, 61
 Selle, xiv.
 Selymus, Prince, 311
 Sem, 346
 Semnoi Poyas mountains, 324
 Seneca, 48, 67, 337, 339
 Seneggi river, 280
 Senegal river, 132, 374, 384
 Sequerya, Dieogo Lopez of, 272,
 273
 Serrannus, Johannes, 34, 157, 160
 Serena, 274
 Seres, 67
 Serponowitzti, 323
 Seria Nevata mountains, 108, 160
 Serranus, Johannes, 34, 157, 160, 258
 Serrationa [Sierra Leone], 39, 250
 Sesostris, 284
 Sesostrius, King, 284
 Sesonpon castle, 323
 Set river, 321
 Sestau island, 192
 Sesto river, xvi., 376, 381
 Setebos, 252
 Sette Citta, Kingdom, 287
 Seville, xiv., xvi., xl., 50, 62, 210,
 246, 250, 262, 288, 338, 342, 345,
 348
 Sforza Ascanius, 65, 68, 103, 127
 Shava, 381
 Shawgro, 381
 Shyawe, 381
 Sian, Zacobedera King of, 260
 Sianfu, City of, 26
 Sibiri, Prountie of, 326, 329
 Sibut river, 323
 Sibylla Erythrae, 135
 Sicensis, Nicolaus, 309
 Sico island, 260
 Siech, Ismael, 266
 Sigismundus Liberius, 298, 312, 318
 Siloli island, 34
 Silver of Rever, 288, 343
 Silvius Pandonus, 133
 Simonides, 41
 Sina, Kingdom of, 32, 313, 344
 Sinum Perditorum, Point, 155
 Sinus Arabicus, 13
 Sinus Finnonicus, 306
 Sinus Magnus, 248
 Sinus Persicus, 20, 32, 41, 82
 Smith, Sir T., xxxvii., xlii., xlv.
 Smolense, 290, 291
 Smyrnophora, 385
 Soboroviis, George, 316
 Sofa, Lupus, 199
- Solinus Julius, 16, 56, 338, 346, 347,
 383
 Solo island, 34
 Solowki island, 321
 Solyntus, Johannes, 181
 Sorachi village, 180
 Sorin islands, 347, 348, 387
 Sossa river, 323
 Soto, Ferdinand de, 346
 Spaheford, Thomas, xlii.
 Spaenian, 39
 Spagnuola island, 199, 210
 Spain, Emperor Charles V., 32, 47,
 63, 208-14, 216, 223, 225, 226, 229,
 233-6, 238, 240, 240-8, 255, 257,
 259, 271-4, 278, 287, 343, 345,
 350, 363
 Spain, Emperor Phillip, 54, 59,
 346
 Spartaria, 176
 Spatense Alverado, 192
 Spelerant castle, 84
 Spiristomea, 98
 Spice islands, 235, 247, 271, 273,
 274, 280, 344
 Spinosa, Gaspar, 183
 Stannoische, Region of, 322
 Steven, Bysshop, 293, 325
 Stoidum, 143
 Stora, 374
 Strabo, 10, 56, 283, 284, 285, 289,
 296, 308, 346, 349
 Strava, 308
 Strelze, 322
 Strub island, 324
 Strucophagi, 385
 Stzuchogora river, 323
 Subath, King of, 34
 Succana river, 286, 312, 322, 331
 Suchana river, 322
 Suchur, Province, 27
 Suctia, 299, 301, 304-6, 311, 312,
 319, 330, 331
 Suevia, King of, 9, 286, 301, 306,
 308, 347
 Suez, 13, 284, 285
 Sulacho island, 260
 Sumatra, 7, 12, 20, 21, 22, 32, 261,
 267, 272-4, 344
 Sumatran, Kings of, 22
 Sunbit island, 253
 Sun-deros, 155
 Sur. river, 314
 Suricum river, 314
 Sus, 374
 Sussex, Earl of, xxxix.
 Sustali, 290
 Sutton, Edward, 42
 Taboga island, 233
 Tabor, King, 182
 Tacarequi Margarita island, 56, 233
 Tachola, 344
 Tachola, City of, 344
 Tachnun ryer, 323
 Tadius, City of, 24
 Taghima island, 259
 Taia, Region of, 159
 Tainus, Kingdom of, 25
 Taismer, John, xliii.-vi.
 Talvera, Ferdinand of, 341
 Tamburlane, 311
 Tanagora, xxix.
 Tanais, 133, 155, 291-3, 297, 306,
 310, 311, 314, 319, 321, 324, 325,
 327, 346
 Tangut, Region of, 12, 26, 27
 Tapia, Francisco de, xv.
 Tapobana [Ceylon], 12, 21, 22, 32,
 41, 143, 180, 261, 286, 344
 Taquenazabo, Region of, 169,

- Taracuru, King, 182
 Tararequi, 214, 233
 Tarchontan, King, 66
 Tarenate island, 259, 260
 Tarnasserie, 12, 20, 21, 22
 Tartary, 12, 24, 26, 39, 286, 287,
 289, 290, 292, 306, 344, 387
 Tartary, Machmetgire, King of,
 328
 Taurisium, City of, 311, 314
 Tartars, 286, 287, 289, 290-2, 301,
 310-14, 316, 319, 320, 324-9,
 332
 Tauria, Johannes de, 157
 Tauira, Simon de, 272
 Taxmarus, King, 193
 Teaocha, King, 143, 146
 Telde, 374
 Temesne, 374
 Tenado island, 344
 Tendilla, Count of, 103
 Teneriffe islands, 41, 66, 157, 250,
 280
 Tenerissa, xiii., 41, 380
 Tenetum island, 260
 Tenez, 374
 Tenixtetan, City of, 57, 287, 342
 Temulos, 273
 Tequinas, 215
 Terasequi island, 214
 Terceira, 344, 348
 Terra Baclearum, 242, 287
 Terra Britonum, 287, 288
 Terra de Laborador, 287
 Terra Viridis, 299
 Terra Florida, 32, 55, 57
 Terra de Papagalli, 253
 Tesino river, 363, 364
 Tharant island, 35
 Themischtulu, 311
 Theodore island, 35
 Theodosia, Colony of, 311
 Theophrastus, 8, 338, 340
 Thomas, J., xix.
 Thorne, iv., xiii., xiv., xxi.
 Thorne, R., xvi.
 Thoms, Mr. xxvi.
 Thyle, Land of, 300, 337
 Tialleslund sea, 304
 Tiba, King, 149, 151
 Tichin village, 122
 Ticobon island, 256
 Tidore islands, 259, 260, 262, 272-4,
 348
 Tierra fronde, xv.
 Tighe, xlvii.
 Timor island, 260, 261, 269
 Tingin, City of, 24
 Tircocot river, 272
 Trasi village, 107
 Tison, Thomas, xiii.
 Todos Santos islands, 177
 Tolstick, 322
 Toro, 273
 Totonogo, King, 182
 Totilas, King, 313
 Toy, R., xii., xxxvii., xxxix., 388,
 398
 Transylvanus, Maximilian, 247, 249,
 262
 Trelensin, City of, 374
 Tremisen, 374
 Tropojentes Cape, 381-3
- Tripoli, 374
 Trolhetta river, 304, 306
 Trutham village, 304
 Tucke, Master, xvii.
 Tuckfield, Master, xviii.
 Tulla, City of, 324
 Tumaccus, King of, 140-2, 178
 Tumaccus, Region of, 140
 Tumanama, King of, 117, 147,
 148, 162, 163
 Tumanama, Region of, 162, 163
 Tumen, Castle of, 323, 324, 326
 Tumenski, King of Tumen, 324
 Tumum, King, 66
 Turn, King, 119
 Turufy village, 183
 Tuver, City of, 314
 Tyrrna, 166
- Udall, Nicholas, xxxviii.
 Udoria, 310
 Uhabo, 170, 173
 Ulma, 292
- Ulysses, 135, 348
 Umbria, Petrus de, 111, 112
 Unefride, 56
 Ungerien, King of, xxx.
 United States, xv.
 Uppa river, 325
 Upsala, Archbishop of, 300, 347
 Upoliensis, 295
 Uraba, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 113,
 114, 118, 119, 123, 128, 130, 131,
 132, 134, 143, 150, 155, 162, 163,
 180, 192, 198, 199, 218, 229
- Uracha, 230, 234
 Urse, M., de, xlii.
 Uschatio, Peter Knes, 324
 Usa river, 322
 Usting, City of, 286, 312, 322, 325
 Ustuga, Town of, 293, 312
 Ustyng, 312
 Uttersor, Mr., xxvi.
- Vadianus, 56
 Vagononia, 99, 100
 Vagu river, 318
 Valdés, Gonzalo Fernandez de
 Oviedo, xxxvii.
 Valdiuia, 115, 116, 118, 119, 122,
 123, 192, 193
 Valentia, 199
 Vallacum, 314
 Valladoleto, xiv., 125, 127, 133, 274
 Vallieus, 105, 181, 183
 Vannuccio, Biringuccio, xxxvii., xlvi.,
 353, 356
 Varto, Marcus, 349
 Vascho Nunnez de Balboa, 61, 113,
 114, 115, 119, 120, 121, 122, 125,
 131, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142,
 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149,
 155, 156, 162, 165, 178, 198, 199,
 338
 Vassilievich, John Duke of, 326
 Vasques, Captain Francesco, 287
 Vassy, xliii.
 Vastral, 304
 Vaticane, The, 100, 309
 Vecchiadore, 287
 Vega, Fernando de, 96
 Velusquen, Diegus, 186, 187, 190,
 195
- Valasquen, John, 192
 Vendome, Francois de, xliv.
 Venetus, Marcus Paulus, 25, 27,
 326, 330, 339, 340
 Vera, Petrus de, 65
 Verazzano, xv.
 Vere, Edward, xxxvii.
 Vesalius, A., xxxvii.
 Vespasian, Emperour, 208, 342
 Vespucci, Amerigo, xlv., 37, 38, 39,
 127, 134, 157, 158, 275, 277
 Vespuchius, Johannes, 127, 157
 Vetcha, 309
 Viatra, City of, 291
 Vibba, 153
 Vicenza, 247
 Victoria, Town of, 194
 Vidame de Chartres, xlii., xlii., xlii.,
 xliii.
 Vigentina, 368
 Vilna, City of, 314
 Villanova, 176
 Villa Ricca, 196
 Villegas, Peter Ruiz of, 272, 274
 Vincentina river, 366, 388
 Vincentius, 36, 96, 98, 105, 126, 128,
 129, 130
 Vincenza, City of, 246
 Virgil, II., 50, 91, 135, 279, 298
 Visba, City of, 306
 Vischora river, 325
 Visco, Bishop of, 341
 Vitry, xlii.
 Vitchezida river, 325
 Volaterane, 289, 290
 Volga river, 291, 292, 293, 308,
 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 321,
 325, 326, 328, 329, 331
 Volham river, 293
 Volochda river, 286
 Volodemaria, City of, 291, 309,
 314
 Volotchia, 309
 Volt, City of, 290
 Vrida river, 135, 153
 Vuia river, 323
 Vuaga river, 322
 Vuarectako sea, 319
 Vuareczkote Moric sea, 312
 Vuiaithka, 326, 328
 Vuilina, 313
 Vuinalandia, 319
 Vuipetsk, 312
 Vuolochda, 312, 322, 325, 326,
 331
 Vuolocon river, 319
 Vuolodimaria, 319
 Vuolok, Lake, 319
 Wade, Arnilig, xviii.
 Wade, William, xviii.
 Waranger fird, 299
 Wardhus, Castle of, 299, 302, 303,
 304, 305, 331
 Wardoe, 299
 Wardoehus, 299
 Warwick, Earl of, xxxviii.
 Watson, Thomas, xl., xlv.
 Weysarch mountain, 300
 Whalley, Richard, xlii.
- Whally, Thomas, xliv.
 Whitcome, Roger, xii.
 White Russia, 301, 302, 311
 Wickes, Master, xviii.
 Willes, Richard, xii., xlvi.
 Williamson, John, xvi.
 Willoughby, Sir Hugh, xxxviii.,
 xxxix., 59, 333, 334
 Winchester, Bishop of, xxxvii., xl.,
 xlv.
 Winter, Sir W., xlii., xlvi.
 Wolsey, Cardinal, xiv.
 Wright, Master, xviii.
 Wroth, Sir Thomas, xix.
 Wyndam, Captain, xix.,
 375, 376, 377
 Wynterton Ness, xli.
 Xaccoi river, 170
 Xagua, Region of, 168
 Xaguaguana, Region of, 153
 Xamana, Region of, 70, 169, 170
 Xaragua, Region of, 83, 84, 85, 86,
 169, 176
 Xericium, City of, 65
 Xerxes, 59
 Ximenus Roldanus, 86, 87, 90
 Xuarez, Petrus, 130
- Yaguana, Region of, 169
 Yaguino, Region of, 170
 Yamiroa river, 176
 Yamizui Hibahaina mountain, 169
 Vorke, Sir John, xix., 382
 Yucatan, 61, 338
 Yucatos, 238
- Zacobedera, 260
 Zaganhei, 311
 Zahondaderos, 155
 Zamal island, 254, 260.
 Zamara island, 32
 Zamatra, 274
 Zamotra island, 273
 Zamodus, 115, 116, 122, 126
 Zarzibar island, 23
 Zanzibar, King of, 23
 Zarate, Augustin de, xxxix.
 Zasia, xx.
 Zauana, Region of, 148, 169, 173,
 176, 212
 Zaylon island, 20
 Zebedus, 10
 Zeilan island, 264, 265, 266, 267
 Zeilon island, 256
 Zelande island, 214
 Zenete, Marquesse of, 214
 Zenu, Region of, 158
 Zerbi island, 374
 Zerema, 130
 Ziglerus, 294, 295, 299
 Zobroba river, 135
 Zobraba, 153
 Zohoran river, 153
 Zolo island, 259
 Zolot island, 260
 Zorobua island, 260
 Zubut island, 256, 257, 258, 272
 Zubut, King of, 250, 257
 Zula, Prince, 258
 Zulan island, 254

s, xliv.
er, xii.
oi, 302, 311
, xviii.
, xii., xviii.
an, xvii.
ir Hugh, xxxviii.,
3, 334
shop of, xxxvii., xl.,
, xlvi., xlviii.
al, xiv.
xviii.
omas, xix.
ain, xix., xxxviii.,
, xli.

79
of, 168
region of, 153
n of, 70, 169, 170
n of, 83, 84, 85, 86,
of, 65
nus, 86, 87, 90
130
on of, 169
on of, 176
176
ino mountain, 169
n, xix., 382
38

o
155
154, 260.
32

273
110, 122, 126
, 23
ol, 23
n de, xxxix.

1 of, 148, 169, 173,

20
264, 265, 266, 267
250
214
esse of, 214
4, 158
74

295, 299
135
153
9
0
260
56, 257, 258, 272
256, 257
58
54